

Cornell University Library
Ithaca, New York

**THE JAMES VERNER SCAIFE
COLLECTION
CIVIL WAR LITERATURE**

THE GIFT OF
JAMES VERNER SCAIFE
CLASS OF 1889

1919

The date shows when this volume was taken.
To renew this book copy the call No. and give to
the librarian.

HOME USE RULES

~~JUN 2 9 1964~~

All Books subject to Recall

All borrowers must register in the library to borrow books for home use.

All books must be returned at end of college year for inspection and repairs.

Limited books must be returned within the four week limit and not renewed.

Students must return all books before leaving town. Officers should arrange for the return of books wanted during their absence from town.

Volumes of periodicals and of pamphlets are held in the library as much as possible. For special purposes they are given out for a limited time.

Borrowers should not use their library privileges for the benefit of other persons.

Books of special value and gift books, when the giver wishes it, are not allowed to circulate.

Readers are asked to report all cases of books marked or mutilated.

Do not deface books by marks and writing.

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 092 914 450



Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY



A LIBRARY OF CONFEDERATE
STATES HISTORY, IN TWELVE
VOLUMES, WRITTEN BY DISTIN-
GUISHED MEN OF THE SOUTH,
AND EDITED BY GEN. CLEMENT
A. EVANS OF GEORGIA.



VOL. III.



Atlanta, Ga.
Confederate Publishing Company
1899



COPYRIGHT, 1899,
BY CONFEDERATE PUBLISHING COMPANY.



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
CHAPTER I. Virginia in 1860—Her Seven Grand Divisions— Geological Characteristics, Climate and Agricultural Products—Her Population—Political and Historical Importance	3
CHAPTER II. Slavery in Virginia—The Agitation of the Slavery Question—Distribution of Slaves in the State—John Brown's Invasion	17
CHAPTER III. From John Brown's Execution to the Federal Invasion—The Election of President Lincoln—Meeting of the Virginia Convention—Governor Letcher's Reply to the Call for Troops—Seizure of Harper's Ferry—Union with the Confederate States	32
CHAPTER IV. The Plan of Invasion—Northwestern Virginia—Grafton, Philippi and Rich Mountain—May to July, 1861	43
CHAPTER V. The First Kanawha Valley Campaign, April to July, 1861	57
CHAPTER VI. The First Shenandoah Valley Campaign, April to July, 1861	63
CHAPTER VII. The Bull Run, or Manassas, Campaign, January to July, 1861	91
CHAPTER VIII. Operations about Norfolk and Yorktown—Battle of Big Bethel—Burning of Hampton	123
CHAPTER IX. The Tygart's Valley and Cheat Mountain Campaign—Battle of Greenbrier River, or Camp Bartow—Battle of Alleghany Mountain	152
CHAPTER X. Operations along the Potomac—From First Manassas to Battle of Leesburg	178
CHAPTER XI. Battle of Leesburg—Operations on the Lower Potomac and East Shore—Action at Dranesville	187
CHAPTER XII. Stonewall Jackson's Romney Campaign	197
CHAPTER XIII. Review of Military Conditions, Spring of 1862	208
CHAPTER XIV. Stonewall Jackson's Valley Campaign of 1862	214
CHAPTER XV. The Peninsula Campaign of 1862—Yorktown, Williamsburg and Seven Pines	269
CHAPTER XVI. The Seven Days' Battles before Richmond	281
CHAPTER XVII. Stonewall Jackson's Cedar Run Campaign	304
CHAPTER XVIII. Lee's Campaign against Pope in Northern Virginia	315
CHAPTER XIX. The Maryland Campaign against McClellan	335
CHAPTER XX. The Fredericksburg Campaign	360
CHAPTER XXI. The Chancellorsville Campaign and Death of Jackson	375

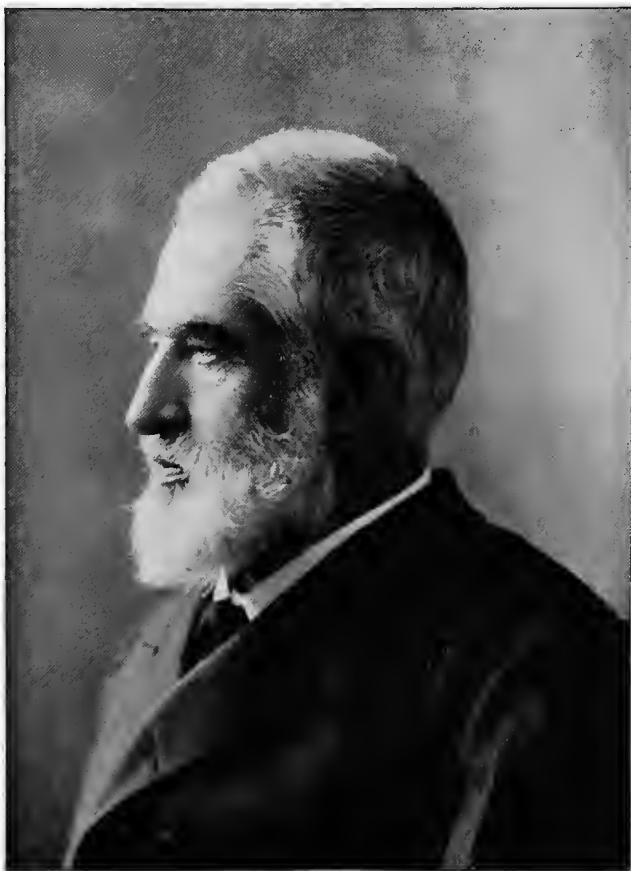
	PAGE.
CHAPTER XXII. The Campaign in Pennsylvania.....	395
CHAPTER XXIII. The Autumn and Winter Campaigns of 1863.....	423
CHAPTER XXIV. The Wilderness Campaign against Grant	431
CHAPTER XXV. The Battles of Spottsylvania Court House— The Defeat of Sigel and Butler.....	445
CHAPTER XXVI. The Maneuvers on the North Anna River.	458
CHAPTER XXVII. The Richmond Campaign of 1864.....	463
CHAPTER XXVIII. Early's Lynchburg and Valley Cam- paigns.....	476
CHAPTER XXIX. The Siege of Petersburg.....	516
CHAPTER XXX. Closing Events in Southwest Virginia and the Valley.....	533
CHAPTER XXXI. The Appomattox Campaign and Lee's Surrender.....	546
APPENDIX.....	558
BIOGRAPHICAL.....	573

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	FACING PAGE.
ANDERSON, JOSEPH R.....	576
ARMISTEAD, LEWIS A.....	576
ARMY OF VIRGINIA, POSITION OF TROOPS, AUG. 27, 1862.....	321
ASHBY, TURNER.....	576
BARTON, SETH M.....	576
BEALE, RICHARD L. T.....	576
BETHEL, BATTLE OF (Map).....	136
CHAMBLISS, JOHN R.....	576
CHANCELLORSVILLE, SALEM CHURCH AND FREDERICKSBURG (Map of)	Between pages 384 and 385
CHILTON, ROBERT H.....	576
COCKE, P. ST. GEORGE.....	576
COLSTON, RALEIGH E.....	576
CORSE, MONTGOMERY D.....	576
DEARING, JAMES.....	576
DELAGNEL, JULIUS A.....	610
ECHOLS, JOHN.....	576
FLOYD, JOHN B.....	626
FREDERICKSBURG, MAP OF BATTLE.....	369
GARLAND, SAMUEL.....	674
GARNETT, RICHARD B.....	642
GARNETT, ROBERT S.....	642
GETTYSBURG, MAP OF BATTLEFIELD.....	416
HARRIS, DAVID B.....	642
HETH, HENRY.....	610
HOTCHKISS, JED.....	1
HUNTON, EPPA.....	626
IMBODEN, JOHN D.....	626
JACKSON, WILLIAM L.....	610

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	FACING PAGE.
JENKINS, ALBERT G.....	674
JOHNSON, EDWARD.....	658
JONES, JOHN M.....	642
JONES, JOHN R.....	610
JONES, SAMUEL.....	626
JONES, WILLIAM E.....	658
JORDAN, THOMAS.....	610
KEMPER, JAMES L.....	642
LEE, EDWIN G.....	658
LEE, FITZHUGH.....	642
LEE, GEORGE W. C.....	658
LEE, WILLIAM H. F.....	658
LILLEY, R. D.....	626
LOMAX, LUNSFORD L.....	626
LONG, ARMISTEAD L.....	642
McCAUSLAND, JOHN.....	610
MAGRUDER, JOHN B.....	674
MAHONE, WILLIAM.....	658
MANASSAS, MAP OF FIRST BATTLE.....	Between pages 96 and 97
MAURY, DABNEY H.....	674
MECHANICSVILLE AND COLD HARBOR, MAP OF BATTLEFIELD.....	288
MOORE, PATRICK T.....	658
MUNFORD, THOMAS T.....	610
PAGE, RICHARD L.....	626
PAXTON, ELISHA F.....	610
PAYNE, WILLIAM H. F.....	642
PEGRAM, JOHN.....	674
PENDLETON, WILLIAM N.....	674
PICKETT, GEORGE E.....	658
PRYOR, ROGER A.....	610
REYNOLDS, ALEXANDER W.....	626
RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG (Map of).....	Between pages 528 and 529
ROBERTSON, BEVERLY H.....	674
ROSSER, THOMAS L.....	674
RUGGLES, DANIEL.....	658
SLAUGHTER, JAMES E.....	674
SMITH, WILLIAM.....	626
STARKE, WILLIAM E.....	642
STEVENSON, CARTER L.....	658
STEVENS, WALTER H.....	610
STUART, JAMES E. B.....	626
TALIAFERRO, WILLIAM B.....	674
TERRILL, JAMES B.....	674
TERRY, WILLIAM.....	674
VIRGINIA, MAP OF BATTLEFIELDS.....	Between pages 572 and 573
WALKER, HENRY H.....	626
WALKER, JAMES A.....	610
WALKER, R. LINDSAY.....	658
WEISIGER, DANIEL A.....	658
WHARTON, G. C.....	642
WICKHAM, WILLIAMS C.....	626
WILDERNESS AND SPOTTSYLVANIA, MAPS OF BATTLES.....	440
WINCHESTER, BATTLE OF (Map of Route to).....	240
WISE, HENRY A.....	610



JED. HOTCHKISS

VIRGINIA

BY

MAJ. JED. HOTCHKISS.

CHAPTER I.

VIRGINIA IN 1860—HER SEVEN GRAND DIVISIONS—GEOLOGICAL CHARACTERISTICS, CLIMATE AND AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS—HER POPULATION—POLITICAL AND HISTORICAL IMPORTANCE.

VIRGINIA was, in 1860, in nearly all the particulars of area, resources, productions and population, one of the leading States of the Union, just as she had been from colonial and revolutionary times. Her influence in the councils of the nation was very great, if not even paramount, and she was looked up to, not only as "the mother of States and of statesmen," but as the ardent defender of the Union, in the formation of which she had taken the leading part. One-sixteenth of the native population of the United States, in 1860, claimed her soil as their birthplace; and it was said that a majority of the members of Congress, at that time, were either natives of Virginia, or the sons or grandsons of those who had been born within her borders.

The geographical position and general relations of Virginia gave her a commanding position. Classed as one of the Middle Atlantic States, situated midway between Maine on the northeast and Florida on the southeast, she was, in reality, the representative mid-coast State of the Union; having, in consequence of her position and variety of land relief, many of the characteristics of the States lying both to the north and south of her. Because of her great extension, of over 500 miles, from the Atlantic across the Atlantic highlands to the Ohio, she had many of the features and adaptations of the States lying to the west as well as of those on the northwest and southwest. She was also the eastern one of the central belt of States, as the latitude of the entrance to Chesapeake bay very nearly corresponds to that of the Golden Gate of California.

In extent of surface Virginia was one of the greatest of the States east of the Mississippi river, her area then

being about 68,000 square miles, while New York had 47,000, all of New England 68,348, and Georgia but 59,000. Her greatest breadth from the North Carolina line to the northern end of the "panhandle," within 90 miles of Lake Erie, was about 430 miles; her greatest length, from east to west along the North Carolina and Tennessee lines, from the Atlantic to Cumberland gap, was 440 miles. Her outline was varied and richly developed. On the east the Virginian sea of the Atlantic and Chesapeake bay—with its many tidal rivers and estuaries, some penetrating her territory fully 150 miles, dividing it into numerous large and small peninsulas and furnishing more than 1,500 miles of tide-washed shore line, with numerous harbors of unsurpassed capacity and depth—permeate over 11,000 square miles of her tidewater country. The navigable Ohio belonged to her all along her northwestern border, receiving numerous navigable tributaries that drained the larger part of her Trans-Appalachian territory.

The relief characteristics of the State were noteworthy and remarkable. These divided it into seven natural grand divisions, each differing from the other in soil, adaptation to production, climate and other characteristics, and each equal in area to some of the States of the Union:

1. The Tidewater, about 11,000 square miles in area, is the great low-lying plain that extends from the Atlantic border westward from 150 to 200 miles, rising from sea level to an elevation of about 200 feet at the head of the tide, where it meets the granitic step, or "Coast ridge," at the borders of the Midland, at the first falls of the rivers, where are situated the commercial and manufacturing cities of Alexandria, Fredericksburg, Richmond and Petersburg. Many of the most important battles of the war of 1861-65 in Virginia were fought along this "Coast ridge," generally a sharply-defined line of escarpment.

2. The Midland is the undulating higher plain of the Atlantic slope, somewhat triangular in form, that extends from the eastern rim of the "ridge" westward to the broken range of hills and low mountains called the coast range of the Atlantic. Its area is about 12,500 square miles. It is intersected by many eastwardly flowing rivers; its surface is rolling or uneven, and deeply

carved into stream valleys with intervening watershed ridges. It rises from an altitude of from 150 to 200 feet on the east to one of from 300 to 500 on the west.

3. The Piedmont is the greatly diversified region lying between the eastern foot of the Coast range mountains and the eastern foot of the Blue ridge. Its area is nearly 7,000 square miles; in altitude it rises from an average of nearly 400 feet along its Midland border to one of nearly 1,000 feet along its Blue ridge border, while its included mountain ranges and Blue ridge spurs vary in altitude from 1,000 to 4,000 feet. It is a genuine piedmont, or foot-of-mountain country, that extends for a distance of over 300 miles along the eastern side of the Blue ridge from the Potomac to the North Carolina line, with an average breadth of nearly 25 miles. Its greatly varying forms of relief make it one of the most attractive and picturesque portions of the State.

4. The Blue ridge is a many-branched mountain chain, with swelling domes and considerable plateaus, extending for some 300 miles entirely across the State, from the northeast to the southwest, varying in elevation from about 1,000 feet near the Potomac to over 4,000 feet in the plateau in the southwest, on which are the three Blue ridge counties of the State. This is not only a striking feature in the landscape, from both its eastern and its western sides, but is one of the most important military features of the State. It played an important part in the many engagements of the Confederate war that took place in or near the passes that cut or cross it. Its area, as a grand division, is about 2,000 square miles.

5. The Great Valley, or the valley of Virginia, is the elevated plateau-like country lying between the western base of the Blue ridge and the eastern one of the North mountains—Kittatinny as a whole—of the Appalachian system. Its length is over 300 miles and its average breadth about 20 miles, giving it an area of about 7,600 square miles of the most fertile and productive portion of Virginia. It is her part of the great limestone valley that extends, for 1,500 miles, from near the mouth of the St. Lawrence far into Alabama. It is composed of a series of river basins, those of the Shenandoah and parts of those of the James, the Roanoke, the New river and the headwaters of the Tennessee. Its altitude varies from 500 to 2,600 feet. Its surface is diversified by hills and

detached mountain chains and ranges that render it one of the most remarkable fields for military operations in all the country, as is attested by the numerous battles that took place within it in Virginia and its extensions into Maryland and Tennessee.

6. Appalachia, or Appalachian Virginia, is the mountain belt, some 350 miles long, that extends west of the Great Valley entirely across the State; wedge-shaped in form, some 60 miles wide in the northeast and narrowing to 20 in the southwest. It is traversed by a large number of parallel ranges that vary in altitude from 2,000 feet to about 5,000, with long and generally narrow valleys between these mountain ranges running parallel with them. Within these mountain ranges and running with their valleys, are the principal tributaries of the Potomac in the northeast, of the James and the Kanawha in the central portions, of the Tennessee in the southwestern portions, and in the northwestern, the easterly branches of the Monongahela; all of which, in finding their way out, break through the successive ranges of the mountains and thus furnish ways through them. In 1860, Virginia's portion of Appalachia was divided into eighteen counties. The larger portion of this territory was covered with forests. As a whole, it was a most difficult region for the conduct of military operations, of which it was largely the theater during the first year of the war.

7. Trans-Appalachian Virginia, or Trans-Alleghany, as it was often called, is the region beyond the Appalachian or main mountain ranges; it is the inclined tableland that slopes to the northwest from the eastern outcrop of the great conglomerate rock border of the Trans-Appalachian coal-field to the Ohio, descending from an average elevation of nearly 3,000 feet along its eastern border, in the great Flat-top mountain and its extensions, to one of about 600 along the Ohio. The streams have deeply eroded its long westward slope, leaving it in high relief with long and narrow stream valleys separated by intervening ridges, generally rugged in character. The valleys widen and the between ridges sink as they approach the Ohio. This great region was divided into forty-one counties, nearly every one of which is underlaid by coal of highly-useful varieties, making it, intrinsically, one of the most valuable portions of the State; while a large part of its surface was covered with virgin forests.

The waters of Virginia are among the most striking of its characteristics. Its tidal waters are very remarkable and inviting, by their extent and character, to commercial enterprises, in which Virginia took a fair part during all her history up to 1860, and in consequence of which she is now rapidly advancing, in the growth of her commercial ports, to the position she is entitled to from her large facilities for engaging in commerce. Her fluvial waters are numerous and full volumed, draining and watering every portion of the State, and furnishing numerous water powers. In 1860, those in her Trans-Appalachian territory, the Ohio and its tributaries, were the avenues of a large internal commerce. Virginia early embarked in the improvement of many of her fluvial waterways by canals and slack-water navigation, especially patronizing the Chesapeake & Ohio canal, to open a highway to the West by the Potomac and the Monongahela, and the James River & Kanawha canal, for a commercial highway up the James and down the Kanawha to the Ohio farther to the south. The State as a whole is undoubtedly one of the best watered regions in the United States.

Virginia is unique in geological characteristics. She has within her borders, large areas underlaid by the rocks of every geological formation found in North America. This means that she possesses nearly every variety of soil and most kinds of valuable economic rocks and minerals, especially the best of granites, slates, brownstones, sandstones, and other building rocks; great deposits of the ores of iron, zinc, lead and copper; a wide belt of gold-bearing rocks extends through the length of the midland; limestones in the greatest abundance, especially in the valley and throughout Appalachia; and, surpassing all others in value, she had, in 1860, over 17,000 square miles of bituminous and semi-bituminous coals, mostly in Trans-Appalachia, but with a considerable area in the midland near Richmond, that in the number of beds and the variety of adaptation were unsurpassed by those of any State in the Union.

The climate of Virginia presents a great variety in consequence of her position in relation to the ocean, and especially because of the relief of the surface of the State, from the low levels of tidewater, where grow and flourish the long-leaf pine, live-oak, cotton and other

warm-temperate productions, to the high levels of the Blue ridge, the Valley, Appalachia and Trans-Appalachia, where are broad areas over 4,000 feet above the sea level, and to the still higher ridges of the southwestern Blue ridge and of western Appalachia, where flourish the pines, the balsams and the larches of the cool-temperate regions of the United States. Her high mountain chains intercept and turn aside the great storm waves of the northwest, but taking from them their moisture, while they intercept the vapor-laden winds from the ocean on the southeast, and from them draw tribute of a larger precipitation. As a whole, it is a State with perennial rains, long growing seasons, and a climate of means rather than of extremes.

Her adaptation to productions, both animal and vegetable, are great and varied. Of the 31,117,036 acres of her land embraced in farms, in 1860, 11,437,821 acres were improved, and 19,679,215 acres were unimproved, leaving an area of over 13,000,000 acres not included in farms, which was mostly embraced in the great patents, embracing much of the Appalachian regions, which were covered with original forests. The cash value of the land embraced in farms at that time was \$371,761,661. Of the other States, only New York, Illinois and Ohio had more acres of land under cultivation, and none but Texas had more unimproved land embraced in farm boundaries. Virginia ranked fifth in the cash value of her farms, being only exceeded by Illinois, New York, Ohio and Pennsylvania. Her agricultural productions embraced all the cereals, tubers, pulse, grass and grass seeds of the temperate region, to which were added great quantities of tobacco, considerable cotton and hemp, a large amount of sweet potatoes, the products of the warm-temperate regions, besides all temperate fruits in profusion. She ranked among the leading States of the Union in the production of all the great staples of the country except the rice, cotton and sugar of the far South. She was the leading State in the production of tobacco, and ranked fifth in that of wheat and sixth in Indian corn and oats. Virginia ranked high also in the numbers and quality of her domestic animals, her breeds of all which were among the best in the whole country.

The people of Virginia were of almost unmixed nativity, the foreign-born of her population in 1860 being but

35,058, or less than one-fortieth of the whole. The basis of her white population was mainly English and Scotch, with Germans (mainly in the Valley), French Huguenots (mainly in Midland), and some Irish. Her negroes were mostly the descendants of imported Africans, but among them were numbers that had been sold into her borders from Northern States previous to the emancipation of slaves in those States. The condition of her people was, as a whole, as happy and contented as could be presented by any of the States of the Union. Cultivable lands were plentiful and comparatively cheap. Nearly all articles needed to supply human wants were abundant and held at reasonable prices. Labor was well paid, especially that of a skilled character. The great body of the people was prosperous and steadily improving in circumstances. Kindly relations existed throughout the commonwealth, not only between the races, but between the rich and the poor. The laws were respected and justly and ably administered by an incorruptible judiciary, from the gentlemen justices of the peace of the counties up to her distinguished judges of the circuit courts and the court of appeals. Crimes affecting persons and property were rare, and the churches of the leading religious denominations of the country, the Baptists, Methodists, Presbyterians and Episcopalians, this order representing their comparative numbers, were everywhere distributed, well attended and cared for by able and zealous preachers of the Gospel. She was among the first of the States to establish asylums for the insane and an institution for mutes and the blind.

While Virginia did not have in 1860 a public school system under State control, as she now has, she made ample provision for all those desiring to be educated. In nearly every neighborhood throughout the State were private schools, generally well taught, to which all had access, the State paying the tuition of all who asked such assistance. Academies and preparatory schools, most of them classical and taught by well-educated gentlemen, were found in all parts of the State. Many of these, conducted by men of high social standing and with numerous assistants, were not only locally patronized but drew large numbers of pupils from other States, especially those of the South and Southwest. Her military institute, attended by appointed students from every por-

tion of the State, was widely known, from the character of its training, as the "West Point of the South." Numerous denominational colleges, some of them dating from colonial times, with able faculties, were established at various places in the State, while the university of Virginia, of which Jefferson was the father and which was liberally subsidized by the State, was, beyond controversy, the leading university of the United States in the character of its professors, its methods of instruction and training, and its large attendance of students from Virginia and States of the South and West. From its schools of law, medicine, science and literature, had been graduated a large proportion of the leading professional men not only of the Southern but of many of the Western States, even to the shores of the Pacific. The State patronized a medical college at Richmond, and from the Union theological seminary of the Presbyterians, near Hampden-Sidney college, and from the Episcopal theological seminary, near Alexandria, many able divines came to the churches throughout the same extensive regions. Female schools of a high order were established in many portions of the State, which were widely patronized from the same regions as were the colleges and the university.

Contrary to the general belief, the training of the negroes was not neglected. For, although the teaching of them in public was prohibited for prudential reasons, the right of their owners to teach them was not abridged, and very many were taught the elements of reading, etc. Their religious instruction was generally well provided for, and large numbers of them were members of the same churches as were their masters and mistresses, while they had numerous churches of their own, built by the liberality of the whites and supplied by preachers of their own race, but very often by those of the dominant one. They had another sort of education which has been rarely recognized. It is a fact that there were in Virginia thousands of technical schools, properly so called, for training the negro race, in the days of slavery. Every plantation where there was any considerable number of slaves was a well-organized and self-contained colony, in which each member of the community, from the youngest that was able to perform any light labor to the oldest who was not helpless, had an assigned duty to per-

form, under the direction of the master and the mistress, or the trusted overseer, either in the household and its surroundings or in the fields. Each of these home communities had its own mechanics, or trades people of nearly every kind, from the carders, spinners, weavers, knitters, seamstresses and trained servants of the household and its attached flower and vegetable gardens, to the shoemakers, blacksmiths, wagonmakers, and other craftsmen of the home shops, and the wagon and cart drivers, plowmen, cattle and sheep herders, and others who conducted all the different labors of the large plantations. Especially were there large numbers of highly-skilled laborers on the great tobacco plantations, who, under but light supervision, pitched, cared for, cut and cured the large crops of tobacco, for the quantity and quality of which Virginia was famous in all parts of the world. One need not hesitate to say, that a better trained, better ordered, better cared for, happier and more contented laboring population nowhere existed within the limits of the Union.

The occupations of the people of Virginia were greatly varied in consequence of the great variety of the surface features of the State and their adaptations. Her oceanic waters abounded in shell and scale fish, and gave employment to large numbers of oystermen and fishermen. The large plantations of Tidewater were devoted to the production of wheat and corn, and those south of the James to peanuts and cotton; the cultivation of sweet potatoes was a specialty in the more easterly regions. Eastern and Central Midland raised large crops of wheat, from which a superior quality of flour was manufactured, especially at Richmond, for the South American trade. Western Midland, then as now, added the production of large quantities of tobacco. The Piedmont country in its northeastern portion, within the limits of the growth of natural grasses, was devoted to the production of cereals and the rearing of cattle and horses, while the large plantations of the central and southwestern parts not only produced corn and wheat, but great quantities of what is known as heavy shipping tobacco. The elevated pasture lands of the Blue ridge were mainly given up to grazing and dairying. The Great Valley, from the Potomac to the Tennessee line, the paradise of the farmer, the grazer and the dairyman, produced bountiful crops of all the cereals, especially wheat and corn; large numbers of

cattle and horses were reared, and much attention was given to dairying as well as to general husbandry.

It should be borne in mind that in 1860 there was no seaboard connection in Virginia with the great prairie States. The Baltimore & Ohio railroad had but just opened communication by rail with that region. None other of the railways of Virginia had then crossed the Appalachians, consequently there was none of that destructive competition which has now made farming unprofitable in the Atlantic States. The wheat from Virginia, much of it ground into flour by local mills, especially in the Valley and in Alexandria, Fredericksburg, Richmond and Petersburg, found good markets, notably in Baltimore and Richmond, for the West Indies and South America, or the grocery trade of the United States, which then had its best entrepôts at Norfolk and Baltimore.

The people in the valleys of the Appalachian country and on the sloping uplands of Trans-Appalachia, were mainly engaged in the rearing of cattle, hogs, horses and other animals, which were driven eastward, either as young cattle to be sold to the farmers of the Valley and Piedmont for fattening from their ample corn-fields, or were driven direct, as fat cattle, to the eastern cities, sometimes as far northward as New York. There were also many dwellers in cabins, surrounded by a few acres of cleared land, within these mountain regions, who had little or no occupation beyond fishing and hunting. But these were the breeding places of hardy folk, who were constantly drifting westward as they grew to maturity, to form a considerable element in the great populations of newer States. Virginia, peopled with land-hungry Anglo-Saxons, made the great mistake, from the earliest days of her history, of parceling out her magnificent domain into great patents, some of them including a half million acres, and many of them from 50,000 to 100,000 acres, at the nominal price of but a few cents an acre. This policy prevailed, as population advanced westward, from the Atlantic to the Ohio, until these patents, often overlapping and loosely located, covered a large area of all the Appalachian and Trans-Appalachian country, left no land to be divided into parcels of moderate size for the use of the home-builder, and introduced uncertainty of land titles, all greatly detrimental to the peopling of that very desirable and intrinsically rich region,

across which and from which, largely because of this uncertainty of title and of the tempting parceling out of the great prairie States into sections and fractions of sections of land, the population of Virginia, from the seaboard to the mountains, drifted westward, leaving only stranded fragments of good stock along the way which ignorant writers describe as "poor whites" of a different origin from the main sturdy stock of the Virginia people.

The northwesterly portion of the Trans-Appalachian country and the broad bottom lands of the Ohio and its tributaries, early attracted from the eastward a thrifty and intelligent class of people, who made that a highly-productive grazing and agricultural region, which found markets for its products on the hoof eastward, or in flat-boats westward on the flood tides of its numerous rivers. The manufacture of salt at various localities, especially on the Great Kanawha, was one of the leading industries of that section, supplying much of the Mississippi valley with its prime necessity of human life. Coal mining was also becoming an important industry on the Kanawha, the Monongahela and along the Ohio, the product of the mines finding markets in Cincinnati, Louisville, and even New Orleans. The distilling of petroleum, from cannel coal, had assumed very considerable proportions, especially along the Kanawha, when the discovery of natural petroleum, near 1860, by the boring of wells on the waters of the Little Kanawha, marked the beginning of the trade in petroleum, which has become one of the largest and most profitable in the whole world.

Of the 297,354 of Virginia's white population reported as engaged, in 1860, in gainful occupations, 108,958 were farmers and 30,518 were farm laborers; showing that a very large proportion of her people were engaged in farming or planting. Of the so-called professional classes, there were 3,441 lawyers, 2,467 physicians and 1,437 clergymen. Her population was mainly rural in habitation; she had no cities of large size. Richmond contained but 37,910 inhabitants; Petersburg, 18,266, and Norfolk and Portsmouth but 24,116; Wheeling, the metropolis of northwestern Virginia, contained but 14,083. The manufacturers of all kinds were comparatively few in number; they were mostly the blacksmiths, bricklayers, carpenters, shoemakers and wheel-

wrights of the towns and villages throughout the commonwealth.

Her military population, the white men of the State between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, was 196,587; a striking contrast to the 1,099,855 at that time within the limits of Ohio, Indiana and Illinois, States to the west of her borders that had, by her own action, been cut from her territory, and a very large percentage of whose population was of Virginian origin; and yet her fighting population was considerably larger than that of any other Southern State except Missouri. The available number of Virginia's arms-bearing population in 1860 was so decreased by the Union element and the secession from the State by West Virginia that she had not more than 150,000 fighting men to respond to her call for troops after the secession from the Union in 1861.

Prior to the first census Virginia had 10 representatives in the United States Congress; the first census, that of 1790, gave her 19, the second 22, the third 23, the fourth 22, the fifth 21, the sixth 15, the seventh 13, and the eighth, that of 1860, 11. The center of population of the United States at each of the five decades, from 1810 to 1850, was within her borders. Her density of population in 1860 was about 25 to the square mile.

From the historical standpoint, Virginia occupied an enviable position. From the threshold of 1860 she looked back upon an heroic and glorious past. Her Capt. John Smith—leader, diplomat, fighter, explorer, geographer, historian and adventurer—would have been a notable figure in any age. In 1619, before the establishing of any other English colony in America, she assembled an elected house of burgesses and entered upon a representative career which, from that time forward, stoutly maintained the rights of her people to govern themselves; and even in submitting to the Cromwellian parliament in 1652, she secured a continuance of her representative law-making privileges. Proud of her loyalty in the restoration of 1660, she hesitated not to rebel, in 1676, against the usurping authority of the royal parliament, and against that of the royal governor who failed to obey her orders and protect the colony against Indian outrages, and endeavored to rule without consent of the people. Her Governor Spotswood, who came in 1710, was by far the most prominent figure of his time in the American col-

onies. In 1714 he established the first blast-furnace for the manufacture of iron, on the bank of the Rappahannock, within the afterward famous battlefield of Chancellorsville. He was the first, in 1716, to lead an expedition across the Blue ridge into the famous Shenandoah valley, and in 1730 became the deputy postmaster-general of all the colonies.

When the French and Indian war of 1750 began, and France claimed the territory drained by the Ohio, Virginia had a young Washington to send on a diplomatic errand to the French, at the head of that river; to lead her citizen soldiery, in 1754, in the unequal combat of the Great Meadows, and in 1755 to save from complete disaster the British regulars under Braddock. When England attempted taxation without representation, in 1765, her Patrick Henry fired the colonies to resistance. In 1769 she called a revolutionary convention, which denounced the acts of the British parliament. In 1774 she sent representatives to the first Continental Congress, in the persons of Peyton Randolph, Richard Henry Lee, George Washington, Patrick Henry, Richard Bland and Edmund Pendleton, all men of mark, who helped, then and there, to lay the foundations for a Federal union. In 1774 her brave and hardy men of the Great Valley and the mountains beyond, the fighting Scotch-Irishmen under the leadership of Lewis, met the combined Indian power of the Northwest, in a fierce struggle at the mouth of the Kanawha on the bank of the Ohio, and not only established Virginia's claim to the Northwest, but broke up the combination that, by Indian invasions in the rear, would have defeated the contention of the colonies with the mother country, if it had succeeded.

In 1775 the elected delegates of her people assembled in convention in Richmond, and resolved to put the colony in a state of defense against the aggressions of the crown, and followed these resolutions by ordering the enlisting and drilling in companies of soldiers throughout the commonwealth. A troop of these from Hanover, led by Patrick Henry, compelled the royal governor to pay for the powder of the colony that he had unlawfully removed from Williamsburg to shipboard. When the second Continental Congress met, in 1775, Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, was again chosen to preside over it;

and when that body, moved to action by the conduct of the British troops in Boston, formed a Federal union under the name of the United Colonies, and authorized the raising of a Continental army, her George Washington was chosen its commander-in-chief and took command at Cambridge, Mass., on the 2d of July, 1775.

The Virginia people again met in convention on the 17th of July, 1775, and chose a committee of safety to take charge of the affairs of the colony, ordered the enlistment of troops, passed laws for the raising of money, the procuring of arms and military supplies, and for the conducting of elections by loyal voters. The story of the revolution need not be repeated. Virginia's Washington, after seven long years of arduous struggle and endurance, brought it to a successful termination, at her Yorktown, in 1781. But it is well to recall that it was Virginia, the most conservative of the colonies, which in the convention of 1776, on the 6th of May, instructed her delegates in Congress to propose "to declare the United Colonies free and independent States;" and that this resulted in a Declaration of Independence, on the 4th of July, 1776, which was drawn by her Thomas Jefferson.

CHAPTER II.

SLAVERY IN VIRGINIA—THE AGITATION OF THE SLAVERY QUESTION—DISTRIBUTION OF SLAVES IN THE STATE—JOHN BROWN'S INVASION.

WHILE the war of 1861-65 between the Union, or Northern and non-slaveholding States, and the Confederate, or Southern and slaveholding was not fought by the South as a whole, and certainly not by Virginia, for the perpetuation of slavery, nor by the North, at least in its inception, for its abolition; yet every candid student of the history of the colonies and the States must admit that the slavery question, often under the name of "State rights" of one kind or another, was a dominant factor making issues that led to the temporary disruption of the Union. The history of Virginia during that war would be incomplete without a brief review of the story of her prior connection with African slavery.

Slaves were introduced into Virginia by Dutch merchantmen in 1619; from that time the importation of African negroes was engaged in by nearly all the commercial nations of Europe, especially by the Dutch, Spanish, French, Portuguese and British. In 1646, a ship from Boston was the first from the American colonies, so far as known, to engage in this traffic, which from that time until 1808 was more or less shared in by the commercial Northern States. In 1670 there were 2,000 slaves in Virginia. At the breaking out of the revolution, slavery extended over the North American continent wherever settled by Europeans. In 1774, Rhode Island, which up to that time had been considerably engaged in the slave trade, interdicted the importation of slaves into her borders. In 1778, Virginia, the second of the States to act, prohibited the introduction of slaves from abroad. Other States followed and gradual emancipation began in many of the Northern States. When Maryland refused to sign the articles of confederation of 1777, unless Vir-

ginia would give up to the confederation the great Northwest Territory beyond the Ohio, which all concede belonged to her by rights of charter, conquest and treaty, Virginia generously granted the request and conveyed that great region to the Union in 1787, only providing, that it should eventually be divided into four or five States, to be admitted on an equal footing with the original thirteen; that she should have land there, in designated localities, to distribute to her revolutionary soldiers, and that slavery should be forever prohibited from that region, but that slaves fleeing there from other States should be returned to their owners. By this deed of gift Virginia did more to draw the line of actual separation between the North and South on the question of slavery than did any or all other States combined; for the great and populous States of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin and part of Michigan, which were created from that territory, were the strongest factors in sustaining the North during the civil war,* and in eventually saving the Union.

The federal convention of 1787, which framed the Constitution of the United States, provided, as one of its compromises, that the slave trade should not be abolished by Congress until 1808. This was opposed by Virginia, who desired its immediate prohibition; but it was adopted by a vote of the New England States joined with South Carolina and Georgia. Virginia was the author of the compromise upon the question of negro representation in the convention of 1787, and probably saved that body from disruption and secured the adoption of the Constitution. South Carolina determined to leave the convention if her negroes were not counted for her representation in the Congress, and it was evident that Georgia and North Carolina would follow her example; in which event the number of States to ratify the action of the convention would be wanting. Virginia proposed and carried through, as a compromise, the provision that five negroes should be counted as equivalent to three white people in making up Federal representation.

As one after another of the Northern States abolished slavery and the States carved from the Northwest Terri-

*It is difficult to give the proper title to the war of 1861-65. It was not technically civil war, because it was not waged among citizens. Strictly speaking, it was not "Confederate," as it was not instituted by the Confederacy. The term civil is now commonly used.—[EDITOR.

tory were organized as free States, the agitation of the slavery question continued. In 1820 another compromise was adopted upon the admission of Missouri as a State, which provided that slavery should not be allowed in any State of the Union north of $36^{\circ} 30'$, the latitude of the southern boundary of Missouri. In effecting this compromise, Virginia took a prominent part, acting as mediator between the two sections.

The agitation of the slavery question continued not only between the States of the Union, but within the limits of Virginia herself, as nearly one-third of her territory, mainly the Trans-Appalachian region, was practically a free State, and its citizens, many of whom were from the adjacent States of Pennsylvania and Ohio, constantly demanded special legislation on questions of representation in the general assembly, in consequence of the large preponderance of negroes east of that chain of mountains. Many citizens of the Great Valley and of Appalachia were much in sympathy with this feeling, and in 1823 the State came very near adopting gradual emancipation, a large number of the most influential men in every portion of the commonwealth favoring it. The chief hindering cause was the question, still unanswered, "What shall be done with this great body of negroes when emancipated?" About that time the abolitionists throughout the free States became very zealous in the propagation of their peculiar views upon the subject of slavery, and deluged Congress with petitions against it and flooded the country with abolition publications. This provoked a reaction in sentiment in Virginia and the other Southern States, which again led, in 1838, to the adoption of "State rights" resolutions by Congress, reaffirming that the Federal government had no right to interfere with slavery in the States where it existed. This for the time being quieted the agitation, but the question came up again in 1845, when it was proposed to annex Texas; and was again settled by a compromise agreement, that four new States might be formed out of that great country, those north of $36^{\circ} 30'$ to be free States, and those south of it either free or slave as their citizens might elect.

The propagandists of the North and the ultra slaveholders of the South, as contending factions, still continued the agitation of this question. The three leading

religious denominations of the United States divided into northern and southern churches. In 1849 the question of the admission of California again brought strife on this subject into the Congress. After a long contention, the compromise measures of 1850, introduced by Henry Clay, were adopted, the majority of Virginians favoring them; but the question of the rights of the separate States in the territories was still left open. Then began "the irrepressible conflict," which could only be settled, as it subsequently proved, by a gigantic war.

The execution of the fugitive slave law, one of the compromise measures of 1850, soon became a flaming fire-brand waving between the free and the slave States. In 1854 the Kansas-Nebraska bill brought to fever heat the question of the control of slavery in the territories by those living therein; but, in spite of bitter opposition, a bill favoring the claims of the South was passed by a majority of nearly two-thirds of the Senate and 13 in the House, although representation in Congress at that time was Northern by a large majority. This result was largely brought about by the influence of Stephen A. Douglas, of Illinois, who contended that under the legislation of 1850 the citizens settled in the territories had the right to decide the question of slavery for themselves.

A reign of terror followed in Kansas, in 1855, when the two factions, each aided by extremists from either section of the Union, met in conflict, and opposing territorial governments were organized. In 1856, John Brown, a fanatical abolitionist, backed by others of that faction, mainly in New England, took an active part in these contentions in Kansas, leading a night attack against his pro-slavery neighbors. Riots occurred in Boston when a United States marshal attempted to enforce the fugitive slave law, and New England sent men, money and arms for the Kansas conflict.

In 1856 the question of the right of the owners of slaves to carry them into the territories came before the Supreme court of the United States for a decision, in the case of Dred Scott. The court held that the "Missouri compromise" was unconstitutional, that the territories were the common property of all the States, and that the Federal government was bound to protect the slaves as well as the other property of citizens settling in these territories. This added fuel to the flame of abolitionism. In the presi-

dential election of 1856, a Free Soil or Abolition party, under the name of the Republican party, engaged in the contest for the presidency which resulted in the election of James Buchanan, of Pennsylvania, a Democrat. The Congress that met in December of that year was organized with a Southern speaker, Orr, of South Carolina, and the struggle as to whether Kansas should be admitted as a slaveholding State was continued with ever-increasing bitterness until it caused a split in the Democratic party.

About this time appeared one of the most remarkable romances, under the name of "Uncle Tom's Cabin," by Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, that was ever published. Its overdrawn and highly-colored picture of Southern slavery greatly intensified anti-slavery feeling throughout the North, and even provoked strong criticism of the Southern States in foreign lands. This, and its results, naturally provoked strong resentment throughout the South and increased the growing alienation between the two sections.

Among the sixteen States and territories of the Union that were slaveholding in 1860, Virginia held a commanding position. Of the 384,884 slaveholders in the United States, 52,128, or about one-seventh of the whole number, lived within her borders. She ranked first in the number of this class of citizens; Georgia second, with 41,084; Kentucky third, with 38,645, and Tennessee fourth, with 36,844; these four States containing nearly one-half of the whole number of slaveholders in the Union. Virginia also owned more slaves than any other State. Of the 3,953,743 enumerated in the census of 1860, her citizens held 490,865, or about one-eighth of the whole number. Georgia was second, with 462,198; Mississippi third, with 436,631, and South Carolina fourth, with 402,406; the four States holding nearly one-half the whole number of slaves in the United States.

While Virginia had more slaveholders among her citizens than did any of her sister Southern States, she strikingly differed from them in the distribution of the ownership of her slaves, showing thereby that within her borders slavery was a peculiarly "domestic institution;" for while she had more slaveholders than any other State, yet, as a rule, the holdings of the individual were smaller. The details of ownership are worth considering. Of her 52,188 holders of slaves, 11,085 of these owned but one

each; 5,989, but two; 4,474, but three; 3,807, but four; 3,233, but five each. These figures show that about one-fifth of her slaveholders owned but a single slave, and that of three-fifths of them, each owned five or less. Those owning six each were 2,824; those seven, 2,393; those eight, 1,984; those nine, 1,788. The owners of from ten to fifteen each were 5,086; from fifteen to twenty were 3,088; from twenty to thirty were 3,017; from thirty to forty were 1,291; from forty to fifty were 609; from fifty to seventy were 503; from 70 to 100 were 243; from 100 to 200 were 105; from 200 to 300 were but eight, and from 300 to 500 but one.

The distribution of slaveholders, slaves and free negroes among the seven natural grand divisions of Virginia in 1860, is suggestively presented in the following table, showing numbers of slaveholders and of negroes (slave and free) in Virginia in 1860, by grand divisions of the State, and number of counties in each grand division:

	Counties.	Slaveholders.	Slaves.	Free Negroes.
1. Tidewater,	30	14,862	149,018	28,646
2. Midland,	25	17,841	190,489	15,746
3. Piedmont,	14	9,182	88,690	5,206
4. Blue Ridge,	3	331	1,284	99
5. The Valley,	17	6,235	41,376	5,803
6. Appalachia,	18	2,444	13,211	1,465
7. Trans-Appal'a,	41	1,522	6,797	1,081
Totals,	148	52,128	490,865	57,374

The following table presents the same facts for the portions of the State in 1860 that were organized into the State of West Virginia, December 31, 1862, and admitted into the Union as a State, June 19, 1863:

	Counties.	Slaveholders.	Slaves.	Free Negroes.
1. The Valley,	2	967	5,610	797
2. Appalachia,	9	1,132	6,060	922
3. Trans-Appal'a,	39	1,506	6,706	1,054
Totals,	50	3,605	18,376	2,773

These tables furnish a key to many of the political and military happenings in Virginia during the civil war. They show that the slave population of Virginia was mainly confined to the region east of the Appalachian mountains. In Tidewater, where slavery was first planted within the limits of the Union, there were

numerous large plantations, but many of the slaves of that region and many of its large number of free negroes were found within its commercial and manufacturing cities. The area of Midland was but little more than that of Tidewater, but its slaveholders and slaves were considerably more numerous, for in its industries slave labor was profitable. The Piedmont country, the fourteen counties east of and adjacent to the Blue ridge, was throughout a prosperous agricultural region, while most of its counties southwest of the Rappahannock basin were extensively engaged in the production of heavy tobaccos, hence slave labor was there found profitable. The three elevated counties upon the plateau of the Blue ridge were mainly devoted to grazing; consequently their slave population was small. The seventeen counties of the Great Valley of Virginia were all famous for the production of cereals, and for their dairying and grazing interests, while large crops of tobacco were grown in all the counties southwest of the valley of the Shenandoah. Its people were thrifty, and a few slaves were owned upon most of its large farms. The Appalachian country, while traversed by many ranges of mountains, was also striped with fertile valleys, in which lived prosperous graziers, most of whom held families of slaves. Virginia's forty-one Trans-Appalachian counties were mainly a forest-covered and thinly-peopled region, and few slaves were there held except in the valley of the Big Kanawha and along the Ohio below the mouth of that river. In proportion to the population, the number of slaves was extremely small, and especially was this true in the part of the State which extended northward between Ohio and Pennsylvania, almost to Lake Erie.

The people of the two Valleys and of the nine Appalachian counties that were subsequently embraced in West Virginia, remained, by a large majority, loyal to the State during the war; and, in a large degree, the same may be said of the Trans-Appalachian counties in and southwest of the Big Kanawha basin. The West Virginia secessionists, those that by act of Congress, when its membership was almost exclusively Northern, seceded from Virginia in 1861, were mainly confined to the Trans-Appalachian counties of Northwestern Virginia, where there were but few slaves and still fewer slaveholders, and where the larger portion of the population was more in

sympathy with the adjacent States of Ohio and Pennsylvania than with the rest of Virginia. These people, by mere act of Congress and without her consent, deprived Virginia of over one-third of her territory and nearly one-fourth of her population.

The humane and kindly character of African slavery in Virginia was eloquently attested by the fact that during the war, almost without exception, the slaves remained faithful and loyal to their masters; that none rose in insurrection, and that but few, if any, were guilty of crimes against person or property when, owing to the absence of a large portion of the white male population of the State in the Confederate armies, the country and the helpless portion of its population were entirely at their mercy. The kindly relations of the two races in Virginia are forcibly illustrated by the large numbers of free negroes, descendants of former slaves, that were allowed to live peacefully and contentedly, prior to 1860, in every part of the commonwealth.

In the winter of 1857-58, John Brown, who had been a leader in and a promoter of lawlessness during the troubles in Kansas—undertaken, as he himself confessed, for the purpose of inflaming the public mind on the subject of slavery, that he might perfect organizations to bring about servile insurrections in the slave States—collected a number of young men in that territory, including several of his sons, and, with the use of funds and arms that had been furnished for his Kansas operations, placed these men under military instruction, by one of their number, at Springdale, in Iowa. In the spring of 1858 he took these men to Chatham, in Canada West, where, on the 8th of May, he assembled a “provisional constitutional convention,” made up of those he brought with him and a number of resident free negroes. On the day of its assembling, this convention adopted a “provisional constitution and ordinances for the people of the United States,” the preamble of which began: “Whereas slavery, throughout its entire existence in the United States, is none other than a most barbarous, unprovoked, and unjustifiable war of one portion of its citizens upon another portion. . . . Therefore, we, citizens of the United States and the oppressed people who . . . are declared to have no rights which the white man is bound to respect . . . ordain and establish for our-

selves the following provisional constitution and ordinances, the better to protect our persons, property, lives and liberties, and govern our actions." On the 10th, after appointing a committee with full power to fill all the executive, legislative, judicial and military offices named in the constitution adopted, this convention adjourned, *sine die*, and Brown took his Kansas party to Ohio, where he disbanded them subject to call, but sending his Capt. John E. Cook, of Connecticut (who was subsequently executed), to stay at Harper's Ferry, Va., and make himself familiar with the surrounding country and its citizens, and especially with the negro slaves, for the information of his leader.

Brown, under the assumed name of Isaac Smith, appeared in the neighborhood of Harper's Ferry about the 1st of July, 1859, and there is evidence to show that he extended his examination of the country for future strategic purposes, as far up the Shenandoah valley as Staunton, concealing his purposes by giving out that he was a farmer from New York, with his two sons and a son-in-law, desiring to rent or purchase land. Soon after his arrival at Harper's Ferry he rented the small Kennedy farm in Maryland, some four and a half miles from Harper's Ferry, where he did some little farming, and, to explain his secret movements, said he was accustomed to mining operations, and expected to find valuable mineral deposits in that mountain region. In the meantime he kept two or three of his party, under assumed names, at Chambersburg, Pa., who there received arms, ammunition and other military stores, which had been collected for use in Kansas, and forwarded them from time to time to Brown's habitation.

On October 10, 1859, from "Headquarters War Department, Provisional Army, Harper's Ferry," John Brown, commander-in-chief, issued his "General Order No. 1," organizing "the divisions of the provisional army and the coalition," providing for company, battalion, regiment, brigade and general staff organization. It is probable that at the time of issuing this order Brown had with him, at the Kennedy farm, his whole band of followers, including his spy Cook, and there formulated his final plans of invasion; and that soon thereafter he removed to a schoolhouse nearer Harper's Ferry, the hundreds of carbines, pistols, spears or pikes, and a quantity of car-

tridges, powder, percussion caps, and other military supplies, that he had gathered for arming the negroes when they rose to insurrection in response to his call and movements.

About 11 p. m., Sunday, October 16, 1859, Brown, accompanied by 14 white men from Connecticut, New York, Ohio, Iowa, Pennsylvania, Maine, Indiana and Canada, and 5 negroes from Ohio, Pennsylvania and New York, some 20 insurgents, all fully armed, crossed the Potomac into Virginia at Harper's Ferry, overpowered the watchmen at the Baltimore & Ohio railroad bridge, the United States armory and arsenal near the Baltimore & Ohio, and the rifle factory above the town on the Shenandoah, and placed guards at those points and at the street corners of the town. Brown established himself in the thick-walled brick building at the armory gate, one room of which was the quarters of the watchman and the other contained a fire-engine; he then sent six men, including the spy Cook, under Captain Stevens, to seize the principal citizens in the neighborhood and incite the negroes to rise in insurrection. This party broke into the house of Col. L. W. Washington, about five miles from Harper's Ferry, about 1:30 a. m. of the 17th, and forced him and four of his servants to accompany them to Harper's Ferry, he in his own carriage and followed by one of his farm wagons, which they seized. On their way back, at about 3 a. m., they captured Mr. Allstadt and six of his servants, placing arms in the hands of the latter. On reaching Harper's Ferry, Cook and five of the captured slaves were sent with Colonel Washington's four-horse wagon to bring forward the arms, etc., deposited at the schoolhouse in Maryland.

In the meantime Brown halted, for a time, an east-bound passenger train on the Baltimore & Ohio, one of his men killing the railroad guard at the bridge; he also captured, as they appeared on the streets in the early morning, some 40 citizens of Harper's Ferry, whom he confined, with Messrs. Washington and Allstadt, in one room of the gate or engine house which he had selected as his fort or point of defense.

News of these occurrences spread rapidly, and citizens and citizen soldiery, with arms, hastened from all the surrounding parts of Virginia and Maryland to resist this high-handed invasion of their homes and States. About

11 a. m., of the 17th, the Jefferson Guards, from Charlestown, arrived, soon followed by the Hamtramck and the Shepherdstown troop, from Shepherdstown, and Alburty's company from Martinsburg. These, under the command of Col. R. A. Baylor, forced the insurgents within the armory enclosure, which they surrounded by a cordon of pickets. Brown then withdrew his men into the gate house, which he proceeded to loophole and fortify, taking with him ten of the most prominent of his Virginia and Maryland captives, which he termed "hostages," to insure the safety of his band. From openings in the building the insurgents fired upon all white people that came in sight.

After sunset of the 17th, Capt. B. B. Washington's company from Winchester, and three companies from Frederick City, Md., under Colonel Shriver, arrived; later came companies from Baltimore, under Gen. C. C. Edgerton, and a detachment of United States marines, commanded by Lieut. J. Green and Major Russell, accompanied by Lieut.-Col. R. E. Lee, of the Second United States cavalry (with his aide, Lieut. J. E. B. Stuart, of the First United States cavalry), who, happening to be at Arlington, his home, near Washington, had been ordered to take command at Harper's Ferry, recapture the government armory and arsenal, and restore order. Colonel Lee halted the Baltimore troops at Sandy Hook, about a mile and a half east of Harper's Ferry, directed the United States artillery companies (ordered from Fort Monroe) to halt in Baltimore, then crossed to Harper's Ferry with the marines, disposed them in the armory grounds so as to prevent the escape of the insurgents, and awaited dawn of the 18th before attacking Brown's stronghold, for fear of sacrificing the lives of the "hostages" in a midnight attack.

Soon after daylight of the 18th, after having posted the volunteer troops so as to completely invest the armory grounds, and prepared for an assault upon Brown's fort by the marines, Lee, under a flag by Lieutenant Stuart, made a written demand upon Brown to surrender himself, his associates and the prisoners they had taken, with the assurance that "if they will peaceably surrender themselves and restore the pillaged property, they shall be kept in safety to await orders of the President. . . . That if he is compelled to take them by force he cannot

answer for their safety." Stuart was instructed to receive no counter propositions from Brown, and to say that if they accepted the proffered terms they must immediately give up their arms and release their prisoners. As Lee expected, Brown spurned the offered terms of surrender. At a given signal to this effect from Stuart, Lee ordered forward twelve marines, led by Lieutenant Green, that he had put under cover near the engine-house, three of them supplied with sledge hammers to break in the doors, to attack Brown's party with bayonets, taking care not to injure the citizens held captive, nor the captured slaves unless they resisted. The storming party quickly attacked the doors, but Brown had barricaded them inside with the fire-engine and fastened them by ropes, so the sledges were of no avail. Lee then ordered forward reserves, with a heavy ladder for a battering ram, with which a portion of the door was dashed in and admission gained. Up to that time Brown's fire had been harmless, but at the threshold one marine was mortally wounded. The others quickly ended the contest, bayoneting the insurrectionists that resisted, Lieutenant Green cutting down Brown with his sword. The whole affair was over in a few minutes, and the captured citizens and slaves were released. A party of marines under Stuart was then sent to the Kennedy farm, which captured pikes (said to have been over 1,000), blankets, tools, tents, and other necessaries for a campaign, which Brown had there stored. A party of Maryland troops secured from the schoolhouse, where Brown had deposited them, boxes of carbines and revolvers, and the horses and wagon of Colonel Washington, which Brown had sent there to bring his military supplies to Harper's Ferry.

Colonel Lee in his official report to Col. S. Cooper, adjutant-general of the United States army, dated October 19th, stated, from information in papers taken from the insurgents and from their statements: "It appears that the party consisted of 19 men—14 white and 5 black. They were headed by John Brown, of some notoriety in Kansas, who in June last located himself in Maryland, at the Kennedy farm, where he has been engaged in preparing to capture the United States works at Harper's Ferry. He avows that his object was the liberation of the slaves of Virginia and of the whole South, and

acknowledges that he has been disappointed in his expectations of aid from the black as well as the white population, both in the Southern and Northern States. The blacks whom he forced from their homes in this neighborhood, as far as I could learn, gave him no voluntary assistance. The servants . . . retained at the armory, took no part in the conflict . . . and returned to their homes as soon as released. The result proves the plan was the attempt of a fanatic or madman, which could only end in failure; and its temporary success was owing to the panic and confusion he succeeded in creating by magnifying his numbers."

Lee, by order of Secretary of War John B. Floyd, turned over to the United States marshal and to the sheriff of Jefferson county, Va., Brown and two white men and two negroes. Ten of the white men and two of the negroes associated with Brown were killed during the combat with them; one white man, Cook, escaped, but was subsequently captured and executed; and one negro was unaccounted for. The insurgents killed three white men, Mr. F. Beckham, the mayor of Harper's Ferry, Mr. G. W. Turner, one of the first citizens of Jefferson county, and Private Quinn of the marine corps, and a negro railroad porter; they wounded eight white citizens and one of the marine corps. After this affair was over, great alarm was caused by a report, about sundown of the 18th, from Pleasant valley in Maryland, that a body of men had descended from the mountains, and was massacring the residents of that valley. Colonel Lee, though incredulous, promptly headed a body of marines and hastened to the locality named, only to find the alarm false.

In concluding his report, Colonel Lee expressed his thanks to Lieutenants Stuart and Green and Major Russell "for the aid they afforded me, and my entire commendation of the conduct of the detachment of marines, who were at all times ready and prompt in the execution of any duty. The promptness with which the volunteer troops repaired to the scene of disturbance, and the alacrity they displayed to suppress the gross outrage against law and order, I know will elicit your hearty approbation." He enclosed to Cooper a printed copy of the provisional constitution and ordinances for the people of the United States, of which there was found a large number prepared for issue by the insurgents.

During the afternoon of October 18th, Gov. Henry A. Wise arrived at Harper's Ferry and took precautions for the protection of Virginia and the execution of her laws, Brown, having been turned over to the civil authorities of Jefferson county, was brought to trial at Charlestown on the following Thursday, October 20th, because on that day began the regular fall session of the circuit court. A grand jury indicted him upon the charges of treason and murder. His prosecution was conducted before an impartial judge and jury by Hon. Andrew Hunter; he was defended by able counsel from Virginia and other States, including Hon. D. W. Voorhees, of Indiana, and was condemned and convicted. His trial lasted nearly a month, and, as Brown himself admitted, was fair and impartial. He was condemned to be executed on the 2d of December. His counsel asked the Virginia court of appeals for a stay of execution, on pleas presented, but this was refused.

After the condemnation of Brown and his associates, fearing from published threats that an attempt might be made by Northern sympathizers to rescue them, Governor Wise ordered Virginia troops to Charlestown to guard the prisoners until after their execution. Toward the last of November about 1,000 were there assembled, among them the cadets of the Virginia military institute, under command of Col. F. H. Smith, the superintendent. Maj. T. J. Jackson, the famous "Stonewall" Jackson of the war, was present in command of the cadet battery. He witnessed the execution of Brown about midday, December 2, 1859. In a letter to his wife he wrote of Brown, "he behaved with unflinching firmness," and of the execution: "My command was in front of the cadets, all facing south. One howitzer I assigned to Mr. Truehart, on the left of the cadets, and with the other I remained on the right. Other troops occupied different positions around the scaffold, and altogether it was an imposing but very solemn scene. I was much impressed with the thought that before me stood a man, in the full vigor of health, who must in a few moments enter eternity. I sent up the petition that he might be saved. Awful was the thought that he might in a few minutes receive the sentence, 'Depart, ye wicked, into everlasting fire!' I hope that he was prepared to die, but I am doubtful."

On the day of Brown's execution, bells were tolled and minute guns fired in many places in the North, and church services and public meetings were held for the purpose of glorifying his deeds and sanctifying the cause he represented, recognizing in him a martyr to the teachings of the abolitionists. Eventually his name became the slogan under which, as a battle hymn, the Northern troops invaded and overran the South.

In reference to Brown's invasion of Virginia, Hon. A. H. Stephens, in his history of the United States, says: "This act greatly inflamed the Southern mind, especially as it was lauded by the official authorities of those Northern States which had refused to comply with their obligations under the Constitution in the matter of the rendition of fugitive slaves."

It is interesting to note the men who appeared upon the scenes of these opening hostilities between the North and the South, and who subsequently became famous or celebrated characters in the great drama of the civil war. Among those who became Confederate generals were: S. Cooper, R. E. Lee, J. E. B. Stuart, John B. Floyd and Henry A. Wise; and among colonels, C. J. Faulkner and A. R. Boteler. In the committee of the United States Senate, appointed by resolution of December 14, 1859, to inquire into the facts attending this invasion, were Hons. Jefferson Davis and J. M. Mason, and this committee had before it as witnesses, Hons. W. H. Seward, J. R. Giddings, Henry Wilson and Andrew Hunter. John A. Andrews, of Massachusetts, secured funds to pay Brown's counsel.

CHAPTER III.

FROM JOHN BROWN'S EXECUTION TO THE FEDERAL INVASION—THE ELECTION OF PRESIDENT LINCOLN—MEETING OF THE VIRGINIA CONVENTION—GOVERNOR LETCHER'S REPLY TO THE CALL FOR TROOPS—SEIZURE OF HARPER'S FERRY—UNION WITH THE CONFEDERATE STATES.

THE United States Congress met on December 5, 1859, three days after the execution of John Brown. The most intense excitement prevailed throughout the Union, inflamed by Brown's execution and the events that preceded it. The House of Representatives did not succeed in electing a speaker until February 1, 1860, having spent two months in wrangling over the questions of slavery, State rights and secession. A Republican, Pennington of New Jersey, was elected speaker.

On December 1st, the general assembly of Virginia met in regular session, and at the suggestion of Governor Wise proceeded to reorganize the militia of the State, to provide for volunteer military companies, the collection of munitions of war, and in general for putting the State in a condition of defense. The people, although almost unanimously in favor of the Union, seconded the action of the legislature by encouraging home manufactures of every kind and advocating non-intercourse with the North because of its attitude on the vital questions of the day. On the 16th of December, others of Brown's conspirators were hanged at Charlestown, which was still guarded by a number of volunteer military companies assembled by Governor Wise. This again attracted attention to Virginia, and added to the political excitement which had been somewhat quieted after the execution of Brown.

On January 1, 1860, John Letcher, who had been elected, as a decidedly Union man, on May 26, 1859, was inaugurated governor of Virginia. He sent a strong message to the general assembly, recommending the adoption of resolutions for calling a convention of the States of the

Union to consider the condition of the country and provide some remedy for the existing state of political affairs, since, in his opinion, there must be a speedy settlement of the slavery controversy if the Union was to be preserved, to which end everything should be done "consistent with honor, patriotism and duty." At the same time he urged the promotion of the efficiency of the military organizations of the State, the enlargement of the Virginia military institute, and the purchase of munitions of war. The general assembly invited Col. R. E. Lee, of the United States army, who was at Arlington on furlough, to come to Richmond and give advice concerning the organizing of the Virginia militia.

By official reports submitted to this general assembly, it appears that in 1859 the real estate in the commonwealth was valued at \$374,989,889; the slaves at \$313,148,275; and all the property of the people, including the preceding, at \$1,143,676,088, which, if equally divided among the whites of the State, would give to each \$1,051. The debt of Virginia, incurred for public improvements, in most of which the State owned a three-fifths interest, was \$29,106,559.

The beginning of 1860, the year for the election of a President and Vice-President of the United States to succeed Buchanan and Breckinridge, found the House of Representatives still unorganized, after a month of effort, and Congress and the general assembly of Virginia, as well as the legislatures of the other States that were in session, engaged in the excited discussion of the questions of slavery, State rights and secession, to the exclusion of nearly all other topics. Upon these issues the people divided and subdivided, until four parties, instead of the usual two, prepared to nominate candidates for President and Vice-President. The Democratic party in Virginia met in convention at Richmond, February 16th, and after a discordant session appointed delegates, with a diversity of opinions upon the vital questions of the day, to a national convention. The Constitutional Union party in Virginia, the one embracing most of the Whigs and all those opposed to disunion and secession, met in Richmond, February 28th, and elected delegates to a national convention.

The Democratic party met in national convention, at Charleston, S. C., April 23d, and, after many ballots and

much rancorous debate, instead of nominating candidates, split into two wings, one of which met in Baltimore, on the 23d of June, nominated Stephen A. Douglas, of Illinois, for President, and Herschel V. Johnson, of Georgia, for Vice-President, and declared in favor of leaving the question of slavery in the Territories to the voters of each Territory, or to the supreme court. The Southern wing of the Democratic party met June 28th, nominated John C. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, for President, and Joseph Lane, of Oregon, for Vice-President, and declared that neither Congress nor a Territorial legislature had the right to prohibit slavery in a Territory, and that it was the duty of the Federal government to protect slavery in the Territories when necessary. The convention of the Constitutional Union party met in Baltimore, May 9th, and nominated John Bell, of Tennessee, for President, and Edward Everett, of Massachusetts, for Vice-President, announcing for its broad platform, "the Union, the Constitution and the enforcement of the laws." The Republican party held its convention in Chicago, May 18th, and nominated Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois (a son of Kentucky and a grandson of Virginia), for President, and Hannibal Hamlin, of Maine, for Vice-President, and declared itself in favor of the prohibition of slavery in the Territories by congressional action.

The candidates nominated and the platform of each party defined, a fierce political contest was waged throughout the extent of the Union, during the months of July, August, September and October. The election was held on November 6th, with these results: Lincoln and Hamlin received 180 electoral votes, from eighteen States all lying north of Mason and Dixon's line; Breckinridge and Lane received 72 votes, all from Southern States, including Delaware and Maryland; Bell and Everett received the votes, 39 in number, of Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee; while Douglas and Johnson received 12 votes, those of the single State of Missouri. Lincoln was declared elected, as he had a majority of the votes in the electoral college, but only 1,857,610 votes of the people, against 2,804,560 which were divided among the three other candidates.

This election of sectional candidates by purely sectional votes produced the most intense excitement throughout the Southern States and among all the people without

respect to their previous party associations. A number of these States promptly called conventions to take action as to their future policy. Congress met on December 3, 1860, and heard a message from President Buchanan, in which he argued against the right of secession but expressed doubt as to the right of Congress to coerce the States to obedience to its mandates by military force. On the 6th the House of Representatives appointed a select committee of thirty-three, to take measures for the perpetuity of the Union; on the 10th, Howell Cobb, of Georgia, resigned as secretary of the treasury; on the 12th, Lieut.-Gen. Winfield Scott, of Virginia, commanding the army of the United States, arrived in Washington, by order of the President, to advise in reference to military affairs; on the 14th, Lewis Cass, of Michigan, resigned as secretary of state; on the 20th, South Carolina adopted an ordinance of secession; on the 25th, Maj. Robert Anderson transferred the Federal garrison from Fort Moultrie to Fort Sumter, in Charleston harbor; on the 27th, South Carolina occupied Castle Pinckney and Fort Moultrie, captured the United States revenue cutter William Aiken, and her three commissioners arrived in Washington to treat, as representatives of an independent State, with the Federal executive. On the 29th, John B. Floyd, of Virginia, resigned as secretary of war, because President Buchanan would not order Major Anderson to return to Fort Moultrie. On the 30th, South Carolina took possession of the United States arsenal at Charleston. This rapid succession of disintegrating events marked the close of 1860. Between the 2d and 7th of January, 1861, South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama and Florida took possession of a number of United States forts and arsenals within their borders, although none of these except South Carolina had as yet seceded. On the 8th, Jacob Thompson, of Mississippi, secretary of the interior, resigned from Buchanan's cabinet. Mississippi adopted an ordinance of secession on the 9th, Florida on the 10th, Alabama on the 11th, Georgia on the 19th and Louisiana on the 26th, followed by Texas, February 1st. On the 9th of February, the *Star of the West*, bringing relief to Fort Sumter, was fired on and driven back from Charleston. The States which seceded quickly seized other United States forts and property, and the United States sent reinforcements to forts within these States

still in its possession, the surrender of which had been demanded by authorities of the States in which they were situated.

In the midst of this stirring and rapid sequence of events, Gov. John Letcher, by proclamation, convened the general assembly of Virginia in extra session, on the 7th of January, 1861, to consider the critical political condition of the country. On the 14th that body ordered an election, on the following 4th of February, of delegates to a convention of the State, the people at the same time to vote on the question as to whether any ordinance changing the relations of Virginia to the other States of the Union should be submitted to a popular vote for approval or rejection. On the 19th the general assembly invited the other States of the Union to meet it in a peace conference, at Washington, that should endeavor to heal the dissensions then prevailing, and appointed ex-President John Tyler, Hons. William C. Rives, John W. Brockenbrough, George W. Summers, and James A. Seddon, some of its most distinguished citizens, as delegates to that conference. It also appointed ex-President Tyler a commissioner to the President of the United States, and Judge John Robertson a commissioner to the States that had seceded, to request each of these to abstain from acts likely to bring on a collision of arms pending Virginia's efforts to secure peace. On February 4th this peace conference met in Washington, D. C., with representatives present from thirteen of the free States and seven of the border slave States. On the same day the Southern slave States, with the exception of the seven border States that had not seceded, met in convention at Montgomery Ala. Subsequently, during the conference at Washington, delegates appeared from other States until twenty-one were represented. That conference submitted a plan of reconciliation to Congress which was rejected, and soon thereafter Congress adjourned.

On February 13th the delegates that had been elected to the Virginia convention met at Richmond. On March 4th Abraham Lincoln was inaugurated President of the United States. On the 6th the Virginia commissioners to the peace convention at Washington submitted a report, through Governor Letcher, to the Virginia convention, setting forth the unsatisfactory results of the conference. On the 8th of April the Virginia

convention, still anxiously seeking to secure peace, selected three of its most distinguished members, Alexander H. H. Stuart, William Ballard Preston and George W. Randolph, to visit Washington and confer with President Lincoln in reference to the course he intended to pursue in dealing with the Confederate States. This delegation met Mr. Lincoln on the 12th, and on the next day, by appointment, had a conference with him, during which he read and handed them a paper setting forth his views and declaring his intention to coerce the seceding States into obedience to Federal authority. That same day Fort Sumter surrendered to the Confederate States.

On the 15th of April, President Lincoln issued a call for 75,000 militia, apportioned among the States, to serve for three months, to suppress combinations against the laws of the United States in the States of South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Florida, Mississippi, Louisiana, and Texas. He also summoned the Congress to meet on the 4th of July, 1861. That there might be no misunderstanding of the object of his call for troops, Lincoln stated in his proclamation: "I deem it proper to say that the first service assigned to the forces hereby called forth will probably be to repossess the forts, places and property which have been seized from the Union." In pursuance of Lincoln's call, the following letter was sent to Governor Letcher:

War Department, Washington, April 15, 1861.

To His Excellency the Governor of Virginia:

Sir: Under the act of Congress for calling forth "militia to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections, repel invasions, etc.," approved February 28, 1795, I have the honor to request your Excellency to cause to be immediately detached from the militia of your State the quota designated in the table below, to serve as infantry or riflemen for the period of three months, unless sooner discharged.

Your Excellency will please communicate to me the time, at or about, which your quota will be expected at its rendezvous, as it will be met as soon as practicable by an officer to muster it into the service and pay of the United States.

SIMON CAMERON, Secretary of War.

The quota of Virginia called for in the table attached to this letter was three regiments, embracing 2,340 men, to rendezvous at Staunton, Wheeling and Gordonsville. To this communication Governor Letcher made prompt reply, as follows:

Executive Department, Richmond, Va., April 15, 1861.

Hon. Simon Cameron, Secretary of War:

Sir: I received your telegram of the 15th, the genuineness of which I doubted. Since that time I have received your communication, mailed the same day, in which I am requested to detach from the militia of the State of Virginia "the quota designated in a table," which you append, "to serve as infantry or riflemen for the period of three months, unless sooner discharged."

In reply to this communication, I have only to say that the militia of Virginia will not be furnished to the powers at Washington for any such use or purpose as they have in view. Your object is to subjugate the Southern States, and a requisition made upon me for such an object—an object, in my judgment, not within the purview of the Constitution or the act of 1795—will not be complied with.

You have chosen to inaugurate civil war, and, having done so, we will meet it in a spirit as determined as the administration has exhibited toward the South.

Respectfully, JOHN LETCHER.

Lincoln's call for troops to invade and coerce the new-born Confederacy, and Letcher's reply to that call, wrought an immediate change in the current of public opinion in Virginia, from the mountains to the sea. At the election of delegates to the State convention, held on the 4th of February, the best and ablest men of the commonwealth had been chosen, largely without regard to party affiliation, but because they were for the maintenance of the Union. The citizens of the State further safeguarded their views upon this subject by deciding, by a large majority, at the time of that election, that any action of the convention looking to a change of the relations of the States to the Union must be submitted to a popular vote for approval or rejection.

Up to this time the convention had been mainly engaged in efforts to conciliate the discordant sections, urging the general government, which was now entirely Northern in character, to abstain from hostile action toward the seceded States, and at the same time endeavoring to restrain the latter, in the hope that time and reflection would lead to a reconsideration of their, in its opinion, hasty and premature action. The Confederacy had sent its ablest men to urge Virginia to join it, satisfied that unless she did so the effort to organize a new and independent nation would be a failure. To these eminent men the convention had given a respectful hearing, but had declined the proffered alliance, satisfied that if she joined the Southern Confederacy, almost her entire territory would become the scene of a fierce and long-continued

civil war, the brunt and burden of which would fall upon her more heavily than upon any other State. But as the views of the people were changed by Lincoln's call, so were those of a majority of the members of the convention. As soon as the President's call for troops was known, the convention met, with closed doors, and within two days thereafter, on Wednesday, April 17, 1861, adopted an ordinance of secession, in these words:

An ordinance to repeal the ratification of the Constitution of the United States of America by the State of Virginia, and to resume all the rights and powers granted under said Constitution:

The people of Virginia, in their ratification of the Constitution of the United States of America, adopted by them in convention on the twenty-fifth day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand, seven hundred and eighty-eight, having declared that the powers granted under the said Constitution were derived from the people of the United States, and might be resumed whenever the same should be perverted to their injury and oppression, and the Federal government having perverted said powers, not only to the injury of the people of Virginia, but to the oppression of the South or slaveholding States,

Now, therefore, we, the people of Virginia, do declare and ordain, That the ordinance adopted by the people of this State in convention, on the twenty-fifth of June, in the year of our Lord, one thousand, seven hundred and eighty-eight, whereby the Constitution of the United States of America was ratified, and all acts of the general assembly of this State ratifying or adopting amendments to said Constitution are hereby repealed and abrogated; that the union between the State of Virginia and the other States under the Constitution aforesaid is hereby dissolved, and that the State of Virginia is in the full possession and exercise of all the rights of sovereignty which belong and appertain to a free and independent State.

And they do further declare, That said Constitution of the United States of America is no longer binding on any of the citizens of this State.

This ordinance shall take effect and be an act of this day when ratified by a majority of the votes of the people of this State, cast at a poll to be taken thereon, on the fourth Thursday in May next, in pursuance of a schedule hereafter to be enacted.

Done in convention in the city of Richmond, on the seventeenth day of April, in the year of our Lord, one thousand, eight hundred and sixty-one, and in the eighty-fifth year of the commonwealth of Virginia.

This ordinance was adopted by a vote of 81 for and 51 against. Subsequently, after the will of the people was made known by a vote taken on May 23d, which by an overwhelming majority ratified the act of the convention, others signed the ordinance, until the signatures of 146 members of the convention were attached to it, leaving but few, mainly from Trans-Appalachian Virginia, who refused to sign.

Gen. J. E. Johnston, in the opening of his Narrative, says:

The composition of the convention assembled in Richmond in the spring of 1861, to consider the question of secession, proved that the people of Virginia did not regard Mr. Lincoln's election as a sufficient cause for that measure, for at least two-thirds of its members were elected as "Union men." And they and their constituents continued to be so, until the determination to "coerce" the seceded States was proclaimed by the President of the United States, and Virginia required to furnish her quota of the troops to be organized for that purpose. War being then inevitable, and the convention compelled to decide whether the State should aid in the subjugation of the other Southern States, or join them in the defense of the principles which they had professed since 1789—belong to the invading party, or to that standing on the defensive—it chose the latter, and passed its ordinance of secession. The people confirmed that choice by an overwhelming vote.

The action of the Virginia convention was kept secret for nearly two days in order to give time to take possession of the United States armory and arsenal at Harper's Ferry, and volunteer companies were secretly hurried from the valley for this purpose. These troops reached Halltown, about five miles from Harper's Ferry, late in the afternoon of the 18th of April. Learning of their advance, the small Federal garrison there, at 10 p. m., fired the armory, and crossing into Maryland retreated all night toward the United States barracks at Carlisle. The Virginia troops occupied the town shortly after its evacuation, and proceeded to extinguish the fires. On the nomination of the governor, Gen. William B. Taliaferro was, on the 18th, assigned to the command of Virginia troops ordered to assemble at Norfolk for the purpose of capturing the Gosport navy yard. The same day, at the instance of General Scott, President Lincoln offered to Col. R. E. Lee the command of the United States army intended for the invasion of Virginia. On the 20th Colonel Lee resigned his commission in the United States army, and on the 22d he was elected by the Virginia convention, major-general to command the forces of the State, for which provision had been made to mobilize for its defense. General Lee accepted this appointment, and on the 23d was assigned to the command of the military and naval forces.

On April 20th a Federal expedition from Fort Monroe attempted to destroy the dry dock at the Gosport navy yard, near Norfolk, but only with partial success, as the Virginia troops arrived and took possession.

The same day Governor Letcher made public the following call for volunteers:

Executive Department, Richmond, April 20, 1861.

In obedience to a resolution of the convention, the injunction of secrecy having been removed, the following section of an ordinance passed by the convention is published for the information of the public:

"Be it ordained, That the governor of this commonwealth be and is hereby authorized and required to call into the service of the State as many volunteers as may be necessary to repel invasion and protect the citizens of the State in the present emergency, which volunteers we will receive in companies and organize into regiments, brigades and divisions, according to the force required; the governor shall appoint and commission the general, field and staff officers of said volunteers, and proceed to have them organized and instructed. And that he shall immediately invite all efficient and worthy Virginians and residents of Virginia in the army and navy of the United States to retire therefrom, and to enter the service of Virginia, assigning to them such rank as will not reverse the relative rank held by them in the United States service, and will at least be equivalent thereto."

By order of the Governor.

GEORGE W. MUNFORD, Secretary of the Commonwealth.

Immediately after the passage of the ordinance of secession, most of the members of the convention and of the general assembly of Virginia from the Trans-Alleghany section left Richmond, and they presently called a meeting of the citizens of that region who were opposed to secession to assemble at Clarksburg. That meeting issued a call to the Trans-Alleghany counties to send delegates to a convention to meet at Wheeling on the 13th of May, which convened with so-called representatives from 26 of the 140 counties of Virginia, and issued a call for an election, on June 4th, of delegates to a convention "of the State of Virginia," to meet in Wheeling on June 11th. It also advised its supporters to vote at the coming May election against the ordinance of secession, and at the same time to elect members to the United States Congress from the three Trans-Alleghany districts of Virginia.

On April 21st the governor of Virginia, in pursuance of his call of the 20th, issued the following proclamation:

By virtue of authority vested in the executive by the convention, I, John Letcher, governor of the commonwealth of Virginia, do hereby order that each volunteer company, equipped and armed, whether infantry, artillery or riflemen, in the counties lying west of the city of Richmond, between Richmond and the Blue ridge, and in the valley of Virginia from the county of Rockbridge to the Tennessee line, establish forthwith on the lines of speedy communica-

tion a rendezvous, and hold themselves in readiness for immediate orders; telegraph or send by express to the executive the names of captains, number of men, and description of force. It is further ordered that officers of all grades on the line of the Potomac render obedience to the orders of Gen. Philip St. George Cocke, who has been assigned to the command of that section of the military operations of the State bounded by said river.

Given under my hand as governor, and under the seal of the commonwealth at Richmond, 21st April, 1861, and in the eighty-fifth year of the commonwealth.

By the Governor:

JOHN LETCHER.

GEORGE W. MUNFORD, Secretary of the Commonwealth.

On April 24th the convention appointed commissioners to meet Vice-President A. H. Stephens, the commissioner of the Confederate States, to formulate an agreement for provisional co-operation in the pending conflict between the Confederate States and the United States, and on the 25th it ratified the agreement of these commissioners and conditionally adopted the provisional constitution of the Confederate States. On the 1st of May the convention adopted an ordinance releasing all officials and citizens of the State from any obligation to support the Constitution of the United States, and absolving them from all obligations arising from oaths to support that Constitution. On the same day Governor Letcher called out the volunteer forces of the State to resist invasion, and on the 3d issued a call for volunteers. On the 4th Col. George A. Porterfield was assigned to the command of the Virginia troops in northwestern Virginia and directed to establish his headquarters at Grafton, where the two branches of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad diverge, the one to Wheeling and the other to Parkersburg. On the 10th Maj.-Gen. R. E. Lee was assigned to the command of all the Confederate forces serving in Virginia.

On the 23d of May the Virginia ordinance of secession was ratified, by a popular vote, by a majority of about 130,000. On the 24th the Federal army at Washington advanced into Virginia and occupied Arlington heights and Alexandria, and on the 26th the Federal forces under General McClellan advanced into northwestern Virginia and occupied Grafton.

CHAPTER IV.

THE PLAN OF INVASION—NORTHWESTERN VIRGINIA— GRAFTON, PHILIPPI AND RICH MOUNTAIN—MAY TO JULY, 1861.

THE concentration of troops in the States adjacent to Virginia, under President Lincoln's call for 75,000 men, indicated very clearly an intention to invade Virginia from several directions: (1) From Washington along the Orange & Alexandria railroad toward the Virginia Central, at Gordonsville, threatening the line of communication between Richmond and the western portion of the State; (2) from Fort Monroe up the peninsula toward Richmond, and to the same objective by the James; (3) by way of the Cumberland valley, from Harrisburg through Chambersburg into the Shenandoah valley and the adjacent Potomac valleys to the west; (4) from Ohio into western Virginia, by the line of the Great Kanawha valley toward Staunton, in the center of the State, and simultaneously from Wheeling and Parkersburg along the Baltimore & Ohio eastward to Grafton, and thence southeastward, also to Staunton. To meet these threatened movements, Gen. R. E. Lee, when Governor Letcher's call for troops was issued, began to organize opposing columns of defense in the vicinity of Norfolk, in front of Alexandria and Washington, at Harper's Ferry in the Shenandoah valley, at Grafton on the Baltimore & Ohio, and below Charleston in the Kanawha valley, with intermediate forces in observation between these points, thus establishing a cordon around the great length of the exposed boundaries of the State.

The concentration of Federal troops at points convenient for invasion of western Virginia, all under the command of Maj.-Gen. George B. McClellan, with headquarters at Cincinnati, and the organization of two Union regiments at Wheeling and Parkersburg, led to urgent appeals from the loyal people of Trans-Alleghany, in response to which General Lee sent trusted officers to

call out and organize militia and volunteers. But the reports soon received from Col. George D. Porterfield and Maj. T. M. Boykin from Grafton indicated prevalent apathy and disloyalty, though General Lee continued for some time, apparently, to cling to the belief that no citizen of Virginia would betray her interests. For the small body of men that Porterfield was able to collect at Grafton, Lee ordered 1,000 muskets and rifles to Beverly, and some from Harper's Ferry to Grafton.

Soon after the election upon the ordinance of secession, Porterfield, being advised of a contemplated Federal movement against Grafton, ordered the burning of two important bridges on the branches of the Baltimore & Ohio, northwest and west of Grafton. Considering this an overt act of rebellion, for which he had been waiting, McClellan, on the 26th, ordered Col. B. F. Kelley, of the Wheeling Union regiment, with his so-called First and Second Virginia regiments, which contained but few native Virginians, to move toward Grafton, to be followed by an Ohio regiment, while other regiments were ordered to occupy Parkersburg and thence advance on Grafton.

Porterfield, asking for reinforcements, but receiving none, held his position until May 28th, with about 550 badly-armed and undisciplined cavalry and infantry, and then learning of the near approach of Kelley and the force from Parkersburg, he fell back to Philippi, 15 miles southward. Receiving some slight reinforcements he went in camp, hoping to return to Grafton and expel the enemy.

Kelley reached Grafton on the 30th and was soon followed by General Morris, with an Indiana brigade. The combined force prepared to make a night march, in two columns, against Philippi, and attack at day-break of Monday, June 3d. Each Federal column consisted of about 1,500 men; one, Dumont's, had also two smooth-bore 6-pounders. Porterfield's force was about 600 infantry and 173 cavalry. On the 1st of June, two heroic and loyal Virginia ladies rode on horseback 34 miles, from Fairmont to Philippi, and warned Porterfield of the Federal movement. The night of the 2d was dark and stormy, and Porterfield's raw troops discharged picket duty so badly and were drawn in so near to his camp that Dumont's artillery got into position.

unobserved, and just after daybreak of the 3d, gave the first notice of the Federal approach by firing on the little camp of Virginia troops. Kelley had expected to surround and capture the whole force, but this premature alarm enabled Porterfield, by the aid of the courageous companies from Pendleton and Highland, and by cool and deliberate management, to get off his men in fairly good order, with only the loss of a few arms and some camp equipage and supplies, having but one of his men and a boy who was visiting his camp, wounded. Kelley himself was seriously wounded, but there were no other casualties. For lack of cavalry the Federals did not pursue Porterfield.

The advantage gained by the Federals was an advance of 20 miles southward, giving better protection to the Baltimore & Ohio, and forcing Porterfield to retreat to Beverly, some 30 miles farther, where the turnpike from Grafton joins the great stage road and highway from Parkersburg to Staunton. The telegrams to the Northern papers claimed that the Virginia force was 2,000 men and lost 15 killed; and on the assumption that there were many wounded and prisoners, the affair was exploited as a very considerable victory, on the strength of which McClellan mounted the first round of his ladder of fame. "The Philippi Races," as this campaign was called, encouraged the Union and depressed the loyal citizens of northwestern Virginia.

Porterfield continued his retreat across Laurel hill through Beverly and on to Huttonsville, with about 1,000 men, including 180 cavalry, all undisciplined. The Federal cavalry advance occupied Beverly. The news of the Philippi disaster reached Staunton June 6th, just as reinforcements with a supply of arms and ammunition, in charge of Lieut.-Col. J. M. Heck, were about to march toward him, and Lee promptly urged the war department to reinforce this expedition with 2,000 additional troops, artillery, etc. Brig.-Gen. Robert S. Garnett, C. S. A., an old army officer, was sent to take command in the northwest, in the hope that he would inaugurate a more agreeable state of things and put down the "revolution" that Porterfield reported.

General Garnett, reaching Huttonsville on the 14th, organized two regiments from the companies collected; one, afterward the Thirty-first Virginia, under command

of Lieut.-Col. William L. Jackson, of Parkersburg, former lieutenant-governor of Virginia, and the other, later the Twenty-fifth Virginia, under Lieut.-Col. J. M. Heck, a prominent lawyer of Morgantown. Leaving three companies at Huttonsville, under Porterfield, to guard his line of communication, Garnett made a forced march, on the night of June 15th, with his two regiments and Rice's New Market battery of four guns, preceded by the Churchville cavalry, to Beverly, whence he detached Heck's regiment, two guns and the cavalry by the Parkersburg turnpike, across Rich mountain, to a position at the western foot of that mountain, 7 miles beyond Beverly. Garnett himself pushed forward with Jackson's regiment, two guns, and a company of cavalry, and took possession of Laurel hill, the northeastern extension of Rich mountain. Garnett made this strategic movement because he had learned that the enemy was advancing from Philippi, presumably to get possession of the same position which he had thus promptly seized.

Garnett's two intrenched camps were really on the same mountain range, cut through by Tygart's valley river, which turns sharply to the northwest some 12 miles below Beverly. As a whole, this range is the most westerly of the Appalachian system. Its occupation enabled him to cover his base of supplies at Beverly and the lines of communication from northwest Virginia to Staunton by way of Huttonsville, from Huttonsville to Lewisburg on the Kanawha line, and between these towns to the Virginia Central railroad at Millboro. He really held the gates to northwestern Virginia.

Reinforced by the First Georgia under Colonel Ramsey, Garnett made Laurel hill more defensible by blocking with fallen trees all the country roads from the northwest; placed Colonel Porterfield in command at Beverly, with two regiments which he was organizing, and sent out escorts to collect grain and cattle from the country in his front, making Beverly a depot of supplies. Realizing that his chief objective was to again secure control of the Baltimore & Ohio through Virginia, he felt that his force was too weak for aggressive movements against the enemy, reported to him as 12,000 men at Clarksburg, Grafton, and Cheat river bridge on the railroad, and he asked General Lee for reinforcements. These so far as available were promptly ordered to him.

General McClellan, meanwhile, had resolved to push his forces to Beverly and cut Garnett's line of communication with Staunton. Reaching the field of operations in person, he had, by July 9th, pushed forward his forces, Gen. W. S. Rosecrans commanding the advance, and concentrated before Rich mountain, where Lieut.-Col. John Pegram, Twentieth Virginia, was now in command, some 5,000 infantry, two batteries and two companies of cavalry, over 6,000 in all. To oppose this force, there were 908 men at Rich mountain and 409 at Beverly, of which 252 were cavalry and 186 artillery. Another force, under General Morris, threatening Garnett at Laurel hill, had fully 3,000 men and a battery, besides cavalry, while Garnett had near 4,000 of all arms. The opposing forces contained about twice as many Federals as Confederates.

On July 1st, Garnett called for additional forces, and Lee informed him, on the 5th, that Col. W. C. Scott, with the Forty-fourth Virginia, had left on the 2d to join him, to be followed promptly by Col. Edward Johnson, with the Twelfth Georgia, and by Col. Stephen Lee, with the Sixth North Carolina.

About 4 a. m. on the 11th, Rosecrans, with his brigade, which numbered 1,842 infantry and 75 cavalry, began a flank movement against Pegram, ordering reveille beaten at the usual hour by those left in camp; first marching southward, up the valley of Roaring creek, thence eastward up a hollow and along a spur of Rich mountain, southward of the ones occupied by the Confederates, to the crest of the mountain, and thence along the crest northeast to gain the gap in the rear of Camp Garnett on the road leading to Beverly. By arrangement, McClellan was to threaten Pegram's front with his other two brigades and his twelve guns when Rosecrans attacked the rear, and thus inclosing the Confederates between two fires, force them to surrender.

Rosecrans found his march a difficult one through the damp and nearly pathless forest, especially as he made every effort to conceal his movement, thinking Pegram would be on the alert because of the alarm in his camp. A heavy rain set in about 6 a. m., and lasted until about 11, with intermissions, during which the Federal column pushed steadily and cautiously forward, and then halted to rest near the top of Rich mountain. The movement

along that crest to the gap was found difficult, and it was 3 p. m. when the Federal advance, covered by deployed skirmishers, was fired upon by a Confederate picket, consisting of the Rockbridge guards of the Twenty-fifth Virginia and the Buckingham institute guards of the Twentieth, which Pegram had sent to the gap very early in the morning, after hearing from Captain Anderson and from a loyal mountaineer concerning the Federal movement to the left. A note of warning from Garnett had given Pegram the idea that his right flank was to be turned and not his left, but the captain in charge of the picket sent to the gap shrewdly concluded that the attack would come from the south, therefore he posted his men some distance in that direction, in the woods, on the top of the mountain, beyond the clearing. As the Federal skirmishers advanced, followed by a line of battle, they soon, by mere force of numbers, drove the picket back and followed it through the forest.

During the morning a cavalry sergeant, following after Rosecrans, missed his way and was captured. Pegram gathered from him some information about the flank movement, which induced him to send Maj. J. A. De Lagnel, of the Confederate States artillery, with a section of artillery, a company of cavalry and two companies of infantry to reinforce the guard at the gap. These took position on the north side of the gap, about 1 p. m., and threw up some rude breastworks of logs just in time to meet this Federal advance, about 3 p. m., as it emerged from the forest into the clearing, and drive it back by a bold artillery and infantry fire; the gun opening upon the enemy with well-directed spherical shot, firing rapidly. A second advance, of three regiments, came on again in about twenty minutes. Moving his gun a little higher up the slope, De Lagnel again opened at short range with spherical shot, and again forced the enemy to a hasty retreat, which was followed by shouts from the Confederates, who confidently believed that they had gained the day. Rosecrans soon reformed his men, lengthening his lines, and renewed the attack, his sharpshooters firing on the artillery horses so that they ran away down the mountain with the drivers and caisson, leaving the gunners only a little ammunition in the limber box. De Lagnel moved his gun near a small log stable, a little farther to the right, but by that time the

enemy's fire became so heavy that it rapidly disabled the artillerists, leaving but few to the gun, when DeLagnel, who had had his horse shot under him, gallantly volunteered in person, and helped to load and fire the gun three or four times, at last with only the help of a boy, all his artillerists having been killed or wounded. Finally, receiving a severe wound and finding his command outflanked on both sides, he ordered his men to retreat into the woods and by an old road, to the northward, which led down the mountain to Beverly, after having sustained a brave fight, from 3 p. m. to 6 p. m.; with his staunch 310 men of all arms, against over six times his own number, and suffered a loss of nearly one-third of his courageous men, who had held their position and fought like veterans until ordered to retreat. De Lagnel, the last to leave the field, escaped capture and found refuge in the house of a mountaineer, who, though a Unionist, secretly cared for him, until he was able to find his way toward the Confederate lines only to be captured in their immediate vicinity.

Moved by the noise of furious battle in his rear, Pegram, late in the day, took six companies from the right of the intrenchments at Camp Garnett; and hurried up the mountain to the scene of action, ordering another gun of Anderson's battery to follow. Nearing the gap he found De Lagnel's men in retreat, their gun abandoned, and the Federals in possession. The runaway horses of De Lagnel's caisson rushed down the mountain just in time to meet and overturn the second piece of artillery on its way up. Maj. Nat Tyler, with five companies of the Twentieth Virginia and one of the Twenty-fifth, continued to advance up the road to a good position for an ambuscade on its north side, about halfway between Camp Garnett and the gap, which they took to resist any Federal movement down to the rear of the camp. Pegram joined this force, and led them, as he reports, to a position from which to attack the enemy, when, after a consultation of officers, all agreed that there was nothing left to do but for Tyler to march with his command either to join Garnett at Laurel hill or Scott near Beverly. It was half-past six in the afternoon when this conclusion was reached, and Tyler retreated and Pegram rode back through the forest down the mountain, frequently losing his way, and reached Camp Garnett about midnight.

Colonel Scott, with the Forty-fourth Virginia, reached Beverly on the 10th. On the 11th, under conflicting orders from Garnett and Pegram, he marched and countermarched, finally approaching the Rich mountain gap close enough to hear the victorious cheers of Rosecrans' men, which persuaded him to fall back toward Beverly, with intention to join Garnett. By a misunderstanding, his lieutenant-colonel marched the command toward Huttonsville, and on receiving information that Garnett was about to retreat, Scott continued this movement on the 12th beyond Huttonsville.

While Rosecrans was fighting in the gap, McClellan drew up his remaining force in line of battle, ready to assault as soon as he should hear the musketry of Rosecrans, his engineer meanwhile cutting a road to a knob south of Camp Garnett, from which his artillery could enfilade its intrenchments. McClellan waited all day, but had no word from Rosecrans and heard no firing. The repeated cheers of the Confederates in the works before him led him to believe that the flanking movement had been unsuccessful, so he ordered his men back to camp, with intention to assault at daybreak next morning. Just as his guns were moving into position, early on the morning of the 12th, Rosecrans marched down and occupied Camp Garnett, and sent one of his troopers to notify McClellan. In the camp Rosecrans captured some 69 officers and privates, some wounded and others left on picket.

At about 11 p. m. of the 11th, having heard nothing from Pegram, Heck, at the instance of several of his company officers, called a council of war, which he informed of Pegram's orders to hold his position until he heard from him, which might not be before morning, as he had determined to attack Rosecrans either that night or in the morning, and he considered it his duty to remain and await orders. As these officers were about to return to their posts, expecting a Federal attack very soon, Pegram came in, told them what had happened, that he had decided not to make an attack, and had ordered Tyler to retreat with the men selected for that purpose. He then said that, being exhausted by his efforts during the day and night, and having been injured by being thrown against a tree by the shying of his horse, he would remain in camp and surrender; but he directed

Heck to immediately withdraw the small remaining force from the works and retreat in the direction of Laurel hill. Heck at once asked Engineer Hotchkiss whether he thought he could find his way, at the head of the column, through the pathless forest up and across Rich mountain, in the heavy rain and thick darkness then prevailing. The latter replied that he had reconnoitered the country in that direction, and was confident he could find his way up and across the mountain. Heck then directed him to lead the retreat, accompanied by Major Reger, of the Twenty-fifth, he proposing to follow in the rear. The line of march was promptly taken up at about 1 a. m., with Capt. R. D. Lilley's company from Augusta county in the advance. The pickets were left out to deceive the enemy. The troops first filed to the northward, from the extreme right of the works, through the Laurel swamps near Roaring creek, then across the rocky and heavily-wooded spurs of Rich mountain, then north-eastward and eastward toward the crest of the mountain, which was reached about daylight, when the leaders were surprised to find that but 70 or 80 men had followed them. It was subsequently learned that shortly after the retreat began, Pegram changed his mind and sent word along the command to halt until he could reach its front. This word only reached the rear of Lilley's company.

After a conference on the mountaintop, at about sunrise of the 12th, it was decided to go to Beverly. The march was continued down to the old Merritt road, by which the Churchville cavalry and Tyler's men had retreated, and Beverly was reached about 11 a. m. After a rest and collecting supplies of quartermaster and commissary stores from the large quantity there abandoned, the retreat was continued to Huttonsville, gathering up escaped soldiers, most of them armed, all along the way, and reaching that place at about 3 p. m., just as the bridge over Tygart's Valley river, which Scott had fired some hours before, on his retreat, was about consumed.

Scott, impressed with the idea that McClellan was in rapid pursuit and would soon fall on his rear, had continued on across Rich mountain, just before sunset, passing the middle top, which the Federals subsequently fortified and continued to hold, and reaching Greenbrier river at about daylight of the 13th, where he found Governor Letcher, and was met by Col. Edward John-

son, advancing with the Twelfth Georgia from the east.

Hotchkiss and party, learning at Huttonsville that Scott had gone into camp six miles further on, followed after; not finding him there, they went on to the foot of Cheat mountain, which was reached about dark, where they gave up the chase, having already marched 30 miles, since between 1 and 2 a. m., through swamps and forests and across Rich mountain, in drenching rains and mud. They went into camp, putting out pickets from the 75 or more armed men then in the command. Resuming retreat on the 13th, they found the Churchville and Bath cavalry companies and portions of many infantry companies bivouacked on the middle top of Cheat mountain, where they had spent the night. This body of Virginians, who had in various ways escaped capture, although of the rawest kind of soldiery, understood thoroughly the importance of retaining this stronghold against a Federal advance further into the State. The officers present held a conference and delegated Engineer Hotchkiss to go forward to Greenbrier river and urge Governor Letcher to allow them to remain and hold Cheat mountain. To this patriotic request the governor consented, but soon after the envoy left to return to his companions, he was overtaken by orders to abandon the mountain and continue the retreat. Scott's exaggerated idea of McClellan's force and of an energetic pursuit by him, had so impressed Governor Letcher and Colonel Johnson, the latter now in command as the ranking officer present, that a retreat was ordered to the top of Alleghany mountain, where Brig.-Gen. H. R. Jackson, of Georgia, who had been sent to take command, met the army and thence continued the retreat to Monterey, where he established headquarters on the 14th and awaited reinforcements and the return of the remnant of the Laurel hill force from its circuitous retreat through Maryland, and Hardy and Pendleton counties, Va. McClellan, with his advance, reached the Cheat mountain summit at about 3 p. m. of the 14th, nearly two days after Scott had passed that point, and about twenty-four hours after the Confederate cavalry, by orders, had reluctantly left it.

...When Pegram reached the head of the column that had waited for him just north of Camp Garnett, soon after

midnight of the 11th, he continued the retreat and reached the summit of Rich mountain soon after sunrise. The officers present, familiar with the country, urged him to push forward to Beverly; but looking over the valley to the eastward and seeing troops marching along the road in that direction, either Tyler's or Hotchkiss' men, he concluded that Rosecrans had already occupied Beverly (although he did not reach that place until eight hours later), so he overruled the others and spent the whole day wandering along the rough spurs of the eastern slope of Rich mountain toward Laurel hill. Late in the afternoon he allowed Heck to reconnoiter to the road between Beverly and Laurel hill, but he learned nothing of the movements of the enemy. Pegram then marched toward the road, but found the way difficult through the swampy grounds bordering Valley river, which his men waded three times. When near the road, as his column was closing up at about dark, his command was fired into. Instead of pushing boldly forward, he recrossed the river and put his men in line of battle, having heard that the enemy, 3,000 strong, were at Leadsville church, not far from where he had reached the road. Later, he fell back to the foot of Rich mountain, where, at a secluded farmhouse, near midnight, he informed his leading officers that he had concluded to surrender, as he believed it impossible to escape the enemy, which he supposed had nearly surrounded him so he could not cross the valley and get through the mountains to Monterey. Most of the officers appeared to tacitly concur in this view; but Lieutenant-Colonel Heck and Capt. J. B. Moorman, of the Pendleton company, opposed it. The latter, having marched his company across Cheat mountain by the Seneca road, in the vicinity of which they then were, after the Philippi affair, was sure he could safely lead the whole command out that way. Heck urged trying this, considering that better than hunting up some one to surrender to, which could be done later should necessity demand it. Pegram, however, took his own course and sent a messenger to Beverly, some 7 miles distant, with a note to McClellan, saying, that in consequence of the retreat of Garnett and the condition of his command, most of whom had been without food for two days, he desired to surrender his men, as prisoners of war, the next morning. Between 7 and 8 a. m. of the 13th, two of

McClellan's staff and some twenty cavalry brought a note to "John Pegram, Esq., styling himself Lieut.-Col. P. A. C. S.," saying he would receive his officers and men as prisoners of war, but could not relieve them from any liabilities incurred by taking up arms against the United States. Pegram accepted the terms offered, but when he formed his companies to march to Beverly, he found that Moorman and his forty brave mountaineers had left during the night, taking the Seneca road, as he had proposed. These in due time reached Monterey, as could all of Pegram's command had he boldly pushed forward as Heck and Moorman urged. Pegram surrendered 22 officers and 259 men of Heck's regiment, and 8 officers and 166 men of his own.

Returning to General Garnett, we find that late in the afternoon of the 11th a messenger informed him that the Federals were in possession of Rich mountain in Pegram's rear, and by that time were probably in Beverly. It is asserted that this messenger also reported the road blockaded between Beverly and Laurel hill by trees felled across it; which was not true. Threatened by Morris' large force in his front, and, as he supposed, by a large one under McClellan advancing to his rear and occupying his line of retreat to Staunton, Garnett evacuated Laurel hill about midnight, and fell back to Leadsville, about halfway to Beverly, where he took a rough country road, leading northeast by way of New Interest and across Cheat river to Red House, in western Maryland, on the Northwestern turnpike leading from Wheeling across the mountains through Hardy county to Winchester. On the 12th, late in the day, he encamped at Kaylor's ford of Shaver's fork of Cheat river, after a march of some 15 miles from Leadsville, his rear extending back some two miles. He resumed his retreat about 8 a. m. of the 13th, with Taliaferro's and Jackson's regiments, Hansbrough's battalion, a section of Shumaker's battery and a squadron of cavalry in the lead, followed by his baggage train, with the First Georgia, the Twenty-third Virginia, Lanier's section of artillery, and Captain Jackson's cavalry in the rear. The continuous rains and the passing of the trains cut up the road and made progress slow. Before he could cross Kaylor's ford the enemy fell on his rear. Garnett then rode back, placed the First Georgia in position, and held the enemy in check

until his train had forded the river. The First Georgia then fell behind the Twenty-third Virginia, which in the meantime had taken an advanced position, and that defended the train until the First Georgia formed again, further on. Thus skirmishing and retiring, the retreat was skillfully conducted, without loss, to Carrick's ford of Cheat river, $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles beyond Kaylor's. That ford, wide and deep, was now swollen by recent rains, making the crossing difficult, so that some wagons were stalled and abandoned. This delay enabled the Federals to close up, but Taliaferro's Twenty-seventh Virginia, posted on the high bank on the far side of Cheat river, joined in a lively engagement, known as the battle of Carrick's Ford, in which infantry and artillery engaged from opposite sides of the river, and the Federals were twice driven back, with considerable damage from Lanier's guns. Taliaferro continued to fight until his men had expended nearly all their cartridges and the artillery had been withdrawn, when, believing that the enemy were attempting to turn his flank, he ordered his regiment to retire, which, although it had lost nearly 30 in killed and wounded, it did very reluctantly. He then moved on to the opposite side of the next ford, where he found General Garnett, who directed him to halt his regiment around a nearby protecting turn of the road, and send him some good riflemen, remarking: "This is a good place, behind this driftwood, to post skirmishers." Taliaferro sent him a whole company, from which he selected 10 sharpshooters and ordered the others back to the regiment. While posting his command to meet an expected attack, Taliaferro received orders from Garnett to march rapidly and overtake the main body. A few minutes later he was informed, by the officer in charge of his 10 riflemen, that the brave Garnett had been killed by a Federal sharpshooter, firing across the river, just as he was ordering the skirmishers to retire. One of Lanier's guns was disabled in this engagement and abandoned after being spiked.

Closely followed by the enemy, Taliaferro fell back 4 miles further to Parsons' ford, the last one of Cheat river to be crossed; a half mile beyond this he overtook the main body, halted there by Garnett's order and drawn up to receive the enemy. After waiting for some time, and no enemy appearing, the retreat was resumed,

now under the command of Colonel Ramsey of the First Georgia, up the Horseshoe run road, marching all night and unmolested, reaching the Red House and the North-western turnpike at about daylight of the 14th, and safely passing that danger point of attack from the Federal forces at Cheat river bridge and elsewhere on the Baltimore & Ohio, not far away, which McClellan had ordered, by telegraph, to fall upon Garnett's retreating column.

The retreat from Laurel hill was managed so skillfully by General Garnett that Morris did not know he had left until daylight of the 12th. The pursuit was not continued, except by scouts, beyond Cheat river, where his command closed up about 2 p. m. The Confederate loss was small, but it included the brave and skillful Garnett, who was the first officer of rank to lay down his life for his native State. Ramsey continued his retreat on the 14th, followed at some distance in the rear by numerous Federal troops from along the Baltimore & Ohio, which failed to overtake him; crossed Alleghany mountain through Greenland gap; reached the South Branch valley at Petersburg, where the Federal pursuit ended, and thence turned up that valley and arrived at Monterey, 54 miles distant, several days later, with his command thoroughly disorganized but having suffered little loss.

McClellan telegraphed to Washington his first report of the battle from his camp in front of Rich mountain, on the 12th, and followed it with other announcements, of which Gen. J. D. Cox has written (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*):

It is a curious task to compare the official narrative with the picture of the campaign and its results, which was then given to the world in the series of proclamations and dispatches of the young general, beginning with his first occupation of the country and ending with his congratulations to his troops, in which he announced that they had "annihilated two armies, commanded by educated and experienced soldiers, intrenched in mountain fastnesses fortified at their leisure." The country was eager for good news, and took it as literally true. McClellan was the hero of the moment, and when, but a week later, his success was followed by the disaster to McDowell at Bull Run, he seemed pointed out by Providence as the ideal chieftain, who could repair the misfortune and lead our armies to certain victory.

On the 16th, leaving a force at Huttonsville and on Cheat mountain, McClellan returned to Beverly and proceeded to reorganize his army.

CHAPTER V.

THE FIRST KANAWHA VALLEY CAMPAIGN—APRIL TO JULY, 1861.

WE now turn to a consideration of the Kanawha valley campaign of the early part of 1861, as that was a portion of Scott's plan of invasion of Virginia that was intrusted to McClellan; deferring until later the consideration of military operations along the Potomac, which, in sequence of time, would at this point demand attention. McClellan's original intention was to begin the invasion of Virginia from Ohio by way of the Kanawha valley along the great stage road to Staunton, having the same objective as Patterson from Pennsylvania up the Shenandoah valley; but events treated of in the preceding chapter diverted him to the lines of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, and led to the Rich Mountain campaign and the handing over of operations on the Kanawha line to a subordinate, with whom he was in constant telegraphic communication.

Previous to the building of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, the most important way of travel across Virginia to the west was, as it had been from time immemorial, by the valleys of the James across the Appalachians, and down the Great Kanawha to the Ohio. Vast herds of buffaloes, from the rich open pasture lands of the Great Valley, first engineered and opened trails which the Mound Builders and the Indians followed, and which in turn became the bridle paths for the white men into the great Trans-Appalachian basin of the Ohio. Along these trails took place, for many years, numerous combats between the white man in his westward progress and the Indian who sought to stay that progress, until the decisive battle at Point Pleasant at the mouth of the Big Kanawha in the River Ohio, on October 9, 1774, broke the power of the great Indian confederacy of the northwest, and established the supremacy of the Virginia white man in that direction. The bridle paths were gradually widened into rude wagon ways, along which a steady

stream of emigration poured, especially after the Revolution, robbing Virginia of many of her best citizens, to the enrichment of the great central west. The State and allied companies then began the construction of well-graded turnpikes along these natural highways, until good roads from nearly every county town in the basin of the Big Kanawha led into the James river and Kanawha turnpike, the main stage road from Staunton through Lewisburg, Charleston, and thence to the mouth of the Kanawha, and also to that of the Guyandotte near the Kentucky boundary. From the days of Washington Virginia spent lavishly of her means in the opening of a great waterway, from the head of tide at Richmond, up the James and across to and down the waters of the Kanawha to its head of steamboat navigation; and when the civil war began, the James River & Kanawha canal was in operation for 198 miles, from Richmond to Buchanan, in the heart of the Great Valley. In the same general direction, at an early date, the State co-operated in the construction of a railway, 195 miles of which, from Richmond to Jackson's river, well within the Appalachians, were in operation as the Virginia Central at the beginning of the war, and large numbers of men were then at work constructing the continuation of that line to the Ohio at the mouth of the Guyandotte. That work is now known as the Chesapeake & Ohio railway.

The basin of the Big Kanawha as a whole was one of the most important portions of Virginia, rich in agricultural, forest and mineral wealth, especially coal and salt. The coals which underlie the larger portion of its area were then in demand down the Ohio. In the year of grace 1898, they were one of the most important factors in the magnificent victories won by the sea power of the United States at Manila and Santiago. The loyal Virginians of that region promptly prepared for home defense by the organization of military companies, and demanded arms and aid from the more thickly settled portions of the State, as their territory was peculiarly vulnerable by way of the Ohio and the navigable waters of the Big Sandy, the Guyandotte and the Big Kanawha. These waterways gave easy access for the troops and supplies of the enemy for more than 100 miles toward the interior of the State, and made the problem of its defense one difficult to solve.

On the 29th of April, six days after he took command of the forces of Virginia, General Lee sent Lieut.-Col. John McCausland, a native of the Kanawha valley and a graduate of the Virginia military institute, to muster into the service of the State ten companies of volunteers from the Kanawha region, take command of these, and direct military operations for strictly defensive purposes. On May 3d, Col. C. Q. Tompkins, a West Point graduate and former officer in the United States army, having his home in the Kanawha valley, was appointed colonel of volunteers in the Virginia service and directed to take command of the forces in the Kanawha region and carry out the orders already given to McCausland.

Colonel Tompkins reported from Charleston, May 23d, that he found some 350 men, in five companies, at Buffalo; that within two or three weeks he could probably raise fifteen or sixteen companies, but that the country was destitute of fabric suitable for uniforms.

McCausland, covering the front on the Ohio river, reported Federal troops concentrating at and about Gallipolis, Ohio, on the 26th, and Tompkins, hastening to Charleston from his post at Kanawha Falls, sent McCausland as a special messenger to Governor Letcher to inform him of the disaffection of the population of the Kanawha region, of the difficulty of procuring reliable troops, and the imminent danger of invasion. After sending this dispatch on the 28th, Tompkins issued a spirited appeal, calling the "men of Virginia—men of Kanawha, to arms."

On the 23d of April, ex-Gov. Henry A. Wise tendered his services to Virginia. Subsequently he was appointed brigadier-general and given authority to raise a force to be called "Wise's legion." While engaged in organizing this body, he was, on the 6th of June, ordered to take the force he had in hand and proceed, as speedily as possible, to the valley of the Kanawha and rally the people to resist the invading army reported to be already on the march. He was informed that he must rely upon the people for a supply of arms from those in their own hands, and upon their valor and knowledge of the country as a substitute for organization and discipline. Wise's popularity in western Virginia was very great, and it was supposed that his appearance in command on the Kanawha line would stem the tide of opposition to State

authority that was so strongly rising in that region. Before leaving Richmond, Wise was informed that John B. Floyd, recently United States secretary of war, had also been appointed brigadier-general, and specially charged with organizing a large body of troops in the southwestern part of the Great Valley and adjacent regions, the locality of his home where he was extremely popular, and with the protection of the Virginia & Tennessee railroad, the great route of travel to the Confederate capital from all the southwest; and that it would doubtless occur that there would be a junction of his force with that of Wise, in which event Floyd, as the ranking officer by commission, would command their united forces.

Nothing more fully illustrates the poverty of preparation that Virginia had made for a most gigantic warfare than General Floyd's appeal of July 1st, by special messenger, to the governors of South Carolina and Georgia, for the loan of arms, saying that he had three regiments and a fourth rapidly forming, but needed 1,600 guns to arm them, and giving as his excuse for thus applying that neither the Confederate government nor the State of Virginia could furnish arms for his troops, and he was fretting under the delay caused by this want.

On June 23d, Wise, with his legion, reached Gauley bridge, 100 miles beyond the terminus of the Virginia Central railroad, and reported from Charleston, on the 6th of July, that he had 2,705 men in his command, all infantry but 181.

Gen. J. D. Cox began his invasion of the Great Kanawha valley on the 11th of July, in accordance with instructions from McClellan, crossing the Ohio from Gallipolis to Point Pleasant, and moving up the Kanawha. Cox's movements were greatly facilitated by the use of Ohio-river steamboats, which, thrown out of trade by the war, were plentiful, and accompanying his columns, made the problem of supplies and transportation for the larger portion of his troops an easy one to solve. In moving up the Kanawha detached columns of troops marched along the roads on each side of the river, while his main body followed in a fleet of steamboats, keeping in rear of his marching columns, but near enough to reinforce either bank in case of attack.

The first day, July 11th, his command made 13.

miles, Cox himself directing operations from the top of the pilot house of the leading steamboat, while military bands on board enlivened this novel mode of campaigning. The movement was without opposition until the third day, when, at the mouth of the Pocotalico, some resistance was met from Wise's advance pickets, and Cox learned that the Confederates were in force some 12 miles further on, at Tyler mountain. Cox decided to await at Pocotalico the coming in of his flanking columns.

On the 16th the forward movement of the Second Kentucky (Federal) began at Guyandotte, a few miles beyond which, at Barboursville, a lively skirmish took place with O. J. Wise's advance cavalry pickets, which fell back, pursued by the Federals, to the force encamped near Scary creek, some 24 miles from Charleston, which, on the afternoon of the 17th, met and repulsed this pursuit.

After the engagement at Scary, the Federals crossed the river and encamped on the north side. The next day Wise attacked Cox's advance post with some 800 men of all arms under McCausland, forcing them to retreat to their intrenched camp near the mouth of the Pocotalico.

The retreat of Garnett's forces from Rich mountain and Laurel hill, and the advance of McClellan to Cheat mountain, thus threatening a movement on Staunton, or to the Virginia Central railroad, or to the Kanawha line at Lewisburg, induced the Confederate authorities to promptly reinforce the Northwestern army in McClellan's front, and to concentrate forces on the Kanawha line by withdrawing Wise toward Lewisburg and advancing Floyd from the valley in the southwest to the same line. Col. A. W. McDonald, in command of a large cavalry force at Romney, was ordered to march with his command to Staunton, and unite with the forces there concentrating. Gen. W. W. Loring was assigned to the command of the army of the Northwest.

Acting under discretionary orders, Wise abandoned Charleston July 24th, marching up the Kanawha; left Gauley bridge, which he burned behind him, on the 27th, and after a march of over 100 miles arrived at Lewisburg on the last day of the month, and located his camp at Bunger's mill, 4 miles west of that town.

These brief Northwestern Virginia campaigns, the first of the war and of barely two months' duration, ending

with July, were very far-reaching in their results. McClellan, by the force of numbers many times increased in efficiency by the aid of steam power on navigable rivers and railways, by the use of field telegraphs following his movements, and by superior strategy, made possible by these agencies, compelled the Confederates to retreat from the banks of the Ohio to near the Alleghany range of the Appalachians, and abandon to Federal control—which thenceforward during the war was well nigh continuous—most of Trans-Alleghany Virginia, nearly one-third of the State. These results were not only of present but of great future importance to the Federal government in the conduct of the war. They not only gave it control of the navigable waters of the Ohio along and within the borders of Virginia for transportation purposes, but also gave it access to and control of the important coal mines and salt works on the Big Kanawha, and the newly-discovered petroleum wells in the Little Kanawha basin, to the great advantage of Ohio and other Western States, and enabled it to establish camps of observation, accessible by rail and river, far within the borders of Virginia, from which raiding parties were constantly threatening Virginia's interior lines of communication through the Great Valley and the lead mines, salt works, coal mines, blast furnaces, foundries, and other important industrial establishments in and near that grand source of military supplies, thus requiring the detaching of large numbers of troops to watch these Federal movements, and to guard these important and indispensable sinews of war. They deprived Virginia of a large portion of her annual revenues, of a most important recruiting ground for troops, and enabled the bogus government of Virginia to establish and maintain itself at Wheeling, and under the protection of Federal armies strengthen the disloyal element in that part of the State, and organize numerous regiments of infantry and companies of cavalry and artillery to swell the numbers of the Federal army. McClellan had good reason to exult at his success, no matter if it had been easily won.

CHAPTER VI.

THE FIRST SHENANDOAH VALLEY CAMPAIGN—APRIL TO JULY, 1861.

THE United States arsenal and armory at Harper's Ferry, at the junction of the Shenandoah and Potomac rivers, was the coveted object that first led to military operations in the Shenandoah valley in 1861. Ex-Governor Wise, early in April, urged the authorities at Richmond, by letter, to press forward on three points, the first, "Harper's Ferry, to cut off the West, to form camp for Baltimore and point of attack on Washington from the west."

In Richmond, on the night of April 16th, when it became evident that the Virginia convention would pass an ordinance of secession, Wise called together at the Exchange hotel a number of officers of the armed and equipped companies of the Virginia militia: Turner and Richard Ashby of Fauquier, O. R. Funsten of Clarke, all captains of cavalry companies; Capt. John D. Imboden, of the Staunton artillery; Capt. John A. Harman of Staunton; Nat Tyler, editor of the Richmond Enquirer, and Capt. Alfred M. Barbour, late civil superintendent of the United States armory at Harper's Ferry. These gentlemen, most of them ardent secessionists, discussed and agreed upon a plan for the capture of Harper's Ferry, to be put in execution on the 17th, as soon as the convention voted to secede, if the concurrence of Governor Letcher and railway transportation could be secured. Col. Edmund Fontaine, president of the Virginia Central railroad, and John S. Barbour, president of the Orange & Alexandria railroad, being called in consultation about midnight, agreed to provide the necessary trains for the movement of troops if requested to do so by Governor Letcher. A committee was then sent to the governor, which roused him from sleep and laid before him the scheme for the capture of the armory and arsenal. He refused to take any official steps until after the passage of the ordinance of secession, but

agreed, contingent upon that event, that he would next day order the movement by telegraph.* He was then informed what companies would be under arms and ready to move at a moment's notice. This self-constituted committee then wired the captains of the companies along the above-named railways to be ready to move the next day, by orders from the governor, which, it was stated, would be to aid in capturing the Gosport navy yard, as a precaution lest information of the movement should reach Washington. It was well known that the guard at Harper's Ferry was only 45 men and could easily be captured if surprised; but Wise had information from Washington that a Massachusetts regiment, 1,000 strong, had been ordered to Harper's Ferry.

After the close of the conference the Ashbys, Funsten, Harman and Imboden secured ammunition and 100 stand of arms for the Martinsburg light infantry from the Virginia armory at Richmond, and had these moved to the railway station and loaded on a train before sunrise of the 17th.

Imboden, by telegraph, ordered all volunteer companies in the county of Augusta to assemble at Staunton at 4 p. m. of the 17th for marching orders. This produced great excitement, as that was a strong Union county, and the people assembled in Staunton in great numbers. When Imboden reached that place, in the afternoon of the 17th, he found his own company, the Staunton artillery, and Capt. William S. H. Baylor's West Augusta guards, an infantry company, drawn up to receive him. There were also present Maj.-Gen. Kenton Harper, commanding the Fifth division of the Virginia militia, and Brig.-Gen. William H. Harman, commanding the Thirteenth brigade of the Virginia militia, who had a telegram from Letcher ordering them into service and referring them to Imboden for information. He informed them, confidentially, of what had been done. Letcher had wired Harper to take chief command of the movement and Harman to call out the armed companies of his brigade. At 5 p. m. Harper left for Winchester by rapid conveyance, after ordering Harman to take command of the trains and troops that might report

* "Jackson at Harper's Ferry," by Brig.-Gen. John D. Imboden, in "Battles and Leaders of the Civil War." Century Co., New York, 1887.

en route. Reaching Winchester at noon of the 18th, Harper received orders from Letcher to go on to Harper's Ferry.

The two companies from Staunton left by the Virginia Central railroad about sunset; at Charlottesville they were joined by Capt. W. B. Mallory's Monticello guards and Capt. R. T. W. Duke's Albemarle rifles, and at Culpeper by a rifle company. Manassas Junction was reached at about sunrise of the 18th, when Harman impressed a Manassas Gap railroad train to take the lead toward Strasburg, followed by the other trains that had brought troops to the junction. The Ashbys and Funsten left Richmond on the 16th to collect their cavalry companies, and those of the Black Horse cavalry under Capt. John Scott and R. Welby Carter of Fauquier; these to march across the Blue ridge and rendezvous near Harper's Ferry. Ashby sent men on the night of the 17th to cut the wires between Manassas and Alexandria and keep them cut for several days, to prevent information of this movement reaching Washington. Before 10 a. m. of the 18th, the trains reached Strasburg and the infantry companies took up the line of march for Winchester. Imboden, with great difficulty, secured horses for his battery, and by noon followed on to Winchester, 18 miles, which he reached about dark. The troops were coldly received by the majority of the people of that conservative town, quite unlike their conduct during the following years of heroic endurance.

Harper, reaching Winchester in advance, when the infantry arrived sent them forward by rail to Charlestown, 8 miles from Harper's Ferry, and then ordered back the train for the artillery. About midnight the infantry marched to Halltown, within 4 miles of Harper's Ferry, to which point the artillery was taken by train and the guns run forward by hand to Bolivar heights and put in position to shell the place if necessary. Harper, who thought the Massachusetts regiment had arrived at Harper's Ferry, was making his arrangements to attack the armory and arsenal at daybreak of the 19th, when at about 10 p. m. of the 18th a brilliant light from the direction of the armory convinced him that the Federal troops in charge had fired it and fled. He promptly advanced and took possession, but too late to extinguish the flames, which destroyed nearly 20,000 rifles and pis-

tols, although the workshops, the armory proper and the rifle works up the Shenandoah were saved.

On January 2, 1861, Supt. A. M. Barbour had informed the United States ordnance bureau that he apprehended an assault on the armory, and that he had organized the armorers into volunteer companies for its protection. The next day, Maj. H. J. Hunt, of the Second artillery, was assigned to command at Harper's Ferry and Lieut. R. Jones was ordered to report to him for duty with 60 picked men of the mounted rifles from Carlisle barracks. Hunt was instructed by Adjutant-General Cooper to dispose his force to protect the armory, but to make no display of it that would cause irritation. He arrived and took command on the 5th. On the 2d of April, Lieutenant Jones succeeded Hunt in command. His force on the 18th of April was but 45 men. Just before that date he sent a message to Secretary of War Cameron, asking for a large reinforcement if it was the intention to save the contents of the armory. To this he had no reply and was left to act on his own judgment. On Thursday morning, April 18th, Col. A. M. Barbour, who had resigned the superintendency of the armory a short time before and was now a member of the Virginia convention from Jefferson county, arrived at Harper's Ferry and thoughtlessly stated in public that the convention had passed an ordinance of secession; that the governor had called out the volunteers to repulse any effort to reinforce the command at Harper's Ferry, and that Virginia intended to take possession of the armory and arsenal. This caused much excitement, as the citizens were under the impression that an unlawful seizure of the United States property was to be made, which they determined to oppose. In the meantime, Colonel Allen called out the local regiment, the Second Virginia, to assemble at Charlestown. Apprised of these things, Superintendent Kingsbury (Barbour's successor) and Lieutenant Jones, knowing they could not resist an attack by any considerable force, made arrangements to destroy the property. Dismissing the operatives with the assurance that they should resume work on the 19th, they closed the gates of the armory and posted sentinels; removed the foot bridges across the canal, and placed kegs and sacks of powder in the arsenal buildings, using bedticks for this purpose; scattered powder over the floors of the shops, and

placed barrels of it so as to not only destroy the buildings but any persons who might approach them. They then sent out mounted sentinels for two or three miles on different roads to watch the approach of the Virginia troops. One of these, about 9 p. m., hailed Colonel Allen and his command on the road to Charlestown; when the colonel ordered a charge to capture him, he rode off rapidly and reported to Jones, who at about 10 p. m. fired the buildings and crossed with his command into Maryland and retreated. By great exertions, notwithstanding the danger from explosions, the citizens (who had gathered in large numbers) and soldiers promptly proceeded to put out the fires and prevent them from spreading, thus saving many thousand stand of arms from the arsenal and preventing any damage to the armory, the removal of the machinery from which, to Richmond, was immediately begun.

On the 22d, news reached Harper's Ferry that Virginia had passed the ordinance of secession, relieving the fears of many of the officers and troops that had been assembled there, that they had been acting unlawfully.

Within a week after the capture of Harper's Ferry some 1,300 Virginia troops, the armed and equipped volunteer companies of the militia, were there assembled under the commands of Brigadier-Generals Carson, Meem and Harman, from whose jurisdictions they had been summoned, and all under Major-General Harper, as division commander of the militia. These officers, in the full and brilliant uniforms of their rank, and each with a large staff, made an imposing display as they rode through the camps and around the vicinity of Harper's Ferry. The reign of the militia lasted about ten days, during which the only marked event was an ordering of the command under arms, on the night of the 25th, to capture a train of Federal troops reported as coming from the West, but which was found to have on it only General Harney of the United States army, who was taken prisoner. Letcher, on the 20th, had prohibited the Baltimore & Ohio from passing troops across Virginia over that road.

Imboden relates that he improvised caissons for his artillery from horse carts found in the armory; procured harness from Baltimore with his own means, and ordered red flannel shirts and other service clothing for his men

from Richmond to replace the fine dress uniforms with which they came to camp.

On the 27th of April, Maj. Thomas J. Jackson, of the Virginia military institute, was appointed colonel of Virginia volunteers and ordered to Harper's Ferry to take command of the forces there assembled. At the same time an order was issued decapitating every militia officer in the State's volunteer service above the rank of captain, the vacancies thus created to be filled by the governor and his council of three. Colonel Jackson arrived at Harper's Ferry on the 29th of April and took command on the 30th. This order, resolving the Virginia forces into units of organization, created much indignation among the deposed officers, and greatly excited the troops they had commanded. In the midst of this excitement, Imboden ordered the Staunton artillery into line and informed them that they were required to muster into service, either for twelve months or the war, at their option, but urged them to go in for the full period, as it would be much to their credit to do so and set a good example to others. His men shouted unanimously, "For the war!" They were at once mustered in, and their captain had the pleasure of handing to Colonel Jackson the roll of the first company mustered in "for the war," for which the colonel expressed his thanks and asked that the same be conveyed to the men. Jackson then requested Imboden to muster in the two other artillery companies present, which he did and returned the rolls before sunset. This action of the artillerists was followed the next day by the other troops; all were mustered in, and the organization into regiments and battalions began. Soon after this, Letcher appointed Harper colonel of the Fifth Virginia, Harman, lieutenant-colonel, and Baylor, major, and thus was organized one of the finest regiments of the famous Stonewall brigade.

The period of Jackson's command at Harper's Ferry was marked by few notable incidents. The colonel commanding, in the simple uniform of a major on duty at the Virginia military institute, quietly, but firmly and unceasingly, worked to change citizens that had patriotically rushed to arms, most of them young men, many of them mere boys, into disciplined soldiers, nearly all the officers needing this as badly as the privates. His long experience as a trainer and drill-master of the same kind

of material at the military institute fitted him admirably for such work. Jackson regulated the trains on the Baltimore & Ohio, seeing that they were not used to the detriment of Virginia, as Governor Letcher ordered, and when supplies from Baltimore for Virginia were detained by Butler at the Relay house, May 9th, he retaliated by seizing five carloads of beeves and one of horses from the West, intended for Federal use, and appropriated them to the use of his own army; buying from the quartermaster one of the captured horses, to which he took a fancy, that became famous as his favorite war-horse, "Little Sorrel."

As soon as he took command at Harper's Ferry there was an immediate change in the condition of the camp. Orders for instruction in military duties and for regular drills were at once issued, and strict military discipline enforced. He also began the construction of defenses on the surrounding heights, both in Virginia and in Maryland, to put his position in a state of defense against any attack that might be made by the Federal forces that were being pushed forward from Washington up the north bank of the Potomac, down the Cumberland valley from Chambersburg toward Hagerstown, and from the northwest by McClellan along the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad. His outposts were extended along the Baltimore & Ohio to Point of Rocks, 12 miles below Harper's Ferry, whence a wagon bridge crossed the Potomac into Virginia and where the railroad from Baltimore reached that river, thus guarding his position against the approach of Federal troops under General Butler from toward Baltimore, and of those under Colonel Stone up the Potomac from Washington. The staff departments of his command were promptly organized, with Maj. John A. Harman, as quartermaster, Maj. Wells J. Hawks, commissary, and Dr. Hunter McGuire, medical director. These gentlemen and Lieutenant Pendleton (afterward lieutenant-colonel), and others appointed later, continued as the efficient heads of departments during his subsequent famous military career.

About this time Lieut.-Col. J. E. B. Stuart reported to Jackson for duty, and the latter ordered the consolidation of all his cavalry companies into a battalion, to be commanded by Stuart, thus relieving Capt. Turner Ashby, the idol of all the troopers, from chief command of the

cavalry. One of the bravest, shrewdest and most daring men ever put on outpost duty, he was lacking in the disciplinary qualities which Stuart, as a trained soldier, had in such an eminent degree. Ashby felt so aggrieved by this action that he determined to resign his captaincy, but was persuaded by Imboden to pay Jackson a visit and discuss the situation, the result of which was that the companies present were divided into two regiments, one under command of Col. Angus W. McDonald, with Ashby as lieutenant-colonel, who soon became its colonel, and the other under Stuart.

When on the 17th of April Virginia passed in convention its ordinance of secession, Brig.-Gen. Joseph E. Johnston was stationed at Washington as quartermaster-general of the United States army. This action of Virginia was not known in Washington until Saturday, the 19th, when he at once wrote his resignation. On Monday morning he offered it to the secretary of war, who accepted it. That done, he left Washington on Tuesday, with his family, for Richmond, but in consequence of railway accidents did not reach there until Thursday the 25th, when Governor Letcher at once gave him the appointment of major-general of Virginia volunteers, and Maj.-Gen. R. E. Lee, who had been appointed commander-in-chief of the Virginia forces on the 22d, assigned to him the duty of organizing and instructing the volunteers who were then arriving in Richmond. General Lee had already selected the points to be occupied for the defense of the State and the number of troops to be assigned to each. These points were: Norfolk, in front of Yorktown; the front of Fredericksburg; Manassas Junction, Harper's Ferry and Grafton. Johnston was assisted in the duties assigned him at Richmond by Lieutenant-Colonel Pemberton, Majors Jackson and Gilham, and Capt. T. L. Preston, who had all recently reported for duty. Johnston was employed in this way some two weeks, when, Virginia having joined the Southern Confederacy, President Davis offered him, by telegraph, a brigadier-generalship in the Confederate army, which he promptly accepted, and on reporting to the war department at Montgomery was assigned by President Davis to the command at Harper's Ferry. He reached that place Friday, May 23d, accompanied by his staff, Col. E. Kirby Smith, assistant adjutant-general

(afterward lieutenant-general); Maj. W. H. C. Whiting, of the engineers (who fell at Fort Fisher a major-general); Maj. A. McLean, quartermaster, and Capt. T. L. Preston, assistant adjutant-general. Within an hour after his arrival, Col. T. J. Jackson called on General Johnston, learned the object of his coming, and saw his orders; but when Johnston, the next morning, sent him orders announcing the change of commanders to be made known to the troops, Jackson courteously replied that he did not "feel at liberty to transfer his command to another without further instructions from Governor Letcher or General Lee;" but offered to furnish Johnston at once every facility for obtaining information relative to the post. Jackson soon learned that the Virginia forces had been turned over to the Confederacy, when he promptly obeyed Johnston's orders.

On assuming command at Harper's Ferry, Johnston had under him the Second, Fourth, Fifth, Tenth, Thirteenth and Twenty-seventh Virginia regiments of infantry; the Second and Eleventh Mississippi; the Fourth Alabama; a Maryland and a Kentucky battalion; four companies of Virginia artillery, of four guns each, but without caissons, horses or harness; and the First regiment of Virginia cavalry, about 250 men, including Capt. Turner Ashby's company, temporarily attached to it by Colonel Jackson; about 5,200 effective men in all. Among the officers present were T. J. Jackson and A. P. Hill, who became lieutenant-generals; Stuart, "matchless as a commander of outposts," as Johnston wrote, and Capt. W. N. Pendleton, who became brigadier-general and Lee's chief of artillery. As Johnston wrote, the troops were undisciplined, of course, also "badly armed and equipped—several regiments being without accouterments; were almost destitute of ammunition, and, like all new troops assembled in large bodies, they were suffering very much from sickness; nearly 40 per cent. of the total being in the hospitals, there or elsewhere, from the effects of measles and mumps."

Johnston had been distinctly informed, in his conversations with Lee and Davis, that they regarded Harper's Ferry as a natural fortress commanding the entrance to the valley of Virginia from Pennsylvania and Maryland, and that his command was not of a military district, or of an active army, but of a fortress and its garrison. A

study of the strategic environments at Harper's Ferry, after extended reconnoissance, convinced Johnston that the route of invasion into the valley from Pennsylvania was across the Potomac at Williamsport to Martinsburg, 20 miles west of Harper's Ferry and beyond the control of its garrison; and a careful examination of the position and its immediate surroundings, made on May 25th, with Engineer Whiting, convinced him that the place could not be held, even against equal numbers, by the force then in hand; that it was untenable unless he also had possession of the neighboring heights north of the Potomac and east of the Shenandoah, as artillery on those heights could sweep every part of the position and it could easily be turned by the fords of the rivers.

When Johnston took command at Harper's Ferry, the three Federal armies threatening Virginia, each, directly or indirectly, also menaced his position. He supposed that they would co-operate with Richmond as their objective, and from what he could learn, that Patterson and McClellan would direct their first movements so as to combine at Winchester. He considered it absolutely necessary that the troops in the Shenandoah valley under his command should be always ready, not only to meet the attack of Patterson from the northeast and of McClellan from the northwest, but also to unite quickly with the army of the Potomac at Manassas Junction, whenever threatened by McDowell. For such purposes he regarded his army at Harper's Ferry wrongly placed, since Patterson, coming from Chambersburg and marching through Williamsport and Martinsburg toward Winchester, would pass a day's march to the west of it. The only direct road from Harper's Ferry to Manassas, that down the south bank of the Potomac and across by way of Leesburg, was under the enemy's guns on the north side of the river; and if McClellan should come in by the Northwestern turnpike to Winchester, he would be completely in the rear of Johnston's army. For these reasons it was manifest that Winchester, and not Harper's Ferry, was the point to occupy, and he expressed these views in several letters in May and June to the authorities at Richmond, who in reply dissented from his opinions, and held the maintenance of the existing arrangements necessary for retaining command of the valley and communication with Maryland. Notwith-

standing, Johnston decided that he would hold Harper's Ferry only until his command was needed elsewhere in consequence of movements of the enemy, and continued to urge the change of location of his command. He also conferred with Beauregard (who took command at Manassas Junction, opposing McDowell's advance, a week after Johnston took command at Harper's Ferry), and he, because of their mutual dependence for aid, concurred in Johnston's views.

During this period Stuart and Ashby with their cavalry held Johnston's front along the Potomac from the Point of Rocks entirely across the Shenandoah valley to within the North mountains, as they had done for Jackson. Johnston had cartridge boxes, belts and cartridges manufactured in the neighboring towns and villages, and smuggled in percussion caps, in small quantities, from Baltimore. At Captain Pendleton's suggestion, caissons were constructed by fixing roughly-made ammunition chests on the running gear of farm wagons. Horses and harness were collected for the artillery, and horses and wagons for field transportation, from the surrounding country; and the removal of machinery from the armory to Richmond was continued. The two heavy guns that Jackson had placed in battery west of the village, Johnston mounted on Furnace ridge, the extension of Bolivar heights to the Potomac, to command the approach by railway from the west. During the first week in June the Seventh and Eighth Georgia and the Second Tennessee regiments reached Harper's Ferry.

On June 10th, Col. Lew Wallace, with the Eleventh Indiana, occupied Cumberland, Md., and on the 15th Patterson advanced his troops to Hagerstown from Chambersburg, Pa., where he had been collecting, organizing and instructing them for some days. From the information he could gather, Johnston concluded that Patterson had about 18,000 men, in twenty-four regiments of infantry, and several companies of artillery and cavalry. Johnston had at that time at Harper's Ferry about 7,000 men of all arms. At sunrise, June 13th, Johnston was advised, from Winchester, that 2,000 Federal troops, supposed to be the advance guard of McClellan's army, had marched into Romney, 43 miles west of Winchester by turnpike. As this information came from most reliable sources, Johnston at once sent Col. A. P. Hill, with

his Thirteenth Virginia, regiment, and Col. S. B. Gibbons, with his Tenth Virginia, by special train to Winchester. Colonel Hill, in command, was instructed to also take Colonel Vaughn's Third Tennessee regiment, which had just reached Winchester, as part of his detachment, move toward Romney without delay, and do the best he could to retard the progress of the Federal troops toward the Shenandoah valley.

When Patterson ordered Lew Wallace to occupy Cumberland with the Eleventh Indiana, June 10th, he warned him to be very cautious, but the ambitious colonel, learning that a considerable Confederate force was quartered at Romney, Hampshire county, in the South Branch valley, left Cumberland at 10 p. m. of the 12th, with eight companies of infantry, about 500 in number, and went by rail 21 miles southwest to New Creek (Keyser) station of the Baltimore & Ohio. On the morning of the 13th, about 4 a. m., he started to march across the mountains, by a rough country road, hoping to reach Romney, 23 miles distant, by about 8 a. m. When within a mile and a half of the town, coming from the west from Mechanicsburg, his advance was fired upon by a mounted picket, which fell back and gave the alarm, although the camp had an hour's previous notice of his coming. Pushing forward to the bridge over the South Branch, he saw the little band of Confederates drawn up on the bluff in front of the town, supporting a battery of two guns which commanded the road by which he must approach. Wallace's advance guard crossed the bridge on a run, and came under a warm fire from the windows of a large brick house not far to the right, which continued for several minutes, during which a second company crossed the bridge, and following up a ravine got into a position from which it drove the Confederates from the house and into the mountain back of it. Wallace then pushed a flanking party up a hill to the right, but before these men got within rifle range, the Confederates limbered up their guns and retreated over the bluff. The Federals at once entered, taking possession of empty houses and a lot of negroes, and searching for arms, and after a short stay returned to Cumberland, making a forced march. It was this movement that misled Johnston and induced him to send Hill to Romney.

The advance of Patterson to Hagerstown, within a day's

march of Martinsburg, and the reported Federal advance toward Romney, convinced Johnston that the time had come to abandon Harper's Ferry and put his army in a defensive or active offensive position; so during the 13th and 14th the heavy baggage of the troops (Johnston says nearly every private soldier had a trunk), the property of the quartermaster and commissary departments, and the remaining machinery of the armory were sent by rail to Winchester, and the bridges over the Potomac, from the Point of Rocks to Shepherdstown, were destroyed. The machinery from the armory was sent forward, by wagons, from Winchester to Strasburg, and thence by the Manassas Gap railroad to Richmond.

The Confederates evacuated Harper's Ferry on the morning of the 15th, moved out on the Berryville road and bivouacked three or four miles beyond Charlestown. The next morning, before the resumption of the march, the cavalry outposts reported that the advance of Patterson's army had crossed the Potomac below Williamsport and was marching on Martinsburg. Johnston at once decided to oppose this advance toward Winchester by marching across the country to Bunker Hill, midway on the turnpike between Martinsburg and Winchester, and by thus opposing Patterson prevent his anticipated junction with McClellan. While waiting for a guide, he received a letter from Cooper, dated June 13th, giving him permission to abandon Harper's Ferry and retire toward Winchester, and, if not sustained by the people of the valley so that he could turn on the enemy before reaching Winchester, to continue to retire to the Manassas Gap road; that it was hoped he could make an effective stand, even against superior forces, in some of the mountain passes; but if he was forced so far as to make a junction with Beauregard, he would leave the enemy free to occupy the valley of Virginia and move on the rear of Manassas Junction.

Johnston broke camp at 9 a. m., June 16th, and marching through Smithfield, reached Bunker Hill in the afternoon and bivouacked on Mill creek, the full-flowing branch of the Opequan running through that village from the west, where armies so often encamped during the subsequent years of the war. Next morning the troops were advanced toward Martinsburg, to high ground favorable for battle, to await the approach of the Federal

army. About noon, information came that Patterson had recrossed the Potomac, because, it was supposed, of Johnston's movement, but really because Wallace, at Cumberland, had reported himself hard pressed by Hill's move on Romney, and Patterson ordered five regiments of infantry and cavalry and artillery up the Potomac to his support. Johnston then followed out his original intention and marched toward Winchester, going into camp some 3 miles east of the town, on the Martinsburg road, but replacing his cavalry in observation along the Potomac, under Colonel Stuart, who, as Johnston says, "had already won its full confidence and mine."

Mansfield, in command at Washington, notified Colonel Stone, on the Potomac line, that the Confederates were evacuating Harper's Ferry and advised him to watch the lower Potomac fords, as though he feared Johnston might advance on Washington. On the 16th he informed Stone that the large force reported at Manassas Junction was probably that of Johnston from Harper's Ferry. In view of the demonstrations in front of Washington, Scott, on the 18th, thought of having Patterson march from Hagerstown to Frederick and join Stone in a movement down the Potomac, from Leesburg, to meet one by McDowell moving up the river.

After reaching Romney, Col. A. P. Hill, resenting Wallace's raid, sent Col. J. C. Vaughn with two companies of his Tennesseans and two of the Thirteenth Virginia to New Creek depot by the same back road Wallace used, to attack a Federal force there located. Vaughn found the enemy well posted on the north bank of the Potomac near the railroad bridge, but with no pickets out. After reconnoitering he gave orders, at 5 a. m. of the 19th, to charge the position. The order was gallantly and enthusiastically executed, but as soon as his men came in sight of the enemy, the latter broke and fled in all directions, firing a few random shots and wounding one of Vaughn's men. They did not fire their two pieces of artillery, which were captured loaded but spiked. These and the enemy's colors were brought away, and the railroad bridge over New Creek was burned. Vaughn made a march of 36 miles between 8 p. m. of the 18th and noon of the 19th, when he returned to his camp. Hill commended the handsome manner in which his orders had been executed, and Johnston called

attention to "the difference it exhibited between the spirit of our troops and that of those of the United States."

Assured that no considerable body of Federal troops was approaching from the west, Hill's detachment was called back to Winchester. Some rough gunstocks having been left at Harper's Ferry, Lieut.-Col. G. H. Steuart was sent, with his Maryland battalion, to bring these away, which he did, leaving nothing there worth removing. Jackson's brigade was left near Martinsburg, in supporting distance of the cavalry along the Potomac.

While Johnston was tarrying at Winchester, President Davis wrote him that, while governed by circumstances, he must bear in mind that the general purpose of his command was to resist invasion and repel the invaders whenever it could be done; that reinforcements had been steadily sent forward to Manassas Junction, and that others would be sent to that place and to him as the current of events might determine on which line to advance; that a large supply of ammunition had been sent him on the 19th, and more would be sent the next day; that the movements of the enemy indicated the importance attached to the valley of Virginia, and to the power he would acquire if he could advance as far as Staunton, cut off communication with the West and South, and operate on the flank and rear of Beauregard's army, at the same time provisioning his own army from the valley of the Shenandoah, and by so doing dispensing with a long line of transportation from Pennsylvania; therefore, everything should be destroyed that would facilitate such a movement through the valley.

In the meantime, the army of the Shenandoah was strengthened by the arrival of more regular army officers and of regiments from different States, and Johnston, early in July, proceeded to organize four brigades of infantry: The First, a Virginia brigade, under Col. T. J. Jackson, composed of the Second, Fourth, Fifth and Twenty-seventh Virginia regiments and Pendleton's Rockbridge artillery; the Second, under Col. F. S. Bartow, composed of the Seventh, Eighth and Ninth Georgia regiments, Duncan's and Pope's Kentucky battalions, and Alburtis' Virginia battery; the Third, under Brig.-Gen. B. E. Bee, composed of the Fourth Alabama, Second and Eleventh Mississippi, First Tennessee, and Imbo-

den's Virginia battery; the Fourth, under Col. Arnold Elzey, composed of the First Maryland battalion, Third Tennessee, Tenth and Thirteenth Virginia, and Grove's battery, leaving the First Virginia cavalry and the Thirty-third Virginia infantry unbrigaded. These commands numbered, on June 30, 1861, 10,654 present for duty, of which 10,010 were infantry, 334 cavalry and 278 artillery.

Learning that Patterson was again preparing to cross the Potomac, Jackson was sent with his brigade to the vicinity of Martinsburg to support the cavalry, and at the same time protect and aid an agent of the government who was sent to select and remove locomotives from the Baltimore & Ohio railroad shops at Martinsburg, hauling them with horses along the turnpike through Winchester to the Manassas Gap railroad at Strasburg. Jackson was also instructed to destroy all Baltimore & Ohio rolling stock that could not be brought away. On June 22d, President Davis wrote General Johnston that if the enemy had withdrawn from his front to make an attack east of the Blue ridge, they would probably attempt to advance from Leesburg to seize the Manassas Gap railroad and turn Beauregard's left, and if he had timely information of this, he might make a flank attack through the passes of the Blue ridge, and in conjunction with Beauregard achieve a glorious and beneficial victory.

During this waiting time some 2,500 of the militia of Frederick, Shenandoah and adjacent counties, were assembled at Winchester, under Brigadier-Generals Carson and Meem. To encourage these and add to their efficiency, Major Whiting, of the engineers, was directed to throw up some light defensive works, on the most commanding positions northeast of the town, and have some heavy guns, found in Winchester, mounted there.

Maj.-Gen. Robert Patterson, with the Federal army which he had concentrated, left Hagerstown June 30th, with the intention of invading Virginia in two columns, one crossing the Potomac at Dam No. 4, and the other at Williamsport, to converge at Hainesville, near which, at Camp Stephens, was encamped Jackson's brigade. Finding the fording difficult at Dam No. 4, his whole force crossed the Potomac at Williamsport, July 2d, and advanced on the main road toward Martinsburg, detaching Negley's brigade, a mile beyond the ford, to march by

way of Hedgesville and guard the right, coming into the main road again at Hainesville. About 5 miles from the ford, Patterson's skirmishers became engaged with the Confederates, posted in a clump of trees, and soon with the main force in front, sheltered by fences, woods and houses.

From Darkesville, July 3d, Jackson made report concerning this battle, his first engagement with the enemy. At about 7:30 a. m. of the 2d, Colonel Stuart informed him that the Federal troops had advanced to within $4\frac{1}{2}$ miles of Camp Stephens, and he promptly sent forward Colonel Harper's Fifth Virginia regiment and Captain Pendleton's Rockbridge battery, and gave orders for moving baggage to the rear and advancing his other regiments; that reaching the vicinity of Falling Waters, he found the Federals in position, as indicated by Stuart, when he directed Harper to deploy two companies, under Major Baylor, to the right of the road; that the enemy soon advanced, deployed and opened fire, when Harper's skirmishers drove them back on their reserve; that from a house and barn, of which he had taken possession, an apparently deadly fire was poured on the advancing foe until his position was about being turned, when he ordered Harper to gradually fall back; that the enemy opened with artillery, to which Captain Pendleton replied, with one of his guns, from a good position in the rear with a solid shot which entirely cleared the road of the enemy crowding it in front. Satisfied that the enemy were in force, Jackson, as Johnston had ordered, then fell back, checking the enemy as they advanced through the fields and woods, in line as skirmishers and endeavoring to outflank him, by deploying his men and by an occasional shot from Pendleton's gun. Allen's and Preston's regiments had also been advanced to support Harper if necessary, and once Allen took position for that purpose, but was not brought into action, as Jackson had already accomplished the object of his movement.

Before Jackson's arrival on the field, Stuart, leaving Captain White with his company to watch on the main road and fall back before the enemy, had moved forward, by a road farther to the west, to turn Patterson's right flank, and, if possible, capture his advance. Informed of Stuart's intention, but fearing that he might be cut off, Jackson had informed him by messenger, that he would make a stand about a mile and a half in front of Martinsburg and wait.

for him; but Stuart joined him soon after he had posted Harper's regiment and a single gun, at Falling Waters. Leaving Stuart in front of Martinsburg, Jackson fell back to Big Spring, $2\frac{1}{2}$ miles the other side, where he encamped for the night, and the next day retired to Darkesville. Patterson entered Martinsburg at noon of July 3d.

Stuart reported to Jackson the capture of a whole company of the Fifteenth Pennsylvania, with the exception of the captain, after killing three; that one of the enemy was killed by Captain Carter's negro servant and one of Captain Patrick's company; that the captured 49 of the enemy were from the Fifteenth Pennsylvania, the First Wisconsin and the Second United States cavalry. Jackson highly commended Stuart and his command, and wrote of the former, "He has exhibited those qualities which are calculated to make him eminent in his arm of the service." Jackson concluded his report with the reasons which induced him to advance on the enemy. They were: "A desire to capture him if his strength was only a few hundred; if he should appear in force, to hold him in check until his baggage wagons could be loaded and moved in column to the rear."

Jackson's brigade, on the 30th of June, had 128 officers and 2,043 men of the infantry, and 4 officers and 81 men of the artillery, present for duty. Stuart's cavalry had 21 officers and 313 men. At that time, Patterson had present for duty in his command, the department of Pennsylvania, 14,344, of which 395 were cavalry, 258 artillery and 13,691 infantry. This force was composed entirely of three months' men, under Lincoln's call for 75,000, with the exception of the Fourth Connecticut infantry, four companies of United States cavalry, and three of United States artillery.

In his account of "the affair at Falling Waters," as he calls it, Johnston wrote, after describing Jackson's operations, that hearing of this attack, at sunset of the 2d, he ordered the rest of his army forward, from the front of Winchester, and met Jackson's brigade, retiring, at Darkesville, about daybreak of the 3d; that he there bivouacked his whole army, in order of battle, expecting the Federals to advance and attack, and waited four days, in this expectation, supposing that Patterson had invaded Virginia for that purpose; but, as Patterson did not come

on, and being unwilling to attack superior numbers in a town so defensible as Martinsburg, with its numerous stone and brick buildings, he ordered his troops back to Winchester, much to their disappointment, as they were all eager to fight. Johnston's effective force at that time was not quite 9,000 men of all arms.

In a letter to General Cooper, from Darkesville, July 4, 1861, transmitting the reports of Colonel Jackson and Lieutenant-Colonel Stuart, General Johnston wrote: "Each of these two officers has, since the commencement of hostilities, been exercising the command corresponding to the next grade above the commission he holds, and proved himself fully competent to such command. I therefore respectfully recommend that Colonel Jackson be promoted without delay to the grade of brigadier-general, and Lieutenant-Colonel Stuart to that of colonel."

Capt. W. N. Pendleton wrote, concerning the affair at Falling Waters, that the enemy praised the Confederate artillery firing. Pendleton says his orders for aiming the gun were: "Steady, now; aim at the horses' knees," which he considered the first important lesson for making efficient artillerists.

Stuart's exploit at Falling Waters, which introduced this young Scotch-Irish Virginia cavalryman as a wily strategist and bold fighter, furnishes a good opportunity for telling how he got into the Virginia army and more about this exploit, as told by his biographer, Maj. H. B. McClellan.

In March, 1861, Lieut. J. E. B. Stuart obtained a two months' leave of absence from his regiment, the First United States cavalry, then at Fort Lyon, Kan., a portion of which he spent with his family in St. Louis. After three weeks of anxious waiting on Virginia's action, he returned to Fort Riley, where he learned that Virginia had adopted an ordinance of secession. As his leave had not yet expired, he promptly removed his family to St. Louis, and himself took steamboat for Memphis, forwarding from Cairo, to the United States war department, his resignation as an officer in the United States army, at about the same time that he received notice that he had been promoted to a captaincy in his regiment. He reached Wytheville, Va., the nearest railway station to his old home in Patrick county, on the 7th of May, the very day his resignation was accepted by the United

States war department. Informed of this, he went at once to Richmond, and offered his sword in defense of Virginia, his native State, and on the 10th was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of infantry, in the Virginia army, and ordered to report to Col. T. J. Jackson at Harper's Ferry. On reporting for duty he was assigned to the command of the cavalry, some 350 men, then in the Shenandoah valley. With this small force, with the skill, energy and activity that had already won him reputation, he held, and efficiently watched, a front of nearly 100 miles along the Potomac, from east of the Blue ridge entirely across the Shenandoah valley and nearly to the Alleghany range, and duly reported every forward movement of the enemy. His early discovery of Patterson's move across the Potomac, at Williamsport, the 1st of July, enabled Johnston to send Jackson's brigade to the assistance of the cavalry north of Martinsburg, and to participate in the creditable affair at Falling Waters. There he displayed the prompt courage for which he afterward became famous, and converted threatened disaster into victory, when, riding alone in advance of his men, and emerging suddenly from a thick piece of woods, he found himself confronting a body of Federal infantry only separated from him by a fence. Quickly comprehending the possibilities of the emergency, he unhesitatingly rode forward and ordered some of the Federal soldiers, who probably mistook him for one of their own officers, as he was still dressed in his United States uniform, to throw down the fence. This order was promptly obeyed. He then ordered the whole party to lay down their arms and surrender, on the peril of their lives. Bewildered by this audacity and boldness, they obeyed, when Stuart, fling them off through the gap in the fence, soon had them surrounded by his troopers, his prize proving to be 49 men, nearly an entire company of the Fifteenth Pennsylvania volunteers, from the right of Patterson's line of battle.

On the 10th of July, President Davis wrote to Johnston that he was trying, by every means at his command, to reinforce him; that he expected to send off Colonel Forney's regiment the next morning, and others as fast as railway transportation could be secured. On the 13th he gave notice that another regiment, fully equipped, was sent him that day; that he could get 20,000 men

from Mississippi, if they could be armed, and that he had numerous tenders of troops from Georgia, but he had to answer all that he had no arms to spare them.

The lower valley of the Shenandoah (the northeastern part of Virginia's unfailing storehouse for supplying Confederate armies) furnished Johnston an abundant supply of provisions and forage, which the people, staunchly loyal, were willing to sell to his quartermasters and commissaries on credit, so he had no need for subsistence supplies from Richmond, except rations of coffee and sugar. He wrote that under the management of Maj. G. W. T. Kearsley, his chief commissary, the valley could have abundantly supplied an army four times as large as his. The great difficulty was to procure ammunition, as but little had been imported and the partially organized Confederate ordnance department had neither time nor means to prepare the half that was needed. The small supply brought from Harper's Ferry was increased by some from Richmond and by sending officers elsewhere to collect caps as well as cartridges.

On the 15th of July, Stuart reported that Patterson's army had advanced from Martinsburg to Bunker Hill, where it remained the next day; but on the 17th it moved from that village and the Winchester road, by its left, to Smithfield, a few miles on the turnpike road to Charlestown. This suggested to Johnston that the Federal commander designed to continue his movement on through Berryville, to place his army between the Confederates at Winchester and those at Manassas Junction, to hold Johnston in the valley while McDowell was assailing Beauregard; or, perhaps, to attack Winchester from the south and turn its slight intrenchments.

After the Confederate army retired from Darkesville toward Winchester, the Thirty-third Virginia, under Col. A. C. Cummings, was added to Jackson's brigade; the Sixth North Carolina to Bee's; the Eleventh Georgia to Bartow's, the Ninth Georgia having joined that brigade soon after the troops left Winchester; and a fifth brigade was formed, for Brig.-Gen. E. Kirby Smith, of the Eighth, Ninth, Tenth and Eleventh Alabama and the Nineteenth Mississippi regiments, and Stanard's Virginia battery. At that time the effective strength of the regiments in the army of the Shenandoah did not much exceed 500 men each, so many were sick with

measles, mumps, and other diseases to which unseasoned troops are subject.

About 1 a. m., July 18th, Johnston received a telegram from Adjutant-General Cooper informing him that Beauregard was attacked, and that to strike the enemy a decisive blow a junction of all their effective forces was needed; and directing him, if it was practicable to make the movement, to send his sick and baggage across to Culpeper Court House, but, in all arrangements, to exercise his own discretion. A half hour later, a telegram from Beauregard informed Johnston of his urgent need for the aid he had promised him in the emergency now arrived. Confident that the troops under his command could render no service in the valley so important to the Confederacy as preventing a Federal victory at Manassas Junction, Johnston unhesitatingly decided to hasten to that point with his whole army, the only question being whether to first attempt to defeat Patterson, or, by a secret movement, elude him. The latter course he considered the quickest and safest, if it could be accomplished. He relied on Stuart to furnish him the means of judging whether this could be done, while his troops were preparing to march. The Federal cavalry, chiefly regulars, had the advantage in arms and discipline, but kept close to the infantry; Stuart, on the contrary, held his men far in advance of the Confederate infantry camps and kept his pickets and scouts near the enemy, and by so doing could quickly learn of their movements, at the same time concealing his own. His report to Johnston showed that at 9 o'clock of the 18th, Patterson had not advanced from Smithfield, a point so far from Johnston's road to Manassas that Patterson could neither prevent nor delay his march. Stuart's information proved the expediency of moving as soon as possible.

Johnston had, at that time, at Winchester, some 1,700 sick men. If he waited to remove these to Culpeper Court House, it would cause a delay of days when hours were of importance. Therefore he provided for these in Winchester, leaving for their defense the militia brigades of Carson and Meem, which were quite strong enough to defend the place and the district. Moreover, there was no doubt but that Patterson would follow, with his main body, the movement to Manassas, as soon as he discovered it; but to delay that discovery, Stuart was instructed

to establish as complete a cordon as his regiment could make, and as near as practicable to the Federal army, to prevent information reaching it from the direction of Winchester or Berryville; to maintain his close picketing until the night of the 18th, and then follow the army through Ashby's gap. Stuart screened this movement of Johnston's whole army from the valley so effectually that Patterson did not know that it had been made until the 21st, when the army of the Shenandoah was bravely participating in the battle of Bull Run.

Johnston's troops left their camp at Winchester about noon, June 18th, Jackson's brigade leading the march. When the rear of the command was a mile or two beyond Winchester, all the different regiments were at the same time informed of the object of the movement and the necessity for a forced march, and exhorted to strive to reach the field of contention in time to take part in the great battle that had already begun. Johnston, accustomed to the steady gait of regular soldiers, was greatly discouraged by the slow rate of marching of the volunteers and the frequent delays, and nearly despaired of reaching Beauregard in time to aid him in battle. This induced him to dispatch Major Whiting, of the engineers, to Piedmont station of the Manassas Gap railroad, the nearest one on his line of march through Ashby's gap, to ascertain whether railway trains could be procured for transporting his troops to their destination quicker than they could reach it by marching, and if these trains could be secured, to make the necessary transportation arrangements. Whiting, in returning, met Johnston at Paris, a hamlet near the top of the Blue ridge, with a favorable report. The head of Jackson's brigade reached Paris, 17 miles from Winchester, about two hours after dark. The four other brigades halted for the night on the Shenandoah, 4 miles back from Paris and 13 from Winchester. The next day, Friday, July 19th, Johnston's infantry were all across the Blue ridge, as were also his artillery and cavalry, under Colonels Pendleton and Stuart, and all on their way eager to reach the field of conflict.

After the affair at Falling Waters, Patterson, as we have seen, did not enter Martinsburg until the 3d; and though he informed Scott that day that he was in "hot pursuit" of the enemy, he remained there until the 15th,

giving as excuse that he had not transportation enough to supply his army for more than three days at a time, and as he could get nothing from the country he had invaded, while the enemy could, he was compelled to send back to Hagerstown for all his subsistence. He was also under the impression that Johnston's army had been increased to 13,000 men. On the 4th, he wired that as soon as he could get a supply of provisions he intended to advance on Winchester, "to drive the enemy from that place, if any remained," and then move toward Charlestown, to which point he believed Stone was advancing from toward Washington, by way of Harper's Ferry; and then, if it was not too hazardous, he would continue to Leesburg, but unless he was reinforced with long term men, he would have to abandon the country, as the time of most of his army was about to expire, on the 15th of July.

Scott, who had on the 1st informed Patterson that he hoped to move a column of 35,000 men the next week, aggressively, toward Manassas Junction, promised reinforcements and said that Stone was in supporting distance, with all his force, opposite Harper's Ferry. He suggested that after defeating the enemy, Patterson could continue the pursuit, if not too hazardous, and advance toward Alexandria by way of Leesburg, but must move with great caution through the dangerous defiles. Patterson replied that large reinforcements had come from Manassas to Johnston, who probably then had "26,000 men and 24 field guns, some of them rifled and of large caliber."

Patterson must have been greatly confused by Scott's unintelligible orders, directing movements to Alexandria by way of Strasburg, etc., but, stimulated by the arrival of reinforcements and the prospect of more, he issued orders on the 8th for a movement the next day, in two parallel columns, toward Winchester; but instead of marching he called a council of war, participated in by the heads of his staff departments and his brigade commanders, in which there was a general concurrence of expressed opinions, that it would be a very dangerous business to move toward Winchester, each having a professional reason for his conclusions; the quartermaster and the commissary saying they could get neither sufficient transportation nor supplies for such an extended move-

ment; the engineers considering the line of the movement a false one, and the position then held a dangerous one, as Johnston could easily flank it, and all agreed that they ought to go at once to Shepherdstown, Charlestown, or Harper's Ferry. Stone suggested that from the latter place they could best threaten Johnston.

Later, the same day, Scott added to Patterson's distractions by telling him that they had information, doubtless reliable, that the Confederates intended to draw him far back from the Potomac, where Johnston could defeat him, when the latter would join Wise, and moving upon McClellan, in the northwest, conquer him; and then their joint forces would march back and join Beauregard in an assault upon Washington. Concerning this marvelous scheme, Patterson replied, on the 12th, that it confirmed his impression as to the insecurity of his position, and he asked permission to transfer his depot to Harper's Ferry and his forces to the Charlestown line, as defeat in the Shenandoah valley would be ruin everywhere. Scott at once gave his consent, suggesting that later he could march to Alexandria, by way of Hillsboro and Leesburg, but that he must not recross the Potomac.

The news of McClellan's success at Rich mountain, on the 12th, elated Patterson, but he maintained that his column was the keystone of the combined movements, and it must be preserved in order to secure the fruits of that and other victories; that it would not do to hazard that result by a defeat, and he would act cautiously while preparing to strike. Scott promptly replied that if he was not strong enough to defeat Johnston the coming week, he must make demonstrations to detain him in the valley.

After having tarried twelve days at Martinsburg, in his 'hot pursuit' of Johnston, Patterson, on the 15th, advanced 12 miles to Bunker Hill, only opposed by Stuart's cavalry (he said some 600), which fell back, skirmishing with his advance and barricading the road behind them, which Patterson interpreted as "showing that the enemy had no confidence even in their large force." The day after he reached Bunker Hill, Patterson, realizing that his ninety days' race with time was about up, and that the prospect of having Johnston's army as a prize had vanished, informed Scott that the term of service of most of his command had about expired, and he felt confident that

many of these would lay down their arms the very day their term of enlistment ended; therefore, he could not think of advancing toward Winchester until these men were replaced with three years' men. On July 17th he began his retrograde movement (the newspapers called it an advance) by leaving the Winchester road, crossing the Opequan, and posting his army along the road from Smithfield to Charlestown. Scott telegraphed him that he had learned, through the Philadelphia papers, of his "advance," and added: "Do not let the enemy amuse you and delay you with a small force in front while he reinforces the junction with his main body." Next day Scott repeated his injunction:

I have certainly been expecting you to beat the enemy. If not, to hear that you had felt him strongly, or, at least, had occupied him by threats and demonstrations. You have been at least his equal, and, I suppose, his superior in numbers. Has he not stolen a march and sent reinforcements toward Manassas Junction? A week is enough to win victories. The time of the volunteers counts from day of muster into the service of the United States. You must not retreat across the Potomac. If necessary, when abandoned by the short term volunteers, intrench somewhere and wait for reinforcements.

Three times on that same 18th of July, while Johnston's army was rapidly marching from the valley toward Manassas, Patterson telegraphed Scott, insisting that the enemy had not stolen a march on him; that he had held Johnston in Winchester and accomplished more than Scott had asked or could well have expected in the face of an enemy of superior numbers. The determination of his three months' men to go home still troubled him, and on the 19th, he said that only three regiments had consented to stay for ten days, and repeated that from his last information, Johnston was still at Winchester and being daily reinforced. That day, July 19th, Patterson was honorably discharged from the service of the United States, to take effect on the 27th, and Maj.-Gen. N. P. Banks was directed to assume command of the army under Patterson, and of the department of the Shenandoah.

From Harper's Ferry, on the 21st, Patterson reported that Winchester was abandoned the day before by all armed parties; that Johnston had left to operate on McDowell's right, and that he could not follow because he had but few active troops, all the others being bare-footed and ordered home when their term of service should expire.

Patterson, on the 23d, was sending his train across the river at Harper's Ferry, intending to go to Washington with all his available force unless ordered to the contrary; but Scott advised him that this force was not wanted at Washington, but "it is expected you will hold Harper's Ferry unless threatened by a force well ascertained to be competent to expel you." Patterson replied that he considered the occupation of Harper's Ferry, with his small force, as hazardous, and that not less than 20,000 men were needed to hold it against a formidable enemy.

The Shenandoah valley campaign of 1861—three months long, to a day—though marked by no brilliant achievements, was full of substantial advantage to the Confederacy. (1) The capture of the arsenal and armories at Harper's Ferry gave it a large number of arms, when most needed, and the machinery for their continuous manufacture, worth millions of dollars. (2) The few days of militia rule and service showed that not much dependence could be placed in that State organization. (3) Jackson's twenty-five days of command at Harper's Ferry organized into regiments and brought under control and military discipline a large number of volunteers, and enabled him to become so familiar with that post and its surroundings that he knew just how to capture it when ordered so to do in the fall of 1862. (4) Johnston's defiant holding of Harper's Ferry, until the 15th of June, kept Scott in a constant state of alarm for the safety of Washington, held a large number of troops in observation in Maryland, and deprived the Federal capital of the use of its best line of communication with the West. (5) Johnston's prompt and bold action in sending Hill to Romney, the quick move of the latter on New creek, and Johnston's evacuation of Harper's Ferry, June 15th, without waiting for orders, and at once placing his army across Patterson's line of advance, not only inspired courage in his men and confidence in their leader, but disconcerted Patterson and made him withdraw his invasion. (6) The conduct of Stuart and Jackson at Falling Waters gave satisfying promise of heroic leadership and made men eager to follow them into mortal combat; and Johnston's all night march and four days' offer of battle, which orders from Richmond alone prevented his forcing, assured the army of the Shenandoah that it had an everyway competent commander. (7) The

taking of a mount of observation at Winchester, the quick response to Beauregard's call, the telling his men of the object of his movement, and the complete concealment of that from Patterson, crowned the confidence of his soldiery in their bold commander, and made them ready to follow wherever he might lead. (8) Above all, it was a training school, under the ablest of tacticians and strategists, which almost made veterans out of raw troops and fitted them for the good fight they so soon joined in, on Bull run.

CHAPTER VII.

THE BULL RUN, OR MANASSAS, CAMPAIGN—JANUARY TO JULY, 1861.

OF the four columns of Federal invasion in 1861, by which Scott and Lincoln expected to overrun and subjugate Virginia in ninety days, the third, that from Washington toward Richmond, was the most important, as it had for its object, not only a direct movement upon the capital of Virginia and of the Confederacy, but also the protection of the Federal capital; furthermore, it was under the special supervision of the general-in-chief of the United States army, Lieut.-Gen. Winfield Scott. The important result of the operations of that line of invasion was the famous Bull Run, or Manassas, campaign of 1861. The events leading up to this require at least a brief notice.

President Buchanan, alarmed by the action of the Southern States and by the excitement throughout the Union that followed the election of Lincoln, called Scott, from the headquarters of the army in New York, to Washington, and on the last day of 1860 conferred with him in reference to the protection of that city and of the coming inauguration of Lincoln, both of which, he was led to believe, were threatened with violence. As the result of this, Col. Charles P. Stone was appointed inspector-general for the special purpose of reorganizing and arming the volunteer militia companies of the District of Columbia, in such a way as to secure their loyalty to the Union, in the belief that these would furnish all the military protection Washington then needed. This work was thoroughly done, and these citizen soldiery served as guards in the city and at the inauguration of President Lincoln, on the 4th of March, 1861; and sixteen companies of them, organized into battalions, were mustered into the service of the United States, about the 12th of April, when Fort Sumter was fired on, and became the nucleus for the great volunteer army that later assem-

bled at Washington in response to Lincoln's call of April 15th.

The first State troops to reach Washington after Lincoln's call was the Sixth Massachusetts, which was attacked in passing through the streets of Baltimore, on the 19th of April, by unorganized citizens, but reached Washington late that day and was encamped in the capitol. After the passage of these troops, the railways from Baltimore north to Harrisburg and east to Philadelphia were broken in consequence of the destruction of bridges by Southern sympathizers, and were not again opened for travel until the 7th of May; but in the meantime, troops in large numbers were brought to Washington from the North and the West by steamers from Perryville, on the Susquehanna, on the road to Philadelphia, down the bay to Annapolis, and thence by rail across to Washington, and also around the coast to Chesapeake bay, and up that and the Potomac, so that quite an army was gathered in that city when Col. J. K. Mansfield took command of it on the 27th of April. Steps were taken to guard the bridges from Virginia and all other approaches, Lincoln on the same day calling for twenty-five regiments of regulars in addition to the 75,000 three-months' men previously called.

On the 25th of April, the Confederates planted batteries on Arlington heights, and placed guards in Alexandria and along the Potomac above and below Washington. On the 28th, Federal troops guarded the northern, and Confederate troops the southern, end of the long bridge; but on the 30th, General Lee ordered the withdrawal of all troops between the long bridge and Alexandria, to avoid provoking a collision for which he was unprepared. On the 5th of May, the Confederate forces in Alexandria, some 500 in number, including 70 cavalry, under Lieut.-Col. A. S. Taylor, alarmed by a rumored attack, evacuated Alexandria, without orders, and fell back to Springfield. General Cocke, in command along the Potomac, from his headquarters at Culpeper promptly ordered them back. On the 9th two Virginia regiments of infantry were ordered to Cocke, and on that day he located his headquarters at Manassas Junction and began the gathering of troops at that point, establishing connections with Col. Daniel Ruggles, in command at Fredericksburg with his advance at Aquia creek on the Potomac.

and strengthening Leesburg, under command of Colonel Hunton, with several regiments of infantry and companies of cavalry and artillery, to protect that place, the line of the railway to Alexandria, and watch the fords of the Potomac. On the 12th, Federal gunboats in the Potomac were brought up in front of Alexandria. On the 21st of May, Brig.-Gen. M. L. Bonham was put in command of the Alexandria line, and established his headquarters at Manassas Junction. Troops from all portions of the South were ordered forward to that place, which, it was rumored, was threatened with early attack.

On May 24th, the day after the citizens of Virginia approved her ordinance of secession, about a dozen regiments of Federal infantry, with cavalry and artillery, at 2 a. m. crossed the Potomac by the aqueduct and the long bridge, and by steamer at Alexandria, and took possession of Arlington heights, Alexandria and the intermediate front of the Potomac, driving out the Confederates, some 500 men, from Alexandria, at half-past four, and capturing Ball's company of cavalry. The Confederates fell back to Manassas and the Federals at once began fortifying their front, after advancing their pickets several miles on the roads leading into Virginia. The supposition of Colonel Terrett, who evacuated Alexandria, was that the Federals proposed to advance toward Leesburg. The next day Bonham reported to Lee that he then had at Manassas Junction but 500 infantry, four pieces of artillery and one troop of cavalry.

Before the opening of the Manassas campaign there were a number of minor affairs, of which a condensed account may be here given:

On May 21st, and again on June 1st, two armed steamers attacked the Confederate battery established at Aquia creek on the Potomac, but without doing much damage. Colonel Ruggles promptly moved 700 men across from Fredericksburg, with some 6-pounder rifle guns, and engaged the gunboats successfully. He then established Bate's Tennessee regiment in a camp at Brooke Station, and returned the rest of his forces to Fredericksburg.

On June 1st, Lieutenant Tompkins, with 75 men of the Second United States cavalry, sent on a scout, drove in the pickets and charged through Lieut.-Col. R. S. Ewell's camp, at Fairfax, between three and four in the morning. A lively skirmish ensued, forcing the Federals to pass around the village in retreat, after some loss. Colonel Ewell was wounded, and Captain Marr, of the Warrenton rifles, was killed, while bravely rallying their men. This attack was made without orders, and McDowell says it frustrated, for the time, a

more important movement, which Ewell learned was to have been an attack on Manassas.

On June 10th, Col. Charles P. Stone began, with the District of Columbia volunteers, what is known as "the Rockville expedition," having for its object the holding of the line of the Potomac from Washington up toward Harper's Ferry, guarding the fords and ferries of that river from Virginia, and any movement on Washington from that direction. This resulted in skirmishes near Seneca mills on the 14th, at Conrad's Ferry on the 17th, at Edward's Ferry on the 18th, at Harper's Ferry July 4th, and at Great Falls July 7th. Colonel Stone was reinforced from time to time with other volunteer troops from Washington. His headquarters were opposite Harper's Ferry July 6th, when he marched, with most of his command, to Williamsport, Md., and thence to Martinsburg, to reinforce Patterson. The Confederate force opposing him was mainly that under Col. Eppa Hunton, in observation at Leesburg.

On June 16th, Col. Maxcy Gregg, with the First South Carolina infantry, about 575 strong, several companies of cavalry and two guns of Kemper's battery, marched from his camp near Fairfax on a reconnoissance to Dranesville, where he learned that several hundred of the enemy had that day come up the Leesburg turnpike to near Hunter's mill. On the morning of the 17th, Gregg rode with a troop of horse to the Potomac, opposite Seneca creek, and reconnoitered. Returning, he marched by Hunter's mill to Vienna, on the Alexandria & Leesburg railroad. About 6 p. m., as he was moving off, the whistle of an approaching train was heard in the direction of Alexandria. He at once marched back, planted his two guns on a hill commanding a curve in the railroad, and placed his infantry and cavalry in support. As the train came round the curve, Kemper opened on it a rapid fire from his guns, which badly damaged the train and caused the Federals, the First Ohio, under Brig.-Gen. R. C. Schenck, to escape from it and rapidly retreat. Owing to the lateness of the hour Gregg, could not pursue, but he destroyed one passenger and five platform cars, captured some arms, and killed and wounded several of the enemy, without loss and with credit to his management.

On June 25th a small party of the enemy landed at Mathias Point, under cover of guns from a steamer, and burned the house of Dr. Howe; the object being to discover whether a battery was being located there. On the 27th another descent was made by a force landed from boats. Maj. R. M. Mayo's command of one cavalry and three infantry companies met and drove this body. Brig.-Gen. T. H. Holmes, in command, reported that he then had fifteen companies of volunteers at Mathias Point, and had ordered a section of Walker's battery to the same place.

On July 14th, Colonel Davies, with the Fifteenth New York, made a reconnoissance from Alexandria 7 miles out on the Fairfax road, 10 miles on the Richmond, or Telegraph road, and to Mt. Vernon. Only a small picket was met on the Richmond road. Some of Davies' command visited the house of Col. John A. Washington, near Mt. Vernon, and brought away plantation supplies, taking Colonel Washington's teams and negroes to haul them to camp. Davies sent back the teams and supplies, but kept the negroes to do team duty in his brigade. Col. D. S. Miles, his division commander, instructed Davies to respect private property, and send back the negroes.

On June 2d, Brig.-Gen. G. T. Beauregard took command of the Confederate troops on the "Alexandria line." His main line of defense was behind Bull run, and his headquarters at Manassas Junction, 26 miles from Alexandria and the Potomac river. This army then held the line of the Potomac from the Blue ridge down to the vicinity of Washington, thence around the already partially fortified Virginia front of that city to the Potomac, and then south along that river to Chesapeake bay.

The only advantages of the line of Bull run to the Confederates were strategic. It was, by public roads, about 20 miles from the Potomac, a distance over which the movements of the Federal army could be easily watched; and it covered the junction of the Orange & Alexandria railroad—which had connection at Gordonsville, by the Virginia Central, with Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy, and with Staunton, a great depot of supplies and the most important town in the Shenandoah valley—with the Manassas Gap railroad, which led from Manassas Junction to Strasburg in the lower valley of the Shenandoah, giving quick connection with the army there operating under Gen. J. E. Johnston.

Excellent highways from Alexandria and Washington, and from other important points to the northwest and southwest, converged at Centreville, about 3 miles east of Bull run, offering great advantages for the concentration of the Federal army in the immediate front of this line; while roads diverging from the same village to the northwest, west and southwest, made it an easy matter to maneuver troops for offensive operations upon the flanks of a defensive army holding the line of Bull run. There were also excellent positions on the northeastern side of that stream for holding the defensive army in check in front of its center while flanking movements to either hand were in process of execution.

The Federal army of invasion consisted of five divisions: The First, under Brig.-Gen. Daniel Tyler, was composed of four brigades of infantry and four batteries of regular United States artillery; the Second, under Col. D. M. Hunter, of two brigades of infantry, a battalion of United States cavalry, a battery of regular United States artillery, and two volunteer batteries; the Third, under Col. S. P. Heintzelman, of three brigades of infan-

try and two batteries of regular United States artillery. These three divisions and their cavalry and batteries participated in the battle. The Fourth division, under Brig.-Gen. T. Runyon, and the Fifth, under Col. D. S. Miles, each composed of two brigades of infantry, two batteries of regular United States artillery, and one volunteer battery, were held in reserve, in front of and at Centreville, and in its rear, and did not participate in the battle, except that the Fifth had some skirmishing while covering the retreat of the Federal army. The Fifth division guarded the roads leading to the Potomac and did not get nearer to Centreville than about Fairfax, 7 miles eastward. The official returns for July 17th show that McDowell had 34,127 men present for duty. His adjutant-general claims that the rank and file of his army that participated in the battle of Bull Run numbered 18,572, with 24 pieces of artillery. This does not include the two divisions in reserve, which had over 11,000 men and 25 pieces of artillery.*

The Confederate forces at Bull Run were embraced in the army of the Potomac, which, under Brig.-Gen. G. T. Beauregard, had been holding Manassas and the line of the Potomac east of the Blue ridge, and the army of the Shenandoah, under Gen. J. E. Johnston, which reinforced the former, from the Shenandoah valley, during the engagement. The army of the Potomac, before the battle, consisted of the First brigade, one North Carolina and four South Carolina regiments, under Brig.-Gen. M. L. Bonham; Second brigade, two Alabama and one Louisiana regiments, under Brig.-Gen. R. S. Ewell; Third brigade, two Mississippi and one South Carolina regiments, under Brig.-Gen. D. R. Jones; Fourth brigade, one North Carolina and three Virginia regiments, under Brig.-Gen. James Longstreet; Fifth brigade, one Louisiana battalion and five Virginia regiments, under Col. P. St. George Cocke; Sixth brigade, two Virginia, one Mississippi and one South Carolina regiment, under Col. J. A. Early; and not brigaded, two Louisiana and one South Carolina infantry regiment, two cavalry regiments and one artillery battalion, and five artillery batteries.

* Beauregard states, in a paper published since the war, that the combined Confederate army at Manassas mustered 29,188 men, rank and file, and 55 guns; that of these, 21,923 men, infantry, cavalry and artillery, and 29 guns, belonged to his army of the Potomac.

REFERENCES.

- 1 Barlow FAZ.
- 2 Rec.
- 3 " "
- 4 " "
- 5 " "
- 6 " "
- 7 " "
- 8 " "
- 9 " "
- 10 " "
- 11 " "
- 12 " "
- 13 " "
- 14 " "
- 15 " "
- 16 " "
- 17 " "
- 18 " "
- 19 " "
- 20 " "
- 21 " "
- 22 " "
- 23 " "
- 24 " "
- 25 " "
- 26 " "
- 27 " "
- 28 " "
- 29 " "
- 30 " "
- 31 " "
- 32 " "
- 33 " "
- 34 " "
- 35 " "
- 36 " "
- 37 " "
- 38 " "
- 39 " "
- 40 " "
- 41 " "
- 42 " "
- 43 " "
- 44 " "
- 45 " "
- 46 " "
- 47 " "
- 48 " "
- 49 " "
- 50 " "
- 51 " "
- 52 " "
- 53 " "
- 54 " "
- 55 " "
- 56 " "
- 57 " "
- 58 " "
- 59 " "
- 60 " "
- 61 " "
- 62 " "
- 63 " "
- 64 " "
- 65 " "
- 66 " "
- 67 " "
- 68 " "
- 69 " "
- 70 " "
- 71 " "
- 72 " "
- 73 " "
- 74 " "
- 75 " "
- 76 " "
- 77 " "
- 78 " "
- 79 " "
- 80 " "
- 81 " "
- 82 " "
- 83 " "
- 84 " "
- 85 " "
- 86 " "
- 87 " "
- 88 " "
- 89 " "
- 90 " "
- 91 " "
- 92 " "
- 93 " "
- 94 " "
- 95 " "
- 96 " "
- 97 " "
- 98 " "
- 99 " "
- 100 " "

2nd Reg't Va. Vols.
17-19 Feb.

4th Reg't Va. Vols.
18-19 Feb.

5th Reg't Va. Vols.
9-24 Feb.

18th Reg't Va. Vols.
9-24 Feb.

10th Reg't Va. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

27th Reg't Va. Vols.
15-24 Feb.

28th Reg't Va. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

31st Reg't Va. Vols.
19-24 Feb.

40th Reg't Va. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

Whelan's Battalion
24-19 Feb.

Brantley's Regiment
17-19 Feb.

6th Reg't N.C. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

Cook's Reg't.
24-19 Feb.

8th Reg't N.C. Vols.
11-24 Feb.

11 " "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

" "

4th Reg't N.C. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

5th " "

6th " "

7th " "

8th " "

9th " "

10th " "

11th " "

12th " "

13th " "

14th " "

15th " "

16th " "

17th " "

18th " "

19th " "

20th " "

21st " "

22nd " "

23rd " "

24th " "

25th " "

26th " "

27th " "

28th " "

29th " "

30th " "

31st " "

32nd " "

33rd " "

34th " "

35th " "

36th " "

37th " "

38th " "

39th " "

40th " "

41st " "

42nd " "

43rd " "

44th " "

45th " "

46th " "

47th " "

48th " "

49th " "

50th " "

51st " "

52nd " "

53rd " "

54th " "

55th " "

56th " "

57th " "

58th " "

59th " "

60th " "

61st " "

62nd " "

63rd " "

64th " "

65th " "

66th " "

67th " "

68th " "

69th " "

70th " "

71st " "

72nd " "

73rd " "

74th " "

75th " "

76th " "

77th " "

78th " "

79th " "

80th " "

81st " "

82nd " "

83rd " "

84th " "

85th " "

86th " "

87th " "

88th " "

89th " "

90th " "

91st " "

92nd " "

93rd " "

94th " "

95th " "

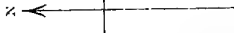
96th " "

97th " "

98th " "

99th " "

100th " "



4th Reg't N.C. Vols.
24-19 Feb.

5th " "

6th " "

7th " "

8th " "

9th " "

10th " "

11th " "

12th " "

13th " "

14th " "

15th " "

16th " "

17th " "

18th " "

19th " "

20th " "

21st " "

22nd " "

23rd " "

24th " "

25th " "

26th " "

27th " "

28th " "

29th " "

30th " "

31st " "

32nd " "

33rd " "

34th " "

35th " "

36th " "

37th " "

38th " "

39th " "

40th " "

41st " "

42nd " "

43rd " "

44th " "

45th " "

46th " "

47th " "

48th " "

49th " "

50th " "

51st " "

52nd " "

53rd " "

54th " "

55th " "

56th " "

57th " "

58th " "

59th " "

60th " "

61st " "

62nd " "

63rd " "

64th " "

65th " "

66th " "

67th " "

68th " "

69th " "

70th " "

71st " "

72nd " "

73rd " "

74th " "

75th " "

76th " "

77th " "

78th " "

79th " "

80th " "

81st " "

82nd " "

83rd " "

84th " "

85th " "

86th " "

87th " "

88th " "

89th " "

90th " "

91st " "

92nd " "

93rd " "

94th " "

95th " "

96th " "

97th " "

98th " "

99th " "

100th " "



**BATTLE-FIELD
OF
YOUNG'S BRANCH
OR
MANASSAS PLAINS.
BATTLE FOUGHT
July 21st, 1861.**

Scale of Chains
0 50 100 200

*Tracing forwarded to the Chief of Engineers U.S.A.
by Maj. A. Michler, Corps of Engineers, June 1, 1871.*

EXPLANATION

- Confederate Infantry
- Federal Infantry
- Artillery
- Cemetery 8th Ga. Regt.
- Distinguished men fell
- Oak woodland
- Pile

NOTE The list of positions do not appear on the map and some of the names in the map are not referred to in the list. The letters used to designate the various positions of the Confederate artillery

From Official Records

HEIGHTS OF HILLS

- Matthew Hill
- Ridge in rear of Springhouse
- Myersburg H. 76
- Herry Hill 102
- Lewis Hill 80'

Company's
BLACK HORSE AND
CHESTERFIELD CAVALRY

New Market

Groveton

WARREN'S QUARTERS
YOUNG'S

Chann's Spring

Lewis

Lewis's Ford

Bell's Ford

Island Ford

RIFLE BARRICADE

The army of the Shenandoah, when it joined Beauregard, was composed of the First brigade, four Virginia infantry regiments and Pendleton's Virginia battery, under Col. T. J. Jackson; Second brigade, three Georgia regiments, two Kentucky battalions and Alburtis' Virginia battery; Third brigade, one Alabama, two Mississippi and one Tennessee regiment, and Imboden's Virginia battery, under Brig.-Gen. B. E. Bee; Fourth brigade, one Tennessee and two Virginia regiments, a Maryland infantry battalion, and Grove's Virginia battery, under Col. A. Elzey; and one Virginia regiment of infantry and one of cavalry, not brigaded. The army of the Potomac, it was estimated, had 9,713 men of all arms engaged; the army of the Shenandoah had a total of 8,340 of all arms for duty. The combined army was estimated to contain some 30,000 men of all arms; but only about 18,000 of these were actually engaged in the battle.

When Beauregard took command at Manassas, Johnston's "army of the Shenandoah," in the lower Shenandoah valley, was, in a sense, Beauregard's left, although not under his command, as Johnston ranked him. On the right, at Aquia creek, on the Potomac, holding the terminus of the Richmond, Fredericksburg & Potomac railroad, was a Confederate force of some 2,500 men, under Brig.-Gen. T. H. Holmes. Beauregard had a small advanced outpost, under Colonel Hunton, at Leesburg, watching the fords of the upper Potomac east of the Blue ridge; another at Fairfax, in direct observation of the Federal army at Washington, with detachments on the line of the railway toward Alexandria, and to the south of that road, guarding the approaches to his right from Alexandria. The principal advantage of his chosen line of defense was that it was an interior one.

From information that he deemed authentic, Beauregard concluded that he was confronted by an army of 50,000 men, fully equipped and ready for offensive operations, under the direction, as general-in-chief, of Lieut.-Gen. Winfield Scott, then considered the most able, as he was the most distinguished military officer on the American continent, and under the immediate command of Brig.-Gen. Irvin McDowell, one of the most esteemed of the active officers of the Federal army. To oppose these

he could muster barely 18,000 men and 29 guns. In view of this supposed disparity of opposing force, Beauregard urged President Davis to concentrate the armies of Johnston and Holmes with his at Manassas, that he might be ready to fall upon McDowell's flanks, rear, and line of communication, whenever he should advance, cut off his retreat upon Washington, and force him to surrender; and, by so doing, compel Patterson to retreat from the lower Shenandoah valley, and thus insure the capture of Washington. These suggestions were not favorably received at Richmond, and it was intimated to Beauregard that he should retire behind the Rappahannock when an offensive movement of the Federal army began.

Left to his own discretion, Beauregard informed himself fully concerning his position and the approaches to it, destroyed the railroad bridge across Bull run in front of Manassas Junction, and awaited results. A faithful spy, sent to Washington, having reliable information July 15th that the Federal army would march the next day, rode rapidly around the left flank of that army and put this important information in the hands of Beauregard before 9 p. m. of the same day, thus giving him notice of the ordered movement of the Federal army nearly half a day before it began. He at once ordered his outposts back to assigned positions; that from Leesburg, by way of Aldie, by forced marches (28 miles in a day and a half) to Manassas. President Davis was informed of the situation and the suggestion made that the army of the Shenandoah and Holmes' brigade at Aquia creek should be ordered to reinforce Manassas. Davis promptly ordered Holmes to report to Beauregard, and gave Johnston discretion to move his command for the same purpose. The latter, in anticipation of such a call for aid, unhesitatingly consented to this arrangement, and Beauregard, on request, hastened trains up the Manassas Gap railroad to meet the army of the Shenandoah on the way to Manassas Junction and expedite its arrival. At the same time he suggested to Johnston that he concentrate his army at the Aldie gap of the Bull Run mountains, where the turnpikes from the valley through Snicker's gap and Ashby's gap of the Blue ridge unite, and then march southeastward by roads leading to McDowell's line of advance, and fall upon the right and rear of the Federal

army while he pressed him offensively in front. This proposition of a divided instead of a combined co-operation did not meet the approval of Johnston.

The Federal army, in light marching order, began its march toward Manassas in the afternoon of Tuesday, July 16th, and its advance, in well-disposed parallel columns, but little opposed, encamped that night in front of Fairfax. Advancing again on the 17th, the cavalry moving along the right of the Federal army had a skirmish with the Confederate cavalry at Vienna, on the Alexandria & Loudoun railroad, and the column on the Centreville road with the Confederate pickets in front of Fairfax as they retired, leaving the way open for the Federals to reach the vicinity of Centreville and the front of Bull run late in the evening of that day, after having covered 20 miles from the Potomac in two days.

By morning of Thursday, July 18th, McDowell's army was massed around Centreville, with the exception of a division which had been left at Fairfax Court House to guard the right of the advance and watch the roads leading to the northwest. The Confederate line south of Bull run, at Mitchell's ford, on the direct road from Centreville to Manassas Junction, was but 3 miles from Centreville. On this road the Federal forces advanced on the morning of the 18th, the leading division, under Tyler, making infantry demonstrations before Mitchell's ford and Blackburn's ford (about a mile further east), opening with artillery from the fine positions on the north side of Bull run in front of each of these fords. Beauregard had placed Longstreet's brigade, with Early's in reserve, to cover these two fords. These repulsed the Federal attacks and efforts to force a passage, and the enemy's infantry retired about 1 p. m., but an artillery duel continued the contest.

Federal authorities deny that an attempt was made to force a passage of Bull run on the 18th, and that this engagement, which has been called the "battle of Bull Run" (that of the 21st being known as the "battle of Manassas"), was only a demonstration to engage the attention of the Confederates while McDowell reconnoitered to decide upon his plan of attack. Beauregard claims that his success in this first encounter was of especial advantage to his army of raw troops; that it made McDowell cautious and hesitating in forming his

plans for a general engagement, and that it gave him time, then his greatest need, for the concentration of the three Confederate armies for the final struggle.

While providing for and awaiting the general attack, Beauregard was, on the 19th, urged by Adjutant-General Cooper to withdraw his call upon Johnston for assistance if the enemy in front of him had abandoned an immediate attack. As this was not an order, Beauregard paid no attention to it, and continued his efforts to secure the early arrival of Johnston's forces, intending, with their help, to take the offensive. McDowell spent the 19th and 20th reconnoitering the Confederate front and waiting for rations. During these two days, 8,340 of Johnston's men with twenty guns, and 1,265 of Holmes', with six guns, arrived upon Beauregard's left and right; the larger number of them in the afternoon of the 20th. Most of these were ordered to the Confederate left-center and left, at the instance of General Johnston, as Beauregard had placed the most of his own army on his right-center and right, expecting, from McDowell's demonstrations of the 18th, that his main effort would be to turn the Confederate right by marching southward to Union Mills.

From Centreville, in the rear of which McDowell had established his headquarters, and around which he had massed his troops, seven public roads diverge to the principal points of the compass, and from each of these, at no great distance from that village, other roads diverge to intermediate points, until not less than a dozen roads lead from that village, crossing Bull run at nearly as many fords, making it an extremely difficult matter to watch the movements of an army there concentrated and having for its objective the southwestern side of Bull run. A circle with a radius of 3 miles from Centreville will pass through or near ten of these fords, from McLean's on the southeast to Poplar on the northwest. Bull run, in this interval of 6 miles of arc, nearly follows the three-mile circle drawn around Centreville. A circle with 7 miles of radius, drawn around the same center, crosses Bull run to the south of Centreville, near Union Mills and the bridge of the Orange & Alexandria railroad; about $9\frac{1}{2}$ miles away to the northwest it crosses the Sudley ford of Bull run; and from that ford, back toward the beginning, in a distance of 3 miles, it passes directly through the field of the 21st.

With this many-roaded problem of offense and defense before him, and his notions of McDowell's designs, Beauregard disposed his forces along Bull run for over a dozen miles in the following order, from right to left, so as to cover all the fords by which he thought McDowell might seek a crossing: At the Union Mills ford, on his extreme right, beyond the railway bridge, he placed Ewell's brigade, supported by that of Holmes, which had arrived from Aquia creek; at McLean's ford, about two miles farther up the stream, D. R. Jones' brigade, supported by Early's; at Blackburn's ford, one mile farther up, Longstreet's brigade; at Mitchell's ford, about a mile farther up stream, Bonham's brigade, which also covered another ford about three-quarters of a mile still farther up and near the mouth of Cub run. Cocke's brigade held the line from Bonham's left, covering Island, Ball's and Lewis' fords, for two miles up the stream to the mouth of Young's branch, three-fourths of a mile below the stone bridge, while Evans' half brigade, under Cocke's command, extended the Confederate line up to and covering the stone bridge, the Warrenton turnpike from Centreville, and a farm ford a quarter of a mile above that bridge. The brigades of the army of the Shenandoah that had already arrived were placed in reserve; those of Bee and Bartow between McLean's and Blackburn's fords, in the rear of Early's and Longstreet's brigades, and Jackson's to the left, between Blackburn's and Mitchell's fords, covering the rear of parts of Longstreet's and Bonham's brigades.

During the night of Saturday, July 20th, the Federal army was thus disposed: Tyler's division was advanced along the Warrenton road and massed about a mile west of Centreville, near Rocky run, and Richardson's brigade of this division was advanced about a mile and a half to the southwest of Centreville, on the road to Blackburn's ford. The remainder of the Federal army, except the reserve divisions left near Centreville and Fairfax, was encamped a short distance to the east of Centreville. After having spent two days reconnoitering along Bull run, McDowell decided to make demonstrations in the Confederate front, on the Warrenton road and on the road to Blackburn's ford, with Tyler's division, while with Hunter's and Heintzelman's he would, by a wide detour of 7 miles or more to the westward and northward,

cross Bull run at Sudley ford, turn the Confederate left, and get in its rear between Bull run and the Manassas Gap railroad, hoping by so doing to prevent Johnston from joining Beauregard. This plan of engagement adopted, McDowell intended to begin his movement during the night of the 20th, but his division commanders persuaded him to put it off until the morning of the 21st. Schenck's and Sherman's brigades of Tyler's division, with Carlisle's battery of six brass guns and a 30-pounder Parrott gun, marched at 2:30 a. m. of the 21st from near Centreville, along the Warrenton road to near the stone bridge over Bull run, where Schenck deployed his brigade on the left of the road and Sherman's on the right, with artillery in the Warrenton road and in that leading to Blackburn's ford, and opened at 6:30 a. m. on the Confederate left with all his guns, but brought no reply, as the Confederate guns were of too short range. This disconcerted McDowell, leading him to fear an attack from Blackburn's ford, and caused him to hold back one of Heintzelman's brigades in reserve to Schenck. Later, as Schenck's skirmish line advanced, it was met on the eastern side of Bull run by that of the Confederates. About 7 Beauregard ordered Jackson's brigade, the nearest reserve force, to move with Imboden's Staunton artillery and Walton's battery to the left to support Coker as well as Bonham; the brigades of Bee and Bartow, under the former, were also sent to support the left against the threatened attack by Schenck.

In the meantime, the main Federal column continued its flanking movement by Sudley ford, but losing time in wading across as the men halted to drink. Seeing clouds of dust rising in the direction of Manassas Junction, indicating the coming of a large force that might head off his movement, McDowell ordered the heads of regiments to break from the columns and march forward, separately, as rapidly as possible; directed Heintzelman's reserve brigade to cross the fields on the left to a nearer ford below Sudley, and sent word to Tyler to hurry up the advance. The brigades of Burnside and Porter, with Griffin's battery, had already passed through the Sudley wood, which Jackson made famous the next year, and were deploying, facing southward, on the sloping open of cultivated ground beyond; and immediately behind these were marching the brigades of Franklin and Wilcox,

accompanied by the batteries of Ricketts and Arnold. The brigades of Howard and Keyes were still detained in the vicinity of the Warrenton turnpike, where the road that the flanking columns had followed diverged to the northward. The distance to Sudley had proved greater than McDowell expected and the troops had been delayed.

Learning from his scouts that the enemy was concentrating along the Warrenton turnpike, Beauregard concluded that an attempt would be made to turn his left flank at the stone bridge; therefore, at half past four, not long after sunrise, he ordered his brigade commanders to hold themselves in readiness to move at short notice, suggesting to each that the Federal attack might be on his left. A little later he was advised of the advance of the Federals toward the stone bridge, and, by half past five, that they were deploying in front of Evans, who covered that bridge. Concluding that the opportunity had arrived for an offensive flank movement on the Federal left and rear, Beauregard sent orders to the brigades on his center and right to cross the fords and advance rapidly on Centreville, with vigorous attacks, while he held, with Evans and Cocke and their supports, the attack on the stone bridge to the last extremity. This wheeling movement of his right to the Federal left and rear, by his front line, was to be followed up by the reserves, which, without orders, were to move to the sound of the heaviest firing. Ewell was to begin this flanking movement from the Union Mills ford, on the extreme right, to be followed by the brigades to the left, successively, at the various fords, as before enumerated. Great care had been taken to instruct the subordinate commanders in reference to this movement, as they were all unaccustomed to command in battle maneuvers; they were also ordered to establish close communication with each other before making the attack.

At half past eight, Generals Johnston and Beauregard took position on a high hill in the rear of the center, opposite Mitchell's ford, to await the opening of the Confederate attack on the right, by which Beauregard confidently expected to win a decisive victory by midday, and cut off the retreat of the Federal army to Washington. At about the same hour, Evans, from near the stone bridge, discovered a lengthening line of dust advancing from the north toward the Warrenton turnpike, and, observing

that the attack on his front was not pressed with vigor, became satisfied that it was a mere feint, and that a column of the enemy was moving, masked by the Sudley woods, to fall on his left flank. He promptly informed General Cocke, his immediate commander, of the enemy's movement, and took the responsibility of making dispositions to meet it. Leaving four companies under cover at the stone bridge, which had been previously destroyed, he led six companies of the Fourth South Carolina riflemen and Wheat's battalion of Louisiana Tigers, with two 6-pounder howitzers, across the valley of Young's branch to the high ground called Matthews' hill (on the divide between that branch and one parallel to it on the north, facing the Henry hill), about three-fourths of a mile north of the Warrenton road, and placed his men so as to meet the Federal advance by the Sudley road, on which he rested his left, planting one gun on his right and the other on his left. His front was covered by a small piece of woods extending along the Sudley road. Here he awaited the approach of the Federal column, which, led by Burnside's brigade, deployed in his front a little before 10 o'clock. Wheat at once engaged the Federal skirmishers, and when the second Rhode Island regiment and its six guns appeared, Evans met them with his South Carolinians and two howitzers, at short range, and drove them back. Burnside's entire brigade, supported by eight guns, was now sent forward in a second charge. These were met and driven back into the strip of woods from which they had advanced, and from which they continued to fire, until, reinforced by eight companies of United States regular infantry and six pieces of artillery, supported by other regiments of Porter's brigade, they advanced to a third attack, which Evans held in combat for about an hour. Major Wheat was severely wounded in the first attack, and, having to leave the field, his battalion became somewhat disorganized. During the third attack, which Evans was sustaining with great firmness, he called upon General Bee, who was in reserve with his own and Bartow's command near the stone bridge, for help. Bee, informed of the Federal movement, had already moved to the left following the sound of conflict, and taken position on the Henry hill, or plateau, to the south of the Warrenton turnpike. This hill commanded the stone bridge and the Sudley road

where that crossed the turnpike, by its elevation of about 100 feet above the level of Bull run. Bee was holding this admirable position with his two brigades on opposite sides of Imboden's battery (which he had borrowed from Jackson's brigade), in full view of Evans' contention on the opposite side of Young's branch valley, and was opening with his artillery upon the Federal batteries opposed to Evans, when he received the latter's request for aid, which he answered by advising Evans to withdraw to his position on the Henry hill. Still full of fight, Evans was unwilling to retreat, and renewed his appeal for reinforcements. As it was plain to be seen that the visibly swelling numbers of McDowell's advance were giving them great advantages over Evans in the combat, Bee yielded to his appeal and led his two brigades across the valley under fire of the enemy's well served artillery, and threw them into the contention, one regiment in the woods held by Evans, two along a fence extending to the right, and two, under Bartow, extending the right still further, but at right angles along the edge of a wood, not more than 100 yards from the Federal left, where the combat, at short range, quickly became sharp and deadly. The superior numbers of the Federal infantry failed to make any headway against this stubborn vanguard, although the powerful batteries of Griffin were playing on Bee's whole line, until two strong brigades from Heintzelman's division, arriving on the field, extended the line of fire on the Federal right, and a six-gun battery of rifled 10-pounders took part from a strong position behind the Sudley road. While contending with these odds, the brigades of Sherman and Keyes, of Tyler's division, under orders from McDowell to force the stone bridge, crossed at a ford above that bridge and moved into position on the Federal left, so lengthening that as to overlap Bee and force him to retire, which he began to do, steadily, covered by the fire of Imboden's guns and of Hampton's legion from the Henry plateau and his own retiring howitzers; but the Federal fire that followed was so fierce and heavy that the Confederates were soon thrown into confusion and the greater part of them retreated, discomfited, across Young's branch, and sought safety around the sheltering spur to the right of the stone bridge.

While this brave battle of Evans and Bee was going on,

Johnston and Beauregard were anxiously awaiting on Lookout hill the development of the flank movement ordered against the Federal left and rear. Surprised that Ewell did not begin this, they learned from D. R. Jones, at the nearby McLean's ford, that he had long been ready and waiting for Ewell to join his right in the forward movement, as he had sent him, between seven and eight in the morning, a copy of the order from headquarters directing Ewell to at once begin that movement; but so far he had heard nothing from him. Beauregard at once, by a staff officer, repeated his order to Ewell, directing him to promptly advance; but soon hearing from him that he, too, had been waiting, having received no orders, and the firing on the left indicating a serious attack by the enemy in that direction, the generals decided to abandon the intended offensive movement and hurry all their available forces to the left, where it was now apparent the main battle was to be fought. Ewell, Jones and Longstreet were left in their assigned positions on the right and along the center, to hold the Federals in their front and make demonstrations toward Centreville. The brigades of Holmes and Early and two regiments of Bonham's brigade, with six guns, were ordered to move rapidly to the left to reinforce the battle of Evans and Bee on the Warrenton road. These orders given, the two generals rode rapidly to the field of conflict, arriving on the Henry hill, which overlooked that field, just as the discomfited men of Bee and Evans, overpowered by numbers, were seeking refuge from the hot and heavy Federal fire in the shallow ravines that ascended from Young's branch, from near the turnpike, to the right and rear of the line that Jackson had formed with his brigade on the Henry hill; Hampton's legion, by steady combat, having covered the rear of the retreat.

The field officers of the more than 2,000 routed men of the commands of Evans and Bee, among whom Federal shot and shell from the batteries of Griffin and Ricketts were raining, were making desperate efforts to rally their men and reorganize them, but to no purpose, although Johnston and Beauregard both joined in the effort. Strong masses of Federal infantry were rapidly advancing, and disaster seemed imminent, when the heroic Bee, exhausted in his fruitless effort to rally his men, rode

up to Jackson, who was steadily holding his brigade in a full fronting position, notwithstanding the approaching attack of the enemy, the artillery fire that was thinning his ranks, and the nearby confusion, and cried out in a tone of despair: "General, they are beating us back!" The reply came, prompt and curt, but calm, "Then we will give them the bayonet." The blazing and defiant look of Jackson, his bold and prompt determination, and the steady line of brave men that supported him, gave new life to Bee. Galloping back to the disorganized masses of his command, he shouted, waving his hand to the left: "Look! There is Jackson, standing like a stone wall. Rally behind the Virginians! Let us determine to die here, and we will conquer. Follow me!" Obedient to this clarion call to duty and the example of soldierly bearing to which their attention had been called, a number of Bee's men rallied and followed him in a charge to the left against the advancing enemy, in which this heroic leader fell dead. From that time forward, through all the ages of history, Jackson became, and will continue to be, "Stonewall" Jackson, and his brigade the "Stonewall brigade."

At this crisis of the battle on the Confederate side, Beauregard ordered the regimental standards to be advanced some 40 yards to the front of the still disordered masses of the commands of Evans and Bee. This was promptly done by the field officers, thus gaining the attention of the men and inducing them to obey orders and rally on their colors. Johnston and Beauregard in person, at about this time, advanced to the front with the colors of the Fourth Alabama, when, as General Beauregard relates, "the line that had fought all the morning and had fled, routed and disheartened, now advanced again into position as steadily as veterans."

Order was but partially restored on the Henry hill, when, flushed with their partial victory and eagerly striving for a complete one, the Federals, in battle array, came sweeping down the slope on which Evans had so long detained them, crossed Young's branch and the Warrenton turnpike, and began climbing the northern slope of the Henry hill, detained for awhile by Hampton's legion, which he had promptly thrown forward to cover the retreat of Bee and Evans.

Seeing the superior numbers of the enemy advancing

to another conflict, Beauregard persuaded Johnston, who yielded with great reluctance, to ride back about a mile to "Portici," the Lewis house, on the line of communication with the right, and hasten forward, as they came up, the reinforcements that had been ordered to the battle, while he looked after the immediate combat, which was provided for by placing Smith's Forty-ninth Virginia, ordered up from Coker's brigade on Bull run, on Jackson's left, and the Seventh Georgia still farther to the left. Hampton's legion of South Carolinians and Hunton's Eighth Virginia, which had also been called up from Coker, were placed in the rear of Jackson's right to oppose any attack from the direction of the stone bridge. These 6,500 men and 13 field guns in place, he awaited the attack of four Federal brigades, a battalion of cavalry, and the fine batteries of Griffin and Ricketts of the regular army, some 11,000 soldiers in rank and file, that in splendid martial order were now nearing the front of his position on the Henry plateau. The north-western crest of this they soon reached, in well formed line of battle, captured the Robinson house on the Confederate right and the Henry house on its left-center, quickly placed the batteries of Griffin and Ricketts in position near the Henry house, and poured a galling fire of infantry and artillery on the Confederate line, to the fury of which three other Federal batteries contributed from the hills beyond the turnpike. The somewhat sunken Sudley road, along which the Federals had been advancing, furnished a covered way up the Henry hill which their infantry took advantage of in supporting their batteries near the Henry house. The lines of battle were now not far apart on the undulating Henry plateau, and the Confederate batteries of Imboden, Stanard, Walton, Pendleton and Alburtis had their innings at short range, cutting fearful gaps in the oncoming lines, which were still more severely punished by the steady fire of the musketry of Jackson's men and of those on his right and left; especially was this the case on Beauregard's left, which he had strengthened with two companies of the Second Mississippi. Two companies of Stuart's cavalry, coming from the left, just then charged through the Federal ranks to the Sudley road, and added to the havoc wrought by the infantry and artillery.

McDowell, watching from the Sudley ridge slope the

wavering battle, followed up his attack by continuing to extend his right with fresh bodies of infantry and artillery as they came forward from the rear, and by so doing threatening to turn Beauregard's left. Some of the Federal guns were pressed so boldly to the front that men from the Thirty-third Virginia sprang forward and captured them, but they were soon retaken. To meet this threatened blow on his left, Beauregard took the offensive and ordered a counterstroke from his right to clean off the Henry plateau in his front. The commands of Bee, Bartow, Evans and Hampton, the men who had so bravely and stubbornly held back McDowell's advance in the early morning, now responded with spirit and speed, striking the Federal left; Jackson, with strong and steady blows, pierced its center, while Smith's Virginians and Gartrell's Georgians charged on its right. This bold movement, sweeping over both infantry and artillery, entirely cleared the plateau of Federal troops and captured the batteries of Ricketts and Griffin. The success of this brilliant counterstroke cheered the Confederates and braced them for another struggle.

Looking from his commanding position to the northward, Beauregard saw the still constant and steady coming on of Federal reinforcements. Without delay he reorganized his line of battle, under heavy fire from the artillery on the hills north of the turnpike, and prepared for the third attack, which McDowell was then organizing with Howard's brigade, which had just arrived on the field of battle. The attack soon came; the fresh Federal troops swept down the slope from the north, crossed the valley of Young's branch, and pressed up the northward slope of the Henry hill, taking advantage of ravines, clumps of trees, and the sunken Sudley road, and reaching the crest, by the force of numbers bravely led, pressed the Confederates back across the plateau, regained their lost position and recaptured their lost guns. The conflict now became a death struggle for the final possession of the Henry hill and for the closing victory to which that was the key. The advantage of numbers enabled McDowell to still further extend his right through the woods west of the Sudley road, again threaten to turn Beauregard's left, and force him to throw that back as a protection against such a movement; this also enabled McDowell to extend his left

toward Bull run, and threaten to turn Beauregard's right from the direction of the stone bridge.

It was now between two and three of the afternoon of a scorchingly hot midsummer day, and many of Beauregard's men, who had been almost constantly fighting since the early morning, were nearly exhausted; but, having faith in the unflinching endurance of his men, whose mettle he had so thoroughly tested during the preceding hours of the day, he not only determined to hold on and await reinforcements, which he knew Johnston was sending, for the final struggle, but to again take the offensive and drive the enemy from the plateau, advancing his whole line as before and adding to it the reserves on the right, which he would lead in person. Of this Beauregard wrote: "The movement was made with such keeping and dash that the whole plateau was swept clear of the enemy, who were driven down the slope and across the turnpike on our right and the valley of Young's branch on our left, leaving in our final possession the Robinson and the Henry houses, with most of Ricketts' and Griffin's batteries, the men of which were mostly shot down where they bravely stood by their guns."

The Sixth North Carolina, which, by railway, had just reached Manassas Junction from toward Richmond, now came to the field in time to join with the left of Beauregard's charge; the Eighteenth Virginia, under Colonel Withers, which had been ordered up from Cocks's brigade on the banks of Bull run, also arrived, opportunely, on the right, and joined in the charge with Hampton's legion, capturing several guns, which some of the officers of these commands turned upon the retreating foe, and so helped to finish the hot work of driving McDowell's men for the second and last time from the Henry plateau.

This successful Confederate charge, across the fields and through the patches of forest of the Henry hill, did not reach McDowell's right, which extended through the woods to the west of the Sudley road and to some distance beyond Beauregard's left. The Second and Eighth South Carolina, moving from the Confederate right on Bull run, had been turned by Johnston to the Confederate left of the engagement. These reached the field in time to meet McDowell's movement from the right.

Preston's Twenty-eighth Virginia and Kemper's Virginia battery also appeared in time to join the South Carolinians in holding, with hot contention, Howard's brigade, Sykes' battalion of regulars, and the accompanying artillery and cavalry of McDowell's right, but were not strong enough to drive them back. The hour of three in the afternoon had now come, and it was time to strike a last telling blow to decide the fortunes of the day. Provisionally for the Confederates, E. Kirby Smith's brigade of 1,700 fresh and rested soldiers, the last of the available reinforcements from the army of the Shenandoah, had reached Manassas Junction, by rail, at midday. They were 6 miles in the rear of the battle, but officers of the general staff were at hand to guide and hurry them to the critical point of the pending contention, the Confederate left of the field. Just as that brigade entered the wood to the left of the Sudley road, a Federal bullet seriously wounded General Smith, and the command devolved upon Col. Arnold Elzey, a most efficient successor, who, guided by Captain Harris of the engineers, marched his brigade to Beauregard's extreme left and then, moving forward, met the Federal advance just coming into the open fields of the Chinn farm, and, aided by Beckham's Virginia battery, poured upon it a destructive fire which held it in check in the forest on the northward slopes toward the turnpike. Just then McDowell made another strenuous effort to turn the Confederate right by sending Keyes' brigade across the turnpike near the stone bridge, and thence southward, under cover of the spurs from the Henry plateau, to a favorable point for attack. Latham's Virginia battery, in position to guard that flank, met this advance with a galling fire, aided by Alburdis' Virginia battery, which Jackson had hastened to his left and supported by broken fragments of troops collected by staff officers. These repulsed this movement, and showed McDowell that it was useless to attempt to turn that flank of Beauregard's army.

Still unwilling to yield the field, McDowell formed from fresh men that came up a new line of battle, formidable in numbers and in length, and crescent in outline, across the Sudley road, on the heights to the north of the turnpike, and throwing forward a strong line of skirmishers, proposed for a third time to assault the Henry plateau; but his intention was quickly thwarted

by the fierce combat that Elzey was now pressing on his right, the force of which was intensified by the arrival of Early's grand Virginia brigade from McLean's ford, which, by direction of Johnston, swept around the rear of the woods through which Elzey had passed, and bravely bore down upon the flank of the already wavering Federal right and started that wing in full retreat. Learning of the success on his left which the forest concealed from his center and right, Beauregard ordered his staff and escort to raise a loud cheer, and sent orders all along the line for a common charge on McDowell's left, in which his eager men, now confident of victory, joined with wild yells and drove the already yielding Federal lines from the field of contention, causing them to break, for shelter and safety, for the rear in the Sudley ridge forest, for Bull run, and in all directions, to get beyond reach of the Confederate fire. Sykes' regulars and Sherman's brigade stood firm and withdrew in good order, protecting the rear of the routed soldiers and enabling many of them to escape by way of the fords near the stone bridge, but most of them sought refuge by way of Sudley ford and by the other routes on which they had advanced in the morning.

Having ordered all the troops on the field to pursue the retreating enemy, Beauregard rode to the Lewis house, turned over the immediate command of the field to Johnston, who had generously left it in his hands up to that time, and, mounting a fresh horse (the fourth on that day, one of them killed under him), rode to press the pursuit now being made by the infantry and cavalry, some of the latter having been sent by Johnston across the Lewis ford to intercept the Federal retreat on the turnpike. Before he had ridden far, a courier from Johnston's chief of staff at Manassas Junction reached him with a report that a large Federal force had broken through the right of the Bull run line and was moving on the depot of supplies at the Junction. Beauregard at once returned, and, after consultation with Johnston, it was decided that he should take the brigades of Ewell and Holmes, which were marching, from the extreme right, to the battlefield, but had not reached it, and fall on this threatened counterstroke of the enemy while other troops were called from the pursuit and sent to his assistance.

To gain time, Beauregard gathered all the cavalry at hand, and, mounting behind each an infantryman, started to head off the reported Federal movement. Nearing McLean's ford, by which the Federal attack must have come, he found the report a false alarm caused by the withdrawal of Jones to the south side of Bull run, whose men, in consequence of the color of their uniforms, had been mistaken for the enemy. It was now nearly dark and, in Beauregard's opinion, too late to resume the interrupted pursuit of the retreating army; so turning toward his headquarters and meeting the troops that had been recalled to his assistance, he ordered them to bivouac for the night where they were.

After caring for the wants of his men, Beauregard rode to his headquarters near Manassas Junction, where, at about 10 p. m., he found President Davis and General Johnston. The former had arrived from Richmond late in the afternoon and at once galloped to the battlefield with Colonel Jordan, Beauregard's chief of staff, and reached it in time to witness the last of the Federals retreating across Bull run. The next morning, at his breakfast table, President Davis handed Beauregard his commission, as full general in the army of the Confederate States, dated July 21, 1861, in recognition of his services in the magnificent victory which had been won under his immediate direction.

The Federal army lost in this battle 2,896 men, of which 460 were killed, 1,124 wounded and 1,312 captured or missing. The Confederate loss was 1,982 men, of which 387 were killed, 1,582 wounded and 13 captured or missing. The Confederates captured 26 pieces of artillery, 34 caissons and sets of harness, 10 battery wagons and forges, 24 artillery horses, several thousand stand of small-arms, and numbers of wagons and ambulances, as well as large quantities of army supplies of all kinds. In this Young's Branch or Henry Hill battle were engaged the First, Second and Third Federal divisions, with 18,000 men and 30 guns; and 18,000 men and 21 guns of Johnston's and Beauregard's Confederate divisions, the former furnishing 8,700 combatants and the latter 9,300. Jackson's brigade lost 488 of its 3,000, nearly one-third of the total Confederate loss, and more than that of any other Confederate brigade; and yet it was in good condition for service immediately after the battle.

The returns of the killed, wounded and missing of the entire Confederate army within the field of action at the battle of Bull Run, show that the most of the fighting was done by the army of the Shenandoah (Gen. J. E. Johnston's), as indicated in the following comparative table of losses: Army of the Shenandoah, 282 killed, 1,063 wounded and 1 missing; total loss, 1,346. Army of the Potomac, 105 killed, 519 wounded and 12 missing; total loss, 636.

The losses in the army of the Shenandoah by brigades were: In Jackson's brigade, 119 killed and 442 wounded; in Bartow's, 60 killed (among them Bartow himself) and 293 wounded; in Bee's, 95 killed (including General Bee), 309 wounded and 1 missing; in Smith's, 8 killed, 19 wounded (including General Smith). No separate returns are given of the losses in the batteries of Imboden, Stanard, Pendleton and Alburdis, of the army of the Shenandoah, all of which took a conspicuous part in this battle.

The losses in the army of the Potomac (Gen. G. T. Beauregard's) by brigades were: In Bonham's brigade, 10 killed and 66 wounded; in Ewell's, no losses; in Jones', 13 killed and 62 wounded; in Longstreet's, 23 killed and 12 wounded; in Coker's, 23 killed, 79 wounded and 2 missing; in Early's, 12 killed and 67 wounded; in N. G. Evans', 20 killed, 118 wounded and 8 missing; in Holmes', no losses; in the Eighth Louisiana, Col. H. B. Kelly, 19 killed, 100 wounded and 2 missing; in the Hampton legion, 19 killed, 100 wounded and 2 missing; in the cavalry, consisting of the Thirtieth Virginia, Harrison's battalion and ten independent companies, 5 killed and 8 wounded; and in the artillery, consisting of the Washington artillery (Louisiana), the Alexandria (Virginia) battery, Latham's (Virginia) battery, Loudoun (Virginia) artillery, and Shields' (Virginia) battery, 2 killed and 8 wounded.

These figures show that the fighting by Beauregard's men was principally done by Bonham's, D. R. Jones', Coker's, Early's, Evans' and Kelly's commands. Considering only numbers engaged in each Confederate command, the best fighting, judging by losses, was done by Kelly's Eighth Louisiana and the half brigade of Evans, in which were the First Louisiana battalion, Maj. R. C. Wheat; the Fourth South Carolina, Col. J. B. E.

Sloan; Capt. W. R. Terry's cavalry, and Capt. Geo. S. Davidson's section of Latham's Virginia battery.

In the Federal army, the losses were well distributed through the three divisions that did the fighting, under Brigadier-General Tyler, Colonel Hunter and Colonel Heintzelman. Measured by the gauge of losses, the main fighting was done, in Tyler's division, by the brigades under Col. E. D. Keyes, Brig.-Gen. R. C. Schenck and Col. W. T. Sherman; in Hunter's division, by the brigades under Col. Andrew Porter and Col. A. E. Burnside; and in Heintzelman's division, by the brigades under Col. W. B. Franklin, Col. O. B. Willcox and Col. O. O. Howard; the greatest losses were in the brigades of Sherman, Porter and Willcox.

Longstreet states that after McDowell's forces were in full retreat from the Bull Run battlefield, orders came to the Confederate brigades at the lower fords, directing them to cross and strike the retreating enemy on the line of the Washington turnpike; that under these orders, Bonham's brigade advanced, with instructions to strike the enemy at the crossing of Cub run, about midway between stone bridge and Centreville; while Longstreet's brigade crossed at Blackburn's ford, with instructions to strike the enemy at Centreville. Obstructions in the road to Cub run diverted Bonham toward Centreville; so both these brigades sought the same objective and came under Bonham as the ranking officer. Their line of march led through the Federal camps which had been abandoned in retreat. In passing through these camps, says Longstreet:

We found their pots and kettles over the fire, with food cooking; quarters of beef hanging on the trees, and wagons by the roadside loaded, some with bread and general provisions, others with ammunition. When within artillery range of the retreating column passing through Centreville, the infantry was deployed on the sides of the road, under cover of the forests, so as to give room for the batteries ordered into action in the open, Bonham's brigade on the left, Longstreet's on the right. As the guns were about to open, there came a message that the enemy, instead of being in precipitate retreat, was marching around to attack the Confederate right. With this report came orders, or report of orders, for the brigades to return to their positions behind the run. I denounced the report as absurd, claimed to know a retreat, such as was before me, and ordered the batteries to open fire.

At that moment one of Johnston's aides peremptorily ordered that the batteries should not open, and when

asked whether General Johnston had sent such an order, replied that he gave it on his own responsibility. Longstreet claimed an equal right of responsibility, and was in the act of renewing the order to fire, when Bonham rode up and asked that the batteries should not open. As he was in command, that settled the question; and, as night was then at hand, the golden opportunity for completing the victory by following up the rout of the Federal army was lost. Longstreet continues:

Soon there came an order for the brigades to withdraw and return to their positions behind the run. General Bonham marched his brigade back, but, thinking that there was a mistake somewhere, I remained in position until the order was renewed, about 10 o'clock p. m. . . . My brigade crossed and recrossed the run six times during the day and night.

It was afterward learned that some one, seeing Jones' brigade recrossing the run from an advance under earlier orders, mistook it for Federal troops crossing at McLean's ford, as previously stated, and rushed and reported to headquarters a Federal advance, and staff officers took the responsibility of revoking the orders of the commanding generals for the pursuit of the enemy.

There has been not only well-nigh endless discussion, but crimination and recrimination, as well as excuses, regarding the responsibility for not following up the retreating Federal army after it had been so discomfited in the battle of the 21st. It appears to rest mainly upon General Johnston and President Davis, their excuses being the exhausted condition of the Confederate army, the lack of transportation, and the want of provisions. Longstreet, in his Memoirs, says:

The supplies of subsistence, ammunition and forage, passed as we marched through the enemy's camps toward Centreville, seemed ample to carry the Confederate army on to Washington. Had the fight been continued to that point, the troops, in their high hopes, would have marched in terrible effectiveness against the demoralized Federals. Gaining confidence and vigor in their march, they could well have reached the capital with the ranks of McDowell's men. The brigade (Longstreet's) at Blackburn's ford, five regiments, those at McLean's and Mitchell's fords, all quite fresh, could have been reinforced by all the cavalry and most of the artillery, comparatively fresh, and later by the brigades of Holmes, Ewell and Early. This favorable aspect for fruitful results was all sacrificed through the assumed authority of staff officers, who, upon false reports, gave countermand to the orders of their chiefs.

The medical director of Jackson's brigade, Dr. Hunter McGuire, says in a recent memorial:

While dressing his (Jackson's) wounded hand at the First Manassas, at the field hospital of the brigade near the Lewis house (Portici), I saw President Davis ride up from Manassas. He had been told by stragglers that our army had been defeated. He stopped his horse in the middle of the little stream, stood up in his stirrups, the palest, sternest face I ever saw, and cried to the great crowd of soldiers, "I am President Davis; follow me back to the field." General Jackson did not hear distinctly. I told him who it was and what he said. He stood up, took off his cap and cried, "We have whipped them—they ran like sheep. Give me 10,000 men and I will take Washington city to-morrow."

Maj.-Gen. James B. Fry, who at Bull Run was captain and adjutant-general on McDowell's staff, in an article in the *Century Magazine*,* describing this battle and what followed, says:

About half past three Beauregard extended his left to outflank McDowell's shattered, shortened and disconnected line, and the Federals left the field about half past four. Until then they had fought wonderfully well for raw troops. There were no fresh forces on the field to support or encourage them, and the men seemed to be seized simultaneously by the conviction that it was no use to do anything more, and they might as well start home. Cohesion was lost, the organizations with some exceptions being disintegrated, and the men quietly walked off. There was no special excitement except that arising from the frantic efforts of the officers to stop men who paid little or no attention to anything that was said. On the high grounds by the Matthews house, about where Evans had taken position in the morning to check Burnside, McDowell and his staff, aided by other officers, made a desperate but futile effort to arrest the masses and form them into line . . . but all efforts failed. Stragglers moved past guns in spite of all that could be done; . . . the men trooped back in great disorder across Bull run. There were some hours of daylight for the Confederates to gather the fruits of victory, but a few rounds of shell and canister checked all the pursuit that was attempted, and the occasion called for no sacrifices or valorous deeds by the staunch regulars of the rear guard. There was no panic, in the ordinary meaning of the word, until the retiring soldiers, guns, wagons, congressmen, and carriages were fired upon, on the road east of Bull run. Then the panic began, and the bridge over Cub run being rendered impassable for vehicles by a wagon that was upset upon it, utter confusion set in; pleasure-carriages, gun-carriages and ammunition wagons which could not be put across the run were abandoned and blocked the way, and stragglers broke and threw aside their muskets and cut horses from their harness and rode off upon them. In leaving the field the men took the same routes in a general way by which they had reached it. Hence when the men of Hunter's and Heintzelman's divisions got back to Centreville, they had walked about 25 miles. That night they walked back to the Potomac, an additional distance of 20 miles; so that these undisciplined and unseasoned men within thirty-six hours walked fully 45 miles, besides

* See "Battles and Leaders," *Century Co.*, New York.

fighting from about 10 a. m. until 4 p. m. on a hot, dusty day in July. McDowell, in person, reached Centreville before sunset, and found there Miles' division, with Richardson's brigade and three regiments of Runyon's division, and Hunt's, Tidball's, Ayres' and Greene's batteries and one or two fragments of batteries, making about 20 guns. It was a formidable force, but there was a lack of food and the mass of the army was completely demoralized. Beauregard had about an equal force which had not been in the fight, consisting of Ewell's, Jones' and Longstreet's brigades and some troops of other brigades. McDowell consulted the division and brigade commanders who were at hand upon the question of making a stand or retreating. The verdict was in favor of the latter, but a decision of officers one way or the other was of no moment; the men had already decided for themselves, and were streaming away to the rear in spite of all that could be done. They had no interest or treasure in Centreville, and their hearts were not there. Their tents, provisions, baggage and letters from home were upon the banks of the Potomac, and no power could have stopped them short of the camps they had left less than a week before. As before stated, most of them were sovereigns in uniform, not soldiers. McDowell accepted the situation, detailed Richardson's and Blenker's brigades to cover the retreat, and the army, a disorganized mass, with some creditable exceptions, drifted as the men pleased away from the scene of action. There was no pursuit, and the march from Centreville was as barren of opportunities for the rear guard as the withdrawal from the field of battle had been. [Fry might have added that several regiments of three months' men, whose time had expired, refused to stay longer.]

From Centreville, at 5:45 p. m. of the 21st, while the sun was yet an hour and a half high, McDowell telegraphed to Scott:

We passed Bull run. Engaged the enemy, who, it seems, had just been reinforced by General Johnston. We drove them for several hours, and finally routed them. They rallied and repulsed us, but only to give us again the victory, which seemed complete. But our men, exhausted with fatigue and thirst and confused by firing into each other, were attacked by the enemy's reserves, and driven from the position we had gained, overlooking Manassas. After this the men could not be rallied, but slowly left the field. In the meantime the enemy outflanked Richardson at Blackburn's ford, and we have now to hold Centreville till our men can get behind it. Miles' division is holding the town.

Later, from Fairfax Court House, he telegraphed:

The men having thrown away their haversacks in the battle and left them behind, they are without food; have eaten nothing since breakfast. We are without artillery ammunition. The larger part of the men are a confused mob, entirely demoralized. It was the opinion of all of the commanders that no stand could be made this side of the Potomac. We will, however, make the attempt at Fairfax Court House. From a prisoner we learn that 20,000 from Johnston joined last night, and they march on us to-night.

Early the next morning, from Fairfax Court House, he again wired:

Many of the volunteers did not wait for authority to proceed to the Potomac, but left on their own decision. They are now pouring through this place in a state of utter disorganization. They could not be prepared for action by to-morrow morning even were they willing. I learn from prisoners that we are to be pressed here to-night and to-morrow morning, as the enemy's force is very large and they are elated. I think we heard cannon on our rear guard. I think now, as all of my commanders thought at Centreville, there is no alternative but to fall back to the Potomac, and I shall proceed to do so with as much regularity as possible.

Of McDowell himself, Fry, his adjutant-general, wrote: "When the unfortunate commander dismounted at Arlington next forenoon in a soaking rain, after thirty-two hours in the saddle, his disastrous campaign of six days was closed. The first martial effervescence of the country was over. The three months' men went home, and the three months' chapter of the war ended—with the South triumphant and confident, the North disappointed but determined."

Blenker remained in position at Centreville, as rear guard, until about midnight, when he was ordered to fall back on Washington. He reported that the retreat of "great numbers of flying soldiers continued until 9 o'clock in the evening, the great majority in wild confusion, but few in collected bodies." He mentioned that he was several times attacked by squadrons of Confederate cavalry, before he left Centreville.

Walt Whitman, a noted Northern writer, says:*

The defeated troops commenced pouring into Washington, over the long bridge, at daylight on Monday, 22d—a day drizzling all through with rain. The Saturday and Sunday of the battle (the 20th and 21st) had been parched and hot to an extreme. . . . But the hour, the day, the night passed; and whatever returns, an hour, a day, a night like that can never again return. The President, recovering himself, begins that very night—sternly, rapidly sets about the task of reorganizing his forces, and placing himself in position for future and surer work. . . . He endured that hour, that day, bitterer than gall—indeed a crucifixion day—but it did not conquer him—he unflinchingly stemmed it and resolved to lift himself and the Union out of it.

Colonel Henderson, of the British Staff college, in his life of Stonewall Jackson, says:

Before twenty-four hours had passed reinforcements had increased the strength of Johnston's army to 40,000. Want of organization

* In his volume, "Specimen Days and Collect."

had doubtless prevented McDowell from winning a victory on the 19th or 20th, but pursuit is a far less difficult business than attack. There was nothing to interfere with a forward movement. There were supplies along the railway, and if the mechanism for their distribution and the means for their carriage were wanting, the counties adjoining the Potomac were rich and fertile. Herds of bullocks were grazing in the pastures, and the barns of the farmers were loaded with grain. It was not a long supply train that was lacking, nor an experienced staff, nor even well-disciplined battalions; but a general who grasped the full meaning of victory, who understood how a defeated army, more especially of new troops, yields at a touch, and who, above all, saw the necessity of giving the North no leisure to develop her immense resources. For three days Jackson impatiently awaited the order to advance, and his men were held ready with three days' cooked rations in their haversacks. But his superiors gave no sign, and he was reluctantly compelled to abandon all hope of reaping the fruits of the victory.

When McClellan, summoned in hot haste from north-western Virginia to avert further disaster, reached Washington, on the 26th of July, he rode around the city inspecting the existing conditions. Of these he wrote:

I found no preparations whatever for defense, not even to the extent of putting the troops in military positions. Not a regiment was properly encamped, not a single avenue of approach guarded. All was chaos, and the streets, hotels and bar-rooms were filled with drunken officers and men, absent from their regiments without leave—a perfect pandemonium. Many had even gone to their homes, their flight from Bull Run terminating in New York, or even New Hampshire and Maine. There was really nothing to prevent a small cavalry force from riding into the city. A determined attack would doubtless have carried Arlington heights and placed the city at the mercy of a battery of rifled guns. If the secessionists attached any value to the possession of Washington, they committed their greatest error in not following up the victory of Bull Run.

That same day, Secretary of War Stanton wrote:

The capture of Washington seems now to be inevitable; during the whole of Monday and Tuesday (July 22d and 23d) it might have been taken without resistance. The rout, overthrow, and demoralization of the whole army were complete.

Of the attitude of the Southern people after this great victory, which might have been decisive, Colonel Henderson says:

When the news of Bull Run reached Richmond, and through the crowds that thronged the streets passed the tidings of the victory, there was neither wild excitement nor uproarious joy. No bonfires lit the darkness of the night; no cannon thundered out salutes; the steeples were silent till the morrow, and then were heard only the solemn tones that called the people to prayer. It was resolved, on the day following the battle, by the Confederate Congress: "That we recognize the hand of the Most High God, the King of kings and

Lord of lords, in the glorious victory with which He has crowned our arms at Manassas, and that the people of these Confederate States are invited, by appropriate services on the ensuing Sabbath, to offer up their united thanksgivings and prayers for this mighty deliverance."

Johnston wrote as follows of the Confederate army after Bull Run:

The Confederate army was more disorganized by victory than that of the United States by defeat. The Southern volunteers believed that the objects of the war had been accomplished by their victory, and that they had achieved all that their country required of them. Many, therefore, in ignorance of their military obligations, left the army—not to return. Some hastened home to exhibit the trophies picked up on the field; others left their regiments without ceremony to attend to wounded friends, frequently accompanying them to hospitals in distant towns. Such were the reports of general and staff officers, and railroad officials. Exaggerated ideas of the victory, prevailing among our troops, cost us more men than the Federal army lost by defeat.

On the 25th of July, Johnston and Beauregard united in a congratulatory proclamation to the "Soldiers of the Confederate States," of which the beginning and conclusion are quoted:

One week ago a countless host of men, organized into an army, with all the appointments which modern and practical skill could devise, invaded the soil of Virginia. Their people sounded their approach with triumphant displays of anticipated victory. Their generals came in almost royal state; their great ministers, senators, and women came to witness the immolation of our army and the subjugation of our people, and to celebrate the result with wild revelry. It is with the profoundest emotions of gratitude to an overruling God, whose hand is manifest in protecting our homes and our liberties, that we, your generals commanding, are enabled, in the name of our whole country, to thank you for that patriotic courage, that heroic gallantry, that devoted daring, exhibited by you in the actions of the 18th and 21st, by which the hosts of the enemy were scattered and a signal and glorious victory obtained. . . . Comrades, our brothers who have fallen have earned undying renown upon earth, and their blood, shed in our holy cause, is a precious and acceptable sacrifice to the Father of Truth and of Right. Their graves are beside the tomb of Washington; their spirits have joined with his in eternal communion. . . . We drop one tear on their laurels and move forward to avenge them. Soldiers, we congratulate you on a glorious, triumphant and complete victory, and we thank you for doing your whole duty in the service of your country.

In this first great battle in Virginia many officers served, on both sides, who afterward became distinguished, or famous. On the Confederate side were Johnston, Beauregard, "Stonewall" Jackson, Stuart, Fitz Lee, Longstreet, Kirby Smith, Ewell, Early, Whiting, D. R. Jones, Sam Jones, Holmes, Evans, Elzey,

Radford and Jordan—all graduates of West Point. Among those holding inferior positions, but subsequently distinguished, were Munford, Kirkland, Kershaw, Rodes, Featherston, Skinner, Garland, Corse, Cocke, Hunton, Withers, William Smith, Hays, Barksdale, Kemper, Wheat, Terry, Hampton, Shields, Imboden, Allen, Preston, Echols, Cumming, Steuart, A. P. Hill, Pendleton, and others.

Stuart, on the 21st, followed the retreating Federals 12 miles beyond Manassas, when his command was so depleted by sending back detachments with prisoners, that he gave up the pursuit and returned to encamp near Sudley church. He advanced to Fairfax Court House on the morning of the 23d, and a little later established his pickets along the Potomac, and in front of Washington, in sight of the dome of the capitol. The infantry of the army was moved to new camps beyond Bull run, with advanced detachments in support of the cavalry. McClellan took command at Washington on the 27th, and at once proceeded to make that city an intrenched camp, to which large numbers of troops were hurried from all the Union States.

CHAPTER VIII.

OPERATIONS ABOUT NORFOLK AND YORKTOWN— BATTLE OF BIG BETHEL—BURNING OF HAMPTON.

SCOTT'S fourth line of invasion had for its objective the capture of Richmond by way of "the peninsula" from Fort Monroe, using the navy on the James and York rivers to guard the flanks of the movement. Before this could be successfully made it was necessary to secure Norfolk and the Gosport navy yard and their defenses, which guarded the entrance to the waterway of the James, and Yorktown and Gloucester point, which guarded that to the York.

The general-in-chief was a soldier, who, naturally, placed the most reliance upon the army to carry out his plans. Therefore he attached the greatest importance to the direct movement on Richmond from Washington, by way of Manassas, and gathered his largest army for that purpose. Yet, one well informed as to the defensive conditions of Virginia, and especially of Richmond, at the beginning of the war, can but wonder that the most important movement was not made by way of the peninsula by the army, aided by the navy on the York and the James, since at that time there had been no preparations worth mentioning to prevent such a movement or the capture of Virginia's capital. This can only be accounted for by the demoralized condition in which the war and the navy departments of the United States were left by the resignation, as soon as Virginia passed an ordinance of secession, of such a large proportion of the best officers of these two arms of the service, natives of Virginia and other Southern States.

As before stated, when it had been decided that the Virginia convention would provide for secession, the first two objects to demand the attention of the executive were the capture of the armory and arsenal at Harper's Ferry and the arsenal and navy yard at Gosport in the vicinity of Norfolk. On the night of April 16th, some men in Norfolk, without authority, seized light boats and

other small craft and sank them in the channel to prevent the escape of ships from the navy yard. There were at the navy yard at that time 4 ships of the line, 3 frigates, 2 sloops of war, 1 brig and the steam frigate Merrimac, and some 780 marines and other armed men.

On the 18th of April, Governor Letcher called out the militia of Norfolk and vicinity, and dispatched Maj.-Gen. William B. Taliaferro to take command of the same and endeavor, by a rapid movement, to secure the navy yard. After having done this he asked Governor Pickens, of South Carolina, to immediately send 2,000 troops to Norfolk to aid the Virginia militia. Pickens at first declined, as "it might appear intrusive," and besides, "we stand at present on the defensive." He said he would ask President Davis for advice. The latter wired Letcher for information as to his object in asking for troops. He replied that it was to secure the Gosport navy yard, where the Merrimac, the Cumberland, the Pennsylvania, and perhaps other vessels were at that time; that the channel was partially obstructed and it would require 5,000 men to take the place. On the 19th the Confederate secretary of war informed Governor Brown, of Georgia, that 2,000 troops had been ordered from South Carolina to Norfolk, to report to General Taliaferro, and asked that several companies be sent from Georgia to the same place, to go at once, or they would be too late. Davis replied to Letcher, on the 19th, that he had ordered sent him two regiments from South Carolina and some companies from Georgia; also that the resolution of the Virginia convention for an alliance had been received and accepted. On the 19th, Letcher telegraphed Taliaferro: "As we need powder, keep an eye to securing that article." On the 20th the governor of Georgia reported that he had four companies ready to start for Virginia. The Seaboard railroad furnished facilities for sending these South Carolina and Georgia troops directly to Norfolk.

Scott, on the 19th of April, ordered Capt. H. G. Wright, of the engineers, to proceed to the Gosport navy yard to aid the commodore there in command, in designing and executing a plan of defense; instructing him to call at Fort Monroe and consult Colonel Dimick regarding the sending of a regiment of infantry to assist in the defense of the navy yard, but to "bear in mind that, although the navy yard and its contents are of very

great importance, Fort Monroe is still more so to the Union." Captain Wright at once proceeded on the steamer Pawnee to Fort Monroe. One of the two regiments which had arrived at Fort Monroe that morning, about 370 strong, under Colonel Wardrop, was marched on board the Pawnee, which arrived at Norfolk on the night of the 20th.

When Captain Wright reached the navy yard he found that all the ships there, except the Cumberland, had been scuttled on the 19th by Commodore McCauley, the commandant of the navy yard, and were fast sinking; but finding McCauley disposed to defend the yard, the troops were landed and dispositions taken for its defense, when Commodore Paulding, who had come on the Pawnee from Washington, decided to finish the destruction of the scuttled ships, and, after destroying the navy yard, to withdraw with the frigate Cumberland in tow of the Pawnee and a steam tug lying at the yard. To Captain Wright and Commodore Rodgers was assigned the duty of blowing up the dry dock, a massive structure of granite masonry, which they prepared to do by placing a mine in a gallery along one of its side walls, in which they used 2,000 pounds of powder, brought from one of the ships, connected by a train of powder and slow matches with the outside. This done, all the men were sent to the ship, except one to watch for the commodore's signal for lighting the matches to fire the mine and the buildings, which was done by Captains Wright and Rodgers. The lighted fires burned so rapidly that those officers had great difficulty in escaping from the yard, and were unable to reach the Pawnee, which had already moved away, as the Virginia troops just then advanced rapidly from the Portsmouth side and opened fire on the yard, the steamer, and the boat in which Wright and Rodgers tried to escape. They then rowed to the Norfolk side and delivered themselves to the commanding general of the Virginia forces, at about 6 o'clock on Sunday morning, April 21st. Their attempt to blow up the dock was not successful, and to burn the arsenal but partially so.

On the 22d, Vice-President Stephens telegraphed President Davis, from Richmond:

Gosport navy yard burned and evacuated by the enemy; 2,500 guns, artillery and ordnance saved, and 3,000 barrels of powder;

also large supply of caps, and shells loaded, with the Bormann fuse attached. Yard not so much injured as supposed. Merrimac, Germantown and Dolphin sunk; Cumberland escaped.

On Sunday, April 21st, Richmond was thrown into great consternation by a dispatch stating that the steamer Pawnee was coming up James river to destroy the powder taken from the magazine at old Fort Norfolk and the cannon foundry above Richmond. Alarms were sounded, citizens rushed to arms, and troops and a battery were at once sent down the James to Chaffin's bluff, where the river is quite narrow, and hasty preparations made for the defense of the city. The Pawnee, after returning from the attempted destruction of the navy yard, was reported as making a reconnoissance up the James, which caused this alarm, revealing to the authorities the utterly defenseless condition of Richmond, and inducing them to take steps for its defense. The advisory council met after the excitement had subsided, and directed Governor Letcher to instruct the governor of South Carolina to change the destination of his troops to Richmond, "where an effort would be made to concentrate as large a force as possible to make that city the base of operations for defending the interests of the Southern States."

Maj.-Gen. Walter Gwynn, who had been assigned to command of the Virginia forces at Norfolk, reported on the 23d that the Baltic had arrived off Old Point with troops from Boston and then proceeded to Washington; that the Cumberland, the only war vessel in Hampton Roads, was lying off Old Point. That day the advisory council asked the governor to direct General Gwynn to send a flag to Fort Monroe and ascertain whether it was true that army officers, citizens of Virginia, were kept in irons at that fort, or otherwise restrained against their will. The governor was also directed to have vessels that had been seized and detained in the waters of Virginia inspected, valued and detained for the defense of the State. Ex-Governor Wise, from near Norfolk, about that time urged the Richmond authorities to place heavy guns at Hampton to prevent the forces at Fort Monroe from taking the points of vantage and shutting up Virginia bays and rivers, concluding: "We are quiet here now, but fortifying, and daily along Lynnhaven seeing the steamers take reinforcements up the bay and the Potomac

to Washington. This can be done all the time until we surround Fort Monroe and make the roads too hot to hold the blockading fleets."

On the 25th, the governor asked the advisory council the very important question as to how steam vessels, entering the navy yard at Portsmouth or other ports, on State service, could be supplied with coal, when in want, that being then the case with one such vessel at Portsmouth. Fortunately for Virginia, she had, in the vicinity of Richmond, the fine Chesterfield coalfield, which supplied during the war an abundance of coal for steam and manufacturing purposes.

On the 24th of April, the steam tug *Young America* went out from the harbor of Norfolk and was proceeding to take charge of the schooner *George M. Smith*, off *Fortress Monroe*, loaded with contraband of war, when it was seized by the United States frigate *Cumberland*, and there resulted quite a correspondence between General Gwynn and Flag-Officer Pendergrast, of the United States navy, in reference to that and other captures of vessels in Hampton Roads, the one claiming the right to make such seizures and the other denying it.

Learning that the Virginia midshipmen from the naval school at Annapolis had resigned and tendered their services to the State, Capt. R. L. Page, of the Virginia navy, at this time advised the establishment of a temporary schoolship for their use at Norfolk, for drill, etc., until their services were wanted for special duties, a suggestion that received the approval of the advisory council.

A strict blockade had been established by the Federal authorities, cutting off all communication even with other Virginia ports; Federal vessels were constantly making soundings from Cape Henry lighthouse to the barricades in the channel of Elizabeth river, and it was the opinion of Com. French Forrest, May 1st, that the United States intended to make a descent on Gosport navy yard to correct their recent error of destruction and evacuation. He suggested that a competent military force be stationed to resist such efforts, saying that he could muster only 73 men under arms in the yard, and scarcely 40 appeared from the town, and only two of those properly armed.

On the 30th of April, G. J. Pendergrast, command-

ing the Federal squadron, gave formal notice of an efficient blockade of the ports of Virginia and North Carolina. Col. S. Bassett French, aide to Governor Letcher, from Norfolk, May 2d, notified General Lee of this blockade, and that the troops from Suffolk, some 300, had been brought to Norfolk, leaving the Nansemond river approaches undefended. He thought 10,000 men absolutely necessary for the defense of the public property in and about Norfolk.

The Bay line was permitted, on the 4th, to resume trips for mails and passengers. A British ship from Liverpool, with salt for Richmond, was boarded at Old Point, but sailed on and delivered its cargo. It was reported, on the 6th of May, that Federal vessels chased and fired on steamers to within 12 miles of Gloucester point.

Lewis E. Harvie, president of the Richmond & Danville railroad, patriotically offered, without charge, to furnish transportation from his railroad to remove the ordnance from the navy yard at Norfolk to the interior. The council advised the acceptance of this offer, and that orders be immediately given to remove all ordnance from the navy yard, not necessary for its defense and that of Norfolk and Portsmouth, to safe points in the interior. Early in May, Gen. R. E. Lee was assigned to the command of volunteer troops ordered to the battery on Jamestown island.

Gov. I. G. Harris, of Tennessee, asked the governor of Virginia for artillery for the defense of the Mississippi and the Cumberland and Tennessee rivers, and the council advised Governor Letcher to fill this requisition with fifty 32-pounders, a supply of balls, and two sample gun carriages. The governor was also directed to purchase the steamer Northampton, for the service of the State.

D. G. Duncan, the special agent of the Confederate government, from Richmond, reported to Secretary of War L. P. Walker, that intelligent and distinguished men in Richmond "believe Virginia on the very brink of being carried back, and say no man but President Davis can save her. . . . There is disappointment that he does not assume entire direction of affairs here. . . . General Lee has ordered Louisiana troops to Harper's Ferry. . . . The South Carolina troops refuse to move unless under orders from Montgomery. Military control

is essential to the interests of the Confederate States. I doubt if there are 5,000 Virginians armed and equipped." That same 7th of May the council advised Governor Letcher to issue an order to Major-General Lee to assume command of all forces from other States that had or might hereafter report to him, or tender their services to Virginia, until orders are received from the President of the Confederate States in reference to the same.

It was reported in Richmond, on the 9th, that thirty vessels were detained at Old Point by Commander Pendergrast; one of them a Richmond ship, from South America, with 3,000 bags of coffee, the last of the fine fleet owned at Richmond, that by direct trade with Brazil made that city one of the leading coffee markets of the country, a loss she has never recovered.

On the 10th, Capt. H. Coalter Cabell reported his arrival at Gloucester point, by way of West Point, and the placing of his Virginia battery in position, and that he would soon have that place perfectly safe from attack. He suggested similar works on the Rappahannock, the Potomac and the northern side of James river, adding: "These positions secured and defended by heavy guns, Virginia is safe from invasion by sea."

From Richmond, on the 11th, Rev. Dr. W. N. Pendleton, of Lexington, Va. (afterward captain of the Rockbridge artillery, and later colonel and brigadier-general of artillery), wrote to President Davis: "As you value our great cause, hasten on to Richmond. Lincoln and Scott are, if I mistake not, covering by other demonstrations the great movement upon Richmond. Suppose they should send suddenly up the York river, as they can, an army of 30,000 or more; there are no means at hand to repel them, and if their policy shown in Maryland gets footing here, it will be a severe, if not a fatal blow. Hasten, I pray you, to avert it. The very fact of your presence will almost answer. Hasten, then. I entreat you, don't lose a day." Pendleton was a classmate of Davis at West Point, and an intimate friend.

Maj. Benjamin S. Ewell, in command of the Virginia militia at Williamsburg, wrote on the 11th to Adjutant-General Garnett that a better disposition to volunteer in the service of the State had been evinced by the citizens of James City, York and Warwick, and he hoped to be able to report within a week five or six companies mustered in

and doing camp duty; that in Elizabeth City county, volunteers and militia numbered about 600 men, so that about 1,200 could be raised on the peninsula. He asked for arms and a battery of field pieces for these men, and for cadets to drill them. In a private letter of the same date, Major Ewell informed General Lee that there was disaffection in the Poquosin island section of York county, from which there had been no volunteers, and it might be well to give him authority to call out the militia of the Sixty-eighth regiment from that section if found necessary.

Col. Charles K. Mallory, of the One Hundred and Fifteenth regiment, Virginia militia, from Hampton, on the 13th informed Governor Letcher that two companies from Fort Monroe had taken possession of Mill creek bridge and of the property adjoining, giving as a reason for so doing that they wanted possession of a well of water on that side of the creek. He thought their object was to hold the north bank of Mill creek, and perhaps erect works there. Considering that movement an invasion of Virginia, he had ordered out the volunteer companies of Elizabeth City county. General Lee went to Norfolk on the 16th to look into the condition of military affairs at that point, returning to Richmond on the 19th.

On the 18th, the United States steamer Monticello fired on the unfinished Virginia battery at Sewell's point, but did no damage. There were no guns there at that time, but three were immediately sent forward from Norfolk and got in position by 5 p. m. of the 19th. During the 19th the Monticello lay opposite Sewell's point, apparently not suspecting the placing there of three 32-pounders in battery. When the Monticello opened again at 5:30 p. m., the battery at once replied with such effect as to drive her off, and while many shot and shell fell in and around the battery no material loss was suffered. Capt. P. H. Colquitt, of the Columbus (Ga.) Light Guards, was in command at Sewell's point, with three companies from Norfolk. In the absence of a Confederate flag that of the State of Georgia was hoisted over the battery. He reported that the troops acted with great bravery and he had to restrain them in their enthusiasm. On the night of the 19th additional guns and ammunition were sent to Sewell's point. On the 21st the Monticello steamed up and fired twice at the Sewell's point battery, but when answered drew off.

Brig.-Gen. Benjamin F. Butler, of the Massachusetts militia, was assigned, on the 22d of May, to the command of the "department of Virginia," with headquarters at Old Point Comfort, and nine additional infantry regiments were sent to that place. On the 23d, between 4 and 5 p. m., a Federal regiment made a demonstration against Hampton, greatly alarming the citizens of that place. Maj. J. B. Cary, of the Virginia artillery, in command at Hampton, had made arrangements for the destruction of the bridges leading from Fort Monroe, but the enemy were in sight before the fires could be well started. He then sent Lieutenant Cutshaw to demand of the Federal colonel his object in approaching Hampton with so large a body of men. He replied that he had simply come, under the order of General Butler, to reconnoiter; he then gave assurance that he would make no attack upon personal property, unless molested, when both sides joined in extinguishing the fires at the bridges. This amicable understanding reached, the Federal troops marched into the town, remained for awhile and then returned. Major Cary reported to Colonel Ewell at Williamsburg, that this demonstration indicated the propriety of removing his camp farther from Hampton, where the people had responded indifferently to his call for aid in erecting intrenchments. As the site selected for his camp was probably visible from the ramparts of Fort Monroe, he thought the erection of the first tent there would be the signal for another demonstration.

On the 21st of May, Col. John B. Magruder, of the provisional army of Virginia, a Virginian officer of the old Federal army, later a major-general of the Confederate States army, was assigned to the command of the "department of the Peninsula," including the York and the James rivers, and he began organizing forces for defense. Maj. H. B. Tomlin, commanding at West Point, reported that he had placed guards near the York river railroad bridge over the Pamunkey.

A letter of General Lee to ex-Governor Wise, of May 24th, describes the situation at that date:

Since my arrival in Richmond I have used every exertion to organize troops and prepare resistance against immediate invasion, which has appeared imminent, and as almost everything had to be created, except the guns found at the Gosport navy yard, the preparations have absorbed all the means I can command. We are still engaged

in making gun carriages for the river defenses and field service, preparing ammunition for all arms, constructing machines for the manufacture of caps, etc., ammunition wagons, etc., which must be continued. It seems to me, therefore, impossible at this time to prepare a marine battery, such as you describe, which would be effective in carrying out your design, as desirable as it would be. All the force and means at Norfolk are now employed in preparing defenses against a water and land approach. Could proper redoubts be erected at Willoughby's and Sewell's points, capable of standing a siege, and with an armament to command the adjacent waters, they would be of great advantage. Ineffectual batteries would provoke useless conflict and expose to the risk of capture the heavy guns therein placed. This has, in a measure, been recently exemplified. . . . Gen. B. Huger, formerly of the United States army, an officer of great merit, has been assigned to the command at Norfolk, and I hope will be able to secure it against successful invasion.

On May 25th, Governor Ellis notified President Davis that 37,000 stand of arms in the Fayetteville arsenal were at his disposal; that troops were constantly coming in, and he asked what he should do with a regiment that was ready for service, concluding: "The people are a unit, waiting for an advance on Washington."

Brig.-Gen. Benjamin Huger reported, from Norfolk, on the 26th, that with time and means he hoped to soon get the defenses of Norfolk in order; that Williams' North Carolina regiment had arrived from Richmond, and the Federals were landing troops at Newport News.

Major-General Butler moved a body of troops, by transports, from Fort Monroe to Newport News, about 7 a. m., May 27th, and began intrenching a camp, of which he reported, "when completed, it will be able to hold itself against any force that may be brought against it, and afford even a better depot from which to advance than Fortress Monroe." His next movement would be to take the battery at Big Point, exactly opposite Newport News, and commanding Nansemond river, and once in command of that battery, he could advance along the Nansemond and take Suffolk, and there either hold or destroy the railroads between Richmond and Norfolk and between Norfolk and the South; then, with a perfect blockade of Elizabeth river, "Norfolk will be so perfectly hemmed in that starvation will cause the surrender, without risking an attack on the strongly fortified intrenchments around Norfolk, with great loss and perhaps defeat."

In a letter of May 27th, Butler informed Scott that the people of Virginia were using negroes in the batteries

and preparing to send the negro women and children South; that squads of negro families were constantly coming into his lines and he was "in doubt what to do with this species of property," but had determined to employ the able-bodied persons on wages and issue food to those unemployed, to be paid for out of these wages, and that \$60,000 worth of such property was then in his hands. He concluded this subject thus:

As a means of offense, therefore, in the enemy's hands these negroes, when able-bodied, are of the last importance. Without them the batteries could not have been erected, at least for many weeks. As a military question, it would seem to be a measure of necessity to deprive their masters of their services. How can this be done? As a political question and a question of humanity, can I receive the services of the father and mother and not take the children? Of the humanitarian aspect I have no doubt. Of the political one I have no right to judge. I therefore submit all this to your better judgment; and as these questions have a political aspect, I have ventured—and I trust I am not wrong—to duplicate the parts of my dispatches relating to this subject and forward them to the secretary of war.

Maj. John B. Hood (subsequently a distinguished Confederate lieutenant-general) was, on the 23d, placed in charge of the cavalry on York river, for the purpose of establishing a camp of instruction and making judicious disposition of the pickets and videttes; the same day Col. D. H. Hill (later a Confederate lieutenant-general) assumed command of the post at Yorktown. On the 28th, two more companies of cavalry were ordered from the camp of instruction at Ashland to Yorktown; Hodges' Virginia regiment was sent to Jamestown island as a protecting force for the batteries, and Jordan's artillery company was ordered to Jamestown island and Hupp's to Craney island. Cabell's battery of light artillery was ordered from Gloucester point to Yorktown, leaving at the former place only 400 infantry under command of Lient.-Col. P. R. Page.

On the 31st, in a letter to Governor Ellis, of North Carolina, General Lee said he had recommended forwarding troops to Norfolk and the transfer of the North Carolina camp of instruction from Weldon to Suffolk, because of the importance of holding Norfolk, which commands the communication with North Carolina by canal and railroad, and in view of the danger of the occupation of Suffolk by United States forces and thereby closing communication between Richmond and Norfolk.

At 9 a. m. of June 5th, the Federal steamer *Harriet Lane* opened on the Confederate battery established at Big Point, across the James from Newport News, with shot and shell from her 11-inch gun and 32-pounders, from a distance of a mile and a half. The steamer fired thirty-three shot and shell, but did no damage except to crack an 8-inch gun. The battery in return fired twenty-three shot and shell, which caused the steamer to move off, apparently injured after a combat lasting fifteen or twenty minutes. Commander R. B. Pegram, of the Virginia navy, praised the cool and self-possessed conduct of the Portsmouth (Va.) rifles, who had never before been in action, writing of them: "Every man behaved in the most spirited and creditable manner, and were so regardless of danger that I had often to interpose my authority to prevent their exposing themselves unnecessarily to the enemy's fire."

On the 7th of June, Governor Letcher, after an extended correspondence with the President in reference to the standing officers in the Virginia service would have in the Confederate service, issued a proclamation transferring all Virginia troops, ordnance stores, etc., to the government of the Confederate States.

On the 10th the Louisiana Zouaves, under Lieutenant-Colonel Coppens, were ordered from Richmond to Yorktown, as were also Alabama companies from Richmond and Gloucester point, to form a regiment under Col. John A. Winston.

Capt. W. H. Werth, of the Chatham Grays, Virginia cavalry, on the 7th of June made a reconnoissance with 20 picked men of the Old Dominion dragoons, two men from his own company, and accompanied by Captain Phillips, Lieutenant Cary and Lieutenant Harrison, to examine the Federal camp at Newport News. He then rode to within a few hundred yards of the fortifications, when he came unexpectedly on a party engaged in cutting wood, the leader of which he killed, and the Federals scattered, yelling, "Look out for the Virginia horsemen!" Two companies from a Federal regiment, that had apparently come to the rescue, did not fire their muskets, but in a panic all rushed back to camp, yelling, "Virginia horsemen!" even gunners abandoning two guns already unlimbered.

General Butler, having learned that the Virginians had

established an outpost at Little Bethel church, about 8 miles from Newport News and the same distance from Hampton on the road to Yorktown, and that a short distance farther on the road to Yorktown, at Big Bethel church, near the head of the north branch of Back river, there was another outpost, where works of more or less strength were in process of erection, ordered Duryea's Fifth New York regiment ferried over Hampton creek, at 1 o'clock of the morning of June 10th, under orders to march to New Market bridge, and thence by a by-road to the rear of the Confederates between Big and Little Bethel. This regiment was to cut them off and attack Little Bethel, and Colonel Townsend with the Third New York regiment was to march an hour later, with two mounted howitzers, from Hampton, in support of Duryea. At the same time Lieutenant-Colonel Washburn was ordered from Newport News, with a battalion to make a demonstration upon Little Bethel in front, supported by Colonel Bendix's Seventh New York regiment, with two field pieces. The commands of Townsend and Bendix were to effect a junction at a fork of the road from Hampton to Newport News, about a mile and a half from Little Bethel. The march was timed for the attack to be made at daybreak. After the attack on Little Bethel, Duryea's regiment and another from Newport News were to follow up the fugitives, if they got off, and attack the battery on the road to Big Bethel while covered by the retreating fugitives. The troops all got into position as ordered, but by some blunder, Bendix's regiment, which had halted at the fork of the road, with two pieces of artillery, without notice opened fire, with both artillery and musketry, on Townsend's column marching up in Duryea's rear, when but 100 yards away. Some of Townsend's men returned this fire, but his column retreated to a nearby eminence, and Washburn, hearing this fire and thinking his communication might be cut off, reversed his march back to his reserves, as did also Duryea. Pierce, in command of the expedition, who was with Townsend's regiment, fearing that his movement was discovered and that the enemy was in force on his line of march, sent back for reinforcements, when Butler sent him Allen's First New York regiment.

Pierce, in the meantime, having ascertained the true state of affairs, effected a junction of his regiments and

resumed his movement. Upon reaching the Confederate camp at Little Bethel, he found it vacated, the Federal cavalry having pressed on toward Big Bethel. He then prepared to attempt to carry the works at Big Bethel, commencing an attack about 9:30.

In his report of the 16th, Butler said, "This attack was not intended to enable us to hold Big Bethel as a post, because it was not seriously in our way on any proposed road to Yorktown, and therefore there was never any intention of maintaining it even if captured. The length of the road and the heat of the weather had caused great fatigue, as many of the troops, the previous night having been cool, had marched with their thickest clothing." From subsequent information, he was sure the force which was first at Big Bethel did not exceed a regiment, and if his order of attack had been obeyed, he had no doubt the battery would have been captured; but the officers in immediate command had an exaggerated idea of the numbers of the enemy, and believed there were 4,000 or 5,000 troops at Big Bethel. A return, accompanying his report, shows that one Massachusetts, one Vermont, and five New York infantry regiments, and the Second United States artillery were actually engaged in this contest, and that the losses were 18 killed, 53 wounded, and 5 missing, an aggregate of 76. Among the killed was Maj. Theodore Winthrop, of Butler's staff.

From Bethel church, Col. J. Bankhead Magruder, commanding "Hampton division," reported on the 10th that he was attacked by about 3,500 Federal troops with several pieces of heavy artillery, that morning at 10 o'clock, and at 12:30 had routed them completely, having had 1,200 men engaged of his 1,400. Magruder's force in the battle was: Col. D. H. Hill's First North Carolina and Lieut.-Col. William D. Stuart's Third Virginia infantry regiments, Maj. E. B. Montague's Virginia cavalry battalion, and Maj. George W. Randolph's Richmond (Va.) howitzer battalion. A Louisiana infantry regiment arrived after the battle was over, but returned to Yorktown the same night, marching 28 miles during the day, as it was not thought prudent to leave Yorktown exposed without troops.

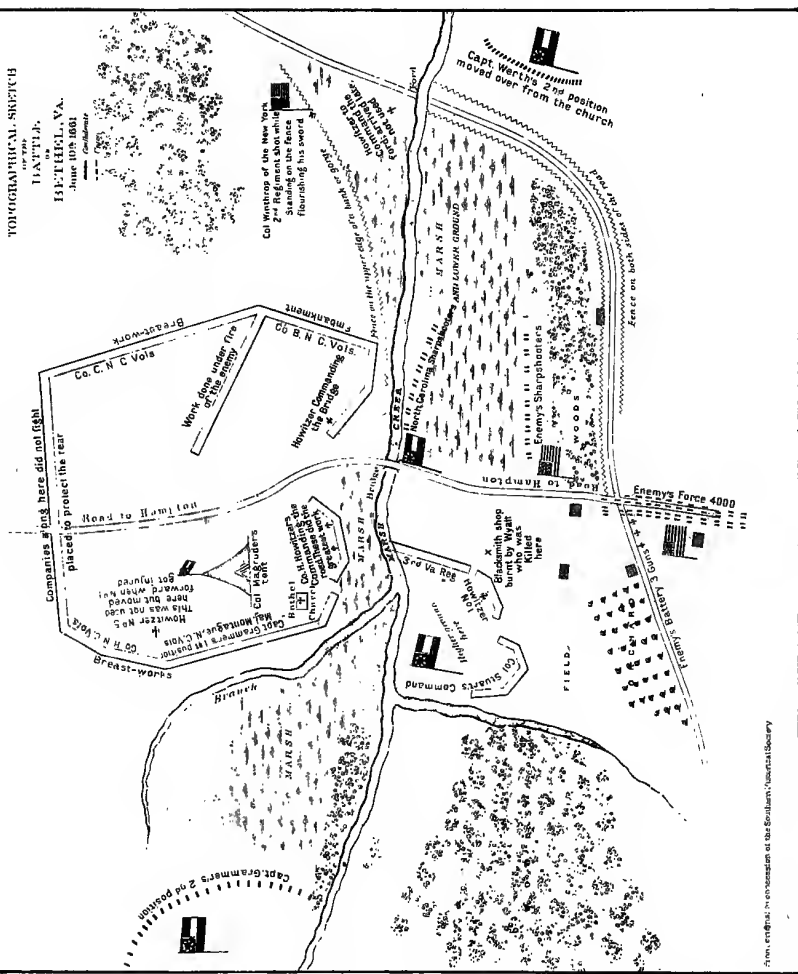
Col. D. H. Hill, with that fullness and accuracy of statement which always characterized his reports, furnished the particulars of this Big Bethel engagement. On

TOPOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

BATTLE

131-THIELL, VA.
June 10th 1861

Scale
1" = 100 yds



the 6th of June he marched from Yorktown, with his own regiment, the First North Carolina, and four pieces of Major Randolph's battery, to Bethel church, on the road to Hampton and 9 miles from that village, which he reached after dark. Early in the morning of the 7th he reconnoitered the ground preparatory to fortifying. The northwest branch of Back river was found in front and encircling the right flank, while on the left was a dense wood about 150 yards behind an old field; a thick wood and a narrow field were in the rear. The defect of the position was a very large field, immediately in front of it, across the river, upon which an enemy could readily be deployed. The nature of the ground determined Colonel Hill to make an enclosed work, nearly in the form of a square, with the road running through it, with a redoubt for a battery, for the protection of the bridge, in which Major Randolph placed his guns so as to sweep all the approaches. On an eminence across the creek, on the right of the road, was placed an outwork, with an emplacement for one of Randolph's guns.

During the day and night of the 7th and all day of the 8th, Hill's men busily plied the few implements which he had at his disposal, constructing defenses. Learning on the afternoon of the 8th that a marauding party of the enemy was within a few miles of him, Lieutenant Roberts with a detachment of his regiment, accompanied by Major Randolph with a howitzer, all under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Lee, of the First North Carolina, set out and chased the party over New Market bridge. McDowell's company of the First North Carolina, with a Richmond howitzer gun under Lieutenant West, in command of Major Lane, of the First North Carolina, was sent in pursuit of a second band, with a result described by Colonel Hill, with his peculiar dry humor as: "the second race on the same day over the New Market course, in both of which the Yankees reached the goal first."

Colonel Magruder came up in the evening of the 8th and assumed command. On Sunday a fresh supply of tools enabled Hill to put more men at work on the intrenchments, but worship was not omitted, as Hill was a Presbyterian elder, of the "Stonewall" Jackson type, who mingled faith and works. Magruder roused his men at 3 o'clock, on Monday morning, June 10th, for a

general advance upon the enemy, which he had planned, but he had marched only $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles when it was learned that the enemy in large force was also advancing and but 100 yards in front; the opposing commanders each having decided to attack the other on that day. The Confederates quickly fell back within their intrenchments and awaited the coming of the invaders. Colonel Stuart, with his 180 Virginians and a howitzer, was stationed in the works on the hill, on the extreme right, beyond the creek. Bridgers' company, of the First North Carolina, was posted in the dense woods on the left of the road, and three companies of Montague's (Virginia) battalion were placed on the right. Stuart's men, by vigorous work, in an hour improved their temporary defenses.

At 9 o'clock the heavy columns of the enemy approached rapidly and in good order, but when Randolph opened on them, their organization was broken up, yet they promptly replied to the artillery, firing briskly but wildly. An attempt was then made to deploy, under cover of some houses and fences on the left of the road, but this movement was quickly driven back by Randolph's artillery and its supports. In the meantime, the enemy, under cover of woods, moved a strong column to their right to an old ford three-quarters of a mile below the bridge, where Hill had placed a picket of 40 men. To that threatened point Magruder promptly sent Werth's company and a howitzer under Sergeant Crane, which drove back this attack with a single shot. At about the same time some 1,500 Federals attempted, by a movement to their left under cover of woods and fences, to outflank Stuart and get in rear of his small command posted on the right across the creek. This was detected, and Stuart was directed to withdraw across the swamp. At that critical moment Hill recalled Captain Bridgers from the swamp and ordered him to reoccupy the nearest advanced work; Captain Ross was also ordered to the support of Colonel Stuart. These North Carolina companies crossed the bridge under a heavy fire in a most gallant manner. In the meantime Stuart withdrew, and Ross was detained near Randolph's main battery at the church, but Bridgers crossed over, drove the New York Zouaves out of the advanced howitzer redoubt and reoccupied it. This daring movement turned the combat in favor of the Confederates. Magruder followed it up by

ordering Stuart back to Bridgers' support. He promptly crossed the creek in the face of a largely superior foe and resumed his former position in the intrenchments. A fresh howitzer was also taken across and placed in the battery; thus the conditions of the contention on the Confederate side were made as secure as they were at the beginning of the fight, without the loss of a single man.

The attack on the Confederate right foiled, Captain Winthrop, of Butler's staff, led a strong column to a final demonstration on the Confederate left, crossing the creek and appearing in front of the left angle of the works. The Federals in this advance had a white band around their caps, and kept crying out, "Don't fire," practicing this ruse to enable the whole column to get over the creek and form in good order. They then began to cheer lustily, thinking the Confederate work was open at the gorge and they could get in by a sudden rush, but two companies of the First North Carolina quickly undeceived them by a deliberate and well-directed fire, in which they were assisted later by three other companies of the same regiment sent to their support. These joined in the combat with great ardor. Of this Colonel Hill wrote: "Captain Winthrop, while most gallantly urging on his men, was shot through the heart, when all rushed back with the utmost precipitation. . . . The fight at the angle lasted for twenty minutes. It completely discouraged the enemy and he made no further effort at assault. The house in front, which had served as a hiding place for the enemy, was now fired by a shell from a howitzer, and the outhouse and palings were soon in a blaze. As all shelter was now taken from him, the enemy called in his troops and started back for Hampton." As soon as the road was clear, Captain Douthat pursued the enemy with about 100 dragoons, chasing them for the third time over the New Market bridge, which they tore up behind them and so broke the pursuit.

Of the Richmond howitzers, Colonel Hill wrote: "I cannot close this too elaborate report without speaking in the highest terms of admiration of the howitzer battery and its most accomplished commander, Major Randolph. He has no superior as an artillerist in any country, and his men displayed the utmost skill and coolness." Of his own regiment, the First North Carolina, he said:

"Their patience under trial, perseverance under toil, and courage under fire have seldom been surpassed by veteran troops." After stating that they had done a large portion of the work on the intrenchments at Yorktown as well as on those at Bethel, he said: "After the battle they shook hands affectionately with the spades, calling them 'clever fellows and good friends.' The men are influenced by high moral and religious sentiments, and their conduct has furnished another example of the great truth that he who fears God will ever do his duty to his country."

Hill estimated that the enemy had five and a half regiments, or about 5,000 men, in the action, while the Confederates never had more than 300 of their 1,400 engaged at one time; and that the Confederate loss was 11 wounded, 1 mortally. Stuart reported: "Both officers and men under my command behaved with the greatest coolness throughout the whole engagement, and none were injured." Major Randolph wrote of his battalion: "I can say nothing more of the conduct of its officers and men than to express the high gratification afforded me by their courage, coolness and precision." Capt. W. H. Werth stated that when ordered to the left, to meet the Federal movement about a mile below the bridge, he led his command across an open field under a shower of shell and canister, and when he saw the Fifth New York moving down the opposite bank of the stream to cross the ford and turn his left, he "at once took double-quick and made the distance of over a mile in about nine minutes, beating the Zouaves and getting in position at the ford in time to cause them to halt."

In his report General Magruder lauded the conduct of his men, adding: "Too much praise cannot be bestowed upon the heroic soldier whom we lost. He was one of four who volunteered to set fire to a house in our front, which was thought to afford protection to our enemy, and advancing alone between the two fires, he fell midway, pierced in the forehead by a musket ball. Henry L. Wyatt is the name of this brave soldier and devoted patriot. He was a member of the brave and gallant First North Carolina regiment." It is generally admitted that young Wyatt was the first Confederate soldier killed in action in Virginia during the civil war. "The firing of the howitzer batteries," Magruder said, "was as per-

fect as the bearing of the men, which was entirely what it ought to have been." Magruder left his cavalry at Big Bethel, but marched the remainder of his forces back to Yorktown. His cavalry pursuit of the Federals continued for 5 miles, to New Market bridge across the southwest branch of Back river, which the flying enemy had destroyed. He wrote in concluding his report: "Our means of transportation were exceedingly limited, but the wounded enemy were carried with our own wounded to farmhouses in our rear, where the good people, who have lost almost everything by this war, and who could see the smoking ruins of their neighbors' houses, destroyed by the enemy both in his advance and retreat, received them most kindly and bound up their wounds."

On the 13th, General Lee acknowledged the receipt of Colonel Magruder's account of the action at Big Bethel, and added: "I take pleasure in expressing my gratification at the gallant conduct of the troops under your command, and my approbation of the dispositions made by you, resulting, as they did, in the rout of the enemy."

General Lee, in correspondence with Colonel Magruder at this time, urged the rapid construction of batteries for water and land defense, hoped that the defenses at Sewell's point and Craney island, which were in weak condition, had been completed and provided with sufficient garrisons; and among other things, said the troops he was collecting at Suffolk should hold command of and prevent the destruction of the railroads.

Hon. R. M. T. Hunter wrote from Lloyd's, June 10th, to President Davis regarding the rumor that the real attack upon Richmond would be made from the Rappahannock, which he thought practicable. He gave a detailed description of the routes that would probably be taken by an invading army having Hanover Junction for its strategic objective, and suggested the proper locations for defenses against such a movement, not forgetting, good, loyal, Tidewater Virginian that he was, that some of these defenses would protect some oyster-beds.

On the 14th General Lee called the attention of Governor Letcher to the slow progress being made, for the want of laborers, in constructing the defensive works about Richmond, suggesting "that all available persons in and about Richmond be organized for the defense of the city; that they provide themselves with such arms as each

can procure, and that arrangements be made for the fabrication of suitable ammunition. These are intended as precautionary measures, which can better be made now than upon the eve of an emergency, should it arise."

On the 15th of June, Colonel Magruder, by authority from the governor, called into active service the Sixty-eighth and One Hundred and Fifteenth regiments of Virginia militia, to rendezvous at Yorktown on the 24th, fully organized. The commandant of the Norfolk navy yard was ordered on the 18th to furnish eight 32-pounders, carriages for ten 42-pounders, and four large launches and cutters, as early as possible, for the defenses of York river. On the 19th the steamer Northampton was transferred to the war department for an army transport on James river.

On the 20th Colonel Magruder issued a general order assigning troops to various posts in his department. Colonel Ewell was assigned to the duty of erecting fortifications in the vicinity of Williamsburg, in conjunction with Capt. A. L. Rives, of the engineers; Col. D. H. Hill, with his First North Carolina regiment, was assigned to the command of the post at Yorktown, with directions to submit further plans for its defense; Col. T. P. August, with his Fifteenth Virginia regiment, was assigned to Williamsburg, to prosecute the defensive works at Grove landing, Spratley's farm, King's mill and Tutter's Neck, under the supervision of Colonel Ewell and Captain Rives; Col. Charles A. Crump, with his Twenty-sixth Virginia regiment, was assigned to Gloucester point, and Col. J. G. Hodges, with the Fourteenth Virginia regiment, to Jamestown island.

Left in temporary command at Yorktown, Col. D. H. Hill wrote, June 15th, to General Lee:

The enemy is burning for revenge for his total rout at Bethel church. There can be no doubt that he will attempt to take this point, either by a night surprise or by a regular siege. We are totally unprepared for either alternative. The development of our lines is so great that they cannot be manned with less than 6,000 troops. Now we have no siege guns at all, and our forces are divided between Bethel church, Grove landing and Williamsburg. We are therefore liable to be beaten in detail with our present weak force, and the York line may be lost at any moment. At this time there are scarce 3,000 men in Yorktown and our lines cannot possibly be defended with fewer than 6,000. Permit me, then, to urge that more troops may be sent here, and that some dozen siege guns be mounted in our batteries.

To this Lee replied that if that place should be besieged, measures would be taken for its relief; that no siege guns were then available for it, and that reinforcements would be sent as rapidly as the arrival of available troops would permit.

Gen. R. E. Lee, commanding, furnished, June 15th, to Governor Letcher, a statement of the military and naval preparations Virginia had made for her defense, from the date of her separation from the United States government to the date of the transfer of the military operations of the State to the Confederate government. (1) Arrangements were made for the establishment of batteries to prevent the ascent of her tidal rivers by hostile vessels, and as soon as sites for these batteries were selected, their construction was begun and their armament and defense committed to the Virginia navy. (2) Preparations were also begun for receiving into the service of the State volunteer companies, and for organizing, arming and equipping these; establishing a rendezvous, appointing mustering officers and providing for their subsistence and shelter. The first estimate of the number of troops of all arms required, based upon the points to be defended, was for 51,000 men. This estimated quota from each portion of the State was furnished except from the western section. (3) Arrangements were made for calling out volunteers from the western section, at the same time and in the same manner as from the east, but up to the date of his writing, this had been but feebly responded to.

Complete returns had not yet been received from the troops in the field, but, from the best information within his reach, General Lee believed the number of Virginia troops in the service was about 35,000, probably more, as the report of her ordnance officer showed that he had issued 2,054 rifles and carbines and 41,604 muskets, besides pistols and sabers for the cavalry. In addition to these, 13,000 arms had been issued from the Lexington arsenal, making a total of 56,658. From Lexington 7,000 arms had been issued to troops from other States, and also several thousand from the arsenal at Richmond. About 5,000 men of the Virginia companies were armed and equipped when received into the State's service, so that the number of Virginia troops in the field was about 40,000. Virginia's adjutant-general, W. H. Richardson,

reported, April 17th, that Virginia had in her service, at that date, of armed volunteers, 3,350 cavalry, 780 artillery, 5,700 light infantry, and 2,130 riflemen; a total of 12,050. General Lee added:

When it is remembered that this body of men were called from a state of profound peace to one of unexpected war, you will have reason to commend the alacrity with which they left their homes and families and prepared themselves for the defense of the State. The assembling of men, however, was not the most difficult operation. Provision for their instruction, subsistence, equipment, clothing, shelter and transportation in the field required more time and labor. Ammunition of every kind had to be manufactured. The carriages of the guns for river, land and field service had to be made, with the necessary implements, caissons, battery wagons, etc. One hundred and fifteen guns for field service have thus been provided, from which twenty light batteries, of four guns each, have been furnished, with the requisite horses, harness, etc.

The defenses for Virginia rivers were provided for as follows: On the James, two batteries and two steamers, mounting 40 guns, ranging from 32-pounders to 8 and 9-inch columbiads; with arrangements made for mounting 60 guns in the defenses around Richmond, and for a naval battery of 6 and 12-pound howitzers. On the York, three batteries had been constructed, mounting 30 guns. On the Potomac, sites for batteries had been selected and arrangements made for their construction, but as the command of that river was in possession of the United States, a larger force was required for their security than could be devoted to that purpose; therefore, only a battery at Aquia creek, with 12 guns, had been completed. On the Rappahannock, a four-gun battery of 32-pounders and 8-inch columbiads had been erected. On the Elizabeth, to guard the approaches to Norfolk and the navy yard, six batteries, mounting eighty-five 32-pounders and 8 and 9-inch columbiads, had been erected. On the Nansemond, to prevent access to the railroad from Norfolk, three batteries, mounting 19 guns, had been constructed. In addition to the batteries described, other works had been constructed for their land defense, exceeding, in many instances, the works on the batteries themselves, such as an extensive line of field works for the security of Norfolk on the sides toward the bay, and redoubts for the same purpose at Jamestown island, Gloucester point, Yorktown, and across the neck of land below Williamsburg.

In the conduct of naval affairs by Virginia, the sunken

frigate United States had been raised at the navy yard and prepared for a schoolship and for harbor defense, with a deck battery of nineteen 32-pounders and 9-inch columbiads; the frigate Merrimac (the famous ram Virginia of 1862) had been raised and was in the dry dock, and arrangements had been made for raising the German-town and the Plymouth.

Magruder reported on the 16th, from Yorktown, that he had 5,550 effective men; that he should have 4,500 more to make his line secure, and 15 heavy guns. General Huger reported, from Norfolk, on the 17th, that the Federals were placing artillery on the Ripraps, and on Saturday afternoon the command at Sewell's point was surprised by having eight or ten shells from that artillery exploded in and around their battery.

On the 18th, General Lee, as Magruder had requested, directed Lieut. R. R. Carter, commanding the steam tender Teazer, to co-operate with the batteries on Jamestown island in the defense of James river. He informed Colonel Magruder that requisition had been made for eight 32-pounders and four 42-pounder carronades for the defense of the land approaches to Yorktown, and for four boats, for service in York river, capable of transporting 400 or 500 men each; and that Captain Whittle was authorized to send to Yorktown the guns intended for Gloucester point, if not immediately wanted at that place. To Hon. W. C. Parks, of the Virginia convention, he wrote that the supply of arms for Virginia volunteers was so limited that he had suggested to the governor a method of procuring some old flint-lock muskets, which, if successful, he hoped would furnish the means of giving arms to the men in Grayson county and others that were much in want.

Colonel Magruder reported on the 18th, from Bethel church, that he then occupied that post with the Second Louisiana, to which he had attached the York and Warwick companies, two batteries of artillery and some cavalry, and had placed a Georgia regiment in support; and next day he wrote, that threatened by an advance of the enemy, via Warwick Court House, he had evacuated Bethel and marched for Yorktown. He learned, afterward, that the enemy had only come out to procure horses and mules and had then returned; and he found his men much fatigued and dispirited by this constant

marching and countermarching, made necessary by the weakness of his force, but still "that must be done and the enemy kept in his trenches and fortifications."

On June 24th, a war steamer came opposite the house of J. W. Gresham, on the Rappahannock river, below Urbana, and sent men ashore to purchase supplies. On being refused, and seeing a small company of Lancaster troops approaching, the enemy fled precipitately to their boats, fired on as they shoved off. The ship then opened and fired fifty-three shot and shell at Mr. Gresham's house, one of the balls striking the bed in which Mrs. Gresham was lying ill, and a shell exploding in an outhouse to which she was removed.

General Butler about this time reported that Colonel Allen, with a small detachment of his men, had, without orders, burned a wheatfield of some twenty-five acres, belonging to a widow, which he had safeguarded, his only excuse being that they were getting the wheat. "For this wanton destruction and waste he had the privates punished and the colonel arrested and held for trial, as such destruction and waste of the property of our enemies even, will disgrace us."

On June 27th, Col. Lafayette McLaws (later major-general) was ordered to take command of all the troops in the vicinity of Williamsburg; Colonel Ewell was ordered to report to him; Capt. A. L. Rives was also assigned to duty with Colonel McLaws, and Colonel August's station was changed to King's mill or Grove landing.

About midnight of July 4th, Lieut.-Col. Charles D. Dreux, of the First Louisiana battalion, led a detachment of 150 infantry, 1 howitzer and about 15 or 20 cavalry, in an advance in the direction of Newport News and took post, in ambush, near Curtis' farm. The videttes soon announced the approach of about 100 Federal cavalry. Notwithstanding the orders that had been given to the men not to fire until ordered, some shots were exchanged between the videttes and some of the men concealed on the left, and the enemy, and Colonel Dreux was mortally wounded. Capt. S. W. Fisk, of the Louisiana battalion, succeeding to the command, ordered his men to wheel into line; but in the meantime the enemy had disappeared, the horses, taking fright, had run off down the road with the gun, and the opportunity for

a surprise having passed, and there being a large force of the enemy near, the scouting party returned to camp. Colonel Magruder reported that he had himself gone, the morning before, with a larger force to the York road, as the enemy had crossed Hampton creek, leaving Dreux in command, who organized this expedition after he left. He ascertained that the enemy's force which fled was about 400, and that a war steamer came up after the skirmish and threw shells into the woods where it took place. The gallant colonel died from his wounds the next morning.

On the 11th, Thomas H. Wynne, chairman of the city committee on defenses, informed the secretary of war that the city council of Richmond was willing to bear a fair proportion of the expenses of erecting defenses around the city, but as that was an important point to the Confederate government, it should take charge of this work, as it had done elsewhere.

Brigadier-General Huger, from Norfolk, July 12th, submitted a list of the Virginia volunteer companies under his command, as organized into regiments and battalions, calling attention to the fact that all the infantry regiments had their complement of companies, except the Forty-first, which would soon be filled up by companies ready to be mustered in. These regiments were: The Third, Roger A. Pryor, colonel, F. H. Archer, lieutenant-colonel, and Joseph Mayo, major; the Sixth, William Mahone, colonel, Thomas J. Corprew, lieutenant-colonel, and W. P. Lundy, major; the Ninth, F. H. Smith, colonel, J. T. L. Preston, lieutenant-colonel, and Stapleton Crutchfield, major (the superintendent and two professors of the Virginia military institute); the Twelfth, D. A. Weisiger, colonel, F. L. Taylor, lieutenant-colonel, and Edgar L. Brockett, major; the Twenty-sixth, R. E. Colston, colonel, H. T. Parish, lieutenant-colonel, and John C. Page, major; the Forty-first, John R. Chambliss, Jr., colonel, George Blow, Jr., lieutenant-colonel, and Fred W. Smith, major. The Forty-first had but seven companies. There was a cavalry regiment of eight companies, without field officers, and a battalion of field artillery of five companies, without field officers. Of the officers named, Mahone afterward became major-general, and Pryor, Weisiger, Colston and Chambliss, brigadier-generals.

Col. Robert Johnston, commanding the cavalry at Cockletown, reported that a volunteer scout of four had returned to camp that morning, bringing in Captain Jenkins and Lieutenant Shurtleff of the United States naval brigade. This scout met a party of six, near New Market bridge, killed Major Rawlings, wounded the two officers brought in, and put the rest to flight. Soon afterward Colonel Johnston reported that he would occupy Bethel, endeavor to secure the negroes from the lower part of the peninsula, and then occupy Harrod's and Young's mills, whence he could best operate with safety against marauding parties.

July 24th, on account of the panic following the battle of Bull Run, Butler was required to send a force of about 4,000 men to Washington. He wrote to Scott: "This reduction of my forces here leaves it impossible to take up or hold any advanced position. Newport News, where I have an intrenched camp, and a very important point in my judgment, would be in great danger of attack from Yorktown and Warwick, where the Confederates are now concentrating troops across the James river from Smithfield to Warwick."

As soon as Colonel Magruder learned the result of the battle of Manassas, he ordered Colonel Johnston to proceed, with about 2,000 men, to reconnoiter in the immediate vicinity of Hampton and Newport News. As soon as Johnston appeared before Hampton, a large balloon was sent up, from which his force was observed, and a hasty evacuation took place. Magruder ordered a junction of troops from Williamsburg and Yorktown—about 4,000, including 400 cavalry and two batteries of the howitzers—in Warwick county, where he established a depot of supplies at the courthouse, and then marched to Bethel church. On August 6th he disposed his force between the Federals at and around Fort Monroe and those in garrison at Newport News.

On the morning of the 7th, Magruder displayed his force within a mile and a half of Newport News, with the hope of drawing out the enemy. Disappointed in this, he moved his left flank to within a mile of Hampton, where a copy of the New York Tribune, containing a recent report from Butler to the secretary of war, was placed in his hands, in which the former announced his intentions with respect to Hampton, about one-third of

which had been burned by the Federals when they evacuated it in consequence of the withdrawal of 4,000 of their best troops to Washington. Butler, in that report, in substance stated:

That he intended to fortify Hampton and make it so strong as to be easily defended by a small number of troops; that he did not know what to do with the many negroes in his possession unless he possessed Hampton; that they were still coming in rapidly; that as their masters had deserted their homes and slaves, he should consider the latter free, and would colonize them at Hampton, the home of most of their owners, where the women could support themselves by attending to the clothes of the soldiers, and the men by working on the fortifications of the town.

Magruder reported, that having known for some time that Hampton was the harbor of runaway slaves and traitors, and that being under the guns of Fort Monroe it could not be held, even if taken, he was under the impression that it should have been destroyed before; and when he found, from Butler's report, its importance to the enemy, and that the town would lend great strength to the fortifications directly around it, he determined to burn it; that the gentlemen of Hampton, many of whom were in his command, seemed to concur with him in the propriety of this course. He further hoped that the sight of a conflagration would draw away the troops from Newport News at night. Having reached this conclusion, Magruder made disposition of his troops, selecting four Virginia cavalry companies to burn the town, three of them made up of persons from that portion of the country, and many of them from Hampton. To support this party, the Fourteenth Virginia was posted near Hampton to guard against an attack from any unexpected quarter; New Market, between Hampton and Newport News, was taken possession of, and a force disposed so as to meet any troops coming from Newport News to the relief of Hampton. He then described the skirmish at the Hampton bridge, which induced the enemy to retreat, at the end of half an hour, with some loss, and with only one of his men wounded. "Notice was then given to the few remaining inhabitants of the place, and those who were aged or infirm were kindly cared for and taken to their friends, who occupied detached houses. The town was then fired in many places and burned to the ground." About daybreak of

the 8th the troops that had fired the town returned to Bethel for rest, not having been molested by the enemy.

General Butler, in his report of this affair, said that just before noon the Confederates attacked his guard at the bridge and attempted to burn it, but were driven back, when they proceeded to fire Hampton, in a great number of places, and by 12 o'clock it was in flames and was soon entirely destroyed. He wrote:

They gave but fifteen minutes' time for the inhabitants to remove from their houses, and I have to-day brought over the old and infirm, who by that wanton act of destruction are now left houseless and homeless. The enemy took away with them most of the able-bodied white men. A more wanton and unnecessary act than the burning, as it seems to me, could not have been committed. There was not the slightest attempt to make any resistance on our part for the possession of the town, which we had before evacuated. There was no attempt to interfere with them there, as we only repelled an attempt to burn the bridge. It would have been easy to dislodge them from the town by a few shells from the fortress, but I did not choose to allow an opportunity to fasten upon the Federal troops any portion of this heathenish outrage.

Magruder reported that there was sickness among the troops on the peninsula, nearly all of a typhoid character, and many deaths were occurring. The Fifth North Carolina, over 1,000 strong, had then less than 400 for duty. "In addition to the measles, ague and fever, bilious and typhoid fever, symptoms of scurvy are apparent throughout the command; typhoid has been so prevalent and fatal at Jamestown island as to make the withdrawal of the men from that post necessary." He added, that he had called out a large force of negroes to complete the fortifications, and he requested that funds be sent for the payment of these laborers, without delay, as many of them were free negroes. He did not wish the sanitary condition of his men to be made known, for obvious reasons, and said:

Those men who can take the field are in fine spirits, and so keen for an encounter with the enemy that I believe Newport News could be carried, though it is excessively strong, and garrisoned by troops and supported by a naval force more than equal to my own in numbers. I do not think it can be done, however, without a loss of one-half of our men in killed and wounded. It could not be held by us for any length of time if it were taken, as the troops from Fort Monroe in much larger force could place themselves in our rear, and the position itself could be shelled by the enemy's ships both in front and on the left flank. Its temporary position, therefore, would not compensate for the loss necessary in taking it.

On the 17th of August, Maj.-Gen. John E. Wool superseded Butler in department command, and Butler was put in command of the volunteer forces in the department exclusive of those at Fort Monroe, practically his own brigade.

CHAPTER IX.

THE TYGART'S VALLEY AND CHEAT MOUNTAIN CAMPAIGN—BATTLE OF GREENBRIER RIVER, OR CAMP BARTOW—BATTLE OF ALLEGHANY MOUNTAIN.

THE unsatisfactory condition of military operations on the line from Staunton to Parkersburg, as well as on that from Staunton to the Kanawha, during the month of July, was the cause of great anxiety both to the Virginia government and to that of the Confederacy. Reinforcements were hurried forward on both lines, especially to northwestern Virginia on the Staunton and Parkersburg line, where the larger Federal force had been concentrated. After the death of Gen. R. S. Garnett and the retreat of his forces, the command of the army of the Northwest was, on the 14th of July, assumed by Brig.-Gen. H. R. Jackson, of Georgia, who established his headquarters at Monterey, 47 miles west of Staunton, and pushed his advance across Alleghany mountain to the Greenbrier river. Another column having been ordered to the Huntersville and Huttonsville road, mainly the brigade of Brig.-Gen. W. W. Loring, that officer was, as the ranking one, assigned on the 20th of July to the command of the army of the Northwest, which included the forces on both the Monterey and the Huntersville lines which had a common objective in the Federal force on Cheat mountain and near Huttonsville. General Loring reached Monterey on the 22d day of July and assumed command.

When Loring reached Monterey he found the army of the Northwest thus distributed: Col. Edward Johnson, with the Twelfth Georgia and Anderson's Virginia Lee battery, were on Alleghany mountain, with pickets at Greenbrier river; Col. Albert Rust's Third Arkansas and Col. John B. Baldwin's Fifty-second Virginia were in supporting distance between Alleghany mountain and Monterey; Col. S. V. Fulkerson's Thirty-seventh Virginia, Col. William B. Taliaferro's Twenty-third Virginia, and Col. W. C. Scott's Forty-fourth Virginia were

at Monterey, as also were Shumaker's Virginia battery and Maj. George Jackson's Fourteenth Virginia cavalry. Col. J. N. Ramsey's First Georgia and the remnant of the Twenty-fifth Virginia, under Maj. A. G. Reger, were placed at McDowell for reorganization; Col. Charles C. Lee's Thirty-seventh North Carolina and Col. William Gilham's Thirty-first Virginia, with some 2,000 men, were on the road between Huntersville and Valley mountain, with their advance at the latter place, holding the road into the head of Tygart's valley. After consultation with Gen. H. R. Jackson, it was decided that other troops which had been ordered to the Monterey line should be sent to Millboro, on the Virginia Central railroad, and thence by way of the Warm Springs to the Huntersville line.

After spending a few days at Monterey inspecting the troops and gathering information, General Loring, on the 1st of August, rode to the front, accompanied by his staff, Col. Carter Stevenson, assistant adjutant-general; Maj. A. L. Long, chief of artillery; Capt. James L. Corley, chief quartermaster; Capt. R. G. Cole, chief commissary; Lieut. H. M. Matthews, aide-de-camp, and Col. W. M. Starke, volunteer aide-de-camp. Most of these officers subsequently became distinguished; Colonel Stevenson as major-general in command of Hood's corps; Major Long as chief of artillery and brigadier-general in the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia; Captains Corley and Cole as the chief quartermaster and the chief commissary on the staff of General Lee, and Lieutenant Matthews as governor of West Virginia. Most of these had been officers in the United States army.

After crossing Alleghany mountain, General Loring reconnoitered the enemy's position on Cheat mountain and concluded that a direct attack on that, by way of the Parkersburg road, was impracticable. He then decided to take immediate command of the force which had been ordered to rendezvous at Huntersville, and attempt to turn Cheat mountain by way of the Valley mountain pass, which Colonels Gilham and Lee had been ordered to occupy. He directed Gen. H. R. Jackson to advance his whole force of some 6,000 men to the Greenbrier river, and hold himself in readiness to co-operate when the advance should be made from Huntersville toward Beverly. General Loring then rode down the valley of the

Greenbrier to Huntersville, where he established his headquarters, about the last of July, and began to make arrangements for the proposed forward movements on the Federal forces at Huttonsville and on Cheat mountain.

Loring found at Huttonsville Col. George Maney's First Tennessee, Col. Robert Hatton's Seventh Tennessee, Col. John H. Savage's Sixteenth Tennessee, Col. John A. Campbell's Forty-eighth Virginia, Maj. John D. Munford's First Virginia battalion of regulars, Maj. W. H. F. Lee's squadron of Virginia cavalry, and Marye's and Stanley's Virginia batteries of artillery. Colonels Gilham and Lee were at Valley mountain, 28 miles west of Huntersville, with their two regiments, and Col. J. S. Burks' Forty-second Virginia and a Georgia regiment were en route from Millboro to Huntersville. The effective force on the Huntersville line was about 8,500 men, most excellent material for an efficient army, as they were all well armed and well equipped by the respective States that had sent them to the field. Most of them were skilled in the use of arms, as they had received military instruction in the volunteer companies which had been organized into regiments of State troops. Many of their officers were trained men, and all were in fine spirits and eager to be led against the enemy. It was obvious to all who were informed in reference to the position of the enemy, the intervening country, and the season of the year, that the success of the proposed movement depended altogether upon its speedy execution. General Loring had a trained staff, most of them old army officers, competent to expedite military operations. The point of vantage in the advance was already occupied by Colonel Gilham, and yet, to the surprise of every one, Loring lingered at Huntersville, giving his attention to establishing there a depot of supplies and to organizing a supply train, ignoring the facts that it was only two days' march to the enemy's position near Huttonsville; that beef cattle were abundant along the line of advance, and that so soon as Huttonsville should be reached, the road over Cheat mountain would be opened, if that position were captured, and supplies could be sent from Staunton over the Parkersburg turnpike.

The unsatisfactory results of military operations in northwestern Virginia and the constant appeals from the leading men of that region to be rid of Federal domina-

tion, induced Gen. R. E. Lee, the Confederate general-in-chief, to take the field in person and give general oversight to military affairs on the Kanawha and Beverly lines, by each of which Federal armies were overrunning a large and important portion of Virginia and persistently pressing toward Staunton and the center of the State. He first gave attention to the Beverly line. Reaching Staunton the last of July, accompanied by his aides, Col. John Augustine Washington and Capt. Walter H. Taylor, he promptly rode forward, 47 miles, to Monterey, where he spent a day conferring with Gen. H. R. Jackson and inspecting the troops there encamped, and then rode on to Huntersville, which he reached the 1st of August. At that point he remained for several days, conferring with General Loring, and, in his polite, suggestive way, urging him to advance on the enemy by way of Valley mountain. Not succeeding in this, or in gaining the information he desired in reference to the enemy in Tygart's valley, he again rode forward, 28 miles, to Valley mountain, at the head of Tygart's valley, which had been occupied by Colonel Gilham's command for over a week, and there established his headquarters on the 8th of August. Maj. W. H. F. Lee accompanied him with his battalion of cavalry, which was at once put on outpost duty. Without delay, General Lee hastened to inform himself, by personal reconnoissances and through scouts, concerning the condition of affairs in the Federal army in his front and the topographic conditions of the immediate field of action; at the same time taking general oversight of operations on the Kanawha line by constant correspondence with Generals Wise and Floyd, who were there in command.

General Loring joined General Lee at Valley mountain about the 12th of August, and as he was in immediate command of the troops on the Monterey line and on the Huntersville line, which formed his division, he also proceeded to inform himself concerning the field of operations, and addressed himself to the task of preparing to dislodge Reynolds, the capable Federal commander, from his strongholds at Elkwater and on Cheat mountain, by bringing his men to the front and gathering supplies for an advance. His hesitating disposition led to delays, for one purpose and another, but he was completely baffled by the prevailing conditions of the weather. The Cheat

mountain region, the dome of the watersheds of north-western Virginia, covered by a vast and dense forest of large evergreen trees, reaches an altitude of nearly 5,000 feet, so that, naturally, it is at all times a damp and chilly region having a large rainfall. During this particular season the precipitation was very much larger than usual. During most of the months of July and August there was a steady downpour of rain, with intervals of heavy mists. In consequence of these climatic conditions, the whole country became saturated with moisture, and even the graded mountain roads, cut up by the constant passing of heavy army trains, were converted into streams of axle-deep mud, making them practically impassable for vehicles of any kind. The many unbridged streams, swollen by these steady rains, added to the difficulties of transportation. This continuous damp and chilly weather caused a great amount of sickness of every kind among the thousands of unseasoned troops here congregated, until nearly half the army was laid up, in poorly provided hospitals, and the mortality from sickness became very large. Nearly every house in all this sparsely settled country was converted into a hospital, and hospital tents, filled with sick men, were pitched all along the roads to the rear of the armies. Supply trains could not reach the camps, and so for weeks the army was on short and poor rations, and the men, many of them from cities and towns, and most of them unused to exposure and accustomed to all the comforts of good homes, were here forced to pass through an ordeal more trying than that of constant fighting; but they bore all this with uncomplaining courage, wondering why they were not led to action when they could see, from their camps, those of the enemy but a day's march away. On the 1st of September the weather conditions changed, and the dry and hot weather of the early autumn succeeded, with storms at intervals, but the roads became drier so the army could be concentrated and supplies for a few days ahead be gathered at the camps.

The topographical engineer of the army, Capt. Jed Hotchkiss, having completed a detailed map of Tygart's valley, from Valley mountain to Huttonsville, and other arrangements perfected, Loring at last yielded to Lee's urgency for an advance, and on the 8th of September issued confidential orders for a simultaneous movement

by the Huntersville line on the enemy's camp at Elkwater, some 16 miles in front of Valley mountain, and by the Monterey line on that on Cheat mountain, some 12 miles from the Confederate camp on Greenbrier river. The two Federal camps were about 7 miles apart by a bridle path, and 17 miles by the circuitous turnpike roads.

Before divulging his plan of campaign, General Loring (doubtless by the advice of General Lee, who knew the advantages of organization), on the 8th of September issued general orders No. 10, brigading the army of the Northwest as follows: The First brigade, under Brig.-Gen. H. R. Jackson, to consist of the Twelfth Georgia, Third Arkansas, Thirty-first and Fifty-second Virginia, the Ninth Virginia battalion, the Danville, Va., artillery, and Jackson, Va., cavalry; the Second brigade, under Brig.-Gen. S. R. Anderson, to consist of the First, Seventh and Fourteenth Tennessee, Hampden artillery and Alexander's cavalry; the Third brigade, under Brig.-Gen. D. S. Donelson, to consist of the Eighth and Sixteenth Tennessee, the First and Fourteenth Georgia, and the Greenbrier, Va., cavalry; the Fourth brigade, under Col. William Gilham, to consist of the Twenty-first Virginia, Sixth North Carolina, First battalion of Confederate States provisional army, and the Troup artillery; the Fifth brigade, under Col. William B. Taliaferro, to consist of the Twenty-third, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-seventh and Forty-fourth Virginia, and Rice's and the Lee Virginia batteries; the Sixth brigade, under Col. J. S. Burks, to consist of the Forty-second and Forty-eighth Virginia and Lee's Virginia cavalry. A section of the Hampden artillery was assigned to the Third brigade, and one from the Troup artillery to the Sixth brigade, for field service. Of these six brigades, the Second, Third, Fourth and Sixth formed the Huntersville division, under the immediate command of General Loring; while the First and Fifth formed the Monterey division, under the immediate command of Gen. H. R. Jackson, the command of his own brigade devolving on Col. Albert Rust, of the Third Arkansas.

The Federal force in front of Loring at this time was the "First brigade of the army of Occupation of West Virginia," commanded by Brig.-Gen. Joseph J. Reynolds, with headquarters at Elkwater. The official

returns for October, 1861, give this brigade, present for duty, 377 officers, 10,421 men, and 26 pieces of artillery, stationed at Beverly, Elkwater and Cheat mountain. There are no official returns of the Confederate strength. Long, who was in a position to know, in his *Memoirs of R. E. Lee*, states that Loring's force was 6,000 and Jackson's 5,000; and that Reynolds had 2,000 in front of Jackson and 5,000 in front of Loring. So the opposing armies were about equal in strength, were both led by old army officers, and composed of the choice men of each nation. The Federals had the great advantage of fighting from behind well-located and properly constructed fortifications, and were in comfortable camps.

On the 8th of September, General Lee communicated, confidentially, his plan of campaign for the capture of the Federal positions in his front, to begin the night of September 11th and be carried into effect by assault on the Cheat mountain fortress and attack on Elkwater camp on the morning of the 12th. General Reynolds' headquarters and most of his force were at Elkwater, 2,200 feet above tide, 11 miles due north from Loring's headquarters and the camp of the larger part of his force, at Valley mountain. It was 8 miles due east from the Elkwater camp to that on Cheat mountain, and about the same distance by a very direct bridle path, for most of the way; but it was 17 miles between the two by turnpike roads to the rear by way of Huttonsville. From Loring's camp at Valley mountain, 3,500 feet above the sea level, it was 15 miles northeast, in a direct line across numerous ridges of the densely forested Cheat mountain chain, to Jackson's camp on the Greenbrier, 3,000 feet above tide, on the Monterey line. By the nearest wagon road between the two wings of the Confederate army it was nearly 30 miles, by the rear, toward Huntersville; and by the shortest line of communication, by bridle paths, it was fully 20 miles between the two camps. A single road, the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, led from Jackson's camp some 14 miles westward to the Federal camp on Cheat mountain. Two good roads led from the front of Loring's camp to the Federal intrenched camp at Elkwater. One of these, the turnpike to Huttonsville, followed the Tygart valley river; the other, after crossing a divide to the westward, led down the Elkwater branch of Valley river to the Federal camp at its

mouth. By connected farm roads and bridle paths, there was a continuous route for infantry along or near a bench of fertile limestone land that shouldered out from the western side of the western Cheat mountain, by which, unobserved, the turnpike road from Monterey to Huttonsville could be reached on the top of that mountain, and communication cut between the two wings of the Federal army, some 3 miles west of the Cheat mountain fortress. These several ways of approach regulated the Confederate plan for a simultaneous attack.

Lee's first objective was the capture of the Federal garrison on the middle Cheat mountain, some 4,000 feet above the sea level. To effect this, Jackson was ordered to march an assaulting column of at least 2,000 men under Col. Albert Rust, of the Third Arkansas (who had asked to lead it, after an examination of the position), on the night of the 11th, along the turnpike to the first top of Cheat or Back Alleghany mountain, and then, at Slaven's cabin, turn to the left, by paths and through the forest and across the Main or Shaver fork of Cheat river, so as to turn the right of the Federal position and attack it, if possible, by surprise, and carry it by assault at dawn of the 12th. Jackson in person, with the remainder of his command, except a guard left at his camp, was to follow Rust, during the night of the 11th, and after the latter had left the turnpike to continue along that to the front of the Federal position, and be ready to make a demonstration or join in the attack when Rust should make his assault on the morning of the 12th. If the assault should be successful, Jackson was to leave a force to hold the captured redoubt, and, with the remainder of his army, press on to join in the attack on the left rear of the Elkwater position. The men were all to be provided with strips of white cotton cloth, to be fastened on the arm as badges, so they could recognize and not fire on each other when the attacking columns converged in co-operation.

The co-operating force under Loring was also to move on the 11th. General Anderson, with his brigade in light marching order, was to march along the byways and bridle paths on the western slope of Cheat mountain, carefully concealing his movements, during that day and the following night, so as to get possession of the turnpike, on the western top of Cheat mountain, at about

daylight of the 12th, cut the telegraph wire connecting the Federal camps, break the line of communication, and so dispose of his men as to keep back reinforcements from the Elkwater camp; guard against attack from the fort, and aid in the assault of Rust's column, if necessary, on the Cheat mountain stronghold. He was especially charged to so regulate and conceal his movements as not to interfere with the surprise of the enemy by Colonel Rust, with whose left he would seek connection. His route, 20 or more miles in length, was a difficult one, but he was well guided by Dr. Butcher, a loyal practicing physician, who knew that region well. His home was at Huttonsville, and he had retired with the Confederate forces after the battle of Rich Mountain.

General Donelson, with his brigade, was to advance by byways along the eastern side of Tygart's valley and the foot of Cheat mountain, seizing the paths and roads leading to the turnpike from that direction, and driving back any endeavor of the enemy to retard the advance of the center along the turnpike. Such of the artillery as could not be used on the flanks was to follow the turnpike, supported by Munford's battalion and followed by part of Gilham's brigade. The brigade of Colonel Burks was to march across to the Elkwater road and follow that, as the left wing of the advance, guarding that flank, having Lee's cavalry on its flank and rear and ready to make an attack on the enemy's outposts if opportunity should offer. The supply trains were to follow along the main road. On the 9th General Jackson issued orders from Greenbrier river that the brigades of Rust and Fulkerson should draw four days' rations of salt meat and hard bread; similar orders were issued by Loring.

After the plan of campaign had been adopted and the date for its inception been fixed, General Lee from "Headquarters of the Forces," Valley mountain, W. Va., September 9, 1861, issued the following stirring special order:

The forward movement announced to the army of the Northwest in special orders, No. 28, from its headquarters, of this date, gives the general commanding the opportunity of exhorting the troops to keep steadily in view the great principles for which they contend, and to manifest to the world their determination to maintain them. The eyes of the country are upon you. The safety of your homes and the lives of all you hold dear depend upon your courage and exertions. Let each man resolve to be victorious, and that the right of self-government, liberty and peace shall in him find a defender. The progress of this army must be forward.

On the 9th, General Lee wrote confidentially to Gen. John B. Floyd, commanding the army of the Kanawha:

Great efforts have been made to place this column in marching condition. Although the roads are continuous tracks of mud, in which the wagons plunge to their axles, I hope the forces can be united, with a few days' supply of provisions, so as to move forward on Thursday, the 12th instant. I therefore advise you of the probability that on your part you may be prepared to take advantage of it, and if circumstances render it advisable, to act on your side.

On the 8th, Reynolds sent a strong detachment to reconnoiter Loring's front and learn what was going on in his camp. In the early morning of the 9th these encountered Loring's pickets, 4 miles in his front at Marshall's store, in a lively skirmish, in which several were killed on both sides. The Federals then retired to Conrad's store, where a large advance guard was established.

On the morning of the 11th, Lee's forward movement began by the successive marching of Loring's four columns, as provided in the plan of attack. The central column, that moving down by the Huttonsville turnpike, which Lee and Loring accompanied, routed the Federal outpost at Conrad's store, some 8 miles in front. The Federal pickets fell back toward Elkwater, contending all the way with Loring's advance.

Jackson's men marched that night, and all the preliminary movements of the campaign were promptly and admirably executed, notwithstanding the rough topography and other difficulties of the various lines of march and the cold and heavy rain that began during the night, which not only increased the darkness, in the remarkably dense forest through which Rust had to make his way, but swelled the cold waters of the many tributaries of Cheat river, and that river itself, which his column had to cross and even to march in. Each of the co-operating commands was at its appointed place before the dawn of September 12th, and the enemy had not discovered their movements. Generals Lee and Loring, with the brigades of Gilham and Burks and the artillery and cavalry, were in the near front and on the right of the Elkwater camp; Donelson had gained its left and left rear, capturing a regiment there on picket guarding that flank and the way to Cheat mountain; Anderson was on the turnpike, on the western top of Cheat, had cut the telegraph, and was in position to block the coming of reinforcements from Elkwater, or an attack from the

Cheat mountain fort; Rust had overcome the almost insurmountable difficulties of his march through the forest, which his men had courageously endured, and had his command in front of the right of the Cheat mountain fortress, on the same ridge, and in the road in its rear, and was ready for the assault; while Jackson was in position near Cheat river, in the immediate front of the frowning redoubts. All were anxiously awaiting the opening of the fire of Rust's assault as the signal for a general attack, but the dawn came and passed, and no sound was heard from Cheat mountain.

Early on the morning of the 12th, Col. Nathan Kimball, of the Fourteenth Indiana, who was in command of the Federals on Cheat mountain, started a supply wagon train toward the Elkwater camp. About three-quarters of a mile from his camp, that train was attacked by the left of Rust's command, which had gained his rear. Informed of this, Kimball at once took two companies to drive away the attacking party, supposing it to be merely a scout. He deployed his men as skirmishers, and they advanced and developed the presence of Rust in force. Kimball claims that his force, by a vigorous fire, drove away the Confederates, who "threw aside guns, clothing and everything that impeded their progress." At the same time Kimball sent forward a strong detail to open the way to his picket on the path leading to Elkwater, which, without his knowing it, had been cut off by Anderson. This detail met Anderson's force, on the western Cheat mountain, nearly 3 miles from the Federal camp and joined in an engagement which, Kimball claims, drove the Confederates back, aided by the picket which had been cut off but now came up and attacked Anderson's rear.

At this juncture Kimball was informed that the Confederates were in his front, to the east of his camp, and had captured a picket of 35 men; and that his two companies that had attacked Rust's left were driving him to the Federal right flank. Kimball then advanced a strong force from his front to move up Cheat river and fall on Rust's right, 2 miles above the bridge, which he says forced Rust to retreat. Kimball claimed that he was attacked by nearly 5,500 men, which he engaged and repulsed with less than 300. His report of the 14th concludes: "I think my men have done wonders, and ask

God to bless them. The woods are literally covered with the baggage, coats and haversacks of the enemy. Though almost naked, my command is ready to move forward." Reynolds, who had been taken by surprise by Lee's advance, says in his official report: "So matters rested at dark on the 12th, with heavy forces in front and in plain sight of both posts, communication cut off, and the supply train for the mountains loaded with provisions that were needed."

Colonel Rust, at 10 p. m. of September 13th, wrote to General Loring from Camp Bartow, to which he had returned, in obedience to undated instructions from Gen. H. R. Jackson, which read:

Dear Colonel: Return into camp with your command. So soon as you arrive, address a letter to General Loring, explaining the failure and the reasons of it. Show this to Captain Neill, quartermaster, and let him at once furnish an express ready to take your letter by the near route. If possible, get the postmaster, Mr. Arbogast, to go, and go rapidly and at once. Say in your letter that I am in possession of the first summit of Cheat mountain, and in hopes of something going on in Tygart's valley, and shall retain command of it until I receive orders from headquarters. It may bring on an engagement, but I am prepared, and shall whip them if they come.

P. S.—I cannot write here. Enclose this scrawl in your own letter. You had better return yourself at once to camp, leaving your command to follow. We had several skirmishes yesterday and killed several of the enemy.

It appears, from this letter, that General Jackson wrote it on the morning of the 13th, after hearing from Rust of the failure of his movement; that Rust, on receipt of it, returned to his old camp, followed by his command, which probably reached there some time during the night of the 13th. Rust's letter to Loring reads:

The expedition against Cheat mountain failed. My command consisted of between 1,500 and 1,600 men. Got there at the appointed time, notwithstanding the rain. Seized a number of their pickets and scouts. Learned from them that the enemy was between 4,000 and 5,000 strong, and they reported them to be strongly fortified. Upon a reconnoissance, their representations were fully corroborated—a fort or block-house on the point or elbow of the road, intrenchments on the south, and outside of the intrenchments and all around up to the road heavy and impassable abatis, if enemy were not behind them. Colonel Barton, my lieutenant-colonel and all the field officers declared it would be madness to make an attack. We learned from the prisoners they were aware of your movements, and had been telegraphed for reinforcements, and I heard three pieces of artillery pass down toward your encampment while we were seeking to make an assault upon them.

I took the assistant commissary, and for one regiment I found

upon his person a requisition for 930 rations; also a letter indicating they had very little subsistence. I brought only one prisoner back with me. The cowardice of the guard (not Arkansan) permitted the others to escape. Spies had evidently communicated our movements to the enemy. The fort was completed, as reported by the different prisoners examined separately, and another in process of construction. We got near enough to see the enemy in the trenches beyond the abatis. The most of my command behaved admirably. Some I would prefer to be without upon any expedition.

General Jackson requests me to say that he is in possession of the first summit of Cheat mountain, and hopes you are doing something in Tygart's valley, and will retain command of it until he receives orders from your quarters. My own opinion is, that there is nothing to be gained by occupying that mountain. It will take a heavy force to take the pass, and at a heavy loss. I knew the enemy had four times my force; but for the abatis we would have made the assault. We could not get to them to make it. The general says in his note to me, his occupying Cheat mountain may bring on an engagement, but he is prepared, and will whip them if they come. I see from the postscript that he requests his note to me to be enclosed to you. I can only say that all human power could do toward success in my expedition failed of success. The taking of the picket looked like a providential interposition. I took the first one myself, being at the head of the column when I got to the road.

General Lee held his positions in Tygart's valley on the 12th and 13th and during a portion of the 14th, awaiting information from Rust, which he received through the preceding letter, on the morning of the 14th, after which he issued the following special order:

Camp on Valley River, Va., September 14, 1861.

The forced reconnoissance of the enemy's positions, both at Cheat mountain pass and on Valley river, having been completed, and the character of the natural approaches and the nature of the artificial defenses exposed, the army of the Northwest will resume its former position at such time and in such manner as General Loring shall direct, and continue its preparations for further operations. The commanding general experienced much gratification at the cheerfulness and alacrity displayed by the troops in this arduous operation. The promptitude with which they surmounted every difficulty, driving in and capturing the enemy's pickets on the fronts examined and exhibiting that readiness for attack, gives assurance of victory when a fit opportunity offers.

R. E. LEE, General Commanding.

Gen. A. L. Long, in his Memoirs, referring to Colonel Rust's attack of September 12th, writes:

It was anxiously expected from early dawn throughout the day. On every side was continuously heard, "What has become of Rust?" "Why don't he attack?" "Rust must have lost his way!" The Tennesseans under Anderson became so impatient that they requested to be led to the attack without waiting for Rust. But Anderson thought that he must be governed by the letter of his instruc-

tions, and declined granting the request of his men. . . . Anderson and Donelson, finding that their situation was becoming critical, being liable to discovery and being between two superior forces, rejoined Loring on the 13th.

Colonel Rust's letter to General Loring plainly shows (notwithstanding the fact that he had himself, after an examination of the Federal position on Cheat mountain, advised General Lee to make the attack, as planned, and had requested, as a personal favor, that he might lead it with his own regiment and such other troops as might be assigned to him) that his courage failed him when he came in sight of the fortifications on Cheat mountain, and that he, unwisely, "took counsel of his fears" by giving heed to the exaggerated statements of the Federal prisoners, and did not even make an effort to attack, or an attempt to carry the position by assault. He makes no mention of having gained the road in the rear of the Federal position, or of having had an engagement there, as Colonel Kimball reports, which first revealed his presence. The meager Federal reports clearly indicate that his movement had not been discovered; that his presence was a complete surprise, and that if he had made a bold assault at the appointed time, he would, undoubtedly, have captured the Federal stronghold, and that the combined attack that would then have been made on the Elkwater camp would have completely routed the rest of the Federal army and given to General Lee's able plan of campaign a great victory—one that would have yielded most important results in northwestern Virginia, changed the condition of State affairs in that direction, and had a most important bearing upon subsequent military operations. The very men then led by Rust, later on assaulted and captured far more formidable works.

After issuing his special order of September 14th, General Lee returned to Valley mountain, and the two wings of the army of the Northwest returned to their previous encampments. Although deeply mortified at the failure of his campaign, General Lee did not complain of those who were the cause of it; then, as afterward, when campaigns upon a grander scale were partial failures, he either said nothing, or assumed that he himself was responsible for results.

From Valley mountain, on the 17th of September, he wrote to Governor Letcher:

I was very sanguine of taking the enemy's works on last Thursday morning. I had considered the subject well. With great effort the troops intended for the surprise had reached their destination, having traversed 20 miles of steep, rugged mountain paths, and the last day through a terrible storm, which lasted all night and in which they had to stand drenched to the skin in the cold rain. Still, their spirits were good. When the morning broke, I could see the enemy's tents on Valley river at the point on the Huttonsville road just below me. It was a tempting sight. We waited for the attack on Cheat mountain, which was to be the signal, till 10 a. m.; the men (Federals) were cleaning their unserviceable arms. But the signal did not come. All chance for surprise was gone. The provisions of the men had been destroyed the preceding day by the storm. They had nothing to eat that morning, could not hold out another day, and were obliged to be withdrawn. The party sent to Cheat mountain to take that in the rear had also to be withdrawn. The attack to come off from the east side failed from the difficulties of the way; the opportunity was lost and our plan discovered. It is a grievous disappointment to me, I assure you. But for the rain-storm I have no doubt but that it would have succeeded. This, Governor, is for your own eye. Please do not speak of it; we must try again.

Our greatest loss is the death of my dear friend, Colonel Washington. He and my son were reconnoitering the front of the enemy. They came unawares upon a concealed party, who fired upon them within 20 yards, and the colonel fell pierced by three balls. My son's horse received three shots, but he escaped on the colonel's horse. His zeal for the cause to which he had devoted himself carried him, I fear, too far.

We took some 70 prisoners and killed some 25 or 30 of the enemy. Our loss was small besides what I have mentioned. Our present difficulty is the roads. It has been raining in these mountains about six weeks. It is impossible to get along. It is that which has paralyzed all our efforts.

This "forced reconnoissance" made known to General Lee that only Reynolds' brigade was in Loring's front, and that Rosecrans had stolen away with the larger part of his command. When he returned to Valley mountain, on the 15th of September, he had report from Floyd of the engagement at Carnifax Ferry, on the 10th, and learned what had become of Rosecrans. Apprehensive that the bickerings of Floyd and Wise on the Kanawha line would lead to further disasters, now that Rosecrans had added his force to that of Cox, Lee left Valley mountain, about the 19th, and hastened to that line by way of Marlinton and Lewisburg.

On the 14th, Loring made demonstrations on Reynolds at Elkwater, then, late in the day, retired to Conrad's at Valley Head, where he halted during the 15th, hoping that the enemy would follow and attack him. As he did

not come, Loring marched late that night toward his old camp at Valley mountain, which he reached early in the morning of the 16th. Jackson remained in front of the Cheat mountain redoubt on the 14th and 15th, threatening to attack, especially on the 15th, when he made a demonstration on the Federal left; after which, at night, he returned to his Greenbrier river camp.

Shortly after General Lee left Valley mountain he sent back orders to Loring to send reinforcements to Floyd. Loring was very ill, and the doctor would not allow him to be disturbed. A council of brigade and regimental commanders was called, that decided that the army should march at once for the relief of Floyd, leaving Gilham's brigade to cover the movement and take care of the 1,500 sick that were then in and near the camp. The march began promptly, and Gilham addressed himself to the hard task of removing the sick, the stores and his brigade equipage to Huntersville over nearly impassable roads. The division quartermaster failed to furnish sufficient transportation before the Federals appeared, the last of September, in full force, in his front and drove in his pickets. He made dispositions to repel an attack during a torrent-like downpour of rain. Early the next morning Gilham retired from Valley mountain toward Huntersville, taking his remaining sick and such stores as he had transportation for and destroying the remainder. The Federals did not follow.

After the withdrawal of the larger part of the army of the Northwest to the Kanawha line, the opposing forces on the Staunton-Beverly line remained quiet, mainly because of the condition of the almost impassable roads and of the constant rains; the Federal forces in their Cheat mountain and Elkwater fortifications, and at Huttonsville and Beverly on their line of communication toward Grafton; and the Monterey division of the Confederate forces at Camp Bartow, on the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, in the valley of the Greenbrier, 12 miles east from the Federal fortress on Cheat mountain, and on the Huntersville and Beverly line at Valley mountain, with detachments on the road to its base of supplies at Millboro depot.

The portion of the army of the Northwest left on the line leading to Beverly was in command of Brig.-Gen. Henry R. Jackson, with headquarters at Camp Bartow.

The force at that camp consisted of the Third Arkansas, the First and Twelfth Georgia, the Twenty-third, Thirty-first and Forty-fourth Virginia regiments, the Twenty-fifth and Ninth Virginia battalions, the Virginia batteries of Shumaker and Anderson, and Sterrett's Churchville, Va., cavalry; while in its rear, near the summit of Alleghany mountain, guarding its flank and line of communication to Staunton, was the Fifty-second Virginia, under Col. John B. Baldwin. The morning report of October 2d showed that this command had about 1,800 men for duty. The left of General Jackson's command, on the Huntersville and Beverly line, was composed of the Twenty-first Virginia, under Col. William Gilham, located at Valley mountain and guarding that approach to Huntersville, with the Thirty-seventh Virginia, under Col. S. V. Fulkerson, in his rear guarding the line of communication to Millboro depot and Jackson's left flank.

At midnight of October 2d, Brig.-Gen. J. J. Reynolds, with 5,000 Federal troops of all arms, marched from his Cheat mountain fortress along the Staunton and Parkersburn turnpike to make, as the Federal commander reports, "an armed reconnoissance of the enemy's position on Greenbrier river 12 miles in advance." His force was composed of nine regiments of Ohio and Indiana infantry, two and a half batteries of artillery, and three companies of cavalry, all with four days' cooked rations in their haversacks. The numbers of the attacking column and the provision of rations indicate, very clearly, that the object in view was more than a mere reconnoissance. The leader was doubtless fully informed as to the numbers and disposition of the opposing Confederate forces, and knew that a large portion of the army of the Northwest had been withdrawn to the Kanawha line. It was, evidently, his intention to attempt to drive the Confederates from Camp Bartow and pursue them toward Staunton, and thus secure for himself an advanced position for better winter quarters, either on Alleghany mountain or farther to the east, and get in more direct communication with the Federal force in the valley of the South Branch of the Potomac; or, having driven the Confederates from their partially constructed works and which they were actively engaged in completing, to move down the Greenbrier and fall upon the rear of Fulkerson and Gilham, on the Huntersville line,

and so open that route for an advance from Tygart's valley to threaten the Virginia Central railroad.

About daylight of the 3d, the Federal advance, a whole regiment, drove in the Confederate pickets near the eastern foot of Cheat mountain and followed them across the valley of the Greenbrier to within a mile of Camp Bartow, where it encountered, at about 7 a. m., the grand guard of about 100 men, under Col. Edward Johnson, of the Twelfth Georgia, admirably posted. This small force stubbornly resisted and held the Federals in check for nearly an hour, and did not yield its position until Reynolds deployed a second regiment to move on its right flank and opened six guns on its left; it then withdrew, still skirmishing, in good order, to the main line. This well-managed skirmish, the opening of a brilliant career for its then unknown commander, dampened the ardor of the Federal advance, but encouraged the small Confederate force which had it in full view from the line of its intrenchments on the foot of the western slope of the Alleghany mountain, and aroused their enthusiasm as they repeatedly cheered its successful resistance.

The Confederate intrenchments, which were in process of construction but as yet very incomplete, fronted the south fork of the Greenbrier, on each side of the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike as that descends the western slope of Alleghany mountain to Yeager's, a wayside inn on the bank of the river. The center of this position was held by the brigade of Col. William B. Taliaferro, consisting of his Twenty-third Virginia, Col. William C. Scott's Forty-fourth Virginia, the Twenty-fifth Virginia battalion under Capt. John C. Higginbotham, and Shumaker's battery of four guns, one of these under Rice. At about 8 a. m., Reynolds deployed in front of this center a large body of infantry with two batteries, and opened on Taliaferro with a vigorous and persistent artillery fire. As this produced no effect except to draw a sharp and well-directed reply from Shumaker's guns, Reynolds, at about 9:30, moved a strong column from the woods, in which his main body was concealed, to turn Jackson's left. This column crossed the narrow valley and the shallow South Fork and assaulted the Confederate left, under Colonel Rust, who held it with his Third Arkansas, Col. William L. Jackson's Thirty-first Virginia, the Ninth Virginia battalion under Capt. J. A. Robertson, and

Anderson's two field guns. These met the assault from their intrenchments along the road leading to Green Bank, and drove it back in confusion and with loss. Two Federal guns opened spitefully upon Rust after this, but met with a vigorous response from Anderson.

While keeping up this artillery fire upon the Confederate left and center, Reynolds organized an assault, with the larger portion of his command, upon the Confederate right, which was held by Col. Edward Johnson with his First Georgia, Col. J. N. Ramsey's Twelfth Georgia, and Capt. F. F. Sterrett's Churchville, Va., cavalry. Watching this movement as it defiled along the edge of the woods on the steep hill bordering the west bank of the river, in his front, Jackson directed Johnson to advance the Twelfth Georgia regiment to the immediate bank of the South Fork, to reinforce its line of skirmishers which was engaged in a desultory fire which harassed the Federal column as it advanced; these having the advantage of position opened a galling fire on the enemy. At the same time Shumaker opened two of his guns on the woods, through which the Federal column was advancing, with such effect, as General Jackson reports, "that in a short time the unmistakable evidence of their rout became apparent. Distinctly could their officers be heard, with words of mingled command, remonstrance and entreaty, attempting to rally their battalions into line and to bring them to the charge; but they could not be induced to reform their broken ranks, nor to emerge from the cover of the woods in the direction of our fire. Rapidly and in disorder they returned into the turnpike, and soon thereafter the entire force of the enemy—artillery, infantry and cavalry—retreated in confusion along the road and adjacent fields, leaving behind them, at different points, numbers of their killed, guns, knapsacks, canteens, etc. Among other trophies taken was a stand of United States colors." This engagement lasted from 7 in the morning to 2:30 in the afternoon. The Confederate loss was 6 killed, 33 wounded and 13 missing; an aggregate of 52. The Federal loss was 8 killed and 36 wounded; an aggregate of 43. Colonel Baldwin with the Fifty-second, who had been ordered from the rear, came up with his command just at the close of the engagement.

General Reynolds says in his report: "We disabled

three of the enemy's guns, made a thorough reconnoissance, and, after having fully and successfully accomplished the object of this expedition, retired leisurely and in good order to Cheat mountain, arriving at sundown, having marched 24 miles and been under the enemy's fire four hours. The enemy's force was about 9,000, and we distinctly saw heavy reinforcements of infantry and artillery arrive while we were in front of the works." Reynolds did not disable any of the Confederate guns. A ball stuck in one of them so it could not be rammed down, and that was retired. Captain Shumaker managed his guns with rare skill. They were without the protection of epaulements, so he constantly shifted them whenever the enemy obtained their range and when he could employ them to more advantage in firing on the Federal column, as his guns were all of short range, while most of theirs were of long range.

The secretary of war, under date of October 12th, wrote to General Jackson: "I congratulate both yourself and the officers and men under your command for your brilliant conduct on this occasion and your successful defense of the important position held by you against a force so superior. The President joins me in the expression of the satisfaction we both feel in finding our confidence in you and your command so fully justified."

On the 30th of September the Confederate force under Colonel Gilham evacuated Valley mountain, and on October 2d took position on Elk mountain, where it remained until after the battle of Greenbrier River. After that it fell back to Marlin's bottom (now Marlinton), on the Greenbrier, where it threw up fortifications and remained until late in November, when that portion of the army of the Northwest, with the exception of the cavalry left at Huntersville, was withdrawn and sent to Winchester, to Gen. T. J. Jackson, who had, on the 4th of November, assumed command of the Valley district, which embraced Alleghany mountain.

On the 21st of November, Gen. H. R. Jackson evacuated Camp Bartow and retired to the summit of Alleghany mountain, leaving only cavalry at Camp Bartow to scout the enemy's front. On the 22d, from his camp on the mountain, General Jackson ordered Col. Edward Johnson, of the Twelfth Georgia, to take command of the garrison on the summit of the mountain, to consist of the

Twelfth Georgia, the Thirty-first, Fifty-second and Twenty-fifth Virginia regiments and the Ninth Virginia battalion, Flournoy's company of Virginia cavalry, and Anderson's and Miller's Virginia batteries, and at once entering upon the duties of his command, take "the necessary steps to insure the safety and comfort of his troops." The Forty-fourth Virginia and a section of Rice's battery, located on the road to Monterey, were made part of his command. Previous to that time, on the 18th of October, General Jackson had ordered the construction of huts on the top of Alleghany mountain within lines of fortification, laid out under the direction of Lieut.-Col. Seth M. Barton, of the Third Arkansas. These were gladly occupied by Johnson's men, who had been suffering from the inclemency of the season. The same orders directed Col. William B. Taliaferro to take command at Monterey with the First Georgia, the Third Arkansas and the Twenty-third and Thirty-seventh Virginia, with cavalry to scout down the branches of the Potomac toward Petersburg and Moorefield.

At about the time of the withdrawal of the Confederate troops to Alleghany mountain, General Reynolds resigned the command of the Cheat Mountain district of the Federal army to Brig.-Gen. R. H. Milroy. At about the same time General Kelley was placed in command of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad district, and with a Federal force moved up the South Branch valley and took possession of Romney, thus threatening the line of communication from Alleghany mountain to Staunton, since Monterey, in that valley and on that line, was but 70 miles, by a good road, from Romney. Kelley asked McClellan for 10,000 men, saying that with these he could go up the South Branch valley and, falling on the rebels, "utterly destroyed their whole force at Monterey and Greenbrier." Pierpoint, the bogus governor of Virginia, also urged the same thing, saying that a combined movement by Reynolds and Kelley would "bag all the rebels on Cheat mountain." (He meant Alleghany mountain; being mixed in his geography.)

Ambitious of winning reputation on the line to Staunton on which his predecessor had signally failed at Greenbrier river, Milroy, without waiting for co-operation with Kelley, and doubtless informed, through his numerous traitorous West Virginia spies and deserters from the army of

the Northwest, that the larger portion of the Confederate force which had been on the line of the Greenbrier had been withdrawn toward Staunton, and that there only remained the small brigade of Col. Edward Johnson on the summit of Alleghany mountain, 14 miles east from the Greenbrier river and about the same distance west from Monterey, planned an attack upon Johnson, who was now left in command, Gen. H. R. Jackson having been relieved; and for this purpose collected all the troops in his district, from Belington, Beverly, Hutonsville and Elkwater, and joined them with those at Cheat mountain, making a command of about 5,000 men of all arms. With these he marched from Cheat mountain fortress very early in the morning of December 12th to attack Camp Alleghany.

On that same 12th of December, Colonel Johnson sent out a scouting party of 106 men under Maj. J. D. H. Ross, of the Fifty-second Virginia, with instructions to ambuscade a point on the turnpike beyond Camp Bartow, and, if possible, by a demonstration with a few of his men, draw the Federals into it. His pickets were near Slaven's cabin, near the top of the eastern Cheat mountain, when Milroy's advance appeared. These retired and drew that into the ambuscade, where it received a deadly volley from Ross' command. Milroy at once deployed in force and advanced upon the scouting party, but these, in the meantime, retired, and reaching Camp Alleghany about dark, reported the Federal advance and thus gave Colonel Johnson opportunity to make preparation to meet it.

Colonel Johnson's command of about 1,200 men at Camp Alleghany consisted of his own regiment, the Twelfth Georgia under Lieut.-Col. Z. T. Conner, the Thirty-first Virginia under Maj. F. M. Boykin, Jr., two companies of the Fifty-second Virginia under Maj. J. D. H. Ross, the Ninth Virginia battalion under Lieut.-Col. G. W. Hansbrough, the Twenty-fifth Virginia battalion under Maj. A. J. Reger, and eight 6-pounders of the Lee battery under Capt. P. B. Anderson and the Rock-bridge battery under Capt. John Miller. After the close of the engagement the Forty-fourth Virginia arrived, but did not become engaged. The Federal force was made up of the Ninth and Thirteenth Indiana, the Twenty-fifth and Thirty-second Ohio, the Second West Virginia

and a squadron of cavalry, in so far as can be ascertained, as there are no published reports but from one colonel.

About 4 o'clock on the morning of the 13th the Confederate pickets fired on the Federals coming up the mountain. Aroused by this, Colonel Johnson at once turned out the whole of his command and placed it in position to meet an attack. The Ninth and Twenty-fifth Virginia battalions and the Thirty-first Virginia were ordered to the crest of the mountain on the right, to guard against approach from that quarter. No defenses had been thrown up on that ridge. Some fields, with stumps and felled timber beyond, reached this crest of the mountain. A portion of the enemy, led by a Union man from western Virginia who was familiar with the locality, turned to the left about a mile down the turnpike and reached the field in front of Johnson's right by a trail which led into a road coming into a field near his rear. Hansborough's pickets discovered this approach and reported the enemy coming in strong force. They advanced, some 2,000 men, in line of battle at about 7:15 a. m. and promptly opened a terrific musketry fire, which was bravely responded to by the 300 Confederates on the crest of the ridge. As soon as this firing began, Johnson ordered two companies of the Twelfth Georgia, that had been posted about a quarter of a mile down the turnpike, to move to the support of the right; he also sent three other companies, from the same indomitable regiment, to join in holding this important position against such great odds. The Georgians gallantly moved up and lengthened the line on its left, receiving a hot fire from the enemy from behind the fallen trees and the standing stumps on the opposite side of the field in front. The Federals had, in the meantime, forced back the extreme Confederate right, but when the Georgians came up with a shout, those who had so well held the field rallied and moved upon the enemy at the same time. This brave dash was, for a time, checked by the Federals from the strong positions which they held behind the stumps and the fallen timber, but it was not driven back. It steadily advanced, cheered by its officers, who fought side by side with their men and led them on to the conflict. General Johnson reports: "I never witnessed harder fighting; the enemy, behind trees, with their long range arms, at first had decidedly the advantage, but our men soon came up

to them and drove them from their cover. I cannot speak in terms too exaggerated of the unflinching courage and dashing gallantry of those 500 men who contended, from 7:15 a. m. until 1:45 p. m., against an immensely superior force of the enemy, and finally drove them from their positions and pursued them a mile or more down the mountain." The losses on this wing were severe in killed and wounded, among both officers and men; it could not be otherwise where such brave fighting was done.

The left of General Johnson's position had been entrenched and there were posted Anderson's and Miller's eight guns and the troops that were first turned out in the morning—the Twelfth Georgia, the Fifty-second Virginia, and Dabney's Pittsylvania cavalry, dismounted, with carbines. About a half hour after the attack on Johnson's right, a heavy column of the enemy, led by a traitor well acquainted with the locality, approached this position by a road running along a leading ridge and toward the left of the trenches. The enemy were evidently surprised to find an intrenchment in their front, as they hesitated in approaching. Captain Anderson, as they came in sight, mistook them for Confederate pickets coming in, and rode forward telling his comrades not to fire. The Federals instantly fired a volley in which this brave soldier of three wars and many battles fell mortally wounded. The Confederates quickly responded, and their galling fire soon drove the enemy back into the brush and fallen timber, from which they kept up a constant fire which was returned with spirit, by both infantry and artillery, especially by the latter, which, stung by the death of their loved leader, poured shot and shell among them, making their position untenable and driving them from the combat, in which they were assisted by the force on the right which General Johnson drew to the left after the enemy had been repulsed from that portion of the field. The enemy fled from this combined assault and retreated down the mountain in great confusion, leaving their dead and wounded and the debacle of their retreat behind them.

Colonel Johnson concluded his official report of this engagement, dated December 19th, by saying: "Although we have reason to be thankful to God for the victory achieved over our enemies on this occasion, we can but

lament the loss of many valuable lives. Our casualties amounted to 20 killed, 96 wounded and 28 missing. Many of the missing have returned since the day of battle." In a report of December 15th, he wrote: "The enemy were totally routed and acknowledged they had been badly whipped. They were heard to accuse their officers of deceiving them, insisting that our numbers were largely superior to their own. They were much demoralized, and I hope they have received a good lesson."

The Official Records contain no report from General Milroy concerning this engagement, but the official return of Federal casualties gives 20 killed, 107 wounded and 10 missing; total, 137.

Any account of the battle of Alleghany Mountain that fails to make mention of the grandly heroic leadership of Col. Edward Johnson in that memorable engagement, fails to give prominence to the most important factor in the winning of such a decided victory over so large an attacking enemy. The men in Johnson's command were the very pick and flower of Southern soldiery. Those in the Twelfth Georgia were the best that "Empire State" of the South could furnish. The Virginia regiments were made up of the picked men from northwestern Virginia and from the Great Valley. With such men and a brave and dashing commander, success in a contest was almost certain against a large disparity of numbers; but without a leader of such character, even such soldiers would fail to win in almost any field. Colonel Johnson, in the rough dress of a mountaineer, had scouted the whole surrounding country on horseback and on foot. His men were encamped so as to be ready for action, and he was among the first to hear the firing of the pickets on the morning of the 13th, and in the same dress he, in person, promptly ordered the call to arms. When the fight began, armed with a musket, he went from one portion of the field to another, on foot, encouraging and directing his men, and when these were hard pressed, with clubbed musket in his left hand and a long club (a "grub" gathered from a farmyard) in his right, which he brandished over his head, while in thunder tones he encouraged his men to attack, he joined them in rushing upon the foe and driving them, with the bayonet and with severe loss, down the mountain side in full retreat.

His heroic and inspiring presence everywhere increased the valorous ardor of his men. His conduct on that day won for him, for all time, the name of "Alleghany Johnson."

Secretary Benjamin wrote to Brig.-Gen. Edward Johnson, on the 23d of December:

The report of the engagement of the 13th inst., in which your gallant command met and repulsed a vastly superior force with a steady valor worthy of the highest admiration, has been communicated by me to the President, and I rejoice to be made the medium of communicating to you and to your officers and men the expression of his thanks and of the great gratification he had experienced at your success. I am happy to add that the President readily and cheerfully assented to my suggestion that you should be promoted to the rank of brigadier-general as a mark of his approval of your conduct, and your nomination will accordingly this day be sent in to the Congress, and take date from the day of the battle.

On the 3d of January, 1862, Secretary Benjamin, in a letter to the President, wrote:

I have the honor to submit herewith for communication to Congress the official reports of the battle of Alleghany Mountain, in which our troops, 1,200 in number, successfully stood the assault of more than fourfold their number, and drove the enemy from the field after a combat as obstinate and as hard fought as any that has occurred during the war. . . . I doubt not that Congress on the reading of this report, will cordially concur with the Executive in the opinion that in this brilliant combat officers and men alike deserve well of their country and merit its thanks.

In consequence of this battle, which revealed the intention of Milroy to gain possession of the pass in the Alleghany mountain and form a junction with Kelley at Moorefield or Romney, if he should succeed in his attempt, General Johnson was ordered to remain at Camp Alleghany while Loring with the rest of his command was sent down the Shenandoah valley to join Stonewall Jackson at Winchester, in an expedition against Romney that would successfully checkmate Milroy's plans and intentions.

CHAPTER X.

OPERATIONS ALONG THE POTOMAC—FROM FIRST MANASSAS TO BATTLE OF LEESBURG.

SOON after the retreat of McDowell from Bull run to Washington, Longstreet's brigade, with artillery and Stuart's cavalry, was advanced, first to Centreville, then to Fairfax, and later to Falls Church and Mason's, Munson's and Upton's hills, commanding positions in full view of Washington, but with orders, writes Longstreet, "not to attempt to advance even to Alexandria." The Federal authorities soon threw a cordon of well-located, formidable and well-manned fortifications around the front of Washington and Alexandria, and heavy artillery guarded all approaches to the national capital. The Confederate cavalry was constantly at the front, but the infantry and artillery supports were frequently relieved. A single battery was allowed to Longstreet, and as that had to respond to calls in all directions, General Longstreet writes that he supplied the want of located batteries by collecting "a number of old wagon wheels and mounting on them stove-pipes of different caliber, till we had formidable looking batteries, some large enough of caliber to threaten Alexandria, and even the national capital and the executive mansion."

During this period of three months there was, practically, a suspension of active hostilities between the Confederate army of the Potomac and the Federal army of the Potomac, but the opposing governments were collecting recruits, organizing armies, and making preparations for the renewal of the mighty struggle between the two nations for the mastery within the boundaries of Virginia.

To guard the approaches to Washington from the west, a division of the Federal army was sent, under Banks, to occupy, in Maryland, the line of the Potomac from above that city to opposite Harper's Ferry; while the line of that river from Harper's Ferry westward was guarded by

forces under Kelley. The Confederate outposts, when again advanced, practically held the line of the Potomac, except in the immediate front of Washington and Alexandria. Especially was this the case at Leesburg, the county town of the fertile county of Loudoun, in the vicinity of which were several fords by which the Potomac could be crossed and from which a number of highways led to the front and to the left flank of the Confederate army at Manassas. A Confederate brigade, under the command of Brig.-Gen. N. G. Evans, who had won such distinction in the battle of Bull Run, was sent to that point, where, under the direction of competent engineers, fortifications were constructed covering the nearby fords of the Potomac and adding to the defensive strength of the position. Banks' Federal division was distributed along the opposite side of the river from near the Point of Rocks, where the Baltimore & Ohio railroad reaches the banks of the Potomac, to the mouth of Seneca creek. The pickets of the two armies were placed on the opposite banks of the Potomac almost to Washington, and thence southward they confronted each other about halfway between Washington and Manassas. This proximity of opposing forces necessarily led to frequent skirmishes and minor engagements, as the commanders of either army sought to gain information in reference to the movements of the other by pushing forward reconnoitering detachments. A mere enumeration of these encounters gives an idea of the activity of the outposts during this period.

On the 29th of July a skirmish took place with Evans' pickets at Edward's Ferry, when a Federal force attempted to cross and ascertain what was going on at Leesburg; on the 5th of August another took place opposite Point of Rocks, some miles from Leesburg, when a Federal force attempted to cross; and again, on the 8th, at Lovettsville, northeast of Leesburg, to which a Federal force had advanced from near Point of Rocks with the same object in view.

On the 17th of August the Federal "department of the Potomac," generally called the "army of the Potomac," was created, to include Washington and vicinity, northeastern Virginia and the Shenandoah valley; and on the 20th General McClellan assumed command of this department with his headquarters at Washington. On the 24th

this department was still further enlarged by taking in the department of Pennsylvania.

Once in full command of the twelve brigades, the five unattached regiments of infantry, and the numerous bodies of cavalry and artillery in his division, on the 5th of August McClellan called upon his outposts for information concerning the Confederate forces in his front. On the 25th of August a scout was sent into Virginia from the Great Falls, some 15 miles above Washington, with which Stuart had combat; on the 27th and 28th skirmishes took place at Bailey's and Ball's cross roads with the scouting parties of that vigilant "eyes-and-ears" of Johnston's command, in the immediate vicinity of Washington; and again on the 31st at Munson's hill, on the Leesburg turnpike, and along the Little river, or Fairfax turnpike, short distances from Alexandria. On the 2d of September a skirmish with Evans' cavalry occurred near Harper's Ferry; on the 4th, Stuart, with five field guns, shelled McCall's brigade at the Great Falls of the Potomac; on the 10th there was skirmishing at Lewinsville, a short distance beyond the northwestern fortifications of Washington. On September 3d General Beauregard, in person, reconnoitered McClellan's front from Munson's and Mason's hills, from which the Federal camps, earthworks and outposts, and the cities of Washington, Georgetown and Alexandria were plainly visible.

On the 11th of September, Brig.-Gen. W. F. Smith, whose brigade was encamped at Chain bridge, just within the District of Columbia, sent Col. I. I. Stevens, with some 2,000 Federal troops of all arms, to make a reconnoissance to Lewinsville, about 4 miles to the northwest, for the purpose of examining that important road center for a permanent Federal outpost, as it was not only held by the Confederates but was uncomfortably near to Washington. That village was reached about 10 a. m.; scouts were sent out on the five roads there converging, and infantry and artillery were properly disposed to guard against an attack while the engineers examined the locality to determine upon the location of works of defense. This done, at about 2 p. m., orders were given to return to camp, and the pickets were called in and the return march begun.

At noon of the same day, Col. J. E. B. Stuart, of the

First Virginia cavalry, who was in command of the Confederate line of picket posts, informed of this movement, started from his camp at Munson's hill, near Falls church, for Lewinsville, which was one of his picket posts, some 6 miles to the northwest, accompanied by Maj. James B. Terrill with 305 of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, two pieces of Walton's Washington (La.) artillery under Capt. Thomas L. Rosser, and two companies of the First Virginia cavalry under Capt. William Patrick. Nearing Lewinsville and learning that the enemy was in the act of retiring, Stuart promptly made a skillful disposition of his small force in the surrounding woods, and, deploying his infantry as skirmishers, attacked the flank and rear of the retiring Federals, who were taken by surprise and at once beat a hasty retreat. A battery near the village stood firm and opened on the Confederates, but Terrill's riflemen picked off the gunners and that also retired. Rosser's battery secured a good position and raked the flank of the retreating foe. Stuart prudently withheld pursuit and the Federals rallied, for a time, about a mile and a half from Lewinsville, and Griffin's regular battery fired back up the road by which they expected to be pursued, and then retired to the Potomac, having lost 2 killed, 13 wounded and 3 missing. Stuart reported: "Our loss was not a scratch to man or horse," and that, after re-establishing his line of pickets through Lewinsville, he returned to his camp at Munson's hill. The Federal brigadier, informed of the engagement, hastened to it with reinforcements in time to take command of its retreat and claim the expedition a success.

This small affair was, at the time, greatly magnified in importance. General McClellan, in person, met the returning detachment at its camp, and, anxious to score a victory in his new command, sent this dispatch to General Scott: "General Smith made reconnoissance with 2,000 men to Lewinsville; remained several hours, and completed examination of the ground. When work was completed and the command had started back, the enemy opened fire with his shell, killing two and wounding three. We shall have no more Bull run affairs." Three days later, the Seventy-ninth New York regiment, which had borne a prominent part in this affair, was reported by its brigade commander as "in a state of open

mutiny," and its colors were taken from it; but they were returned the next day because of "their conduct in the reconnoissance of the 11th."

To the Confederates this engagement was an important one because such a large force of the enemy had been discomfited by a much smaller one in consequence of the skill and daring of its leader. It gave additional confidence to the Confederate outposts which Stuart's boldness and restless activity had been keeping in sight of the dome of the capitol, and had a dispiriting effect upon those of the Federals. Gen. J. E. Johnston, the next day, issued congratulatory orders, from the headquarters of the army of the Potomac, in which he expressed "great satisfaction in making known the excellent conduct of Col. J. E. B. Stuart, and of the officers and men of his command, in the affair of Lewinsville," . . . in which "they attacked and drove from that position, in confusion, three regiments of infantry, eight pieces of artillery, and a large body of cavalry, inflicting severe loss, but incurring none;" and in a report, from near Fairfax cross-roads, on September 14th, to Adjutant-General Cooper, he wrote: "I am much gratified at having this opportunity of putting before the department of war and the President this new instance of the boldness and skill of Colonel Stuart and the courage and efficiency of our troops." He then called attention to a communication from Generals Longstreet, Beauregard and himself, recommending the "forming a cavalry brigade and putting Colonel Stuart at its head. A new organization of the cavalry arm of our service is greatly needed, and greater strength as well as an effective organization. Our numbers in cavalry are by no means in due proportion to our infantry and artillery, yet without cavalry in proper proportion, victory is comparatively barren of results; defeat is less prejudicial; retreat is usually safe." After proposing other arrangements concerning the First Virginia cavalry, if Stuart were promoted, General Johnston continues:

The regiment so far is exclusively Virginian. By all means keep it so, where it can be done without prejudice in other respects. State pride excites a generous emulation in the army, which is of inappreciable value in its effect on the spirits of the troops. I therefore recommend that Capt. William E. Jones, who now commands the strongest troop in the regiment and one which is not surpassed in discipline and spirit by any in the army, be made colonel. He is

a graduate of West Point, served for several years in the Mounted Rifles, and is skillful, brave and zealous in a very high degree. It is enough to say that he is worthy to succeed J. E. B. Stuart. For the lieutenant-colonelcy I repeat my recommendation of Capt. Fitzhugh Lee. He belongs to a family in which military genius seems to be an heirloom. He is an officer of rare merit, capacity and courage. Both of these officers have the invaluable advantage at this moment of knowledge of the ground which is now the scene of operations.

Stuart soon became brigadier-general of cavalry, later major-general, and then lieutenant-general, and the famous commander of the cavalry corps of the army of Northern Virginia until he fell in action. Fitz Lee soon became colonel, then brigadier-general, and finally the distinguished leader, as major-general, of a cavalry division in the same army, and in 1898 a famous consul-general of the United States and a major-general in its army in the Cuban war. Jones became colonel, later brigadier-general of cavalry, and fell on the battlefield.

General Longstreet, who was in command of the "advanced Confederate forces," reported that he had arranged to move a heavy force during the night to cut off the enemy at Lewinsville, but Stuart did not receive his instructions, and himself "drove the enemy back to his trenches at once." He added:

The affair of yesterday was handsomely conducted and well executed. . . . It is quite evident that the officers and men deserve much credit for their handsome conduct, one and all. It is difficult to say whether the handsome use of his light infantry by Major Terrill or the destructive fire of the Washington artillery by Captain Rosser and Lieutenant Slocumb, is the most brilliant part of the affair. Colonel Stuart has, I think, fairly won his claim to brigadier.

Captain Rosser became the colonel of the Fifth Virginia cavalry, a brigadier in Fitz Lee's division of cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, and a major-general in command of a cavalry division in the same army; Major Terrill became colonel of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry; Captain Patrick became major of the Seventeenth battalion of Virginia cavalry and fell, in the brave discharge of duty, in the second battle of Manassas.

On the 15th of September a Confederate force of cavalry and artillery scouted the south bank of the Potomac from Harper's Ferry up to the mouth of the Antietam, and had skirmishing at various points during the day with Col. J. W. Geary's Twenty-eighth Pennsylvania

across the river. On the 16th a Federal detachment that crossed the Potomac at Seneca creek was driven back by Stuart's cavalry pickets. On the 24th General Evans sent a detachment to opposite the Point of Rocks, which fired across the Potomac upon Geary's camp and then withdrew; that officer reported, "Our enemy, if not so savage as the Indian, purposes to emulate his vigilance." He also stated that he had taken possession of Heter's and Noland's islands and proposed to occupy all the other islands in front of his lines, "and where Nature has not provided shelter, to make it by art."

On September 24th Col. J. E. B. Stuart received his promotion as brigadier-general of cavalry. His brigade, as nearly as can be ascertained, consisted of the First Virginia cavalry, under Col. W. E. Jones; the Second Virginia cavalry, under Col. R. C. W. Radford; the Fourth Virginia cavalry, under Col. B. H. Robertson; the Sixth Virginia cavalry, under Col. C. W. Field; the First North Carolina cavalry, under Col. R. Ransom, Jr., and the Jeff Davis legion of cavalry, under Maj. W. T. Martin. Of these, Jones and Robertson subsequently became brigadier-generals, and Field, Ransom and Martin, major-generals in the Confederate army.

On September 25th, Gen. W. F. Smith, United States army, marched from his camp, near the Chain bridge, to Lewinsville, with 5,100 infantry, 150 cavalry and 16 pieces of artillery, guarding a train of 90 wagons to procure forage. He not only took the precaution of having advanced guards and flankers, but left detachments of infantry and artillery along every mile of the road as special guards. After loading his wagons and as he was preparing to retire, about 3 p. m., Stuart vexed him with small bodies of cavalry and three pieces of artillery all along the way as he withdrew. On the 28th the same officer started two of his regiments, with two days' cooked rations, toward Munson's hill. They marched at midnight, but when about halfway to their destination, in a thick body of woods, they were fired into from ambush, with considerable loss; in the confusion that followed one portion of the command fired into another. This led to a halt and the forming of a line of battle, which rested on its arms during the night. These two regiments returned to their camp the next day, after a loss of 4 killed and 16 wounded.

On October 3d, 300 infantry, of the Twenty-sixth New York, were ordered to fall upon a body of Confederate cavalry at Pohick church, 12 miles from Alexandria, and capture them. Instead of obeying orders, this force, as soon as it got beyond the Federal pickets, as General Slocum reported, "was converted into a band of marauders, who plundered alike friend and foe." The same day an expedition to Springfield Station drove away the Confederate pickets and brought away 32 carloads of wood and ties. On the 4th Gen. N. G. Evans tried his artillery on the Federal battery on the Maryland shore near Edwards' ferry, to which reply was made. On the 15th a small body of Confederate cavalry attacked and routed the Federal picket near Padgett's tavern, on the Little river turnpike.

On October 16th, Col. Turner Ashby, who held the front of Harper's Ferry, determined to punish the Federal forces that had for several days been making incursions into Virginia, seizing wheat and committing other depredations, their larger force enabling them to push back his smaller one as they advanced. Ashby had in his command some 300 militia, armed with flint-lock muskets, and two companies of cavalry. He asked General Evans to co-operate with him from Leesburg by sending a force to Loudoun heights, which could prevent the sending of Federal reinforcements across the Potomac, and could drive the enemy from the shelter of the houses at Harper's Ferry. Ashby was reinforced, on the 15th, by two more companies of McDonald's Virginia cavalry, Captain Wingfield's, mounted and armed with minie rifles, and Captain Miller's company, about 30 mounted and the rest on foot, armed with flint-lock guns. He also had a rifled 4-pounder, and a badly mounted 24-pounder, which broke down during the engagement and which he had to spike and abandon. His force, on the morning of the 16th, was 300 militia, parts of two regiments commanded by Colonel Albert of Shenandoah and Major Finter of Page; 180 of McDonald's cavalry, Captain Henderson's men, under command of Lieutenant Glynn; Captain Baylor's mounted militia, about 25 men, and Captain Hess', also about 25 men. Captain Avirett had charge of the rifle gun and Captain Comfield of the 24-pounder.

Ashby attacked in three divisions, drove the enemy

from their breastworks on Bolivar heights, without loss to himself, as far as lower Bolivar; there the 24-pounder carriage broke down, much to his detriment. Its detachment was then transferred to the rifle gun, and Captain Avirett was sent to Loudoun heights with a message to Colonel Griffin, who commanded the detachment from General Evans. About this time the enemy rallied in a countercharge, but were repulsed by the militia. At that moment Colonel Ashby ordered a cavalry charge, led by Captain Turner, which was handsomely made, killing five of the enemy.

After holding his position on Bolivar heights for four hours, when the enemy was reinforced by infantry and artillery, which had been left on guard at the ferry, and which Griffin, from the position he had taken, had not been able to keep back, Ashby withdrew to the position, near Halltown, which the Federal pickets had occupied in the morning, and which he called "Camp Evans." That night the Federals recrossed the Potomac and encamped on the first terrace of Maryland heights. Ashby reported his loss as 1 killed and 9 wounded, and that he had captured 10 prisoners, besides a large number of blankets, overcoats and a dozen muskets. In concluding, he reported: "I cannot compliment my officers and men too highly for their gallant bearing during the whole fight, considering the bad arms with which they were supplied and their inexperience."

On the 18th of October, Brig.-Gen. I. B. Richardson, reconnoitered to Pohick church and Accotink village, drove in the Confederate pickets, and on his return advanced his own pickets to Windsor's hill, some 5 miles southeast of Alexandria. On the 20th, Major Whipple made a reconnoissance from Dranesville; near Hunter's mill had a skirmish with Confederate pickets, also one near Thornton Station.

CHAPTER XI.

BATTLE OF LEESBURG—OPERATIONS ON THE LOWER POTOMAC AND EAST SHORE—ACTION AT DRANESVILLE.

AFTER the first battle of Manassas, Col. Eppa Hunton had been ordered to reoccupy Leesburg with his regiment, the Eighth Virginia; a little later Col. William Barksdale's Thirteenth Mississippi, Col. W. S. Featherston's Seventeenth Mississippi, a battery, and four companies of cavalry under Col. W. H. Jenifer, were sent to the same place, and these were organized into the Seventh brigade of the Confederate army of the Potomac, which, early in August, was put under command of Brig.-Gen. Nathan G. Evans, who had been promoted for his brave conduct July 21st. General Beauregard's object in locating this strong force at Leesburg was to guard his left flank from a Federal attack by way of several good roads that led from the fords of the upper Potomac, near that town, directly to his Bull run encampment; to watch the large Federal force that McClellan had located on the opposite side of the Potomac; to keep up a connection with the Confederate force in the lower Shenandoah valley by a good turnpike that led from Leesburg across the Blue ridge, and to save for his army the abundant supplies of the fertile county of Loudoun.

On the 15th of October General Banks' division of the Federal army was located at Darnestown, Md., about 15 miles due east from Leesburg, with detachments at Point of Rocks, Sandy Hook, Williamsport, etc.; while the division of Brig.-Gen. C. P. Stone, composed of six companies of cavalry, three of artillery, and the infantry brigades of Gens. W. A. Gorman and F. W. Lander and Col. E. D. Baker, was located at Poolesville, 8 miles north of east from Leesburg. The object in this disposition of so large a force was, not only to guard the right of the big Federal army that General McClellan was gathering at Washington, but especially to cover the important approaches from the northwest to Baltimore and the Fed-

eral city, particularly those from the lower Shenandoah valley and northeastern Piedmont, Virginia.

On October 19th McCall's Federal division advanced to Dranesville, on the road to Leesburg and about 15 miles from that place, "in order to cover the reconnoissance made in all directions the next day;" and later, Smith's Federal division advanced along a parallel road to the west, acting in concert with General McCall, and pushed forward strong parties in the same direction and for the same purpose. About 7 p. m. of the 19th, Stone's advance opened a heavy cannonade on the Confederate positions at Fort Evans, on the Leesburg pike, and at Edwards' Ferry; and at the same time General Evans heard heavy firing in the direction of Dranesville. At midnight General Evans ordered his whole brigade to the front, along the line of Goose creek, 3 miles southeast of Leesburg, where he had a line of intrenchments, to there await an expected attack from General McCall, the next morning, Sunday, October 20th, as it had been reported that the Federal advance was moving in force from Dranesville toward Leesburg. Evans' scouts captured McCall's courier bearing dispatches to General Meade, directing him to examine the roads leading to Leesburg. The Federal batteries kept up a deliberate fire during the day, but no assault was made.

On the morning of the 20th the Federal signal officer on Sugar Loaf mountain, in Maryland, reported, "The enemy have moved away from Leesburg." This Banks wired to McClellan, whereupon the latter wired to Stone, at Poolesville, that a heavy reconnoissance would be sent out that day, in all directions, from Dranesville, concluding: "You will keep a good lookout upon Leesburg, to see if this movement has the effect to drive them away. Perhaps a slight demonstration on your part would have the effect to move them." McClellan desired Stone to make demonstrations from his picket line along the Potomac, but did not intend that he should cross the river, in force, for the purpose of fighting. Late in the day Stone reported that he had made a feint of crossing, and at the same time had started a reconnoissance from Harrison's island toward Leesburg, when the enemy's pickets retired to intrenchments. That "slight demonstration" brought on the battle of Ball's Bluff (or, as it is variously called, Leesburg, Harrison's Island, or Con-

rad's Ferry), on Monday, October 21st. On the morning of the 21st, McCall retired from Evans' front to his camp at Prospect Hill, 4 miles up the river from the Chain bridge.

From his point of observation, at the earthwork called "Fort Evans," to the eastward of Leesburg, overlooking the fords at Conrad's and Edwards' ferries and Ball's bluff, Evans, at 6 a. m. on the 21st, found that the enemy of Stone's division had effected a crossing at Edwards' ferry and at Ball's bluff, 4 miles above. He promptly sent four companies from his Mississippi regiments and two companies of cavalry, under the command of Lieut.-Col. W. H. Jenifer, to the assistance of Captain Duff, to hold the enemy in check until his plan of attack should be developed. Colonel Jenifer immediately engaged the Federal advance and drove it back toward Ball's bluff.

The force that had crossed at Harrison's island, about midnight of the 20th, was part of the command of Colonel Baker, some 300 men under Col. Charles Devens, of the Fifteenth Massachusetts. Its object was to capture a Confederate camp that had been reported to be about a mile from the river. This force advanced to an open field surrounded by woods, where it halted until it could be joined by a company from the Twentieth Massachusetts, which had been left on the bluff, on the Virginia side, to protect the Federal return. Devens, at daybreak, pushed forward with a few men to reconnoiter, and, in person, went to within sight of Leesburg. Thinking he had not been discovered, Devens determined to remain, and sent back to his brigade commander, Colonel Baker, for reinforcements. The latter consulted his division commander, General Stone, and obtained permission to either withdraw Devens or to send over reinforcements to him. He promptly directed Devens to hold his position and said that he would support him, in person, with the rest of his brigade. The boats and flats that had been provided for crossing the Potomac from the Maryland shore to Harrison's island, and from the latter to the Virginia shore, were entirely inadequate, and it was nearly noon before Devens' regiment of 625 men was closed up on the Virginia shore.

Convinced, at about 10 a. m., that the main Federal attack would be at Ball's bluff, 4 miles northeast of Leesburg, Evans ordered Colonel Hunton, with the

Eighth Virginia, to the support of Colonel Jenifer, directing him to form line of battle immediately in the rear of Jenifer's command, and that the combined force should then drive the enemy to the river, while he, General Evans, supported the right of the movement with artillery. This movement was made soon after noon, and the opposing forces at once became hotly engaged, the Confederates advancing on the Federals, who held a strong position in front of the woods. Learning, at about this time, that an opposing force was gathering on his left, and that he would soon be vigorously attacked by a body of infantry that appeared in that direction, and by a body of dismounted cavalry that had deployed in his front, and apprehensive of being flanked, Devens retired his regiment to an open space in the woods, in front of the bluff, and prepared to receive an attack. To ascertain about reinforcements, Devens went back to the bluff at about 2 p. m., where he found Colonel Baker, who directed him to form his regiment on the right of the position that he proposed to occupy, while Baker placed 300 of the Twentieth Massachusetts on the left and advanced in front of these his California regiment, with two guns, supported by two companies of the Fifteenth Massachusetts. At about the same hour General Stone ferried a strong force across the river at Edwards' ferry, to make a demonstration on Evans' right, leaving Colonel Baker in command at Ball's bluff. Stone then telegraphed to McClellan: "There has been sharp firing on the right of our line, and our troops appear to be advancing there under Baker. The left, under Gorman, has advanced its skirmishers nearly one mile, and, if the movement continues successful, will turn the enemy's right."

At about 2:30 p. m., General Evans, having the advantage of a concealed, shorter and inner line, seeing that the enemy was being constantly reinforced, ordered Colonel Burt, with the Eighteenth Mississippi, to attack the Federal left, while Hunton and Jenifer attacked his front, holding the attack at Edwards' ferry in check by batteries from his intrenchments. As Colonel Burt reached his position, the enemy, concealed in a ravine, opened on him a furious fire, which compelled him to divide his regiment and stop the flank movement that had already begun. At about 3 p. m., Featherston, with the Seventeenth Mississippi, was sent at a double-quick to

support Burt's movement. Evans reports: "He arrived in twenty minutes and the action became general along my whole line, and was very hot and brisk for more than two hours, the enemy keeping up a constant fire with his batteries on both sides of the river. At about 6 p. m. I saw that my command had driven the enemy to near the banks of the river. I ordered my entire force to charge and drive him into the river. The charge was immediately made by the whole command, and the forces of the enemy were completely routed, and cried out for quarter along his whole line. In this charge the enemy was driven back at the point of the bayonet, and many were killed and wounded by this formidable weapon. In the precipitate retreat of the enemy on the bluffs of the river, many of his troops rushed into the water and were drowned, while many others, in overloading the boats sunk them and shared the same fate. The rout now, about 7 o'clock, became complete, and the enemy commenced throwing his arms into the river. . . . At 8 p. m. the enemy surrendered his forces at Ball's bluff, and the prisoners were marched to Leesburg."

During this action, Colonel Barksdale, with nine companies of the Thirteenth Mississippi and six pieces of artillery, was held to oppose Stone's movement from Edward's Ferry and also as a reserve. After the engagement, Evans withdrew all his brigade to Leesburg, except Barksdale's regiment, which he left in front of Edwards' ferry.

Each of the combatants had about 1,700 men engaged in this action. The Confederates had no artillery in the fight, while the Federals had three light guns. Shortly after the action became general, Colonel Baker, passing in front of his command, was killed by a sharpshooter, which so demoralized the Federals that the surviving officers conferred and decided to retreat. This was opposed by Col. Milton Cogswell, of the Forty-second New York, who had succeeded Colonel Baker in command. He said a retreat down the bluff and across the river was now impossible, and that they must cut their way through the Confederate right to Edwards' ferry. He promptly gave orders to that effect, and moved to the front, followed by the remnants of his own two companies and a portion of the California regiment, but not by the others. He was quickly driven back and the whole Fed-

eral command was forced to the river bluff in great disorder. Just then two companies of the Forty-second New York landed on the Virginia shore. These Colonel Cogswell ordered up the bluff and deployed as skirmishers to cover the Federal retreat, while he advanced to the left with a small party, and was almost immediately captured. Colonel Devens escaped by swimming the river.

On the morning of the 22d, Colonel Barksdale informed General Evans that the enemy was still in force at Edwards' ferry. He was ordered to carefully reconnoiter the Federal position, learn its strength and make attack. This he did, at about 2 p. m., and drove a superior force, from an intrenched position to the bank of the river, killing and wounding quite a number of men. At about sundown, the Federals, having been reinforced and holding rifle-pits, Barksdale withdrew to Fort Evans, leaving two companies to watch his front. The enemy recrossed the Potomac during the night. Evans reported his loss, in the thirteen hours of fight, on the 21st, as 36 killed, 117 wounded and 2 missing, from a force of 1,709. Among the killed was the brave Colonel Burt. The Federal losses were returned at 49 killed, 158 wounded, 694 missing. General Evans claimed the capture of 710 prisoners, 1,500 stand of arms, 3 cannon and 1 flag.

Evans called on Longstreet for reinforcements when he reported his battle of the 21st, thinking that 20,000 Federals were in his front. Colonel Jenkins, with the Eighteenth South Carolina and cavalry and artillery, was dispatched from Centreville, in the afternoon of the 22d, and marched toward Leesburg, through mud and a driving rain, until midnight, when the infantry went into bivouac; but Capt. C. M. Blackford's cavalry and four guns of the Washington artillery hurried forward all night, and came in sight of Leesburg about daylight of the 23d. That morning, finding his men much exhausted, General Evans ordered three of his regiments to fall back to Carter's mill, a strong position on Goose creek, about 7 miles southwest from Leesburg, and join Jenkins, who had been halted at that place, leaving Barksdale with his regiment, two pieces of artillery and some cavalry, as a rear guard near Leesburg, and Hunton, with his Eighth Virginia and two pieces of artillery, on the south bank of Sycolin creek, 3 miles from Leesburg, and sending his cavalry well to the front toward Alexandria. The weather was stormy and very cold.

The attention of the Federal commander was now turned to operations on the Potomac river, below Washington, as the Confederate batteries, located at Freestone point, Cockpit point, Shipping point at the mouth of the Quantico, and at the mouth of Aquia creek, were a standing menace to the navigation of that river to and from Washington. On October 22d a detachment of the Seventy-second New York was sent to construct intrenchments at Budd's ferry, opposite the Confederate battery at Shipping point, and to report on the Confederate batteries along the Potomac; he also constructed earthworks for batteries opposite Evansport. On the 28th the Confederate battery near Budd's ferry, numbering some 14 guns, opened on a steamer attempting to pass up the river. General Hooker, learning of this, directed his batteries on the Maryland shore to open on the Confederate steamer Page, in case the steamer attempting to go up the Potomac should be disabled, or if an attempt should be made to take it as a prize.

On the 9th of November, Gen. D. E. Sickles, of General Hooker's command, sent an expedition of 400 men down the Potomac to reconnoiter Mathias point, which was held by a small Confederate picket. On the 12th Gen. S. P. Heintzelman, in charge of Fort Lyon, on the Telegraph road, a short distance from Alexandria, sent out two brigades of infantry to Pohick church. On reaching the church, early the next morning, it was ascertained that the Confederates had left the night before.

On the 14th of November, General Dix, commanding the department of Pennsylvania, with headquarters at Baltimore, ordered Gen. H. H. Lockwood, commanding the Federal peninsula brigade, partly composed of Union Marylanders, to proceed on an expedition through Accomac and Northampton counties, in Virginia, for the purpose of "bringing these counties back to their allegiance to the United States, and reuniting them to the Union on the footing of West Virginia." The commander of the expedition was directed to distribute a proclamation by General Dix, which made known the object of the expedition and gave many assurances as to the good results that would follow submission to Federal authority, and to exercise "the utmost vigilance to preserve discipline and prevent any outrage upon persons or property."

In the course of his instructions to Lockwood, Dix proceeded to settle grave questions of state by military instructions. He advised that "The people, if they return to their allegiance to the United States, should make such temporary provision for their own government, not inconsistent with the Constitution of the United States, as they may think best. For the time being, it seems to me that it would be well for them to act with western Virginia, and hold elections by proclamation of the governor."

On November 15th, the day after his expedition started, Dix wrote to President Lincoln, enclosing a copy of his proclamation to the people of Accomac and Northampton, with the hope that what he had done would meet with his approbation; and stated that he had sent 4,500 men on this expedition.

Reaching the borders of Virginia, November 16th, General Lockwood sent a flag of truce to the Confederate troops, some 10 miles below the line, but found no force to treat with, as they had either dispersed or fallen back to Eastville. The bearer of this flag reported, from Temperanceville, "We have thus far had a triumphant welcome and uninterrupted march."

Lockwood reported from Drummondtown, on the 22d, that the larger portion of his command was at that place, but he had sent two regiments, with cavalry and artillery, to Eastville. After describing the points selected for his bases of supplies, he stated that he had found and secured seven new 6-pounder guns, and a number of small-arms of little value. After declaring that the people manifested a readiness to submit to the Federal government, and that they were arranging to hold county meetings for this purpose, he wrote: "The basis of the system in western Virginia will be adopted as a temporary measure. All with whom I have conversed look to an annexation with Maryland as an event much to be desired whenever it can constitutionally be accomplished. This, they think, can be done by regarding themselves, together with western Virginia, as the true State of Virginia, and inducing the State thus constituted and the State of Maryland to pass the necessary laws." He advised that Dix write to the governor of West Virginia, asking him to make proclamation, as soon as the people have

declared their allegiance to the United States, "ordering an election for the civil officers and a representative to the Congress of the United States," and concluded, "I hope that by their joint action this interesting people may be relieved from their present position, and brought into that association with the State of Maryland to which their geographical position naturally points."

On November 16th, Maj. W. T. Martin, of the Second Mississippi cavalry (subsequently major-general), cut off a foraging party of the Thirtieth New York, near Falls Church, and captured 30 prisoners, killing 4 and wounding several. On the 18th Lieut.-Col. Fitzhugh Lee, of the First Virginia cavalry, attacked a Federal picket in the same vicinity, part of the Brooklyn regiment (Fourteenth New York) of hard fighters. Two of Lee's men lost their lives, and 2 of the enemy were killed and 10 captured. On the 26th a squadron of Pennsylvania cavalry, on a reconnoissance to Vienna, was attacked by 120 men of the First North Carolina cavalry, under Col. Robert Ransom, and stampeded. Ransom reported the capture of 26 prisoners, and a considerable number of horses, sabers and carbines. The attention of the government was invited to these successful affairs by General Johnston.

Skirmishes followed, of like character, near Dranesville on the 26th, near Fairfax on the 27th, and at Annandale, December 2d.

Gen. S. G. French, stationed at Evansport, reported on December 15th that his position had been under fire from Federal batteries on the Maryland shore during the past three weeks.

On December 20th Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, with a force comprising the Eleventh Virginia, Col. Samuel Garland; Sixth South Carolina, Lieutenant-Colonel Secret; Tenth Alabama, Col. J. H. Forney, and First Kentucky, Col. T. H. Taylor, in all 1,600 infantry; Capt. A. S. Cutts' Georgia artillery (four pieces), Maj. J. B. Gordon's North Carolina cavalry, and Capt. A. L. Pitzer's Virginia cavalry, moved toward Dranesville for the purpose of protecting an expedition of army wagons after hay. At the same time a Federal expedition approached Dranesville, on a similar mission. Upon discovering the presence of the enemy, Stuart sent Pitzer to keep between them and the wagons, and order the latter

back, while the main body was disposed for a vigorous attack upon the Federal rear and left flank. The force Stuart encountered at Dranesville was E. O. C. Ord's Pennsylvania brigade of five regiments (including the "Buck-tails"), two squadrons of cavalry and Easton's battery. Stuart took position, screening his infantry in a wood, and when the enemy came up the action was opened by an artillery combat. Then Stuart ordered forward his right wing, and the Alabama regiment "rushed with a shout in a storm of bullets." Colonel Forney fell wounded, and Lieut.-Col. J. B. Martin was killed. The other regiments also pushed forward, and a stubborn fight resulted. "When the action had lasted about two hours," Stuart reported, "I found that the enemy, being already in force larger than my own, was recovering from his disorder, and receiving heavy reinforcements [Reynolds' and Meade's brigades]." Consequently he withdrew in order. "The enemy was evidently too much crippled to follow in pursuit, and after a short halt at the railroad I proceeded to Fryingpan church, where the wounded were cared for."

Early next morning, with two fresh regiments, Stuart returned to the field, and found that the enemy had evacuated Dranesville and left some of their wounded there. The official returns of casualties were, on the Federal side, 7 killed and 61 wounded; on the Confederate, 43 killed, 143 wounded and 8 missing.

The return of the department of Northern Virginia, Gen. J. E. Johnston commanding, for December, showed for the Potomac district, General Beauregard, aggregate infantry, cavalry and artillery, present and absent, 68,047; aggregate present, 55,165; effective total, 44,563. The forces in the Valley district, General Jackson, were reported at 12,922 present; in the Aquia district, General Holmes, 8,244, raising the aggregate present of Johnston's command to 76,331.

CHAPTER XII.

STONEWALL JACKSON'S ROMNEY CAMPAIGN.

ON the 7th of October, 1861, in recognition of his distinguished services at the first battle of Manassas, Stonewall Jackson was commissioned major-general. On November 4th he left Manassas to take command of the Valley district, to which, Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, in command of the department of Northern Virginia, had assigned him, and established his headquarters at Winchester. Although forming the left wing of Johnston's army, the main body of which was in the vicinity of Manassas Junction, Jackson's command was, in some respects, an independent one, as he had assigned to him not only the protection of the lower valley of the Shenandoah, but also the extensive Appalachian country to the northwest that drained into the Potomac, and along the northeastern border of which ran the Baltimore & Ohio railroad. It was all a region of parallel mountains and narrow valleys with which he was quite familiar, not only in consequence of his campaigning there in the earlier part of 1861, but from his knowledge of it from his boyhood days. Entering upon his command with but a small body of soldiers, no one would have forecast that he had taken possession of a field which would make both that and himself famous for all time. The enemy, through the exigencies of war, had become possessed of a large part of both the Appalachian and the Trans-Appalachian portions of Virginia, and Jackson had frequently expressed a desire to be placed in position to free that land of his nativity from the Federal invaders. To him, this assignment, even with an inferior force, appeared to open the way for the fulfillment of his cherished hopes.

First the Virginia, and then the Confederate campaigns in the mountain regions of Virginia, during the spring, summer and fall of 1861, had not only been barren of results, but in the main well-nigh disastrous. Garnett had been out-maneuvered and defeated, in the Tygart

valley, in July; Loring, under Lee, had accomplished nothing in the same valley and in that of the Greenbrier in August and September, and the commands of Floyd and Wise along the Kanawha turnpike, even with the assistance of Lee and Loring, had barely sufficed to keep the enemy in check.*

When Jackson took command in the Valley the advance of General Rosecrans, who commanded the Federal forces in West Virginia, had recaptured Romney, 40 miles west of Winchester, and held it with a force of 5,000 men, thus controlling the important valley of the South branch of the Potomac. Bath, the county seat of Morgan, situated north of Winchester, was also occupied, as was the Maryland side of the Potomac across the entire front of the Shenandoah valley and beyond on either side. The Confederate forces along the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, and the turnpike leading into that from the Warm Springs, had fallen back to the crest of Alleghany mountain, while that on the Kanawha road had retired to Lewisburg, a few miles west of that range. The Baltimore & Ohio railroad was open from the eastward to Harper's Ferry and from the westward to Hancock, for the use of the Federal army, a gap 40 miles long being the only portion broken and controlled by the Confederates, and even this was filled on the Maryland side by the Chesapeake & Ohio canal, furnishing water communication from Cumberland to Georgetown and Washington.

Studying the field intrusted to him and the strategic opportunities presented for driving the enemy from the mountain region to the westward, Jackson asked that his old brigade might be sent him from Manassas, and that all the troops holding the passes of Alleghany mountain to the southwest, some 15,000 or 16,000 in number, be ordered to report to him. The government, not then knowing the man, declined to comply fully with his request, but promptly sent him his old brigade, and one of

* The first campaign in the Kanawha valley, under General Wise, has been described in this volume. The later operations in that region, in 1861, under the command of General Floyd, and at the last, about Sewell mountain, under Gen. R. E. Lee, are described in the *Military History of West Virginia*, in another volume of this work. To that volume reference is also made for accounts of subsequent military operations within the limits of the State of West Virginia, except such as were part of the campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia.

Loring's brigades reached him from the Staunton and Parkersburg line early in December. Loring did not arrive in person until very nearly the end of the month of December, but Jackson, with characteristic energy, improved the opportunity to drill his command and equip it for service, and to organize certain cavalry companies in his district into a regiment, under the command of Lieut.-Col. Turner Ashby.

Unwilling to be idle and leave his foe to believe that he was not ready for action, Jackson dispatched a small force of infantry and a battery to break Dam No. 5, seven miles above Williamsport, across the Potomac, which supplied a long level of the canal with water, and thus destroy the line of communication between Cumberland and Washington. On the afternoon of December 6th, Jackson's force reached the dam, and while he kept up an active skirmish across the Potomac for two days, an effort was made to break the dam on the night of the 7th, but with little success. Unwilling to be foiled in his undertaking, Jackson again left Winchester on the 16th with a larger force, and on the 17th, having disposed his troops to provide against a flank movement and also to make demonstrations at Dam No. 4, at Williamsport, he sent parties to break Dam No. 5 at its Virginia end. The Federal infantry and artillery kept up a vigorous and annoying fire from the Maryland side on Jackson's working party, so that little was accomplished during the day; but that night Captain Holliday, of the Thirty-third, and Captain Robinson, of the Twenty-seventh, volunteered to go down with their companies and wade in and cut out the cribs that supported the dam. It required heroic endurance to stand waist deep in the water on a cold December night, and under a constant fire of the enemy, but a partial breach was made and the cribs so loosened that a later freshet made a wide gap in the dam and rendered useless for some time a long stretch of the canal. During Jackson's stay to effect the object of this expedition, it became evident from the arrival of Federal regiments to reinforce the command at Williamsport, that it would be hazardous for him to cross the Potomac and attack his opponents, so he withdrew on the 21st and returned to Winchester.

While engaged in the expedition to Dam No. 5, news reached Jackson of the decisive victory Gen. Edward

Johnson had won at his camp on Alleghany mountain on December 13th. Jackson promptly advised that Edward Johnson's force should either reinforce him or advance down the South Branch valley toward Moorefield, so as to co-operate with him in an attack he proposed to make on Romney, where he supposed the force of the enemy was about 10,000, but being constantly reinforced. He wrote to both Gen. J. E. Johnston and Adjutant-General Cooper. He was not listened to, and later in the winter Johnson was forced to fall back to the Shenandoah mountain in consequence of a movement threatening his flank from the direction of Romney.

Loring and the last two of his brigades joined Jackson on Christmas day of 1861. It was agreed that Loring should retain command of his own troops, the three infantry brigades under Col. William B. Taliaferro, Col. William Gilham and Brig.-Gen. S. R. Anderson, and Marye's and Shumaker's batteries, in all nearly 6,000 men, which increased Jackson's entire force, counting 2,000 or 3,000 militia, to about 11,000. Loring was recognized as second in command.

Having secured all the troops that the Confederate authorities would intrust him with, Jackson, feeling that the force in hand was inadequate to the undertaking, but burning with a desire to recover western Virginia, determined to move on the enemy, notwithstanding the lateness of the season and the difficulties that would have to be encountered in a winter campaign in a mountainous region. He desired to first clear out the foe from his own district, which extended well toward the line of the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike to the district which was recently commanded by Loring, and still held by Gen. Edward Johnson, damaging the Baltimore & Ohio railroad along the Potomac as much as possible, and then be guided by circumstances in reference to a campaign farther to the northwest. Preparations were energetically pushed, and by the last day of the year the army was ready to move.

Rosecrans, satisfied that there would be no further westward movement of the Confederates until spring, had determined, under cover of his 5,000 troops at Romney, to collect the whole force of his department, some 22,000 men, along the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, with the hope of securing permission from Gen-

eral McClellan to use these forces in an attack upon the Valley for the purpose of seizing, fortifying and holding Winchester, and thus dominating all of northeastern Virginia, and at the same time threatening Johnston's position at Manassas. These intentions of the enemy were speedily frustrated by Jackson, when, on the 1st of January, 1862, a bright and pleasant day, his army started for Bath, near the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad. The army consisted of his own old brigade, commanded by Gen. R. B. Garnett, the three brigades under Loring, a part of the militia, five batteries, and most of Ashby's regiment of cavalry, the whole numbering about 9,000 men. This movement against Bath, if successful, would disperse the enemy at Hancock, destroy communication between General Banks on the east and General Kelley on the west, and by threatening the latter's rear, force him to evacuate Romney or contend with a superior force. Before the first day ended a cold storm set in from the northwest, the beginning of a protracted period of very inclement weather. The second day the storm continued, and the trains were delayed by icy mountain roads, byways having been chosen, instead of following the great turnpike, to conceal the movement. As the trains could not get up, the troops were forced to pass the night of the 2d near Unger's, without rations and many of them without covering. On the morning of the 3d the wagons came up, and after a short delay for cooking and eating, the march was resumed. Later that day snow and sleet set in, adding to the discomfort of the army and making the roads so slippery that the wagons were again unable to keep up. That night was spent in the midst of the storm about four miles southwest of Bath. The advance had dispersed and captured some of a scouting party of the enemy. On the morning of the 4th, Jackson disposed his forces to surround Bath, sending a detachment across the mountain to the left in order to make a flank movement from the west, the main body pushing along the direct road with regiments thrown out on the right and left as flankers. Exhausted by the cold and suffering of the preceding days, and especially by the storm of the night before, the troops moved slowly, greatly hindered by the ice and frozen sleet that covered the ground, so that a large part of the day was consumed before the Confederates, led by Lient.-

Col. W. S. H. Baylor, of Jackson's staff, dashed into the town. The latter had been held by a part of the Thirty-ninth Illinois regiment, a squadron of cavalry and a section of artillery, reinforced on the morning of the 4th by the Eighty-fourth Pennsylvania from Hancock, and at midday by the Thirteenth Indiana. These Federal troops skirmished for some hours with Jackson's advance, then hastily retired, their commander, Colonel Murray of the Eighty-fourth Pennsylvania, having decided not to await an attack. They retreated precipitately to Hancock, leaving their stores and camp at Bath to be captured.

Finding the enemy gone, Jackson ordered an immediate pursuit, his main body moving toward Hancock and driving the rear of the enemy across the Potomac; Gilham moved toward Sir John's run, but did no damage to the enemy retreating in that direction, as they were able to check his advance with a few men, along the narrow defile of the run, until after dark, when they made good their retreat over the Potomac. Colonel Rust, with the Third Arkansas, the Thirty-seventh Virginia and two guns, was sent to destroy the Baltimore & Ohio railroad bridge over the Big Cacapon. The guard made a stout resistance, but he drove it off on the morning of the 5th and destroyed the bridge, railroad station and telegraph line.

Jackson bivouacked with his main force opposite Hancock on the night of the 4th. The next morning, through Colonel Ashby, he demanded a surrender of the town, threatening if that were not done in two hours, given for the removal of non-combatants, he would open his batteries upon it. General Lander, who had assumed command at Hancock, refused to surrender and prepared to resist until large reinforcements, which had been summoned from both east and west over the National road, could reach him. Jackson put several pieces of artillery in position and kept up a brisk cannonade during the afternoon of the 5th and the forenoon of the 6th, meantime trying to construct a bridge across the Potomac, two miles above Hancock, that he might cross the river and fall on Lander's flank. Finding that it would take several days to construct this bridge, during which time the enemy in front of him would be largely reinforced, and having freed this part of his district from the enemy and destroyed such stores as he could not carry away, Jack-

son left the vicinity of Hancock, on the morning of the 7th, and marched in the direction of Romney, the head of his column reaching Unger's cross roads that evening. The condition of the weather, and especially of the roads on which the sleet and snow, tramped by the marching soldiers, had become frozen and glassy so that it was with great difficulty that the troops could make progress, and almost impossible for the trains and artillery to be moved at all, filled the whole line of march with falling, disabled or killed horses. The cold was intense, and the bivouac the night of January 7, 1862, was one long to be remembered by even Jackson's hardy and much enduring soldiery. The march could not be continued until the horses were rough shod, and Jackson, ever impatient of delay, was forced to remain for some days at Unger's for this purpose.

The day that Jackson retired from Hancock, January 7th, a detachment of the Federal troops at Romney, taking the road to Winchester, fell on a body of some 700 Virginia militia, under Colonel Monroe, with Sheets' company of cavalry, and 30 artillerists with two pieces of artillery, under Lieut. W. E. Cutshaw, in the narrow gorge called Hanging Rock, just across the North river of the Big Cacapon, captured the Confederate pickets about daylight and, having turned Monroes' left, took his command by surprise, and pressing upon them with an overwhelming force scattered them in great confusion, capturing the two guns, part of the baggage and 7 prisoners. The Federal troops burned the mills and private houses at and near Hanging Rock, and then returned to Romney, burning houses and killing cattle on their way, encouraged to this vandalism by those in command. Their track of 15 miles, from Hanging Rock to Romney, was one continued scene of desolation.

On the 13th Jackson resumed his march to Romney. During this delay he had not been altogether idle, for on the 10th he had dispatched, in opposite directions, Brig.-Gen. G. C. Meem, with 545 militia infantry, toward Moorefield, and Brigadier-General Carson, with 200 militia infantry and 25 mounted militia, for Bath, 16 miles away, to confuse the enemy as to his intentions, while Ashby hovered near Romney watching the movements of the Federal forces. Apprehensive of disaster, General Lander, in command of the Federal forces, evacuated Romney on

the 10th and fell back to the Baltimore & Ohio railroad at Patterson's creek, where he concentrated the Federal troops from Hancock and Cumberland with those from Romney and Springfield.

Jackson's advance encamped on the night of the 13th near Slanesville, establishing headquarters at Bloomery gap. The next day, marching through another storm of driving sleet, his advance entered Romney in the evening, capturing some stores and supplies which the Federals had left behind in their precipitate retreat. Having Romney in possession, Jackson prepared for a movement on Cumberland, to destroy the railroad bridges across the Potomac near that town, as well as those across Patterson and New creeks. He selected Garnett's and Taliaferro's brigades for this purpose, in order to destroy the enemy's line of communication preparatory to a further aggressive movement; but a new obstacle, more difficult to overcome than the serious natural ones he had just encountered, now confronted him. While the troops selected for the new expedition did not break out in actual revolt, their murmurings were loud. They made open complaint of the suffering they had endured and concerning the greater ones they imagined in store for them if this campaign were continued in such an inhospitable country and amidst the thawing and freezing of a rigorous, though changeable winter. Especially was this opposition strong in Taliaferro's brigade, which had not been accustomed to Jacksonian discipline under the command of Loring. Not a few of the officers of Jackson's old command sympathized with those who had been selected for the arduous duty Jackson had in view. A rain and thaw set in at about this time, and changed the frozen roads into slush and mire. Jackson reluctantly submitted to the discontent of his troops and the unfavorable conditions, relinquished his aggressive intentions and prepared to defend what he had already won. He had in two weeks and with little loss, though with much suffering, discomfited the enemy opposed to him and disconcerted their offensive plans; practically expelling them from all his district, liberating three fertile counties from their domination, and thereby securing sources of supply for the subsistence of his own army.

Loring's three brigades and thirteen pieces of artillery were quartered at and near Romney; Boggs' brigade of

militia, mainly gathered from that region, was disposed along the South branch to Moorefield, with his pickets joining those of Edward Johnson from Camp Alleghany on the southwest. Three companies of Ashby's cavalry were left with Loring for outpost duty. Carson's brigade of Virginia militia, gathered from the lower valley mainly, was stationed at Bath; and Meem's brigade of Virginia militia, from the counties of Shenandoah and Page, was placed at and beyond Martinsburg; while Ashby, with the larger portion of his cavalry regiment, held the line of the Potomac from near Harper's Ferry westward. Garnett's brigade was ordered to Winchester, to be in position to guard against any movement of the large force under Banks that had been gathered at Frederick City. Jackson established his own headquarters at Winchester on the 24th of January, having provided communication with Loring, at Romney, by a line of telegraph.

With these dispositions of his forces, made so as to be ready for either offensive or defensive purposes, and on good roads by which they could be readily concentrated, General Jackson had a reasonable expectation that he could now rest and recruit his army for the coming spring campaign, which everything indicated would be a very active one. Furloughs were granted freely to men and officers, not only for their own satisfaction, but with the hope that by going to their respective homes they would be the means of bringing new recruits to his army. To his surprise and mortification, these very men, especially the officers, were the means of adding to the discontent already prevailing among Loring's men, and some of them, high in favor with the government at Richmond, were the means of inducing the secretary of war, on the 31st of January, to order Jackson to recall Loring's command, at once, to Winchester, on the pretense that a movement was being made to cut it off, without sending the order through his superior officer, Gen. J. E. Johnston, and without consultation with either of these capable commanders in the field of operations. Jackson promptly obeyed the order; recalled Loring to Winchester, and ordered the militia to fall back in the same direction if the enemy should advance. At the same time he informed Mr. Benjamin, the secretary of war, that he had complied with his order, and asked to be himself ordered to report for duty to the Virginia military insti-

tute, or, if this was not granted, that the President would accept his resignation from the army, writing in this connection, "With such interference in my command I cannot expect to be of much service in the field." General Johnston detained Jackson's letter to Benjamin, which had been sent through him as his immediate commander, and urged Jackson to reconsider it. Governor Letcher, learning of Jackson's resignation before the receipt of a letter from Jackson telling him what he had done and his reasons for it, immediately called on the secretary of war and insisted that no action should be taken. Yielding to the earnest solicitations of the governor and others whom he esteemed, but without withdrawing from the position he had taken in reference to the interference of the secretary with his command, Jackson consented to the withdrawal of his letter of resignation.

The enemy soon reoccupied the territory Jackson had been ordered to abandon, and he found himself confined to the lower Valley, which he had held previous to the Romney expedition. Loring was ordered to a new command, and the Tennessee, Georgia and Arkansas troops that had been with him were gradually taken away and joined to the other forces constituting Johnston's right wing near Centreville and Manassas, leaving only Virginia troops, those of Garnett's, Burks', and Taliaferro's brigades in the Valley with Jackson. The militia commands, never well organized, were now dwindling away by details and by enlistments in the volunteer regiments.

The Federals reoccupied Romney on the 7th of February, and a little later sent an expedition as far south as Moorefield, bringing off captured cattle. The reconstruction of the railroad was also begun, Carson having fallen back to Bloomery gap, and by the 14th the Baltimore & Ohio railroad was again opened from the west to Hancock, on which day Lander made a bold dash with both infantry and cavalry on the militia stationed at Bloomery, taking them by surprise, and capturing some 75 prisoners, including 17 officers. The militia rallied and checked the Federals until they could get away their train, when they retreated. Ashby drove Lander away from Bloomery gap on the 16th, but the Federals continued to hold the territory they had regained. Warned by these movements, Jackson ceased to give furloughs for

the time, and provided boats at Castleman's ferry on the Shenandoah to make good his communications with Gen. D. H. Hill, who was encamped at Leesburg, east of the Blue ridge.

February, 1862, was a month of Confederate disasters; the capture by the Federals of Fort Henry and Roanoke island, Fort Donelson and Nashville; the evacuation of Lexington, Mo., Bowling Green and Columbus, Ky., followed one after another. In this period of gloom, Jefferson Davis was inaugurated President of the Confederate States.

CHAPTER XIII.

REVIEW OF MILITARY CONDITIONS, SPRING OF 1862.

IN the spring of 1862 the Federal and Confederate armies in northeastern Virginia held nearly the same relative positions as in the early autumn of 1861.

The former had, February 7th, again occupied the line of the South branch of the Potomac, which Jackson, by order, had abandoned, and Gen. Edward Johnson, after his victory of December 13, 1861, on Alleghany mountain, had fallen back to Shenandoah mountain; but the Confederate army of Northern Virginia still had its center, in command of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, on the field of its victory at Manassas, while its right rested at Fredericksburg, in command of General Holmes, and Jackson held its left in the lower Shenandoah valley. Practically its pickets patrolled the Potomac from Chesapeake bay up to within the mountains. Not satisfied with a condition of military affairs that still held north of the Potomac the great army—on its rolls, March 1, 1862, 222,000 men—that McClellan had, during more than half a year, been collecting and organizing, President Lincoln ordered that an advance of the whole army of the Potomac, except such a force as was necessary to defend Washington, should be made, on or before the 22d of February, to drive back the opposing Confederates and press on to the capture of Richmond.

This movement was actually begun. Banks marched from Frederick City, Md., toward Harper's Ferry, to attack and drive back Jackson. McClellan advanced his great army, from the intrenched camps around Washington, to attack Johnston at Centreville and Manassas, but when, after floundering through the spring mud of midland Virginia, he reached his objective, he found that Johnston, his able and wily opponent, had anticipated his coming, and, abandoning his intrenched camps and advanced positions at Leesburg and elsewhere, along and near the Potomac, had put his forces behind the Rappahannock. Jackson, preferring fighting to retreating,

skirmished with Banks' advance, offering him battle in front of Winchester, but when that was not accepted, reluctantly evacuating that historic town. Sending all his stores up the valley, he fell back to Strasburg, conforming his movements to those of Johnston, but, in the person of Ashby, his famous cavalry leader, constantly punishing every advance of his timid pursuer.

Reaching the conclusion that he had started on the wrong road to Richmond, McClellan, on the 13th of March, called his corps commanders together, at Fairfax Court House, and proposed another plan of advance on Richmond, which they joined in recommending to President Lincoln and which he reluctantly accepted. The commanding general proposed to move a grand and splendidly-appointed army of 120,000 men, by water, from Alexandria down the Potomac and the bay to Fortress Monroe, at the end of the peninsula of Virginia, and from that base of operation and supplies, to march up the peninsula between the James and the York, flanked by a strong naval force on each of these great tidal rivers, by the nearest roads, to Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy as well as of Virginia. The defenses of Washington were to be held by some 18,000 men; some 7,000 were to occupy Manassas, that the railway thence to Strasburg might be reopened, and 35,000 were to help Banks look after Jackson in the Valley. The force that had followed Gen. Ed Johnson as he fell back from Alleghany mountain, and that in the South branch of the Potomac valley were soon to be combined, and thus 16,000 men placed in command of Fremont, in the Mountain department, to menace Jackson's left flank and rear, while the 8,000 under Cox, on the Kanawha line, as well as some Pennsylvania reserves, were ordered to Manassas. A grand total of more than 200,000 troops, of all arms, saying nothing of the large supporting naval force, thus began converging on Richmond from a great bordering sweep that extended northeastward along the mountain ranges that border the valley to the Potomac, then down that great tidal river to Chesapeake bay, Virginia's Mediterranean, and thence to the entrance of the grand harbor of Hampton Roads, the gateway to the mouth of the James, a great circle distance of fully 400 miles.

The shipment of McClellan's army from Washington to his new field of operations, began on the 17th of

March, and on the 21st of that month, Gen. J. B. Magruder, in command of the Confederate front on the peninsula, reported the landing of large bodies of troops at Fortress Monroe, and asked for 30,000 men to meet the threatening invasion.

The sight of the departure of this great army alarmed Lincoln concerning the safety of the capital, and induced him to modify McClellan's plan of campaign by ordering, April 3d, that McDowell's corps should remain in front of Washington. On the 17th of May he was directed to advance to Fredericksburg, but keeping himself in position so he could be readily recalled to Washington, if necessary, to aid in its defense. McClellan objected to this arrangement, but was compelled to submit to it. McDowell appeared in front of the staunch old city on the Rappahannock near the close of May, when the Confederates, under General Holmes, fell back toward Richmond. Lincoln visited McDowell's camp, on the Stafford heights, May 23d, and it was then decided that McDowell should cross the Rappahannock on the 26th and march toward Richmond.

Fortunately for Virginia and the Confederacy, on the very day that McClellan was conferring at Fairfax Court House concerning a change of base and of plan of campaign, Gen. Robert E. Lee took command, under President Davis, of all the forces of the Confederacy, and, with characteristic energy and foresight, at once began preparations to meet the various oncoming Federal armies that were responding to the "on to Richmond" demand of the North.

To meet the several Federal columns converging from the great outer circle, along which they had been gathering during the preceding eight months, the prospect for Lee, although he held the inner circle and the shorter lines of defense, was by no means reassuring, even to such a stout-hearted and self-reliant commander as himself. Huger, on his extreme right, held Norfolk with some 7,000 men, guarded in front by the ram Virginia, already famous for her 8th of March exploits and great naval victory in Hampton Roads; across Hampton Roads, Magruder was holding the peninsula, before Fortress Monroe and Hampton, with 11,000 men; Holmes held the Rappahannock, at Fredericksburg, with a brigade of 2,000; Johnston held the line of the upper Rappahannock

with about 47,000 men that had fallen back from Manassas; Stonewall Jackson safeguarded the lower Shenandoah valley with some 5,000 in his command; while on the extreme left of the sweep of Lee's line of defense, Edward Johnson held the Fort Johnson pass of the Shenandoah mountain, on the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, with some 3,500 men, the heroes of the Alleghany mountain battle. Lee's whole muster was only about 75,000 to meet the converging invasion of 200,000 or more fully armed and equipped soldiery.

Aware of the gigantic preparations that had been made for this impending campaign by both the contending nations, for such they undoubtedly were at that time, and of the mighty issues involved, not only all the people of the then United States and those of the then Confederate States, but those of all the living historic nations, paused and anxiously awaited the result of the mighty conflict that in the next half year would rage over nearly one-half of the territory of Virginia and an important portion of Maryland, and give to Fame's keeping and to History's records, names and deeds the world will not soon forget.

To the general observer, the result of this grand game of war was in the hands of McClellan, who, for an insignificant victory in the mountains of western Virginia, over a smaller and badly-generated force, had been, for months, heralded as the "Young Napoleon." He had at his command, counting sea power as well as land power, three times as many men as his antagonist, and behind him, in his nation's reserve, at least five times as many men of military age, saying nothing of the thousands of Europe's "soldiers of fortune" who were, for a consideration, ready to add, indefinitely, to his numbers. His people were the most ingenious, energetic and resourceful of any in the world, and could furnish an almost unlimited quantity of supplies, of every kind, that could be called for by the emergencies of war. His government, centralized by the war spirit and backed up by a great and determined nation, had apparently but to command victory in the impending contest, with the odds so much in its favor, to win it. Unfortunately for its cause, its commanding general, while a grand organizer, an able planner of campaigns, and the idol of the great army that he, mainly, had created, was a timid leader, and in

the hour of conflict "took counsel of his fears"—counselors that never make a successful soldier. These, as the sequence of events revealed, constantly in imagination, doubled the number of his foes and helped the success of their strategic movements. McClellan's plan of campaign was to hold back Lee's widely-scattered forces by the armies of observation that his numbers permitted him to place before Johnson, Jackson, Johnston and Holmes, while he landed his great army for active invasion on the peninsula, and, brushing aside Magruder, and Huger, pushed rapidly forward to capture Richmond before Lee could there concentrate men enough to successfully impede his progress to victory. With the sea power at hand to supply the wants of his army, there were abundant reasons why he should succeed.

Lee, the acknowledged first soldier of the old Federal army, who had been tendered by Lincoln and urged to accept the command of the Union army the very day before he resigned his commission and offered his services to Virginia, his native State and that of his ancestors, had a most serious and difficult problem to solve, when, on the memorable 13th of March, before referred to, he assumed command of the Confederate armies in the field and "sat down to count the cost" of the imminent conflict that, in Virginia, he must at once become the leader of on the Confederate side. He knew then, or soon thereafter, as he always did, the numbers and intentions of his adversary; he also knew, as few men of the South did, or realized, the great disparity of the contending nations in men and in resources. The soldiers at his command were, comparatively, few in numbers; they were also widely scattered; some a hundred miles or more, as the crow flies, to the southeast from his headquarters at Richmond; others 175 miles to the northwest, and others from 75 to 100 miles to the north and northeast, and with but limited means of transportation at his call should he desire to concentrate them. More than this, he knew that in a few days the period of the enlistment of most of these men, which had been but for a year, would expire, and no man could tell what they would do now that the stern experiences of war, in camp and field, had dulled the edge of their patriotic fervor. Even if nearly all re-enlisted, he realized that they were poorly clad, badly equipped, ill fed, and, to all human appearances, even leaving out the

question of numbers, in no condition to meet the splendidly equipped and supplied army they must soon meet and contend with. But there entered into Lee's calculations factors and forces that are mightier than armies and navies and more potent than resources. Fully satisfied of the righteousness of his intentions and of the cause which he had unhesitatingly espoused and was defending; knowing no line of action but that which duty pointed out, and with a sublime faith that never distrusted an overruling Providence, and therefore "never took counsel of its fears," he prayerfully and courageously grappled with the situation and prudently prepared for the impending conflict, satisfied and confident that with the army of Northern Virginia, every man of which not only loved but trusted in him, he would be the winner.

Apprised by McClellan's movements of his intentions, Lee increased and strengthened the defenses of Richmond and guarded the water approach to that threatened city by obstructing the ship channel of the James and planting intrenched batteries on Drewry's bluff; at the same time he recalled all but Ewell's division of Johnston's army from the line of the upper Rappahannock, and with these reinforced Magruder on the peninsula, who had already nearly completed a strong line of defense, from the James to the York, in front of Williamsburg and Yorktown, to bar McClellan's way to Richmond.

Having thus outlined the locations and dispositions of the combatants in the fields of action, the narrative now proceeds to follow the fortunes of the five Federal armies—which the compelling genius of Jackson soon made but two—that at the opening of the Virginia campaign of 1862, near the last of March, were co-operating for the capture of Richmond, and those of the opposing Confederate forces. Stonewall Jackson was first in the field of actual combat, and so his famous Valley campaign is the first chapter of the story.

CHAPTER XIV.

STONEWALL JACKSON'S VALLEY CAMPAIGN OF 1862.

BEFORE the opening of active military operations in the spring of 1862, Lincoln determined to reopen the Baltimore & Ohio railroad. Jackson held the portion of this road, which he had badly damaged, between Harper's Ferry and Hancock, and he must be forced back from the Potomac before the road could be repaired and reopened. To effect this Banks marched, February 22d, from his winter camp at Frederick, Md., and his advance entered Harper's Ferry the 24th, and laid a bateau bridge across the Potomac on which two brigades crossed on the 26th and occupied the town. McClellan himself reached that place the same day and ordered the establishment there of a depot of army supplies, preparatory to another forward movement, while the railroad was being opened. After going to Charlestown, on the 28th, he instructed Banks to locate Abercrombie's brigade at that place and Hamilton's at Smithfield, a few miles to the westward; Sedgwick, to whose division these belonged, to establish himself at Charlestown. Shields, now in command of Lander's force from the South Branch valley, was ordered to Martinsburg, and Williams from Hancock to Bunker Hill; thus establishing a line entirely across the Valley, in front of the Baltimore & Ohio. These camps were all connected by fine macadam roads. All arrangements were completed by March 6th and the three brigades of Banks were well placed, not only for guarding the Baltimore & Ohio, but also for an advance on Winchester.

On the same day Banks marched from Frederick to attack him, Jackson, in obedience to Johnston's orders, sent the Seventh and Fourteenth Tennessee regiments to Manassas and the Third Arkansas to Strasburg, to take the cars for Fredericksburg. He retained for further orders the rest of Loring's men who were not Virginians. Having been thus depleted, Jackson asked Johnston, by letter, February 24th, whether he desired additional

fortifications at Winchester, stating that he was arranging to construct a raft bridge over the Shenandoah so that his troops and those at Leesburg could quickly co-operate. At that very time Johnston was sending his stores and baggage to the rear, and on the 7th of March, Whiting withdrew toward Fredericksburg, from his camp on the lower Occoquan, and D. H. Hill, from his at Leesburg, by way of Warrenton, toward the Rappahannock; and on the 9th, the center, under Johnston himself, abandoned Centreville and Manassas. By March 11th all the Confederate infantry and artillery from the Blue ridge to Fredericksburg, were aligned on the south bank of the Rappahannock.

These movements left Jackson exposed to both front and flank attacks; but Johnston had confidence in his ability to take care of himself, and instructed him "to endeavor to employ the invaders in the valley, but without exposing himself to the danger of defeat, by keeping so near the enemy as to prevent him from making any considerable detachment to reinforce McClellan, but not so near that he might be compelled to fight." Jackson was ready enough to obey orders as far as keeping the invaders in the valley, and constantly employed, were concerned; but he doubtless fully intended to fight them, notwithstanding these instructions, if opportunity offered for so doing.

By Jackson's field return of February 28th, he had 4,297 infantry, 369 artillery and 601 cavalry; a total of 5,267, officers and men, present for duty. This little army of three brigades (among them the already famous "Stonewall brigade") was made up of ten regiments of Virginia volunteer infantry and a battalion of Virginia Irish regulars; five Virginia artillery companies with 24 guns, and a cavalry regiment composed of Virginia companies and Chew's horse artillery of 3 guns, under the already renowned Ashby. Included among these men were some fragments of militia brigades, mostly on special duty.

By McClellan's field return of March 2d, Banks had present for duty, of all arms, 38,484 men. After the occupation of Winchester, Sedgwick's brigade was sent back to guard the Potomac from the mouth of the Monocacy down to the Great Falls, still leaving Banks full 30,000 men when he followed Jackson, with about one-

sixth as many, as he retired up the Valley, after evacuating Winchester on the 11th of March.

Banks' advance occupied Charlestown, 22 miles from Winchester, February 26th; the advance of his right, marching from Bunker Hill, appeared at Stephenson's, four miles in front of Winchester, March 6th, when Jackson promptly formed line in front of his fortifications and offered battle; but the Federals as promptly fell back. On the 11th Banks cautiously advanced his left to Berryville, 10 miles east of Winchester, by a good stone road. Jackson again drew up his little army, in front of Winchester, covering the three roads by which Banks was advancing his whole army, and all day awaited an attack from the large force that came to within four miles of his position. When this did not come on to combat, he, late in the day, reluctantly followed his trains to the vicinity of Newtown, after having called a council of war (the first and the last he ever called), consisting of General Garnett and his regimental commanders, in Winchester, after dark, to which he proposed that they should make an attack on Banks' advance, at Stephenson's, before daylight the next morning. The council, as yet ignorant of the manner of man that counseled, rejected his proposal. He doubtless would have carried out his plans regardless of this conclusion if he had not then learned that, without orders, his army was already five miles away from Winchester; too far to recall them for a night march and attack. He later followed his army and bivouacked in its rear, with "Little Sorrel," in a fence corner. The next day he marched to Strasburg, 18 miles from Winchester, where he halted until the 15th. Banks occupied Winchester the 12th, but Ashby, with his cavalry, many of them bold riders reared in the lower valley, kept him so occupied in protecting the rear and flanks of his army as well as its front, that he did not follow after Jackson until the 18th, when he started Shields' division in pursuit. This reached Strasburg, the sally-port of the western middle section of the Valley, the next day, when Jackson, leaving the gateway open, with Ashby as its sentinel, again fell back, first to Woodstock, 12 miles, and then to Mt. Jackson, 24 miles from Strasburg.

On the 16th of March, McClellan, convinced that his grand movement on Jackson, by which he had so easily secured control of the lower Valley, would enable him to

hold that lovely country with a small force, ordered Banks to cross the Blue ridge, establish and strongly intrench his command at and near Manassas, and proceed to open the railway from Washington to that point and thence to Strasburg; then intrench a brigade of infantry with two batteries, near Front Royal, where the railway crosses the Shenandoah; intrench another brigade at Strasburg; build and occupy blockhouses at the railway bridges; leave two regiments of cavalry at Winchester, and keep his front covered by constantly employed cavalry well advanced—"the general object being to cover the line of the Potomac and Washington," and, he doubtless mentally added, protect the right of the army moving toward Fredericksburg. Banks hastened to comply with these orders. Shields' division was recalled from Strasburg, and on the 20th, Williams' division took up its line of march for Manassas.

Ashby, who kept up a constant skirmish with the Federal advance between Woodstock and Strasburg, routing its pickets and peering into its camps, reported to Jackson on the evening of March 21st, that the enemy had evacuated Strasburg and he was following them. Jackson, having been instructed by Johnston to hold in the valley the enemy already there, followed after Ashby at dawn of the 22d, Fulkerson's brigade from Woodstock and Garnett's and Burks' from Mt. Jackson, all reaching Strasburg and encamping there that night. Ashby with 200 to 300 cavalry and three cannon, attacked and drove in the Federal pickets, about a mile from Winchester, at 5 p. m. of the 22d. Banks ordered his command under arms and sent a brigade of infantry, two batteries and some artillery to meet this attack. Ashby skirmished for a time and then withdrew, three miles, to Kernstown, for the night, reporting to Jackson that he had learned that all but four regiments of the Federal army had left for the north and that these would follow the next morning. Ashby's information was only partly correct. The last of Williams' division of Banks' command had marched for Manassas the morning of the 22d, but Shields' division, some 7,000 men, had not yet left Winchester.

Shields, whose arm had been broken in the skirmish of the 22d, reported to Banks that he thought the attack was only by a small cavalry force, but during the night, as a precautionary provision, he posted Kimball's brigade

of infantry and a battery across the Valley turnpike, well toward Kernstown, with Sullivan's brigade in supporting distance, and covered all roads leading to Winchester from the north, west and south. Tyler's infantry brigade and Broadhead's cavalry he held in Winchester. On the morning of the 23d, after a careful reconnoissance of the front, it was concluded, as before, that only a small Confederate cavalry force was there, and that Jackson would not venture so far from his support. Thus satisfied, Banks took his departure, under orders, for Washington, leaving his staff to ride toward Manassas in the afternoon.

Jackson knew that a large body of Banks' men had left the Valley and concluded, from Ashby's reports, that but a small force remained at Winchester. This he determined to attack, with the expectation that by so doing he could recall Banks' whole army to the Valley. At daybreak, on Sunday, the 23d of March, he sent four companies of infantry to support Ashby, following these with his whole force. It was 14 miles from his camp at Strasburg to Kernstown, a fair day's march, so his advance did not reach Ashby until about 10 a. m. and his main body until 1 p. m.

Jackson's men were much wearied by the long march of 26 miles, that most of them had made in about a day and a half, over a somewhat muddy stone road, so he gave orders to go into bivouac for the night, intending to attack, with rested troops, the next morning. On a further examination, he found that the position he had taken, about a mile south of Kernstown, could be seen from Pritchard's hill, about a mile north of Kernstown, which was occupied by Federal artillery, and that it would be dangerous to delay his attack, now it was known he was present in force, as the enemy might be reinforced during the night; so he decided to give battle as soon as he could arrange to do so.

Ashby, with his cavalry and Chew's battery, had engaged the enemy's attention from early dawn; when Captain Nadenbousch arrived, at 10 a. m., with his four companies of infantry skirmishers, he again advanced and made a spirited attack. Colonel Kimball, commanding the Federal forces in Shields' enforced absence, met this by more than a regiment of Ohio skirmishers, deployed across the Valley turnpike, flanked by batteries and followed by Sullivan's brigade. These forced Ashby to

retire, a few hundred yards, to Kernstown. When Jackson's main body came up, he was ordered to prepare for the attack in force by threatening the Federal left, resting on the old Front Royal road, and also its right on the Opequon road. To the latter he sent Major Funsten with 140 cavalry, leaving himself but 150.

Jackson mustered, on this Kernstown battlefield, 3,087 infantry, of which 2,742 became engaged; 27 cannon, 18 of which came into action, and 290 cavalry. Shields reported that he had for fighting duty 6,000 infantry, 750 cavalry and 24 cannon. Of his thirteen infantry regiments, six were from Ohio, three from Indiana, and one each from Illinois and West Virginia; of his artillery, two companies were from West Virginia, two from Ohio and one from the Fourth regular United States artillery. Of his sixteen companies of cavalry, four were from Michigan, two each from Ohio and Maryland, six from West Virginia, and two appear to have been regulars. McClellan's return for March indicates that Shields had 9,000 men present for duty at this time.

Scanning the topography of the field of battle and the positions his foe had occupied, from a rising ground near Kernstown, Jackson saw that a front attack would be hazardous, since the Federals were protected and concealed by a wood on their left, while their batteries, on commanding hills, guarded their right and swept the roads and open fields in their front. He quickly discovered that the dominating feature of the whole field was a prominent, but rather low ridge, partly wooded and partly cleared, that ran northeast and southwest, nearly parallel to the Valley turnpike and about three miles from it where he had massed his troops, and two miles from it where the Federal line crossed that road. This Sandy ridge, as it was called, was about four miles long; it sank down, its end crossed by a cleared field, into a large open forest at its northeastern end; this forest extended to and concealed the Cedar Creek turnpike, which diverged to the west from the Valley turnpike some three miles beyond Kernstown.

Satisfied that he could easily flank Shields' right and force him in retreat from his position if he could gain the crest of the Sandy ridge and advance to its northeastern end, Jackson at once proceeded to execute his designs. Burks' brigade was left on the turnpike, a mile south of

Kernstown, to support Ashby, guard the train and form a reserve. Fulkerson's brigade, followed by part of Carpenter's battery, was marched northward, as if to attack the enemy's right center, passing bravely through a storm of shot and shell, from Pritchard's hill, to which Carpenter made brief reply in passing. Nearing the Federal batteries, Fulkerson turned northwest and, rapidly moving, soon gained and deployed across Sandy ridge, at right angles to its trend, securing a very strong position, on its crest, for his left, behind a stone fence overlooking and dominating the field that extended down the slope of the northeastern end of the ridge to the forest that reached from the foot of that end to the Cedar Creek turnpike. Garnett's brigade followed, but much farther to the left, and having gained the crest of the ridge, marched along that to Fulkerson's line, where most of it took position on his right, thus extending a strong line of battle across Sandy ridge and into the open field, on its eastern slope, which extended from near the crest and overlooked the Federal position. Jackson quickly saw its advantages and ordered up McLaughlin's and Waters' batteries and Carpenter's other guns, and placed them, nearly at right angles to his infantry line, in front of the wood above this field, supported by some of Fulkerson's men. This disposition of his fighters was admirable. It was a right-angled salient with a protecting wood in the rear at each side. The angle looked into the midst of the Federal position; the batteries protected his right and commanded those of the enemy.

Ashby was ordered to keep up a bold demonstration on the right and Jackson now opened on the left, and soon forced his foe to withdraw from his chosen position. Seeing that his right was in extreme danger, Kimball promptly provided to counteract Jackson's movements. Tyler's brigade, which at about 2 p. m. had reached the junction of the Cedar Creek and Valley turnpikes, and was there waiting in reserve, was ordered to vigorously attack the Confederate left. Jackson was now master of the situation, and unless he could be driven from his position he would, undoubtedly, gain the day.

Tyler, equal to the emergency, marched rapidly along the Cedar Creek road to opposite the northeastern end of Sandy ridge, and there, concealed and protected by the intervening forest, formed his line of battle, parallel to

and longer than Jackson's, and at 3:30 p. m. advanced to the attack, just as Jackson had placed his men in position and was advancing to flank Sullivan's right. Tyler's vigorous onset was unexpected, but Fulkerson, on Jackson's left, behind the stone fence, met it with a withering fire, at short range, and the two attacking regiments were repulsed with severe loss and broke to the rear, the One Hundred and Tenth Pennsylvania so demoralized as to be of no further use that day. Tyler, with his other regiments, soon renewed the attack, which Fulkerson again repulsed from his front, but which fiercely continued for two hours in front of Garnett. Shields says of it: "Here the struggle became desperate, and for a short time doubtful."

Observing that the great contention was now on his right, and that there was no fighting force to detain him on the left, Kimball hastened six of his and Sullivan's regiments to Tyler's left, extending his line so that in advancing it would overlap Jackson's right and turn that flank. Jackson made heroic efforts to meet this superior force, inciting his thin line of weary veterans to stubborn resistance, bringing up the Fifth Virginia, which had been held in reserve, ordering up the Forty-second and sending for the Forty-eighth, which had been left to guard his train, that he might throw the last man and the last gun into the final struggle. Tyler did not wait for Jackson to get even these small additions to his force, but with added strength, again led forward his men and by their vigorous charge, the front of which fell on Garnett, caused the Confederate line to waver, and then, by order of its brigadier, to fall back.

Jackson, who was directing the artillery on his right and forcing back the advancing Federals, knew nothing of this order, and was highly indignant, when, just about dark, his army, which he tried in vain to rally, swept by him in retreat. Fulkerson was easily holding his position on the left when Garnett's retreat exposed his right and forced him to retreat, stubbornly fighting the superior numbers now rushing to attack him. The Fifth Virginia was coming to his relief in this emergency when Garnett ordered that also to retreat, but Jackson met and halted it in the edge of a wood in rear of his former position, and ordered the retreating infantry to form behind that. The Forty-second, coming up, was placed

on the right of the Fifth. These regiments and some batteries resisted the enemy's advance, twice repulsing their attacks, and gave the retreating men opportunity to rally and other batteries time to withdraw. By extending their lines the Federals finally forced these regiments from the field.

The mass of the Confederate army retreated along Sandy ridge for some distance, then took a road leading to the Valley turnpike, and then, slowly but sullenly, retired five or six miles to their trains in the vicinity of Newtown, having lost 691 men, of whom 80 were killed, 340 wounded (some 70 of these left on the field) and 260 missing. The Federals held the field of battle, captured two disabled guns and 200 or 300 prisoners. They made no pursuit, and Jackson's rear spent the night where his command had massed in the afternoon. Six days after the battle Shields was uncertain as to his losses, but reported his killed as 103, the wounded as 441, and the missing as 24, a total of 568.

The day after the battle the citizens of Winchester, mainly men past middle age, obtained permission to bury the Confederate dead, and its noble women did all they were allowed to do in caring for the wounded. Jackson firmly believed that his failure was the result of the retreat ordered by General Garnett, and circumstances, months afterward, showed that he continued in that belief. To teach his subordinates a lesson, and to show them and others what he expected should be done under similar circumstances, he placed Garnett under arrest and relieved him from his command. For this he has been censured by writers ignorant of the facts in the case. Those who knew Jackson can testify that in this case, as in others for which he has been blamed, he was not animated by animosity or personal feeling. After the Seven Days' battles, Garnett was released from arrest and subsequently fell at Gettysburg leading a brigade.

On the 24th Jackson retired to the south side of Cedar creek and then fell back to his former camps near Mt. Jackson, holding the line of Stony creek which his engineer, after a careful examination, had recommended as the best one for defense in all that region.

Shields, confident that Jackson would not have brought on such an engagement without expecting reinforcements, hastened, the night after the battle, to bring

together all the troops within his reach; Williams was recalled from his march toward Manassas, with the request that his rear brigade, already 20 miles away, should march all night and rejoin him on the morning of the 24th. He gathered all the men he could find in his rear to join him by forced night marches. Banks was halted, on his way to Washington, at Harper's Ferry. He promptly ordered back all of Williams' division and returned at once to Winchester, retaining Sedgwick at Harper's Ferry. Jackson's prompt action and bold attack had completely changed McClellan's plans, and instead of establishing Banks near Manassas with 20,000 men, he ordered him to remain in the Valley with all these forces and sent him 10,000 more, detached from his own army, to aid in driving back Jackson or to meet another anticipated attack.

McClellan sent his orders to Banks on the 1st day of April, from the steamer on which he was just starting to join his command at Fortress Monroe. Disquieted by what had happened, Lincoln ordered the retention of McDowell's corps in front of Washington until further orders. On the 1st of April, 73,456 men and 109 cannon were held for the defense of that city. Of these, 18,000 were in the forts around Washington, 1,350 along the Potomac above that city, 10,859 at Manassas, 7,780 at Warrenton, and 35,467 (including the 10,000 under Blenker ordered to him) were with Banks in the Shenandoah valley. When Lincoln, on the 3d of April, detained McDowell's corps, it was, as he informed McClellan on the 9th, because he feared that the Confederates might turn back from the Rappahannock and sack Washington. On the 4th, McDowell was put in command of the forces between the Blue ridge and Fredericksburg, including those in the defenses of Washington; his command, thus made independent of McClellan, was called the department of the Rappahannock; Banks was placed in command of the department of the Shenandoah, including that valley and its extension into Maryland, and Fremont was put in command of the Mountain department, embracing the Appalachian region west of the Valley.

Jackson established his headquarters at Woodstock March 24th, at Narrow Passage the 26th, and at Hawkinstown on the 29th. Banks made an advance on the

1st of April and forced Ashby's pickets back to Edinburg, on the line of Stony creek, which Jackson had decided to hold. He established his headquarters at Rude's hill, April 2d, and there remained until the 17th, when the Federals again moved forward in force, occupying himself, as well as the cold and raw weather, with snow and rain would permit, in recruiting and drilling his troops, marching them back and forth, almost daily, from their camps to the line of Stony creek, and otherwise keeping them in fighting trim, doing all in his power to get to his command the regiments of Virginia militia that had been ordered to him from the counties of Augusta and Rockingham in the Shenandoah valley. He was greatly aided in reorganizing his army by the anticipated general conscription bill, placing all the able-bodied men of the country, between eighteen and thirty-five years of age, in the military service, which became a law on the 16th of April, as patriotic Virginians preferred to volunteer rather than be conscripted.

When Banks again began his forward movement, on the 17th of April, he captured some of Ashby's outposts, but that fearless trooper turned on him at every favorable opportunity, and forced him to contend for every mile he made up the valley. Jackson retired before the oncoming enemy and reached Harrisonburg, 25 miles beyond Mt. Jackson, during the morning of the 18th. To the east of this town the Massanutton mountains, beginning opposite Strasburg and dividing the middle section of the Shenandoah valley into two parts, drop off abruptly and the valley widens to near 30 miles between the North mountain and the Blue ridge. Sending all his surplus trains and his tents on to Staunton, with orders to burn the Valley Turnpike bridge at Mt. Crawford after these had crossed the North river of the Shenandoah, Jackson, at Harrisonburg, turned abruptly to the left, abandoning the Valley turnpike and taking the one leading from Harrisonburg around the southwestern end of the Massanutton mountains to Conrad's store, and thence across the Blue ridge, by Swift Run gap, to Gordonsville, halting the night of the 18th at Peale's cross roads, six miles from Harrisonburg, and the next day crossing the main Shenandoah to camps on Elk run near the western entrance to Swift Run gap of the Blue ridge; thus placing himself in a thoroughly

secure position, where he could easily hold the road leading to Ewell's division, of Johnston's army, which had fallen back and was holding the line of the Rapidan, taking the precaution of sending to burn the bridges across the South Fork Shenandoah in the eastern, or Page valley, below him.

When Banks learned of Jackson's unexpected movement to the left, he informed his government that he believed Jackson had abandoned the valley. Continuing his tardy pursuit, his cavalry entered Harrisonburg on the 22d of April and part of his infantry on the 26th. Looking out at the broadly widening valley before him, recalling that his base of supplies was nearly 100 miles in his rear by a wagon road, and uncertain as to what had become of his elusive foe, he hesitated what to do and asked for instructions.

Jackson, in his secure position but with his men exposed in open bivouacs to the snow, rain and sleet that made memorable the closing days of April, completed the reorganization of his army, received additions by enlistments and the Tenth Virginia, ordered to him from Ewell's division, increasing his force to near 6,000 men; in the meantime stimulating Ashby to keep Banks busy guarding his encampment and his long line of communication to his rear, which presented so many favorable points of attack to the horsemen of the Valley who knew all its byways as well as its highways and the sally-ports to these from the mountains on either side. He had his engineers, as well as his cavalry, on the outlook for opportunities to attack any exposed positions occupied by Banks. On the 28th, Jackson appealed to Lee, now the acting commander-in-chief of the Confederate forces, to let Ewell's command cross the Blue ridge and join him, that thus reinforced he might march out and attack Banks and drive him back down the Valley, suggesting also that some additional men could be spared him from the force covering Fredericksburg. General Lee was favorably impressed with Jackson's suggestion, writing, that "a decisive and successful blow at Banks' column would be fraught with the happiest results, but regretting that the large force of the enemy now threatening Fredericksburg would not admit of the withdrawal of troops from that line, but suggesting that he might combine the forces of Ewell and Edward Johnson with his own, if he thought that by so doing he could hold Banks

in check. Jackson gladly accepted Lee's suggestions, and, at his headquarters at Conrad's store, in the Elk Run valley, worked out his plan of operations.

When Jackson retired from Harrisonburg, on the 19th, to the Blue ridge, and left the road to Staunton, 25 miles by the Valley turnpike, uncovered, Edward Johnson's command, consisting of six regiments of infantry, three batteries and a small force of cavalry, in all about 3,000 fighting men, fell back to West View, 7 miles west of Staunton, to be prepared for any movement Banks might make in that direction; the two brigades of Milroy and Schenck, of Fremont's command, that had been opposing Johnson, following him up and establishing a Federal advance at the eastern foot of the Shenandoah mountain, about 20 miles west of Staunton.

There was no enemy in front of Ewell to prevent his joining Jackson, as McDowell's army, now that all threatened danger of an attack on Washington was apparently removed, had been diverted toward Fredericksburg. It was different with Edward Johnson's force. That could not be removed without endangering Staunton, a base of supplies for Lee's as well as Jackson's army; that town was also on the important line of railway leading to Richmond. This condition of things compelled Jackson to strike his first blow at Fremont's advance under Milroy, and thus release Johnson's command for co-operating with his. Only common country roads led from Jackson's camp, along the western foot of the Blue ridge, to Staunton, and these were rendered almost impassable by the well-nigh continuous wet weather and the freezings and thawings that characterized that season. To solve this difficulty, and at the same time to effectually cover his strategic movement, Jackson, after having had the roads examined and ascertained that he could secure railway transportation, decided to march his own army along the foot of the Blue ridge, some 18 miles, to the vicinity of Port Republic, the way for most of the distance leading through flat woods, and there take the turnpike across the Blue ridge to Meechum's River station of the Virginia Central railroad, whence, by the aid of the railway, he could speedily transfer his command to Staunton and join Johnson, just beyond, in a rapid movement that would

unexpectedly fall upon and demoralize Fremont's advance; arranging that Ewell's division should cross the Blue ridge and occupy the camps at Elk run even before he left their vicinity. To cover the changes decided on and deceive Banks, Jackson, on the 29th of April, sent Ashby, reinforced by infantry and artillery, to make a demonstration in front of Harrisonburg, sending Captain Hotchkiss, of the engineers, to the peak of the Massanutton mountains during the previous night, to observe the effect of the movement, as this outlook commanded a full view of Banks' camp, and regulate the movements of Ashby by signal. His whole army followed after Ashby, thus clearing his camps, which Ewell, crossing the Blue ridge the same day, occupied immediately after. Banks sent his trains to the rear and formed a line of battle on a very advantageous position, but made no attack. His object accomplished, late in the day Jackson countermarched to Conrad's store, but instead of going into his former camps, as his men expected, he turned up the river, just as a driving rain began, and marched several miles in the direction of Port Republic before going into camp. Jackson and his staff rode a dozen miles to "Lewiston," the home of Gen. S. H. Lewis, for the night. Ashby's cavalry covered and concealed the movement by advancing along the roads on the western side of the Shenandoah.

During the whole of May 1st and 2d all of Jackson's command was engaged in an arduous struggle in getting his trains and artillery through the rain, the mud and the quicksands between their camp of the night of the 30th and Port Republic, 12 miles distant. The 3d proved a genuine sunny May day and the troops marched rapidly over the hard, well-graded road across the Blue ridge, and Saturday night found their advance at Meechum's River station of the Virginia Central railroad. The next day, the troops that had reached the railway were conveyed by train to Staunton, while those in the rear marched to the nearer Afton station, to which the cars returned for them. The artillery and army trains took the country road to Staunton, recrossing the Blue ridge at Rockfish gap. The despair of the citizens of Staunton when apprised that Jackson had left the valley was unexpectedly turned into joy, when, just as the church bells were ringing for the Sunday morning serv-

ice, the trains rolled in with the advance of Jackson's army, all of which was there concentrated by the afternoon of the 5th. Taking the next day for rest and to settle with the Lord of the Sabbath for the day that had, of necessity incurred from bad roads, been taken for a march, Jackson was ready to move against the enemy on the morning of the 7th. During the afternoon of the previous day Johnson marched his brigade from his camps at West View, through Buffalo gap and up the eastern slope of Big North mountain, and at dusk rested his advance, in bivouac, in Dry Branch gap or Notch, of that mountain, 15 miles west of Staunton. Milroy's advance was encamped near the eastern foot of Shenandoah mountain, across the Big Calf Pasture valley, in sight of Johnson's pickets. Jackson's engineers had previously conferred with Johnson, after a reconnoissance of the Federal advance, and it had been agreed that Johnson should send a flanking party, by a detour to the left, in advance of his front attack, to fall upon the rear of Milroy's camp.

Learning from his spies that a junction had been made between the forces of Jackson and Johnson, Milroy ordered his detachments to concentrate at McDowell, and calling for reinforcements from Fremont, who was advancing up the South Branch valley, he prepared to make a stand. When Johnson's flanking party reached Milroy's previous camp they found there only a picket, the most of which was captured. Jackson, by rapid riding from Staunton, was early on the ground at Rodgers', at the foot of the Shenandoah mountain, 23 miles from Staunton, and under his personal direction the pursuit was continued across that mountain to Shaw's Fork, the Federal artillery opposing a further advance from the crest of Shaw's ridge. The march was resumed early on the morning of the 8th, Johnson's regiments still in advance. The enemy had retreated during the night, and Jackson met with no opposition in crossing Shaw's ridge, the Cow Pasture valley and the western slope of Bull Pasture mountain, the summit of which was reached early in the forenoon. From a projecting rock on the right of the road Jackson was enabled to see the camp and the position taken by the enemy across the Bull Pasture river, on the terraces and bottoms of that valley in the vicinity of McDowell; while his engineer, who was famil-

iar with the locality, sketched for him the topography and the approaches to the Federal position, which were partly concealed by a forest along the eastern bluffs of the river. Generals Jackson and Johnson then rode up into the fields on the undulating top of the mountain, on the left, and from that locality further reconnoitered the ground Milroy had chosen for defense, observing at the same time arrangements for placing a battery on a cleared spur to the northeast of McDowell. Noticing this group of horsemen with but a line of skirmishers to protect them, Milroy sent a flanking party up the mountain side, through the woods on his right, to try and capture these officers. Johnson reinforced his skirmishers and after a lively engagement the enemy retired. Concluding from this, and the appearance of things in the Federal camp, that no further attack would be made that day, Jackson gave instructions for the posting of Johnson's brigade in rear of the fields on the summit of the mountain south of the turnpike, and ordered the opening of a road by which artillery could be taken to the same position, expecting to attack the enemy the next morning unless they should attack him in his chosen position. At the same time he desired to await the movements of a flanking column which he had sent around to the left into the Bull Pasture valley, to ascend that valley and fall upon Milroy's right while he attacked in front. With these arrangements made and Johnson's brigade in position for attack or defense, and Taliaferro's and Campbell's brigades near at hand, Jackson sent his staff back to headquarters, at Wilson's on the Cow Pasture, intending himself soon to follow for refreshments and rest. In the meantime Schenck's brigade, which had left Franklin at 11 a. m. of the preceding day, had covered 34 miles in twenty-three hours and reached McDowell at 10 a. m. of the 8th, thus adding some 1,300 infantry, a battery of artillery and about 250 cavalry to Milroy's command, now in charge of the former as the senior in rank.

Informed by his scouts and skirmishers that the Confederate force was increasing and that there were indications of the moving of a flanking party, Milroy, with the approval of Schenck, at about half past three in the afternoon of the 8th, formed and moved forward a line of battle, composed of portions of his own and of Schenck's brigade, across the Bull Pasture and up the

slope of Sitlington's hill, as the part of the mountain held by Johnson was called, to seize that hill and drive the Confederates from it. A skirt of woods concealed his initial movement, but as soon as his skirmishers appeared in the bushy field, Jackson, who was still on the lookout, ordered up four regiments of Johnson's brigade which had been halted in concealment along the turnpike. He deployed the Fifty-second Virginia as skirmishers and advanced them to engage the enemy; posting in their rear, in the center of his position on the summit of the hill, the Twelfth Georgia, and on its right the Forty-fourth Virginia. The Fifty-eighth Virginia was marched to the left to support the Fifty-second. The Confederate line then formed an arc of a circle, with its convexity toward the enemy so that its right was nearly perpendicular to its left. As the Federal skirmishers, in line of battle, advancing up the mountain side, came in sight they became engaged with Johnson's skirmishers. Two Federal regiments attacked the Confederate left, advancing boldly and steadily and pushing back the skirmish line until they became engaged with the line of battle in a fierce struggle on the brow of the hill. In the meantime, Milroy had sent two Ohio and a West Virginia regiment to attack and attempt to turn the Confederate right. The two Ohio regiments vigorously attacked Johnson's right, while the West Virginia one pushed up the turnpike to accomplish the purpose for which it was sent. Anticipating such a movement, Jackson had placed the Thirty-first Virginia on the turnpike below the point where the Confederates had climbed to Sitlington's hill. The attack on Johnson's right led Jackson to withdraw the Thirty-first from guarding the turnpike and send that and the Twenty-fifth Virginia to Johnson, who placed them in support of the Forty-fourth on his right, thus extending his line not only across the field on Sitlington's hill, but down the slope of that hill northward toward the turnpike. Jackson then committed the guarding of the turnpike to the Twenty-first Virginia. Milroy next ordered two cannon and a force along the turnpike, but their attack amounted to nothing. The main contention was with Johnson's right by the combined attack of all the Federal forces that had climbed up the mountain side. Again and again were the brave attacks of the Ohio and West Virginia troops

repulsed in their efforts to drive the Confederates from the crest of the hill; the issue being joined at close quarters while the musketry firing was incessant. The Confederates had some little advantage of position, and the uneven ground, such as is characteristic of most limestone regions, gave them some advantage, but, on the other hand, facing to the west as they did, they were clearly outlined against the eastern sky, and so were plain targets for the Federals, who were themselves advancing not only up the slope but in the shadows of the waning day; consequently the Confederates suffered terribly from the long range rifles of the Federals, especially the Twelfth Georgia, which became the special object of attack, but which unflinchingly held its position and drove back its assailants.

The attack all along Johnson's line, even as extended by some of Jackson's men, indicated that the Federal leader was throwing all his force into this engagement. This led Jackson to order Taliaferro's brigade to Johnson's aid; when this reached him, he placed the Twenty-third and Thirty-seventh Virginia regiments near the center of his line, and advanced them to reinforce the gallant Twelfth Georgia, just in time to promptly meet the movement of the enemy on the Confederate right and drive it back. To still further strengthen his right, Johnson sent portions of the Twenty-fifth and Thirty-first Virginia regiments to occupy an elevated piece of woods on his right and rear, thus securing a commanding position. Campbell's brigade, which Jackson had hastened toward the field of carnage, came up about this time, and that and the Tenth Virginia, from Taliaferro's rear, were also ordered to support Johnson's right in the woods down the slope of the spur toward the turnpike. These arrangements thwarted all the enemy's movements, and by securing the larger tactical force on the immediate field of action made certain the result of the conflict.

The battle lasted from half past four until half past eight of the afternoon. Every movement of the enemy was promptly met and defeated, and Johnson held firmly to his first position. Jackson had no hesitancy in leaving the immediate field of contention in charge of the hero of Alleghany mountain, but taking no chances, he located himself on the turnpike, where it crosses the top of the mountain, to watch the right, guard the roads

which were concealed from Johnson, and at the same time hurry forward reinforcements, having promptly ordered his whole army forward to meet any emergency. Late in the day General Johnson was wounded in the arm and had to retire from the field, leaving Taliaferro in immediate command. Learning from Johnson, as he was taken, badly wounded, to the rear, the condition of things on the field of battle, he quickly ordered Taliaferro, now left in command, through a staff officer, to hold his position at all hazards, and he would soon be there with the Stonewall brigade to help him, if necessary. But the conflict was then over, and Milroy had become satisfied that he was no match for his antagonist, so in the coming darkness he withdrew to McDowell and Schenck hastened to retreat toward Franklin, where he expected to meet Fremont, with the main body of his command, coming up the South Branch valley.

The Federal artillery placed on the terrace to the south of McDowell was quite active, but uselessly so, prior to the advance of its infantry, because of the elevation of the position held by the Confederates. A single gun on Hull's hill, a spur of the mountain opposite the Federal left, did a little damage but not much. The Confederates that did the fighting were five Virginia regiments and one Georgia of Johnson's brigade, and three Virginia regiments of Taliaferro's brigade, about 4,500 men. They were supported by the three Virginia regiments and the Irish battalion of Campbell's brigade, but which did not become engaged; making the Confederate force on the immediate battlefield about 6,000 men. Of these, 71 were killed and 390 wounded. Milroy's force that took part in the battle was, parts of four Ohio and two West Virginia regiments, and parts of two Ohio batteries, in all about 2,500 men, who, considering the disparity of forces, made a most determined and brave fight. Schenck reported the losses as 28 killed, 225 wounded and 3 missing.

Jackson prepared himself to renew the conflict on the morrow unless the Federals did it, arranging to have his artillery in position on Sitlington's hill by daylight and his whole army closed up and ready for action, issuing strict orders to those in advance to be on the alert to detect any movement of the enemy. Schenck, satisfied that Jackson, from his position, could very soon make

McDowell untenable, evacuated that place early in the night, after lighting his camp-fires and making a show of remaining there, and fell back during the night in the direction of Franklin.

On the morning of the 9th, Jackson sent a laconic dispatch to General Cooper, the adjutant-general of the Confederate States at Richmond, saying, "God blessed our arms with victory at McDowell yesterday;" then mounting his horse at dawn, he rode in the keen and frosty air to the summit of the mountain, there to learn from officers he had sent in advance to reconnoiter that his enemy had fled. He at once took possession of McDowell and proceeded to close up and ration his men preparatory to a pursuit. Following the road to Monterey for a few miles from McDowell, Schenck turned to the northeast, by the road to Franklin, resting his wearied men for a short time when his rear guard reached the junction of the two roads on the morning of the 9th, but moving on before Jackson could close up on his rear. A retreat is easily managed in a narrow valley and through a wooded country like that which Schenck was traversing, so he was able to make Jackson's pursuit on the 10th a slow one; but the latter managed to press the Federal rear, and on the 11th came very near to it in the vicinity of Franklin, although impeded by the smoke and flames from the forests that hemmed in the road, which his crafty foe had set on fire.

During the march on the 10th, Jackson sent Captain Hotchkiss, of the engineers, to ride rapidly back to the Valley and there take a cavalry company which had been left on guard, and blockade the North river and the Dry river gaps of the Shenandoah mountain, by either of which Fremont might cross from the South Branch valley and join Banks in the Shenandoah valley, at or near Harrisonburg, Jackson's positive orders being that these roads must be blockaded by daylight of the 11th. The execution of this order required a ride of over 60 miles during the afternoon and night of the 10th, but the order was executed, and when Lincoln telegraphed to Fremont to make the move Jackson had said to his engineer he should make (although he did not think he would), the reply was, that the road was blockaded and he could not do it.

Having advanced to within two miles of Franklin and

finding Schenck in a very strong position which could only be reached by a combat at a disadvantage in a gap of the mountain, and ascertaining that Fremont was near at hand with large reinforcements, and being very desirous of getting back to the Valley to look after Banks' army, and that he might also be at hand to respond to a call from General Lee, Jackson, after resting his army, fell back toward the Valley on Monday, May 12th, leaving a company of cavalry to look after Fremont's army of from 15,000 to 20,000 men enveloped in the smoke of the burning forests, which had now become Jackson's ally instead of his foe.

Having used the previous Sunday, or a part of it, in the pursuit of his enemy, Jackson devoted the forenoon of Monday, May 12th, to Sunday observances as well as to rest, and issued the following order to his troops:

Soldiers of the Army of the Valley and Northwest: I congratulate you on your recent victory at McDowell. I request you to unite with me this morning in thanksgiving to Almighty God for thus having crowned our arms with success, and in praying that He will continue to lead you on from victory to victory until our independence shall be established and make us that people whose God is the Lord. The chaplains will hold divine service at 10 a. m. this day in their respective regiments.

Leaving the front of Franklin on the afternoon of May 12th, Jackson's army reached McDowell on the afternoon of the 14th, at about the same time that Fremont arrived in Franklin with reinforcements for Schenck, and where he remained quietly for the next ten days, leaving Jackson free to prosecute his intentions. Continuing his march from McDowell, Jackson encamped on the night of the 15th at Lebanon Springs, in the Big Calf Pasture valley, where the Warm Springs and Harrisonburg turnpike crosses the Parkersburg and Staunton turnpike, giving his troops opportunity to speculate as to his next movement while he rested there on the 16th to observe the day of fasting and prayer which had been proclaimed by the President of the Confederate States.

While on his way back from Franklin, Jackson sent a message to Ewell asking him to meet him for a conference, which took place at Mt. Solon on the evening of the next day, the 17th, on which the army marched with alacrity down the valley, its advance reaching North river, opposite Bridgewater, the troops in high spirits in anticipation of a victorious movement. Sunday, the

18th, was spent resting in camps in one of the most delightful portions of the Shenandoah valley, its charms heightened by the full flush of springtime, and in religious observances; the general himself riding to the camp of the Stonewall brigade, on the south bank of North river, where his adjutant-general, Maj. R. L. Dabney (a revered doctor of the Presbyterian church), preached a soul-stirring sermon.

Nineteen days had now elapsed since Jackson left Ewell in his old camps in the Elk Run valley. Learning that Jackson had been reinforced by Ewell, although probably not informed as to Jackson's movements to attack Fremont's advance, Banks evacuated Harrisonburg on the 1st of May and withdrew to New Market, whence, after detaching Shields' division to march toward Luray, on the way to join McDowell's "on to Richmond," he continued down the valley to Strasburg, which he proceeded to fortify, in compliance with his first orders from McClellan. Shields left New Market May 12th, after the departure of Banks, with orders to march by way of Luray and Front Royal toward Fredericksburg, taking with him about 11,000 men and leaving Banks about 8,000; of this number, the latter placed 1,000 at and near Front Royal, on May 16th, to protect the Manassas Gap railroad, the bridges of that road, and the bridges of the turnpike leading to Winchester, in that vicinity; in this also obeying McClellan's original orders.

With Fremont's large command safely disposed of at Franklin and the large force of Shields removed from the valley, Jackson found himself possessed of a larger tactic force than Banks had in hand, after he had arranged with Ewell, with the consent of General Lee, to join him in a movement on Banks, holding now the portal of the western part of the Shenandoah valley at Strasburg with the aid of defensive works.

On May 17th, the day Jackson's advance reached North river at Bridgewater and was again fairly in the Valley, with Ewell's division only some 20 miles away to the east, as the crow flies, the Federal authorities ordered McDowell to move upon Richmond, as soon as Shields' division should join him, to become the right wing of McClellan's army, now in front and in sight of that city, but always holding himself in position "to cover the cap-

ital of the nation against the sudden dash by any large body of the rebel forces."

On the morning of the 19th, Jackson advanced to the vicinity of Harrisonburg, and on the 20th continued to near New Market, a portion of Ewell's command, which had marched around the southwest end of the Massanutton mountains, joining him on the way while the rest of his division marched down the eastern, or Page valley, to opposite New Market. Ashby, under instructions, demonstrated all along Banks' front, which held the line of Pugh's run with cavalry pickets, below Woodstock, while Jackson proceeded, with urgent expedition to maneuver Banks from his position at Strasburg by capturing his exposed left at Front Royal, and, that turned, reaching his rear somewhere between Strasburg and Winchester. The great Massanutton chain not only screened, but absolutely concealed and protected this movement.

On the 21st, Jackson crossed the Massanuttons by the turnpike leading from New Market to Luray, and being joined on the road by the portion of Ewell's division that had followed down the eastern valley, he, with between 16,000 and 17,000 men and 48 guns, encamped that evening on the South Fork of the Shenandoah. On the 22d, with Ewell in advance, he marched quietly, but rapidly, down the Luray valley and bivouacked his advance within 10 miles of Front Royal.

On Friday morning, May 23d, the cavalry of Ashby and Flournoy, which had preceded the army, crossed the South Fork of the Shenandoah at McCoy's ford, and, following along the eastern foot of the Massanuttons by a road between that mountain and the river, soon reached a fork of the road, where it divided into two bodies, one under Flournoy proceeding down between the rivers to capture the bridges at the fork and prevent a retreat of the Federals at Front Royal toward Winchester, while the other under Ashby, moving farther to the left, was to cut the railroad and telegraph at Buckton, between Front Royal and Strasburg, thus breaking communication between those places and preventing the sending of reinforcements to the latter. In order to flank the enemy's position at Front Royal, concerning which he was well informed through Ashby's local scouts, and prevent a retreat eastward across the Blue ridge, Jackson, when

his advance reached Asbury chapel on the river road, $4\frac{1}{2}$ miles from Front Royal, turned the head of his main body eastward, by a by-road up the slope of the Blue ridge, until he reached the turnpike leading from Gooney Manor to Front Royal, which was well up on the side of the mountain and led into the eastern side of the town. That road reached, the head of his column, consisting of the First Maryland Confederate regiment and a Louisiana battalion, supported by Taylor's Louisiana brigade, advanced rapidly into and through the town to the camp of the Federal forces which were mainly Maryland troops with two pieces of artillery, on a hill between Front Royal and the Shenandoah, overlooking the forks of the river and near the railway and turnpike bridges which they were specially guarding. Two companies of cavalry had just arrived from Strasburg in time to resist the Confederate advance. The Federal opposition was spirited, but being attacked in front by the force that first reached them, and then in flank by one that Ewell had turned to the left from his command, and discovering the advance of Flournoy's Confederate cavalry between the rivers that would soon block his way toward Winchester, Colonel Kenly, the Federal commander, abandoned his position before the infantry closed down upon him, and retreated across the two rivers, firing his camp and attempting to fire the bridges. The Confederates pressed him so closely that he did but little damage to the bridge over the South Fork, but did sufficient to that over the North Fork to check the pursuit. Having gained the commanding bluff of Guard hill, beyond the rivers, which the road to Winchester crosses, Kenly attempted to further check the Confederate advance with the artillery that he had brought off, but Flournoy's cavalry soon dashed through the river, after a few shots from a Confederate battery had driven off the Federal artillery, and continued the pursuit. Covering his retreat with two companies of New York cavalry, Kenly hurried toward Winchester. With invincible ardor Flournoy pressed after him with his four companies of cavalry, charged and routed Kenly's cavalry rear guard, and came upon the rear of his infantry, which he found drawn up on either side of the road with his artillery in the road to meet him. Jackson had joined in the pursuit, and,

inspired by his presence and enthusiastic bearing, Flournoy did not hesitate to attack the enemy's artillery and infantry in position, but dashed upon and routed them. They rallied again and made a gallant stand in an orchard in the rear of the position from which they had been driven; but this stand was in vain; they had become thoroughly demoralized and so magnified Flournoy's troopers into an army of horsemen, when they dashed among them with the assurance of victory and scattered them, in wild disorder, but taking most of them prisoners when they threw down their arms and surrendered. Reinforced by the coming of two more of his companies, Flournoy pushed the pursuit to within four miles of Winchester, capturing one gun near the fighting ground and soon after the wagon train and the other gun, abandoned in the road, sending the latter back with two plough horses taken from a farmer's field.

The victory was complete. A large quantity of stores was captured in Front Royal; the Federal camp was taken; the wagon bridges across the two rivers were saved for the passage of the Confederate army and its trains and artillery, and 904 of the enemy made the list of killed, wounded and captured, while the Confederate loss was but 26 killed and wounded. Ashby's movement had been successful, he having reached Buckton before the enemy were aware of the move on Front Royal, and cut the telegraph and railway, capturing the block-house guarding that station, after a spirited resistance, his attacking party being the troopers from that immediate vicinity; his attack turned back a train of cars, which was captured near Front Royal.

Late in the day Jackson established headquarters at Cedarville, some 5 miles from Front Royal on the road to Winchester, near the scene of the last conflict between Flournoy and Kenly, where a country road leaves the Front Royal and Winchester pike and leads to the Valley turnpike at Middletown, some 8 miles in the rear of Banks' position at Strasburg, which he was firmly holding in anticipation of a front attack while Jackson was successfully turning his left, at Front Royal, routing and capturing his men and cutting his communications with Manassas and Washington, concerning which he had no information until after nightfall, attaching but little importance to the message which Kenly sent

him by a courier, informing him that an overwhelming force had descended from the Blue ridge on his position at Front Royal. Jackson and his staff slept near the picket line, on the ground in the front yard of McCoy's house at Cedarville, while his army bivouacked along the road between that place and Front Royal.

By the dawn of Saturday, May 24th, Jackson was on the alert, pushing his cavalry scouts forward toward Winchester and to points along the Valley turnpike between that place and Middletown, dispatching his topographical engineer toward the latter place to find out the movements of the enemy. That officer soon struck the Federal pickets, within less than a mile of where Jackson had bivouacked, and following after these with cavalry, infantry and artillery that he had successively sent for, he reached the vicinity of Middletown early in the day in time to cut Banks' retreating column just as Jackson himself came up with a larger force, which he formed into two bodies, one pushing after Banks' men retreating toward Winchester, and the other following those that fell back toward Strasburg when they found their line of march interrupted at Middletown. This latter body destroyed the bridge as they crossed Cedar creek, thus checking the Confederate pursuit, and then hastened through Strasburg and retreated by the Strasburg and Capon road and by the Winchester and Capon road, through the mountains to Winchester, which they reached during the night. These disposed of, Jackson reunited his men and pressed toward Winchester, having ordered Ewell's division forward along the Front Royal and Winchester road on which he was constantly coming nearer and nearer to Banks' line of retreat, as that road and the Valley turnpike converged toward Winchester. Brig.-Gen. George H. Steuart, who had been temporarily placed in command of the Second and Sixth Virginia cavalry, was sent in advance of Ewell to Newtown, 8 miles from Winchester, to observe the enemy's movements. There he attacked the flank of Banks' retreat and made some captures of prisoners, wagons and ambulances.

Banks, now fully realizing his perilous situation, and alarmed at the rapid and incomprehensible movements of Jackson, and realizing that his only safety was in flight, retreated, pressed in rear and flank, as rapidly as

possible toward Winchester, making vigorous efforts to ward off the Confederate attacks; constantly strengthening his rear guard and right flank for that purpose, ordering back, among others, a New York and a Massachusetts regiment, under the brave Col. George Gordon, an intimate classmate of Jackson at West Point, with two sections of artillery, from Bartonsville to Newtown. Gordon checked the confusion in the rear and boldly drove back the Confederate advance, aided by the considerable cavalry force that General Hatch brought around the Confederate left to his assistance. Apprised of the near presence of Ewell on his right flank and that the Federal infantry cut off at Strasburg had escaped, Gordon fell back from Newtown at dusk, steadily resisting Jackson's pursuit, burning loaded commissary wagons and a pontoon train in and beyond Newtown, and reaching Winchester about midnight, leaving the Second Massachusetts infantry as a rear guard. With this Jackson, with regiment after regiment of the Stonewall brigade, contended during all the night, its leader, Lieutenant-Colonel Andrews, taking advantage of the darkness and of the stone fences along the turnpike, hotly and courageously disputed every mile of the way with Jackson's advance, led by that indomitable leader in person, who was anxious to occupy the heights overlooking Winchester before dawn of the next day. Ewell, keeping even pace with Jackson's movements, but rather in advance of them, brought his command, on the Front Royal road, to within two or three miles of Winchester, then bivouacked along that road, thus preventing any retreat of Banks to the eastward. Stuart's cavalry moved still farther to the right and occupied the roads leading to Millwood and Berryville from Winchester.

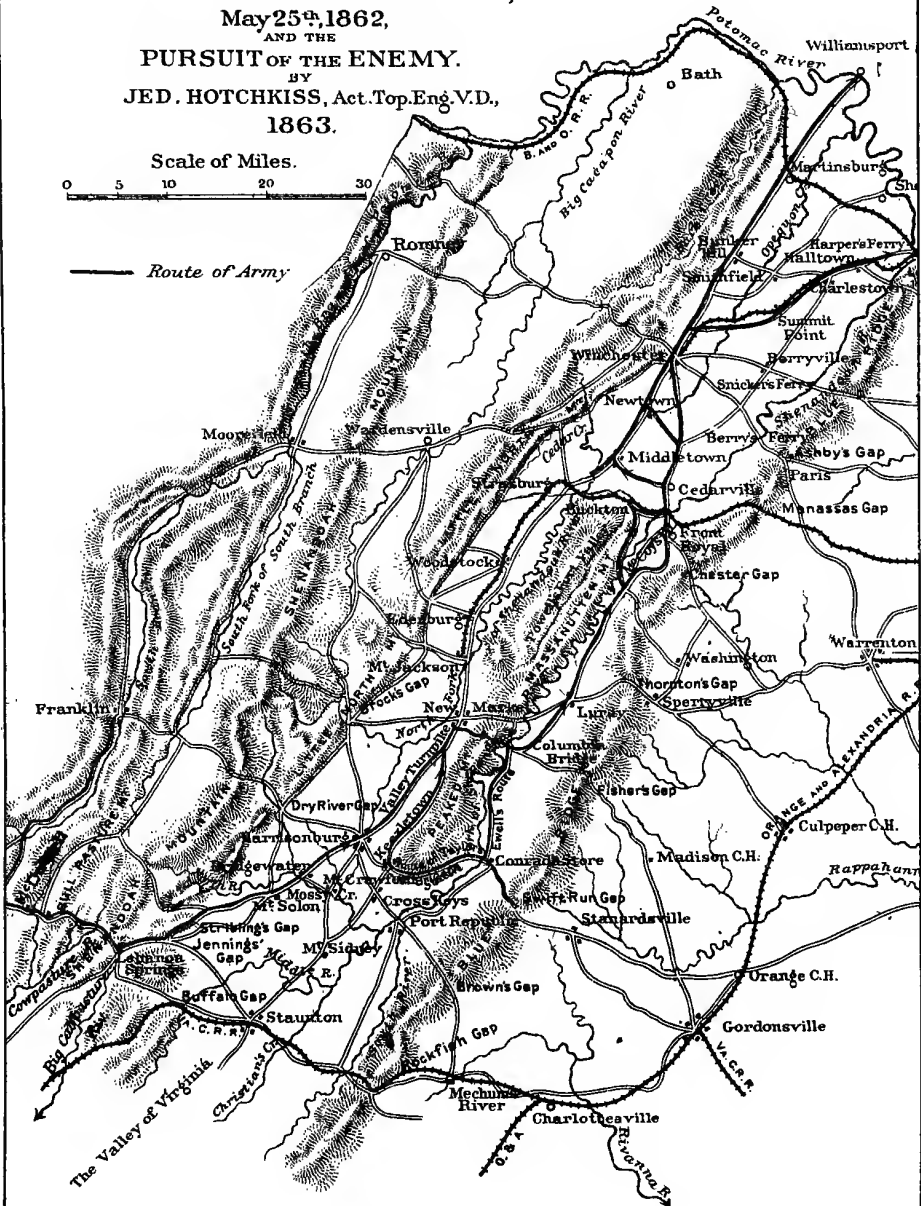
Banks was in a state of uncertainty, until he reached Winchester, as to what had actually happened to him; but soon learning that all of his detachments had been routed and that a large force was pressing after his main column, he became satisfied that Jackson was upon him with overwhelming numbers; and although the day before he had concluded that his safety lay "in a foot race," he decided, on the morning of May 25th, that he would stand an attack "to test the substance and strength of the enemy by actual collision." He had at Winchester about 6,400 men for duty, including infantry,

MAP OF ROUTE
 OF
THE ARMY OF THE VALLEY
 FROM
FRANKLIN, PENDLETON CO., VA.,
 May 15th, 1862,
 TO THE
BATTLE OF WINCHESTER,
 May 25th, 1862,
 AND THE
PURSUIT OF THE ENEMY.
 BY
JED. HOTCHKISS, Act. Top. Eng. V.D.,
 1863.

Scale of Miles.



— Route of Army



cavalry and artillery, while Jackson, by his magnificent strategy, was confronting him with a tactic force of near 15,000 of all arms.

Banks selected a fine defensive position in front of Winchester. The gallant Gordon, with his brave New Englanders and western men and one Pennsylvania regiment, was placed by Banks on a low ridge, sloping gently to the south but abruptly to the north, just in front of the town, with its left on the Valley turnpike and its right extending westward along the ascending ridge in front of Winchester, while skirmishers were thrown out in advance and guns were placed on either flank. Hatch's cavalry supported the center. Donnelly's brigade, of Connecticut, New York and Pennsylvania troops, was placed on the left of the turnpike and extended around to the eastward of Winchester, covering the Front Royal and Millwood roads, with eight pieces of artillery in a commanding position; the Federal line, forming the arc of a circle, covering Winchester from the west around by the south to the east.

Jackson, personally, had with his Valley men pressed, with all the energy at his command, the pursuit of the Federal army, and just at dawn he discovered the coveted position in front of Winchester occupied by the enemy. He promptly ordered Winder, of the Stonewall brigade, to drive them from this position as speedily as possible, first taking possession of a commanding crest in the enemy's front, from which Gordon promptly moved the Second Massachusetts further to his right to lengthen his line and guard against the threatened flank attack. Jackson massed his abundant artillery and opened fire on the Federal guns in place, extended his left by ordering up Taylor with his Louisianians, who, passing behind Winder, formed on his left, overlapping the Federal right. He sent the Tenth Virginia to extend Taylor's line still further to the left, and the Twenty-third to promptly strengthen his right. This formidable battle array soon moved forward, regardless of the enemy's destructive fire of musketry and artillery, swept them from the crest of the hill down the steep to the northward and across the fields and through the town of Winchester, bearing down all opposition, cheered forward by old men and matrons, maidens and children who crowded the sides of the streets as the Confederate

veterans swept through them in pursuit of the retreating Federals. Jackson, cap in hand, dashed to the front, cheering as wildly as the men that followed him, and when cautioned that he was rushing into the midst of the retreating foe, said to the officer who cautioned him, "Go back, and tell the whole army to press forward to the Potomac," in utter forgetfulness of the fact that that army had been fighting and marching almost without rest for the past thirty hours.

Ewell was not standing idly by while this contest was raging. He had encamped in the immediate presence of the enemy, and when daylight came, on the 25th, he moved forward, and at 5 a. m. his North Carolinians, under Kirkland, boldly dashed on Donnelly's line, stretched across the Front Royal road. These met with a hot reception, for the Federals were posted behind stone fences at right angles to the road, and Kirkland was forced to retire with a large loss in killed and wounded; but in the meantime Col. B. T. Johnson, with the First Maryland, moved forward between the Front Royal road and the Valley turnpike and turned Donnelly's right, while the Twenty-first Georgia turned his left, and by an enfilade fire routed him from behind the stone fences. Donnelly took a new line, nearer the town, but at Trimble's suggestion, Ewell sent the Sixteenth Mississippi and the Fifteenth Alabama, the remainder of Trimble's brigade, still farther to the right, threatening Donnelly's flank and rear just as Jackson's men broke in wild triumph over the Federal center and right. These movements caused the entire Federal line to give way and retreat, as rapidly as possible, toward Martinsburg, between 8 and 9 a. m. Elzey's brigade shared in the attack by obeying Jackson's order and following the Valley turnpike through the town as the enemy gave way on each side. At first the Federals fell back in very good order, but they were thrown into confusion in passing through the town, from which they were unable to rally, especially as Jackson's pursuit with his infantry was quick and vigorous, while his artillery promptly took advantage of favorable positions and shelled the retreating enemy.

Never was there a better opportunity for capturing the remnant of an army and all of its artillery and wagons that had started in retreat, if a well organized and well

led cavalry force were at hand to reap the fruits of victory; but, unfortunately, such was not the condition of Jackson's cavalry at that time. Ashby's poorly disciplined cavalry had been diverted and demoralized by the tempting sutlers' and other stores that had been scattered along the Valley turnpike by Banks' retreating army, many of them being unable to resist the temptation to secure many things that they had long been in need of and which, now to be had for the taking, they hastened to appropriate and conceal, thus greatly depleting his command. Ashby himself, with the few faithful men who had remained with him, had ridden to the enemy's right to prevent their retreat by way of Berryville to Harper's Ferry, hoping to capture a part of Banks' force by so doing. This movement delayed him so that he did not reach the Martinsburg road and join Steuart in the pursuit, some 10 or 12 miles beyond Winchester, after Banks had passed that point. Steuart, with the Second and Sixth Virginia cavalry, was under the immediate command of Ewell and led the advance of his movement. When he was ordered by Jackson, through one of his aides, to pursue the retreating Federals, he refused to do so until ordered by General Ewell, and so much time was lost and Banks had made considerable distance in his rapid retreat before Steuart took up the pursuit, which accomplished but little except that he captured a large quantity of stores at Martinsburg, 20 miles beyond Winchester, where Banks had halted for an hour or two before he continued his retreat to the Potomac, at Williamsport, which he reached about sundown, after having fought the battle of Winchester and marched 34 miles during daylight of the 25th. The next morning he crossed the Potomac with two-thirds of his previous command in a thoroughly disorganized condition, thankful that he was safe from the blows of his sturdy antagonist.

Jackson's immediate victory was a glorious one, even if he had not accomplished all that his ardent desires and unconquerable energy thought desirable. In two days he had driven his enemy, that in fancied security dreamed he had permanent possession of the lower valley of the Shenandoah, nearly 60 miles from Front Royal and Strasburg to the Potomac, and freed the valley of his presence. He had captured immense military stores of

all kinds; had sent to the rear some 2,300 prisoners, besides leaving enough in hospitals to make a total Federal loss of 3,050; while his own loss was less than 400 in killed, wounded and missing, the killed being but 68. But this is a narrow view of the results accomplished with a force only about one-fourth that of his enemy in the strategic field. The wider and more important result was that affecting the movements of the entire Federal army in and near Virginia. On May 23d, the day Jackson struck Banks' left at Front Royal, President Lincoln visited McDowell at Fredericksburg, and wired McClellan on the 24th that Shields, with his 10,000 men, had joined McDowell, and that on the following Monday, the 26th, the 40,000 men of his command would march from Fredericksburg to reinforce McClellan's right in front of Richmond. Returning to Washington the night of the 23d, he heard of the attack on Front Royal. The next day more alarming intelligence came, and Fremont was ordered, by telegraph, to move from Franklin to Harrisonburg, to intercept Jackson and capture or destroy his forces, and so relieve Banks; McDowell was ordered to lay aside his movement on Richmond and put 20,000 men in motion for the Shenandoah valley, to capture Jackson, either with or without the co-operation of Fremont, informing McClellan of these orders at 4 p. m. of the 24th, adding, "the enemy are making a desperate push on Harper's Ferry." On the 25th the alarm at Washington increased as Jackson drove Banks from Winchester, and Lincoln again telegraphed McClellan: "I think the time is near when you must either attack Richmond or give up the job and come to the defense of Washington. Let me hear from you instantly." Later, on the same day, he again telegraphed: "Banks ran a race with the rebels, beating them into Winchester yesterday morning. This morning a battle ensued between the two forces, in which Banks was beaten back into full retreat toward Martinsburg, and probably is broken up into a total rout."

The news of Banks' defeat caused the Federal government to call upon all the loyal States for all their militia and other troops, to be forwarded immediately to Washington, and an order was issued taking military possession of all the railways in the United States for the transportation of these troops. The alarm

at Washington produced an almost indescribable panic throughout the North, on Sunday the 25th and for several days thereafter. The governor of Massachusetts, at 11 p. m. of the 25th, ordered the whole active militia of that State to report on Boston Common the next day, "to oppose with fierce zeal and courageous patriotism the progress of the foe." The governor of Ohio proclaimed, on the same day, "The seat of our beloved government is threatened with invasion, and I am called upon by the secretary of war for troops to repel and overwhelm the reckless invaders." In consequence of Jackson's movements threatening to pass through the gateway of the Potomac and attack Washington, a half million men, within twenty-four hours after the issue of Lincoln's proclamation, offered themselves for the defense of the Federal capital. McClellan's plans were all disconcerted, and although he protested against the detachment of McDowell to intercept Jackson, claiming that it could lead to no results because of his distance from the field of operations, his protests were of no avail, and McDowell's march toward the Valley began while McClellan stood hesitating on the banks of the Chickahominy, and the plans of the army of the Potomac, in all of its departments, were thoroughly demoralized by the boldness and results of Jackson's grand strategic movements.

Jackson's infantry followed after Banks, on Sunday the 25th, as far as Stephenson's, five miles beyond Winchester, when he handed over the pursuit to the cavalry and ordered his wearied men into camp, taking up his own headquarters in Winchester, whose citizens, mostly women, had first put out the fires which the retreating Federals kindled in the warehouses where their great army stores, including gunpowder and explosive shells, were accumulated, and then cared for the wounded and buried the dead.

A Sabbath having been appropriated in the pursuit of Banks, Jackson ordered the observance of the 26th as a day of rest and devotion, issuing this stirring order:

Within four weeks this army has made long and rapid marches, fought six combats and two battles, signally defeating the enemy in each one, captured several stands of colors and pieces of artillery, with numerous prisoners, and vast medical, ordnance and army stores; and finally driven the boastful foe, which was ravaging our beautiful country, into utter rout.

The general commanding would warmly express to the officers and men of his command his joy in their achievements, and his thanks for their brilliant gallantry in action and their patient obedience under the hardships of forced marches, often more painful to the brave soldier than the dangers of battle. The explanation of the severe exertions to which the commanding general called the army, which were endured by them with such cheerful confidence in him, is now given in the victory of yesterday. He receives this proof of their confidence in the past with pride and gratitude, and only asks a similar confidence in the future.

But his chief duty to-day, and that of the army, is to recognize devoutly the hand of a protecting Providence in the brilliant successes of the last three days (which have given us the results of a great victory without great losses), and to make oblation of our thanks to God for His mercies to us and our country in heartfelt acts of religious worship. For this purpose the troops will remain in camp to-day, suspending as far as possible all military exercises; and the chaplains of regiments will hold divine service in their several charges at 4 o'clock p. m.

It is noteworthy that after this battle of Winchester there was inaugurated a humanitarian movement, in reference to surgeons left in charge of wounded prisoners, that has since become the rule among civilized nations engaged in war. Immediately after Banks was driven out of Winchester, Dr. Hunter McGuire, the medical director of the army of the Valley district, visited the Federal hospital, which had been established in the old Union hotel, where he found among the captured prisoners eight Federal surgeons or assistant surgeons. He reported this fact to General Jackson, and asked his permission to unconditionally release these medical officers upon their parole of honor that they would remain in charge of the Federal sick and wounded in Winchester for fifteen days, after which, by the terms of their paroles, they would be permitted to report to their commanding officers for duty. It was further understood that these surgeons should use every effort to have released, on the same terms, the medical officers of the Confederate States who were then held as prisoners by the Federal government, or who might thereafter be captured.

General Jackson readily assented to Surgeon McGuire's proposition, and directed him to carry out his suggestions. Accompanied by Dr. Daniel B. Conrad, of the Second Virginia regiment, he then went to the Federal hospital and released, on their paroles, the surgeons, assistant surgeons, attendants and nurses, but not the sick and wounded, who were afterward paroled by the regular

officers of the army, not to take up arms again until properly exchanged. General Jackson issued no regular order to perform this duty, but he frequently discussed with Dr. McGuire, subsequently, the policy and humanity of such a measure. This rule established, by this precedent, was kept up by Dr. McGuire during his term of service as medical director with Generals Jackson, Ewell, Early, and Gordon, with whom he successively served as medical director until the close of the war. Near the end of February, 1864, some Confederate scouts captured the medical inspector of Sheridan's army in the Valley. Dr. McGuire promptly released him on his parole, and returned him to his command. About a week after that, Dr. McGuire was captured in the defeat of Early at Waynesboro, when General Sheridan promptly released him on the same terms he had accorded to his medical inspector. In consequence of this action of General Jackson and Dr. McGuire, a number of Confederate surgeons were released and sent back from Northern prisons.

The Confederates had another day of well-earned rest on May 27th, while Jackson was busy providing for the safety of the vast military stores he had captured at Front Royal, Winchester and Martinsburg, and waiting for instructions from Richmond, in response to dispatches he had sent by a trusty aide immediately after the capture of Winchester, as to his future operations. He had now shown the character of his military genius and established his fame as an independent commander. He had relieved Richmond from the danger of an immediate attack by the overwhelming force of the army of the Potomac, and the authorities were only too willing to direct him to press the enemy still hovering in the defense of Harper's Ferry, threaten an invasion of Maryland and an attack upon Washington, and thus still further derange the plans of McClellan by stimulating the fears of the Federal authorities and inducing them to deplete the army of the Potomac for the defense of their capital.

Ashby's tireless and everywhere-watching spies and scouts kept Jackson informed as to the movements of the enemy, and he quickly divined their plans for intercepting his way of retreat up the Valley, should the necessity arise for so doing; but his cardinal rule of action in military, as well as in other matters, was to "take no counsel

of his fears," therefore, early on the morning of the 28th he dispatched Winder with four regiments and two batteries toward Charlestown by the direct road. Nearing Charlestown and learning that the enemy held that place in force, he notified Jackson, who promptly ordered Ewell to move in the same direction. A small Federal force had been holding Harper's Ferry, but when the defeat of Banks became known, troops were hurried by rail to that point from all directions, and by the morning of the 28th, 7,000 men and 18 cannon had been collected there, under the command of General Saxton, who at once occupied the commanding plateau of Bolivar heights, in front of that place, and located a formidable battery on Maryland heights, across the Potomac in its rear, which, from its still more commanding position, dominated nearly all the approaches from the Virginia way to Bolivar heights and Harper's Ferry. Finding that it was only a reconnaissance that had advanced to Charlestown, Winder pressed forward and drove the enemy back to Bolivar heights, where Saxton had drawn up his main body in line of battle. Seeing he could accomplish nothing more, Winder fell back to Charlestown and went into camp, having marched 21 miles and had an engagement with the enemy during the day. There Ewell joined him after dark and Jackson in person, with the main body of his army, during the next day, when he made a demonstration against Bolivar heights and sent a part of his infantry force to Loudoun heights. Saxton, being informed that Jackson was crossing a division over the Potomac above Harper's Ferry, moved a part of his infantry force to Maryland heights to defend his rear, and withdrew his line in front of Harper's Ferry to the crest of the plateau nearest that town, thus not only shortening his line, but securing protection from his own batteries on Maryland heights which could fire over his men at an approaching enemy.

Jackson having accomplished the object of his advance to Harper's Ferry, which was to gain time for the removal of the captured stores from Winchester, was now ready to extricate his army from the seemingly perilous position into which he had brought it, a position which induced the Federal commanders, who were seeking to intercept his line of retreat, to say to their men, to stimulate their marching ability, that they now had Jackson in a bottle, and all they had to do was to be in time

to close it with a stopper, at Strasburg, and so end the war. They had not yet learned that Jackson was not to be caught by any combination of movements they could bring about, for while it was true that he only had about 15,000 men to meet the 60,000 that were concentrating toward his rear, he knew the strategic advantages that the great flank-protecting bulwarks of the mountains placed at his disposal farther up the Valley, and had no doubt of his ability to reach these, avail himself of their impregnable protection of his flanks, and at the same time divide the strategic forces of his enemy and enable him to meet them on his own grounds with superior tactic strength. While demonstrating in front of Harper's Ferry, Jackson was definitely informed on the morning of Friday, May 30th, that Fremont was marching his 15,000 men down the South Branch valley to Moorefield and had there turned toward Strasburg, and that his advance had reached 10 miles east of Moorefield, where he halted the 29th to rest his army, and on the 30th had moved to the western foot of the Shenandoah mountain, to within some 20 miles of Strasburg, and that McDowell's advance was already crossing the Blue ridge and not far from Front Royal. Thus advised of the strategic situation, Jackson, on the morning of the 30th, ordered all his troops back to Winchester except Winder's brigade, the First Maryland, and a body of cavalry which he left to continue threatening Harper's Ferry. After dinner at the home of Major Hawks, his chief commissary in Charlestown, he took the railway train which he had captured at Winchester, and with most of his staff rode back to that town, reaching it late in the afternoon of the 30th, where he received intelligence that McDowell's advance had that morning reached Front Royal and surprised the Twelfth Georgia, which had been left there to guard the captured stores and the bridges across the Shenandoah, and that he was now in force at that town, within 12 miles of Strasburg by the direct road leading past the northern end of the Massanutton mountains. Fremont had reached Wardensville, 20 miles from Strasburg, and had telegraphed Lincoln that he would enter that place by 5 p. m. of Saturday, May 31st. The main body of Jackson's army had marched 25 miles on the 30th and encamped in the vicinity of Winchester, 20 miles from Strasburg; Winder's brigade had spent most of the

day skirmishing with the Federals at Harper's Ferry and collecting his men together, and late in the afternoon had encamped near Halltown, some 43 miles from Strasburg by way of Winchester.

Fully apprised by Ashby of the movements of the enemy and of the points which they had reached in marching from opposite directions toward Strasburg, Jackson prepared with the utmost calmness to meet the threatening emergency. At 10 that night he dispatched Captain Hotchkiss, of his staff, to Harper's Ferry, with orders to bring Winder's force to Strasburg with the utmost dispatch, informing him of the points reached by Fremont and McDowell at that time, and saying that he would remain at Winchester as long as he could. To the question of Captain Hotchkiss as to what he should do if he found Winchester occupied by the enemy before reaching that place, Jackson replied, with a wave of his hand to the westward, "Come 'round through the mountains." Winder was reached at an early hour and hastened to bring in his pickets, some of which were across the Shenandoah on Loudoun heights, and then marched rapidly, passing through Winchester late in the afternoon, to the vicinity of Newtown, within about 10 miles of Strasburg, where he encamped after dark after a march of 28 miles for the main body, and of 35 miles for a portion of the brigade. Early on the morning of the 31st, Jackson put everything in motion from Winchester for Strasburg. The 2,300 Federal prisoners marched first, guarded by the Twenty-first Virginia; then followed, in double column, 7 miles of wagons loaded with captured stores and the ordnance and supplies of the army, the main body of which followed these, and the whole reached and passed through Strasburg late in the afternoon and the army bivouacked just beyond, in line of battle, within the portal of the narrow western valley of the Shenandoah, with its flanks safely guarded by the Massanuttons on the right and the North mountains on the left, and ready to meet either the advance of Fremont from the northeast or that of McDowell from the southeast, or of both combined; well satisfied that in such a strong defensive position he could easily defeat any force they could bring against him.

The next morning, Sunday, June 1st, the heavy rain-

storm that had been prevailing the previous day passed by, and the encouraging and cheerful sun gladdened Jackson's men who were resting at Strasburg, and helped Winder's men in their early march to the same place, which they reached about noon and passed to the rear of their comrades, who in line of battle had been waiting for them. Maj. John Alexander Harman, Jackson's tireless quartermaster, was busy all day pushing the great wagon train to the rear, while those in charge of the Federal prisoners made a full day's march in the same direction. Fremont's advance did not put in an appearance in front of Strasburg until late in the afternoon, Ashby having contested the way in a series of remarkable engagements, in which hundreds contended with thousands, impeding the enemy's progress and keeping them within the mountains until Jackson had safely passed his trains and his collected army to beyond Strasburg.

Once in the valley where he could deploy his forces, Fremont drove in the cavalry, but Jackson supported these with Ewell and other troops, who repulsed the Federal attack and induced Fremont to withdraw to the rear, where he remained idle the rest of the day, fearful of results if he should bring on a general engagement with Jackson while he was not certain of any support from McDowell, whose advance, instead of marching directly to Strasburg as ordered, had by mistake taken the road toward Winchester from Front Royal, and so did not appear upon the scene during the day, except a cavalry brigade under Bayard, which took the direct road to Strasburg, but failed to reach it in time to be of any assistance to Fremont.

It is interesting to pause for a moment and review the movements of the past three days. Friday morning Jackson was 50 miles from Strasburg, in front of Harper's Ferry; Fremont was at Moorefield, 38 miles from Strasburg, with the head of his army 10 miles in advance; the main body of Shields' division of McDowell's army was not more than 20 miles from Strasburg, for his advance had entered Front Royal, but 12 miles away, before midday, while McDowell, in person, was following with two divisions close in his rear; yet, by Sunday night Jackson, encumbered with prisoners and a long train of captured stores, had marched between 50 and 60 miles,

reached Strasburg before either of his adversaries, and passed safely between their converging armies, holding Fremont at bay on the left by an offer of battle, and blinding and bewildering McDowell on the right by the celerity and secrecy of his movements.

Retiring on the afternoon of June 1st from the front of Strasburg, Jackson withdrew to Woodstock, 12 miles, for the night, his cavalry holding the rear four miles from Strasburg, followed by a small party of Federal cavalry, which it repulsed in a slight engagement. Fremont bivouacked on the Capon road, on the line of battle he had chosen, and only entered Strasburg the next morning at about the same time that Bayard's cavalry reached there from Front Royal. Ordering these to take the advance, Fremont followed after Jackson with quite a display of vigor. McDowell held one division of his troops at Front Royal and started another, under Shields, up the valley of the South Fork, to co-operate with Fremont in his pursuit of Jackson. The latter concluding, from what he could learn, that a Federal force was moving up the Luray or South Fork valley, dispatched a small body of cavalry under Captain Boswell, of the engineers, by way of New Market, to burn the three remaining bridges across the South Fork, thus destroying the possibility of a junction between Fremont and Shields either at New Market or near Luray, owing to the swollen condition of the South Fork as well as of the other streams in the valley, in consequence of the heavy and almost continuous rains that characterized that season.

Jackson's strategy had now brought all the Federal forces in the Valley or on either side of it into the lower valley. Banks, with the shattered remnant of his army, was still resting at Williamsport. Saxton, with his 7,000, made a show of following after Winder, but soon returned to his safe quarters at Harper's Ferry. Fremont and McDowell had failed to combine before Strasburg, and now they feared to do so and leave either the eastern or the western valley open, and so each was pursuing his own way up the Valley, Fremont following after Jackson, and Shields following an objective the location of which he did not know, and that Jackson knew he could not reach with his army closed up, through the mud and quicksands of the road leading up the South Fork valley, such as Jackson had encountered on his way to McDowell.

The military problem for Jackson, as it now presented itself, was to get his trains and prisoners safely to Staunton and find an opportunity to defeat his oncoming foes separately, before they could form a junction in the vicinity of Harrisonburg. The grand bulwark of the Massanuttons had divided them, and it was for him now to conquer and dispose of them. Knowing the road difficulties in the way of Shields, Jackson felt secure in falling back leisurely up the great macadam road leading to Staunton. On the 2d he reached Mt. Jackson. Bayard's cavalry force, which had not yet had a taste of Ashby's tactics, pressed with unusual vigor on Jackson's rear guard, which broke and was thrown into some confusion; but Ashby promptly rallied his men behind the bushes and fences, and with the help of an infantry regiment that filed to the roadside, sent the Federals back in confusion. On the 3d, Jackson retired to New Market, Ashby destroying the bridge across the North Fork of the Shenandoah near Mt. Jackson as he fell back, checking Fremont there for a day. From his camp near New Market, Jackson sent Captain Hotchkiss in the night to the peak at the southwestern end of the Massanuttons, accompanied by signal men, to watch the movements of the two Federal armies from that commanding height and report their progress to Jackson as he marched up the valley. Harrisonburg was reached before midday of the 5th, and a cavalry force was promptly sent to destroy the bridge across the South Fork at Conrad's store, by which Shields had hoped to cross and join Fremont near Harrisonburg, thus anticipating the arrival of Federal cavalry which Shields had hastened forward to seize that bridge and which was already near at hand when Jackson's men fired it. There was now but one bridge left across the swollen South Fork, that over its North river fork at Port Republic.

Sending his sick and wounded on to Staunton, Jackson tarried at Harrisonburg with his rear guard till about midday of the 6th, being kept constantly informed by Captain Hotchkiss from the peak signal station. He then left the Valley turnpike and retired toward Port Republic, that he might place himself on the shortest line of communication with General Lee, through Brown's gap, which he had crossed when starting for McDowell a little more than a month before. Upon the approach

of a body of Fremont's cavalry under Sir Percy Wyndham, an English soldier of fortune, Ashby followed the infantry toward Port Republic, halting in a body of woods on a ridge about two miles south from the Valley turnpike. Wyndham moved through Harrisonburg at a rapid trot and followed after Ashby, having in hand about 800 New Jersey, Pennsylvania, New York and Connecticut cavalry. He advanced some little distance, but seeing no enemy, halted and sent skirmishers ahead. These returned after some time and reported no force of the enemy visible. Impatient and fearing that he had lost an opportunity to capture Ashby, a job he was said to have undertaken, Wyndham again pushed forward contrary to his orders, and soon discovered the Confederate cavalry drawn up across the road, but with its flanks concealed in the woods and in a field of standing grain. Making an impetuous dash on these forces, the Federals were met by volleys in front and on their flanks, and were quickly thrown into confusion and retreat, Sir Percy himself, in a remarkable personal encounter with Captain Conrad of Ashby's staff, and 63 of his men being taken prisoners.

General Ewell, whose command was next to Ashby, coming back at the sound of this engagement, responded to a call for infantry by sending back Johnson's First Maryland and Letcher's Fifty-eighth Virginia, Ashby rightly concluding that the Federal attack would be renewed. This was soon done, and General Bayard, with the Bucktail rifles, the First Pennsylvania cavalry, and Cluseret's brigade of the Sixtieth Ohio and the Eighth West Virginia infantry, was ordered forward, the first to attack the Confederates and the second to hold the farther end of the town and its approaches. The Ohio and West Virginia regiments and the Pennsylvania Bucktails moved forward and attacked the Confederates in a fierce combat, especially with the Fifty-eighth Virginia, which they had approached under cover of a heavy rail fence. Seeing his men waver, Ashby galloped to the front and ordered them to charge. At that moment his horse fell, mortally wounded, and leaping from his saddle he shouted, "Charge, men! For God's sake, Charge!" waving his sword, when a bullet pierced him in the breast and he fell dead. The Virginians heeded the command of their dying general and rushed upon the front of the foe,

while the Marylanders dashed upon their flank. The Federals gave way under this courageous attack and the Confederates gained the fence which they had occupied, and from that poured volleys into the retreating mass until it got beyond musket range. The Federal left had, in the meantime, driven in the Confederate skirmishers, but the defeat of the right forced that to retreat also. The Bucktails left their commander in the hands of the Confederates, and lost 55 out of the 125 that went into action. The Federals retired to Harrisonburg and the Confederate guard followed the army toward Port Republic.

Jackson and his army, as well as the whole South, mourned the loss of the brave, high-minded and noble Ashby, who had just been promoted, at the instance of his commander, brigadier-general, in command of the cavalry of the Valley. Capable and able officers succeeded him, but none was found who could take his place in guarding the outposts or holding back, with a handful of men and a few pieces of artillery, the advance of a whole army of the enemy miles in the rear of the main body of the army of the Valley district. He was the idol of his men and the beloved of every one who had the honor of knowing him intimately. His exploits have been embalmed in song and story, and his memory lives with that of Stonewall Jackson.

Jackson's army enjoyed a well-earned and much-needed rest on the 6th and 7th beside the bright waters and in the green pastures and park-like forests along the road between Cross Keys, where Ewell held the rear, and the north bank of the rivers at Port Republic, where the advance encamped, the surplus trains having crossed the North river and gone into camp just beyond Port Republic between the rivers and on the road to Staunton. A small cavalry force scouted down the river, watching Shields' slow and toilsome progress over the road through which Jackson had so lately floundered for nearly three days. Jackson established his headquarters at Port Republic, on the line of communication with Staunton and with General Lee by way of Mechum River.

Fremont having ascertained that the rear of Jackson's army was in position near Cross Keys, about six miles from Harrisonburg on the road to Port Republic, and having concentrated his army, gave orders to advance on

Sunday morning, June 8th, and attack the Confederates. Ewell had made an excellent disposition of his division on opposite sides of the road, on rising ground behind a creek that ran along his front, and with his flanks extending into forests on either side, placing batteries in the road in his center, which swept the open country between him and the Keezletown road, which ran nearly parallel to his line of battle, and along which Fremont deployed his five brigades of infantry, a regiment of cavalry and several batteries. Another brigade followed his trains as rear guard. Bayard's cavalry, left as a guard at Harrisonburg, subsequently joined him. His entire force present for duty on the field of battle was about 11,500 men. To resist these, Ewell had Trimble's brigade of North Carolina, Georgia, Alabama and Mississippi regiments; Elzey's, of three Virginia and one Georgia regiment; Steuart's, of one Maryland and three Virginia regiments; Taylor's, of four Louisiana regiments and a Louisiana battalion; besides five companies of artillery; about 5,000 present for duty on the field of action.

Ewell's first position was nearly at right angles to Fremont's; his right rested on the road to Port Republic, about a mile from Cross Keys, thence his line extended nearly parallel to the Port Republic road to within half a mile of Cross Keys, with his left retired. Fremont advanced his left, turning on his right, and brought his whole line into position, parallel to Ewell's, on the hills northeast of Mill creek, protecting his right with batteries and a detached brigade. This movement, which was boldly and skillfully executed, brought his whole line into a dangerous position, which he, apparently, did not comprehend in his ignorance of the topographic conditions of the field, but it gave Ewell an opportunity to detach Trimble's brigade from his right, move it through a forest, and reform it opposite Fremont's left. This disposition made and reinforced with two Virginia regiments of Elzey's brigade, under Col. James A. Walker, on his right, he pressed forward and drove Blenker, of Fremont's left, from his position, and forced him to retreat to the Keezletown road, Walker advancing still further on the right and by his desperate courage adding to the success of Trimble's movement. During this time Fremont advanced Milroy against the Confederate center, and a fierce artillery duel followed, but with no results.

Schenck's brigade, of four Ohio regiments and two batteries, arrived at 1 p. m., when Fremont placed him on his right and advanced him cautiously through the woods to attack the Confederate left. Detecting this movement, Ewell strengthened that part of his line with his reserves, extending it more to the left, and by so doing delayed Schenck's aggressive movement, which Fremont abandoned when his left was driven back by Ewell's flank movement on Blenker. Ewell's skirmishers followed closely the Federal lines as they fell back to their original position, but his inferior force and the approach of night rendered it prudent for him to rest on his arms and make no further aggressive movement, being well assured that Fremont, after the experiences of the day, would make no further advances. Ewell's loss was 287; Fremont's, 664; small losses to either army considering the issues involved, as this battle of Cross Keys, or Union Church as the Federals call it, not only defeated but paralyzed Fremont's army, so that for the time being it ceased to be a very important factor, in so far as Jackson was concerned, in the field of action.

Taking a backward look, the movements of Shields during those of Fremont just described, demand attention. Marching up the Luray valley, when he reached Columbia bridge, 8 miles above Luray, he found that destroyed, so he could not follow the turnpike which there crossed the river, and found himself condemned to follow the muddy common road, which made his progress not only difficult, but extremely slow; but he hastened forward his advanced brigades to harass Jackson's flank, which he expected to reach by the bridge at Conrad's store, which he supposed his cavalry had held, and with orders to go as far as Waynesboro and break the Virginia Central railroad. Carroll's cavalry regiment led the advance. It reached Conrad's store on the 4th, when Shields ordered it to move rapidly forward and capture the bridge at Port Republic; but he could not follow in consequence of the condition of the streams, swollen by heavy rains, which crossed his road at right angles, descending with rapid flow from the Blue ridge and breaking up his command into fragments along the road, his infantry support, on that day, being held back at Naked creek, five miles below Carroll; a fact which Captain Hotchkiss had communicated to General Jackson

from his signal station on the Peak. On Saturday, June 7th, Carroll received fresh orders to press forward to Waynesboro, some 37 miles, by way of Port Republic, doing all the damage he could, in passing, to Jackson's flank and rear. He marched that afternoon with less than 1,000 infantry, a battery of six guns and 150 cavalry, and reached the vicinity of the Lewiston farm, six miles below Port Republic, that night, where his scouts informed him that Jackson's train, lightly guarded, was parked near Port Republic. The same day Shields sent Tyler's brigade from Columbia bridge to aid Carroll; this reached Lewiston at 2 p. m. of the 8th, while the battle of Cross Keys was raging.

On the morning of the 8th, while quiet reigned in Jackson's camps near Port Republic, and just as the general was mounting his horse to ride to Ewell's command, Carroll, who had learned from renegade spies the condition of affairs at Port Republic, and whom he had for guides, dashed forward with his cavalry and two pieces of artillery, drove in the Confederate pickets, and, rapidly crossing South river, took possession of the little village; and a portion of his force, turning to the right, with one gun, seized the south end of the bridge over which the road leading to Cross Keys crosses, and planted there a piece of artillery, while another portion of his force turned to the left to seize the trains parked to the southwest of the town. Providentially, Jackson had time to ride rapidly across the bridge before the street was occupied by the Federal cavalry, but a portion of his staff was captured and affairs were in a critical condition for a short time. Capt. S. J. C. Moore had a few men of his company on picket at the western end of the town. These he promptly rallied behind a fence and poured a checking volley into the Federal cavalry pushing in that direction. Carrington's not fully organized battery was in camp just beyond, near the wagon train; Maj. R. L. Dabney, Jackson's chief of staff, who was remaining at headquarters preparing to conduct religious services in Jackson's camps at a later hour, hastened to this battery, the guns of which were soon brought into position, and joined Captain Moore in a raking fire down the street, which forced the Federals to retreat toward the bridge and to the shelter of the houses in the cross streets. As soon as Jackson got across the bridge and gained the bluff beyond,

he took in the situation of affairs and brought into action the forces which had encamped there ready for such an emergency. Three batteries were quickly brought into position, and fire was opened through the bridge, followed by volleys from the infantry of Taliaferro's brigade, which was promptly available as it was just then drawn up for inspection. The Thirty-seventh Virginia charged through the bridge and captured the gun, and Carroll's force was rapidly driven back across South river, abandoning another gun. His infantry advance, coming up the river road to his support, was soon routed by the concentrated fire of three batteries from the bluff on the north side of the river, and the whole Federal force was quickly obliged to retreat, first toward the Blue ridge along the Brown's gap road to get out of range of Jackson's artillery, and then back toward Lewiston, but still subjected to the fire of the Confederate batteries that followed along the bluff on the opposite side of the river for over two miles, and shelled the retreat until it got out of range. This affair lasted about an hour; Carroll reported his loss as 40 men, two guns and 14 horses. Jackson's cavalry that was picketing the road toward Lewiston, had failed to do its duty and disgracefully fled when Carroll advanced, and so Jackson had no warning of his approach. This affair over, Jackson stationed Taliaferro's brigade in the village, covering the fords of South river, and marched the Stonewall brigade, with artillery, to opposite Lewiston, to watch any further advance of Shields' column, still holding a force in reserve along the Cross Keys road to aid Ewell, if necessary, in his contention with Fremont.

At this time Shields was still at Luray and writing to Fremont, at 9:30 a. m., that he thought that at that hour there would be 12 pieces of artillery opposite Jackson's train at Port Republic, and two brigades of infantry; also that some artillery and cavalry had pushed on to Waynesboro to burn the Virginia Central railroad bridge, and that he himself would follow with two other brigades. He wished to know if Jackson changed direction and hoped Fremont "will thunder down on his rear" if he attempted to force a passage eastward, concluding, "I think Jackson is caught this time."

Carroll remained quietly in the woods on the bluff below Lewiston, to which he had retired on the morning

of the 8th, after his discomfiture at Port Republic, watching the Confederate batteries and their supports on the bluffs across the river threatening destruction to his flank if he should again advance. Tyler's infantry brigade of about 3,000 men, accompanied by 16 guns, after floundering through the mud from Conrad's store, joined Carroll about 2 p. m. Tyler concluded that his force was too small to attack Jackson and create a diversion in Fremont's favor, therefore he remained in bivouac with Carroll the rest of the day.

Convinced that Fremont was either disposed of, or could be kept at bay by a portion of Ewell's command, Jackson provided for falling upon Shields' advance on the morning of the 9th. A foot-bridge, made of the running gear of heavy farm wagons pushed into the river in a continuous line and planked over, was constructed across South river, and at dawn Winder was ordered to cross both rivers and march down the river road to attack Shields, whose advance, under Tyler, had taken position on the bluff of the terrace near Lewiston, overlooking the wide bottom lands between that bluff and the South Fork of the Shenandoah, with his infantry so disposed that he could quickly swing on his left and throw them into line of battle across the meadows and at right angles to the general direction of the river and the road to Port Republic. Ewell was instructed to leave Trimble's brigade and part of Patton's to look after Fremont and to follow Winder at an early hour with the rest of his command. Taliaferro's brigade was left with the batteries on the bluff north of the river, whence he could aid Trimble in holding back Fremont at or near Cross Keys, it being Jackson's intention, if he could quickly dispose of Shields' advance, to turn back with his whole force and again attack Fremont in the afternoon of the 9th, but providing, in case he could not do this, for Trimble to retire across the bridge and burn it, thus leaving Fremont without the means of crossing to aid Shields or to attack Jackson's rear.

By 5 o'clock in the morning of June 9th, Winder was crossing South river and Jackson was moving with him against the Federal troops at Lewiston, without waiting for Taylor, whose brigade was following, but which was delayed in crossing South river by a derangement of the foot-bridge. Tyler had selected a strong position. Upon

his left, on a hearth leveled for burning charcoal, on the slope of the terrace overlooking the stream valley and from the crest of which a dense forest extended eastward, for miles toward the Blue ridge, he placed six guns, with a supporting force above them in the woods looking across a ravine, through which a run made its way from the mountains toward the river. His main body he disposed along a narrow road at right angles to the main road and leading to the river at Lewis' mill, the fences of which were a good defense in his front, which was concealed by an extensive field of standing wheat just ready for the harvest. Tyler's command consisted of two Pennsylvania, four Ohio, one West Virginia and one Indiana regiment, with 16 guns, and a detachment of West Virginia cavalry, in all about 3,000 men.

Nearing the Federal position, Winder deployed with his right in the edge of the woods on the slope of the same terrace occupied by Tyler's left, with the ravine intervening, extending his left toward the river, placing batteries in the road near his right and on swells of the broad bottoms toward his left. The Lewiston farmhouse, with its numerous outbuildings, was between the lines of the combatants near the foot of the wooded terrace. As he advanced, Winder soon found that his lines were commanded and enfiladed by the Federal battery on the coal hearth. He then sent Colonel Allen with two Virginia regiments and two guns into the forest on the terrace, on his right, to attempt to flank the Federal left and capture the battery that was impeding his progress, but he was met and promptly driven back by the superior fire of that battery and by the volleys of the four Federal regiments that were supporting it. To create a diversion, he sent the Fifth Virginia to his left to attack the Federal right, in which it met with some success, but this was promptly checked by Tyler, who reinforced his right with three regiments and drove the Fifth back after a stubborn fight. Finding that his 1,200 men were not equal to the enemy's tactic force, and that he was getting the worst of the battle, Winder called upon Jackson, who was watching the combat just in the rear of its center, for reinforcements. He sent Taylor's Seventh Louisiana, with batteries, to the left, but the Federals were still gaining ground in that direction. Just then the main body of Taylor's brigade, led by Taylor him-

self, approached by the Port Republic road on which Jackson, all alone, was watching the contest and seeing that the field was in danger of going against him. At that moment Captain Hotchkiss joined him. Catching sight of Taylor's advance, Jackson promptly ordered Hotchkiss to lead that command around through the forest, turn the Federal left and capture the battery on the coal hearth. The head of Taylor's column was promptly turned to the right, and, in concealment, marched as rapidly through the woods as the rough character of the ground and the thick growth of young timber would admit. Bearing well to the right, to be sure of completely turning the Federal left, the head of this column had nearly reached Deep Hollow, or Lewis' run, which flowed through the ravine between the contending forces, when an aide from General Winder informed the officer in charge of the movement that unless an immediate attack was made upon the Federal left he would be compelled to give way and abandon the field. After a consultation, it was agreed, in view of the present emergency, that the flank movement should be abandoned and an immediate attack, obliquing to the left, should be made upon the Federal position and battery across the ravine. Taylor quickly formed his brave Louisianians and charged upon the Federal position, from which a portion of the infantry supports had been withdrawn by Tyler to strengthen his right. Taylor's men, though opposed by a most galling fire of musketry and artillery at short range, succeeded in capturing the battery, but Tyler soon recaptured it with men brought from his right, when Taylor again rallied his forces and retook it; and so the contention went on for some time, for the possession of the Federal battery and the point of vantage for victory.

In the meantime, Winder reinforced his left with three regiments that had just come up, and ordered an advance which checked the charge, aided by two regiments under Scott, which Ewell had just sent in on his left, and captured and held the battery just as the Federals were starting in retreat and attempting to carry off the guns, although nearly all their horses had been killed. They succeeded in taking away one gun, but the Confederate attack was successful all along the line, and the Federals were soon in full retreat, followed by Taliaferro's brigade, which had just reached the field, joining with Win-

der in pursuit for over three miles, when Munford took it up with his cavalry, recaptured the piece of artillery that had been taken away, picked up many prisoners and followed the Federal retreat until dark overtook him.

Tyler made a brave and gallant fight, hotly contesting the possession of the field, on which he had so skillfully posted his men and guns, and stubbornly resisting every effort to drive him from it until Jackson's superior tactics made it no longer tenable. His loss was 66 killed, 382 wounded, and 382 missing, a total of 830; or, as stated by another Federal authority, 67 killed, 361 wounded and 574 missing, a total of 1,002, or fully one-third of his command—figures which tell the story of his courageous fight in which brothers and kindred from western Virginia met in opposing regiments on the bloodiest part of this decisive field of carnage.

Late in the forenoon, Fremont advanced against Trimble near Cross Keys, and was driving him slowly back, when Jackson thought it prudent to call him to the Lewiston, or Port Republic, battlefield, when he, with Taliaferro, withdrew as rapidly as possible, and without loss crossed the bridge at Port Republic, which he burned behind him and moved down toward the battlefield. Fremont arrived on the bluffs, overlooking the field of combat across the river, just in time to witness the retreat of Tyler and engage in the safe but shameful business of shelling the ambulances and the relief parties who were engaged on the field in looking after the wounded of both armies. Jackson quickly withdrew his men from the range of Fremont's guns, by byways leading from Lewiston through the woods directly to the mouth of Brown's gap, where he established his headquarters, and within which he gathered all his men in bivouac, but some of them not until midnight. His losses in the Port Republic battle were 816, killed, wounded and missing; 290 of these from Taylor's brigade, 199 from Winder's, 190 from Steuart's, and 128 from Elzey's. During the day all of Jackson's trains were removed to the cove, or amphitheatral basin, within Brown's gap, so that by the morning of the 10th, he was there concentrated and ready to either take the offensive or to retire toward Richmond.

Jackson rested his wearied and well-nigh exhausted men in their camps on the 10th. Tyler met Shields coming to reinforce him, at Conrad's store, and Fremont,

baffled at every turn, fell back to Harrisonburg on the morning of that day and continued his retreat down the valley on the 11th and 12th, followed by Munford's cavalry, which crossed North river and reached Mt. Crawford the night of the 11th, and the next day took possession of Harrisonburg and of the 200 wounded which Fremont had left there. The latter did not halt, owing to "significant demonstrations of the enemy," as he says, until he joined Banks and Sigel (Saxton's command) at Middletown, in the lower valley, to which point they had advanced, respectively, from Williamsport and Harper's Ferry. Shields continued his retreat to Luray, which he reached on the 13th.

On the 12th of June, as soon as he could cross South river by fords made passable by his engineer, Jackson moved his army from Brown's gap into the noble, park-like oak forests between the forks of the Shenandoah, in the vicinity of Weyer's cave and Mt. Meridian, where, for five days of splendid June weather, he rested, recuperated and refitted his army, and where, as he proclaimed in general orders, "for the purpose of rendering thanks to God for having crowned our arms with success and to implore His continual favor," divine service was held in the army on the 14th, during which the sacrament of the Lord's Supper was administered. Jackson issued another inspiring order to his men, June 13th, in these words: "The fortitude of the troops under fatigue and their valor in action have again, under the blessing of Divine Providence, placed it in the power of the commanding general to congratulate them upon the victories of June 8th and 9th. Beset on both flanks by two boastful armies, you have escaped their toils, inflicting, successively, crushing blows upon each of your pursuers. Let a few more such efforts be made, and you may confidently hope that our beautiful valley will be cleaned from the pollution of the invaders' presence. The major-general commanding invites you to observe to-morrow evening, June 14th, from 3 o'clock p. m., as a season of thanksgiving, by a suspension of all military exercises, and by holding divine service in the several regiments."

It is interesting to review this Shenandoah Valley campaign of 1862, which closed with the battles of Cross Keys and Port Republic. It occupied just three months—from the evacuation of Winchester. March 11th, when

Jackson fell back with about 4,500 badly armed and equipped men, before the advance of Banks with his 30,000, as well equipped and supplied as men could possibly be, to the 11th of June, when Fremont and Shields were in full retreat for the lower valley and Jackson was resting near the triple forks of the Shenandoah, the acknowledged hero of one of the most famous campaigns in history.

Regarding his retreat from Winchester in March as a confession of weakness, the Federal government at once ordered the larger part of Banks' force from the Valley to the support of McClellan's columns advancing on Richmond. Marching rapidly from his apparent hiding in retreat, Jackson fell, on the 23d of March, upon the remaining Federal force in the vicinity of Kernstown with 3,500 wearied men, and, though mistaken as to his enemy's numbers, joined issue with Shields' 7,000, and nearly becoming the victor on the battlefield, he compelled the return to the Valley of all the Federals that had left it, and to that extent weakened the Federal army moving toward Richmond and delayed its operations. Falling back from Kernstown, he drew Banks and his large army, still further reinforced, after him to Harrisonburg, where he disconcerted his pursuer by turning across to the Blue ridge, to a safe position near Swift Run gap, where he reorganized his army; submitted to Lee a plan of campaign for freeing the Valley and the mountains beyond, of three threatening Federal advances; got permission to carry out his designs, if he could do so with the aid of Ewell's division, then across the Blue ridge from his encampment, and with Johnson's brigade, which was holding back Fremont's advance just west of Staunton.

On the last of April, while he was deceiving Banks at Harrisonburg with a demonstration in his front, Ewell crossed to the camps Jackson had evacuated, while he took up his line of march, with his own immediate command, to join Edward Johnson, by a circuitous route, which involved the crossing of the Blue ridge twice, thus deceiving friend and foe alike. Joining Johnson on the 5th of May, he forced back Fremont's advance to McDowell, where he defeated him in battle, on the 8th, and followed after his retreat until it met his main body at Franklin where he left the whole Federal force safely disposed of on the 12th. Marching back to the Valley

and down it to near New Market, taking up Ewell's command in passing, he crossed the Massanutton mountains, marched rapidly down the Page valley, and on the 24th fell on Banks' line of retreat, which his attack on Front Royal, on the 23d, had forced from Strasburg, whither he had retired on learning that Ewell had reinforced Jackson at Conrad's store (Elkton). Defeating Banks in a pitched battle at Winchester on the 25th, capturing many prisoners and great quantities of stores, he drove the remnant of Banks' army across the Potomac at Williamsport, and made a demonstration at Harper's Ferry from the 28th to the 31st, as if he would move on Washington. Thus he threw the Federal government into consternation, causing it to order McDowell, who with 40,000 men had reached Fredericksburg on his way to join McClellan, to turn from his course and march to the Valley to oppose him; to order Fremont to withdraw from his advance toward Staunton, to co-operate with McDowell in blocking Jackson's way out at Strasburg, and to order a formidable force to Harper's Ferry, until more than 60,000 men were on the march to contend with his 16,000. Keeping up his threatening attitude until his converging foes were but a day's march from a junction at Strasburg, he then, having saved his captures and his prisoners, fell rapidly back and safely escaped those gathering to entrap him; divided this great force by calling to his aid the great topographic bulwarks of the Valley, and drew a portion of his foes under Fremont again to Harrisonburg, and to a chosen field of engagement at Cross Keys, where he dealt Fremont a staggering blow which caused him to halt and hesitate, while on the next day, June 9th, he met McDowell's advance coming up the eastern valley, which by his precautions he had kept from joining Fremont, and drove it back in total defeat. These two armies, which he had so successfully outgeneraled, halted not in their retreat until they were again safe in the lower valley.

During these three months Jackson had marched more than 500 miles, fought five pitched battles, and had numerous engagements with the armies of his enemy. On June 11th, General Lee wrote to Jackson from Richmond: "Your recent successes have been the cause of the liveliest joy in this army as well as in the country. The admiration excited by your skill and boldness has

been constantly mingled with solicitude for your situation."

The time had now come when it was necessary for General Lee to concentrate all his forces at Richmond to meet the threatened attack of the great army of the Potomac, which was now in position to the north and northeast of Richmond, within sight of the spires of its churches. Jackson's brilliant Valley campaign had delayed McClellan's attack by drawing to the Valley the 40,000 men under McDowell that the Federal commanding general expected to place on his right before proceeding, by one grand movement, as he confidently expected, to seize the Confederate capital. It was important that this force that had been withdrawn should be kept away, and this could best be done by again exciting the fears of the Federal authorities for the safety of Washington. To accomplish this, large reinforcements were hurried, by rail, to the Valley, most of them to Staunton, but Lawton's six Georgia regiments joined Jackson at his encampment near Weyer's cave. Federal prisoners, on their way from the Valley to Richmond, met these reinforcements in passing. These, promptly paroled, carried the news to Washington. The cavalry in Jackson's front, by various devices, spread the intelligence that Jackson, with 50,000 men or more, would soon again march down the Valley to fall on the Federal army there collected. Intelligent escaped "contrabands" reported the arrival of large numbers of troops at Staunton. All these tactics, allowable in time of war, had their effect, not only in persuading Fremont to retreat until he reached Banks at Middletown, but caused the latter to telegraph to the Federal authorities at Washington, on the 12th, "Jackson is heavily reinforced and is advancing," and on the 19th, "No doubt another immediate movement down the Valley is intended, with a force of 30,000 or more." On the 22d he was still on the lookout for Jackson and Ewell, and on the 28th, when Jackson had joined Lee and was actually fighting McClellan before Richmond, Banks still believed "Jackson meditates an attack in the valley." McDowell had been ordered on the 8th of June to collect his forces and resume his march, by way of Fredericksburg, to join McClellan, but the victories of Cross Keys and Port Republic, and the fears of Banks and Fremont as to what Jackson might again do, delayed him in the Valley, and

when he did move, it was toward Manassas, and not Richmond, and Ricketts' division did not leave Front Royal for Manassas until the 17th of June, when Shields followed him into Piedmont Virginia.

The object of his delay in the Valley being accomplished, Jackson left it on the night of the 17th of June, ordering his cavalry to continue its demonstrations down the Valley; and by rail and march, the "ride-and-tie" way, as it was called, he reached the vicinity of Richmond on the 26th day of June, and was in line of battle and ready to fall on McClellan's rear and participate in the bloody engagement of Gaines' Mill on the 27th, and become a potent factor in winning the victory of that great day of the Seven Days of battle around Richmond.

Swinton, the Federal historian of the army of the Potomac, in writing of Jackson's Valley campaign, says:

In this exciting month's campaign, Jackson made great captures of stores and prisoners; but this was not its chief result; without gaining a single tactical victory he had yet achieved a great strategic victory, for by skillfully maneuvering 15,000 men he succeeded in neutralizing a force of 60,000. It is perhaps not too much to say that he saved Richmond; for when McClellan, in expectation that McDowell might still be allowed to come and join him, threw forward his right wing under Porter to Hanover Court House on the 26th of May, the echoes of his cannon bore to those in Richmond who knew the situation of the two Union armies, the knell of the capital of the Confederacy.

CHAPTER XV.

THE PENINSULA CAMPAIGN OF 1862 — YORKTOWN, WILLIAMSBURG AND SEVEN PINES.

THE advance of McClellan's army, moved from Washington by transports, reached Fort Monroe the latter part of March, and on the 2d of April, McClellan in person ordered an advance up the Peninsula of 58,000 men and 100 guns. General Magruder, of the Confederate army, with 11,000 men, opposed his progress nearly at its beginning, from Fortress Monroe to between the mouths of the Warwick and Poquosin rivers, where the divide between these opposite flowing estuaries is narrow; then on a line extending from the James to the York, 13 miles in length, behind Warwick river on the southwest and covering Yorktown on the northeast, which had been admirably fortified throughout its length. Gloucester point, opposite Yorktown, was embraced in these defenses, thus guarding the entrance to the York. Marching his army by two nearly parallel roads, McClellan appeared before this line of defense on the 5th of April, and his left at once made a vigorous attack on the right of Magruder's center, which was promptly repulsed. On the 6th and 7th, after a personal reconnoissance, the Federal commander prepared for a regular siege of the Confederate works; distributing his near 100,000 men along their front, with his numerous batteries in favorable positions. Magruder, with his little army of 11,000, bravely maintained his ground for ten days, keeping back his engineering antagonist and vigilantly watching his regular approaches. By maintaining this bold front he gave Johnston time to bring his forces from the Rappahannock and concentrate them on the Peninsula, and thus effectually bar the way of McClellan's host to Richmond.

The famous Confederate ram Virginia still threateningly stood guard at the mouth of the Elizabeth, and held back the Federal naval forces from moving up the James when McClellan began his movement from Fort Monroe;

at the same time the Confederate fortifications at Yorktown and Gloucester point barred the entrance to the York.

On the 16th of April, McClellan again made a vigorous attack near the center of Magruder's line, which he broke, but this was repulsed with severe loss by the Georgia, North Carolina and Louisiana troops of Cobb's and Anderson's brigades. A second attempt satisfied McClellan that he could not carry the Confederate line by assault, so he proceeded to besiege it by regular approaches, especially the lines in front of Yorktown. General Johnston took command on the Peninsula the 17th of April, having concentrated there about 50,000 men to oppose McClellan's 100,000 or more with heavy siege trains. Looking over the situation, Johnston thought it advisable to retreat, but the authorities at Richmond directed him to hold his position as long as he could. On the 3d of May, when satisfied that McClellan was about ready to make his grand assault, and recalling what had happened to Cornwallis on the same historic field, Johnston secretly evacuated Yorktown, leaving his heavy guns behind, and fell back to a line in front of Williamsburg, Virginia's ancient capital, which had also been partially fortified, having gained a month of precious time, which had been of great value in making preparations for the defense of Richmond.

McClellan, on the morning of the 4th of May, finding his enemy gone, moved a large force in pursuit by the two roads leading, the one from his right and the other from his left, toward Williamsburg. Two brigades of cavalry and two divisions of infantry with artillery moved on the road leading from Yorktown, and three divisions of infantry by the direct road, up the Peninsula. Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, with his cavalry, covered Johnston's retreat, aided by the muddy roads, which had been dreadfully cut up by the moving of the Confederate army and its trains. The Confederates reached the Williamsburg earthworks by noon. The evacuation of Yorktown not only opened the York to the Federal navy for co-operating with McClellan, but it also necessitated the evacuation of Norfolk, which Johnston ordered General Huger to make, on the 9th of May.

Knowing the advantages that the opening of the rivers to his naval power had given his foe, and that he could

quickly transport portions of his army to the vicinity of Richmond and to his rear, either by the York or by the James, Johnston continued his retreat, holding back McClellan's pursuit by a cavalry engagement in the afternoon on the Yorktown road, backed up by three brigades of infantry, which forced back the Federal column. Sumner, McClellan's second in command of the Federal army, late in the day attempted to move forward by renewing the combat, but the dense forests, characteristic of that region, and the approach of night prevented his making progress. Magruder's division, followed by that of McLaws, continued the retreat during the night, as Johnston knew he had a race to make with the gunboats and transports that he divined McClellan was already sending up the York to head off his way to Richmond. Longstreet, who was left in command of the rear, placed the brigades of Pryor and R. H. Anderson, with light artillery, in the works in front of Williamsburg, which McLaws had evacuated.

Heavy rain and deep and deepening mud in all the roads characterized the 5th of May. Sumner, who had spent the night in the forest in front of Longstreet's center, in which was a rather formidable earthwork called Fort Magruder, delayed an attack that he might ration his men and reconnoiter on his right; but the impetuous Hooker ordered an attack as soon as he reached the front of the Confederate right, about 8 o'clock in the morning, pushing boldly forward a battery of eleven guns. He twice drove in the Confederate skirmishers by reinforcing his attack. Longstreet, watching the increasing force in his front, reinforced Anderson with the brigades of Wilcox, A. P. Hill and Pickett, and assuming the aggressive, moved against Hooker's flank, which with a stubborn fight was driven back, so that by 11 o'clock he was anxiously calling for help and looking for a diversion in his favor on the Federal right. Sumner ordered Kearny to Hooker's assistance, but he was still miles in the rear, floundering through the rain and mud. Longstreet's attack was successful and resulted in driving away the Federals and the capturing of nine pieces of artillery, but Kearny's arrival on the field with other batteries about 3 p. m., saved Hooker from utter defeat and enabled him to press back the Confederate line which Longstreet had reinforced with two brigades

that he had called back from the retreat. This enabled him to hold his position near Fort Magruder until night-fall, keeping Hooker at bay.

While Hooker was thus engaged, Sumner had been reconnoitering the Confederate left, and between 10 and 11 of the morning he ordered Hancock to make an attack in that direction, thinking he could thus relieve Hooker and flank Longstreet out of his position. Hancock's advance occupied some abandoned Confederate redoubts on the Confederate left about midday, and then awaited the arrival of reinforcements, in the meantime cautiously advancing and occupying the second redoubt, which brought him within range of the Confederate left. At about this time Longstreet, seeing that his trains could not make good their retreat before night, recalled D. H. Hill's division, which was in the rear of Johnston's retreat, and about the middle of the afternoon he put that in position on his left, facing Hancock, except two regiments, with which he reinforced the columns of assault on his right, under Anderson. In front of the cleared space which Hancock occupied was a dense forest, which screened his line from view. His artillery, firing from the redoubt he occupied, was damaging Anderson's left. This and other things induced D. H. Hill to seek and obtain from Longstreet permission to attack Hancock, and attempt to drive him from the field. About 5 o'clock he advanced with his two North Carolina regiments and two Virginia regiments of Early's brigade, himself taking charge of the right and Early of the left. The movement was badly made, the line having been broken into fragments in advancing through the dense forest. Hancock repulsed this bold attack with much slaughter, but did not follow in pursuit, and Hill reformed on Anderson's left. Late in the day McClellan himself came up and ordered reinforcements for Hancock and a renewal of his attack, but it was too late for that to be done. A cold and rainy night followed the stormy day, and both armies were only too willing to cease from strife and find what rest they could in their wet and muddy bivouacs. Longstreet's loss was 1,560 from a probable force of 12,000 engaged, and McClellan's 2,283 from an attacking force of 15,000.

The profitable results of this Williamsburg battle were on Longstreet's side. He had held all his positions for

an entire day, during which the divisions of Magruder and G. W. Smith and all of Johnston's army train had continued, unmolested, the retreat toward Richmond. That was what Johnston contended for, and the battle of Williamsburg enabled him to gain. By his order D. H. Hill and Longstreet abandoned Williamsburg in the early morning of the 6th and encamped at the Burnt Ordinary, 12 miles from Williamsburg, early in the morning of the 7th, and on that day the Confederate army was concentrated in the vicinity of Barhamsville, some 8 miles southwest of the head of the York. The Federal army rested at Williamsburg, satisfied that it was not prudent to follow a foe whose rear guard had handled them so roughly the day before.

As soon as Yorktown was evacuated, McClellan ordered Franklin's division to be promptly moved, by water, to the head of the York and disembarked at Eltham's landing, on the south side of that river, in the immediate vicinity of Johnston's line of retreat, which he hoped to intercept. Franklin arrived by 3 p. m. of the 6th, and before day of the 7th had disembarked his division, which was followed in rapid succession by those of Porter, Sedgwick and Richardson. The accompanying gunboats covered Franklin's landing, and the broad arms of the York protected his flanks. He promptly occupied a belt of forest in his front, not far from the road leading from Barhamsville to New Kent Court House, along which a portion of Johnston's army was retreating. Anticipating what happened, Johnston, on the morning of the 7th, ordered G. W. Smith to protect this road by advancing troops to drive back Franklin's movement. Placing the brigades of Whiting and Hampton in line of battle, Whiting advanced through the forest, drove in Franklin's skirmishers, and followed them through the woods, forcing them back, though reinforced with two regiments, to the edge of the forest nearest the river. S. R. Anderson's Tennessee brigade was added to the attacking column, and by midday Franklin was driven under cover of his gunboats. These and the accompanying transports Whiting attempted to shell from the edge of the bluff in his front, but the range of his guns was not sufficient to do much damage, nor was his artillery any match for the heavy fire of the gunboats; therefore, as he could accomplish nothing more, he withdrew to his

original position near Barhamsville, after a loss of 48 men as against 194 for Franklin.

No further attempt was made to delay Johnston's retreat, which his right continued to the vicinity of the Long bridges of the Chickahominy, and his left to the crossing of that stream by the York River railroad, near Dispatch Station, where he took position, on May 9th, on the north side of the Chickahominy, facing to the northeast, covering all the roads to Richmond by which McClellan could approach, and where he remained undisturbed until the 15th, resting and recruiting his army in a position to be supplied by railway trains and difficult to be turned by water. Longstreet held the right, located near the Long bridges, and Magruder the left, near Dispatch Station.

Huger evacuated Norfolk May 9th, after destroying the navy yard, and fell back toward Petersburg. The now famous ram *Virginia* was blown up by her gallant crew on the 11th and her men hurried to Drewry's bluff on the James, to take charge of the guns at the fortifications which General Lee, in the meantime, had prudently constructed at that point. The *Virginia* out of the way, the Federal gunboats ascended the James and attacked Drewry's bluff, eight miles below Richmond, on the 15th. The channel of the James had been filled with sunken ships and other obstructions, and the gunboats met with a most spirited resistance from the guns in the works on the bluff, which repulsed their attack and compelled them to fall back down the river. This naval attack in his rear induced Johnston to retreat across the Chickahominy on the 15th, and place his army in front of the defensive works, three miles to the east of Richmond, which had been thrown up in 1861 for the defense of that city.

On the 8th of May, McClellan ordered Stoneman's cavalry forward from Williamsburg to open the way for the advance of Franklin. On the 10th his army was well concentrated near Barhamsville; thence, feeling his way cautiously, four of his corps reached the vicinity of Cumberland, on the Pamunkey, and New Kent Court House on the 15th. On the 16th his advance took possession of the White House, near which the York River railroad crosses the Pamunkey; thence, advancing along the York River railroad, he reached the north

bank of the Chickahominy at Dispatch Station, unopposed in his progress, on the 19th.

Johnston, ever wary and on the alert, watching the slow but certain advance of his powerful antagonist, prepared to meet his coming assault on Richmond by gathering to that city the troops that had been left at Fredericksburg, Gordonsville and elsewhere. He instructed Jackson to do what he could to retain in the Valley the Federal forces he was already contending with, but to be prepared to come to Richmond with Ewell on short notice. Apprised of the formidable movement of McDowell from Fredericksburg with 40,000 men, he decided to attack McClellan before this large addition could be made to his forces. Johnston's new line of defense extended from Drewry's bluff on the James to opposite Mechanicsville on the Chickahominy, in a nearly north and south direction, but trending to the northwest from where it crossed the York River railroad, thus presenting a convex front from that point to opposite Mechanicsville, a few miles north of Richmond.

McClellan reached the Chickahominy on the 19th, and on the 20th moved two corps, about two-fifths of his army, across that swamp-bordered river at Bottom's bridge, the crossing of the Williamsburg and Richmond turnpike, which he followed to Seven Pines, within 8 miles of Richmond, a point a short distance south from Fair Oaks station of the York River railroad. A general deployment followed, with his left resting on White Oak swamp and his right on the Chickahominy, presenting a convex front to Johnston on the south side of the Chickahominy, and covering all the approaches to McClellan's rear from the west and southwest. This line was at once protected by earth and timber works, abatis and fallen timber. By a skillful movement McClellan, at the same time, extended his right wing along the bluff north side of the Chickahominy, and on the 24th of May took possession of Mechanicsville, placing there the strong and ably commanded corps of Fitz John Porter, thus covering the great highway leading from Richmond northeastward to the Pamunkey by way of Old Church. On the same day the Confederates had a lively engagement with McClellan's advance at Seven Pines.

Having firmly established himself to the east and northeast of Richmond in a well-selected position for

advancing on that city, McClellan anxiously awaited the arrival of McDowell, that his right might be extended with the 40,000 men that were already on the march from Fredericksburg to Richmond. To open the way for this approach, he ordered Fitz John Porter, on the 26th, to move a strong force northward, along the direct road from Mechanicsville to Hanover Court House, running nearly parallel with the Virginia Central railroad, to destroy that road and also the railroad leading to Fredericksburg, and drive away any Confederate forces in that direction. Porter dispatched three infantry brigades, two cavalry regiments and four batteries on this expedition; at the same time he dispatched Warren, with a strong force of all arms, eastward by the Old Church road, to destroy the bridges across the Pamunkey, and then follow up toward Hanover Court House and support the right of the column sent in that direction.

Branch's Confederate brigade, consisting of one cavalry and six infantry regiments and a battery, had been moved from Gordonsville to Ashland, on the Richmond & Fredericksburg railroad, to protect the two railways leading northward from Richmond. He was encamped between these roads, near Slash church, not far from Peake Station of the Virginia Central railroad. The Federal cavalry, moving by roads more to the eastward, sent its scouts to the vicinity of Hanover Court House on the 26th, thus informing Porter as to the condition of affairs in that vicinity. On the 27th, Branch, ignorant of the movements of Porter, had sent a portion of his force to repair the Virginia Central railroad near Peake. Porter's column, which had left Mechanicsville at 4 in the morning with fourteen regiments of infantry, fell upon Branch's force near Peake and quickly routed it, and when Branch reinforced that with the rest of his command, they also, after a spirited resistance, had to give way before overwhelming numbers, and he fell back to Ashland, after the loss of one gun and some 700 prisoners. His loss in action was 265, and the Federal loss 285, numbers showing that this Hanover Court House engagement, as it is called, but Peake Station or Slash Church as it should be called, was hotly contested by Branch with his comparatively small force. Warren also appeared upon the field near the close of the action with his four

regiments and six guns, and by participating gave the odds very largely to Porter.

On this same 27th of May, Johnston, having information of McDowell's advance from Fredericksburg, determined to strike a blow at McClellan before that large reinforcement should reach him. He at once began the concentration of his army toward his left, with the intention of throwing the larger portion of it upon McClellan's right by a flank movement across the Chickahominy above Mechanicsville. At nightfall of that day his troops were on the march for their assigned positions, but just before dark, Johnston, who had called his division commanders together for final instructions, informed these officers of Jackson's great victory at Winchester, and that McDowell was already marching north and away from Richmond. A discussion followed, in which these various commanders expressed differing and diverging views, the upshot of which was that the movement was abandoned and the troops were ordered back, most of them to their old positions, and no attack was made.

On the 29th and 30th, D. H. Hill made a reconnoissance, in front of his division on the Williamsburg road, along the Federal front. The information thus gained led Johnston to plan, on the evening of the 30th, for another aggressive movement; D. H. Hill's division, on the Williamsburg road, was to advance, supported by Longstreet's. Huger's division, which had just arrived from Norfolk, was to move on Hill's right, extending the line south to the White Oak swamp; G. W. Smith's division, under Whiting, was to move by the New Bridge road and take position on Hill's left. Provision was also made for protecting the left of this movement against attack from the north of the Chickahominy. A deluge of rain fell on the night of the 30th, which swelled the Chickahominy so that it swept away most of the bridges that McClellan was constructing across that stream; that also helped to further convert the already rain-soaked country between the Chickahominy and White Oak swamp, the larger portion of which was covered with flat, tangled forest, into one great swamp. For a direct attack, Johnston's plan was a good one, but it failed in the execution, because his subordinates did not strictly follow his orders in moving to the field of action and each

take the road assigned to him. The result was that they did not arrive simultaneously, and instead of one concerted attack, which would have undoubtedly resulted in a decided victory, on the 1st of June, there was a succession of heroic combats, which were at first successful in the center, carrying even the formidable works which the Federals had constructed at Seven Pines; but, being unsupported by movements on the right and the left, this attack was repulsed by the concentration of a superior force by the enemy, after which followed attacks and repulses on the wings and again in the center. The Federals were driven from the south side of the York River railroad, but they took position along the north side, and the Confederate line was extended in a nearly east and west direction to meet this. They still held their right at Fair Oaks station, extended toward the Chickahominy, and so the 31st ended without decided results, except that the enemy had been driven back from his original position at Seven Pines, and had taken up a new line north of the York River railroad, and the Confederates had taken position in front of this and were again ready for a forward movement. McClellan sent reinforcements from his right to his left. Both armies rested, as best they could, in their water and mud soaked bivouacs that night, Johnston having ordered his men, at 7 p. m., to sleep on their lines and be ready to renew operations in the morning. A half hour later he was hit by a rifle ball, and just after that badly wounded and unhorsed by the fragment of a shell, when, disabled for command, he was carried to the rear, and Maj.-Gen. G. W. Smith became for the time the commander in the field.

It took the Confederates some time to sort themselves in the pine forest with its dense underbrush tangled with vines, and to get rationed and arranged for the morning. They built blazing fires from the pine knots scattered all about, to dry their clothing and blankets, but this lighted the enemy in reinforcing their lines north of the railroad. It was nearly midnight when the army was put in order and the killed and wounded were cared for. Longstreet summarizes the forces engaged on the 31st of May, as 18,500 Federals, consisting of Casey's, Couch's and Kearny's divisions under Heintzelman, with Hooker's division at hand but not engaged; and the Confederates

as consisting of D. H. Hill's division and two brigades and two regiments of Longstreet's, a total of 14,600. The Federal losses were 5,031 and the Confederate 4,798; figures showing that this contest was a stubborn one on both sides. Longstreet sums up the day's business thus: "Two lines of intrenchments were attacked and carried; six pieces of artillery and several thousand small-arms were captured and the enemy was forced back, by night, to his third line of intrenchments, a mile and a half from the point of its opening."

The second day of the Fair Oaks battle found Confederate troops under a new commander, by no means in accord with his subordinates. Gen. G. W. Smith wished to leave the left wing in position to meet any movement of Federals from north of the Chickahominy, while Longstreet was to push forward as the left of the main attack and D. H. Hill as the right. Hill soon discovered that the enemy along the railroad had been strongly reinforced and instead of attacking he withdrew his advanced brigades to the position from which he had driven Casey the day before. While thus engaged the Federal troops advanced. To check these, Pickett was ordered to attack, and a severe struggle ensued, which lasted for an hour and a half. The Federal line was again reinforced, and in the subsequent struggle Armistead's brigade, on Pickett's left, gave way and retreated in disorder, leaving Pickett to bear the brunt of the battle, which he did stubbornly and successfully, the Federals in his front not making a countercharge. At the same time Wilcox and Pryor, on Pickett's right, but concealed from him by a wood, were actively engaged with Hooker's troops, which boldly pushed into the woods held by the Confederates, and engaged them in a lively fight just at the time when Hill's order came directing Wilcox to retire to the line in his rear. This he did, but Hooker did not follow him; Pickett, thus left alone, asked for supports. Colston was sent to his left and Mahone to his right, and once more there was an hour of fierce contention without special advantage to either side, when the fighting ceased and Pickett removed his wounded, and at about 1 p. m. retired in good order, unmolested, from the field of carnage. During this haphazard fighting Smith did nothing on the left, fearing to provoke McClellan to move across the Chickahominy in force to the assistance of his three

crops that had been engaged in the pending contest; so the fighting came to an end, the Federals remaining in the lines to which they had been forced back the day before, and the Confederates collecting arms and caring for their wounded.

About two of the afternoon of June 1st, after the strife of the day was over, Gen. R. E. Lee, accompanied by President Davis, rode upon the field and relieved Maj.-Gen. G. W. Smith, thus taking command of the army of Northern Virginia, to which the President had assigned him, and which he from that time held for nearly three years, until the surrender of April 9, 1865. Lee at once directed the withdrawal of the Confederate forces, the divisions of Longstreet and Hill to their camps near the city, leaving those of Huger and Smith to hold the advance. This was accomplished during the night of the 1st and the morning of the 2d. The Federal forces did not follow them.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE SEVEN DAYS' BATTLES BEFORE RICHMOND.

LEE, in his first general order to the army before Richmond, said: "The presence of the enemy in front of the capital, the great interests involved, and the existence of all that is dear to us, appeal in terms too strong to be unheard, and the general commanding feels assured that every man has resolved to maintain the ancient fame of the army of Northern Virginia and the reputation of its general [Johnston], and to conquer or die in the approaching contest." In a private letter he wrote: "I wish his [Johnston's] mantle had fallen upon an abler man, or that I were able to drive our enemies back to their homes. I have no ambition and no desire but for the attainment of this object." Writing in a humorous vein to a young friend, General Lee described himself, at this supreme moment of taking high command, in these words:

My coat is of gray, of the regulation style and pattern, and my pants are dark blue, as is also prescribed, partly hid by my long boots. I have the same handsome hat which surmounts my gray head, (the latter is not prescribed in the regulations), and shields my ugly face, which is masked by a white beard as stiff and wiry as the teeth of a card. In fact, an uglier person you have never seen, and so unattractive is it to our enemies that they shoot at it whenever it is visible to them.

McClellan was busy during the first half of June in massing four of his corps on the south of the Chickahominy, near the position where Lee found them when he took command; while with the remainder of his army he assiduously fortified his chosen position on the north side of that swampy river, drawing his supplies by the York River railroad from the stores at White House on the Pamunkey. McCall's division, from McDowell's army, reached him on the 13th, but Lincoln held the rest of that corps in front of Washington, still fearing an attack from Jackson. By the 20th, McClellan had 115,000 men present for duty, to which Lee, at

first, could oppose but 57,000, but to these he soon added 15,000 from the Carolinas. On the 8th, while Jackson was ambidextrously engaged with Fremont and Shields, Lee was writing to him: "Should there be nothing requiring your attention in the valley, so as to prevent your leaving it for a few days, and you can make arrangements to deceive the enemy and impress him with the idea of your presence, please let me know, that you may unite at the decisive moment with the army near Richmond." Jackson, in reply, asked for reinforcements and the privilege of dealing further blows at his Valley opponents. Lee promptly sent him fourteen veteran regiments, under Lawton and Whiting, sending them off by rail on that day; marching them through Richmond in martial array, with all the pomp and circumstance of war, and taking good care to have McClellan apprised of their destination. The story of Jackson's Valley campaign has already been told, as well as the use he made of these reinforcements, and how he left the Valley on the 17th of June to swell Lee's forces at Richmond, after having amply provided for the quiet and safety of the large Federal army that his strategy had massed in the lower valley.

Undaunted courage, coupled with rare caution, characterized the new Confederate general commanding. Desiring to be fully informed in reference to the rear as well as the front of the great host beleaguering Richmond, Lee took his bold and ever-alert cavalry leader, J. E. B. Stuart, into his councils, and dispatched him on the 12th with 1,200 veteran cavalry to reconnoiter McClellan's rear. Starting from Richmond he followed the Brook turnpike northward to Ashland, then turned eastward by way of Hanover Court House, and followed the main road down the south side of the Pamunkey, a few miles in the rear of McClellan's far-stretching army, crossing the York River railroad at Tunstall's, making captures, destroying stores, and breaking the enemy's line of communication as he went; then, turning southward, he crossed the swollen Chickahominy, near Providence forge, and continued to the banks of the James at Charles City, whence he returned by the river road to Richmond, having in forty-eight hours, with the loss of but a single man, the brave Latané, whom he left in the hands of noble Virginia women for burial, ridden entirely around the Federal army and gathered information of incalculable value to Lee in maturing his plans.

Jackson, by marching and using the trains of the Virginia Central railroad, in a "ride-and-tie" way, reached Frederickshall on the 21st, where he rested on Sunday, the 22d. At midnight, after the Sabbath had passed, Jackson mounted his horse, and accompanied by a single courier, rode rapidly toward Richmond for a conference to which Lee had invited him. By impressing a relay of horses, he reached that city after a 50-mile ride, at 1 p. m., and at 3, Monday, 23d, was in conference with the commanding general in reference to an attack on McClellan's right. On that same Monday, Jackson's men moved forward and on the evening of the 25th reached Ashland, suffering greatly from the intense summer heat of the lowlands, the choking dust of the roads, and the scarcity of water.

By June 24th, McClellan had an inkling of the approach of Jackson, and asked Stanton, his secretary of war, what he knew of the whereabouts of this hard-to-be-located man. This information was supplied him on the 25th, locating Jackson anywhere from Gordonsville to Luray, or in the mountains of West Virginia, while Banks and Fremont, in the lower valley, were intently watching for an attack by him from up the valley. On this same 25th, McClellan telegraphed to Washington: "I am inclined to think that Jackson will attack my right and rear. The rebel force is stated at 200,000, including Jackson and Beauregard. I shall have to contend against vastly superior odds if these reports be true."

Lee's plan of attack, which he communicated to his division commanders in a confidential general order, was for Jackson to move on the 25th from Ashland, and encamp his 16,000 men west of the Virginia Central railroad; at 3 a. m. on the 26th to march southeastward by way of Old Polly Hundley's corner and across the Totopotomoy, to Pole Green church, near Hundley's corner, in the rear of McClellan's position and on the Shady Grove road which leads into the road following down the Pamunkey. As Jackson crossed the railway he was to inform Branch, on the Brook turnpike, who was guarding that approach to Richmond with one of A. P. Hill's brigades, who, when thus informed, was to cross the Chickahominy and move down its northern bank toward Mechanicsville. The order next stated: "As soon as the movements of these rear columns (Jackson's and Branch's)

are discovered, Gen. A. P. Hill, with the rest of his division (11,000 men), will cross the Chickahominy near Meadow bridge and move direct upon Mechanicsville;" Hill's movement to be followed by Longstreet, crossing the Mechanicsville bridge with his 9,000, followed by D. H. Hill with his 10,000, these three to unite in a general movement against McClellan's right flank down the north bank of the Chickahominy. Stuart, with his cavalry, was to lead Jackson's movement and then extend his left, the object of Lee being to cut off any retreat of McClellan toward his base of supplies, by having Stuart and Jackson in his rear and ready to push eastward and intercept a retreat if he should attempt one.

To repeat, Lee's 50,000 men, if marched according to his order, would be thus disposed: A. P. Hill moving on McClellan's right flank at Mechanicsville, supported by Longstreet, with Jackson moving upon the rear of the same flank, supported by D. H. Hill. Jackson's order read: "Bearing well to his left, turning Beaver Dam creek and taking the direction toward Cold Harbor," after that to "press forward toward the York River railroad, closing upon the enemy's rear and forcing him down the Chickahominy." The orders clearly indicate that Jackson, when he was ready for action, was to give the signal for beginning the fight. These were the tactic arrangements on Lee's left. His right wing, south of the Chickahominy, 30,000 strong, held the line of fortifications extending from the front of Mechanicsville to Chaffin's bluff on the north bank of the James, not far below Drewry's bluff on the south side of that river. Holmes with 5,000 held the intrenched bluffs; Magruder and Huger, in the fortifications east of and before Richmond, confronted with their 25,000 men the nearly 80,000 of the four Federal corps south of the Chickahominy and between that and White Oak swamp, with their intrenched advance at Fair Oaks and Seven Pines. It took sublime courage and confidence in his men for a commander to make such dispositions, and so divide his forces in the face of such great odds; but Lee had that courage in an eminent degree, and knew that he could trust the veterans of the army of Northern Virginia to resist a defensive attack against more than double their numbers, or to make an equally bold offensive one when he saw fit to command it. He also knew the hesitating

disposition of McClellan, and was doubtless well informed as to his fears in reference to a largely superior attacking force. Magruder and Huger were instructed to impose upon the large Federal cavalry force in their front with constant demonstrations, and if attacked to unflinchingly hold their intrenchments.

The intense heat and the lack of water exhausted Jackson's men and animals, and the reconstruction of bridges and the removal of obstacles from the roads which Fitz John Porter had destroyed and placed during his movement on Hanover Court House, delayed Jackson's march, so that his column did not reach Ashland until the night of the 25th, although his army had made 50 miles from Gordonsville in three days. By 3 a. m. of the 26th his advance, under Whiting, moved from Ashland on the Ash-cake road; by 9 a. m. it was crossing the Virginia Central railroad, near Peake's, and by 10, Branch was informed of Jackson's progress, some six hours later than Lee had expected. Part of this delay was caused by the failure of the commissary department at Richmond to provide rations for Jackson at Ashland, as had been promised him. Jackson, in person, was pushing forward with all possible dispatch and, as White writes in his "Life of Lee," with "vigor unabated and his spirit aglow with the ardor of battle." Keeping to the left and pressing toward Cold Harbor, his right guarded by Stuart's horsemen, at 3 p. m. Hood's Texans in the lead had a hot skirmish at the Totopotomoy. There the Federals destroyed the bridge, which had to be rebuilt before Jackson could cross that stream; so he was unable to reach Hundley's corner, in McClellan's rear, until after dark of the 26th. Obeying orders and bearing to the eastward, he had not passed within sight or sound of the battle that A. P. Hill, contrary to orders, had brought on at Mechanicsville, forcing Lee to follow up without the aid of Jackson and contrary to his plan of attack.

After being notified by Jackson that he had crossed the Virginia Central railroad, Branch moved down the Chickahominy by the road on its northern side, to uncover the Meadow bridges, that A. P. Hill might cross his other brigades and be in position to attack when he heard Jackson's signal guns. Branch met Porter's outposts when crossing the Virginia Central at Atlee's, where he was delayed by a vigorous skirmish. At 3 p. m., A. P. Hill,

although he had no sign from Jackson that he was in position and ready to co-operate in an attack, took upon himself the responsibility of moving on McClellan's right, fearing, as he says in his report, that delay might "hazard the failure of the whole plan." His advance was courageous and impetuous, but exceedingly imprudent. The issue being taken, and the Federals driven from Mechanicsville to their intrenchments across Beaver Dam creek, and the Mechanicsville bridge uncovered, D. H. Hill and Longstreet, of necessity, marched to A. P. Hill's support, and Lee, in person, pressed the attack in front without the help of Jackson in the rear.

Beaver Dam creek, or swamp, as it is called locally, is a short stream running from the north into the Chickahominy; it is crossed by the main road from Mechanicsville down the north side of the Chickahominy, by way of Gaines' mill, to Old Cold Harbor. For about a mile from its mouth up to this road this swamp-bordered stream is well-nigh impassable. Above the road a dam is thrown across it, making an extensive pond above it for the use of Ellison's mill on the north side of the road. This sluggish stream deeply trenches the plateau or high ground north of the Chickahominy. The position was admirably chosen for defense against a movement from the west. The highest engineering skill in the Federal army had crowned the open, high ground with earthworks for numerous batteries, and with intrenchments for troops on the crest and down the slopes looking toward Beaver Dam swamp; while the heavy timber that fringed the stream and covered its high banks was cut down and so disposed as to make an almost impassable abatis in front of the position. The Federal batteries were so placed as to sweep all the approaches to their position, and five brigades of riflemen, of McCall's division, filled the intrenchments and log breastworks provided for the defense.

By 5 in the afternoon of this 26th of June, Branch's skirmishers had driven in those of Porter, and A. P. Hill was ordering the brigades of Archer, Anderson and Field into action along the road leading from Mechanicsville northwestward to Bethesda church, to move upon the rear of McClellan's immediate right, while Pender, supported by Ripley, moved along the river road toward Ellison's mill. The attack was fierce, but the defense was furious, and the Confederates were forced to recoil, shattered by

the infantry and artillery fire that met them from the Federal right. At that very time Jackson was still north of the Totopotomoy, engaged in repairing the bridge which the retiring Federals had destroyed.

On the morning of the 27th, Jackson was advancing Ewell from Hundley's corner, where he had spent the night, eastward along the Shady Grove road, in obedience to Lee's general instructions. McClellan, advised of Jackson's presence on the field of action, and also, doubtless, of his being in force on his rear, fell back from his position on Beaver Dam creek to the central one held by Porter's corps, a short distance down the river road to Cold Harbor, where a second and still stronger position had been selected and strongly fortified. This retrograde movement, which had been brought about by Jackson without the firing of a gun, placed McClellan's troops, on opposite sides of the Chickahominy, in a line extending nearly north and south and facing westward. His right was again behind a swampy stream, running from the north into the Chickahominy, crossed by the road leading from Mechanicsville to Cold Harbor, with a pond and Gaines' mill above and beside it. The topographic conditions and the Federal preparations were much the same as those at Ellison's mill.

Jackson, rightly expecting to be supplied with maps of a locality so near to Richmond where the engineers had had ample time to survey and map the country, had sent his own topographical engineer and his assistants back to the Valley to continue the work of preparing an accurate map of that important military field; but no maps were furnished him except some that were imperfect and unreliable, and the guides sent to lead him were not well informed as to the field of action. The same was true in reference to other portions of Lee's command and of General Lee himself; consequently there was a clash in the ordered movements of troops based on unreliable maps, and it was very difficult to secure concert of action where so much of the country was covered with forests and cut up by deeply trenched watercourses.

Lee promptly ordered an attack on the new Federal position. A. P. Hill was sent along the main road from Mechanicsville to Cold Harbor, by way of Gaines' mill, while Longstreet was moved along a private road between the main road and the Chickahominy, nearly parallel to

those leading to the Gaines house, which was west of the swamp behind Gaines' mill, and the New bridge over the Chickahominy. Jackson's guide conducted Ewell, by a road leading to Walnut Grove church on the main river road, west instead of east of the right flank and rear of McClellan's new position. This brought Ewell face to face with A. P. Hill, instead of some distance to his left, thus paralyzing the movements of each of these division commanders. D. H. Hill, who had been ordered to report to Jackson, pushed forward, from Mechanicsville, on the road leading to Bethesda church and Porter's right rear. By 2 p. m. Jackson had D. H. Hill's division in front of Old Cold Harbor, pressing forward upon Porter's right flank and rear, through fallen timber and tangled brushwood, which the enemy had provided as a defense to the rear of his right flank. This forward movement was opposed by sharpshooters. Lee, at Walnut Grove church, in front of which his line of battle, under A. P. Hill and Longstreet, was advancing toward the enemy's position beyond Powhite swamp, had ordered Jackson to continue his eastward course, strike Porter's rear and threaten his communications with York river, expecting this closing down upon his front, flank and rear would drive him down the Chickahominy.

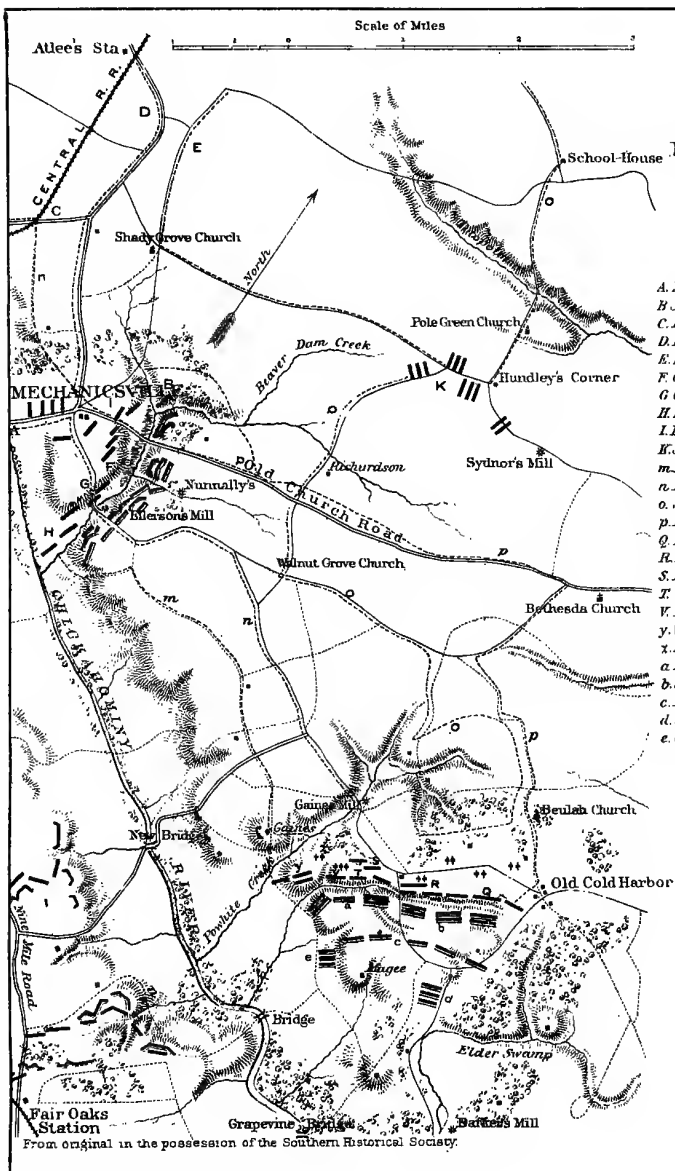
Having, by strenuous efforts, got his troops in position north of Old Cold Harbor, Jackson ordered forward Bondurant's battery to draw the fire of the Federal guns and thus reveal their position, which was screened by intervening forests. The furious fire that this action drew, furnished Jackson the information he wanted, at about 2:30 p. m., just as Hill was moving his division to assault the Federals at New Cold Harbor, having already driven Porter's skirmishers from Gaines' mill and the immediate line of Powhite swamp. Knowing that Longstreet was on his right, Hill, with his usual impetuous ardor, dashed across Powhite swamp and the obstructions that had been placed behind it, and rushed against the strong batteries and intrenched lines of the Federal center, and in fierce contention strove, for two hours, to carry the strong Federal position. He forced Porter to call for help, and at 3:30 Slocum added his 5,000 men to the defense. Hill had endured this fierce contest without assistance. Of course he could not with his single attacking line, against formidable obstacles, drive from

Scale of Miles

MAP
OF
BATTLE-FIELD
OF
MECHANICSVILLE
AND
COLD HARBOR,
VA.

— Union
— Confederate

- A. Mechanicsville Bridge
- B. J. R. Anderson's Brigade
- C. Road to Meadow Bridge
- D. Brinck's Brigade from Half Sink
- E. Road on which Ewell came
- F. Charge of 38th N. C. June 26th
- G. Charge of 1st S. Cand. 44th Co.
- H. Featherston, Wilcox, Pryor
- I. Field's Brigade
- K. Jackson during battle June 26th
- m. Longstreet's route
- n. A. P. Hill's route
- o. Jackson's route
- p. D. H. Hill's route
- Q. D. H. Hill's Division
- R. Ewell and Lawton
- S. A. P. Hill and Jackson
- T. Whitney's charge
- V. Pickett's Brigade
- y. Wilcox's column
- x. Federal guns
- a. Morrell's Division
- b. Sykes' Division
- c. M^c Call's Division
- d. Stocum's Division
- e. Cavalry



From original in the possession of the Southern Historical Society.

their intrenched and barricaded position three lines of infantry, one above the other, on a steep slope, protected by fallen timber, and having the ridge behind them occupied by heavy guns that poured upon him shot and shell over the heads of the Federal infantry. At 4, Lee ordered Longstreet to make a demonstration against Porter's left, toward the Chickahominy, on Turkey hill. The crest of this hill, crowned with numerous Federal batteries, was 60 feet higher than the plateau opposite, on which Longstreet formed his line of battle. Numerous and elaborate defenses protected the slope of Turkey hill at this point, just as above; at the same time, McClellan's heavy siege guns, from his position south of the Chickahominy, had an enfilade fire on Longstreet's right as he advanced. These conditions led Longstreet to concentrate his entire division to strike the blow he had been ordered to give, and it was 7 o'clock before he was ready to move.

In the meantime, Jackson had not been idle. No leader of fighting men better understood the necessity of joining in a fight, when a fight was on, than he did; and when he found himself in front of Old Cold Harbor and heard the sound of firing on his right, he knew that the thing for him to do was to help defeat the enemy and drive him from his position, rather than be a looker-on and continue moving to the eastward, as he might have done under the general instructions of his orders. His divisions stretched across several miles of country, eastward and westward, through forests and across swampy creeks with steep and difficult banks, but he had so arranged them that they could be promptly moved when the emergency came for so doing. His chief of staff, Major Dabney, was quite unwell, having been overcome by the intense heat and the exertions of the past few days in the discharge of his arduous duties. The rest of the staff were scattered, under orders, and Jackson began giving instructions to Major Dabney to ride rapidly to the right and send forward each division, as he reached its commander, instructing each to bear to the left in moving forward, thus bringing his line of battle into successive action in echelon. Just as he was concluding his instructions, another staff officer, whose duty really was not on the field of battle, came up. Jackson at once directed Major Dabney to remain with him, while he sent this officer to

deliver his orders. The major protested, knowing that it was dangerous to intrust such important orders to one not accustomed to such duty, but Jackson, aware of Dabney's exhausted physical condition, persisted. The result was, that this officer instructed the several division commanders, not to move, but to be ready to move, and so an hour or more of precious time was lost, during which Jackson was impatiently waiting to hear the sound of his guns attacking the enemy's flank and rear and bringing relief to Hill. Major Dabney, sent to the rear for another purpose, was also impatiently listening for this attack, and, not hearing it, he, without orders, rode at full speed to the nearest division, and finding what orders had been given it, promptly ordered it into action, and so, in succession, gave the order to each division, when the whole line promptly swept into action; D. H. Hill on the left, followed on the right by Ewell, Jackson's old division, then Whiting. As the sound of the guns of these advances rang out, a wild yell swept through the lines of A. P. Hill and Longstreet, "Jackson's come." Pressing forward, though somewhat in disorder from the character of the country passed over, Jackson's men soon enveloped Porter's right and center, relieved A. P. Hill's exhausted men, and, with fixed bayonets, swept over all obstructions, whether of nature or of man. Lee, intently listening for the sound of battle, hearing Jackson's opening, promptly ordered his whole line to press forward.

Magruder performed his part well in holding the Federal troops south of the Chickahominy, marching and countermarching his infantry in deceptive movements and keeping his artillery in constant action. Porter soon saw that, unaided, he could not long resist the tide of battle that was now rolling full along his front and closing in on his flanks. He called for reinforcements, which McClellan ordered from Franklin and Sumner, across the river. Franklin replied that for him to send was "not prudent," and Sumner, more threatened by the brave Magruder, replied, "hazardous;" but 5,000 men, the brigades of French and Meagher, were sent to Porter's rear, as the day was closing, and reached Turkey hill just in time to receive the routed living remnant of Porter's corps. The forests and the condition of the country occupied by Lee's lines, prevented the use of much artil-

lery in this battle of Gaines' Mill, but braver, daring and more heroic endeavor was never made by patriotic soldiers than on that day, all along the lines, especially by Hill's North Carolinians and Virginians, Lawton's Georgians, and memorably by Hood's Texans, who stormed the heights of Turkey and McGehee's hills, sweeping across fences and ditches, through fallen timber and abatis, and over intrenchments which blazed with sheeted fire from infantry and artillery, from the entire Federal front, leaving well-nigh half of their comrades dead or wounded on the way, and rolling back, in a sullen tide of defeat, both the regulars and the volunteers of Porter's corps, and becoming masters of the heights they had so bravely stormed. As it ever did, Jackson's "Stonewall brigade" pushed into the thickest of the fight, across the path of Ewell, and bore its full share in winning this glorious victory.

Porter's men were brave fighters and could not well have been asked to do more than they did to hold their position. Especially was this true of the Federal center and left, which held on stubbornly after Jackson had crushed their right. To the disposing of these Jackson then addressed himself, sending Whiting with the 4,000 of Hood and Law, to move with trailed arms, at double-quick, down the slope to the swamp and then rush up the steep ascent to the Federal fortress. Hood's Texans on the right, with Law's Mississippians and Alabamians on the left, swept silently forward, losing a thousand men as they advanced; then, with wild yell, leaped over obstruction after obstruction, cleared the breastworks, and followed in hot pursuit the retreating Federals that fled before their fierce courage and withering fire. All caught the notes of coming victory, and to its wild music rushed forward and helped to make that victory complete.

The reinforcements that McClellan had brought across the Chickahominy were just in time to oppose the onward rush of the Confederates, and to form a line of defense behind which the routed Federals could rally, enabling Porter to form a new line with 35,000 men, just in front of the Chickahominy, on the very verge of Turkey hill. This Porter managed with soldierly skill and obstinately held on until darkness enabled him to cross that stream, destroy the bridges behind him, and join McClellan's main body on the south side of that river. The loss of 7,000

men and 22 guns and the capture of two almost impregnable fortress-like hills, crowned by embattled hosts, attested the daring courage of Lee's men and the vigorous defense of Porter's. Only the closing in of night prevented the capture of the whole Federal force north of the Chickahominy.

Lee had now successfully carried out the first part of his plan, having driven McClellan from his menacing position north of the Chickahominy and become master of his line of communication with his base on the York. He now proposed to follow up his victory and capture the Federal army, but McClellan gave him but a partial opportunity for accomplishing this result. Astute enough to forecast what might happen when Lee, reinforced by Jackson, should fall upon his right, which he had fondly hoped would have been doubled in strength by the arrival of McDowell, he had provided for a change of base by having supplies for his army sent up the James, to Westover, accompanied by a fleet of gunboats to convoy and safeguard them, and at the same time furnish a defense in case his army should have to fall back to that river.

Disheartened by the severe punishment he had received, at the hands of Lee, at Gaines' mill and Cold Harbor, McClellan at midnight of the 27th, after the remnant of Porter's corps was safely across the Chickahominy and had destroyed the bridges behind it, ordered five of his corps to begin the retreat across White Oak swamp to the banks of the James. This was the only way of escape now left him from the toils of Lee. It is true that on the morning of the 28th he had 105,000 men, more than two-thirds of whom had not been engaged the day before, and that between him and Richmond was a force, under Magruder and Huger, only about one-fourth as large as his own, while two-thirds of Lee's army were still north of the unbridged and unfordable Chickahominy and farther from Richmond than his own. Here was an opportunity for a great captain, who "took no counsel of his fears," to capture the Confederate capital by a prompt and vigorous assault, and accomplish the object of his grand campaign. But McClellan was not such a leader and Lee knew it, and had no apprehension that such an attack would be made, although he expected and prepared for a renewal of the combat before McClellan would give

up the formidable position that he still held between the Chickahominy and the White Oak swamp. But McClellan had made up his mind to escape from his sturdy antagonist, and there is no evidence that any of his subordinates opposed this conclusion.

On the morning of the 28th of June, Porter's corps, with a great array of heavy guns, stood on the south side of the Chickahominy, facing Lee and defiantly ready to oppose his advance. Four corps faced Richmond, extending from a fortified work on the Golding farm, on the border of the Chickahominy swamp, southward to the natural defense of the great White Oak swamp, a closed, living gate of well-armed and well-supplied men, in battle array, with well-protected flanks. Thus guarded in flanks and rear, McClellan started his 5,000 wagons and great herd of beef cattle, preceded by Keyes' corps, to open the way along the single road that led southward across the White Oak swamp toward his chosen retreat on the James. The dense forests completely concealed this movement from observation. Before noonday, Keyes had crossed the White Oak bridge and was four miles beyond it, near Charles City cross roads, guarding the approaches from Richmond by the two great highways south of the swamp. All day the impedimenta of the Federal army were forced, with Northern energy, to the rear along the hidden, muddy roads that led through the forest wilderness. This unexpected movement was so well-concealed that it was on for four-and-twenty hours before Lee was informed of it, or could divine McClellan's intentions. The morning after the battle he had hastened Stuart, followed by Ewell, who was farthest on his left, down the Chickahominy river road to Dispatch Station. Stuart spared no time in seizing the railway, damaging its track and attacking the Federal guard, which he scattered from Dispatch Station. They saved him the trouble of destroying the bridge across the Chickahominy as they retreated toward McClellan's army. Stuart hastened after these trains loaded with ammunition and supplies, which plunged into the Chickahominy, while his dashing troopers followed the railway to the White House, with fire and sword, and captured or destroyed the enormous supplies and the scattered encampments which had been gathered along that line of communication to McClellan's base of supplies.

The steadily coming messages from Stuart soon satisfied Lee that McClellan must be seeking another base, but the question as to what one, he could not, as yet, decide. Two ways were open. He could reach the peninsula by the lower fords of the Chickahominy, as Grant did two years later. If he did this, it was necessary for Lee to remain north of the Chickahominy and pursue him toward Williamsburg. McClellan's alternative was to seek the James, which he was already doing, but unknown to Lee. The bold front presented by Porter was a serious obstacle in the way of pursuing McClellan's rear, so Ewell was ordered to hold Bottom's bridge, across the Chickahominy on the Williamsburg road, while Stuart watched the roads farther down leading to the peninsula. It did not take the hot June sun long to dry up the common roads by which McClellan was retreating, and the clouds of dust from these roads, late in the day of the 28th, told the observant Stuart what was going on, and he quickly apprised Lee that McClellan was in full retreat toward the James.

On the morning of the 29th, at the dawn of day, Lee took up the pursuit of his retreating foe. Longstreet and A. P. Hill crossed the Chickahominy at the New bridge, opposite to which they had bivouacked, and marched southward with orders to take the Darbytown road to the Long bridge until they should strike the right flank of McClellan's line of retreat. Magruder preceded these down the Williamsburg road, through the Seven Pines battlefield, and between the Chickahominy and the White Oak swamps. Huger was sent along the Charles City road on the south side of White Oak swamp, while Holmes led his 6,000 down the River road to strike the line of retreat to Malvern hill. Jackson was left to rebuild Grapevine bridge, to which a road led from Old Cold Harbor, with orders to cross and follow McClellan's rear.

Lee did his best to strike McClellan's retreat with some of these marching columns, in the afternoon of Sunday, June 29th. The Federal army was stretched along the road from Savage Station to Malvern hill. Keyes, followed by the remnants of Porter's corps, led the advance and guarded the approaches to the Quaker road, along which the trains were moving to and across Malvern hill. The fragments of McCall's and Slocum's divisions had crossed the White Oak swamp and encamped

near Willis' church, near the knot of cross roads in the vicinity of Glendale. Heintzelman had crossed White Oak swamp and was going into bivouac just south of that, at 10 p. m. At about 4 p. m. Sumner's corps and part of Franklin's were holding the rear against an onslaught by Magruder at Savage Station. At about half past six, Heintzelman was crossing White Oak swamp at Brackett's ford, $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles above the swamp bridge, and by 10 p. m. he was bivouacking south of the swamp in front of Charles City cross roads, covering the Charles City road from Richmond. Charles City cross roads, on the watershed between White Oak swamp and Turkey Island creek, was notable for the fact that at or near that point the roads leading north to Bottom's bridge, northeast to the Long bridges, south to Malvern hill, southwest to New Market, and northwest to Richmond, all leading highways as well as numerous farm roads, met in intersection; it was also about halfway between the James and the Chickahominy, and in consequence of the coming together of so many roads, it was the most vulnerable point in McClellan's line of retreat. Knowing this, Lee bent all his energies to there strike a blow on McClellan's right flank.

McClellan also knew, from a personal inspection, the danger that threatened him at that place, and he had provided against it by sending Heintzelman across White Oak swamp at Brackett's ford, a mile and a half above the swamp bridge, so that his line of southward march would place him in position across the New Market and the Charles City, roads leading toward Richmond. To strike this point, Lee, all day, urged forward Huger by the Charles City road, Longstreet and A. P. Hill by the Darbytown road and the Long bridges road, and Holmes by the River road, to either support Hill and Longstreet, or to strike the head of the Federal retreat where the River road and the Quaker road met on Malvern hill. Success for Lee depended entirely upon the vigor and speed of these movements, but Huger was held back by the obstructions the Federals had thrown across the Charles City road, while Longstreet, after making but 12 miles, went into camp near Darbytown, only about six miles from the fatal point at the Charles City cross roads.

The 29th was consumed by Jackson in working hard to bridge the Chickahominy so he could join in the pursuit.

Magruder put but part of his men into the battle at Savage station, and so failed to drive away McClellan's rear guard, that there stubbornly held the road; while Holmes failed to reach and head off McClellan at Malvern hill. So the day passed without decisive results to Lee, and McClellan's retreat was continued with but little molestation.

The morning of June 30th found McClellan's entire army and heavy trains, including his hundred heavy siege guns and numerous batteries of field artillery, safely across the White Oak swamp, and by 10 a. m. Richardson's division, his rear guard on the main road, was destroying the swamp bridge. He now had 60,000 men in a naturally strong position, facing northward and westward, covering the roads leading to and from Charles City cross roads, with his flanks protected by swamps, and with the same sort of well-nigh impenetrable defenses covering nearly his entire front. The approaching roadways were all guarded by artillery, and his men had not been slow to everywhere add fallen timber and abatis to the defenses offered by the creeks and swamps. At the southern end of the swamp bridge was Frayser's farm, clear to the north and with forests to the south. There was placed Franklin with 20,000 men and a park of artillery, facing north and constituting the right wing of McClellan's army, ready to contest the passage of White Oak swamp. To the left, covering the roads from Richmond and the important junction of roads at Charles City cross roads, sweeping in an arc westward and southward, were 40,000 men under Sumner and Heintzelman. The position was, naturally, an exceedingly strong defensive one, and the disposition of the Federal troops could not well have been better made. They were now ready for the opening of the contest which is known in history by the names of White Oak Swamp, Frayser's Farm, Charles City Cross-roads, Glendale or Willis' Church; Glendale being the name of a plantation just south of Charles City cross roads, and Willis' church a point a mile in the same, direction from the same point on the Quaker road.

By 11 o'clock in the morning, the head of Jackson's column appeared at the northern end of the destroyed White Oak swamp bridge. Franklin at once opened on this with his heavy batteries. Colonel Crutchfield, Jackson's chief of artillery, brought twenty-eight guns

promptly into position and soon drove back Franklin's artillery, when Jackson attempted to force the passage of the swamp; but Franklin successfully resisted this with his more numerous muskets aiding his artillery and with two brigades that were sent to his assistance from Sedgwick's division, giving him 25,000 men to meet Jackson's 21,000. Jackson, seeing that the odds were too great and that he could not get at his enemy at a single point, desisted from making a further attack; but he continued to keep Franklin's position warm with his artillery.

It was 3 o'clock in the afternoon before Huger opened his artillery on Slocum, on the Charles City road, only to find his antagonist thoroughly guarded behind broad belts of fallen trees across swampy ground, so he desisted from attack. Lee, in person, directed Longstreet into battle about 4 p. m., with less than 20,000 men, along the New Market road toward Charles City Court House, or the Glendale farm, against double his numbers holding McClellan's left. Longstreet had charge of the contest. His advance was through fallen timber, tangled underbrush, and hummocky ground on his left, while on his right the head swamp of the western branch of Turkey run was between him and the Federal left. Eager for the fray, Longstreet's men rushed forward, overcame all obstacles, and fell upon McCall's left with such a blow that his men fled, in panic, backward through Hooker's line of battle in their rear. The rush against Kearny's left was not successful, for he not only had Slocum's aid but two brigades from Franklin's left, while Hooker assailed Longstreet's victorious flank. A. P. Hill moved rapidly to Longstreet's assistance, but the Confederates were only able to hold the ground they had won from McCall, having captured that leader and fourteen of his field guns.

While this Frayser's Farm-Glendale battle was raging, Holmes, with his 6,000 men and a six-gun battery on the River road, crossed the western branch of Turkey Island creek and was crossing Malvern ridge toward Turkey Island bridge, when Warren, with 30 guns and 1,500 men, assisted by the gunboats in the James, which had an enfiladed fire on Holmes' line, drove him back. At Holmes' call, Magruder was turned from near Longstreet's battlefield to Malvern hill, to take part in the conflict there pending; but that was over before he arrived.

The Federals had held their line of retreat for another day, though with considerable loss, and when darkness came the corps commanders, without waiting for orders from the commanding general, took up their line of retreat toward the position that McClellan, in person, had selected on the James, passing through the strong force of infantry and the line of powerful artillery that had already been placed across the Malvern ridge to guard the way to the longed-for refuge. McClellan's night dispatch of the 30th, to Secretary of War Stanton, reads: "Another day of desperate fighting. I fear I shall be forced to abandon my material to save my men under cover of the gunboats. You must send us very large reinforcements."

July 1st, the last day of the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, found the Federal army in probably the strongest position it had yet held, on Malvern ridge, a tongue of high land projecting southeastward, almost to the James, between the two principal branches of Turkey Island creek, which meet, near the southwestern end of this ridge, about a mile from the mouth of this creek in the James. This ridge was not only commanding in elevation, but the larger portion of it, where occupied by the Federal army, was cleared and open land, which could be swept by artillery, while its slopes extended to swampy grounds along the bordering creeks.

McClellan placed his main line at right angles to this ridge and to the Quaker road that ran along its crest just south of the junction with the road leading to Charles City cross-roads by Willis' church, along which Jackson would advance, and the one leading to Richmond by way of Darbytown, along which would be the advance of Longstreet and those under him. The flanks of this Federal front extended to the edge of the bluffs above the swampy branches of Turkey run. A cloud of sharpshooters covered the front. Couch's corps was behind these, on the right of the road, with Heintzelman's and Sumner's corps in his rear, but farther extended to the east. Morrell was on the left of the Quaker road, with Sykes in his rear, covering a cross road leading to Holmes' position on the River road. The whole front was faced with protected batteries, while others occupied commanding positions in the rear near his flanks. This made the approach from the Confederate side very difficult, as

these numerous Federal batteries swept the entire front. This part of the Federal line was less than a mile long, and nearly the whole of McClellan's great army was placed within this mile of frontage and a half mile back of it.

Just in the rear of this formidable battle array, the road to Harrison's landing, the point on the James to which McClellan was retreating, diverged to the south-eastward from the Quaker road and from the Malvern ridge. At right angles to his main line and extending southward from his left for nearly a mile to the eastward of the Quaker road, McClellan had covered the bluffs, looking to the westward, with his splendid train of heavy siege guns which he had carefully saved for such an occasion. These swept the whole country in his rear and also the approaches from Richmond by the River road. At the southern end of this projecting ridge and at right angles to its line of heavy batteries, was a still more formidable massing of guns, commanding the River road under the brow of the ridge and leading to the position at Harrison's landing, which he had already covered with formidable earthworks. Warren's division was also placed across this River road at the point of the ridge. But McClellan had another strong arm of defense which was a hitherto unknown element in his fighting. A large number of Federal gunboats had come up James river and were anchored in Turkey Island bend, so that their guns not only enfiladed the whole western front of McClellan's position, but had a range, for their huge shells, to beyond the northern front of his line of battle, and raked the right of the position the oncoming Confederate lines of attack would be compelled to occupy. This co-operation of the sea power of the Federals more than doubled the strength of its local land power, great as that was, and effectually prevented any attack upon the left flank or the rear of the Malvern ridge.

Continuing his pursuit of McClellan on the 1st of July, Lee reached the front of the Federal position about noon-day, and disposed a portion of the forces of Huger and Jackson, which had approached by the converging roads before referred to; the former on the right and the latter on the left. Magruder had been ordered to the same point, by the Quaker road, but it so happened that there were two roads in that region having the same name; he

had taken the wrong one, and finding out his mistake had countermarched, but did not reach the field of battle until late in the day. A. P. Hill and Longstreet were held in reserve, and it was useless for Holmes to attack the intrenched bluff before him bristling with heavy guns and well guarded by numerous nearby gunboats.

There were but few available positions for Lee's artillery, but these Jackson availed himself of; on the left with the batteries of Balthis, Poague and Carpenter, while on the right those of Grimes and Moorman, first put in, were soon driven back and their places taken by Davidson and Pegram. None of these could long withstand the fury of the concentrated fire of the seventy guns that swept the slope in front of the Federal position. Forming his men in the edge of the forest and on the borders of the swamp, Lee ordered his front line, under Huger, Magruder, D. H. Hill and Whiting, to move against the enemy. Armistead's brigade, on the right, was to take the initiative, with a yell and a rush. The assault was not simultaneous. D. H. Hill alone advanced, with his own yell, but Armistead did not. Later, Magruder fiercely contended to reach the Federal left, but Huger failed to support him vigorously, and although he shook Porter's line so that that brave fighter called for reinforcements, Magruder was compelled to retire under the storm of canister and musketry that swept the open slope up which he was leading his brave men. D. H. Hill's assault upon the Federal center was bold and brave, and caused Couch's line to stagger; but Whiting, not hearing Hill's signal, failed to move to his assistance, while the near-at-hand Federal reserves swarmed to the aid of Couch and drove Hill back with great slaughter. Lee hurried forward reinforcements, but to no purpose, for night put an end to the battle before they could join in the issue, leaving him holding only his first position and to mourn the loss of 5,000 killed and wounded of his brave and fearless soldiery. Some of his division commanders had failed to comprehend his orders, and so were late in reaching the field of action; others had failed to advance at the appointed time, and so the attack was irregular, and therefore not forceful. The tangled forests and swamps through which he had to advance, greatly hindered the tactical disposition of his troops, so that he only succeeded in bringing fourteen brigades into

action, and these but by twos or threes at a time, making their repulse certain from the massed Federal infantry and the tiers of batteries in front of them.

Notwithstanding the results of the day's combats and the almost impregnable nature of his position, McClellan was unwilling to try another issue, and as soon as dark fell, he ordered Porter to lead a retreat toward Harrison's landing, on the James, where he had ready for his army an entrenched camp covered by an extended line of gunboats. His thought may be imagined from two lines in his retreat order to Porter: "In case you should find it impossible to move your heavy artillery, you are to spike the guns and destroy the carriages;" and, "Stimulate your men by informing them that reinforcements, etc., have arrived at our new base." The appearance of the road passed over in the retreat, looked, the next morning, like one followed by a routed army. Abandoned wagons were all along the way, and thousands of muskets were scattered along its sides. Hooker, a Federal corps commander, writes: "It was like the retreat of a whipped army. We retreated like a parcel of sheep; everybody on the road at the same time, and a few shots from the rebels would have stricken the whole command in panic."

On the 2d of July, which turned out to be a very rainy day, Lee ordered Longstreet in pursuit on the direct road to Harrison's landing, but that slow-moving general only made two miles of progress, and went into bivouac when he reached the River road. The army was counter-marched, on the 3d, to Willis' church, to there take the road toward Charles City Court House and leading to the right flank of McClellan's new base and position on the James. But the guides again misled, in that country of tangled roads involved in worse tangled forests and swamps, and his advance, under Longstreet, was again retarded, so that he did not appear in the vicinity of Westover, on the right flank and front of McClellan's fortified camp, until noon of July 4th, to find that the skill of the Federal engineers, and the energy and zeal of its Northern soldiery, had encircled the entire front of the Federal camp with formidable breastworks, well supplied with artillery, the approaches to which were within the range of the gunboats, stationed in the James all along the rear of the Federal camp.

But three short months had passed since the superbly organized and every way equipped army of the Potomac had begun its "on to Richmond," but its every movement had been a failure. Jackson, with a small force in hand, had with strategic power routed or demoralized and then left stranded in the Valley 60,000 of its best men, during a month and a half of this quarter of a year. First Magruder, and then J. E. Johnston, had delayed and badly damaged the march of the main body, under the leadership of McClellan in person, on the Peninsula, keeping him back with fierce blows at Williamsburg, Yorktown and Eltham's landing, and by a bold front at Seven Pines and Fair Oaks, held him hesitating in sight of Richmond. Lee, taking immediate command after the wounding of Johnston, had gathered from all directions his scattered forces, hurled them fiercely upon McClellan's lines and intrenchments, and after seven days of fierce contention at Ellison's mill, Gaines' mill, Charles City cross-roads and Malvern hill, had driven him back, followed by dire disaster, and left him stranded on the banks of the James with a loss of 16,000 men. The heroic struggles had cost Lee 20,000 of his brave Confederates, but had relieved his capital.

Calmly reviewing these stirring events, Lee deliberately and honestly wrote: "Under ordinary circumstances, the Federal army should have been destroyed." Seeking reasons why that result had not been accomplished, he found them in the "want of correct and timely information." This, attributable chiefly to the character of the country, but largely chargeable to the lack of trained staff organization, "enabled General McClellan to skillfully conceal his retreat, and to add much to the obstructions with which Nature had beset the way of our pursuing columns; but regret that more was not accomplished gives way to gratitude to the Sovereign Ruler of the universe for the results achieved."

Lee recalled these results to his army in a general order of July 7th, in which he said:

The immediate fruits of our success are the relief of Richmond from a state of siege; the rout of the great army that so long menaced its safety; many thousand prisoners, including officers of high rank; the capture or destruction of stores to the value of millions; the acquisition of thousands of arms and forty pieces of artillery. The service rendered to the country in this short but eventful period can scarcely be estimated, and the general commanding cannot ade-

quately express his admiration of the courage, endurance and soldierly conduct of the officers and men engaged. These brilliant results have cost us the loss of many brave men, but while we mourn the loss of our gallant dead, let us not forget that they died nobly in defense of their country's freedom, and have linked their memory with an event that will live forever in the hearts of a grateful people. Soldiers, your country will thank you for the heroic conduct you have displayed, conduct worthy of men engaged in a cause so just and sacred, and deserving a nation's gratitude and praise.

The cheers of the army of Northern Virginia, as the victorious chieftain rode along their columns returning to resting and recruiting camps in the vicinity of Richmond, were their reciprocating general order. In leading them to conquer their foes, he had conquered their lasting admiration and devotion, and henceforward, whether in victory or defeat, their confidence in Lee continued unchanged, as it will continue among their descendants and their people "to the last syllable of recorded time."

CHAPTER XVII.

STONEWALL JACKSON'S CEDAR RUN CAMPAIGN.

THE conditions and the scene of conflict in Virginia now changed. McClellan, whining like a well-whipped schoolboy, and in so doing damaging his military reputation, begged for reinforcements and for permission, when reinforced, to make another attempt on Richmond. But the Federal government, alarmed at the result of its gigantic effort to capture Richmond, now feared, and justly, that Lee's victorious army might take up the line of march to menace its own capital; so, instead of reinforcing McClellan and permitting him to try again an "on to Richmond," it ordered him back to the line of the Potomac and to the front of Washington.

When it was learned that the ubiquitous Jackson was really engaged in the contest with McClellan at Richmond, the army that had been waiting for him in the valley, finding none to oppose it, ventured to cross the Blue ridge at Chester gap, and encamp in the lovely coves of Piedmont Virginia, just under and amid the spurs of the grand mountains in the vicinity of Sperryville; where, on the 26th day of June, with the roar of booming cannon, the echoes of which were heard as far away as Gordonsville, was organized from the armies of Fremont, Banks and McDowell, the "army of Virginia," under Maj.-Gen. John Pope. Its three corps, of now well-rested veterans, were prepared for another campaign—to essay another "on to Richmond" from another direction. The 13,000 men under Burnside, in North Carolina, were hastened to the Potomac end of the Richmond, Potomac & Fredericksburg railroad at Aquia creek, to guard the left of the new movement; and preparations were hastened to bring back the great host still on the James with McClellan, and add that to the new army of Virginia.

Excellent highways led from the Rappahannock region, where Pope was encamped, to Gordonsville and Culpeper,

and the march was not a long one to either of these places. A blow at Gordonsville would break Lee's line of railway communication with his best base of supplies in the Great Valley, and it was rightly concluded that if that blow were struck, Lee would meet it with a portion of his army, and thus give McClellan, opportunity to escape.

Full of ambition to accomplish what his predecessors had failed to do, and equally full of himself, and hoping to infuse some of the same spirit into the men whom Jackson had so lately roughly handled and discomfited, Pope joined his army near Sperryville, and on the 14th of July issued a very remarkable address, in which he said, among other things:

I have come to join you from the West, where we have always seen the backs of our enemies; from an army whose business it has been to seek the adversary and beat him when found; whose policy has been attack, not defense. . . . I desire you to dismiss from your minds certain phrases, which I am sorry to find in vogue amongst you, of lines of retreat and bases of supplies. Let us dismiss such ideas. The strongest position a soldier should desire to occupy is one from which he can most easily advance toward the enemy. Let us study the possible lines of retreat of our opponents, and leave our own to take care of themselves. Let us look before us and not behind. Success and glory are in the advance. Disaster and shame lurk in the rear.

After this bombastic fulmination, Pope immediately proceeded to wage unsoldierly war upon the peaceable citizens of the surrounding country, and "disaster" to these citizens followed every movement of his army. Under pain of expulsion from their homes, he ordered that every male citizen of the region dominated by him should take the oath of allegiance to the United States, and thus old men and boys, women and children became the suffering victims of this braggart, who expressed himself so anxious to meet and fight the Confederate soldiers.

McClellan was still lingering on the banks of the James, and Lee was as yet uncertain what his discomfited opponent might be ordered to do; but, watching the whole military chess-board in Virginia, he saw that it would not do to let Pope enter the field of contention without having him met by one competent to manage him, so, on the 13th of July, just as Pope was riding in from Washington to take command of his army of Virginia, Lee ordered Jackson to Gordonsville with Robert-

son's cavalry brigade and the two infantry divisions of Ewell and Winder, only about 12,000 men, but all hardy and well-tested veterans; and on the 27th another 12,000 under A. P. Hill were added to Stonewall's command. Pope's unheard-of orders came to Lee's hands during these preparations. That gentle-mannered man and model soldier characterized such threatenings against "defenseless citizens" as "atrocious," and by direction of his government sent a note to Halleck, the general commanding the Federal forces, protesting that such orders were in violation of the recent cartel entered into for the exchange of prisoners, and characterizing them as beginning "a savage war in which no quarter is to be given." Halleck did not reply to the protest; but it was noticed that Pope, for some reason, changed his behavior.

Lee still had 50,000 men in front of Richmond, watching for any opportunity to strike his enemy that might offer itself. A reconnoissance, on the south side of the James, revealed the fact that Coggin's point, opposite McClellan's camp across the James, and projecting toward its rear, commanded that camp from its bluffs and was within range of field artillery. Taking advantage of this, Lee sent D. H. Hill, secretly, to this point on July 31st, and he, under cover of darkness, startled the Federals in their camp and shipping by pouring into them the fire of forty-three pieces of artillery, doing considerable damage but suffering none, as he retired before an attack could be planned against him. This stung McClellan to seek retaliation, and on August 5th he moved out to Malvern hill, in battle array. Lee promptly advanced to Charles City cross-roads, ordering his left to threaten McClellan's rear, while with the brigades of Cobb and Evans, on the right, he drove the Federals behind the guns on the Malvern ridge and waited for the morning, designing to try again for the capture of that formidable position; but when morning came there was nothing there to meet him, as McClellan's courage failed when he found Lee ready to fight him.

Jackson's advance reached Gordonsville on the 19th of July, and he at once marched his veterans to the charming Piedmont region west of the coast range (the "little mountains of Orange," as Light Horse Harry Lee called them), where they luxuriated amid the open groves and in the grassy fields of that charming region, and recu-

perated from the effects of the miasmatic swamps of the low country in the great wild blackberry patches loaded with ripened fruit. Jackson himself pitched his camp far up on the western slope of the mountain range, whence he overlooked the terrace occupied by Pope, and could study from afar its peculiar topography, at the same time urging to tense activity in the study of the country and in the preparation of campaign maps his topographical engineers, who had again joined him. His cavalry held the line of the Rapidan up to the mouth of the Robertson, and then along that river toward the Blue ridge, communicating with the Confederate cavalry beyond, that still guarded the upper Shenandoah valley. The Federal cavalry picketed to these rivers on their northern sides. Lee had no misgivings about intrusting the care of Pope to Jackson. Writing to him, after sending Hill to his aid, he says: "Relying upon your judgment, courage and discretion, and trusting to the continued blessing of an ever-kind Providence, I hope for victory"—words and sentiments that found a responsive echo in the soul of his twin brother in the art of war.

Watching, through his cavalry, his scouts and his spies, for a coveted opportunity to meet his arrogant adversary, whom he constantly deceived by his own marchings and countermarchings (one of them 10 miles to the rear of Gordonsville to cover the coming of A. P. Hill to his army), Jackson soon found it when Pope moved forward to Culpeper Court House, and sent a portion of his command on the road leading to Orange Court House, but leaving parts of it strung all along the way, back for many miles, to Sperryville, at the foot of the Blue ridge, where a whole division under Sigel still tarried in camp. Pope's strategic force on the 7th of August was 36,500 men; but his tactic force, within easy reach of Jackson, was but a part of this number, and Jackson knew it. This partial force was the 8,000 men under Banks, an old Valley acquaintance of Jackson's army, in an advanced camp across the Rapidan. Ricketts' division, of about 10,000, was nearer to Culpeper Court House, but Sigel was far away at Sperryville.

Late in the day of the 7th of August, Jackson moved his men, by concealed roads, to the vicinity of the Rapidan, where they slept on their arms and were ready to

march in the early morning of the 8th, drive in the Federal cavalry, and occupy a favorable position where the road to Culpeper crosses the low watershed between the Rapidan and Cedar run. The day was intensely hot, the roads dusty, and both animals and men suffered fearfully. A misunderstanding of orders by one of his division commanders, which led to an interference of marching columns, added to the delay caused by the heat and the dust. On the morning of the 9th, Jackson moved forward and drew up his line of battle in the edge of the forest that crowned the Cedar run watershed, at right angles to the road and to the range of low hills known as the Cedar Run or Slaughter's mountain, that, covered with forest, extended parallel to the road and at right angles to his line on his right. A road ran along the top of this broken ridge, which Jackson proceeded to occupy with artillery and a portion of Ewell's division. The basin of Cedar run, crossed by that stream about a mile in his front, lay spread out before him, the larger portion of it divided into the fields of cultivated plantations, but with patches of forest, especially on its western side, along which ran the highway to Culpeper, on the west of which was a low ridge, mostly covered by forest but gashed with fields extending from the road to its crest.

Jackson, by a glance over the field of contest, discovered that he had secured an advantageous position for disposing of his troops for either attack or defense. He turned Ewell's division, which was in advance, to the eastern side of the Culpeper road, and Ewell himself, leading his right, advanced it to Cedar mountain, accompanied by a number of guns, for which he found good positions on the slope and crest of Slaughter's mountain. Early's brigade was formed on the left, followed by Hays' and Trimble's. Winder's division was ordered to support Early, but in echelon, extending his line to the left of the Culpeper road. Several batteries followed, on Early's right, through the open fields, while those of Winder followed the highway. Early's skirmishers soon advanced and drove back the Federal cavalry across Cedar run. Numerous Federal batteries, from the slopes beyond the run, opened on him as he advanced, but these were promptly answered by those on Jackson's left, center and right, and an active artillery duel was kept up for nearly two hours.

At about 10 o'clock, Pope, from Culpeper, six miles in the rear, ordered Banks to the front to make an immediate attack on Jackson. Ricketts' division was held some four miles in front of Culpeper, where the Madison road enters the Orange road, as Pope was in doubt as to whether Jackson was advancing in force over the Orange road; Sigel was ordered forward from Sperryville, 20 miles away at the foot of the Blue ridge, but became no factor in the impending conflict, because, after receiving his orders, he sent back to know which road he should take, although a graded one led directly from his camp to Pope's headquarters at Culpeper, and so arrived too late to join in the combat. It was about noon when Banks' advance reached the vicinity of Cedar run, the line of which was being held by Bayard with his cavalry and artillery. Crawford's brigade was formed on the right of the road, extending up through the woods to near the crest of the low ridge before mentioned. In his front was a wheat field, also extending up the slope of the ridge and prolonged by another field, the two cutting out a narrow parallelogram from the forest. Across this field, in the edge of the forest, with its right resting in a strip of woods south of the road and its left extending a short distance into the edge of the forest to the north of it, Jackson placed Taliaferro's brigade. Banks placed Angur's division, of three brigades, on the left of the road, thus extending his line to the south along the slope toward Cedar creek from the eastward. In Angur's front, next to the Culpeper road, was a large field of standing Indian corn; to the south of that, pasture fields reached to the foot of Slaughter mountain. The topography of the ground occupied by Banks was well suited for defense. That commander, smarting under the criticisms that Jackson's Valley campaign had brought upon him, and having in hand Pope's peremptory order to attack, was in a fighting mood, and doubtless thought that he now had an opportunity for settling with Jackson and regaining his lost reputation.

About 5 p. m. of the long August day, when the sun in that locality does not set before half past seven, and being in battle array, Banks ordered an advance, by one brigade on the north and two on the south of the road, which moved promptly and bravely forward. Gordon's brigade, one of the best in the division, remained in

reserve on the right, while Green's remained guarding the left. It was plain to be seen, from the Federal line, that there was a wide gap in the open field between Early's right and the left of Ewell's other brigades. The Federals attempted to break Jackson's line through this opening; but Early, always quickly comprehending the wants of his position, had already asked for reinforcements to fill this space, and Jackson promptly furnished Thomas' brigade of A. P. Hill's division, and so made his line an unbroken front.

The Federal advance on the north of the road, that of Crawford's brigade, was more successful. Taliaferro's brigade held the road and the strip of woods to the south of it on Early's left, but with several batteries between, and extended a short distance north of the road along the edge of the forest and that of the wheat field. His line was prolonged to the left, in the woods, by Campbell's brigade. It was unfortunate that the brave and prudent Winder was not at this point to look after these brigades of his division. He had been mortally wounded by the fragment of a shell, just as the action commenced some hours before. Crawford, with his own and part of Gordon's brigade on the Federal right, soon emerged from the forest, and in gallant style swept across the wheat field, diagonally turning on his left, and struck first Campbell's brigade and then Taliaferro's, and drove them back in great confusion, thus threatening for the time to effectually turn Jackson's left and gain possession of his rear. The Confederate officers of the two brigades that had been flanked, aided by Jackson in person and all his staff, made heroic efforts to rally their men. Every regimental commander was either killed or wounded, and they met with but small success in their efforts, and the winning tide of Federal soldiery swept eastward across the road and struck Early's left, breaking or driving back the half of his brigade. The Thirteenth Virginia, under Col. James A. Walker, though forced back on Early's left, made a determined resistance, holding on to its organization, and became a check on the Federal attack. Early's right, parts of the Twelfth Georgia and the Fifty-second and Fifty-eighth Virginia (parts of Gen. Edward Johnson's old command on Alleghany mountain and at McDowell), held their ground and beat back the oncoming tide. As soon as this Federal attack

developed, Jackson ordered Winder's brigade, the old Stonewall, through the woods on his left, overlapping the right flank of the Federal movement. The Thirty-third and Twenty-seventh Virginia regiments promptly engaged with the enemy that had scattered Taliaferro's men; the Twenty-seventh had to give way, but at this opportune moment Branch's brigade, of A. P. Hill's division, which Jackson had, by orders, been urging forward during the day, came up in gallant style and moved in on the right of the Stonewall brigade, extending its line to the road, and boldly pushing forward struck the flank of the victorious Federal column and hurled it in confusion to the rear. The left of the Stonewall brigade, at the same time, wheeled into action, and Crawford's men, yielding to the force of superior numbers, fled, under a destructive fire, across the wheat field to find refuge in the forest, whence he had advanced, and behind his reserves, which he, too late, had ordered into action. The brave Gordon promptly moved forward to save the day and attempted to check the Confederates; but Jackson, at that time, had extended his left with the brigades of Archer and Pender of Hill's division, and thrown his extreme left forward around the upper end of the wheat field, so that when Gordon advanced he found himself within a blaze of musketry, both in front and flank, and was forced in disorder from the field, after losing fully one-third of his men. A small battalion of Federal cavalry then charged down the Culpeper road to aid in saving a battery, but these were quickly repulsed. Of Jackson's routed men, some rallied on Walker's Thirteenth Virginia and others joined the fresh brigades moving in on the left, and took part in securing the victory.

The brigades of Geary and Prince, which extended Angur's line south of the road, were also swept away by the Confederate counterstroke, Early having joined in the forward movement along with Thomas, and borne an active part in turning the tide of victory. Ewell, on Jackson's right, watched the fierce contention from Slaughter's ridge, impatient to join in the fray; but the Confederate batteries, which, with their usual daring, were being pressed forward, not only to answer those of the enemy but to fire at short range into their lines of battle, so swept the field that he could not enter it without passing through their fire. When the direction of

this fire changed, later in the day, Ewell's two brigades advanced and joined in the thickening combat. His artillery, from a bench in Slaughter's field at the north-eastern end of the mountain ridge, opened with an enfilade on the Federal left and made that portion of its line untenable. Thus vigorously and unflinchingly pressed in front and flanks, by a superior tactic force, resistance, though determined and brave, was no longer possible, and the entire Federal corps retreated in disorder nearly two miles to the rear, to find refuge behind the division of Ricketts, which had been in the meantime thrown forward for this purpose and to check Jackson's pursuit. The latter pressed forward, from his right, Field's fresh brigade of A. P. Hill's division, with Pegram's battery, which opened on the retreating Federals, adding to their confusion; but several batteries, which Ricketts had placed on his left, in commanding positions, soon forced this movement, which was made after nightfall, to retire. Both armies then rested in bivouac on and near the battlefield, exhausted by the intense heat of the mid-summer day and the hard struggles they had undergone.

Jackson's losses in this battle were 1,314; 611 of these were in the brigades of Jones and Taliaferro, upon which Crawford's blow had fallen at the beginning of the battle. Early lost 163, and the brigades of Winder, Branch, Archer and Pender, whose timely arrivals saved the day, lost but 273. The Confederates captured 400 prisoners, a 12-pounder gun and three colors, and gathered from the battlefield 5,300 small-arms, all of which, after deducting about 1,000 left by Jackson's killed, wounded and disorganized men, were lost by Banks' division. The Federal loss was 2,393, of which 1,661 were killed and wounded, and 732 missing. Crawford's brigade lost 867, and Gordon's 466. Generals Angur and Geary were wounded and General Prince captured.

Jackson telegraphed to Lee: "On the evening of the 9th instant God blessed our arms with another victory." Lee promptly responded: "I congratulate you most heartily on the victory which God has granted you over our enemies at Cedar run. The country owes you and your brave officers and soldiers a deep debt of gratitude."

The 10th of August was another scorching summer day. Jackson held his position in the rear of his battlefield with his skirmishers on the other side of Cedar run.

Gen. J. E. B. Stuart put in an appearance during the day, having been sent forward by Lee, with the larger portion of his cavalry, to cover the right of Lee's general movement to the vicinity of Gordonsville. Stuart reconnoitered the Federal left, moving his cavalry along the eastern side of Cedar mountain and advancing his scouts well toward Culpeper. Through these, Jackson learned that Pope already had in hand 22,000 fresh troops, under Sigel and Ricketts, 2,000 cavalry under Bayard, and about 5,000 that remained with Banks; a tactic force of about 30,000 in front of Jackson's 24,000, from which the casualties of the 9th had taken 1,000. When informed of Jackson's advance, on the 8th, Pope ordered King's division of 10,000 men up from Fredericksburg. These joined him on the 11th, so that he then had 40,000 men at command. Reno was following King with 8,000 of Burnside's corps, and he reported to Pope on the 14th.

Through the tireless Stuart, who was as ubiquitous as Jackson himself, he was kept well posted in reference to these movements of the various parts of Pope's army of Virginia. Thus informed, he reluctantly gave up his idea of further attacking Pope, but remained on the battlefield during the 10th and 11th, caring for his wounded, burying his dead, and gathering the spoils of the battlefield. On the 11th he granted Pope a truce, until 2 p. m., for removing his dead, that were not already buried, and then, on request, extended the truce until 5. During the night of the 11th he recrossed the Rapidan, and the next day reoccupied his old camps along "the little mountains of Orange," covering Gordonsville, having stolen a march on Pope, who had arranged to attack him at Cedar run, on the morning of the 12th, with double his numbers. This bold movement of Jackson, although it did not accomplish all he desired and had good reason to expect, in consequence of the condition of the weather and of the failure of his division commanders to promptly and intelligently respond to his orders, was by no means a barren victory. Pope's cavalry had made repeated efforts to reach and break the Virginia Central railroad, and his main body was dangerously near to that important line of communication between Jackson and Lee, and of supply for both armies. The Federal commander was only awaiting the reopening of the railway from Washington to the Rapidan to move forward in

force and fall upon Jackson, and by so doing draw Lee's attention from McClellan that the latter's army might be brought around to Pope's. The battle of Cedar Run taught Pope his first lesson and gave him thenceforward a wholesome fear of his military schoolmaster, which made him desist from further attempts on the railway, and remain idle in his Culpeper camps while McClellan's army was being transported to Washington, thence to reinforce Pope, and while Lee was moving the whole army of Northern Virginia from Richmond to Orange, preparatory to sending Pope's army to meet McClellan's at Washington, and transferring the field of operations to and across the Potomac, while the farmers and planters of Virginia, in Piedmont and in the Valley, garnered the magnificent harvest which a bountiful Providence had vouchsafed to them.

CHAPTER XVIII.

LEE'S CAMPAIGN AGAINST POPE IN NORTHERN VIRGINIA.

THE battle of Cedar Run, as General Lee says in his report, "effectually checked the progress of the enemy for the time;" but the pressure from Washington was so great that Pope had to respond with an advance, which he made, on August 14th, when Reno's arrival increased his force to 50,000. He disposed his army from the crossing of Robertson river by the Orange road, to the crossing of the Rapidan at the historic Raccoon ford, across which Wayne led his Pennsylvania brigade to reinforce Lafayette in 1781. Lee, in expectation of this, had, on the 13th of August, ordered Longstreet, with his division and two brigades under Hood, to move to Gordonsville, and R. H. Anderson to follow him, anticipating by a day McClellan's movement from Harrison's landing toward Fort Monroe. At the same time Stuart was ordered to move the main body of his cavalry toward Orange Court House, covering the right of Longstreet's movement and placing his cavalry upon the right of Lee's army when concentrated in Orange.

Longstreet's troops reached the neighborhood of Gordonsville on the 16th, and the same day Jackson, in advance, moving secretly, put his command behind the outlying Clark's mountain range, east of Orange Court House, covering Raccoon and Somerville fords of the Rapidan.

Lee, in person, followed and joined his army in Orange near the middle of August, and on the 19th gave orders for an advance, having determined to strike Pope and defeat him before the great force under McClellan could join him. Longstreet advised a movement to the left, so that Lee's army, with the Blue ridge behind it, might fall upon Pope's right; but Lee and Jackson thought it better to turn Pope's left and put the army of Northern Virginia between him and Washington, cutting his line

of supplies and retreat. Lee's order of the 19th directed Longstreet to cross the Rapidan at Raccoon ford with the right wing of the army, and move toward Culpeper Court House, while Jackson, with the left wing, was to cross at Somerville ford and move in the same direction, keeping on Longstreet's left. Anderson's division and S. D. Lee's battalion of artillery were to follow Jackson, while Stuart, crossing at Morton's ford, was to reach the Rappahannock, by way of Stevensburg, destroy the railroad bridge, cut Pope's communications, and operate on Longstreet's right. The men were to carry three days' rations in their haversacks, and the movement was to begin at dawn of the 20th. Jackson desired to attack earlier; but Longstreet was not prepared. The concentrated army was ready to move on the 19th, but Fitz Lee's brigade of Stuart's cavalry, the leading one in the march from Richmond, had gone too far to the right, in the direction of Fredericksburg, and was a day late in joining the army, thus causing another delay.

Pope, on the 19th, ordered a cavalry reconnoissance across the Rapidan, which captured one of Stuart's staff with Lee's order of march on his person. This was quickly furnished to Pope, who hastened to evacuate Culpeper and put the Rappahannock between himself and the now famous Confederate general-in-chief; and Lee had the mortification of seeing from the summit of Clark's mountain, the southeastern of "the little mountains of Orange," Pope's army in full retreat, across the plains of Culpeper, on the very day that he would have fallen upon it had his strategic orders been promptly and energetically obeyed by his first lieutenant.

Lee's 50,000 men followed his marching orders at dawn of the 20th; but not against Culpeper Court House, for Pope had evacuated that the day before. Longstreet, preceded by Fitz Lee's cavalry, marched to Kelly's ford of the Rappahannock, while Jackson marched by way of Stevensburg and Brandy station toward Rappahannock bridge, bivouacking for the night near Stevensburg. Stuart, with Robertson's cavalry brigade, had a spirited contest that day with Bayard's cavalry, near Brandy station. Forced from that point, Bayard took position between Brandy and Rappahannock bridge, still guarding the Federal rear, from which Stuart again routed him and drove him across the Rappahannock, under

cover of Pope's batteries on the high northern bank. The Confederates captured 64 prisoners and lost 16, killed and wounded.

The morning of the 21st found Lee's 50,000 veterans on the south bank of the Rappahannock, with Jackson on the left, extending from the railroad bridge to Beverly ford, across which Robertson's Fifth Virginia cavalry had made a dash, scattering the Federal infantry near by, disabling a battery, and spending most of the day on the north side of the river by the aid of Jackson's batteries on the south side. On the approach of a large Federal force, Rosser, by order of Stuart, recrossed. Longstreet extended Lee's line from Rappahannock bridge to Kelly's ford. Pope's 55,000 men held the commanding ground on the north bank of the Rappahannock, and a lively artillery duel was kept up during the day between the confronting armies, but with little or no damage to either.

The undulating Midland plain, on which these contending armies had now met, was far better fighting ground than was the swampy and densely forested Tidewater country, which was so recently the field of contention. The larger portion of this vicinity of the Rappahannock was cleared and had been under cultivation, in large plantations, until the opening of the war. At the same time it was a more difficult region for strategic movements to be covered from observation. It was evident that Pope's concentrated army could not easily be reached by a front attack, while his left was difficult of approach, and receiving the reinforcements steadily coming to him from the direction of Fredericksburg. Lee's military genius, and his conferences with Jackson, convinced him that the proper movement was one that should turn Pope's right and place the Confederates in his rear, cutting him off from the old time highway that led through the Piedmont country, by Warrenton, toward Washington. Moreover, "the strength of the hills" lay in that direction; for within sight, looking to the northward and westward, were the outlying ridges of the coast range, the Rappahannock and Bull Run mountains, behind which concealed movements could be made in the desired direction.

The first step in this strategic movement was to get the mobile left wing of his army, under the energetic

and always-ready Jackson, behind these covering low mountain ranges, the southwestward extensions of the Bull Run mountains, without the knowledge of Pope. To accomplish this, Lee adopted a series of novel advances. While Jackson and Stuart were engaging the attention of Pope along the Rappahannock, north of the railroad, he moved Longstreet from his right, by concealed roads, and placed him in Jackson's rear, leaving the latter free to fall back after dark, giving place to Longstreet, and march to a position farther up the river, but still holding on to Longstreet's left. This first exchange of positions was made during the night of the 21st, or rather the early morning of the 22d, and that day, preceded by cavalry, Jackson reached the neighborhood of Warrenton Springs, where the great highway, from Culpeper Court House toward Washington, crosses the Rappahannock and goes on through Warrenton to Centreville. During that day Longstreet, by a vigorous contention with skirmishers and artillery, engaged Pope's attention in his first position north of the Rappahannock, and caused him to add to his force at Beverly ford, apprehending that Longstreet was about to force a passage there and attack his center. Detachments of Federal cavalry and infantry made dashes on Jackson's line of march from a detached column that Pope was moving up the north bank of the river, to keep pace with whatever movement Lee might be making to his left. Especially was a bold dash made at Freeman's ford, about noon, as Jackson's rear was passing that point. His rear guard, under Trimble, deployed and awaited the Federal attack. Hood, with two of Longstreet's brigades, came up about four in the afternoon, when Trimble, aided by these, vigorously attacked the Federal brigade which had crossed the river, and drove it back with slaughter and in confusion. A third crossing, in pursuit of information, was made at Fant's ford, by cavalry, infantry and artillery, but these soon retired, having learned but little.

When Jackson reached the river, opposite the Warrenton Springs, and found the ford guarded, he at once began moving his troops to the other side, sending over the Thirteenth Georgia and two batteries, while Early crossed, on an old mill dam, about a mile further down the river. It began raining while these troops were crossing, and an afternoon of showers was followed by a

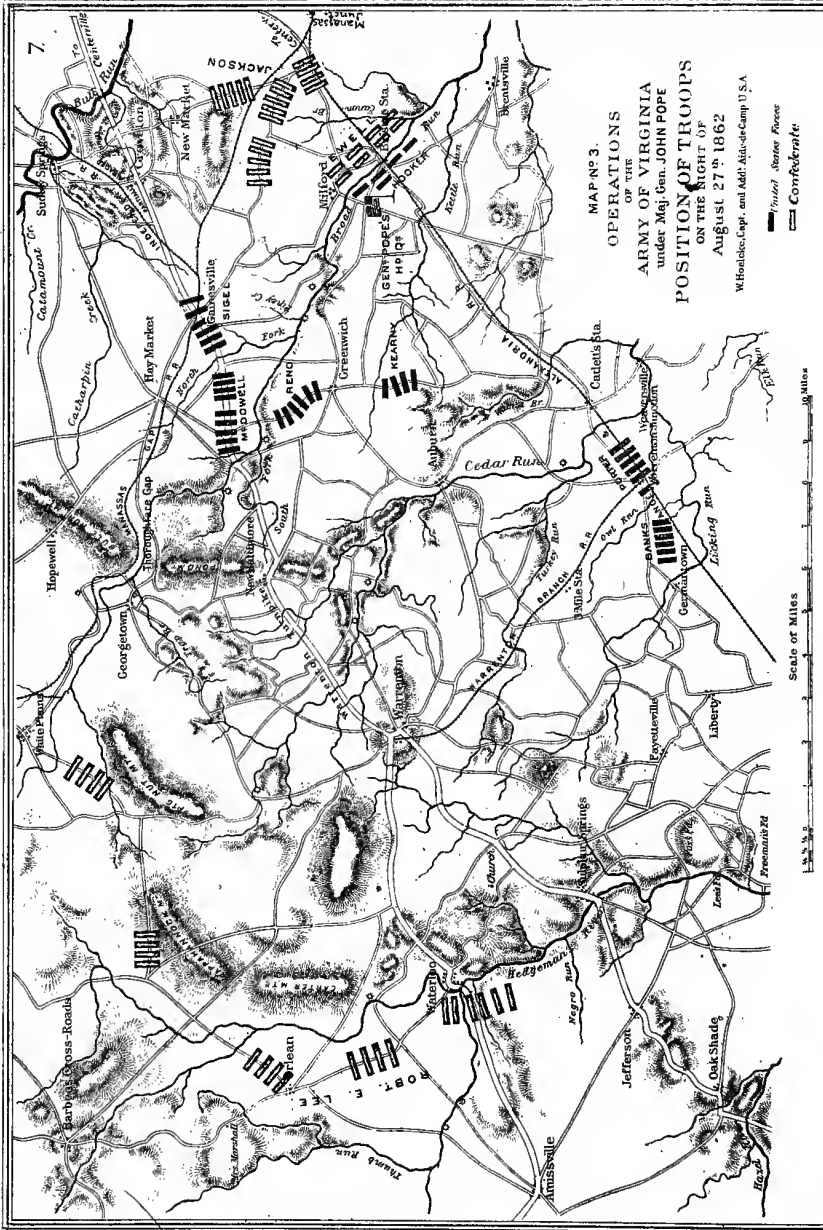
night of heavy downpour and darkness, preventing the crossing of more troops. By morning the river was swollen past fording, and Jackson's advance, under Early, was isolated on the further shore. Pope's main body had continued to hold its position, near the railway, on the 22d, as he was unwilling to remove further from his expected reinforcements from Fredericksburg. Apprehensive of an attack from Longstreet, he did not care to move farther to his right to intercept Jackson's movement, concerning which he as yet had no reliable information. Longstreet still held him at bay.

On this same 22d, Lee initiated one of the boldest of his deceiving strategic movements. During the forenoon he dispatched Stuart, with the main body of his cavalry, by concealed roads behind his army, to Waterloo bridge, four miles above Warrenton Springs, held by Jackson, and where the graded highway from Warrenton to Little Washington crosses the Rappahannock. There Stuart, with 1,500 men and two guns, crossed the river and began a rapid march for Pope's rear, to break the railway leading to Washington and gather information, just as he had recently done in his grand ride around McClellan at Richmond. With a good road to march on, he reached Warrenton unopposed, in the afternoon. After halting there for a short rest, he continued eastward, by Auburn Mills, to Catlett's station, on the Orange & Alexandria railroad, intending to destroy the bridge over Cedar creek near that place. The downpour that had swelled the Rappahannock, caught Stuart on the march, and he reached his objective in the midst of rain and darkness; but an intercepted and captured negro led him to a camp where were the headquarters wagons of General Pope. These Stuart quickly captured with one of the Federal commander's staff and his personal baggage and official papers. His efforts to destroy the wagon trains and the railroad bridge were but partially successful, in consequence of the rain and the darkness. He began his return march before daylight of the 23d, bringing off 300 prisoners, and recrossed the Rappahannock in the evening of the same day, without molestation, after having taught Pope a second lesson on the subject of rear guards, and infused an element of fear into the Federal army as to the safety of its lines of retreat; also bringing off the captured correspondence between Pope and Halleck,

which informed Lee fully concerning the strength and the plans of his antagonist.

In the afternoon of the 23d, before Stuart cut the railway and the telegraph at Catlett's station, Pope had telegraphed to Halleck: "Under present circumstances I shall not attempt to prevent his (Lee's) crossing at Sulphur Springs, but will mass my whole force on his flank in the neighborhood of Fayetteville," a cross-roads hamlet five miles to the southeast of Sulphur Springs, and about the same distance northeast from the right of his position on the Rappahannock. An hour and a half later he telegraphed: "I cannot move against Sulphur Springs just now without exposing my rear to the heavy force in front of me," still looking with alarm across the Rappahannock at Longstreet. Three hours later, after reporting Jackson's crossing, he again telegraphed: "I must . . . either fall back and meet Heintzelman behind Cedar run, or cross the Rappahannock with my whole force and assail the enemy's flank and rear. I must do one or the other at daylight; which shall it be?" Halleck approved the suggested bold attack on Lee's rear, and directed the troops approaching from Fredericksburg to march to Stevensburg and Brandy station, on the south side of the river, proposing to unite these with Pope the next day to attack Lee's rear. Gen. George H. Gordon, who has written so well concerning the army of Virginia, in which he served, and who fought so bravely at Winchester and Cedar run, says of Pope: "He awoke on the morning of the 23d with no very clear notions of what he intended to do."

The heavy rain of the night of the 22d interrupted Jackson's movement and compelled Lee to abandon, for the time being, his intended flank movement; Jackson, by the most persistent efforts, repaired the bridge at the springs in order to extricate Early from the perilous position which he was so boldly holding on the north bank of the Rappahannock, and Pope, knowing that river to be impassable, gave up, no doubt gladly, his scheme of crossing to attack Lee's rear, and determined to concentrate against the Confederates on the north side of the river, as he had at first proposed. In the early morning of the 23d he turned Sigel toward Sulphur Springs, by way of Fayetteville, followed by Banks and Reno. McDowell, from his left, was ordered to burn



MAP NO. 3.
 OPERATIONS
 OF THE
 ARMY OF VIRGINIA
 under Maj. Gen. JOHN POPE
 POSITION OF TROOPS
 ON THE NIGHT OF
 AUGUST 27, 1862
 Union: Cap. and Adf. Mts. de Camp U. S. A.
 Confederate

the railroad bridge, which up to this time, by the aid of guards and artillery, he had kept intact, and move toward Warrenton. These movements would bring him into line of battle facing any movement of Lee from Sulphur Springs toward Warrenton. Longstreet's batteries gave parting salutes to these backward movements. Reynolds' division of 6,000 men, from Aquia creek, reported during the forenoon of the 23d, and followed after McDowell.

The courage and ready wit of a Confederate soldier are well illustrated by the story that Allan tells in his "Army of Northern Virginia:" "Maj. A. L. Pitzer, of Early's staff, in attempting to find the Thirteenth Georgia regiment, was taken prisoner by a scouting party of the Sixth Federal cavalry. Overmatched in force, the major had recourse to his wits. He persuaded his captors that they were within the Confederate picket lines, and would be fired on whichever way they attempted to escape. He offered to lead them safely in if they would submit to his guidance. The offer was accepted, and the unarmed major led in and delivered the armed squad to General Early.

Early put on a bold front while awaiting the reconstruction of the bridge in his rear, aided by the swollen condition of Great run in his front. He destroyed the bridge over that stream, and held the road against Sigel's advance of 25,000 men, which Pope had ordered to make attack and beat the Confederates on the north side of the river. Sigel conceived the idea that Lee's whole army was in front of him, and therefore only skirmishing and artillery firing took place during the afternoon and until dark, Sigel, in the meantime, going into camp and advising Pope to withdraw his corps to a better position. Robertson, with his cavalry and some guns returning from Stuart's expedition in Pope's rear, joined Early during the day. As soon as the bridge was made passable, at about nightfall, Lawton's brigade was crossed over to Early's support. Ewell himself went over, for a consultation with Early during the night, when it was decided, in view of the large force before him, that it was not expedient to bring on a battle at that place; so orders were given at 3 o'clock next morning for Early to withdraw, which he did soon after daylight, and removed his men to Jackson's rear, where they broke their fast of two nights and the intervening day.

About 10 o'clock on the night of the 23d, Pope himself, accompanied by the corps of McDowell and the division of Reynolds, reached Warrenton. At that time more than 50,000 men of the army of Virginia were concentrated along the turnpike road between Jackson at Sulphur Springs and Warrenton. On the morning of the 24th, Pope girded himself to destroy the army of Lee, which he supposed was still north of the Rappahannock, as Sigel had reported. Buford's cavalry was sent to Waterloo, whence a good country road led to Warrenton, to reconnoiter and to destroy the bridge over the Rappahannock at that point, and get in Lee's supposed rear. Sigel, Banks and Reno were to move toward the same point, from opposite Sulphur Springs, while McDowell was placed along the roads leading to Sulphur Springs and to Waterloo to support the movement. As Sigel approached the river, A. P. Hill, who now, in the succession of exchanging moves, held its Confederate side, opened his batteries and an engagement of artillery was brought on. Sigel continued, cautiously, his march up the river, annoyed by Hill's batteries, and it was well into the afternoon before Buford learned that there were no Confederates on the north side of the Rappahannock. It was nearly 4 p. m. when Pope telegraphed Halleck that "Sigel is pursuing the enemy in the direction of Waterloo bridge. . . . No force of the enemy has as yet been able to cross except that now enclosed by our forces between Sulphur Springs and Waterloo bridge, which will undoubtedly be captured unless they find some means of escaping."

Sigel occupied most of the 24th in his cautious march of six miles from Sulphur Springs to Waterloo, where he arrived late in the afternoon and found the Confederates on the south side of the river, but holding and defending the bridge. The continuing thunder of Lee's guns, from point to point of vantage between Sulphur Springs and Waterloo, had thoroughly engaged Sigel's attention during the entire day, as Lee intended they should, to divert attention from the new flank movement which he had already begun. Pope was equally ignorant, for, in the afternoon, after learning that there were no Confederates north of the Rappahannock, he dispatched to Halleck that he would "early to-morrow . . . move back a considerable part of my force to the neighborhood of Rappa-

hannock station," evidently disturbed by the long-staying qualities of Longstreet, which he had now been testing for a number of days, while he himself had been zigzagging around in a vain attempt to find the other portions of Lee's army.

Still desiring to strike a telling blow at Pope before McClellan's main body could reach him, Lee ordered from Richmond the divisions of Walker, McLaws and D. H. Hill, which had been held there for prudential reasons, and sought a conference with Jackson, to which the latter, a little later, called in his chief engineer, Lieut. James Keith Boswell, for information concerning the roads leading behind the Rappahannock mountains to the line of the Manassas Gap railroad and to Pope's rear, with which he was familiar; Lee and Jackson having devised a plan of campaign by which Jackson, free from all encumbrances, should move rapidly to Pope's rear, cut his line of communication at Bristoe, destroy his stores back to Manassas Junction, then fall back to the north of the Warrenton and Washington turnpike, and there await the arrival of Lee with Longstreet, who would remain a day longer on the banks of the Rappahannock for the purpose of detaining and perplexing Pope.

During the night of the 24th, Longstreet's batteries took the place of Jackson opposite Warrenton Springs, as did also his troops, leaving Jackson free to begin his movement on the morning of the 25th, which he did, at an early hour, leaving his baggage train behind and taking with him only ambulances and ordnance wagons. His troops carried in their haversacks scant rations for three days, Jackson confident of being able to abundantly supply them from the enemy's stores. Starting from the vicinity of Jeffersonton, to which he fell back in giving place to Longstreet, Jackson marched for some distance to the northwestward, along the great highway leading to the Valley, by way of Chester gap, and his bronzed veterans were elated with the conviction that they were again bound for the scene of their victories of the preceding spring; but, when a short distance beyond Amissville, their course was turned from the northwest to the northeast, they looked questioningly one to the other, as to whither they were going, led by Lieutenant Boswell and portions of the noted Black

Horse cavalry through their Fauquier home-land. Jackson pressed steadily forward, through the long August day, without halt, until he had covered 25 miles and reached the vicinity of Salem, on the Manassas Gap railroad, just as the sun sank behind the Blue ridge to his left.

At dawn of the 26th, Jackson's men were again puzzled on finding themselves marching to the southeast, following the line of the Manassas Gap railroad, through Thoroughfare gap, to Gainesville, where Stuart joined them with his cavalry and led the way from that hamlet directly to Bristoe Station, on the Orange & Alexandria railroad, which they reached about dark, after a march of 24 miles, without having met opposition on the way. Jackson and his 22,000 enthusiastic men, and Stuart with wide-awake and jolly cavalry, were now in Pope's rear and on his line of communication, which they proceeded to destroy, capturing trains moving toward Washington and breaking up detached Federal encampments along the railway. Not satisfied with this, and desiring to not only reap the spoils stored at Manassas but to guard against movements from Washington, Jackson sent Trimble's brigade of infantry and Stuart with a portion of his cavalry, through the darkness, four miles further to Manassas Junction, which they reached and captured after a brief resistance, about midnight.

On this same 26th of August, Lee and Longstreet, leaving 6,000 men at Waterloo to guard the trains, followed after Jackson and encamped at Orleans. Apprised of these various movements by his scouts and spies, but not comprehending them or their objects or destination, Pope issued orders which scattered, rather than concentrated, his large army. He first ordered a concentration on Warrenton; Porter, with 10,000 men, reached Bealeton, and Heintzelman, with his 10,000 men, reached Warrenton Junction, on their way to obey this order. The corps of Sumner, Franklin and Cox, from McClellan's army, were that day marching toward Pope, under urgent orders, from Alexandria. Late in the night, when the import of Jackson's movement dawned upon him, Pope again changed his orders, directing his troops to march on Gainesville, to intercept what he supposed would be Jackson's line of retreat; and the different portions of his command were headed in that direction, but all hin-

dered by a confusion of orders and a resulting mixing of marching columns.

On the 27th, Lee with Longstreet continued his march through Salem and the Plains station, on the Manassas Gap railroad, but once interrupted, by the attack of a small body of Federal cavalry, which came near capturing General Lee. In the early morning of this same day Jackson marched the divisions of Taliaferro (recently Winder) and of A. P. Hill to Manassas Junction, where, during the day, they rested and reveled in the vast stores of quartermaster and commissary supplies the Federals had gathered at that important junction. Ewell was left behind, at Bristoe, to protect Jackson's rear and oppose any advance from the line of the Rappahannock. There, in the afternoon, he had a vigorous combat with Porter, repulsing him, then withdrew across Broad run, and late in the day followed on to Manassas Junction.

Longstreet was slow in getting under way on the morning of the 28th, and so did not reach Thoroughfare gap, but seven miles from his camp, until 3 in the afternoon, to find that important way, the gate he must pass through to reach Jackson's right at the appointed rendezvous, held by Ricketts and a Federal division. Lee promptly addressed himself to clear the way. Wilcox, with three brigades, was sent three miles to the northward to cross the Bull Run mountains at Hopewell gap and flank the right of Ricketts. Law's brigade was ordered to climb the ends of the mountains cut by Broad run, along which the road and the railway followed, while D. R. Jones was to make a direct attack with his brigade through the pass. Law's toughened veterans soon scaled the mountains, fell upon Ricketts' flanks and forced him to retire just as the day closed, when Longstreet led his command through Thoroughfare gap and encamped east of the Bull Run mountains and eight miles from the battlefield of Groveton heights, where Jackson was hotly engaged with King's division of Pope's army, and anxiously awaiting the coming of Lee and Longstreet.

Satisfied, by the contention of Hooker with Ewell at Bristoe, that Jackson's command was at Manassas Junction, Pope concluded that there was a good opportunity for "bagging the whole crowd;" so he issued orders that, turning from the ways to Gainesville, his columns

should, on the morning of the 28th, march rapidly on Manassas Junction. Jackson spoiled this third plan of concentration for his capture, by not waiting for Pope at Manassas Junction; for on the night of the 27th he set fire to the stores at Manassas that his men had not appropriated and his wagons could not carry away, and hastened to the appointed place for meeting Lee, but by ways that completely baffled his over-confident adversary. Taliaferro's division, with the trains, was sent northward, by the direct road to Sudley church, with orders to occupy the forest covered position behind the unfinished Gainesville & Alexandria railroad, with which Jackson was thoroughly familiar from having encamped in that region after the First Bull Run battle. A. P. Hill was sent northeastward, by the highway across Bull run, to Centreville on the great road leading to Washington, and Ewell was left to follow after him in the same direction.

Porter could not find his way, even with the aid of lighted candles, through the darkness of this night, from Warrenton Junction to Manassas; but Jackson's men, somehow, found the way to their ordered destinations. Hill, on the morning of the 28th, took the big road from Centreville westward, marched across Bull run and took position, on Taliaferro's left, near Sudley church. Ewell, who had encamped the night before on the south side of Bull run, at Blackburn's ford, crossed over, and marching up that stream to the stone bridge, followed after Hill and took position on his right, Taliaferro moving still farther to the right in the direction of Gainesville; so that by the middle of the day Jackson was concentrated in a strong position, the one the Federals had first occupied at the first battle of Bull Run, looking down upon the stream valley of Young's branch along which ran the Warrenton and Alexandria turnpike, his guns in place and his troops ready for action. That same noonday, Pope, having reached Manassas Junction, was still seeking for Jackson. The movement of Hill and Ewell toward Centreville, the threatening of Washington by Fitz Lee and his horsemen at Fairfax Court House and Burke's station, meant, Pope knew not what, but he proceeded to issue a third order for concentration. Gainesville and Manassas Junction had failed him, and now, thinking he was after a defeated and retreating foe,

he ordered his columns to Centreville. The leading divisions of McDowell's corps had passed through Gainesville, on the way to the junction, early in the day; but King's division did not reach that point until after Pope had ordered a concentration at Centreville, so King, on receiving these orders, decided to take the direct road from Gainesville to Centreville rather than the circuitous one by Manassas Junction, ignorant of the fact that Jackson lay concealed in the forest, flanking the left of this direct road, but a short distance from Gainesville; and so it came to pass that when, late in the afternoon, he was marching along in front of Jackson's concealed army, the divisions of Taliaferro and Ewell sprang upon him, and by a short, but fierce and bloody struggle, drove him back, under cover of the night, to Gainesville and to the road to Manassas Junction, on which Ricketts' column, retreating from Lee's bold assault at the Thoroughfare gap, overtook him during the night. On the morning of the 29th these discomfited divisions of King and Ricketts appeared in the vicinity of the junction, and there was now no Federal force to oppose the coming together of the two wings of Lee's army on the famous battlefield of "Groveton Heights," as Jackson named it, that of the first day of the Second Bull Run, or Manassas.

Stuart, from Jackson's right, on the 29th, soon opened communication with Lee and Longstreet, who had but eight miles to march to the field of action and extend his lines southward from Jackson's right and cover the roads leading from Centreville and from Manassas Junction. By 10 a. m. of the morning of the 29th, Lee had stationed himself on a commanding knoll, near the head of Young's branch, on the south side of the turnpike, from which he could see his left, under Jackson, stretching away to the northeast in his strong position on the Sudley ridge, for nearly three miles, those of Longstreet, reaching to the southward, through fields and forests, for nearly the same distance, like two gigantic arms outstretched, with the fingers of Robertson's cavalry on the right and those of Fitz Lee on the left, and ready to close in deadly embrace upon any foe that should venture to come within their far-extending reach.

In the early morning of the 29th, Pope, at Centreville, was issuing orders for a fourth concentration of his

troops, which were now scattered anywhere and everywhere within the 12 miles of broken and much afforested country between his headquarters and Bristoe, still believing that he had but Jackson's command before him only seeking an opportunity to escape, and ignorant of the position of Longstreet. Pope ordered a vigorous attack on Jackson's left by Sigel's corps, supported by Heintzelman, Reno and Reynolds. This attack was bold and vigorous, and from 6:30 to 10:30 there was a fierce contention between A. P. Hill and the Federals; but the latter were repulsed when, just as Lee was leading Longstreet into position, 18,500 men under Heintzelman and Reno were moving in to Sigel's aid. Pope's men, wearied by the constant marchings and countermarchings of previous days, were slow in moving forward; but at noonday, when Pope himself appeared and took post on Buck hill, whence his own lines and those of Jackson were visible, he found his 35,000 men in battle order facing Jackson. These he urged to renew the attack from which Sigel had been repulsed. He also ordered McDowell and Porter to advance their 30,000 men, from Manassas, upon Gainesville; his numerous cavalry hovered about the flanks of the Confederates. Pope did not believe that Lee was yet on the field, so he proposed to hurl his 75,000 against Jackson's 20,000 and win a victory before Longstreet could arrive.

Earnestly watching the battlefield from his well-chosen point of observation, Lee discovered that Longstreet was not far from the left of Pope's line of attack, and as that solid mass of Federal veterans marched with quick and resolute step to assault Jackson, Lee urged Longstreet to join in the issue. After overlooking the field, the latter reported the prospect as "not inviting," and greatly disappointed his commander-in-chief by obstinately persisting in his opposition to make an attack. Just then, Stuart, who was on the right and had been reconnoitering toward Manassas Junction, reported the approach of McDowell and Porter; but these soon turned to the northward and marched, by the Sudley road, to the left of Pope's contention with Jackson. Through all the long day, during ten hours of hotly-contested battle, constantly adding fresh troops and in six vigorous assaults, did Pope force his men against Jackson's position; mainly against A. P. Hill on his left.

The Federal soldiers, well led, with the skill of veterans and the courage of brave men, marched to the very front of Jackson's lines, which, by determined efforts, they several times broke and carried, but were every time driven back, once partly with cobblestones, picked from the fills of the unfinished railway, when the supply of ammunition gave out.

Lee anxiously watched these fierce assaults and desperate repulses, and urged his stubborn lieutenant to join in the combat and relieve the pressure upon his other and indomitable lieutenant, who, with another sort of stubbornness, held to his lines and drove back the successive waves of Federal assaults. At 5 p. m., when less than two hours of the day remained, Pope massed the divisions of Kearney and Stevens for a last assault upon Jackson's left. Gregg had exhausted his ammunition and sent for more, adding that his Carolinians would hold on with the bayonet; but these were forced backward, when the Georgians and the North Carolinians of Branch, dropped in behind them, and all, like Indian fighters, took advantage of every rock and tree as the stubborn Federals forced them back. Jackson promptly moved from his center the Virginians of Field and Early, the Georgians of Lawton, and the Louisianians of Hays, threw these into A. P. Hill's hot contest on his left, and routed and dispersed the brave Federal attack, shattering the brigades of Pope's right.

Again Lee, with all the earnestness of his heroic nature, urged Longstreet to participate and help Jackson in meeting this furious attack. But he persisted in his refusal to move, claiming that it was now too late in the day for so doing. But Lee had one force obedient to his commands, or rather his requests, for thus were the orders of that high-toned gentleman expressed. He had massed Hood's batteries on Longstreet's left, on commanding ground, and as Pope's left, under Reynolds, moved forward to attack, a hot fire from these guns drove him back, and just at set of sun, when Longstreet yielded for what he called a reconnoissance in force, he turned loose Hood's courageous Texans, who fell upon the Federal center and drove King back with heavy loss, capturing three of his battleflags and one of his guns; and so the night closed on this long day of furious and bloody battle, in which the contending armies had

each displayed the undaunted courage of their common, fighting, ancestral stock; but the skill of leadership had again asserted itself against the mere power of numbers, and history, in all its annals, nowhere records braver deeds of heroic and daring defense and persistent courage than were exhibited by Jackson's men through all that long day of steady contention against fearful odds. The invincible Stonewall had unflinchingly held the left, confident that the equally invincible Lee was not only watching the contest, but would, in the crisis of the day, throw his sword into the scale and decide the unequal contest.*

The battle over, Jackson's men cared for their wounded, gathered their dead for burial, and prepared for another day of conflict, which they well knew was impending; gathered in groups, praying for further aid to the God of Battles, and then, in trusting confidence, slept on their arms awaiting the coming day.

The 30th of August, as the summer neared its end, opened clear and bright, with the two armies ready for the renewal of the mighty conflict. The position of Lee's two wings was unchanged, except that he had massed thirty-six guns, under Col. Stephen D. Lee, on the commanding watershed swell in the center of his lines, where their lines of fire led down the center of the depression followed by Young's branch and threaded by the turnpike leading through the midst of the Federal host to the stone bridge over Bull run. The brigades of Longstreet, from the center southward, were those of Wilcox, Hood, Kemper and D. R. Jones. R. H. Anderson was in reserve, with his 6,000 men, on the turnpike to the rear. Lee then had about 50,000 men at command in his two far-reaching wings, the great jaws of the war monster,

* "After the arrival of Longstreet the enemy charged his position and began to concentrate opposite Jackson's left. . . . Colonel Walton placed a part of his artillery upon a commanding position between the lines of Generals Jackson and Longstreet by order of the latter, and engaged the enemy vigorously for several hours. Soon afterward General Stuart reported the approach of a large force from the direction of Bristoe Station, threatening Longstreet's right. The brigades under General Wilcox were sent to reinforce General Jones [Longstreet's right], but no serious attack was made. . . . While the battle was raging on Jackson's left General Longstreet ordered Hood and Evans to advance, but before the order could be obeyed Hood was himself attacked. . . ." (Report of Gen. R. E. Lee.)

into which the army of Pope was preparing to move, unconscious of the fate that awaited it when these jaws should close and crush it in defeat.

Noticing that the nearby skirmishers of the previous day had disappeared, Pope again rashly concluded that the Confederate army had been defeated, by his assaults of the day before, and was now in full retreat, seeking safety behind the Bull Run mountains; therefore he ordered a prompt pursuit along the Warrenton road to Gainesville, and then toward the Thoroughfare gap. He had brought up Porter's corps, which had been holding the line of Dawkin's branch on the road from Manassas Junction to Gainesville, and placed it in his center; so it fell to that brave and skillful officer to lead in the supposed pursuit. Recalling Cold Harbor, Porter did not believe, as Pope did, that Lee and Jackson had given up the contest and were retreating, so he formed his men into a triple line of battle, across the turnpike, and placed King's division to support his right and Reynolds' his left; in his rear followed Sigel's corps and half of Reno's. These dispositions were made in the dense forest along the turnpike and to the east of the Sudley road, and thence Porter was ready to advance on Lee's center.

Pope, having had, on the previous day, bitter experience of the sharp temper of Jackson's left, massed the whole of Heintzelman's and the half of each of the corps of McDowell and Reno, ready to throw them against Jackson with the advance of Porter. In the morning, Heintzelman moved against A. P. Hill with Ricketts' division, but soon drew back from the hot reception he met. The skirmishers of Reynolds met the same fate, from S. D. Lee's guns, when they advanced to feel Lee's center. It was three in the afternoon when Pope was good and ready, with his entire army in hand, for his grand assault. The signal was given and Porter's men rushed forward, wheeling on their left, and struck the Stonewall brigade, now in command of Starke, and Lawton's division. The contest was as fierce and earnest as brave men could make it; the lines, for some minutes, were almost within touch, and the dead and dying on both sides strewed the ground. As Porter closed in, across the open field, his left was exposed to S. D. Lee's masked batteries, which now swept through his lines their shot and shell and aided to stagger Porter's attack, while Long-

street opened with three batteries upon his left rear. Thus unexpectedly received, Porter's men fled in routed masses, followed by the men of Jackson's old division, from his right, who leaped across their defenses and chased them in hot pursuit. The fierce attacks of Pope on Jackson's left had, in the meantime, been also repulsed.

Lee now saw that the supreme moment for action had come, and he ordered Longstreet to close in upon the Federal left; but his veteran soldiery, now well trained in the art of war, had at the same moment reached the same conclusion, and without waiting for the word of command, they fairly leaped forward, swinging on their left, and, with Lee leading in person in the midst of them, charged grandly to the front, responding to the movement of all of Jackson's men on the left and hurrying on the rout of the Federal army.* The Confederate batteries also joined in the rushing charge and were abreast of their infantry comrades all along the lines, where there was opportunity for giving parting shots to the retreating Federals. Stuart, on the right, on the old Alexandria road, heard the well-known shouts of Confederate pursuit, and rushed his brigades and batteries far in advance against the Federal left. Warren's attempt to stem the tide, just east of Groveton, cost him dearly. Schenck, with German tenacity, hung on to the Bald hill, on the Federal left, but the victory-compelling Confederates swarmed upon his flank and forced him from the summit. Hood swept the line of the turnpike to the east of the Stone house. Pope's reserves, on the Henry hill, the old plateau which was the center of the fierce fighting of the year before, resisted the tide of victory, for a time, on his left, until Jackson closed down with his left, upon the retreating Federals, toward the stone bridge, until darkness put an end to his advance, and gave Pope's demoralized brigades an opportunity to follow the crowd of fugitives that, long before the sun went down, crowded over that bridge, seeking safety behind Franklin's corps, then advancing from Alexandria, and the earthworks at Centreville. This day's advance and retreat cost Pope some 20,000 of his brave men, in killed, wounded and

*"General Longstreet, anticipating the order for a general advance, now threw his whole command against the Federal center and left." (Report of Gen. R. E. Lee.)

missing. Since Jackson met him at Cedar run, he had lost 30,000 men, 30 pieces of artillery, and military stores and small-arms worth millions in value and many thousands in number. This great victory of Groveton Heights cost Lee 8,000 men, mostly in Jackson's command, including many of his noblest and bravest officers.*

A deluge of rain followed the great battle, such as had followed most of those that had preceded it; but through that, and the mud that followed it, Stuart rode in the early morning of Sunday, August 31st, across Bull run to learn what had become of Pope. He found the reinforcements, that had the day before come up from Washington, holding the formidable intrenchments at Centreville bristling with artillery. Informed of this delay in Pope's retreat, Lee ordered Jackson, who was on his left and nearest Centreville, to cross Bull run and march to the Little River turnpike, which enters the Alexandria road near Fairfax Court House, turn Pope's right and cut off his retreat to Washington. The rain and mud made the march a difficult one for Jackson's weary and battle worn surviving veterans; but they, instinctively, divined their important mission and eagerly followed their great leader. When Pope learned of Jackson's new flanking movement, although he had in hand 20,000 fresh troops who had not fired a gun, he hastened in retreat to Fairfax Court House, after placing Reno's corps across the two converging turnpikes covering the approaches to Fairfax Court House from Centreville and Chantilly, with orders to keep back the irrepressible Confederates. Jackson, by continuing his march well into the night, took position across the Little River turnpike, at Ox hill, in front of Chantilly. In the midst of a terrific storm of driving rain, with almost continuous thunder and lightning, on Monday, September 1st, he met and repulsed a Federal advance under Reno, ordering the use of bayonets when informed that the rain-soaked ammunition could not be used. Heintzelman supported

*The losses of Longstreet's corps, August 23-30, were reported as 663 killed, 4,016 wounded, and 46 missing; total, 4,725. Jackson reported his losses from the Rappahannock to the Potomac, at 805 killed, 3,547 wounded, and 35 missing; total, 4,387. The Federal loss, in the campaign from the Rappahannock to the Potomac, has been stated by Northern authority, approximately, at 1,747 killed, 8,452 wounded, and 4,263 captured or missing; total, 14,462.

Reno, but Jackson's well-directed blows forced them both back until darkness ended the contest, when they followed Pope's line of retreat to within the fortifications of the Federal city, where his brief career, of less than two months' duration, as commander of the army of Virginia, came to an inglorious end, and McClellan again took charge to reorganize the army of the Potomac from the broken Federal forces there gathered.

Longstreet followed Jackson to Chantilly, but did not reach there in time to take part in the battle. Lee paused in his onward march, at this noble "Chantilly" mansion of one of his relatives, to give his men much-needed rest and bring forward the supply trains which his rapid marches had left far in the rear. In four short months the army of Northern Virginia had, under his leadership, with its 80,000 men, met and driven Banks, Fremont, McDowell, McClellan and Pope, with their 200,000 veteran troops, from far within the bounds of Virginia, in disastrous retreat, to beyond its borders, with the exception of a small body that still held the line of the Baltimore & Ohio, in the lower Valley, and the remnant that had found refuge within the fortifications of Washington, on the Virginia side of the Potomac.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE MARYLAND CAMPAIGN AGAINST McCLELLAN.

RESTING at Chantilly, with every reason to be well content with what he had accomplished during the three months that he had personally commanded the army of Northern Virginia, and anxious to keep the Federal invaders from the soil of Virginia, Lee, on the 3d of September, suggested to President Davis that now was "the most propitious time since the commencement of the war for the Confederate army to enter Maryland;" but he would not conceal the condition of that army after the fierce contests it had just passed through, so he continued:

The army is not properly equipped for an invasion of an enemy's country. It lacks much of the material of war, is feeble in transportation, the animals being much reduced; the men are poorly provided with clothes, and in thousands of instances are destitute of shoes. Still we cannot afford to be idle, and though weaker than our opponents in men and military equipments, must endeavor to harass if we cannot destroy them. I am aware that the movement is attended with much risk, yet I do not consider success impossible, and shall endeavor to guard it from loss. As long as the army of the enemy is employed on this frontier, I have no fears for the safety of Richmond, yet I earnestly recommend that advantage be taken of this period of comparative safety to place its defenses, both by land and water, in the most perfect condition.

Without waiting to hear from President Davis, after having been joined by the divisions of D. H. Hill and McLaws, Hampton's cavalry and several batteries, which he had ordered forward from Richmond, Lee issued orders September 2d, for his army to march to the vicinity of Leesburg, but by way of Dranesville, as if threatening Washington, in order to bring his men into the more inviting Piedmont country of the county of Loudoun, abounding in grain and cattle, and to place it where he could easily cross the Potomac, if his Maryland campaign were not forbidden by the Confederate government. In writing to President Davis again, on the 4th, he expressed no fears as to the fighting ability of his army, but was only uneasy about his "supplies of ammunition and subsistence."

Jackson led the advance, Lee still marching left in front, giving the strictest of orders in reference to the marching and resting of his men, that they might be kept closed up, ready for meeting any attack from toward Washington, in passing, and wearied as little as possible by the dusty roads and the intense heat that had followed the preceding storms. He put a major-general, in command of a division, under arrest, while on the march, for failing to halt his command at the minute ordered, to show his officers that his orders must be promptly and thoroughly obeyed.

At Leesburg, the army was stripped of all superfluous transportation, broken down horses, and wagons and batteries not supplied with good horses, were left behind, and everything was put in the best possible condition circumstances would permit, for the campaign, under new conditions of the field of action, that was about to begin.

The glorious autumn days of the Southland had come, when, on the 5th day of September, to the martial strains of "Maryland, My Maryland" from every band in the army, and with his men cheering and shouting with delight, Jackson forded the Potomac at Edwards' ferry, where the river was broad but shallow, near the scene of Evans' victory over the Federals in the previous October, and where Wayne had crossed his Pennsylvania brigade in marching to the field of Yorktown in 1781. By the 7th of the month, Lee had concentrated the most of his army in the vicinity of Frederick City, in a land teeming with abundance. He had issued the most stringent orders, forbidding depredations on private property and requiring his quartermasters to purchase and pay for supplies for his army. On the 8th he issued a stirring proclamation, calling upon the men of Maryland to join the men of his command, gathered within their borders from their sister Southern States; appealing to their manhood to avail themselves of this opportunity to reassert their sovereign rights and join in securing the independence of the South, assuring them that his army had only come to aid them in throwing off a foreign yoke and to enable them "again to enjoy the inalienable rights of freemen and restore independence and sovereignty to their State." In closing he said:

This, citizens of Maryland, is our mission, so far as you are concerned. No constraint upon your free will is intended; no intima-

tion will be allowed within the limits of this army at least. Marylanders shall once more enjoy their ancient freedom of thought and speech. We know no enemies among you, and will protect all, of every opinion. It is for you to decide your destiny freely and without constraint. This army will respect your choice, whatever it may be; and while the Southern people will rejoice to welcome you to your natural position among them, they will only welcome you when you come of your own free will.

This magnanimous declaration fell upon cold ears, for the Piedmont region, in which Frederick is situated, contained few sympathizers with the Confederate cause. The majority of its people were contented and well-to-do owners of small farms, most of them of German descent, whose affiliations were more with Pennsylvania to the north than with Virginia to the south of them. It would have been quite different had Lee arrived among the men of Midland or Tidewater Maryland; but he had no time to wait on political action, for McClellan had gathered up full 90,000 men, veterans and new recruits, and, without orders from the authorities at Washington, was marching to again attack Lee. This made it important for him to at once turn his attention to military affairs. The alarm that followed the retreat of Pope to Washington had somewhat subsided, but there was no telling what Lee, Jackson and Stuart might attempt to do, and so Banks was held within the fortifications of the Federal city, with 75,000 men, to guard against an emergency. McClellan, resting his right on the Baltimore & Ohio and his left on the Potomac, advanced his lines, slowly and cautiously, toward the banks of the Monocacy, along which he had been informed Lee's army was encamped.

Lee desired to draw McClellan further from his base of supplies than the valley of the Monocacy; preferred to contend with him beyond the Blue ridge (here called the South mountain), in the vicinity of Hagerstown, if he could draw him that far away, where, at the same time, he could threaten an invasion of Pennsylvania, which was one of the cherished designs of Stonewall Jackson. The one obstacle to delay this movement was the Federal garrison, of some 12,000 men, holding Harper's Ferry, with outposts at Martinsburg and other points on the Baltimore & Ohio. Lee had ordered Loring, in the Kanawha valley, to move his force to Winchester, which place he had selected as the rendezvous for his stragglers and men from hospitals, and for a depot of supplies. This made

it necessary for him to first clear out the Federal garrison at Harper's Ferry and establish connection with Winchester before he could engage in a contest with McClellan west of the Blue ridge or make an offensive movement into Pennsylvania. After a conference with Jackson, at Frederick City, he issued a general order on the 9th of September, for the movements of his troops, for the twofold purpose of capturing the Federal stronghold at Harper's Ferry and for the concentration of his army in the vicinity of Hagerstown.

Jackson was perfectly familiar with the topographical conditions at Harper's Ferry, and knew, from his late experience in threatening but not capturing that place, the strategic and tactic movements that would be necessary to successfully invest and secure possession of it. Therefore, with good reason, Lee had taken Jackson into his councils and provided to put in his hands the execution of the plan of campaign decided on.

Harper's Ferry, located in the fork at the junction of the Shenandoah and the Potomac, just above where the united rivers break through the Blue ridge, cannot be held and defended unless Loudoun heights on the south, across the Shenandoah, the northeastern end of the double Blue ridge, and Maryland heights, across the Potomac, the southwestern end of the Blue ridge in Maryland, are both occupied and defended at the same time; for each of these positions overlooks and thoroughly commands the fronts and flanks of the defenses of Harper's Ferry proper. The Federals had not occupied Loudoun heights, but they had Maryland heights, with formidable batteries placed to command the approaches to Harper's Ferry from Virginia, and with defensive works to protect in the rear from Maryland.

The instructions of Lee's order were, that Jackson should march westward in the early morning of September 10th, along the great National road leading from Frederick across the Blue ridge (South mountain) to Boonsboro, with his fourteen brigades, then take the macadam road leading to Williamsport, on the Potomac, and there, having turned the flank of the Federal outpost at Martinsburg, to cross the Potomac, break the Federal line of communication from the west by the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, then move upon the garrison at Martinsburg, and either capture or drive it in toward

Harper's Ferry, following in pursuit and investing that place with his left resting on the Potomac and his right on the Shenandoah. Walker's division, which had been advanced from Frederick along the line of the Baltimore & Ohio toward Harper's Ferry, was to cross the Potomac at Cheek's ford, and occupy Loudoun heights, connecting with Jackson's right and thus extending the investment from the Shenandoah to the Potomac below Harper's Ferry. Longstreet's command was to follow Jackson across the Blue ridge and halt at Boonsboro, in the Great valley, at the western foot of the mountain. McLaws, with his own and Anderson's division, was to follow Longstreet as far as Middletown, in the Catoctin valley, and there turn to the southwest, by roads leading toward Harper's Ferry, and from the rear secure possession of Maryland heights, resting his left on the Potomac below Harper's Ferry, opposite Walker's right, and his right on the same river above Harper's Ferry, opposite Jackson's left, thus completing the circle of investment. D. H. Hill was to bring up the rear on the National road, preceded by the ordnance and supply trains and reserve artillery, at the same time guarding the rear of both McLaws and Longstreet. Stuart, after furnishing squadrons of cavalry to Jackson, Longstreet and McLaws, was to cover the entire rear of the army with the main body of his cavalry.

The conception of this plan of offensive operations and providing for defensive ones, was every way worthy of the famous commander of the army of Northern Virginia, and he felt confident of success because he had intrusted its execution to able hands. The prompt Jackson, always eager for the fray, and now burning with desire to capture the stronghold that had barred his way to Washington the last of the preceding May, marched at 3 in the morning of the 10th; bivouacked on the line of the Baltimore & Ohio, across the Potomac, at Williamsport, on the evening of the 11th; captured Martinsburg on the morning of the 12th; by noon of the 13th was in front of Harper's Ferry, and on that day completed his portion of its investment. Walker crossed the Potomac at Point of Rocks, after finding Cheek's ford covered by the enemy's artillery from the high bluffs east of the Monocacy, on the 10th, but did not reach the foot of the Blue ridge until the 13th, or complete his portion of the invest-

ment until Sunday, the 14th, on the morning of which he put five guns in position on Loudoun heights, supported by two regiments of infantry, after placing the larger part of his force so as to command the road from Harper's Ferry down the Virginia side of the Potomac, to prevent a Federal retreat in that direction. McLaws, with ten infantry brigades in his command, crossed the South mountain, by the Brownsville gap, into the Pleasant valley, on the 11th, and by the evening of the 13th, after a spirited contest with the force defending Maryland heights, secured possession of that formidable position and completed the investment of Harper's Ferry. These dispositions not only closed all avenues of escape, but sealed the fate of the beleaguered town whenever Jackson, the commander of the gathered forces, should order his circle of fire to pour down upon it. To further guard his right on the Shenandoah, he had sent a portion of his own immediate command across that river and placed it, with artillery, on a bluff shoulder of Loudoun heights, below the point held by Walker's guns; so that all things were now ready for assaulting and capturing Harper's Ferry on the 14th, except that McLaws was delayed by the necessity for constructing a road by which to bring his artillery from the Pleasant valley to the top of Maryland heights.

It is now important to return to the commands of Longstreet and D. H. Hill and recount what had happened to General Lee while the investment of Harper's Ferry was being completed. Marching with Longstreet on the 10th, Lee crossed the South mountain to Boonsboro, where, learning that a Federal force was threatening Hagerstown from the direction of Harrisburg, he proceeded to that point, and there placed Longstreet in bivouac on the evening of the 11th, on which day D. H. Hill crossed the South mountain, but still holding its crest with his rear, and encamped at Boonsboro; Stuart still held back McClellan's advance in the Piedmont country, although the latter was pressing him with unusual and unaccountable vigor.

Writing to President Davis, on the 12th, Lee urged the necessity for food and clothing for his army. On the 13th he anxiously awaited news from Walker and McLaws, as they were not yet closed in on Jackson in the investment of Harper's Ferry. To this anxiety was added another when he reflected on the depleted condi-

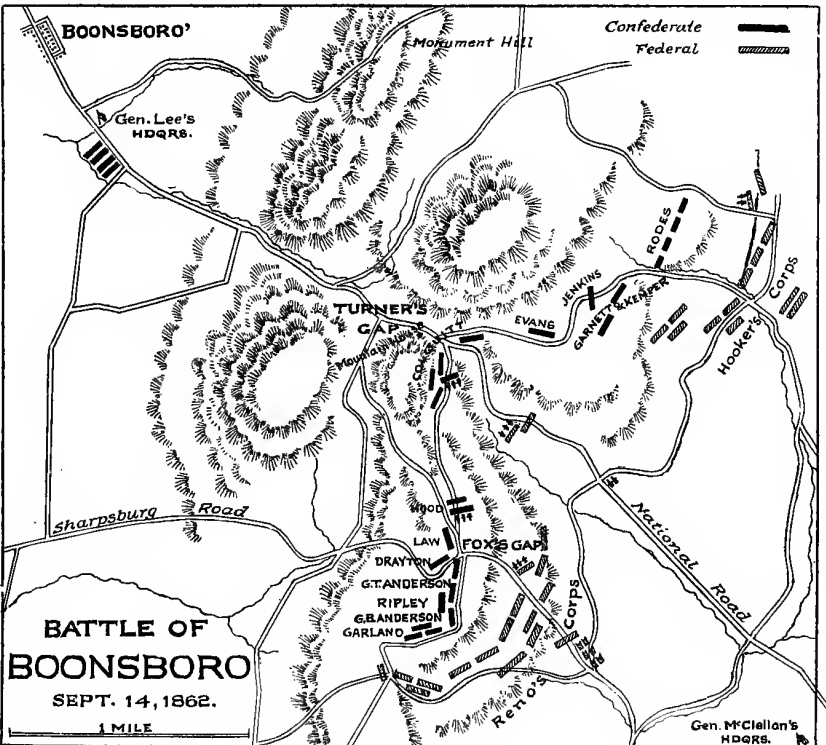
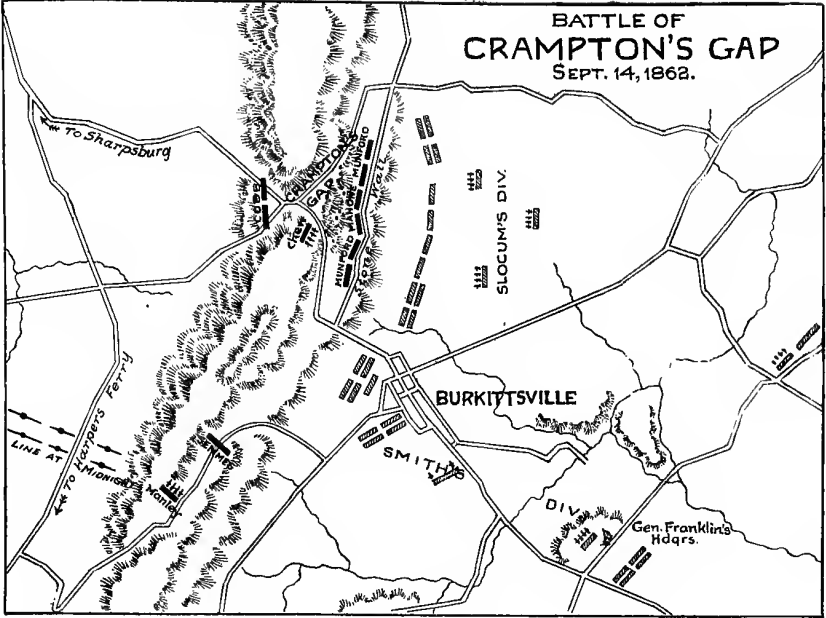
tion of his army, and as he wrote to the President, he said: "Our ranks are very much diminished—I fear from a third to one-half of the original numbers." Still more disturbing was the news that reached him on the evening of that day. This was of the rapid approach of McClellan in force on the National road toward Hill's position on the South mountain, and toward that of McLaws on the Potomac north of Harper's Ferry and Maryland heights. He knew McClellan's military characteristics, not only from his personal knowledge of him before the existing war, but especially from his doings in leading the great army of the Potomac, in the "on to Richmond" and in the "back to Washington," and therefore could not account for his unusual diligence in pursuing him westward from the Monocacy, to reach which from Washington he had been marching with great caution. McClellan's report, published by the Federal government the following winter, furnished the explanation. On the morning of this same Saturday, the 13th of September, after McClellan had occupied Frederick on the 12th, there was handed him an official copy of Lee's order No. 191, which revealed, in detail, the entire plan of the pending campaign, and showed him, at a glance, how Lee's knights and castles on the military chess-board were disposed, and that a rare opportunity was offered for falling upon his greatly weakened left rear and crushing that before he could gather his scattered forces to his aid, as McClellan had the great advantage of the far shorter line of approach over one of the best roads. More than this; it showed that the dreaded Jackson was too far away to participate in an early combat. Ardent to retrieve his military reputation, and, above all things, anxious to do something that would warrant his unauthorized assumption of command, McClellan at once hastened his main body in pursuit of Lee, and urged Franklin forward with his corps, to harass the rear of McLaws and hold him away from the battle he proposed to make with Lee.

It is now known that two copies of Lee's order were sent to D. H. Hill, who had been made subject to Jackson's command previous to the encampment at Frederick. Jackson, always cautious and himself never giving written orders that would furnish information as to his movements, had, on the receipt of Lee's order, made, with his

own hand, a copy of that and sent it by safe hands to General Hill, supposing he would in no other way receive this order. But it so happened that a copy was also sent to Hill from Lee's headquarters, and this latter, carelessly left on the ground in Hill's camp, was discovered by a Federal soldier, wrapped about some Confederate cigars, and he, recognizing its importance, promptly sent it to McClellan, who at once vigorously set about availing himself of the opportunities that the knowledge contained in that lost order put in his way. It was not the first time that events of great magnitude in the tide of history have been controlled by the demands of that miserable weed.

The close of this eventful Saturday found Lee confronted with serious conditions. D. H. Hill was ordered to retrace his march, recross the South mountain, and hold its eastern slope against the great host that could be seen rapidly approaching from the direction of Frederick. McLaws was urged to finish his work on Maryland heights and move to Boonsboro, by way of Sharpsburg, and Longstreet was ordered to return from Hagerstown, to Hill's aid, on the morning of the 14th.

As Lee rode forward to the South Mountain battlefield on Sunday morning, September 14th, followed by Longstreet's command, he could both see and hear that the mighty conflict for the possession of the passes of that mountain, now looming up before him, had already begun. The roar of cannon and musketry from Hill's 5,000 men rang in his ears, and the smoke of battle showed, by its length along the mountain top, how thin must be Hill's stretched-out line and how large must be the force pressing against it. Hill held the "old road," passing through Fox's gap, against Pleasanton's cavalry and Reno's corps, in one of the most desperate of all recorded contests, until the middle of the afternoon, when Hooker's corps, in furious onset, fell on his left near Turner's gap, where the Boonsboro and Frederick road crosses, and added to the fury of the contention. Lee then sent in 4,000 of Longstreet's men, in eight brigades, to sustain the brave Hill and his unyielding North Carolinians, and so the fight went on, at and between each of the road crossings, until night put an end to the conflict, with the 9,000 Confederates still holding the crest of the mountain against the 28,000 Federals who had been contending for its possession.



At Crampton's gap of the South mountain, six miles to the southward from Turner's gap and Hill's field of action, another battle raged on that same Sunday afternoon. McLaws had left 1,200 men to hold that pass, in guarding his rear, while he occupied Maryland heights. Against these Franklin threw 8,000 from his advance. The resistance lasted until dark, when the Confederates gave way and Franklin took possession of the gap, and thus interposed the head of a strong Federal column between Lee at Boonsboro and McLaws in Pleasant valley and on Maryland heights.

Lee might have said to himself, in the words of Longstreet at Groveton, as he reflected on the positions of his army at the close of the 14th, that the prospect "was not inviting." The two divisions in his immediate presence were not compacted; Longstreet was advising that something else than fighting be done. The other three of his divisions were a dozen miles away, separated from each other by great rivers, and could only reach him by circuitous marches and after the fall of Harper's Ferry, an event which had not yet taken place. His stout heart was doubtless throbbing with intense emotion, which none but a heroic and God-trusting spirit could control, when, at 8 of the evening, nearly two hours after sunset, he wrote to McLaws: "The day has gone against us, and the army will go by Sharpsburg and cross the river. It is necessary for you to abandon your position to-night; . . . your troops you must have in hand to unite with this command, which will retire by Sharpsburg."

The outlook to McLaws was a brighter one. The investment of Harper's Ferry was completed, and neither officer nor soldier doubted but that, with Jackson in command, the early morning of the 15th would find him in possession of that town, of the 11,000 Federals there beleaguered and of the large munitions of war there gathered. So McLaws promptly added to his line in Pleasant valley, to which his men had fallen back from Crampton's gap, and prepared to hold his rear against Franklin's advance until Harper's Ferry was captured and the way opened for him to cross the Potomac on the Federal pontoon, and in that way, through Virginia, reach Lee at Sharpsburg, as he was ordered to do. Lee's vigorous defense of the South mountain passes near Boonsboro had won a day from McClellan and given Jackson time to complete the investment of Harper's Ferry.

During the night of the 14th, Lee withdrew the divisions of Longstreet and D. H. Hill from the vicinity of Boonsboro, and fell back across Antietam river in the direction of Sharpsburg, and formed his line of battle on the commanding ridge between that town and that river. Fitz Lee, with his cavalry, bravely kept back McClellan's advance, and General Lee's change of position was not only skillfully made but without any serious loss. McClellan was again placed at a disadvantage by Lee's prompt and bold strategic movement.

The position occupied by Lee and destined to become famous as the battlefield of Sharpsburg, or Antietam, was such that he could calmly await an attack by many times his own numbers, should McClellan venture to make one. He was ready for the dawn of the 15th, and only awaited the gathering together of his army to try the issue by combat, notwithstanding the disparity of his numbers when compared with those of McClellan. While watching the gathering of the mighty Federal army in the valleys and on the ridges across the Antietam, and defiantly replying to its artillery as that came into position, he received, at midday, a note from Jackson, written during the forenoon, saying: "Through God's blessing Harper's Ferry and its garrison are to be surrendered." This stimulating news, which not only meant that Harper's Ferry was captured, but that Stonewall Jackson, without further orders, would soon be with him, with his "foot cavalry," and that McLaws would not be far behind, fired Lee's courage, and he determined that he would not recross the Potomac until after trial of battle with McClellan on the field that he had chosen, and that he could hold until his reinforcements came up.

Fitzhugh Lee so well held back the Federal cavalry advance that it did not reach the front of the Antietam until 2 in the afternoon of the 15th, and it was not until late in the day that the Federal infantry and artillery appeared upon the field of coming combat; so Lee had ample time, with the aid of his capable lieutenants, Longstreet and D. H. Hill, to place the 12,000 men he had in hand, in front of Sharpsburg and extending northward toward Hagerstown, so as to cover the roads by which McClellan must advance; and then, with sublime courage and unflinching trust in Providence, await what the morrow had in store for him and his army. By night-

fall, McClellan had concentrated some 60,000 of his men in front of Lee; and, from the vicinity of Boonsboro, was telegraphing to Washington about his "flying foe," and the "routed rebels" he had driven, in a "perfect panic," from South mountain; while his corps commanders were slowly and cautiously finding their way along the excellent stone roads that converged toward Sharpsburg.

The investment of Harper's Ferry was completed during the night of the 14th, and batteries were in position on Maryland and Loudoun heights, and in front of Bolivar heights, ready to enforce Jackson's demand for a surrender on the morning of the 15th. The assaulting column, under A. P. Hill, that brave and fearless leader, was ready to spring forward at the word of command to join in enforcing, if need be, the demand for a surrender. A few shots convinced the Federal commander that his position was untenable, and after a brief parley he gave up the place with its 11,000 men, their arms and equipments, 73 pieces of artillery, and numerous stores. The Federal cavalry at Harper's Ferry escaped during the night of the 14th, by crossing the pontoon and finding their way along the tow path of the canal, up the river and across to McClellan, meeting and damaging Longstreet's train on the way.

Leaving A. P. Hill in charge of the details of the surrender, and with orders to parole the captured Federals and send them adrift toward Frederick City, to tangle and impede the advance of any of McClellan's forces from that direction, Jackson hastened, without delay, to join Lee, marching his men to the fords of the Potomac near Shepherdstown, and not far from Sharpsburg, before he allowed them to go into bivouac, but leaving many of his best men along the way, overcome by sheer exhaustion. J. G. Walker's 3,200 came across the Shenandoah from Loudoun heights and followed close behind Jackson. Near the dawn of the morning of the 16th, Jackson saluted Lee, in the road opposite where the Federal cemetery now is, in front of Sharpsburg, and reported that his men were just behind, crossing the Potomac, and would soon arrive ready to be placed in position. After congratulating Jackson and Walker upon the success of their operations at Harper's Ferry, Lee expressed his confidence that he could now hold his ground until the

arrival of A. P. Hill, R. H. Anderson and McLaws. Later in the day, in a letter to President Davis, he wrote: "This victory of the indomitable Jackson and his troops gives us renewed occasion for gratitude to Almighty God for His guidance and protection."

The great military engineer who commanded the Confederate forces now gathering at Sharpsburg, had had ample time to examine the position he had chosen and to reach conclusions, from its topographic conditions and those in front of it, as to the direction from which his adversary would probably make his attack; and he was doubtless well satisfied that these conditions would bring the attack upon his left, which, by military rule, would be held by the "indomitable Jackson." He at once gave orders for that victory-compelling leader to move toward Hagerstown and take position guarding the left of his army. With his usual caution, Jackson had brought his troops to the vicinity of Sharpsburg by a concealed way, and he now, in like manner, marched them into position, at and beyond the Dunker church, and gave his men opportunity to rest and prepare for the coming conflict.

McClellan, in person, came to the front on the morning of the 16th, and when the fog lifted from the valley of the Antietam, he carefully examined, from the hill-crowning Try house, the long and bold stretch of commanding ridge which Lee occupied, and hastened to report to Washington that he was confronted not only by a "strong position," but by a "strong force." He spent the day putting his formidable army in position and extending both its flanks beyond those of the opposing one. As Lee had anticipated, late in the afternoon of this day, McClellan sent Hooker's corps, followed by Mansfield's, across the Antietam, by way of the stone bridge at Try's mill, some distance beyond Lee's left, where they went into bivouac. The ever-watchful Stuart quickly informed Lee of this movement, and confirmed his views as to the direction from which he would be attacked.

There were three bridges across the Antietam by which an attack could be made. The one on Lee's right, now known as the "Burnside bridge," was about a mile to the southeast of Sharpsburg. About a mile below that the river was fordable. On the road leading north of east from Sharpsburg to Boonsboro was another bridge, opposite the center of

McClellan's army, and about three miles to the east of north from Sharpsburg was the stone bridge, on the Williamsport road, by which Hooker crossed his two advanced corps.

Lee, before the coming of Jackson, posted his men with Longstreet on the right and D. H. Hill on the left, in order to cover the approaches from the Burnside and the Boonsboro bridges, having excellent positions for his artillery to cover these. Hood's two brigades were transferred to the woods near the Dunker church, to defend the approaches from Hagerstown, while D. H. Hill's five brigades extended Hood's right to the vicinity of the Boonsboro turnpike, and Longstreet's men prolonged the line to the right to the front of the Burnside bridge. On Jackson's arrival his command was posted to extend Hood's line farther to the left, to the vicinity of the old toll-gate, while Stuart occupied the commanding Nicodemus ridge, north of Nicodemus run, from which his artillery swept the roads by which Hooker and Mansfield must advance.

Lee, Longstreet and Jackson were in conference, with a map spread before them, in a house in Sharpsburg, when Stuart reported McClellan's advance, by the Williamsport road, late in the afternoon of the 16th. Jackson was promptly sent to take charge of the left wing and meet the threatened engagement. The turnpike road from Sharpsburg to Hagerstown runs nearly north and south, and, for at least a mile, between somewhat parallel and rather bold limestone ridges. At the Dunker church, a little more than a mile north of Sharpsburg, the Smoketown road enters this turnpike at an acute angle. By this latter road the Federal army advanced, having turned to the left, soon after crossing the Antietam. About half a mile above the junction of these roads there were patches and fringes of rocky woods on each side of the Smoketown road. These are known as the "East woods;" and to the northern edge of these, the Federal skirmishers came late in the evening of the 16th, while the Confederate skirmishers held the southern edges of the same. Quite a body of open oak forest surrounded the Dunker church and extended northward for some little distance along the west side of the Hagerstown turnpike; thence a narrow field extended, for a half mile or more, between that road and the skirt of forest

in the vicinity of the Miller house, making what is known as the "West woods." The triangular space between the converging Hagerstown and Smoketown roads was first occupied by grass fields and then by a 30-acre field of standing corn that for yards reached across from one road to the other, but skirted on the east by the narrow East woods, while farther on, patches of forest bounded the cornfield and extended beyond to the Poffenberger land, thus concealing the commanding position beyond that land taken by the Federal troops.

By 5 o'clock of the afternoon of September 16th, Jackson had faced his men northward, some 700 yards beyond the Dunker church, and across the northern edge of the big cornfield, covering both the Hagerstown and the Smoketown roads. Hood and Law held the right, the latter advanced into the East woods, the two having 1,700 men in line. The "Stonewall" division, under J. R. Jones, with 1,600 men, extended this line across the Hagerstown road and into the northern end of the West woods, toward the commanding ridge occupied by Stuart with his artillery and covering the road leading to a ford of the Potomac on his left. Lawton and Trimble were resting in the woods at the Dunker church.

Just at sunset of this lovely September day, the golden autumn of the famous Appalachian valley, Hooker advanced southward, along the watershed ridge between the Antietam and the Potomac, and pushing forward a battery, opened on Jackson's left. Poague silenced this in about twenty minutes and it retired. About the same time his skirmishers advanced on Law, in the East woods, but were soon driven back to its northern edge. Then the two armies lay on their arms, within speaking distance of each other, through the long autumn night, during which Lawton and Trimble took the place of Hood and Law, whose men had had no cooked rations, except a half ration of beef, for three days, subsisting in the meantime on green corn gathered from the fields.

McClellan proposed to join issue with Lee by striking the latter's left with the 40,000 men in the three corps of Hooker, Mansfield and Sumner, which were already in position for attack on the morning of September 17th. If these should be successful, he intended that Burnside should cross at the bridge now known by his name, and with his 13,000 men fall on Lee's right, under the com-

mand of Longstreet, and then follow up the delivery of these right-handed and left-handed blows with an attack on the center of Lee's lines, on the Boonsboro road, by the 25,000 veterans under Porter and Franklin, that were massed in his front and ready to attack when ordered. Numerous batteries of artillery lined the bluffs all along the eastern bank of the Antietam, many of them with long range guns that could fire into and even beyond the Confederate lines. McClellan had revealed his plans to Lee by placing his troops in the positions indicated, or very near them, in the afternoon of the 16th.

It may be well to repeat the disposition of Lee's forces to meet these three threatened attacks. Stuart, with his cavalry, held the extreme left, where the great bend of the Potomac to the eastward approaches to within a mile of the Hagerstown turnpike. On Stuart's right was Jackson's command, with its left pivoted amid the giant oaks and the great outcroppings of limestone strata, vertically disposed, where he had placed Early; thence his lines stretched eastwardly, covering the roads converging at the Dunker church. Nearly at right angles to Jackson's line were the troops of D. H. Hill and Longstreet, prolonged to the southward to opposite the Burnside bridge. Toombs' brigade, of 600 Georgians, advanced to the front, held the rocky, wooded bluff that overlooked and commanded the Burnside bridge. On the ridge behind Toombs, at early dawn of the 17th, Lee placed J. G. Walker's 3,200 men, with batteries on his right and on the higher hill in his rear; while still farther to the right, covering a ford below the Burnside bridge, was placed another battery and a portion of cavalry. Lee's entire force, of all arms, at the close of the 16th, was about 25,000 men, with which to oppose McClellan's 87,000. Orders of urgency called McLaws and A. P. Hill to promptly bring forward from Harper's Ferry their 10,000 fighting men.

As early as 3 o'clock on the morning of the 17th, two hours and a half before the rising of the sun, Hooker sent forward his skirmishers in the East woods, and as the sun looked over the lovely Cumberland valley from the crest of the South mountain, he boldly and impetuously urged forward his lines of 12,500 muskets against Jackson's front of but 3,500. Six Confederate batteries, well disposed in front of Jackson's line, wrought havoc

with this advancing host, but its lines closed up and swept forward, their right extending across the Hagerstown turnpike, their thirty guns answering those of the Confederates, from the high Poffenberger ridge, while twenty long range guns roared in enfilade from across the Antietam. Stuart's cannon made reply from the Nicodemus ridge, as did Jackson's from the center and S. D. Lee's twenty-six from the swell in the open fields in front of the Dunker church. Lawton's ever-brave Georgians fiercely contended with and held back Hooker's left, in the East woods and in the 30-acre cornfield, but the advantages of position enabled the Federals to force back Jackson's division into the woods, but still hanging to and pivoting on Early's. There, rallying behind the trees and projecting rocks and facing eastward, it repulsed the attack led by Doubleday. Hays, with his 550 Louisianians, moved to the support of Lawton, in the cornfield, and one of the most stubborn and hotly contested of recorded engagements there took place. The Confederates were forced back, by weight of numbers, but contesting every inch of ground and leaving the big cornfield fairly covered with their dead and wounded and those of the enemy. Hood's courageous Texans, at the moment of peril, rushed forward from the Dunker church, with a wild yell, leaving their breakfast beside their camp-fires, to sustain Lawton and Hays in the unequal contest, while three of D. H. Hill's brigades were hastened by Lee from his center to extend Hood's right and fall upon the flank of Hooker's oncoming left. These well-put, right-handed blows forced Hooker's battle-broken ranks from the field of combat with great slaughter; nearly one-fourth of his men having fallen under the withering fire of the impetuous Confederates. His routed men found refuge behind their guns and Mansfield's corps, which was advancing, in echelon, on his left. Nearly half of Jackson's men had fallen in their line of battle, in the open and across the cornfield, while hundreds of them, stiff in death, still stood in silent skirmish line along the rail fence on the north front of the big cornfield; but the other half of his war-worn but unconquerable veterans closed up and grimly awaited the second Federal attack, which they saw approaching.

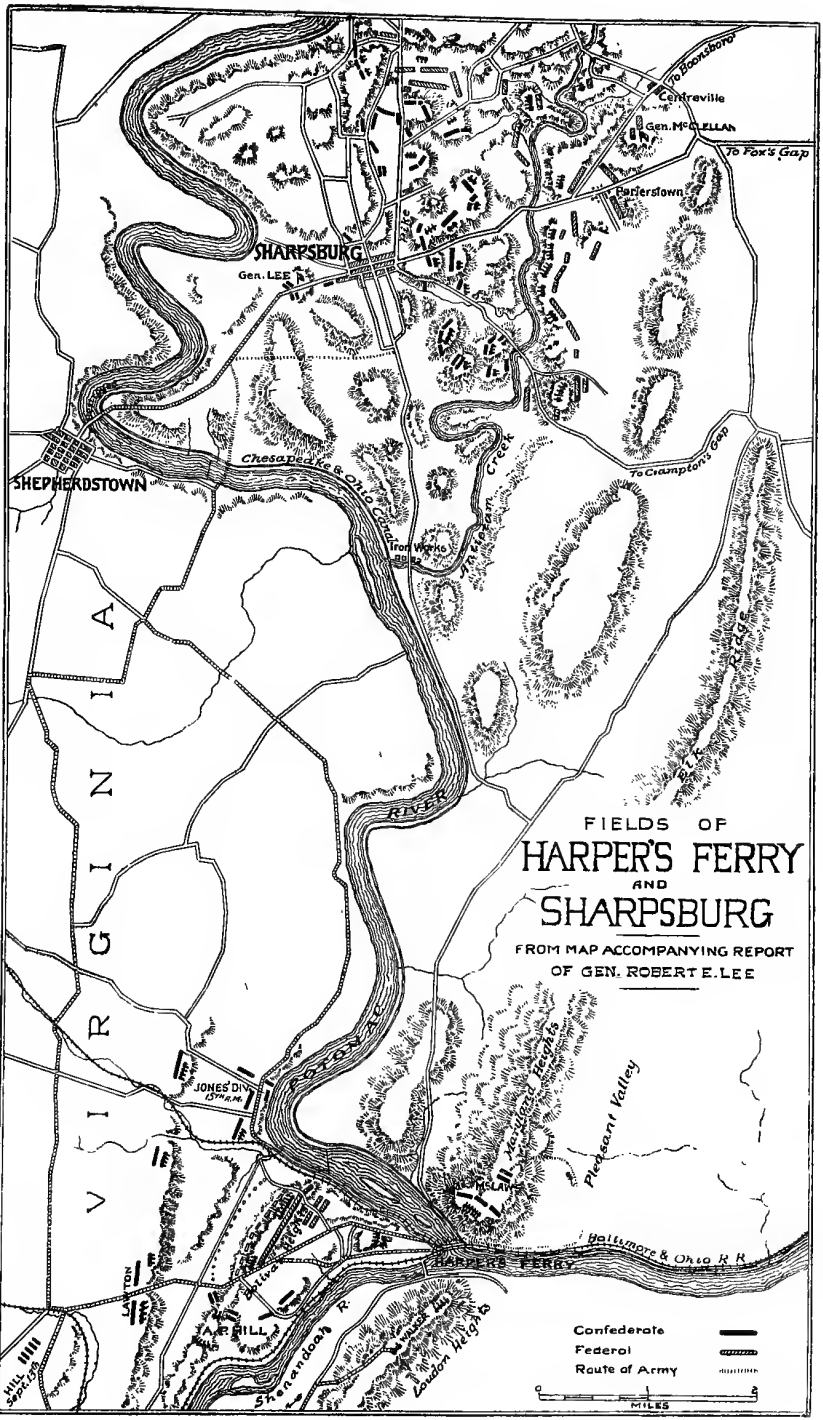
Banks' old corps, that Jackson's men had so often met, now under Mansfield, had bivouacked, late in the night of

the 16th, about a mile in Hooker's rear; and now, at about half-past seven of the morning of the 17th, it became the turn of that corps to take up the battle, from which, after a three hours' contest, Hooker had recoiled in complete defeat. Forming his line near where Hooker had first formed his, with his right resting on the Hagerstown road and his left extending eastward through the East woods, Mansfield advanced his two divisions, and the bloody conflict again raged across the cornfield and in the East and West woods; 3,600 Confederates, under Hood, Ripley, Colquitt and Garland, faced the 7,000 fresh Federals that advanced to the fight, aided by a mere handful of 300 of Hooker's corps who had so eagerly begun the battle in the early morning. Mansfield fell, on the north side of the East woods, at the beginning of his advance, and Williams took command. Thinking to avoid again joining issue with Jackson, Williams ordered Greene's division farther to the left, and, under cover of the low swell in front of the Dunker church and his Smoketown road, this division rushed forward, turned the Confederate right, crossed the Hagerstown road, and entered the eastern edge of the West woods; but there its progress was stayed by Jackson's men, in their natural fortress of forest and rocks, and Greene was soon forced to retire and join his retreating comrades that Stuart and Jackson's left, especially Early's unflinching one thousand, had driven from the field. Thus far Jackson, with his 7,600 veterans, had met and repulsed the 19,500 in the corps of Hooker and Mansfield and driven them from the field.

Although Lee was, by a previous accident, disabled in both his hands, and could only ride with his horse led by a courier, he had intently watched, from a rock, south of the Boonsboro road, on the summit of the hill east of Sharpsburg, the fierce contests on his left and at the same time had observed the movements of Burnside on his right. His eighty guns, in well chosen and commanding positions, had promptly responded to the still larger number of McClellan beyond the Antietam; his batteries in front of Sharpsburg commanded the road leading toward Boonsboro and held in check any Federal advance on his center. Seeing that the weight of attack was being concentrated on his left, and knowing that Sumner's veteran corps was following the defeated ones




of Hooker and Mansfield, he determined to meet Sumner's advance with a bold counterstroke. McLaws and Anderson, by a night march from Maryland heights, had joined him in the early morning of the 17th and were resting near Sharpsburg. He proposed to join with these the forces of Walker and lead them to the assistance of Jackson.

At half-past 8 of the morning the advance of Sumner's 18,000 veterans, the third of McClellan's successive assaulting columns entered the East woods, followed by Sedgwick's division. The sight was not a reassuring one as Sumner's men crossed the field of recent carnage strewn with the dead and wounded of Hooker and Mansfield. Greene's Federal division still held on near the eastern edge of the West woods, but did not move against Jackson's naturally fortified line. In a deploy of 6,000 men, in the East woods, Sumner faced the big cornfield, strewn with its fresh-mown harvest of the dead, then, in three lines, moved westward across that field and the Hagerstown turnpike to the front of the long line of the West woods. Stuart's guns raked his advance with an enfilade, while Jackson's, from the commanding ridge behind the West woods, raked it at short range. Sumner's right soon struck the brave three hundred that alone remained of the famous fighting Stonewall brigade; but these courageous Virginians flinched not, and from behind the upstanding ledges of rocks and the great oaks of the northern part of the West woods, they stayed the progress of the Federal advance, helped by the depleted command of the unyielding Early on their left, while Lee and Jackson were moving to set the battle in order to fall on Sumner's left flank. Hood had fought his men to a mere wreck, at the Dunker church, and had sent Col. S. D. Lee to tell the commanding general that unless immediately reinforced the day was lost. He met the great leader, on his led horse, about a half mile from the church. He reassured the chief of artillery, who had excitedly delivered Hood's message, by quietly saying: "Don't be excited about it, Colonel. Go and tell General Hood to hold his ground. Reinforcements are now rapidly approaching and are between Sharpsburg and the ford. Tell him that I am now coming to his support." Just then he turned and saw McLaws' division approaching at a double-quick from Sharpsburg.



FIELDS OF
HARPER'S FERRY
 AND
SHARPSBURG

FROM MAP ACCOMPANYING REPORT
 OF GEN. ROBERT E. LEE

Confederate 
 Federal 
 Route of Army 



Jackson had already driven the most of Greene's command from the wood at the church, by bringing Early around from his left and making an attack from the south on Sumner's exposed left flank. To Grigsby, now commanding the Stonewall division, and to Early, were now joined the 6,500 fresh troops under McLaws, G. T. Anderson and Walker, and a sheeted and unerring fire from these tried veterans, from behind the rocks and oaks of the West woods, poured upon Sumner's front, left and rear. Nearly one-third of his 6,500 steady and brave men fell where they stood. His efforts to face his third line to the front were ineffectual. It moved to his right and rear, instead of to his left, and, carrying with it portions of his first and second lines, sought safety behind the Federal batteries, and soon the whole division melted away before the hot reception of the Confederates. Just then, at a little past 9 o'clock, the nearly 6,000 of French's division of Sumner's corps, moving still further to the Federal left, under shelter of the low ridge above Mumma's house, advanced to assault D. H. Hill, on the left of Lee's center, and a fierce combat took place along "the bloody lane," that turns to the eastward, about halfway between Hagerstown and the Dunker church, and ascends to the summit of the ridge between the Hagerstown road and the Antietam. D. H. Hill had sent three of his brigades against the left flank of Hooker and Mansfield. When he withdrew these, from Sumner's advance, he posted two of them, those of Rodes and Colquitt, in this lane, with G. B. Anderson on the right of Rodes. He had but 1,500 muskets and a park of artillery; but on his left, extending to the West woods, were about the same number from the commands of McLaws and Walker. Hill's left was along the Hagerstown turnpike and his right along "the bloody lane," so the two wings of his command were placed at right angles to each other. Into these open arms of as brave and steady veterans as ever shouldered a musket, advanced the front brigade of French. From Hill's left a terrific fire sent French's men, with heavy loss, to the rear. He then advanced a second line to meet Anderson in the lane, but the musketry from Hill's right soon drove these back, behind the shelter of the hill, where the remaining two-thirds of French's brigade sought safety, having left one-third of their number between the

arms of Hill's lines. The 6,000 veterans of Richardson's division, of Sumner's corps, now approached Hill's left, along the crest of the ridge above it. At this same hour of 11, Lee, who was eagerly watching his center, hurried R. H. Anderson's 3,500 to Hill's aid. These he hastened to reinforce his right, but at right angles to it and extending from the bloody lane southward toward the Piper house. From his position, across this partly sunken road, Richardson secured an enfilade fire on Hill's men in that road and played havoc with his line. Taking advantage of the confusion he had wrought, Richardson pressed forward, put the Confederates to flight and forced them back to the defensive fences along the Hagerstown road and to the shelter of the numerous buildings of the Piper farm. Hill soon rallied his men, brought up his batteries, and drove Richardson back to the cover of the bloody lane. At this juncture Franklin's corps moved into the position that had first been taken by Hooker and afterward by Mansfield, and sought to try a third issue with Jackson on the left. An artillery battle first took place, then Irwin's brigade rushed in a charge against the West woods, at the Dunker church, but Jackson's volleys promptly sent this attack in confusion to the rear.

Intent upon the battle from his overlooking position in the center, Lee, when he saw the partial success of Richardson's movement against Hill in his left center, promptly ordered Jackson to make counterstroke against the Federal right, in which Walker was to join by charging across from the front of the Dunker church. Jackson was hastening to obey, and Stuart's guns were moved out to see what impression could be made upon the great park of artillery in the Poffenberger field; Stuart intending to lead Jackson's movement with his cavalry by moving up the east bank of the Potomac. It was soon found that the Federal position was too strong to be attacked with any certainty of success; but Lee's left and center, just after the turn of the day, stood defiant in its chosen line of defense and ready to meet any forward movement McClellan might again order; but he was content, from the lessons of the forenoon, to merely hold the positions of his right without further advances.

Through all the long forenoon Toombs, with his 600 men, dominated the Burnside bridge and prevented

Burnside's big army corps from crossing, although he was constantly urged by McClellan so to do and help to carry out his original plan for crushing Lee. With unsurpassed bravery and gallantry, Sturgis advanced upon the bridge, aided by a heavy cannonade from the bluffs above, that, at short range, hurled shot and shell against Toombs' Georgians, who, during four hours of fierce contention, drove back four distinct storming parties and held to their position amid the rocks and trees of the bluff overlooking the bridge. Finding he could not carry this by direct assault, Burnside sent Rodman's division, by a wide detour to his left, to cross a lower ford of the Antietam and fall upon Toombs' flank. This forced the Georgians to retire, and at 1 o'clock Burnside began crossing the bridge, after relieving the brave division that had been exhausted in the attempt to carry it by storm.

It took Burnside an hour to cross and array his men on the ridges above the bridge. This disposition of a fresh corps, for assault upon his right, was in full view of Lee from his rock in front of Sharpsburg. Undisturbed by this, he had directed Jackson to assail the Federal right, knowing, by messages from A. P. Hill, that his command was just about crossing the Potomac, coming from Harper's Ferry, and would soon become an important factor on the field in dealing with Burnside. The latter advanced boldly, captured a Confederate battery, and drove back, to near Sharpsburg, the division of D. R. Jones, and by 3 o'clock his 12,000 were ready to fall upon the 2,000 of Longstreet that were tenaciously holding the immediate front of Sharpsburg and the road leading thence southward toward the Potomac. That same hour brought A. P. Hill up from Boteler's ford, and across to the commanding plateau along which runs the road from Sharpsburg to the mouth of the Antietam. His men were wearied by a march of 17 miles, including the fording of the Potomac, in seven hours, but the fiery Hill, who was always ready and impatient to begin a fight, promptly formed his lines, poured a storm of shot and shell from his well-placed artillery, and then rushed forward his men, with a wild yell, upon the masses of Burnside's troops and forced them to seek safety, in flight, under cover of their guns, beyond the Antietam, after leaving one-third of their number upon the field of

carnage. This put an end to the famous battle, the result of which, to McClellan, was defeat and disaster, but to Lee the crown of victory, against a great disparity of numbers, in a series of stubborn combats that had lasted from before daylight until dark.

The battles and marches of the preceding months had greatly depleted Lee's army, and his wounded, footsore, and straggling men were strung all along through Virginia from Richmond to the Potomac, so that he could bring but 35,000 wearied, half-clad and half-starved men into the battle of Sharpsburg; against these, McClellan had hurled 60,000 well-equipped, well-fed and well-cared-for men, while 27,000 more were held in full view and could have been thrown into the contest. Four of his corps were not only routed, but scattered; and he could not collect them to renew the battle.

Sharpsburg was a stand-up, hand-to-hand fight, as brave and furious as any the world ever saw, and the Confederate soldiers had in it proved themselves more than a match, in a fair and open conflict, for their Federal foes. The losses on both sides indicate the nature of the struggle. Of the Southern men, 8,000, one-fourth of Lee's army, lay dead or wounded upon the field; regiments, and even brigades, had fought almost to annihilation.* McClellan's losses were some 12,500. The living of both armies, as the sounds of battle died away, sunk to profound slumber, such as only follows a day of battle, in the very lines where they had fought and amid the horrors of the carnage of the bloody battlefield.

At nightfall Lee held the line of the Hagerstown turnpike and of the road leading south from Sharpsburg, and the line on his left which Jackson had chosen, before the battle, as the one he would hold; and his unconquerable veterans were ready to renew the combat at his word of command. The Federals had really gained and held no advantages of position.

Col. Stephen D. Lee, the Confederate chief of artillery, stated, to the writer, that an hour after dark, on the 17th, Lee summoned his division commanders to meet him at his headquarters in the wood in the rear of Sharpsburg, and as each came up, he quietly asked him: "How is it

*Longstreet reported the loss of his corps in the Maryland campaign as 964 killed, 5,244 wounded, 1,310 missing; total, 7,508.

on your part of the line?" Longstreet replied, "As bad as can be;" Hill, "My division is cut to pieces;" Hood declared with great emotion, that he had "no division left." Colonel Lee asserted that all of these officers advised that the army should cross the Potomac before daylight, and that Lee, after a profound pause, said: "Gentlemen, we will not cross the Potomac to-night. You will go to your respective commands, strengthen your lines, send two officers from each brigade toward the ford to collect your stragglers and bring them up. Many others have come up. I have had the proper steps taken to collect all the men who are in the rear. If McClellan wants to fight in the morning, I will give him battle again."

Some 5,000 Confederate stragglers joined their commands during the night of the 17th, and the morning of the 18th dawned upon the lines of contending forces, drawn up face to face, at short range, and ready for an anticipated renewal of the mighty struggle; but both stood on the defensive, and not a gun was fired during the livelong day. Lee was not only willing, but eager to renew the battle, in which he was earnestly seconded by Jackson, who suggested that if fifty heavy guns were sent to the Nicodemus ridge, beyond his left, they could silence the Federal batteries on the Poffenberger ridge and open the way for falling on the Federal right. Col. S. D. Lee accompanied Jackson, at General Lee's suggestion, to reconnoiter the chances for success in such an attempt. The chief of artillery pronounced the undertaking not only impracticable, but extremely hazardous, and, to the great disappointment of both Lee and Jackson, the movement was abandoned.

Learning, during the afternoon of the 18th, that large reinforcements were advancing to McClellan, from both the north and the east, Lee determined to cross into Virginia; and that night, in good order, and leaving nothing behind him but his dead and the wounded who could not be moved, he crossed his army through the Potomac. At the same time Stuart crossed his cavalry through the river, at a ford on Lee's left, went up it to Williamsport and recrossed, and threatened McClellan's right and rear, thus engaging his attention while Lee took his long trains and his army back into Virginia. On the morning of the 19th, when it was discovered that Lee

had safely escaped him, McClellan sent three brigades across the Potomac in pursuit, and these captured four Confederate guns, placed on the bluffs above the ford, which were not sufficiently guarded; but Jackson with A. P. Hill, speedily punished this temerity and drove the Federals back, across the Potomac.

With the great river between them, the army of the Potomac and the army of Northern Virginia now rested and recuperated during the bracing autumn days that characterize the great Appalachian valley. McClellan called for reinforcements, declaring that his ranks were being weakened by straggling and desertion, while Lee called upon his government for shoes and clothes for his well-nigh half-clad army. In a letter to his wife, General Lee wrote:

My hands are improving slowly; with my right hand I am able to dress and undress myself, which is a great comfort. My left is becoming of some assistance, too, though it is still swollen and sometimes painful. The bandages have been removed. I am now able to sign my name. It has been six weeks to-day since I was injured, and I have at last discarded the sling.

From his headquarters in the vicinity of Winchester, on the 2d of October, Lee issued an address to his soldiers, in which he said:

In reviewing the achievements of the army during the present campaign, the commanding general cannot withhold the expression of his admiration of the indomitable courage displayed in battle and its cheerful endurance of privation and hardship on the march. Since your great victories around Richmond, you have defeated the enemy at Cedar Mountain, expelled him from the Rappahannock, and after a conflict of three days, utterly repulsed him on the plains of Manassas, and forced him to take shelter within the fortifications around his capital. Without halting for repose, you crossed the Potomac, stormed the heights of Harper's Ferry, made prisoners of more than 11,000 men, and captured upward of seventy-five pieces of artillery, all their small-arms and other munitions of war. While one corps of the army was thus engaged, the other insured its success by arresting at Boonsboro the combined armies of the enemy, advancing under their favorite general to the relief of their beleaguered comrades. On the field of Sharpsburg, with less than one-third his numbers, you resisted from daylight until dark the whole army of the enemy, and repulsed every attack along his entire front of more than four miles in extent. The whole of the following day you stood prepared to renew the conflict on the same ground, and retired next morning without molestation across the Potomac. Two attempts subsequently made by the enemy to follow you across the river have resulted in his complete discomfiture and being driven back with loss.

Achievements such as these demanded much valor and patriotism. History records few examples of greater fortitude and endurance

than this army has exhibited, and I am commissioned by the President to thank you in the name of the Confederate States for the undying fame you have won for their arms.

Much as you have done, much more remains to be accomplished. The enemy again threatens with invasion, and to your tried valor and patriotism the country looks with confidence for deliverance and safety. Your past exploits give assurance that this confidence is not misplaced.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE FREDERICKSBURG CAMPAIGN.

WHILE recuperating his army in the lower valley of the Shenandoah, General Lee, a few days after the battle of Sharpsburg, urged the Confederate authorities to send General Loring, with the army of the Kanawha, northward, through Morgantown, into western Pennsylvania, to break the Federal lines of communication between the east and the west and to disconcert any plans that McClellan might be forming for a new campaign into Virginia, as he desired not only to gain time for collecting together the fragments of his army, but for the people of Virginia, especially those of the fertile valley of the Shenandoah, to gather the harvest of Indian corn which was now ripe and ready for cutting and shocking. On the 25th of September he suggested to President Davis that the best move his army could make would be to advance upon Hagerstown and fall upon McClellan from that direction, saying: "I would not hesitate to make it, even with our diminished numbers, did the army show its former temper and disposition." He had every reason to believe that in a very short time his veteran army had recovered that "temper and disposition."

Lee had hoped that McClellan would cross the Potomac and offer battle in the lower Shenandoah valley; but that over-cautious commander was in no haste to try a third issue with the bold Confederate leader. To engage McClellan's attention and gather a supply of fresh horses from the farmers of Pennsylvania, Lee, on the 10th of October, dispatched the raid-loving Stuart, with 1,800 horsemen, across the Potomac at Williamsport, and thence along the western side of the Cumberland valley, to Chambersburg, where he halted on the morning of the 11th. Thence sweeping to the eastward, across the South mountain, he returned through the Piedmont region, and by noon of the 12th again crossed the Potomac into Virginia, after a rapid and extensive ride, not only with a fresh supply of much-needed horses, but with full information as to what was going on in and around McClellan's

army, of which he had made a complete circuit. This bold and memorable ride so irritated the Federal government that it peremptorily ordered McClellan to choose a line of attack and move against Lee in Virginia.

The experiences of the Federal army in the Great valley, both in Virginia and in Maryland, did not give them confidence in undertaking a new campaign, in that already famous region where "the strength of the hills" had hitherto proven an efficient ally of the Confederates; so McClellan determined to draw Lee from the valley, by crossing to the east of the Blue ridge and then following along its eastern foot, and see what military results could be secured in the Piedmont region, which had hitherto only been tried at Cedar run. Crossing the Potomac October 23d, he successively occupied, with detachments, the gaps of the Blue ridge, making demonstrations across the same toward the Shenandoah, thus guarding his flanks as his army marched southward.

Lee was not slow to comprehend the plans of his opponent, which involved a new "on to Richmond." He immediately sent Longstreet to place his newly-constituted First corps athwart the front of McClellan's advance. Crossing the Blue ridge at Chester gap, he placed his command in the vicinity of Culpeper Court House, where he arrived November 6th, the very day that McClellan's advance arrived at Warrenton, in the vicinity of the road by which Longstreet's corps had passed just before. Jackson, with the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia (also recently organized, but not announced as such until he crossed the Blue ridge, a few days later, and his army ceased to be, officially, that of the Valley district), was left in the Shenandoah valley, to remain, as long as he could prudently do so, as a protection to that great Confederate granary, and as a menace to McClellan's right, as he would hesitate to push far into Virginia so long as that ever-ready fighter and unconquerable leader remained in the lower valley, to him the land of victory, to McClellan that of defeat and disaster.

With his usual boldness, Lee did not hesitate to post the two wings of his army 60 miles apart, as the crow flies, well satisfied that with Longstreet's ability as a stubborn fighter when once in position, he could resist a front attack from McClellan and trust to Jackson to descend

the mountains in ample time to fall on the enemy's flank and join in the fray, knowing also that the Federal authorities would hesitate to push forward the army of the Potomac and leave Jackson so near the gateway to the Federal capital. Could Lee have followed his own desires, he would have ordered Jackson to descend upon McClellan's flank while he moved to attack his front with Longstreet; but reasons of state required him to guard the approaches to the Confederate capital, and compelled him to stand upon the defensive.

McClellan now occupied Pope's former position, behind the Rappahannock, with fully 125,000 men; 80,000 held the defenses of Washington, and 22,000 watched the portals of the Shenandoah valley in the vicinity of Harper's Ferry. Lee had less than 72,000 in the two corps of the army of Northern Virginia and in his cavalry corps, under Stuart, to again meet this great army of the Potomac.

Not satisfied with the tardy movements of McClellan, Lincoln supplanted him in command, at Warrenton, with Burnside, who at once hastened to execute an "on to Richmond," by way of Fredericksburg, thinking that by taking advantage of a shorter line of movement he could reach his objective without being intercepted by Lee; but when, on the 15th, he pressed his advance toward Fredericksburg, the alert Stuart promptly reported his movement to Lee, and the latter, with equal promptness, foresaw his plan of campaign and hurried Longstreet forward from Culpeper and placed him at Fredericksburg, across Burnside's track, in a strong position on the south bank of the Rappahannock, before Burnside's pontoons arrived on the Stafford heights, on the northern bank of that river, thus frustrating the Federal plan of campaign.

Jackson, who had been busy in the valley breaking up the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad and keeping the Federal authorities uneasy as to his whereabouts, promptly obeyed Lee's order to follow after Longstreet, but by ways farther to the westward. By making demonstrations at Chester and Thornton gaps, of the Blue ridge, he mystified those watching his movements by marching up the valley to New Market, thence taking the great highway leading across the Massanutton, the south fork of the Shenandoah, the Blue ridge at Fisher's gap and by Madison Court House, to the vicinity of

Orange Court House, and thence by the road to Fredericksburg; taking but two days to reach Orange Court House. He arrived in the vicinity of Fredericksburg near the end of November, having successfully concealed his march, and went into camp between Fredericksburg and Guiney's station.

It is well known that both Lee and Jackson would have greatly preferred to meet the new Federal commander nearer to Richmond, probably on the south bank of the North Anna, where the topographic conditions are more favorable for a complete victory, and where he would be farther from his base of supplies and be compelled to detach large bodies of men to protect his lines of communication. But the Confederate authorities were wedded to a plan of defensive operations, and were unwilling to permit the Federal army to approach so near to Richmond and to overrun any more of Virginia's territory than could be prevented; therefore Lee, always obedient to superior authority, although exercised contrary to his judgment, prepared to dispute the further progress of the army of the Potomac, by selecting and hastily fortifying a strong line of defense along the wooded terraces that overlook the broad bottoms of the Rappahannock below Fredericksburg, and which, near that town, were the seats of numerous old-time Virginia mansions, up to where this Tidewater-bounding terrace is cut by the Rappahannock, at its falls, near Falmouth. Thousands of Lee's army were barefooted and destitute of clothing suitable for the rigors of the early winter, and many were even without muskets; and yet, Lee said, in a letter of that time, of this army of 72,000 veterans, that it "was never in better health or in better condition for battle than now."

Interrupted in carrying out his intentions, Burnside took ample time to muster his 116,000 men and 350 pieces of artillery, many of them guns of long range, upon the commanding plateau north of the Rappahannock, known as Stafford heights, from which he looked down upon the heroic town of Fredericksburg—trembling in expectancy of destruction between the two great contending armies on either side of it. These heights commanded, by their elevation, not only the terraces behind Fredericksburg, but all the more-than-mile-wide bottom extending for several miles below that city.

While awaiting the development of Burnside's local intentions and watching all the ways by which he might move toward Richmond, Lee sent D. H. Hill's division, of Jackson's corps, to watch the crossing of the Rappahannock, at Port Royal, below Fredericksburg, by which a highway led toward Richmond. Ewell's division, now commanded by Early, was encamped next above D. H. Hill, while the divisions of A. P. Hill and Taliaferro were placed near the railroad leading to Richmond, where they could readily move either to the aid of D. H. Hill or to that of Longstreet, as the exigencies of the occasion might demand. Jackson established himself in the vicinity of Guiney's station, near the divisions of A. P. Hill and Taliaferro, whence highways led to his divisions, those of Early and D. H. Hill, down the river, and to General Lee's headquarters, which were established on the old Telegraph road back from Fredericksburg. The mild weather that had prolonged the late autumn had given place to light snows, and the cold blasts from the North froze the ground and chilled Lee's veteran soldiery, who hovered around camp-fires in the dense forests, most of them without tents.

Burnside issued twelve-days' rations to his army, confidently expecting to make the next issue at Richmond, and on the morning of December 11th, in a dense fog that concealed his movements, his pontoon builders hastened to the bank of the Rappahannock, opposite Fredericksburg, to throw a bridge for the passage of Sumner's corps, and another, a short distance below, for the crossing of Franklin's corps, while 143 of his big guns, along a line more than three miles in length, gave fearful warning against any opposing movement from the side of the Confederates. Lee's two signal guns gave notice to his army of this Federal advance, and the men were hurried forward from their bivouacs to the rudely intrenched positions that had been chosen for them. Jackson's men were sent for, and A. P. Hill and Taliaferro were put in position, on Longstreet's right, on the morning of the 12th; but D. H. Hill and Early remained near Port Royal until Burnside should more fully uncover his intentions.

Barksdale's brigade of Mississippians had been charged with the duty of defending the crossings of the Rappahannock in front of Fredericksburg, where that river is

but a few hundred yards wide. These fearless fighters, under the protection of the heavy walls of old colonial warehouses, shops and dwellings of brick and stone that fringed the south bank of the river, shot down repeated advances of the Federal pontoon builders, and frustrated nine successive attempts to lay the bridges, until the Federal commander, exasperated by the delay, turned loose his batteries upon the devoted town, and, amid flame and smoke and the fierce contention of sharpshooters, succeeded in crossing a body of infantry, which forced back Barksdale's men from the river and enabled him to lay his pontoons and commence the crossing of his army, but not until darkness had come. Barksdale's brave riflemen, by their tenacious contention, had snatched a day from the victory-anticipating Burnside.

Under cover of the darkness of the night of the 11th and of the dense winter fog of the next morning, 45,500 infantrymen and 116 guns, under Franklin, crossed the pontoon bridges at Deep run, below Fredericksburg, and spread themselves a few miles along the line of the railway to Richmond running through the broad bottom lands south of the Rappahannock; while Sumner led 31,000 into Fredericksburg by the upper pontoon. As the day of December 12th advanced and the fog lifted, and Lee looked out from the high hill in the center of his position, which he had chosen for his headquarters, and saw this great host stretching for miles in his front and to his right, in brave battle array, he knew at once that Burnside had adopted the perilous plan of a direct attack, which he had already made preparations to meet by the construction of a military road and the throwing up of protecting intrenchments for his artillery as well as his infantry. He promptly directed Jackson to concentrate his men on the right of the army and take command of the right wing. Capt. J. P. Smith, of Jackson's staff, rode, late in the day, 18 miles, to D. H. Hill's headquarters, down the river, and by marching over the same 18 miles that night, that capable commander brought his men into position, on Jackson's right, by dawn of the 13th; and by so doing before Burnside was ready to begin his assault, Lee was ready to receive it.

Not aware of the fleet-footedness of Jackson's men, and supposing from the information he had gathered by aerial reconnoissances, with balloons, that a large portion of

Lee's army was still down the Rappahannock, Burnside thought to turn Lee's right, secure the highway to Richmond, and defeat him by a flank and rear attack. A large and heavy forest concealed the Confederate right, and the Federal commander was quite surprised, when he began the execution of his flanking movement with Franklin's corps, to find Jackson in position at Hamilton's crossing, with A. P. Hill's 10,000 veterans drawn up in a double line, more than a mile in length, on the high ground just within the northern edge of the forest, with fourteen field pieces on his right and thirty-three on his left; while Early's and Taliaferro's divisions were in order of battle in A. P. Hill's rear, and D. H. Hill's division was in reserve, just to the rear of the right, ready to move against any attempt to turn that flank of Lee's army.

Stuart's cavalry hovered on the plain in advance of Jackson's right, across the Massaponax, whence his long range guns played enfilading havoc on the Federal lines as they advanced, and even paid their respects to Burnside's headquarters, at the Phillips house, nearly five miles away, on the Stafford heights. Jackson's line extended, in an east and west direction, from Hamilton's crossing to Deep run, along the front of a wooded upland promontory. At Deep run it was joined by Longstreet's line, which extended northeast, along the face of another upland promontory, to Hazel run, whence it deflected to the west of north, along Marye's heights, immediately west of Fredericksburg to the bluff bank of the Rappahannock above Falmouth.

General Lee's point of observation was on "Lee's hill," where the old Telegraph road, leading from Fredericksburg to Richmond, mounts to the summit of the promontory south of Hazel run. The divisions of Hood and Pickett, of the First corps, were placed along the front between Deep and Hazel runs. Marye's heights were crowned with batteries, while under them, in front, protected by a thick stone fence on the east side of a highway, were the divisions of Ransom and McLaws. R. H. Anderson's division occupied the left, from the Marye's heights to the Rappahannock. Marye's hill was like a bastioned fortress overlooking Fredericksburg and commanding the valley of Deep run, toward its mouth, where the corps of Sumner had crossed the river. The general features of the position were somewhat like those at the

Second Manassas, where Lee's two wings opened like great jaws of death to meet an advancing foe; but Marye's heights, on the left, were more formidable than those of Sudley, which Jackson had held, and that indomitable fighter was now on the right, in the weaker, and therefore the more responsible position.

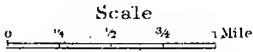
Franklin was ordered to begin the battle by attacking the Confederate right. Under cover of the dense fog he deployed his 55,000 men on the wide plain in Jackson's front, and when the fog lifted, in the mid-forenoon of that chill December day, the Federal lines, infantry and artillery, were revealed, "in battle's magnificently stern array," along the embanked line of the railway, but a few hundred yards in front of the Confederate position. In anticipation of the coming fray, Lee joined Jackson to witness the opening. Meade's division led Franklin's advance, with near 5,000 men, forcing back Jackson's skirmishers, who had, up to that time, held the line of the railway. Eagerly watching Meade's forward movement, Stuart could not resist the temptation to give it a raking enfilade, with solid shot, from the gallant Pelham's guns, placed on a swell south of the Massaponax, in advance of Jackson's right. This fire checked Meade's advance, but brought into action five Federal batteries, the weight of which forced Pelham to retire; but the rousing of this line of combat, hitherto concealed in the way, induced Franklin to turn Doubleday's division facing to the south, where it guarded his flank during the entire day. Recovering from Pelham's blow, shortly before midday, Meade again advanced, only to have his left shattered by Jackson's batteries, under Lindsey Walker, and his entire advance driven back before the Confederate infantry could fire a gun.

Well satisfied with the condition of things on his right, after seeing the result of this first encounter, Lee returned to his left. Sumner had begun his attack on Longstreet at 11 o'clock, at about the same time that Franklin began his on Jackson, opening it with rapid and continuous discharge of shot and shell, from the 400 big guns on Stafford heights, upon the Confederate batteries on Marye's heights. For an hour and a half this steady roar of artillery continued, the Confederates promptly answering the challenge. While thus attempting to intimidate Lee with the noise of artillery, Burnside was hastening

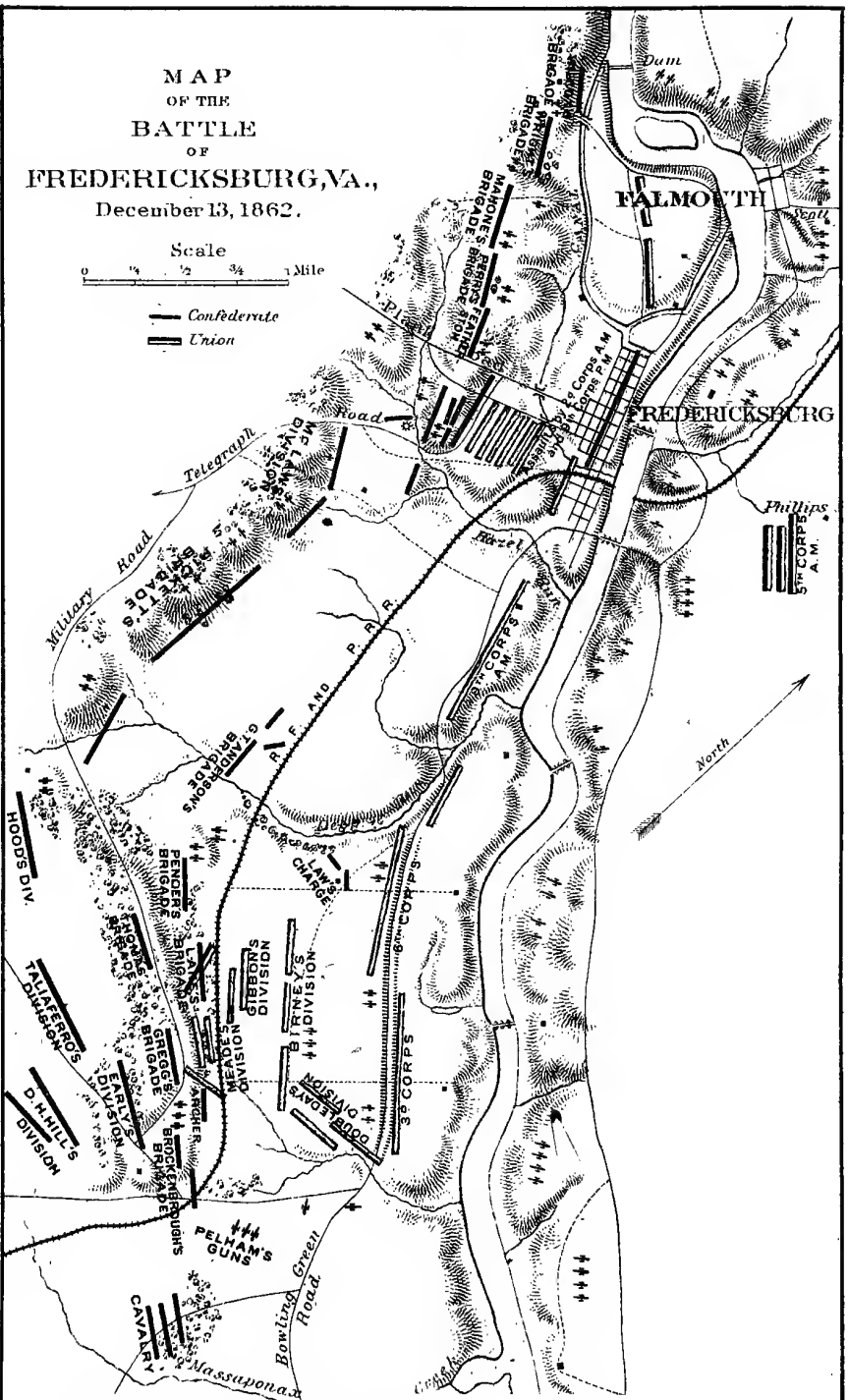
Hooker, with his two grand divisions, down the river plain to reinforce Franklin for the great assault that he proposed to make on Jackson at 1 of the afternoon. At the same time he was ordering Sumner's troops, hesitating under the withering fire from the crest and from the foot of Marye's hill, to advance from the cover of the streets of Fredericksburg, of the embankments of the railway, and of the water-power canal, in a vain attempt to capture the batteries of the Washington artillery and of Alexander, then steadily belching destruction from the Marye hill. The broken plain between Fredericksburg and the sunken Telegraph road, with its stone fence in front and its battery-crowned ridge above, was swept by a cross-fire of heavy guns from front and from right and left.

French's division, of Sumner's corps, led the Federal advance toward Marye's heights along two of the streets of Fredericksburg. The head of these columns came into the Confederate view at about 11 o'clock. They marched across the canal bridges, then wheeled into line of battle, and with brigade front, at intervals of 200 yards, moved forward, under cover of the fire of long range guns from Stafford heights. The cannon from Marye's hill, at point-blank range, gashed them in front; those from Stanbury's hill, on the extreme Confederate left, raked them on their right; while those on Lee's hill, near the Confederate center, raked them on their left. Closing up from the death-dealing, long-range missiles, the brave Federal soldiery pressed forward toward the foot of Marye's heights, only to be met by a withering blaze of musketry from the 2,000 riflemen of Georgia and North Carolina that Gen. T. R. Cobb held in command, in the sunken road behind the stone fence at the foot of the heights, and by a like fierce fire from muskets behind earthworks along the face of the hill above them. In this rash assault 1,200 of these brave men fell, dead and wounded, and the living were forced to give way. Hancock's division then followed to assault, in like gallant style, which Ransom, who had succeeded Cobb, who fell in meeting the first Federal onset, met by adding another regiment to those already in position. Hancock's fierce attack, in three courageous lines of battle, was met by a Confederate yell, and by a sheeted infantry fire that was reserved until his front was but a few hundred yards

MAP
OF THE
BATTLE
OF
FREDERICKSBURG, VA.,
December 13, 1862.



— Confederate
= Union



From original in the possession of the Southern

away and then swept down 2,000 of Hancock's men and forced the remainder to seek the shelter of the houses and embankments in their rear.

At 1 o'clock, Howard's division essayed a third assault. Kershaw, now in command in the sunken road, added two regiments of South Carolinians and one of North Carolinians to the ranks of the well-nigh exhausted Confederates still holding the bloody front. Thus reinforced and ready, Howard's advance was met, as had been those of French and Hancock, and under a fire even fiercer than the preceding ones, nearly 700 of Howard's men went down and the survivors fled, in dismay, to cover. Sumner's corps of veteran soldiers had dared and done all that brave men could do, and there was no longer any spirit left in them for another grapple with Lee's doubly-mailed left hand. Nine Confederate regiments in the sunken road, and seven in reserve supporting the artillery on the crest, had not only unflinchingly held their positions, but had piled the very front of it with heaps of Federal dead.

At this same hour of 1 in the afternoon, Burnside, from his headquarters on the bluff behind the Rappahannock, had ordered a grand assault, by 60,000 men, against the half of that number under Jackson on Lee's right; thus seeking, by simultaneous right-hand and left-hand blows, to break either Lee's right or left, and gain one or the other of the two highways that led toward Richmond. Meade and Gibbon, two brave and capable commanders, supported by fifty-one guns, led the attack. A skillful reconnoissance by the Federal engineers had discovered that a tongue of forest, extending from the front of that highland well out into the plain, and near A. P. Hill's left, had been left unguarded, on the supposition that its swampy character would prevent its use as an approach. Through this weak and concealing point, the Federal advance came, to turn Jackson's left, and broke A. P. Hill's first line of battle. Gen. Maxcy Gregg gave up his life in attempting to stem, with the second line, the oncoming Federal tide of attack. Jackson, promptly informed of this assault, rode headlong from his right, and hurling Early and Taliaferro, that he had wisely placed in line along A. P. Hill's rear, upon the now disorganized and forward-rushing Federals, drove back

their divisions, in great disorder, to beyond the railroad, capturing their field artillery. The Sixth Federal corps, in reserve, made noisy demonstrations with its artillery, but rendered no other assistance to its discomfited comrades.

Near the middle of the afternoon, as Lee beheld the flight of Franklin's men from their assault on Jackson, he saw Sturgis' division, of the Ninth corps, move from the cover of Fredericksburg for a fourth assault upon Marye's heights. These met the same fate as did their predecessors, and a thousand of them were soon added to the dead and the dying already covering the narrow field between Fredericksburg and the sunken road; while the driven-back living remnants of the division crouched behind the embankments of the canal and any cover that the broken field presented. With the entire battlefield in his telescopic view, and doubtless satisfied, from the failure of his fourth assault, of the folly and uselessness of again attacking Lee's left, Burnside now ordered Franklin to renew the battle on his left. But that leader, sufficiently punished by his two previous assaults on Jackson, and losing confidence in his men, who hesitated to close in another conflict with that intrepid fighter, flatly disobeyed the commands of his superior, and so the contest on the Federal left was practically ended.

Stung almost to madness by the impending total defeat of his first essay in combat of the army of the Potomac with that of Northern Virginia, Burnside, against the advice of Hooker, ordered the Fifth corps to undertake the task in which the Second, in four heroic assaults, had so signally failed. Anticipating that another effort would be made by fresh troops in this direction, Lee had placed two fresh regiments in the sunken road and two on the crest of the heights, all in command of Ransom, and Alexander's guns were substituted for those of the Washington artillery. Humphreys' division, of the Second Federal corps, advanced to the ordered assault, with a spirit worthy of its intrepid leader (who had, in the old army, been one of General Lee's younger favorites) with fixed bayonets, across the field covered with the ghastly wreckage of the Second corps. A fiery sheet of shot and shell and musketry met them as they approached the sunken road, and one after another of Humphreys' brigades fled from the fearful slaughter, broken and disor-

ganized. The task imposed upon them, as upon their predecessors, was beyond the reach of human accomplishment. A thousand of Humphreys' men fell beneath the steady fire of the men of Kershaw, Ransom and Alexander, and added to the horrid harvest of death that already covered all the plain.

Hooker held Sykes' division to cover Humphreys' retreat, while he sent Griffin's division, reinforced by two brigades, up the valley of Hazel run to attempt to turn the right flank, or southern end of the sunken road and its bordering stone wall, and a fierce conflict raged for an hour, at the close of the day, all along the lines of Federal assault. Night ended the bloody conflicts of that raw winter day, which had brought only dire disaster to Burnside's right, where more than 30,000 men, from three different army corps, had been hurled against Longstreet's position, from which 7,000 Georgians and Carolinians had successively beaten them back, strewing their front with nearly 9,000 dead and wounded, while not a Federal soldier had touched the stone wall, fronting the sunken road, that they held in brave defense. When the day ended, the Confederates still held all of their positions, notwithstanding the bold and numerous assaults of the great Federal army of the Potomac. Both armies spent the cold and cheerless winter night where they had formed their lines of battle in the morning.

On the 15th, Burnside intended to renew his attacks upon Lee's positions, especially on his left; but he found all his subordinates bitterly opposed to further assaults, which must inevitably result as had the previous ones. So he abandoned all thought of further conflict and awaited a favorable opportunity for recrossing the Rappahannock, which he found during the storm of that night, leaving behind him 12,653 dead and wounded men, in attestation of their courageous fighting in obedience to his orders.

Lee's loss in this first battle of Fredericksburg was 5,309, mainly on his right, where Jackson had fought outside his slight breastworks. Fifty thousand Federals had been actively engaged in opposition to some 20,000 Confederates. Burnside's flanking movement on Lee's right had been discomfited by Jackson and Stuart, while the assaults on Lee's left, intended to relieve the pressure on Franklin's movement, had only resulted in a fearful loss of life to the Federals, with but a small one to Long-

street's Confederates. Burnside attributed his defeat to the fact that the "enemy's fire was too hot." Lee had expected Burnside to renew the battle on the 14th, had every reason to believe that he would do so, and had made every necessary preparation to meet it. When that renewal was not made, he greatly desired to deliver a counterstroke, but the Federal army was so covered by the numerous batteries on the Stafford heights, which could not be reached by flank movement, that prudence forbade any attack on the Federal right. Jackson received permission to attack the Federal left, and just at the close of day of the 14th, he and Stuart opened a fierce artillery fire on Franklin along the line of the Richmond road, but Franklin's hundred field cannon and the heavy guns on Stafford heights compelled an abandonment of the movement. Not satisfied with this, Jackson desired to make an assault with the bayonet, after nightfall; thinking that the Federal batteries would not open on such an attack when they could not discriminate between friend and foe. Lee deemed this too hazardous, as his army was too small for such an offensive movement. He was not only receiving no reinforcements, but was constantly being called on to send away portions of his already small army to defend points in different States.

On the 16th of December, after the retreat of Burnside to the Stafford heights, General Lee wrote to President Davis:

I had supposed they were just preparing for battle, and was saving our men for the conflict. Their hosts crowned the hill and plain beyond the river, and their numbers to me are unknown. Still, I felt a confidence that we could stand the shock and was anxious for the blow that is to fall on some point, and was prepared to meet it here. Yesterday evening I had my suspicions that they might return [to the Stafford heights] during the night, but could not believe that they would relinquish their hopes after all their boasting and preparation; and when I say that the latter is equal to the former, you will have some idea of the magnitude. This morning they were all safe on the north side of the Rappahannock. They went as they came—in the night. They suffered heavily as far as their battle went, but it did not go far enough to satisfy me.

In a letter to his wife, written on Christmas day, after the battle, he said, after recounting the mercies of God's providence to his people during the past year:

Our army was never in such good health and condition since I have been attached to it. I believe they share with me my disappointment that the enemy did not renew the combat on the 13th. I was

holding back all that day and husbanding our strength and ammunition for the great struggle for which I thought I was preparing. Had I divined what was to have been his only effort, he would have had more of it. My heart bleeds at the death of every one of our gallant men.

A Federal demonstration was made, opposite Port Royal, on the morning of the 16th, as if an attempt would be made to cross the Rappahannock at that point, far to Lee's right, and there resume the attempt to move on Richmond. This was promptly reported, and Stuart, followed by Jackson, marched to meet it. It was soon learned that this was only a feint, and so the Second corps went into winter quarters, in Caroline county, in the forests just back from the front of the wooded bluffs of the Rappahannock, and Jackson established his headquarters at Moss Neck, near Fredericksburg, while Longstreet's corps occupied the left from the rear of Fredericksburg up the Rappahannock to the vicinity of Banks' ford, above Fredericksburg.

Later in December, Stuart made a cavalry reconnoissance around Burnside's right and rear, to within a few miles of Washington and Fairfax and Occoquan. The larger portion of Longstreet's corps was sent south of the James, with its advance in the vicinity of Suffolk, to winter where subsistence was plentiful. The Federal army went into winter quarters along the line of the railway from Fredericksburg to Aquia creek, with its base of supplies at that Potomac landing, which was easily accessible by ship and steamer. Thus these two great armies, with their camp-fires in sight of each other, disposed themselves in winter quarters in the extensive forests behind the big plantations that bordered both banks of the Rappahannock, and each addressed itself to the work of preparation for another trial of arms during the coming year; the one fairly rioting in the abundance of its supplies of men and material, of all kinds, gathered from nearly the whole world, which was at its command, while the other could only strengthen its great poverty of men and resources by husbanding the scantiest of fare and of military stores, by strengthening its patriotic courage and devotion, and by increasing its trust in Divine Providence by constant religious observances and supplications and prayers from nearly every member of its army, from its humblest private to the noble Christian soldier that led and, by example, encouraged them.

Smarting under his failure to move on Richmond by way of Fredericksburg, Burnside was tempted, by a spell of mild weather, to try a movement toward Richmond around Lee's left, which he began by marching up the north bank of the Rappahannock, in January, 1863. But a storm set in, just after his movement began, which soon rendered the roads impassable and forced him to retire to his camps. He found the Confederates ready to dispute his crossing the Rappahannock at every point that he reached, and making fun of his attempts by erecting great signboards within their lines, visible to the Federal army, inscribed, "This way to Richmond." This movement is known in history as "Burnside's Mud Campaign."

CHAPTER XXI.

THE CHANCELLORSVILLE CAMPAIGN AND DEATH OF JACKSON.

DURING the winter of 1862-63 and early spring of 1863, Stuart, by frequent raids across the Rappahannock, kept the Federal cavalry busy, protecting Burnside's right and rear, while in the Valley and in the Appalachian region, Imboden and Jones broke the Federal communications with the west by the Baltimore & Ohio railroad.

In one of his humorous moods, on the 3d of March, Lee wrote to his wife:

We are up to our eyes in mud now, and have but little comfort. Mr. Hooker looms up very large over the river. He has two balloons up in the day and one at night. I hope he is gratified at what he sees. Your cousin, Fitz Lee, beat up his quarters the other day with about 400 of his cavalry, and advanced within four miles of Falmouth, carrying off 150 prisoners, with their horses, arms, etc. The day after he recrossed the Rappahannock they sent all their cavalry after him . . . but the bird had flown. . . . I hope these young Lees will always be too smart for the enemy.

After the battle of Fredericksburg, Stuart's cavalry corps held the line of the Rappahannock up to the Blue ridge, with a considerable body in Culpeper, near the line of the Orange & Alexandria railroad, having its base of supplies at Gordonsville. Several times during the winter and early spring the Federal cavalry attacked the Confederates, who invariably drove them back. In an engagement, March 17th, at Kellysville, the first real battle between the horsemen of the opposing armies, the brave and beloved Pelham, commanding Stuart's horse artillery, was killed.

While tented in his winter quarters back of Fredericksburg, Lee was considering a plan of campaign for the coming spring, having frequent consultations with Jackson and Stuart; and Jackson, in the Corbin lodge at Moss Neck, although busy all the time strengthening his corps and putting it in a high state of efficiency by drill and inspection, and by using every possible effort to

have it clothed and fed, was also thinking about his favorite design for a campaign into Pennsylvania, to break up the mining operations in the anthracite coal-field, and so seriously cripple the enemy by cutting off fuel supplies for his manufacturing establishments, his railways, and his numerous steamships. Almost at the beginning of 1863 he directed the writer, his topographical engineer, to prepare a detailed map of the country between the Potomac and the Susquehanna; a map that was subsequently used in the Gettysburg campaign, but not by Stonewall Jackson.

Generals of lesser rank formulated plans of campaign, and so, doubtless, did every thoughtful and enterprising private in the ranks of the veteran army of Northern Virginia. Gen. Isaac R. Trimble, of Ewell's division, made an offer to General Lee to bridge the Rappahannock and surprise the Federal army in its camps. To this Lee made reply, in his always courteous way:

I am much obliged to you for your suggestions presented in your letters of February and March. I know the pleasure experienced in shaping campaigns and battles, according to our wishes, and have enjoyed the ease with which obstacles to their accomplishment, in effigy, can be overcome. The movements you suggest in both letters have been at various times studied, and canvassed with those who would be engaged in their execution, but no practicable solution of the difficulties to be overcome has yet been reasonably reached. The weather, roads, streams, provisions, transportation, etc., are all powerful elements in the calculation, as you know. What the future may do for us, I will still hope, but the present time is unpropitious, in my judgment. The idea of securing the provisions, wagons and guns of the enemy is truly tempting, and the desire has haunted me since December. Personally, I would run any kind of risk for their attainment, but I cannot jeopardize this army.

The Official Records show that the Federal army under Burnside was thoroughly demoralized after the disasters of Fredericksburg and the failure of the "Mud Campaign." Not only were desertions numerous, but an alarming degree of insubordination was prevalent throughout the army. To remedy this condition of things, Burnside was displaced, and on the 26th of January, 1863, Maj.-Gen. Joseph Hooker, the second in the command, was given charge of the army of the Potomac. He speedily restored it to a condition of efficiency and brought its strength up to nearly 134,000 soldiers, when, toward the last of April, he made ready to cross the Rappahannock and attack Lee's 63,000 veterans. Jackson

held the front of Lee's right, from Hamilton's crossing down to Port Royal, with the 33,000 well-trying men of the Second corps. Of the two divisions of Longstreet that remained with Lee, McLaws held the front, from Jackson's left to opposite Banks' ford, with 8,000 men; Anderson's 8,000 extended McLaws' left well toward Chancellorsville (to Mott's run), while Stuart's 2,700 cavalymen watched the fords of the Rappahannock up to the Orange & Alexandria railroad crossing.

Hooker had opposed Burnside's plan of campaign against Lee, and he now essayed to make trial of his own. He proposed to make a great show of having adopted Burnside's plan, by sending Sedgwick across the Rappahannock, at and below Fredericksburg, with three army corps, thus hoping to detain Lee in front of that desolated city while he, with four other army corps, marched rapidly up the north bank of the Rappahannock, concealed by its well-nigh continuous forests, crossed that river at Kelly's ford and the Rapidan at the Germanna and Ely fords, and thence, marching on roads leading from Orange through Spottsylvania to Fredericksburg, should fall upon Lee's flank and rear and thus force him away from his tried lines of defense toward Richmond, when Hooker's reunited army would, with overwhelming numbers, follow in pursuit.

On the 13th of April, a fortnight in advance of his infantry movement, Hooker sent Gen. George Stoneman, with 10,000 of his cavalry corps, to cross the Rappahannock at Kelly's ford, in Culpeper, brush aside Stuart's cavalry, destroy his base of supplies, break the Virginia Central railroad at Gordonsville, then turn southeastward toward Hanover Junction, and, breaking Lee's railway connection with Richmond, there form an intrenched camp and be ready to fall upon Lee's flank as Hooker drove him in retreat toward Richmond. As Stoneman began his march, a heavy rain set in and so flooded the Rappahannock that he had not only to contend with Stuart at every ford he attempted, but also to wait upon its northern bank for the waters to subside; and it was not until the 27th that the three Federal corps, led by Slocum, followed after the cavalry. They crossed Kelly's ford of the Rappahannock in the afternoon of the 28th, and late on the 29th reached Germanna and Ely fords of the Rapidan. Lee had divined the purpose of

this movement, for on the 23d he wrote to Jackson that he considered the Federal preparations opposite Port Royal as only a feint that it was not necessary to move troops to meet, as he was satisfied that Hooker's purpose was to attempt a passage elsewhere, and closed by writing: "I will notify Generals McLaws and Anderson to be on the alert, for I think if a real attempt is made to cross the river, it will be above Fredericksburg."

During the night of the 28th, Sedgwick threw his pontoons across the Rappahannock, nearly in front of Hamilton's crossing, and on the morning of the 29th the Federal lines of battle again appeared on the broad river plain below Fredericksburg. That same morning Stuart informed Lee that the Federal flanking advance had crossed at Kelly's ford, and later in the day that two columns of Federal infantry were moving toward the Germanna and Ely fords of the Rapidan. This information confirmed Lee as to Hooker's intentions, and he at once ordered Anderson westward to support the opposition which he directed Stuart to make to the Federal movement toward Chancellorsville. At midnight Hooker's advance forced back from Chancellorsville the brigades of Mahone and Posey, of Anderson's division, and occupied that plantation. Anderson withdrew and formed his lines in the intrenchments that had been thrown up in front of Tabernacle church, across the three roads that there converged, from the westward, into the turnpike road leading to Fredericksburg.

On the night of this same 29th of April, Stuart sent Gen. W. H. F. Lee, with two regiments of cavalry, to intercept Stoneman's movement against Gordonsville, while in person he led Fitz Lee's brigade across the historic Raccoon ford of the Rapidan, and placed his cavalry in position to protect Lee's left. This brought him into conflict with the Federal cavalry advance on the morning of the 30th, near Todd's tavern, not far from Anderson's left at Tabernacle church.

Meade's corps of the Federal army, the Fifth, reached Chancellorsville during the night of the 29th, and by sunset of the 30th, Hooker had there concentrated 50,000 men, while 18,000 more, under Sickles, were near at hand. Sedgwick, with his 40,000 or more, was still threatening Lee's right, below Fredericksburg; at the same time some 13,000 Federal cavalry were threatening his railway communications.

Exulting in the success of his strategic movement which had placed him, without loss, on Lee's flank, Hooker issued to his command, on the 30th, a general order, in which he said, among other boastful things: "Our enemy must ingloriously fly or come from behind his defenses and give us battle on our own ground, where certain destruction awaits him." Lee quietly, but quickly, accepted the challenge, thus thrown out, and at midnight of the same day ordered Jackson's corps, which he had some days before concentrated in the vicinity of his battle line of the 13th of December, to march from Hamilton's crossing by the old Mine road toward Tabernacle church. By 8 of the morning of Friday, May 1st, a portion of Jackson's corps joined Anderson, and Lee was ready to meet any advances Hooker might make toward Fredericksburg.

Lee left Early in command at Fredericksburg, with his own division, Barksdale's brigade of McLaws' division, and the reserve artillery under Pendleton, to watch the movements of Sedgwick. This disposition of forces placed Lee's army directly between the two widely-separated wings of Hooker's army, while the cavalry of the latter was still further detached, seeking to destroy Lee's lines of communication. These conditions compelled Lee to face his army in both directions, which he resolutely did, and prepared for the conflict, contrary to Hooker's expectations. Early, with 30 guns and 8,500 infantrymen, stretched his thin line along the whole length of Lee's defenses of the previous December, and with characteristic alertness awaited Sedgwick's movements.

The mass of Lee's army, some 41,000 men, under Jackson, Anderson and McLaws, were moved to within four miles of Chancellorsville, and these, just before noon of May 1st, advanced and drove back Hooker's skirmishers, who were in the act of opening the way to Fredericksburg. Lee himself spent the forenoon of the day with Early, watching, from his old battlefield position, the Federal demonstrations on Stafford heights and on the Rappahannock plain, and counseling Early to hold fast his position and not be deceived by Sedgwick's demonstrations; advice that he well knew would be implicitly followed by the courageous old fighter to whom he gave it.

When Jackson reached the vicinity of Tabernacle

church, he found Anderson busily engaged, with pick and shovel, strengthening his position. He, in command as the ranking officer present, immediately ordered the discontinuance of such operations, and that an immediate advance should be made to meet the one he shrewdly supposed Hooker was already making. McLaws was sent forward along the old turnpike, and Anderson along the plank road, while Jackson supported the more exposed left of the movement. The two roads thus taken converged at Chancellorsville. As Jackson had divined, Hooker, having started at 11 a. m., was at the same time marching a column along each of these roads toward Fredericksburg; consequently these opposing forces met about midway between Tabernacle church and Chancellorsville, and the issue of battle was joined in the fields along the roads and in the dense intervening forest. Alexander quickly placed one battery from his battalion in front, on the plank road, and sent one accompanying the skirmishers. Lee came up at about this time, and he and Jackson, riding side by side, followed in the line on the left. With wild cheers for these two trusted and beloved commanders, the Confederates rushed forward and drove back the oncoming Federals. Sykes' division of Meade's corps, advancing on the turnpike, was flanked by Jackson and repulsed in front by McLaws; while Anderson turned back to Chancellorsville Slocum's Twelfth corps, with loss, and Hooker's initial action-movement sought protection behind Sickles' line of 18,000 men that held the front of the fields at Chancellorsville. Lee's skirmishers followed until they found themselves confronted by formidable intrenchments of logs, protected by abatis, in the forest in front.

Hooker had concentrated his army in a most formidable position, which he had carefully and skillfully fortified, but he was surprised and mortified that his first movement had been unsuccessful. Informed, by his advance, as to Hooker's position and the disposition of his forces, Lee withdrew his army for a short distance, as the day closed, and his men slept in lines of battle covering the roads leading from Chancellorsville. In person he went into bivouac with Jackson, where the road to Catherine furnace turns southward from the plank road. During the night Talcott and Boswell, of Lee's engineers, reconnoitered the Federal front and

pronounced a direct attack impracticable. Lee then said to Jackson, "We must attack from our left;" and Jackson was directed to prepare for such a movement. These two leaders and their staffs then sought sleep, as best they could, in a cold night of the early springtime, wrapped in their overcoats, under the sheltering pines and oaks. Stuart, in the meantime, had informed Lee of the disposition of all of Hooker's forces on the field of action, especially of those of his right wing, which extended far out along the plank road to beyond its intersection with the Ely's ford road, held by the Federal cavalry.

By early dawn of the next morning, Jackson sent his topographical engineer, Capt. Jed. Hotchkiss, to Catherine furnace to ascertain whether there was a shorter road around Hooker's front and right to his rear, than the one by way of Todd's tavern. Informed, at an early hour, of the shortest way, Jackson, after a short conference with Lee, in which he secured permission to take his whole corps with him in his flank movement, promptly marched, first southward, then southwestward, to the Brock road, thence northwestward, by that road, to the plank road, thus traversing nearly the entire front of Hooker's position, and turning his right. He then formed his command in three lines of battle, with Rodes (D. H. Hill's division) in front, supported by Colston (Trimble's division), and he in turn by part of A. P. Hill's division. When the Orange road was reached, Paxton's "Stone-wall brigade," of Trimble's division, was advanced on that road so that it constituted an extension of Rodes' right when the forward movement took place.

General Lee, in his report, describes the origin of Jackson's flank movement in these words:

I decided against it [an attack upon Hooker's central works] and stated to General Jackson, we must attack on our left as soon as practicable, and the necessary movement of the troops began immediately. In consequence of a report received about that time from Gen. Fitz Lee, describing the position of the Federal army and the roads which he held with his cavalry leading to its rear, General Jackson, after some inquiry concerning the roads leading to the furnace, undertook to throw his command entirely in Hooker's rear, which he accomplished with equal skill and boldness; the rest of the army being moved to the left flank to connect with him as he advanced.

The audacity of Jackson's flank movement, by which Lee entirely detached from himself the larger part of his

army, was only equaled by the audacity of Lee himself in his willingness to confront and attempt to hold in place the great mass of Hooker's army with the two divisions of Anderson and McLaws. The dense forest that covered Hooker's eastward front prevented his seeing the small force that Lee held opposed to him; while the fierce demonstrations that Lee made, all along this front, with infantry and artillery, keeping up an almost continuous fire, deceived Hooker as to his numbers, and made him hesitate to advance from his intrenchments and ascertain what was really opposed to him. Taking counsel of his fears, he allowed Lee to hold him all day in check, while Jackson was eagerly and swiftly marching around his right flank.

The morning sun of the 2d of May was barely visible when Jackson began his march with Rodes, commanding D. H. Hill's old division in front, followed by Colston and A. P. Hill; 26,000 war and camp hardened veterans led by Jackson in person, with four regiments of cavalry, under Stuart and Fitz Lee, protecting his flanks. Sickles, from his elevated position in Hooker's south front, discovered Jackson's column moving southward, by way of Catherine furnace, and opened on it with his long range artillery. This caused Jackson to diverge to his left, after throwing out a brigade to protect his flank. Sickles advanced on this and captured a Georgia regiment, which induced the Federal officers to believe that Lee was in retreat toward Richmond. Sickles then organized a strong movement in pursuit of Jackson, sending three divisions after him; but Lee turned Anderson's guns upon Sickles and checked his movement. Sickles then called for reinforcements, and late in the afternoon he sent a brigade to the furnace; but it was then too late, for Jackson's column of march was already far beyond his reach, and so far he had successfully concealed the object and direction of his movement. The only result was that Hooker had sent 20,000 men away from his center, into the tangled wilderness, searching for Jackson, at the very time that the latter was ready to throw the weight of his whole corps upon Hooker's extended and weak right flank.

Jackson led his flanking movement with even fiercer energy than was his usual characteristic, constantly urging division commanders to "Press forward," and

kept all of his staff constantly moving along the line of march to see that it was closed up, and with map, made by his topographical engineer on the way, when wanted, and memorandum, he hourly apprised Lee of his progress. Dr. Hunter McGuire, his medical director, says of Jackson at this time:

Never can I forget the eagerness and intensity of Jackson on that march to Hooker's rear. His face was pale, his eyes flashing. Out from his thin compressed lips came the terse command, "Press forward! Press forward!" In his eagerness, as he rode, he leaned over on the neck of his horse, as if in that way the march might be hurried. "See that the column is kept closed, and that there is no straggling," he more than once ordered; and "Press on! Press on!" was repeated again and again. Every man in the ranks knew that we were engaged in some great flank movement, and they eagerly responded and pressed on at a rapid gait.

By the middle of the day Jackson's advance reached the plank road, two miles southwest of Hooker's right flank under Howard. There he detached the Stonewall brigade to support Fitz Lee's cavalry in an advance toward Chancellorsville, along the forest enclosed road, to cover his farther movement, and then pushed on to the Orange turnpike, to a point northwest of Hooker's right and about two miles distant, which he reached by 3 of the afternoon, when he sent his last message to Lee, in these words: "I hope as soon as practicable to attack. I trust that an ever-kind Providence will bless us with great success."

Fitz Lee, who with a cloud of cavalry had been hovering around Hooker's front and right, and keeping Jackson's movement concealed by guarding every road that approached it, now met Jackson in person and led him to the summit of a hill, in an open field, whence he could look over the intervening forest and see Hooker's great army stretching away to the eastward, along and near the plank road, to Chancellorsville. Taking in at a glance the strategic as well as the tactic advantages of position that he had gained, Jackson, giving no heed to Fitz Lee's presence, hurried an aide to order Rodes to cross the turnpike and form at right angles to it, along the concealed front of the field of observation and through the forest to the left, with his right extended nearly to the Orange plank road, which was held by the Stonewall brigade. Colston's division was formed in rear of Rodes, in almost equal length of line of battle; two brigades of

A. P. Hill's division were formed in the rear of Colston, with their right resting on the old turnpike, while the remaining brigades of Hill's division were left in column to follow along the old turnpike as a reserve. At 5 in the afternoon of Saturday, May 2d, two hours before the set of sun, just as a magnificent rainbow sprang its prismatic arch across the western sky in rear of his lines of battle, Jackson ordered an advance. With a wild "rebel yell," that startled the profound silence that had hitherto reigned in "the Wilderness," his veterans rushed forward through the forest, driving game of all kinds before them, and in an incredibly short time fell upon Howard's corps, holding Hooker's right, which, unconscious even of the near presence of an enemy, was engaged in cooking its supper. Thus unexpectedly attacked, a fearful panic ensued, and Howard's men rushed in dismay along the turnpike toward Chancellorsville, sweeping all organizations along with them in their flight. Six guns of Beckham's horse artillery, of Stuart's corps, galloped at even pace, along the turnpike, with Jackson's men, and by sections of twos poured canister into the retreating Federals.

Nothing could stand against the superior numbers that Jackson hurled against Hooker's flanked line, which he speedily crumpled up and drove back toward Chancellorsville, but two miles away. Many prisoners were taken, and it looked as though the whole Federal army would be routed by the flood of fugitives, followed by Jackson's fierce soldiery flushed with victory. At this juncture, Colquitt, commanding Rodes' right brigade in the woods south of the turnpike, thought he discovered a Federal force on his flank that required him to halt and face southward; and thus was held back, for nearly an hour, Jackson's forward movement, giving Schurz's division, which he would have struck in flank had he continued to advance, time to escape; but Howard's corps was completely wrecked, and all opposition was speedily brushed away as Jackson's men, his lines of battle indiscriminately mixed in finding their way through the dense forests of second-growth timber and over fields along the turnpike, sprang over the Federal works that had been thrown across the road at Dowdall's tavern, nearly two miles east of where Jackson had formed his lines of battle, and about the same distance from Chan-

cellorsville. Overcoming the slight opposition of a Federal rally at this point, Jackson still pressed forward, driving the Federals before him, until he reached a line of log breastworks and abatis that Hooker had thrown up a mile to the west of Chancellorsville, along a cross road leading to Hazel Grove and through the woods. Behind these and the divisions of Berry and Williams, the remnant of Howard's corps found refuge.

When Jackson reached these formidable obstacles the sun had set and only twilight of the day remained. In their hot pursuit through the tangled forest his men had, of necessity, become completely mixed and all organization lost. Availing himself of the opportunity offered by these obstructions to his progress, and at the urgent solicitation of Rodes and Colston, he called a halt, and ordered that the men should sort themselves and the commands be reorganized. He fell back a little for this purpose, in order that A. P. Hill might form a new line of battle with his men, who had, up to this time, been following in column along the turnpike; intending to press the pursuit as soon as he could reform his army.

Jackson now held possession of the field of combat to within a mile of Chancellorsville, and covered the junction of the numerous roads that led from the turnpike, where the Federal works crossed it, and among others the road leading northeast to Bullock's, where that crossed the road leading from Chancellorsville to either Ely's or the United States ford, and immediately in Hooker's rear, less than a mile north of Chancellorsville. Another turning of Hooker's right, along the leading of this road, would cut off his line of retreat and throw him into the arms of Lee, who, with his two divisions, was keeping up a bold contention on Hooker's eastern front and holding the roads against a movement toward Fredericksburg.

After urging A. P. Hill to promptness in forming his line of battle, and giving him the order to "Press them. Cut them off from the United States ford, Hill. Press them!" Jackson, accompanied by his staff and escort, rode forward along the turnpike, through the twilight intensified by the heavy forest on each side of the road, and up to his skirmish line to reconnoiter, the accompanying engineers even riding up to a Federal battery which had halted in the road, and where one of them, Captain

Howard of A. P. Hill's staff, was captured. The ringing of the axes of the stalwart brigade of Federal pioneers told Jackson that Hooker was already throwing obstacles in the way of his advance, so he promptly turned back and rode at a trot toward his own command. As he approached Hill's newly formed line of battle, some one called out, "A Yankee cavalry charge," for such was suggested by the sudden appearance of Jackson and the score or more that accompanied him, coming through the darkness of the forest; when, without orders, the Eighteenth North Carolina fired a volley, of ounce musket balls, which desperately wounded Jackson, killed Captain Boswell, his chief engineer, and one of his escort.

Jackson's condition required that he be taken at once from the field to the hospital near the Old Wilderness tavern, and the command devolved on A. P. Hill, who was soon after wounded in the firing that the Federals opened after Hill's men had fired on Jackson. Rodes now succeeded to the command of the Second corps, but declined to take the responsibility, and upon consultation, Stuart, who was guarding the rear against the Federal cavalry which was on the road leading to Ely's ford, was sent for, and, as the ranking officer present, he took command of the corps, at about midnight, and with his accustomed and well-nigh tireless energy, spent the remainder of the night getting the command in readiness to resume offensive operations with the dawn of the coming day.

Near the time of Stuart's taking command, Sickles reached the vicinity of Hazel Grove, a farm and farmhouse at the southern end of the Chancellorsville open plateau, returning from his fruitless advance to Catherine furnace. The heavy condition of the atmosphere and the dense intervening forests had so deadened the sound of Jackson's attack, which was mainly one of infantry and light guns, that neither Lee nor Sickles had heard the noise of Jackson's battle until it neared Chancellorsville; but when the nearby sound reached Lee, he promptly ordered McLaws to move a heavy skirmish line along the old turnpike against Hooker's left. Anderson failed to respond to a like order to attack Hooker's center, and suffered Sickles to retire unmolested; but when he advanced his skirmishers northward from Hazel

Grove toward Jackson's front, they were driven back by Hill's skirmishers. Sickles then turned the larger part of his command against the flank of Hooker's retreating Twelfth corps, and entered into a fight with Slocum's men, of his own army, claiming that in this fight with his associates he had recaptured the plank road and that his men had inflicted the fatal wound on Jackson.

After Jackson had been removed to the field hospital and his arm had been amputated, and before the arrival of Stuart, after a consultation with Adjt.-Gen. A. S. Pendleton, Captain Hotchkiss, guided by a young Doctor Chancellor, of the vicinage, by a wide detour to the southward, rode to Lee, informed him of the position of the Second corps, and of what had happened up to the time of his leaving. Lee, thus informed, gave orders for Stuart to incline his lines to the right, while he would incline those under his immediate command to the left, and thus form a connected line of battle, which would, on the morning of the 3d, make a front attack on Hooker and drive him back from Chancellorsville toward the Rappahannock.

Captain Wilbourne, signal officer of the Second corps, reached Lee at about the same time that Captain Hotchkiss did, and gave further information from his points of observation. Choked with emotion, General Lee received the news of the wounding of Jackson, and sadly remarked: "Any victory is dearly bought which deprives us of the services of General Jackson, even for a short time." Soon after, having had his arm disabled by the springing aside of his horse against a tree, Lee dictated this letter to Jackson:

I have just received your note informing me that you were wounded. I cannot express my regret at the occurrence. Could I have directed events, I should have chosen for the good of the country to be disabled in your stead. I congratulate you upon the victory which is due to your skill and energy.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

R. E. LEE, General.

This letter was read to Jackson the next day, while the fierce battle was raging in the immediate vicinity of Chancellorsville. Turning aside his face from the one who read it, Jackson said: "General Lee is very kind, but he should give the praise to God."

Dawn of the morning of Sunday, May 3d, found Lee

ready for an assault upon Hooker in his intrenched position around Chancellorsville, and saying to his staff, as he mounted his horse: "Those people shall be pressed immediately." No one in the army was more fitted to take the place of Jackson and lead his hardy veterans to victory than fearless "Jeb" Stuart, and with the rising of the sun he promptly ordered forward A. P. Hill's division to the south of the plank road, inclining it to the eastward, while, at the same time, Lee moved McLaws westward, along the plank road, and Anderson northward and westward, south of the plank road, inclining to the left, to fill up the line of interval between his left and Stuart's right.

During the night of the 2d, Hooker was reinforced by 17,000 men of the First corps, under Reynolds, and he now had concentrated at Chancellorsville some 80,000 men, disposed in a bluntly acute salient, projecting southward from each side of Chancellorsville, with the apex at Hazel Grove. The western side of this salient extended for over a mile to the northward from the apex, covering the approaches from the west and the ground held by Jackson's corps. The eastern side of the salient extended about a mile to the northeast, from the apex to the old turnpike, east of Chancellorsville, then reached about a mile to the west of north, to near the Bullock house, thus covering all approaches to Chancellorsville from the eastward. Hooker's lines were nearly those he held the night before, after the retreat of his right from Jackson. His left, facing eastward, was held by 20,000 men of Geary's and Hancock's divisions and the remnant of Howard's corps. In front of these, on Lee's right, were the 14,000⁰ of McLaws and Anderson. Hooker's right was held by the 23,000 men in the division of Williams and the corps of Sickles. Within these two Federal wings were 37,000 more men of the corps of Meade, Reynolds and Couch, in reserve, in the open fields, ready to support either wing. Facing Hooker's right was Stuart with the 20,000 veterans of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia.

Stuart began the battle at early dawn by moving against Hooker's right, mainly north of the plank road and against the heavy line of defenses of timber and abatis that the active Federal army had thrown up before and during the preceding night. Stuart, in person, rode

behind the line of battle, his black plume waving as, in merry mood and clear, sharp voice, he sang, "Fighting Joe Hooker, come out of the Wilderness!" His right soon took the lead and attacked Hooker's center near Hazel Grove, capturing four Federal guns and gaining a position on the south end of the Chancellorsville plateau. As the light of day increased, Stuart's quick military eye detected the advantages of this Hazel Grove position, and he ordered Walker to concentrate thirty guns upon that point. These gave him an enfilade, as he was at the apex of Hooker's salient, along both the right and the left wing of the Federal army. Anderson's guns, under Hardaway, coming forward from toward Catherine furnace, also secured an enfilading position, and under the concentrated fire of these well served big guns, Hooker's position became untenable in about an hour.

While Lee's artillery was doing this effective work, McLaws assaulted Hooker's left; Anderson his center, from the south; while Stuart pressed line after line against his right. By 8 of the morning, Lee's wings were joined in front of Chancellorsville, in continuous line of battle, and a stubborn fight, of stroke and counter-stroke, began. Three times the bold Confederates took the Federal line of defenses, and three times were they driven from them by Hooker's brave fighters. His many well-handled guns aided in the repulses; but those of Lee finally overcame those of Hooker. A Confederate shell striking a heavy brick column of the Chancellor house, disabled Hooker himself, and Couch was compelled to take the command without having any definite plan of defense.

By 10 o'clock Stuart had broken through the Federal lines on the westward and gained the central point of the Chancellorsville plateau, at the little Fairview cemetery, thus forcing Hooker's men to retreat, driven by the desperate courage of inferior numbers, from their strongly-intrenched positions on three sides of Chancellorsville, past that burning mansion, into the strong line of entrenchments (the most formidable the writer ever saw constructed from timber) which Hooker had thrown up, as a refuge of last resort, during the preceding night, extending across from the mouth of Hunting run of the

Rapidan, to the Rappahannock at the mouth of Mineral Spring run, a line nearly six miles in length.

Lee rode in the midst of his line of battle as his men pressed forward in pursuit, pouring volley after volley into Hooker's retreating army, while the shells of the numerous Confederate batteries were thrown over their heads, to burst in the Federal ranks and add to their confusion. The surrounding forests were soon in flames, the accumulated leaves of the preceding autumn having been fired by the burning cartridges and fuses, while flames burst from the large Chancellor house and added to the smoke of the conflict and of the burning forest. Col. Charles Marshall, Lee's military secretary, describes the scene, as Lee spurred "Traveler" up to the burning house, in these words:

Lee's presence was the signal for one of those uncontrollable bursts of enthusiasm which none can appreciate who has not witnessed them. The fierce soldiers, with their faces blackened with the smoke of battle, the wounded crawling with feeble limbs from the fury of the devouring flames, all seemed possessed with a common impulse. One long unbroken cheer, in which the feeble cry of those who lay helpless on the earth blended with the strong voices of those who still fought, rose high above the roar of battle and hailed the presence of a victorious chief. He sat in the full realization of all that soldiers dream of—triumph; and as I looked at him in the complete fruition of the success which his genius, courage, and confidence in his army had won, I thought that it must have been from some such scene that men in ancient days ascended to the dignity of gods.

The victory won and the field of contention in his possession, Lee turned his first thoughts to rescuing the Federal wounded and his own from the conflagrations raging in the forest and at the Chancellor house. Marshall relates that just then there came a message from Jackson, with congratulations for the great victory Lee had won, adding: "I shall never forget the look of pain and anguish that passed over his face as he listened. With a voice broken with emotion he bade me say to General Jackson that the victory was his, and that the congratulations were due to him. . . . I forgot the genius that won the day in my reverence for the generosity that refused the glory."

Lee at once made preparations to assault Hooker's new position, when a message came from Early calling his attention to affairs at Fredericksburg. On Sunday, May 2d, Early was holding on tenaciously to the posi-

tions in front of Fredericksburg in which Lee had placed him, and was keeping Sedgwick from making an advance, when a member of Lee's staff brought him an order, which he had misunderstood, directing Early to abandon his position and march toward Chancellorsville. This withdrawal of Early from the right which he was holding with his division, all along Jackson's old position down to Hamilton's crossing, uncovered Barksdale's right on Marye heights back of Fredericksburg, and opened the way for Sedgwick to march against him in safety. The order to Early was countermanded, and on the morning of Monday, the 3d, he marched back to his former position only to see Sedgwick move 20,000 men against Barksdale's flank of 1,000 soldiers with artillery. Sedgwick won the much fought for and much coveted position, but with great loss, as Barksdale clung to it till overwhelmed by numbers. This capture enabled Sedgwick to move his corps, of 30,000 men, past Early's left on to the plateau west of Fredericksburg, and to the possession of the river and plank roads leading toward Chancellorsville, thus giving him opportunity to fall on Lee's rear while Hooker was contending with his front.

Wilcox, of Anderson's division, who had been left in observation near Banks' ford, promptly threw his brigade across the plank road, at Salem church, in a strong position, and informed Lee of the situation. He immediately dispatched McLaws with four brigades down the old turnpike and the plank road to reinforce Wilcox, thus meeting the emergency and providing, for a second time, against a rear attack by Sedgwick. McLaws marched rapidly to Salem church and at once joined Wilcox in an issue with Sedgwick, forcing him back a mile toward Fredericksburg, beyond the ravine of Colin run, just as the day closed. Summing up the events of the 3d of May, Lee sent a message to President Davis, saying: "We have again to thank God for a great victory."

On Monday, May 4th, leaving Trimble's (Colston's) and D. H. Hill's (Rodes') divisions in front of the formidable works at Chancellorsville, behind which Hooker had sought safety, Lee in person led Anderson's brigades to Salem church, where by midday he placed a formidable line of battle in position, with numerous batteries, covering the front of Sedgwick's lines, which extended across the bend of the Rappahannock, from

near Banks' ford, southward, along the crest above Colin run across the plank road, then along, south of that, to within a mile of Fredericksburg, then north to the Rappahannock at Taylor's hill. The same morning Early, marching along the Telegraph road, had recaptured Marye heights, and moving westward joined the right of the troops Lee already had in position. By 6 in the afternoon the Confederate lines had advanced from the west, the south and the east, and forced Sedgwick back to the Rappahannock; but McLaws, on the left, was slow in his movements, and Sedgwick was enabled to escape, by pontoons, across the river below Banks' ford and under shelter of the river bluffs. This large left wing of Hooker's army was thus finally disposed of, but after a spirited resistance. Lee, late in the day, returned to Chancellorsville and gave orders to again concentrate his army for a final assault upon Hooker's intrenched position.

Tuesday, May 5th, was spent by Lee in reassembling his army at Chancellorsville and making preparations to assault Hooker's last-held position. He sent the writer to reconnoiter Hooker's right and ascertain whether his flank could be turned in that direction. Just at dawn, on the morning of the 6th, as Lee was about to order an advance, General Pender came galloping to his field headquarters under a tent fly at Fairview cemetery, and informed him that his skirmishers had advanced and found Hooker's gone. In surprise, he exclaimed: "Why, General Pender! That is what you young men always do. You allow these people to get away. I tell you what to do, but you don't do it." Then, with an impatient wave of the hand, he exclaimed: "Go after them and damage them all you can." A heavy rain (such as almost invariably followed great battles in Virginia) had set in during the preceding night, and under cover of that, and concealed by his formidable intrenchments and the unbroken forest through which the roads led to the United States ford, Hooker had safely withdrawn his army over the pontoon bridges that he had placed across the Rappahannock below the United States ford, only leaving behind the débris of a well-conducted retreat.

The morning of the 7th found Hooker ordering that "General headquarters to-night will be at the old camp near Falmouth," and thence, before nightfall, issuing

"congratulations" to his army. His campaign was a total failure; he had left, south of the Rappahannock, as victims to Lee's combats, over 17,000 killed, wounded and captured men; 14 field guns, 20,000 muskets and 31,000 knapsacks; and yet, in his congratulatory order he said: "The events of the last week may swell with pride the heart of every officer and soldier of this army," and saying, in conclusion, "Profoundly loyal and conscious of its strength, the army of the Potomac will give or decline battle whenever its interests or honor may demand."

Lee's losses during the Fredericksburg-Chancellorsville campaign were 13,000. Among these were the very pick and flower of his veteran army officers, as well as privates. Among the former were the brave Paxton, an intimate of Jackson, who fell leading the Stonewall brigade to victory, and, above all, the matchless Jackson, Lee's "right arm," as he called him; and, beyond question, the main reliance of the Confederacy for the success of its cause. At least so thought not only the veterans in its armies but many of those at the head of its civic affairs, and the men and women at home, when, amid tears, they heard of his death. In his official report, Lee wrote: "The conduct of the troops cannot be too highly praised. Attacking largely superior numbers in intrenched positions, their heroic courage overcame every obstacle of nature and art, and achieved a triumph most honorable to our arms." He truthfully added: "To the skillful and efficient management of the artillery the successful issue of the contest is in great measure due."

Lee's regard, affection and admiration for Jackson scarcely knew bounds. While the great hero lingered in life, near Guiney's, Lee sent him many messages of condolence, and when word came that his wounds, complicated by illness, would probably prove fatal, he said, almost overcome with emotion: "Surely General Jackson must recover. God will not take him from us now that we need him so much. Surely he will be spared to us in answer to the many prayers which are offered for him."

Jackson died on Sunday, the 10th of May, and the next day Lee issued this general order:

With deep grief, the commanding general announces the death of Lieut.-Gen. T. J. Jackson, who expired on the 10th instant, at 3:15 p. m. The daring, skill and energy of this great and good soldier, by the decree of an all-wise Providence, are now lost to us, but

while we mourn his death, we feel that his spirit still lives and will inspire the whole army with his indomitable courage and unshaken confidence in God as our hope and our strength. Let his name be a watchword to his corps, who has followed him to victory on so many fields. Let officers and soldiers emulate his invincible determination to do everything in the defense of our beloved country.

When, in the autumn of the year, Lee wrote his official report of this famous campaign, after calmly reviewing it, he said:

The movement by which the enemy's position was turned and the fortune of the day decided, was conducted by the lamented Lieutenant-General Jackson, who, as has already been stated, was severely wounded near the close of the engagement on Saturday evening. I do not propose here to speak of the character of this illustrious man, since removed from the scene of his eminent usefulness by the hand of an inscrutable, but all-wise Providence. I nevertheless desire to pay the tribute of my admiration to the matchless energy and skill that marked the last act of his life, forming, as it did, a worthy conclusion of that long series of splendid achievements which won him the lasting love and gratitude of his country.

In a letter to his wife, written May 11th, concerning "the loss of the good and great Jackson," Lee wrote: "Any victory would be dear at such a price. His remains go to Richmond to-day. I know not how to replace him, but God's will be done. I trust He will raise some one in his place."

In an article on "Stonewall Jackson's Place in History," by Lieut.-Col. G. F. R. Henderson, professor of strategy in the British Staff college, contributed to the "Life of Jackson," by his wife, he wrote:

When Jackson fell at Chancellorsville, his military career had only just begun, and the question, what place he takes in history, is hardly so pertinent as the question, what place he could have taken had he been spared. So far as his opportunities had permitted, he had shown himself in no way inferior to the greatest generals of the century, to Wellington, to Napoleon, or to Lee. That Jackson was equal to the highest demands of strategy his deeds and conceptions show; that he was equal to the task of handling a large army on the field of battle must be left to conjecture; but throughout the whole of his soldier's life he was never intrusted with any detached mission which he failed to execute with complete success. No general made fewer mistakes. No general so persistently outwitted his opponents. No general better understood the use of the ground or the value of time. No general was more highly endowed with courage, both physical and moral, and none ever secured to a greater degree the trust and affection of his troops. And yet, so upright was his life, so profound his faith, so exquisite his tenderness, that Jackson's many victories are almost his least claim to be ranked amongst the world's true heroes.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE CAMPAIGN IN PENNSYLVANIA.

CLOSING up the ranks of his victorious but decimated army, the veterans of which he could not replace, Lee did all in his power to follow up the victory of Chancellorsville by an aggressive movement on the army of the Potomac. But for his meagerly supplied commissariat he would, earlier in the spring of 1863, have moved upon Milroy at Winchester, in the lower Shenandoah valley, confident that by so doing he could draw Hooker from the northern neck of Virginia into the more open country, where he could find opportunity for striking him an effective blow. He had urged this view upon President Davis before the campaign of Chancellorsville, and had asked that troops might be drawn from the more Southern States to reinforce his army, confident that his plan of campaign would furnish more relief to the Confederacy than could be gained by holding scattered forces to defend distant positions.

Longstreet rejoined Lee in May at Fredericksburg, with the portion of his troops that had been wintering near Suffolk, south of the James, where supplies were more abundant and easy of access. The general commanding then proceeded to reorganize his army, by dividing it into three corps—the First under Longstreet, the Second under Ewell (who having lost a leg at Second Manassas, had just returned from hospital), and the Third under A. P. Hill—and worked untiringly to get his army into condition for a forward movement, constantly urging the Confederate government to add to his numbers in Virginia, and to those of Johnston and Pemberton in Mississippi, so that these two armies might be strong enough to strike efficient and simultaneous blows on the great Federal armies that opposed them, leaving local defenses to the local soldiery. His pleadings were unheeded, but he continued resolutely to prepare for another campaign, apprehensive lest Hooker's vastly

superior numbers might possibly force him back to the trenches around Richmond.

Lee's plan of campaign, as he detailed it to Col. A. L. Long, of his staff, in his tent in the rear of Fredericksburg, was to maneuver Hooker from his almost unreachable stronghold between the Rappahannock and the Potomac, and bring him to battle at Chambersburg in Pennsylvania, in the Great valley, or at York or Gettysburg in the Piedmont region of the same State, thus transferring the destructive agencies of war to northern soil, where he could readily subsist his army on the country; and by a decisive victory cause the evacuation of Washington and compel the Federal government to withdraw Grant from the siege of Vicksburg. This was, doubtless, the identical campaign that Jackson had in view, and which he probably had discussed with Lee during the preceding winter, when he ordered the preparation of a detailed map extending from the Rappahannock to the Susquehanna.

Lee's army at this time consisted of Stuart's cavalry corps, of about 6,000 men; the artillery corps, under Pendleton, with some 200 guns, and his veteran infantry, in all about 60,000 men, whom he had ready to march northward by the close of May. On the 3d of June he directed his right, under Longstreet, to move toward Culpeper, marching across the whole length of the scene of his recent victories at Salem church and Chancellorsville; followed by Ewell, who with eager interest scanned the field of victory as he rode across it at the head of Jackson's old troops. With his usual heroic audacity, Lee left his smallest corps, that under A. P. Hill, at Fredericksburg, to restrain Hooker from any "on to Richmond" he might rashly attempt to make.

By the 8th Lee had concentrated the commands of Stuart, Longstreet and Ewell in front of Culpeper Court House, with his advance pickets on the Rappahannock. On that day Stuart had a grand cavalry review on the broad and then unobstructed open around Brandy Station, which was witnessed by most of the principal officers of the infantry corps in the vicinity and by Lee in person. That night the Federal cavalry forced the passage of the Rappahannock, and on the morning of the 9th fell upon Stuart's encampment, when a furious, and at times hand-to-hand, engagement followed, which lasted

the greater portion of the day. Stuart, after a most valourous fight, finally succeeded in driving the Federal cavalry back across the Rappahannock, with very considerable loss. Hooker had ordered this reconnoissance, with cavalry followed by infantry, to find out what Lee was doing; for as yet he was in profound ignorance concerning his northward movement.

After the repulse of the Federal cavalry, Lee ordered Ewell with the Second corps to cross the Blue ridge at Chester gap, and drive the Federal force under Milroy, at Winchester, from the Valley; ordering Jenkins, at the same time, to move his cavalry brigade down the Valley, in the same direction, while Imboden moved his brigade down the South Branch valley, in the mountain country, to threaten Milroy from Romney on the west. On the 13th, Ewell appeared in front of Winchester and a portion of his advance at Martinsburg, while Jenkins broke the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, thus preventing reinforcements to Milroy from the west. Closing around Winchester on the 14th, Ewell, by a bold and well-planned flank movement of Early to the left, drove Milroy, late in the day, from his strong intrenchments, captured a large portion of his army and his military stores, and scattered the troops that escaped, following them on the 15th to Harper's Ferry, thus again relieving the lower valley and the patriotic city of Winchester from a detested and tyrannical foe, such as Milroy had proved himself to be in waging war on defenseless women and children. Ewell's captures were 4,000 prisoners, many wagons, and a large quantity of military stores. On this same 15th of June, Jenkins moved on Chambersburg with his cavalry, and Ewell's advance crossed the Potomac, while Longstreet followed, from Culpeper, to hold the passes of the Blue ridge, closely followed by Hill to Culpeper, who had remained in front of Fredericksburg until he saw the army of the Potomac disappear, marching to the northward toward Washington.

Thus was Lee steadily pressing the army of Northern Virginia northward, to the Chambersburg objective of his premeditated plan of campaign, the way having been opened by disposing of Milroy's 10,000 at Winchester, by capture and rout, and driving the other scattered forces in the lower valley into Harper's Ferry, which he now passed by, leaving a small force in observation to

hold its garrison in position. By the 17th of June the long column of the Confederate army was stretched from Culpeper in Virginia to Chambersburg in Pennsylvania, Jenkins' cavalry holding the latter place. Ewell's advanced division was encamped, in the midst of abundance, near Hagerstown; another was in a like favorable encampment near Sharpsburg, while his third division was approaching the fords of the Potomac, near Shepherdstown. Longstreet was crossing the Blue ridge to the banks of the Shenandoah, guarding the passes of that mountain chain from the eastward; while Stuart held the Piedmont country and the passes through the Bull Run mountains, thus keeping Hooker within bounds with his great army encamped from Manassas, near Bull run, to Leesburg, near the Potomac, striving to keep pace with Lee's speedy northward movement.

For five days Stuart held steady contention with Hooker's cavalry, effectually veiling Lee's movements, and then holding Ashby's gap of the Blue ridge against superior numbers, but with Longstreet just behind him, all along the ridge, while A. P. Hill passed the rear of the latter, by Chester gap, and rested in the Great valley, in and on the borders of which Lee had now gathered all of his army, except the cavalry immediately in charge of Stuart, which continued to hover around Hooker's flanks and rear. Lee had offered Hooker battle with Longstreet's corps, looking threateningly from the eastern slopes of the Blue ridge; but when that was not accepted, and Hooker still continued south of the Potomac, Lee boldly withdrew Longstreet to the western side of the Shenandoah, and on the 18th, from the vicinity of Millwood, ordered Longstreet and Hill to follow Ewell across the Potomac, satisfied that by so doing he would draw Hooker into Maryland. Hill crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown on the 18th, followed by Longstreet, except McLaws' division, which was left with Stuart to watch the passes of the Blue ridge and the roads of the Shenandoah valley until Hooker should have crossed the Potomac. Imboden was also ordered into Pennsylvania, moving to the west of the Great valley, and it was suggested to Gen. Sam Jones that his cavalry should march his command into northwestern Virginia and menace the line of the Baltimore & Ohio. Lee also asked that the brigades left at Richmond should be sent

to join him. His force in hand for this important, aggressive northern campaign was about 60,000 men. As he entered Pennsylvania he issued an order instructing his army that "No private property shall be injured or destroyed;" an order that was rigidly enforced during all the campaign that followed.

Feeling that his left was securely guarded by Jones and Imboden, and his advance by Jenkins, Lee, looking after the safety of his right, wrote to Stuart, on the 22d: "Do you know where Hooker is, and what he is doing? I fear he will steal a march on us and get across the Potomac before we are aware. If you find that he is moving northward, and that two brigades can guard the Blue ridge and take care of your rear, you can move with the other three into Maryland and take position on General Ewell's right, place yourself in communication with him, guard his flank, keep him informed of the enemy's movements, and collect all the supplies you can for the use of the army." On the same day he directed Ewell to move toward the Susquehanna and, "if Harrisburg comes within your means, capture it."

On the 23d of June, Ewell was marching rapidly up the Cumberland valley toward Carlisle, while Lee was preparing to lead the First and Third corps across the Potomac to follow him. Stuart was enjoined to keep two of his brigades of cavalry along the eastern foot of the Blue ridge between Lee and Hooker, while a large discretion was granted him in the movement of the three other brigades under his immediate command, with the sole condition that he should, "as speedily as possible," join Ewell's advance, which, he was informed, had been sent under Early across the South mountain to York, to gather supplies and levy contributions on that wealthy Pennsylvania town. Lee's last word to Stuart reached the latter during the night of the 23d of June. On that day Lee wrote to Davis again urging him to gather all the troops he could and send them, under Beauregard, to Culpeper Court House, as a menace to Washington, and therefore a virtual reinforcement to his own movement, but without leaving Richmond defenseless.

Justly alarmed by Lee's bold and rapid movement toward the very heart of Pennsylvania, the Federal government called for 100,000 new troops to defend that State; concentrated a considerable force in Maryland,

and ordered Hooker to the north bank of the Potomac, to interpose his army between Lee and Washington. The chronicles of the day record this remarkable prayer, by President Lincoln: "O, Lord, this is your fight; but we, your humble followers and supporters here, can't stand another Fredericksburg or Chancellorsville."

From Williamsport, on the 25th, where Longstreet was crossing the Potomac, Lee wrote to President Davis saying, that if the whole of Hooker's army was concentrated upon him he could accomplish nothing, and would be compelled to return to Virginia; but urged that it would be a great relief to him if even the effigy of an army, under Beauregard, were concentrated at Culpeper. He insisted that he would have to abandon his line of communication because he had not the men to hold it; but he still thought he could draw Hooker across the Potomac and compel the Federal government to bring troops from the South, to defend its capital, and thus defeat its plans of invasion. Another letter followed, the next day, again urging an advance upon Washington from Culpeper.

On the 27th, Ewell was in Carlisle; his advance, under Early, had crossed the South mountain and was nearing York. The same day that Lee, in person, crossed the Potomac, June 25th, Hooker began crossing the same river, a fact of which Lee was still in ignorance, at Chambersburg, on the 27th; as Stuart was that day crossing the Potomac, at the mouth of Seneca creek, not far from Washington, between Hooker's army and that city, and was rapidly riding northward into Pennsylvania, cumbered with the spoils he had captured in the rear of Hooker's army.

By the 28th Hooker had concentrated four corps of his army at Frederick and three at Middletown, on the National turnpike, a few miles to the westward; so that seven Federal corps were available for a rapid movement across South mountain to Hagerstown, to the rear of Lee's army, which was now some miles to the northeast of that town in the Cumberland valley. At this juncture of affairs, Hooker demanded that the 10,000 men, left in garrison at Harper's Ferry, should join his command in the field. This brought on an issue with his government, which resulted in his displacement and the putting of Gen. George Meade in command of the army of the Potomac, on the 28th day of June, the fourth change in the

leadership of that army in the little more than a year since Lee took command of the army of Northern Virginia.

On the 27th Lee issued, from Chambersburg, a general order to his troops which is worthy of more than a passing notice. One of its paragraphs reads: "It must be remembered that we make war only upon armed men, and that we cannot take vengeance for the wrongs our people have suffered, without lowering ourselves in the eyes of all whose abhorrence has been excited by the atrocities of our enemies, and offending against Him to whom vengeance belongeth, without whose favor and support our efforts must all prove vain."

The lack of knowledge as to the whereabouts and intentions of Meade, because of the absence of his cavalry, delayed Lee at Chambersburg; but on the night of the 28th, Harrison, a daring Virginia scout in the service of Longstreet, reached him with the information, the first he had received, that the army of the Potomac had crossed that river on the 25th and was then threatening his line of communication at Hagerstown, as above stated. This news led Lee to at once recall Ewell's divisions from the Susquehanna, near Harrisburg and Columbia, and order a concentration of his army at Cashtown, in the Piedmont country of Pennsylvania, just east of the South mountain, on the road from Chambersburg to Gettysburg, where the topographic conditions were all favorable for a defensive battle, and where he could draw supplies from the fertile Cumberland valley in his rear. Moreover, a movement in that direction was one threatening, not only Washington and Baltimore, but also Philadelphia, as was fully realized by the Federal government when it at once ordered the throwing up of defenses in front of the "city of brotherly love." Lee well knew that such a strategic movement would draw the army of the Potomac from menacing his rear that it might interpose itself between the army of Northern Virginia and the important cities and lines of communication that its movements threatened.

The Third corps, A. P. Hill's, marched, on the morning of the 29th, from Chambersburg toward Cashtown, Lee remaining in the former with the First corps, watching the development of his plans. Late in the same day Ewell received, at Carlisle, Lee's order of concentration,

just as he was about to follow his cavalry advance to attack Harrisburg, where the governor of Pennsylvania, with the militia of that State, was in constant expectation of his appearance before that city, which he was ready to evacuate. Ewell promptly sent orders to Early, at York, to fall back to Cashtown, and prepared to move in that direction the next morning with the remainder of his command.

Meade, informed of the advance of Ewell to York and toward Harrisburg, at once changed the direction of his army, as Lee had anticipated he would, and on the evening of the 29th two of his corps bivouacked near Emmitsburg, and one near Taneytown, just south of the Maryland-Pennsylvania line and on highways leading toward Gettysburg; while four others of his corps encamped in the rear of these, along Pipe creek, an eastern tributary of the Monocacy, in a good defensive position covering the approaches to Baltimore. Buford's cavalry covered the Federal front within the Pennsylvania line near Fairfield, guarding the approaches from Cashtown and Gettysburg. These two great contention-seeking armies were now but a few miles apart; and yet there is evidence that neither leader was aware of the exact whereabouts of the other.

Stuart, entirely out of communication with Lee, broke the line of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad on the morning of the 29th, thus interrupting Meade's communication with Washington, and that evening rested at Westminster, but a few miles to the eastward of Meade's bivouacs. On the 30th he again rode northward, fighting his way through the Federal cavalry at Hanover, on the railway from York to Gettysburg; but much delayed by the long train of mule teams that he had captured in the vicinity of Washington, and in utter ignorance of the fact that the famous battle of Gettysburg had already begun, but a few miles to the westward from his line of march. Stuart was pressing forward to join Ewell's advance, under Early, in the vicinity of York, marching all night toward his destination, passing but seven miles to the eastward of Early's bivouac, still believing that the latter was at York, where the rendezvous with him had been appointed by Lee, and whither he rode but to find Early gone. Having no knowledge of the direction he had taken, Stuart continued to Carlisle, and thence, by a wide

circuit, his men well-nigh exhausted, to Gettysburg, where he appeared on Lee's left.

A. P. Hill's advance, under Pettigrew, reached Cashtown, where by its orders it should have awaited the concentration of Lee's army, its mission being the taking and holding of Lee's chosen defensive position. Unfortunately, on the 30th, while Longstreet was still west of the mountains, at Greenwood, and before even Hill's corps was closed up, Pettigrew's brigade, of Heth's division, was allowed to march over the eight miles from Cashtown to Gettysburg in search of shoes. In the vicinity of that town it came in collision with Buford's Federal cavalry, and the great battle of Gettysburg was thus unwittingly and unordered begun, though but in a skirmish. Pettigrew hastened back to Cashtown, late in the day, and on the morning of July 1st, at 5 a. m., A. P. Hill, always ready and anxious for a fight, but so far as known without orders from General Lee, sent the divisions of Heth and Pender toward Gettysburg, as Hill says in his report, "to discover what was in my front." He soon found out; for when he advanced his skirmishers to near Gettysburg, expecting to find only Buford's Federal cavalry, he brought on an engagement with two corps of Meade's army, which Buford had called to his aid the evening before, when he found that infantry was in his front.

In the fierce combat which Hill brought on, just to the west of Gettysburg, on the 1st of July, he soon got the worst of it, as the power of numbers was arrayed against him; so he sent messengers to Ewell, who was, in obedience to orders, approaching Cashtown from the east, asking for help. Giving heed to this urgent call, Ewell turned toward Gettysburg, and on arriving in its vicinity on the north, he promptly moved into line of battle, nearly at right angles to the pending combat between Hill and the Federals under Reynolds; fell upon the right flank of the latter and well-nigh demolished his command, killing the leader with many of his men, capturing numerous prisoners, and driving the remainder of the two corps in confusion through the streets of Gettysburg, to the southward, toward Meade's main army.

On this same 1st day of July, Lee, with Longstreet, crossed the South mountain, and heard with amazement the noise of the battle that Hill had begun at Gettysburg

at sunrise, for his express orders had been, both to Hill and to Ewell, that they should not bring on a general engagement until after the concentration of his army at Cashtown; and now Hill was engaged, at the very beginning of the day, in hot contention, eight miles away from Lee's selected defensive position, where the "strength of the hills" would have been his, in the open country about Gettysburg, where mere numbers would have greatly the advantage in an engagement. General Anderson, of Longstreet's command, reports that Lee was listening intently, as he rode along, to the sound of Hill's guns, miles away to the eastward, and then saying: "I cannot think what has become of Stuart; I ought to have heard from him long before now. He may have met with disaster, but I hope not. In the absence of reports from him, I am in ignorance as to what we have in front of us here. It may be the whole Federal army, or it may be only a detachment. If it is the whole Federal force we must fight a battle here; if we do not gain a victory, these defiles and gorges through which we were passing this morning will shelter us from disaster."

Reaching Cashtown by the middle of the forenoon, Lee anxiously awaited information from the front. This he soon had, in a call from Hill for assistance, when at once he gave orders to Longstreet to close up his command, and rode rapidly to the scene of action, where he arrived in time to witness the grand advance of his Second corps through Gettysburg, between 4 and 5 in the afternoon, by which 5,000 or more Federal prisoners were captured; four Confederate divisions having snatched victory from the five Federal ones that had defeated Hill, and not only fought bravely, but held tenaciously the field of combat and inflicted severe losses on the victors. The old fighting spirit of Jackson's men was fully aroused by the great success they had again won over the Federal corps that they had so recently routed at Chancellorsville, and they were eager to follow in pursuit of the 6,000 Federals remaining of the 20,000 that had been engaged, in refuge behind the stone walls and outcropping rocks of the Gettysburg ridge, or Cemetery hill. Lee himself was fired by a like desire, and through Adjt.-Gen. Walter H. Taylor he sent an order to Ewell: "Press those people and secure the hill if possible."

At that hour, big with promise, the Confederates had also possession of the chief point of vantage, for their advance was entirely through the town of Gettysburg and beyond its southern border, up to the very gates of the now famous cemetery, and Early, also flushed with victory, the credit for which was in large part due to his division, was forming two of his brigades to the east of the town, and requesting Hill to join his right with a division from Seminary ridge, to move forward and dispossess the small Federal force that still heroically held on to Cemetery hill and covered the roads by which Meade must advance from the southward. At this same time, about 5 in the afternoon, General Ewell sent Capt. J. P. Smith to General Lee, asking that the forward movement he was preparing might be supported by Hill or Longstreet. Lee was found on Seminary ridge, accompanied by Longstreet, and Hill was near at hand. The latter was reluctant to send to Ewell his two divisions, which so recently had been hotly engaged. Lee then urged Longstreet to hurry forward McLaws and Hood, who were advancing from Cashtown to join Ewell's advance, and sent word to the latter, by Captain Smith, that he would support his advance on his right as soon as he could, concluding: "I wish him to use whatever opportunity he has to advance and hold the ground in his front."

As Ewell was holding his men in check, impatient to advance as soon as they were reformed, to the south of Gettysburg, a young staff officer came riding rapidly from the rear, with a message to General Early from Brig.-Gen. William Smith, who had recently been sent to the army to take command of Early's old brigade, which Early had left as a rear guard on the road to York, north of Gettysburg, as he advanced, distrusting the management of its leader in an engagement. Smith's message was that a Federal force was advancing upon his rear, from the direction of York. Instead of paying no attention to this report, which he well knew could have no foundation, Early halted his advance movement and countermarched one of his best brigades, under Gordon, to assist Smith in meeting this imagined Federal movement on his rear. The delay caused by this episode chilled in Ewell the ardor of pursuit, and he refused the appeal of Early and Rodes for an immediate assault upon

the Federals, who still showed a bold front by a constant firing of infantry and artillery, desiring to have Gordon again in place and to have Johnson's division, which had been marching forward from Cashtown, in advance of Longstreet, to extend his line to the eastward, that he might scale Culp's hill and turn the Federal right at the same time that he made attack in front. The reinforcements from Longstreet did not appear, but Johnson arrived upon the field after sundown and then halted north of the town, in the vicinity of Pennsylvania college. This lack of energy and failure of concerted action by Lee's corps commanders lost to the Confederates the great advantages they had gained during the day, which, if followed up in "Stonewall's way," would, in so far as one can forecast events, have resulted in crushing the Federal army in detail, as it was stretched along the road for miles to the southward from Gettysburg, marching in wearied columns and encumbered with its great army trains.

The plan of pushing the attack abandoned, Lee met Early, Ewell and Rodes in conference after dark, to the north of Gettysburg, near the road leading to Carlisle. He now had information of the arrival of more Federal troops upon the scene of action; that Hancock was in command, and had 8,600 men, under Slocum, in line of battle to the south of Gettysburg, holding the crests of Cemetery ridge and Culp's hill, and thus fully protecting Meade's advance. Lee, in this conference with his subordinates, expressed an earnest desire to attack the Federals at daylight the next day, July 2d, if at all practicable, asking Ewell if he could not, with his corps, attack the enemy's right on the morrow. These Second corps leaders called General Lee's attention to the rugged hilltops already occupied by Federal troops, that loomed before them in the late twilight of a midsummer day, and argued that gradual approach to the Federal position from the westward was more favorable for an attack by the Confederate right. It is reported, by one of these officers, that Lee's next question was, "Perhaps I had better draw you around toward my right, as the line will be very long and thin if you remain here, and the enemy may come down and break through it." Early reports that Ewell then asserted that he could not only hold the ground already in his possession, but that

he could capture Culp's hill and threaten the Federal right; an offer he would have hardly made had he known the formidable character of the rocky ascent to that hill. After this, writes Early, Lee said: "Well, if I attack upon my right, Longstreet will have to make the attack." Then pausing, with head bowed in reflection, he looked up and added: "Longstreet is a very good fighter when he gets in position and gets everything ready, but he is so slow."

After his conference with Ewell, Lee formed his plans for the 2d of July. It was his intention to strike with his right at daylight, or as soon as practicable after that time; this to be followed by Ewell on his left. Returning to his headquarters, Lee met Hill and Longstreet. The latter urged that he withdraw his army from before Gettysburg and place it between Meade and Washington, and thus force the Federal commander to offensive battle. This was but an extension of Lee's second suggestion to Ewell about a concentration on his right. Trusting to Ewell's promise as to what he could do the next day, Lee adhered to the plan he had already adopted, of an assault by both his wings; hoping that by so doing he could defeat the Federal advance before its rear could close up, and bring about its defeat in detail. He then ordered Longstreet to move McLaws and Hood to open the battle on his right, while Hill engaged the center, and repeated his order to Ewell for attacking Culp's hill on the left, but not until he should hear Longstreet's guns and thus be sure of a simultaneous movement and attack.

The divisions of Hood and McLaws, of the First corps, left their camps at Fayetteville in the valley west of the South mountain, on the morning of July 1st, and reached the valley of Willoughby run, northwest of Gettysburg, by midnight of that day, having been retarded by Ewell's wagon train, in charge of Johnson's division, which was on the road in their front. The leading brigade, under Kershaw, bivouacked within two miles of Gettysburg. Pickett's division was left at Chambersburg, in charge of the reserve trains, and Law's brigade at New Guilford. During the night of the 1st Longstreet ordered McLaws to march forward at 4 a. m. of the 2d, but later this was changed to "early in the morning." The same night he ordered Law and Pickett to march to Gettysburg on the 2d.

Lee's official report sets forth the state of affairs confronting him, and his reasons for making battle, in these words:

It had not been intended to deliver a general battle so far from our base of supplies unless attacked, but coming unexpectedly upon the whole Federal army, to withdraw through the mountains with our extensive trains would have been difficult and dangerous. At the same time we were unable to await an attack, as the country was not favorable for collecting supplies in the presence of the enemy, who could restrain our foraging parties by holding the mountain passes with local and other troops. A battle had, therefore, become in a measure unavoidable, and a success already gained gave hope of a favorable issue.

At sunrise of July 2d, less than 10,000 men of the First and Second corps of Meade's army held Cemetery hill, with 8,600, under Slocum, on their right and left, and 9,000 of the Third corps, under Birney and Humphreys, in supporting distance. If Lee had attacked at the rising of the sun, at about half-past 4, as he had expected to do; or at any time before 7 o'clock, he would have found but 27,000 Federals to oppose his assault; but at 7 the Second Federal corps and two divisions of the Fifth reached the field; by 8 another brigade of the Fifth arrived; by 9 two brigades of the Third appeared; and by half-past 10 Meade's strong reserve artillery was in place on Cemetery ridge. By midday another division of the Fifth corps came, while Sedgwick, still far from the field, was at that hour urging forward the 15,000 men of the Sixth corps; arrivals that could have been successively met and defeated in detail, had Ewell followed up the advantages of the day before, at the moment of victory, without taking "counsel of his fears," and relying on the enthusiasm of his well-trying and reliable veterans to "press forward" after a retreating foe.

Lee dispatched his breakfast and was in the saddle before daylight of the 2d, eager to grasp victory from the opportunity that he knew he then had, of falling upon but a portion of the Federal army while the larger part of it was still miles away and but wearily advancing to the field of battle. Before the sun was up, he had an officer on Round Top, looking along the Emmitsburg and Taneytown roads to see whether Federal reinforcements were advancing, and as the morning fully dawned, he swept with his fine glasses, from the Seminary ridge, the Federal lines on Culp's and Cemetery hills, in the mean-

time anxiously watching for the coming of Longstreet's two divisions, those of McLaws and Hood, and for that of Anderson's of Hill's corps, that he might begin the battle on his right at the hour appointed with Ewell. But Anderson did not move until 7, and not until 8 did his skirmishers, under Wilcox, drive in those of the Federal center, and it was 9 before Hill's line of battle, on Seminary ridge, with its right resting on the Emmitsburg road, was ready to advance. Longstreet's movements were still tardier than Hill's. His two divisions did not leave their Willoughby run bivouac until after sunrise, and it was 8 o'clock when his first brigade, Kershaw's of McLaws' division, reached Seminary ridge, where Lee was impatiently waiting—seated on the trunk of a fallen tree consulting a map, writes McLaws—with Longstreet “walking up and down a little way off, apparently in an impatient humor.”

Hood's division followed McLaws, but that intrepid leader had ridden to the front, and joined Lee at his post of observation soon after daylight. Hood thus describes what he saw and heard: “General Lee, with coat buttoned up to the throat, saber belt around his waist, and field glass pending at his side, walked up and down in the shade of large trees near us, halting now and then to observe the enemy. He seemed full of hope, yet at times buried in deep thought.” Lee said to Hood: “The enemy is here, and if we do not whip him, he will whip us.”

Longstreet had joined Lee in the early morning, but hours passed before any of his men appeared, and victory, which the fighting ancients pictured with wings, took her flight to the ridge held by the army of the Potomac. Longstreet importuned Lee to move around to the right, but when the latter would not agree to change his plan, Longstreet asked that the attack on the right be delayed until the arrival of Pickett's division. It was characteristic of Longstreet, as of most stubborn men, that he always desired to follow a plan of his own suggestion, rather than that of his commander-in-chief, and so, with dogged persistence, he continued to urge his own plan upon Lee, but without avail, as he had determined to attack as soon as Longstreet's men should arrive. His advance appeared at about 8 o'clock, having consumed three hours of the day in a march of from two to four miles. The head of his column was at once

turned southward, behind Hill's corps posted on Seminary ridge, and halted near the Black Horse tavern, where the Hagerstown road crosses Marsh creek. Hill did not get into his assigned position until about 9.

The most opportune time for the assault had passed, but there was yet time to rout Meade's left, if the attack were promptly made. The Federals had not yet occupied the two commanding heights of Round Top and Little Round Top, that dominated their left on the south, and Meade's army in hand was held within a narrow compass on the Cemetery and Culp hills. Lee pointed out to McLaws, on the map, the position on the Emmitsburg road, at right angles to that near the peach orchard, that he desired him to occupy, telling him to gain that, if possible, without being seen by the enemy. Longstreet interposed, directing McLaws to place his line parallel to the turnpike. Lee promptly made reply: "No, General, no; I want his position perpendicular to the Emmitsburg road," thus clearly indicating his design to move squarely upon the Federal left. Shortly after 9, Lee informed Hill that Longstreet would thus take position, nearly perpendicular to Hill's line, and drive the enemy toward Gettysburg. After having given these orders for immediate attack by Longstreet and Hill, Lee rode to Ewell's position, on his left, finding the latter still confident that he could turn the Federal right on Culp's hill with Johnson, while Early, who had been waiting in line since 2 o'clock in the morning, was ready to advance on Cemetery hill, from the streets of Gettysburg. After waiting impatiently, with Ewell, for Longstreet to begin the attack, Lee rode back, at about noon, to Seminary ridge, to ascertain what had detained Longstreet. The latter, in his official report, after stating the orders he had received from Lee to attack, adds: "Fearing that my force was too weak to venture to make an attack, I delayed until General Law's brigade joined its division (Hood's)." Law arrived about noon, after a march of 24 miles in the preceding half day, and at 1 o'clock Longstreet began his forward movement. Two hours were consumed in marches and countermarches, in a vain effort to conceal the movement from the Federal signal station on Round Top, and it was about 4 in the afternoon before the corps was in position for beginning the attack.

At an early hour on this same July 2d, Meade directed the preparation of an order for the retreat of his army, and his corps commanders were in council considering this, when Longstreet's guns, in the mid-afternoon, called them to their posts of duty and the defense of their left. Just at that time Sickles, of his own motion, pushed his corps forward on the Emmitsburg road and took position between the peach orchard and Little Round Top, thus facing Longstreet's movement under McLaws. Hood, farther to the right, was expected to fall on the left flank of the Federal line and force it toward Gettysburg.

Meade's lines at this time extended from his left, near Round Top, almost due north along the western side of the Taneytown road to Cemetery hill, then curved to the eastward around the front of that hill and the crest of Culp's hill, with his extreme right turned in reverse to the westward. One corps was on his left, the Second under Hancock in the center, and the Twelfth and the fragments of the First and Eleventh held the right on the Cemetery and Culp hills. The Fifth was in reserve in the valley of Rock creek, on the road leading southeast toward Baltimore. Longstreet and Sickles now confronted each other, each with about 12,000 men.

Law ascertained, as he advanced, that the Federal left flank was unprotected, and he and Hood urged Longstreet to move farther to the right and occupy Round Top, and thus turn the Federal left, rather than advance along the Emmitsburg road, which was commanded by the Federal artillery, while its infantry was well protected by the stone fences and outcropping rocks along its position. Longstreet's reply to the thrice-repeated request and protest was, "General Lee's orders are to attack up the Emmitsburg road." So the advance began, against a furious cannonade in which Hood was wounded, attacking Sickles' left in the rocky and brush-tangled point known as the Devil's Den. Law took his assigned place, and pressing boldly forward drove the Federal brigades from their position, which they held with great tenacity, and captured three pieces of cannon. His right then crossed the northern slope of Round Top and advanced toward Little Round Top, while his center rushed to gain that important point in the field of contest; but Warren promptly led a brigade and a battery,

from the Fifth corps, and gaining the summit of this little mountain before Law, drove him back to the shelter of Devil's Den.

Longstreet's chief of artillery, Col. E. P. Alexander, got the better of the Federal artillery in the peach orchard, and McLaws pressed rapidly forward, as soon as Longstreet would let him go, took issue with Sickles, and drove his men back, over the stone fences at the peach orchard, in a fierce contest. Alexander joined in the charge with six batteries. Three Federal divisions, numbering 13,000 men, were then sent in quick succession to the aid of Sickles; but these were all forced back with the loss of half their numbers by Longstreet's courageous men, now flushed with success. It was 6 o'clock when the brigades on Hill's right moved up the Emmitsburg road, fell upon Sickles' right and drove it in retreat toward Cemetery ridge. By 7, Meade's left was completely driven back in defeat, and Longstreet's men were pressing forward to a new position at the base of the two little mountains. Three of Hill's brigades were at the same time advancing against Meade's center, but these failed to support, although one of them, under Wilcox, advanced to the very foot of Cemetery ridge and captured eight guns, while another, under Wright, in steady order ascended the long slope, crossing stone fences, and took the very crest of the ridge a little distance south of the Cemetery, where for a short time they were in possession of twenty Federal cannon. Meade's line was cut in two, and had Wright been supported it must have been forced to retreat. Even the brigades that started with him failed to support him, and Hill held his other divisions in line a mile to the rear. Longstreet's bold fight had, undoubtedly, won the day, if Hill's corps had, in its entirety, performed its assigned duty. The writer witnessed, from Seminary ridge, the hurried movement of troops, from Meade's right on Culp's hill and the Cemetery, toward his broken center and left. Fortunately for the Federal commander, just then his Sixth corps, under Sedgwick, arrived upon the field and joined in driving back Wright's advance and checking the tide of defeat which had already set in.

Just before sunset, but after Longstreet's battle was ended and the Federal left re-established, Ewell began his tardy and long-delayed attack, which should have

been a simultaneous one, on the Federal right; and Stonewall Jackson's old division, under Edward Johnson, assaulted Culp's hill, fought its way up its rocky and brushy slope, and captured the first line of Federal intrenchments. Early also advanced, on Ewell's right, under a withering fire of infantry and artillery, overran the Eleventh corps and established himself in the Federal works on the summit of Cemetery hill; but Rodes, on his right, failed to advance, and so rendered no assistance to Early and held back Hill's left, which was to move in concert with Rodes. The Federal right was now reinforced by Hancock, from its center, and Early, flanked on his right, where Rodes should have protected him, was forced to retire. Night fell and ended the bloody conflict on the field of battle, but with Lee still sanguine of success, although he had lost heavily; for he knew that Meade had lost more in proportion. Lee's army was in fine spirits, satisfied that the combats of the day had resulted in their favor, and that a complete victory would have been won had Lee been able to secure a simultaneous attack by his right, his center and his left. Law held the Devil's Den, at the bases of the Round Tops; Johnson held the crest of Culp's hill, nearly around to the flank of the Federal right and the Baltimore road. Wright, in the center, and Early on the left, had broken through the Federal lines, and would doubtless have held the Cemetery ridge had they been adequately supported. Stuart had now arrived on the field, and was ready to still further threaten the Federal left and rear and the road leading toward Baltimore. Lee's artillery, a body, in its personnel, leading and equipment, of unsurpassed excellence, was in a good position and ready for duty.

Meade, disheartened by the results of the day's contests and alarmed for the safety of his army, was ready to retreat. Calling his twelve chief subordinates in council, they discussed the situation. Three of his corps had been badly shattered; 20,000 of his veterans were missing; but two of his army corps remained intact. Hancock's chief of staff records, "It was indeed a gloomy hour." The councilors were greatly divided in their opinions, and the only conclusion reached, after a long conference, was to remain another day and await Lee's assault. During the night Dahlgren, a Federal scout,

who had waylaid, in the Cumberland valley, a courier from Davis to Lee and captured his dispatches, reached Meade's headquarters. These dispatches showed that, through fear of a threatened Federal attack on Richmond, it would be impossible to comply with Lee's urgent request for concentrating a force in Culpeper, under Beauregard, and threatening Washington. This information relieved Meade's apprehensions about the safety of the capital which he had been charged to guard, and nerved him to hold on at Gettysburg for another day. The weight of testimony, especially that of President Lincoln and Secretary of War Stanton, shows that but for this timely arrival Meade would have fallen back that night to the line of Pipe creek, and there halted in defensive position, covering the approaches to Baltimore and Washington.

Lee determined to renew the attack on the 3d of July, as he had first planned it. Longstreet, now reinforced by Pickett's division, which had arrived from the Cumberland valley during the afternoon of the 2d, was to again attack the Federal left, advancing from the position he had gained at the Devil's Den; while Ewell was at the same time to assail the Federal right, after reinforcing Johnson with two brigades from Rodes and one from Early. Hill was again to advance from the center. When the morning of the 3d came, it was found that the Federal Fifth corps, supported by the Sixth, had during the night taken possession of the Round Tops, with both infantry and artillery strongly intrenched in that naturally strong position which dominated Lee's right and protected Meade's left. This wise action of the Federal commander forced Lee to change his plan. Ewell's artillery was already opening the way for his assault, and delay was dangerous. Lee promptly ordered Longstreet to organize a column of attack against Meade's center on Cemetery ridge, and breaking that to join Ewell by taking the Federal right in reverse. Hood and McLaws were to engage the Federal left, and if opportunity offered, to attack it. The two columns of attack by Longstreet were made up of Pickett's division on the right, and Pettigrew's (Heth's) division of Hill's corps on the left. Wilcox and Perry, of Anderson's division, were to guard Pickett's right, while Trimble, with the brigades of Lane and Scales, was to guard Pettigrew's

left. The rest of Hill's command was held in reserve, to be used as occasion might require. Ewell was already in hot and close contention on Culp's hill, when Lee gave the order to advance, confident that his column of attack could break through Meade's line where Wright had broken through it the day before, and then aid Ewell in crushing the Federal right. In person he pointed out to Longstreet a clump of trees, near the middle of Hancock's line, as marking the point to be attacked. From his position that part of the Federal line did not seem to be a strong one, except for the stone fences that bordered the roads and separated the fields, and thus gave protection to Hancock's men.

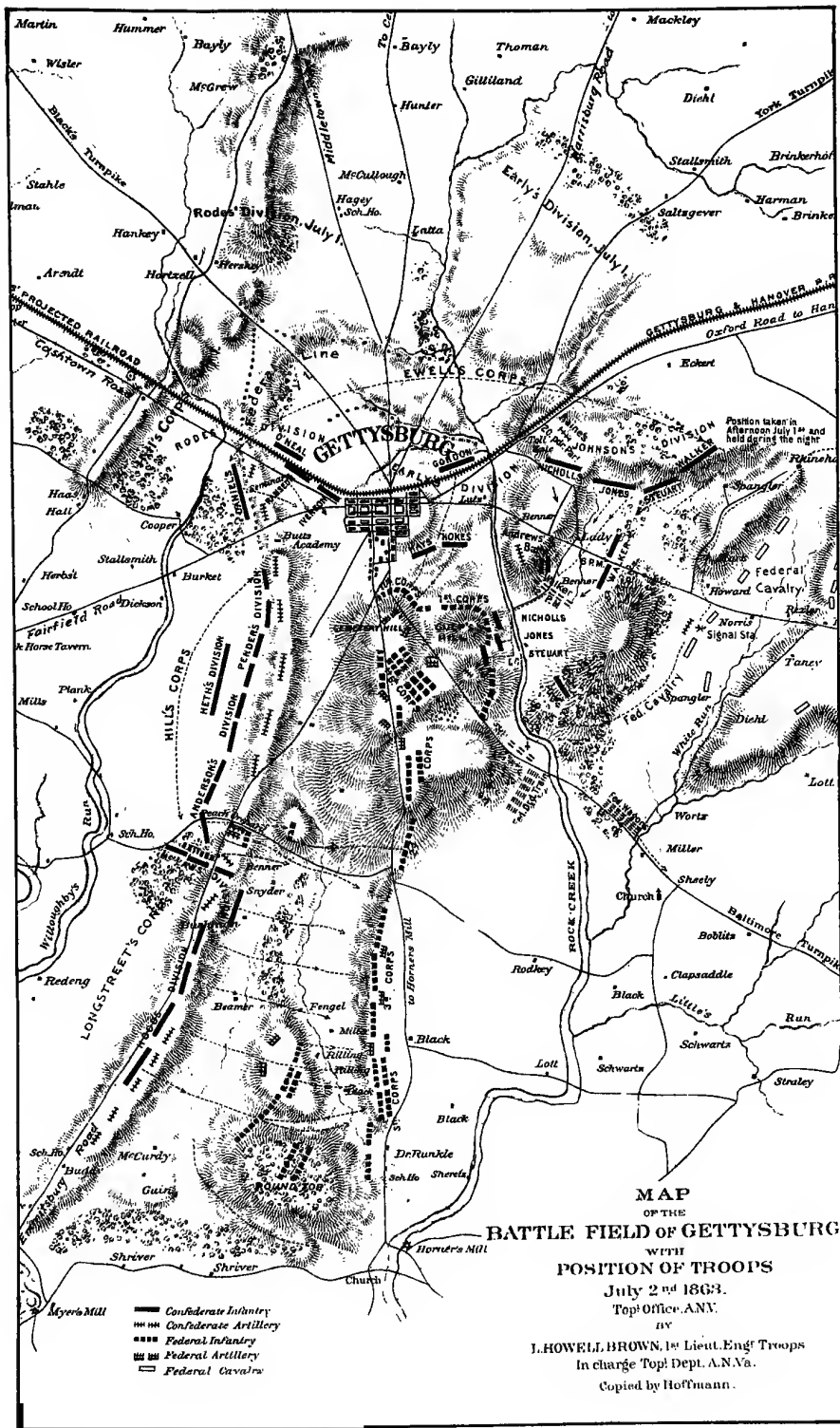
Lee prepared for the assault by opening on the Federal lines with masses of artillery. At 10 a. m. Alexander was in position with seventy-five guns, on the swell west of the Emmitsburg road; and R. Lindsey Walker with his sixty-three, from the Seminary ridge farther to the northward. It was expected that their heavy concentrated fire would silence the batteries on Cemetery ridge and open a safer way for Longstreet's assault, which these same batteries were to follow up, keeping pace with the infantry, protecting their flanks, and joining in the final onslaught, as they had at Chancellorsville.

By 9 o'clock, Pickett and Pettigrew were in line, on Seminary ridge, and Ewell had made his desperate attack on Culp's hill, from which he was driven back with great loss, and left in no condition to resume the offensive and again make a simultaneous attack with Longstreet. At 12 o'clock the assaulting columns were advanced to the edge of the woods, in rear of the Confederate guns, ready to move forward at the word of command, which Longstreet states that he requested Colonel Alexander to give at his discretion. The artillery did not open until 1 o'clock, when it drew upon it the fire of seventy Federal cannon, and a mighty conflict, between great guns, raged across the 1,400 yards of interval between the opposing ridges. The long bolts from the Whitworth guns of the Confederates, on Seminary ridge, cut wide gaps in the Federal lines on Cemetery ridge; and the well-aimed shells from the same quarter wrought havoc as they fell within the enemy's lines, but these quickly closed up, in obedience to orders. Flame and smoke rose from the long lines of the opposing

ridges; the thunder of the cannon was deafening to the ears of all within miles of the conflict, and soon a dense volume of smoke settled down between the opposing armies, concealing each from the other. Gen. Francis A. Walker, Hancock's chief of staff, describes the effect of the Confederate artillery in these words:

The whole space behind Cemetery ridge was in a moment rendered uninhabitable. General headquarters were broken up; the supply and reserve ammunition trains were driven out; motley hordes of camp followers poured down the Baltimore pike or spread over the fields to the rear. Upon every side caissons exploded; horses were struck down by the hundreds; the air was filled with flying missiles; shells tore up the ground and then bounded for another and perhaps more deadly flight, or burst above the crouching troops and sent their ragged fragments down in deadly showers. Never had a storm so dreadful burst upon mortal man.

After enduring for a half hour the withering fire of the Confederate batteries, Meade retired eighteen of his guns from the Cemetery, when Alexander sent a note to Pickett, saying, "If you are coming at all, you must come at once." Seeking his corps commander, Pickett said, "General, shall I advance?" Longstreet made no reply. Pickett saluted, and in firm voice said, "Sir, I shall lead my division forward;" and he promptly ordered the charge of his own three brigades of Virginians and Heth's four of North Carolinians, Tennesseans, Mississippians and Alabamians, under Pettigrew. These columns moved slowly from the woods that had concealed them, toward the Emmitsburg road. Trimble, with two brigades of North Carolinians, marched in the rear of Pettigrew's right. Wilcox had been ordered to guard Pickett's right with his Alabama brigade. Now 12,000 veteran infantrymen were marching, with steady step, across the 1,400 yards of open country between the contending armies. Once clear of the Confederate batteries, Pickett diverged his division to the left and moved toward the salient in Hancock's line. For a time the two opposing armies were silent spectators of this sublimely heroic advance, and not until half the ground to be gone over had been covered, did the batteries from Cemetery ridge and Round Top open on the Confederate assault, which then changed its steady pace, first to a double-quick, then to a rushing charge, closing up its ranks as they were broken by shot or shell, crossing the strong post and rail fences on the Emmitsburg road,



MAP
 OF THE
BATTLE FIELD OF GETTYSBURG
 WITH
POSITION OF TROOPS
 July 2nd 1863.
 Top Officer. AN.Y.
 BY
 I. HOWELL BROWN, 1st Lieut. Eng^s Troops
 In charge Top Dept. A.N.Va.
 Copied by Hoffmann.

and unflinchingly facing the musketry and the canister of Meade's guns.

To General Lee's amazement, his batteries did not support this movement by engaging those of Meade. He did not know that the hour of furious and rapid cannonade that preceded the charge, had nearly exhausted his artillery ammunition, and his on-rushing columns were now meeting the fire of both infantry and artillery without the support even of the guns that were to have gone forward in the attacking column. Alexander had ordered nine howitzers to move with Pickett to the very front of the battle, but these had disappeared without his orders. Securing fifteen guns that still had ammunition, Alexander moved these up behind Pickett's division.

Firing diagonally upon his left, the Federal guns, from the Cemetery, wrought sad havoc in Pettigrew's line, and Trimble's men, with quickening pace, were soon mingled with those of Pettigrew's right, which a Vermont brigade, by bold attack, forced toward his left. The guns from Round Top secured an enfilade on the Confederate columns, but these pressed forward to within 100 yards of the wall held by the Federals, when they began filing to the rear. With rapid fire and wild yell, Pettigrew's right, Pickett's left and Trimble mingling in a charge, rushed upon and took possession of the stone wall held by the enemy, capturing prisoners and silencing batteries. Pouring in, from right and left, the Federals then engaged in a hand-to-hand fight with the heroic Confederates who had so courageously broken their center, and a fearful contest and carnage ensued, where the men of equal valor strove for the mastery. Nearly every field officer present, on either side, fell among the dead and wounded men of their commands.

Pickett's second line, Armistead's Virginia brigade, rushed to the stone wall almost as soon as the line that preceded it, and for some minutes his men were masters of the deserted front. The commander of a Federal brigade, who had been forced back under a heavy fire, says of this supreme moment, "The enemy was rapidly gaining a foothold; organization was mostly lost; in the confusion commands were useless, while a disposition on the part of the men to fall back a pace or two at a time to load gave the line a retiring direction."

For the time the grand assault was successful, and

Meade's center was completely broken, and if Lee's artillery had been at hand, as ordered, Pickett would doubtless have held the captured works and forced the Federals from Cemetery ridge. A fresh line of Federal infantry soon advanced along the crest and fired, but the Confederates drove these back. Then Armistead, with his hat on the point of his uplifted saber as a guide, leaped over the stone wall, shouting, "Boys, we must use the cold steel. Who will follow?" Every man obeyed the call, and the charge reached to the crest of the ridge, to seize the Federal guns; but there the leader fell, and his men retired behind the stone wall, anxiously awaiting reinforcements. Lieutenant Finley (now, 1898, Rev. George W. Finley, D. D.), looking back over the track of Pickett's bold advance, was surprised to see it marked by so few dead or wounded men. At this critical juncture an unknown voice, from the ranks, called out, "Retreat!" and many turned to flee; most of them to fall under the Federal fire that followed after them. The reassured Federals swarmed in from every side and captured the 4,000 Confederates that, unsupported, were still holding the stone fences.

Pickett's columns had been moving, for at least a half hour, before Longstreet ordered Wilcox, supported by Perry, to move forward to the support of Pickett's right. These were only in time to meet the retreating fragments of Pickett's right and the fierce Federal fire that followed them. Anderson's division, of Hill's corps, stood ready to advance on Pettigrew's left, thus extending Pickett's line in that direction; McLaws was also ready to move on Wilcox's right, but Longstreet gave no orders. Had these steady veterans become the right and the left arms of Pickett's famous charge, Lee would, in all human probability, have not only held what Pickett won, but would have routed Meade's right and left from his widely broken center.

Lee, with the calmness of a trained soldier, sat his horse, on Seminary ridge, amid Alexander's batteries, and watched the charge and repulse of his heroic veterans. Colonel Fremantle, of the British army, writing from the standpoint of an eye-witness, says: "General Lee was perfectly sublime. He was engaged in rallying and encouraging the broken troops and was riding about a little in front of the wood, quite alone, . . . his face,

which is always placid and cheerful, did not show any signs of the slightest disappointment, care, or annoyance, and he was addressing to every soldier he met a few words of encouragement; such as, 'All this will come right in the end; we will talk it over afterward; but in the meantime all good men must rally.' . . . He spoke to all the men that passed him, and the slightly wounded he exhorted to bind up their hurts and take a musket in this emergency. Very few failed to answer his appeal, and I saw badly wounded men take off their hats and cheer him." To General Wilcox, who, in tones of sadness, mingled with vexation, told him of the condition of his brigade, Fremantle says, "Lee replied: 'Never mind, General; all this has been my fault. It is I that have lost this fight, and you must help me out of it the best way you can.'" These things moved this onlooking English colonel to conclude: "It was impossible to look at him or to listen to him without feeling the strongest admiration."

A Federal cavalry charge on the Confederate right, during the afternoon, was repulsed with loss to the attacking troopers. On the left, Stuart repeatedly charged Gregg's cavalry, in attempts to gain the Baltimore turnpike, but without success.

With his repulsed troops rallied along the lines from which they had advanced to the fierce battle, and with his artillery replenished with ammunition, Lee awaited, on Seminary ridge, a counterstroke from Meade; but the Federal commander was in no condition for such an effort, and was more than satisfied that he had been able to hold his strong lines against Lee's furious assaults. The slaughter in both armies had been great, and each was satisfied to face the other in silent defiance and await developments. Of Meade's 95,000 in the field of action, 23,000 had fallen; of Lee's 58,000, including his cavalry that had participated in the fight, over 20,000 lay dead or wounded, or were missing. Some of the latter were stragglers who afterward returned. Among the dead leaders of the Confederates were Generals Armistead, Garnett, Pender, Barksdale and Semmes; Archer was left a prisoner, and Kemper, Pettigrew, Hood, Trimble, Heth, Scales, G. T. Anderson, Jenkins and Hampton were severely wounded.

In his official report, Lee writes of this day: "The

severe loss sustained by the army, and the reduction of its ammunition, rendered another attempt to dislodge the enemy unadvisable, and it was therefore determined to withdraw." But he was in no haste to do this in such a way as to suffer damage to his command or to his trains. He spent the whole of July 4th awaiting Meade's pleasure for an attack, which the latter, in the wisdom he had learned during three days of contention, did not make. After caring for his wounded and burying all his dead within reach, Lee started his trains for the Potomac, by the great highway leading southwest from Gettysburg, through Fairfield, across the South mountain by Monterey Springs, and through Hagerstown to Williamsport. These he followed with his army during the night of the 4th, leaving Ewell, as a rear guard, in front of Gettysburg until the forenoon of the 5th; and by thus holding on he forced Meade to follow in pursuit by circuitous routes to passes of the Blue ridge (South mountain), farther to the southwest. The disciplined courage of Lee's army was unbroken, and his veterans were as ready as ever to accept any offered battle. They knew, as well as did their leaders, why failures had come at Gettysburg. The Federals had all possible tactical advantages. They had strength of position, superiority of numbers, and abundant supplies of ammunition. The Confederates mourned the losses they had sustained, but were cheered with the reflection that they retired from the famous battlefield of Gettysburg with their previous honors well sustained.

As usual, after great battles during the Confederate war, heavy rains followed that of Gettysburg, swelling all the tributaries of the Potomac, making that stream impassable at the Williamsport ford, and endangering Lee's pontoon bridge at Falling Waters. Imboden, withdrawing from the Cumberland valley, covered with intrenchments Lee's trains concentrated at Williamsport, manned his works with several batteries of artillery, and stood ready to repulse any cavalry attacks that might be made upon him.

As he fell back, Lee sent forward his engineers to select a new line of battle covering the approaches to Williamsport and Falling Waters. An admirable position was found near Hagerstown, which met with General Lee's approbation, when he arrived on the 6th and rode over

it. He at once ordered his army into this chosen position, and his men began to throw up rude intrenchments and look with grim satisfaction at the topographic difficulties in the way, should Meade venture offensive battle. The Federal cavalry made some attacks on Lee's trains as they were passing through the eastern defiles of the South mountain, but these were quickly repulsed by the train guards, and Stuart held the large body of Federal cavalry in check by his tireless covering of the rear and flanks of Lee's retiring movement.

Meade, with 47,000 effectives, about the half of his original army, gave Lee a wide berth and cautiously marched due south to Frederick and Middletown, thus placing himself on the National road between Lee and Washington and Baltimore. To his army 11,000 veterans were added, also large numbers of militia that had responded to Lincoln's call when Lee invaded Pennsylvania. Yielding to urgent orders, from Washington, that he should at once destroy Lee's army, which was vainly supposed to be shattered and in full retreat, Meade took the highway that McClellan had taken the previous September, crossed the South mountain at Boonsboro, on the 11th of July, and after having carefully bridged the Antietam, appeared, on the 12th, in front of Lee's now well protected defensive position, and took up a line which he at once proceeded to fortify. This done, he called a council of war and found that his subordinates were unwilling to attack Lee's lines, well knowing that such an attempt could result only in defeat and disaster.

On the appearance of Meade's advance, on the 11th, Lee issued a stirring address to his soldiers, in which, among other things, he said:

After long and trying marches, endured with the fortitude that has ever characterized the soldiers of the army of Northern Virginia, you have penetrated the country of our enemies, and recalled to the defense of their own soil those who were engaged in the invasion of ours. You have fought a fierce and sanguinary battle, which, if not attended with the success that has hitherto crowned your efforts, was marked by the same heroic spirit that has commanded the respect of your enemies, the gratitude of your country and the admiration of mankind. Once more you are called upon to meet the army from which you have won on so many fields a name that will never die. . . . Let every soldier remember that on his courage and fidelity depends all that makes life worth having—the freedom of his country, the honor of his people, and the security of his home.

By the 13th the Potomac had fallen to within its banks,

and during that night the Second corps forded it at Williamsport, while the First and Third began crossing the pontoon at Falling Waters, a few miles lower down the river. Stuart so engaged the attention of Meade that the latter was not aware of Lee's crossing until it was well-nigh done. The Federal cavalry pressed against Hill's rear guard, composed of Heth's division, but to be repulsed with loss. The most serious damage to the Confederates was the death of the heroic Pettigrew in the rear-guard skirmish. By noonday of the 14th the three army corps were again in Virginia, and the Federal army was left in amazement at the skill with which Lee had withdrawn from their front and crossed a great river, practically without loss. It was evident that there was no fight left in the Federal army, and Meade was quite content to remain north of the Potomac and carefully watch between Lee and Washington.

Before recrossing the Potomac, and while awaiting an attack from Meade, Lee wrote again, urging President Davis to gather an army, under Beauregard, and threaten Washington, as he had persistently asked should be done before and during his invasion of Pennsylvania. He asserted that he was not discouraged, had not lost faith in Providence or in his army, the fortitude of which had not been shaken, and that the Federal army, though it had been much shattered, could easily be reinforced, while he could expect no addition to his numbers; hence the necessity for an immediate demonstration toward Washington.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE AUTUMN AND WINTER CAMPAIGNS OF 1863.

DREADING to follow Lee and unable to resist important orders from Washington for an advance, Meade, after Lee returned to Virginia, recrossed the South mountain and then followed McClellan's route of the previous autumn, across the Potomac into Piedmont Virginia, guarding the passes of the Blue ridge, as he advanced, against attacks from Lee in the Valley. Lee, on the alert, anticipated this movement, and, on the 24th of July, placed his army across Meade's thin line of advance, in front of Culpeper Court House. The necessities at other points put a stop to military operations for a time in Virginia. Portions of Meade's army were called to New York city, to suppress riots and enforce the drafts to recruit the Federal armies. Lee was embarrassed by the calls for soldiers for other fields, after the fall of Vicksburg, which not only cut the Confederacy in twain, but opened to Federal gunboats and steamboats, for the transportation of troops and supplies, the thousands of miles of navigable waters in the Mississippi basin.

With the Trans-Mississippi portion of the Confederacy isolated, there only remained in the control of the Confederacy central and southern portions of the Atlantic highlands—the Appalachians and their slopes. The combined land power and sea power of the Federal government completely surrounded and enclosed the remnant of territory now left in the control of the Confederate government. Only through the port of Wilmington was there an outlet to the outer world, and only through that single port could supplies come from abroad to eke out the scanty stores of the Confederacy. The executive was besieged by calls for the defense of vital points, threatened from all directions. Rosecrans was advancing into the Great valley in east Tennessee. The fate of Charleston was but a question of a short time. Environed by such gloomy surroundings and threatenings, Lee

wrote to President Davis, from "Camp Orange," on the 8th of August, thanking him for his efforts to supply the wants of his army, commending the proclamation he had issued to the people, and hoping that would "stir up their virtue . . . that they may see their duty and perform it;" cheerfully and hopefully adding, "Nothing is wanted but that their fortitude should equal their bravery to insure the success of our cause. We must expect reverses, even defeats. They are sent to teach us wisdom and prudence, to call forth greater energies, and to prevent our falling into greater disasters. Our people have only to be true and united, to bear manfully the misfortunes incident to war, and all will come right in the end." After mentioning the proneness of men to censure those who do not meet their expectations, Lee said: "The general remedy for the want of success in a military commander is removal. This is natural, and, in many instances, proper. For, no matter what may be the ability of an officer, if he loses the confidence of his troops, disaster must sooner or later ensue."

The general commanding further stated, that since his return from Pennsylvania he had been intending to propose that another commander should be selected for his army; he had noted the discontent of the newspapers at the result of his campaign; did not know how far such feeling might exist in the army, as he had had no evidence of it from officers or men, but it was fair to suppose that it did exist, and, as success is a necessity, nothing should be risked to secure it. He continued:

I therefore, in all sincerity, request Your Excellency to supply my place. I do this with the more earnestness because no one is more aware than myself of my inabilities for the duties of my position. I cannot even accomplish what I myself desire. How can I fulfill the expectations of others? In addition, I sensibly feel the growing failure of my bodily strength. I have not yet recovered from the attack I experienced the past spring. I am becoming more and more incapable of exertion, and am thus prevented from making the personal examinations and giving the personal supervision to the operations in the field which I feel necessary. I am so dull that in making use of the eyes of others I am frequently misled. Everything, therefore, points to the advantages to be derived from a new commander, and I the more anxiously urge the matter upon Your Excellency from my belief that a younger and abler man than myself can readily be obtained. I know that he will have as gallant and brave an army as ever existed to second his efforts, and it would be the happiest day of my life to see at its head a worthy leader—one that could accomplish more than I could perform and all that I have

wished. I hope Your Excellency will attribute my request to the true reason—the desire to serve my country and to do all in my power to insure the success of her righteous cause.

In reply, President Davis wrote, among other things:

I am truly sorry to know that you still feel the effects of the illness you suffered last spring, and can readily understand the embarrassment you experience in using the eyes of others, having been so accustomed to making your own reconnoissances. . . . But suppose, my dear friend, that I were to admit, with all their implications, the points which you present, where am I to find that new commander who is to possess the greater ability which you believe to be required? . . . To ask me to substitute you by some one in my judgment more fit to command, or who would possess more of the confidence of the army, or of reflecting men of the country, is to demand an impossibility.

Lee's morning reports show that by the 10th of August, by returns from hospitals and elsewhere, his army had increased to 58,600 men. On the 9th of September, he detached Longstreet, with two of his divisions, to help Bragg, in Tennessee, keep back Rosecrans from marching farther up the Great valley toward Virginia, leaving with himself some 46,000 men. Longstreet wrote, in farewell to Lee, speaking for himself and his corps: "Our affections for you are stronger, if it is possible for them to be stronger, than our admiration for you."

On the 13th of September, Meade advanced, from beyond the Rappahannock, to learn what Lee was doing; the latter awaited an attack in the position he had chosen and partially fortified, in front of Orange Court House, overlooking the Rapidan. Meade took a distant look at the preparations made for him, and then withdrew to camps in Culpeper.

After learning of the battle at Chickamauga, Lee, on the 25th, wrote pleasantly to Longstreet:

My whole heart and soul have been with you and your brave corps in your late battle. It was natural to hear of Longstreet and Hill (D. H.) charging side by side, and pleasing to find the armies of the east and west vying with each other in valor and devotion to their country. . . . Finish the work before you, my dear general, and return to me; I want you badly, and you cannot get back too soon.

On the 9th of October, Lee again took the offensive and crossed the Rapidan to attack Meade, taking a concealed and circuitous route, hoping to flank him and bring him to battle on the plains of Culpeper; but the Federal commander, who professed to have marched all the way from Gettysburg seeking a battle,

promptly retreated during the night of the 10th, to beyond the Rappahannock. Lee then tried by another flank movement, by way of the Fauquier Springs and Warrenton, to bring on an engagement on the plains of Fauquier; but while Lee was halting to ration his troops, Meade hastened to the south side of the Orange & Alexandria railroad, by way of Bealeton, then took the road still farther to the southward, leading through Brentsville toward Alexandria. The two armies now engaged in a race, at times within sight of each other, on opposite sides of the railroad; Meade hastening to escape Lee, and Lee hurrying to intercept Meade and bring him to battle.

As he passed through Brentsville, Meade detached a portion of Warren's corps and sent it across to Bristoe Station, to guard his flank from attack by the highway from Lee's route that there crossed the railroad. This covering force was adroitly concealed in the cuts and behind the fills of the railway at Bristoe Station. A. P. Hill, leading Lee's advance, sent Cooke's superb North Carolina brigade to the same point, from the northward without advanced skirmishers. As these approached the station, Warren's men met them, with unexpected volleys, and drove the brigade back in confusion, with a loss of nearly 1,400 men. Lee met Hill with stern rebuke for his imprudence, then sadly directed him to gather his wounded and bury his dead. This disaster, at the head of the column, and the failure of Ewell to close up on Hill, gave check to Lee's advance, which enabled Meade to make good his escape to the fortifications at Centreville, on the northern side of Bull run. Lee followed to the vicinity of Manassas Junction and then retraced his steps to the Rappahannock, subsequently saying, in his report concerning this campaign:

Nothing prevented my continuing in his (Meade's) front but the destitute condition of the men, thousands of whom are barefooted, a greater number partially shod, and nearly all without overcoats, blankets or warm clothing. I think the sublimest sight of the war was the cheerfulness and alacrity exhibited by this army in the pursuit of the enemy under all the trials and privations to which it was exposed.

Stuart, with his usual vigilance and daring, covered the fords on either side of the railroad, and two of Early's brigades were left on the intrenched trap-dyke hill, on the northern bank of the Rappahannock, at the railroad

bridge, which had been destroyed, as a tête-de-pont to the pontoon Lee had there laid. In the midst of a sudden and heavy rain, late in the evening of November 7th, Meade, seizing this opportunity, made a rush upon and captured these two brigades, before help could reach them, securing 1,600 prisoners, eight flags and several guns.

After Lee had reached the southern bank of the Rappahannock, everything indicated that his army would remain in Culpeper for some time. Writing to his wife he said:

I moved yesterday into a nice pine thicket, and Perry is today engaged in constructing a chimney in front of my tent, which will make it warm and comfortable. . . . I am glad you have some socks for the army. Send them to me. They will come safely. Tell the girls to send all they can. I wish they could make some shoes, too. We have thousands of barefooted men. There is no news. General Meade, I believe, is repairing the railroad, and I presume will come on again. If I could only get some shoes and clothes for the men I would save him the trouble.

The disaster at the bridge-head broke up all this, and Lee again retired with his army beyond the Rapidan, and put his men in winter quarters on the sunny side of the "little mountains of Orange," finding another dense pine thicket, on the mountain slope eastward from Orange Court House, where he fixed his headquarters for the winter.

The winter quiet of Lee's camps was rudely disturbed by Meade when he began his Mine Run campaign, on the 26th of November, by ordering the First and Fifth corps to cross the Rapidan at the Culpeper mine ford, near the mouth of the Wilderness run, the boundary between Orange and Spottsylvania counties, to be followed by the Second corps crossing at the Germanna ford, a few miles further up the river, and the Third and Sixth corps, that were to cross still higher up the stream, expecting these three strong columns of attack to converge upon the old turnpike and the plank road, both leading to Orange Court House, and turn the right of Lee's encampments. Meade found it no easy matter to overcome the steep banks and the chilly waters of the Rapidan, and unexpectedly lost a day in the beginning of his movement. His Third corps moved too far to the north to strike its ordered ford, and on the 27th, Johnson's division of Ewell's corps repulsed its attempted crossing.

Stuart's sleepless vigilance gave Lee ample time to bring Hill from his left to Ewell on his right, and the two, advancing eastward to meet Meade, quickly found an admirable defensive line along Mine run, of the Rapidan, which flows directly northward, in a deep stream valley, crossing all the roads, and not far eastward from the right of Lee's encampments. The weather was intensely cold, but this only added to the vigor of Lee's poorly-clad veterans in fortifying their line with material from the adjacent forests and fences, warming themselves by labor and huge fires, so that when Meade appeared in their front on the 28th, they were ready to receive him in a strong line of battle, well punctuated with 150 guns, Johnson, in the meantime, holding the Third corps in engagement along the Rapidan. Finding a front attack uninviting, Meade sent Warren with his Second corps and a part of the Sixth in an effort to turn Lee's right, while Sedgwick thought he had found a weak place from which to attack Lee's left.

Warren took 26,000 men for his movement, which began early on the morning of the 30th; but when he reached the vicinity of Lee's right, he found that his coming had been anticipated, and that during the previous night the Confederates had there thrown up earth and timber works and planted artillery. Driven back with loss, he retired, and as nothing had come of Sedgwick's attempt, and the cold was increasing in intensity, Meade withdrew, in disgust, on the night of December 2d, across the Rapidan to his previous encampments in the vicinity of Brandy Station; not having had the courage, with his greatly superior and far better appointed force, to attack his staunch and ever-ready opponent.

After the Mine Run campaign, Lee's army was permitted to remain undisturbed in its cantonments in Orange county during the remainder of the winter of 1863-64, picketing 20 miles of the front of the Rapidan, from where Ewell's right rested on that river, near the mouth of Mine run, on the east to near Liberty mills, where the highway leading from Gordonsville, by way of Madison Court House, to New Market in the valley, crosses that stream on the west. The Orange & Alexandria railroad, passing between the camps, connected Lee with his base of supplies at Gordonsville, only a few miles away. Ewell established his headquarters at "Morton hall,"

the country seat of Hon. Jere. Morton, near the middle of the encampment of his corps, which was mainly along the waters of Mountain run, and the tributaries of Mine run from the west. Lee betook himself again to his pine thicket.

Here, in the county of Orange, Lee's army contended, during the long and severe winter of 1863-64, with foes more difficult to overcome than Federal soldiery. These were want of food and want of clothing, which they met and endured, with heroic fortitude, in the log cabins that they constructed from the trees of the surrounding forests and on beds of straw, mainly without blankets, but fortunately with abundant supplies of fuel near at hand. The rations were reduced to a minimum; a quarter of a pound of pork and a scant portion of meal, or flour, per day, to a man—and even this was sometimes wanting. A depreciated currency added an enormous value, in paper dollars, to all the necessaries of life, and the high tide of starvation prices prevailed everywhere, and especially in the army, where the pay, of even officers of the highest grade, was scarcely sufficient to meet the most common wants. Corn meal was \$50 a bushel; beans, \$60; bacon, \$8 and sugar \$20 a pound. The redeeming features of these days of gloom and suffering were the bright shining of the heroic virtues, not only of the men but of the women and children of the Confederacy, and the steadfast faithfulness of all the negroes, most of them slaves, who, in quiet submission to home authority, cultivated the fields, and by the arts of handicraft helped to support the people of the Confederacy and their armies. Lee not only dwelt among his men, in simple fashion, but fared as they fared, saying, when luxuries were sent him, as they often were, and which he invariably sent to the sick and wounded in hospitals, "I am content to share the rations of my men."

The luster of the heroic virtues of the army of Northern Virginia was brightened and heightened by their sublimer faith. A marked spirit of devotion characterized every portion of it. From nearly every tent and cabin could be heard the voice of prayer and the singing of hymns of devotion. Spacious, though rude, log chapels were constructed by willing hands, for religious services, and the country churches within and near the camps were utilized for like holy purposes. Not only army chap-

lains, but the best and ablest of the preachers of the Gospel from all accessible parts of the Confederacy, ministered in these rude army churches to the soul-hunger of Lee's reverent, and most of them God-serving officers and men.

On the 6th of February, 1864, Meade sent a division to Morton's ford, near Ewell's right, to again try the winter temper of Lee's veterans. It was met with the old spirit and driven back across the Rapidan with considerable loss. Early in March, Kilpatrick and Dahlgren crossed their Federal cavalry at Ely's ford, of the Rapidan, and raided southward, through Spottsylvania toward Richmond, following the great highways leading in that direction. Dahlgren's special object was to burn the capital of the Confederacy, capture its officials, release and arm the Federal prisoners there held, and work general havoc. He was met, not far from that city, and repulsed, losing his own life, and failure was the only result of the expedition worth mentioning.

CHAPTER. XXIV.

THE WILDERNESS CAMPAIGN AGAINST GRANT.

CONVINCED by his failures that Meade could not lead the army of the Potomac to victory, Lincoln called Lieut.-Gen. U. S. Grant from the West, to the oversight of military operations in Virginia. Meade's army had not only been brought to a high degree of efficiency, by drill and discipline, during its winter encampment in Culpeper, but large numbers of fresh troops were added to it during the closing days of April. Early in that month Grant arrived at Culpeper Court House, having in mind a definite plan of campaign toward Richmond, which he proceeded to put into execution by ordering an advance of Meade's army to the Germanna and Ely fords of the Rapidan, instructing him, "Lee's army will be your objective point. Wherever Lee goes, there will you go;" and adding, that the characteristic of his campaign would be "to hammer continuously against the armed force of the enemy and his resources, until, by mere attrition, if nothing else, there shall be nothing left him but submission." His expressed desire was "to fight Lee between the Rapidan and Richmond, if he will stand."

Sufficiently informed of what was going on in Meade's army, and expecting an early advance, now that the spring was fully opened, Lee rode, on the 2d of May, 1864, to the signal station on Clark's mountain, near Ewell's camps, to overlook for himself—from that grand point of observation, which took within its sweep more than a score of Virginia counties, and from which was plainly visible every Federal camp in the nearby county of Culpeper—any evidences of Meade's intentions. This trained master of the art of military reconnoissance, carefully studied, through his glasses, the field outspread before him, and soon concluded, from the bustle in the Federal camps, that an early movement was in contemplation. It was also evident to him that this movement

would be to his right, toward the old fields of unsuccessful Federal venture. Looking eastward, Mine run and Chancellorsville were in sight. Beyond, in mental vision, he could see Salem church and the twice-attacked and twice-defended Fredericksburg. He doubtless asked himself just where—in that historic region where his famous ancestor, Spotswood, had built the first blast-furnace for making iron, in America—the impending conflict would begin, immediate preparations for which he took in hand on returning to his camp.

Lee was accompanied to his point of observation by Longstreet, just returned from his Tennessee campaign; Field, commanding Hood's old division, and Kershaw, that of McLaws; Ewell, and his division commanders, Early, Edward Johnson and Rodes; A. P. Hill, with his division commanders, R. H. Anderson, Heth and Wilcox. It is said that after his information-seeking overlook of the Federal camps, Lee turned to these officers, and pointing toward Chancellorsville, said, that in his opinion, the Federal army would cross at Germanna or at Ely's; and that he then bade them prepare to take up the line of march whenever orders were given from the signal station.

When Grant ordered his forward movement, on the 4th of May, there were 147,000 men under his command, in and near Culpeper, disposed in three grand army corps; the Second led by Hancock, the Fifth by Warren, and the Sixth by Sedgwick. Burnside held the Ninth, as a sort of rear guard, north of the Rappahannock. It took 20,000 men to care for Grant's vast army train, leaving about 120,000 for fighting duty. With these were 274 field guns, of the most improved kind; while Sheridan, with some 13,000 cavalry, guarded the advance and flanks of the movement. This, said one of Grant's subordinates, was "the best clothed and best fed army that ever took the field." Its supply train, if extended in single line of march, would have covered more than 100 miles of distance.

To meet this mighty host, which was about to pass his flank, Lee had, at the end of April, less than 62,000 men for battle; 22,000, under A. P. Hill, near Orange Court House; some 17,000, under Ewell, in the Mountain run valley; 10,000 in Longstreet's two divisions, encamped near Gordonsville; 224 guns in his batteries, manned by 4,800 artillerists; and 8,300 cavalymen, under the lead-

ership of "Jeb" Stuart. The cavalry corps was in two divisions, of three brigades each; the First, led by Wade Hampton, of South Carolina; the Second, by Fitz Lee, of Virginia. Fitz Lee's three brigades, commanded by W. H. F. Lee, L. L. Lomax and Williams F. Wickham, were all from Virginia. At the opening of the campaign, Stuart's cavalry held the line of the lower Rapidan and of the lower Rappahannock, guarding Lee's right flank.

Stuart informed Lee of the arrival of Grant's army, on the north bank of the Rapidan, opposite the Germanna and Ely fords, on the 3d of May, and of the crossing of those fords by his advance on the next day. Knowing this, Lee, on the morning of the 4th, issued his usual precautionary orders against the destruction of private property of all kinds, and, at 9 a. m., when the signal officer from Clark's mountain waved that Grant's columns were in motion toward the Confederate right, he gave orders for his army to advance, as prearranged, to meet the Federal movement. Two parallel roads led from his camps toward the Wilderness. Ewell moved, at noonday, across to the Orange turnpike, then followed that eastward, toward "The Wilderness." At the same time two of Hill's divisions marched from Orange Court House, along the plank road, in the same direction. At 11, Longstreet was ordering his advance, under Field, followed by Kershaw, from Gordonsville, across the country, to the same objective point; but he did not get his march under way until 4 of the afternoon, because he was unwilling to take the direct road assigned him by Lee, and waited for permission to take one of his own choosing, which led to delay and later held him from the field of battle at a critical moment. Anderson's division, of Hill's corps, was left to guard the rear.

With the 28,000 men of Hill and Ewell, Lee hastened to the front, his artillery moving with his infantry, to support Stuart, who, in joyful combat, was already fighting back every step of the Federal advance. Lee rode with Hill at the head of the right-hand column, on the Orange plank road, sending message after message to hurry up Longstreet, to support the Confederate right when the battle should be joined.

At the close of the 4th of May, Grant telegraphed, from Germanna ford, to Halleck, chief of staff of the

army at Washington: "The crossing of the Rapidan effected. Forty-eight hours now will demonstrate whether the enemy intends giving battle this side of Richmond. Telegraph Butler that we have crossed the Rapidan." He then had with him not less than 127,000 men, that, almost without opposition, had reached the old fighting ground of "The Wilderness." He had told Butler that he would let him know when he had made this much progress in his campaign, and had ordered that he should make simultaneous movement from Fort Monroe, up the James, to an assault upon Richmond and Petersburg.

Hancock's corps, crossing at Ely's ford, had encamped on the battlefield of Chancellorsville, whence a good highway led southward, by way of Spottsylvania Court House, into the main roads leading directly to Richmond. Gregg's cavalry, moving along a parallel road to the southwest, toward Todd's tavern and Spottsylvania Court House, protected his flank from the incursions of Stuart's cavalry. Warren's corps had led the advance across Germanna ford and advanced to the valley of Wilderness run, a point where the old turnpike, on which Ewell was marching, crosses the road to Spottsylvania Court House, that Warren was following to the southeast. The Sixth corps, under Sedgwick, followed close behind the Fifth and encamped in the open fields just south of the Rapidan. Cavalry also watched the right of the movement, guarding it from Stuart. Grant's army was now well closed up, facing to the southward, along the Orange and Fredericksburg road, on the high watershed between the Rappahannock and the head branches of the Pamunkey.

In the evening of the 4th of May, Ewell established his headquarters near Locust Grove, on the old turnpike, with his advance but an hour's march from Grant's passing flank, on the same road, at the Wilderness run. Lee's second column, under Hill, which Lee accompanied, had its headquarters at Verdierville, some four miles to the southwest from Ewell's, while Longstreet, that night, reached Brock's bridge, on the North Anna, on the old road that Lafayette had cut through the forest, to the northeastward, to Verdierville, in order to form a junction with Wayne, and which, to this day, is known as the "Marquis' road."

During the night of the 4th, Lee sent orders to Ewell to march upon the enemy at daylight of the 5th, desiring "to bring him to battle now as soon as possible." He ordered Hill forward at the same hour, and himself promptly rode to the front, along the plank road, and was with the pickets when the skirmish opened, at Parker's store, on that road, at the head of the Wilderness run, three miles south of the old Wilderness tavern, where Grant and Meade, accompanied by Assistant Secretary of War Dana, had established their headquarters. Stuart's cavalry were already skirmishing with those of Gregg, on the Brock road, in front of and far to Lee's right, toward Todd's tavern, while Ewell's skirmishers were in lively engagement with those of Warren, advanced to protect his flank on the Germanna road. Now and then a field piece opened from either side.

Lee sent word to Ewell to regulate his advance by that of Hill in the center, and his engineers reconnoitered the front, and the skirmish lines along the whole were soon made continuous. Lee reluctantly held back his two columns, unwilling to bring on general battle until his strong right, under Longstreet, was in position. He impatiently awaited the arrival of Longstreet until 8 in the morning (5th), maintaining, in the meantime, a vigorous skirmish, which held the Federals in check as Meade developed his lines of battle, along the fields bordering Wilderness run and fronting its wooded western watershed, which covered the deployment of Ewell and Hill.

Lee, Stuart and Hill, riding to near the pickets in advance of Parker's store, had halted to look down the open valley of Wilderness run, at the long lines of Federals drawn up in battle array, when Meade's skirmishers suddenly advanced from the pine thickets to the eastward. Hill's line sprang forward to meet these; he then reinforced that with Heth's division, and a general battle appeared to have begun on Lee's right. Near the same time, about 11 of the morning, Ewell advanced Johnson's division, with Jones' brigade in skirmish front, pressed back Warren's skirmishers, and came in full view of his column, marching southward across the turnpike but ready to face to line of battle; which they promptly did and so forced an engagement before Lee was ready for it. Jones met the attack with a vigorous fire of musketry and

artillery, and had good promise that he would cut Meade's line of movement. Just then Ewell received Lee's warning not to bring on a general engagement, and ordered Jones to "fall slowly back, if pressed." Interpreting this as an order to fall back at once, Jones began to withdraw the field pieces in his skirmish line, which Griffin's division, of Warren's corps, took for a retreat, and so pressed upon Jones vigorously and drove his men back with the loss of their leader, who fell in trying to stem the tide of retreat. Ewell promptly moved forward the brigades of Gordon and Daniel, crushed Griffin's victory-disordered advance, and fell on the flank of the divisions of Crawford and Wadsworth. These he routed, and captured four Federal guns and many prisoners. Warren closed up his corps front, with his left retired, through the forest, toward Wilderness run, and extended his right with Sedgwick's corps, through the woods to the westward, with its right retired toward Flat run, thus covering Ewell's front, which, as reformed, had Rodes' division on the right of the old turnpike with Johnson's on his left, followed by Early, extending the line to and beyond Flat run, where an open field furnished excellent positions for batteries, which were also placed along the cross road leading toward the Germanna plank road, in and near the old turnpike, and at the cross road near Ewell's right, whence A. P. Hill extended his lines to the southward, still covering the position that belonged to Longstreet. These lines of contending forces were now near together, at the center less than 500 yards apart, and each (not the Confederate alone, as Grant unfairly states, repeatedly, in his messages and report) hastened to make its position strong with rude breastworks of logs and earth, and whatever other material active veterans could lay hands on.

Ewell now held the Fifth and Sixth Federal corps in check, in desultory engagement, and forced Meade to hesitate in pressing an advance beyond Lee's right, or rather his center, where Heth had met and driven back Crawford, leading Warren to the southward. Heth pushed his advantage in driving Crawford back along the plank road, met Getty at the crossing of the Brock road, and forced him to halt on the direct way to Richmond, which Grant, in his order of march on the morning of the 5th, expected his army to traverse, having already

ordered Hancock to Shady Grove church, on the headwaters of the Po, and Warren to Parker's store, in the same general direction, and Sedgwick to close up at the Wilderness tavern. Hancock, obeying his orders, had reached Todd's tavern, on the Brock road, and was turning to the southwest, by the Catharpin road, toward Shady Grove church, scarcely three miles away, at 11 a. m., just as Ewell and Heth were in hot engagement with Getty, when he was ordered back to Getty's contest, on the Brock road, which he had only reached at 2 of the afternoon, and to aid in the work of throwing up formidable fortifications along that road, to hold back Hill.

Had Longstreet come to his assigned position, before this juncture of combat, with his 10,000 men, Lee could not only have crushed the advance of Crawford and Getty, as he did with Hill's men, but could have rolled it back into Ewell's battle, and to the probable discomfiture of most of Warren's and Sedgwick's corps. He could also, with the wide interval already made between Warren and Hancock, have struck the latter in flank, with good prospect for defeating him as he turned back from Grant's "on to Richmond." The three hours between 11 and 2 were quite enough for this work, had Longstreet's veterans been there to be directed by Lee. Longstreet wandered along the many roads that led through the great forests of Orange and Spottsylvania, making but 12 miles of easting during all the 5th, and halting at night at Richards' shop, miles away from Hill's right. Under Lee's orders of urgency, Longstreet marched again at midnight, and the morning of the 6th was well advanced when he appeared with his veterans to join in the hotly contested battle that had again begun.

When, in the afternoon of the 5th, Hancock halted on the Brock road, with his right near the plank road, he was not satisfied with having thrown up along that road one line of formidable breastworks, upon its western side, toward Lee's front, but he reared a second, equally formidable, on the other side of the road, making that a covered way—a sort of Spanish trocha. Not satisfied with these two, his busy men erected a third; so each of his triple lines of battle was well hedged in, behind a most formidable line of breastworks, awaiting Hill's attack from the rude line of slight defenses that his men had thrown up; although, according to Grant, the Federal

soldiers, during all this campaign, never fought from behind breastworks, or had breastworks to fall back to when defeated.

Concealed by a dense forest of pines, of young growth, extending to the right and left from the turnpike, with skirmishers in advance, Heth's division, strengthened on both flanks, but especially on the left to keep touch with Ewell, and with Poague's battalion of artillery in the roadway, awaited Hancock's attack, which was in preparation but a few hundred yards in advance. Shortly after reaching the scene of conflict, at about half past four, Hancock strengthened Getty's waiting division with portions of Gibbon's and Owens', and four Federal divisions, with other troops in reserve, advanced to engage with Hill's two. A furious combat followed, in which the contending lines met each other, face to face. Hill's men, crouching behind their slight breastworks, sheltered themselves as best they could, as a storm of Federal bullets, cutting off the tops of the dense growth in front, sped to the Confederate line, which met the Federal advance with deliberate aim and drove it back, although held to its work by a strong line of bayonets in its rear.

The battle continued until after nightfall, and the darkness was lighted up by the flashes of the opposing musketry and artillery. Nearly half of Grant's army took part in this attempt to drive Hill's two divisions from safeguarding Lee's right. To relieve the pressure of the unequal combat, Lee ordered Ewell to assume the offensive, drive the Federals from his front, take possession of the Germanna road, and cut Grant's line of communication. Ewell promptly sent two brigades to attack Sedgwick's center, followed by a supporting force; but Sedgwick was found too well protected, by a heavy breastwork of logs, for a successful assault, so Ewell merely held him in combat.

Not content with merely holding his position on the right, Lee ordered a counterstroke from Hill's center and captured a Federal battery, but lost it when forced back by a vigorous Federal repulse, which Hancock followed up with repeated and desperate but unsuccessful assaults on Hill's line. Stuart, on the extreme right, drove back the charges of Sheridan's cavalry. After this first day of Wilderness battle was over, Lee telegraphed to Richmond, "By the blessing of God we maintained our posi-

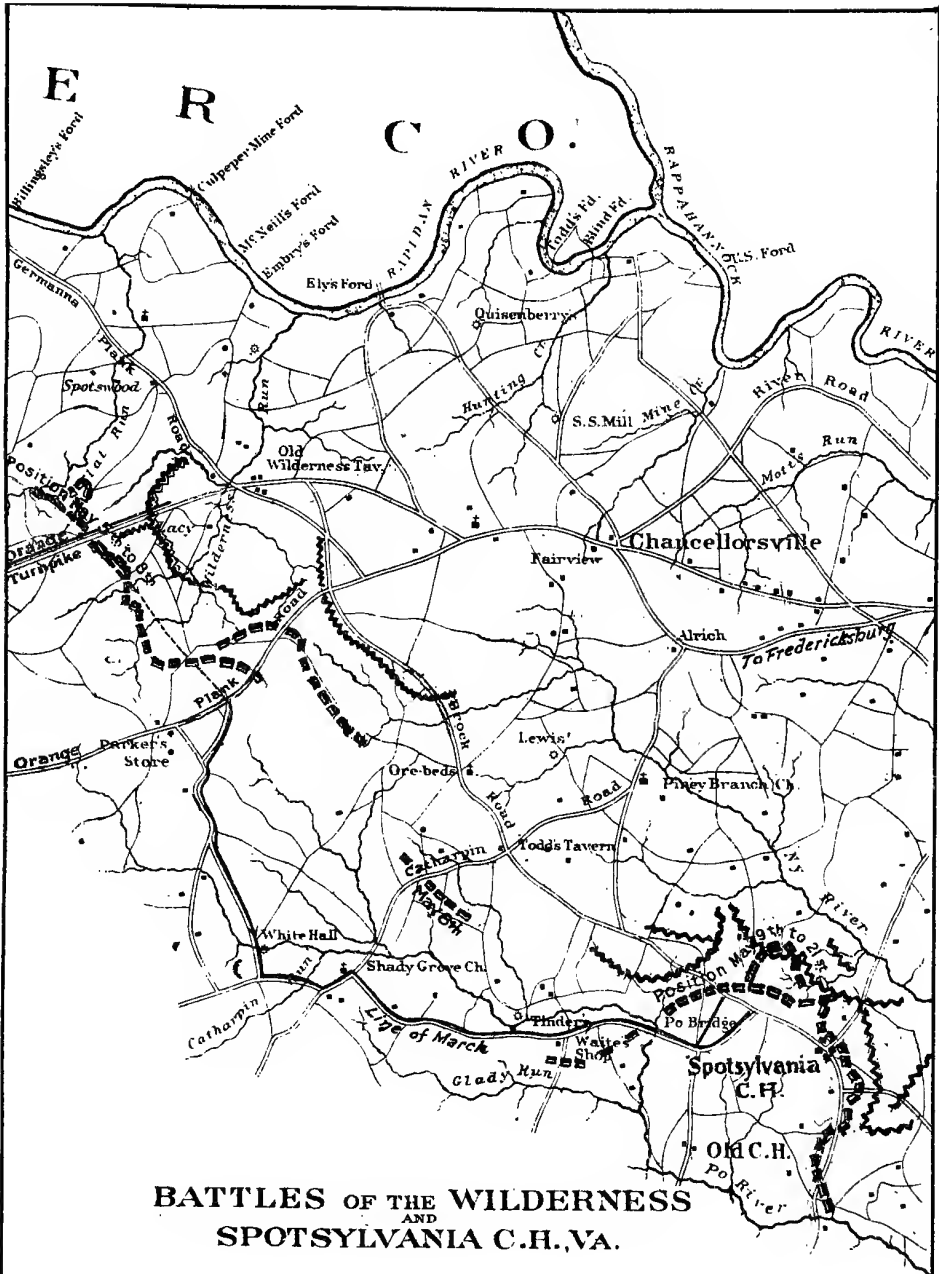
tion against every effort until night, when the contest closed."

During the night of the 5th, Hill's and Ewell's men held the lines from which they had fought during the day. Lee ordered Longstreet to make a night march, which he began at 1 a. m., expecting to have him in position, on his right, by daylight of the 6th, to help in an aggressive fight which he proposed to make at the dawn of day, advancing his entire battle line against Grant's. Ewell opened this battle, at 5 in the morning, by attacking Warren and Sedgwick. The engagement quickly extended to Lee's right, against which Hancock made prompt advance, again assaulting Hill's weak line (that Lee had expected to replace with Longstreet, before daylight), but which he could not force from its position. Wadsworth moved against Hill's left flank, at the same time that Hancock developed a large force around his right. Thus flanked, Hill was forced from the field, stubbornly fighting as he fell back to just behind Poague's artillery, which defiantly held the broad highway, and checked Hancock with canister and grape at short range. Near these guns Lee watched his broken right, which had courageously endured an hour of unequal contention, saying, again and again, to his surrounding staff, "Why does not Longstreet come?"

One division of Burnside's corps crossed Germanna ford on the morning of the 5th, and another on the morning of the 6th. Grant ordered these fresh troops to make attack on Lee's center, while Warren and Sedgwick assaulted the right and Hancock the left. Ewell's men strengthened their line, during the night of the 5th, with breastworks, and planted batteries all along it, and so were able to drive back the Federal assaults with heavy losses. Poague's guns, on the plank road, were able to give check to Hancock's advance, until Longstreet's corps, in double column, and well closed up, came down the plank road at a double-quick, Field's division on the left and Kershaw's on the right. Lee caught sight of these long-expected reinforcements and rode to meet them. "What boys are these?" he asked, as he met the head of the column under Field. The word passed, as by electric flash, and the quick reply came, from the men of Hood, who had led many a brave assault, "Texas boys." When the voice of the great leader clearly rang out, "My Texas boys, you must

charge." The response of the 800 present for duty was an answering cheer that gave assurance of victory when the charge should be ordered. A line of battle was promptly formed, and the men, rushing forward, passed Poague's battery, and were advancing on Hancock's men, when they heard behind them, and almost in their midst, from Lee himself, the shouted command, "Charge! Charge, boys, charge!" Glancing back and discovering that Lee in person was joining in, if not leading the charge, the Texans shouted, "Go back, General Lee! Marse Robert, go back!" Poague's men, from amid their guns, also called out, "Come back! Come back, General Lee!" But Lee, waving his hat, rode on with the charge, while from every side, like a shout of command, the soldiers cried out, "Lee to the rear! Lee to the rear!" Then a tall Texas sergeant stepped from the ranks, caught the bridle rein of "Traveler," and turned him to the rear. Lee reluctantly obeyed this order of his men, who, waving back to him a salute of gratification, rushed forward to meet the solid ranks of Hancock's oncoming host, and the most of them to meet death. Part of Poague's guns moved forward in the charge, and the men with them shouted back to their comrades, "Good-bye, boys!"

The Texas brigade, now led by Gregg, struck the masked front of Hancock's corps, in the plank road, and was soon fairly enveloped in a circle of fire; but it flinched not, and soon staggered the Federal column, and then, when Anderson and Benning brought up their Georgians and Law his Alabamians, in support, Hancock's line was forced to yield, not to numbers, but to courage, and was driven back toward his line of defenses, but not until the half of Gregg's men, in ten minutes of fighting, had fallen beside their successful comrades. Lee now deployed Field to the left and Kershaw to the right, and the combat surged back and forth through the tangled and marshy forest. The crisis of the engagement was at hand. Hill's rested men were again sent to the front. At 10 of the morning, Longstreet sent Mahone, with his four brigades, to turn Hancock's left, which they did, under shelter of the cuts and fills of the partially graded Orange railroad, and then, moving forward, struck Hancock's flank and rolled it up, as Hancock himself said, "like a wet blanket." By 11 o'clock, Lee's counter-



stroke, on Hancock's front and flank, had driven back his brigades and broken up his right, under Wadsworth; and by noon, Grant's entire left had been defeated and disorganized. Hancock's chief of staff, the truth-telling Walker, says of this time: "Down the plank road from Hancock's center a stream of broken men was pouring to the rear, giving the onlooker the impression that everything had gone to pieces."

Longstreet urged forward his men to press the enemy. The dried leaves of the preceding autumn took fire from blazing cartridges, and their smoke, joining with that of battle, clouded the day and concealed the combatants from each other. Forming Kershaw's division in line of battle, across the plank road, Longstreet, in person, led it against Hancock's retreating men, but failing to note, in the heat of pursuit, that his flanking brigades, under Mahone, had halted in line and were facing the roadway down which he was rushing. Mahone's men, mistaking Longstreet and his following for a Federal officer and his staff and escort, turned on them a full volleyed flank fire, which killed Jenkins and severely wounded Longstreet, thus checking an onset which promised to turn the Federal retreat into a disastrous rout.

As Longstreet was carried to the rear, Lee rode rapidly to the front to reform his now disordered attack, and at 4 he again pressed forward his lines, through the smoking forest, to fall upon Hancock in the Brock road. Hill had already repulsed Burnside's feeble attack on Lee's center, and the time was opportune for renewing the attack on Grant's flanks. As Lee moved to assault the Federal left on the plank road, Ewell detached Johnson's and Gordon's brigades from his extreme left, under the leadership of Early, to wheel to the right, from their intrenchments, fall upon Sedgwick's right flank, and sweep the rear of his breastworks. The sun was low as this masterly movement began, but these men, that Stonewall Jackson had often led to flanking victory, knew what was in the air when the order to march was given, and they at once, with a wild yell, swung into line, fell upon Milroy's old brigade which they had routed in the Valley the preceding spring, just as its men were cooking their suppers, as was Hooker's right when struck at Chancellorsville, and quickly routed

a mile of Sedgwick's line, capturing 600 of his men and two of his brigadiers; and they were still sweeping on to victory, even through the gathering darkness, when Ewell called a halt.

Not knowing of the existence of Hancock's formidable intrenchments, Lee's right, consisting of the divisions of Field and Anderson, charged against Hancock, on the Brock road, to find themselves confronted by a wall of fire, made by the burning of the front line of Federal breastworks, which had been set on fire by the burning forest, and by a more dangerous, blazing line of infantry and artillery, that poured rifle ball and shot and shell into their ranks from behind Hancock's second line of breastworks, which he now held in force. The Confederates drove back the Federals, even from this double-fire line, and planted their flags on the front line of breastworks, but for a short time only. They were repulsed by the fierce artillery fire that was poured upon them, as night put an end to the fierce struggles of this 6th day of May. At the close of this day, Lee held, all along his lines, a position advanced from that held in the morning, and the great army of the Potomac found itself in the toils of a defensive struggle, in aid of which it was throwing up new lines of breastworks, along the positions to which it had been forced back on its right and along its center, and was grimly holding on to the triple line of defenses that guarded its left.

On the morning of the 7th, at 10, Grant telegraphed to Washington, from the Wilderness tavern:

We were engaged with the enemy nearly all day, both on the 5th and the 6th. Yesterday the enemy attacked our lines vigorously, first at one point and then another, from right to left. They were repulsed at all points before reaching our lines, except once during the afternoon on Hancock's front, and just after night on Sedgwick's front. In the former instance they were promptly and handsomely repulsed; the latter, Milroy's old brigade was attacked and gave away in the greatest confusion, almost without resistance, carrying good troops with them. Had there been daylight the enemy could have injured us very much in the confusion that prevailed; they, however, instead of getting through the break, attacked General Wright's division of Sedgwick's corps, and were driven back.

After confessing that his loss had been about 12,000, and mentioning his killed, wounded and captured generals, he added: "I think the loss of the enemy must exceed ours, but this is only a guess based upon the fact that they attacked and were repulsed so often"—a state-

ment that is rather remarkable, in the light of his subsequent reports, when he accounts for his enormous losses by saying that, during all the campaign, he had to attack Lee protected by breastworks. His dispatch concludes: "At present we can claim no victory over the enemy, neither have they gained a single advantage. The enemy pushed out of his fortifications to prevent their position being turned, and have been sooner or later driven back in every instance. Up to this hour the enemy have not shown themselves in force within a mile of our lines." He does not say that he had withdrawn his lines, in many places, and thus secured the mile of interval that he mentions.

Well-nigh exhausted by the desperate struggles of May 5th and 6th, each army was quite content to rest behind its defenses, care for its wounded and bury its dead, during the 7th; neither caring to again attempt to carry the breastworks of the other, each formidable with well-placed artillery. Grant, having now found out that Lee was still willing to give battle "this side of Richmond," for which information he had paid dearly by the loss of 17,000 men, now attempted, by a sidling movement to the left, to steal by Lee and renew his interrupted march toward the Confederate capital. To open the way for this, his cavalry, during the 7th, pressed southward on the Brock road, where Fitz Lee held them in sharp contention, and on the Catharpin road, where they were equally well met by Hampton's division. He also gave orders for a night march by the Fifth corps, under Warren, along the Brock road, in the rear of Hancock's well fortified line, which the latter was to continue to hold, to Spottsylvania Court House; while Sedgwick, withdrawing from Ewell's front after dark, was to march eastward to Chancellorsville, and then southward to Piney Branch church, and Burnside was to withdraw from Hill's front, and, marching to the eastward of Chancellorsville, then turn south, thus covering the road to Fredericksburg, in his rear, along which Grant was sending his wounded to Aquia creek, and by which he had communication with his base of supplies, which he had now shifted to the same point on the Potomac.

These movements, during the night of the 7th, would leave two corps in front of Lee and withdraw two farther to the east. Grant and Meade were apprehensive, dur-

ing all the 7th, that Lee might again attack them, as indicated by the dispatch Grant sent to Washington, about noon of the 8th, in which he said:

The army commenced moving south at 9 p. m. yesterday, and when closed up to the position assigned for the first day's march will stand thus: General Warren's corps at Spottsylvania Court House; Hancock at Todd's tavern; Sedgwick on the road from Piney Branch church to Spottsylvania, and General Burnside at Aldrich's. It is not demonstrated what the enemy will do, but the best of feeling prevails in this army, and I feel at present no apprehension for the result. My efforts will be to form a junction with General Butler as early as possible, and be prepared to meet any enemy interposing. The result of the three days' fighting at the Old Wilderness was decidedly in our favor. The enemy having a strongly entrenched position to fall back on when hard pressed, and the extensive train we have to cover, rendered it impossible to inflict the heavy blow on Lee's army I had hoped. My exact route to the James river, I have not yet definitely marked out.

These lame excuses for his failures in the Wilderness battles, are ample confessions that Lee had thoroughly deranged Grant's confident plan of campaign. He was no longer urging Meade to hunt for Lee, and was looking anxiously for co-operation with Butler and the army of the James.

CHAPTER XXV.

THE BATTLES OF SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE— THE DEFEAT OF SIGEL AND BUTLER.

DIVINING Grant's next move, Lee occupied the morning of the 7th in cutting a direct military road southward, through the forest, from the plank road toward Shady Grove church, south of the Ny, to the highway leading eastward to Spottsylvania Court House, so he could have a continuous march of his entire army, by its right flank, when the time came for again placing that army across some other road, leading toward Richmond, that Grant might desire to follow. Grant's inaction led Lee to suspect the movement that he had ordered, and when Stuart, later on, sent him word that Grant's trains were moving in the rear of his army, and word came from Ewell that the Germanna road had been abandoned, Sedgwick leaving his dead unburied and many of his wounded uncared for, Lee issued orders for Longstreet's corps to take up the line of march, at dark, along the new military road toward Spottsylvania Court House, be followed by Ewell withdrawing by Hill's rear, while the latter remained guarding the rear of the army.

Anderson with the First corps, which, in Longstreet's absence, he now commanded, marched at 11 p. m., and, before daylight of the 8th, rested in a grove near Spottsylvania Court House, forming a strong support to the cavalry that was keeping back Grant's new advance. Ewell was held at the plank road, near Parker's store, until the early morning of the 8th, when the Second corps, with the exception of Early's division, which was left near Todd's tavern in support of Hill, marched to a junction with the First corps near Spottsylvania Court House. Grant, in person, tarried with Hancock until noon, after sending minute instructions to his advance for marching beyond Spottsylvania Court House toward Richmond and Butler; but learning, soon after, that Warren had met with a severe check on the highway to

Spottsylvania Court House, and that Lee, although having the longer march to compass, had won the race for position, and a second time blocked his "on to Richmond." During the night of the 7th, Fitz Lee, dismounting his cavalry division and using his men as infantry, had succeeded in throwing rude defenses of trees and rails across the Brock road, and had successfully driven back repeated attacks of the Federal advance, keeping Warren miles from the position which Grant had ordered him to occupy that night.

Early on the morning of the 8th, Anderson moved the First corps about a mile to the northern front of Spottsylvania Court House, to support Fitz Lee's hard pressed cavalry, where his men, in an incredibly short time, threw up hasty breastworks and were ready for Warren's corps, as it advanced in assault, and to drive it back in a disastrous repulse. Stuart was on the field in person, for the last time, as it soon proved, to cheer the army of Northern Virginia on to victory, contributing, by his great tactical skill and ready but always practical advice, to Warren's defeat, and joining enthusiastically in the cheers of victory that followed the repulse of the Federal advance, making certain the holding of the position which Lee's superior energy had secured.

At 1 p. m. of the 9th, Grant's dispatch, from "near" Spottsylvania Court House, to Halleck read: "If matters are still favorable with Butler, send all reinforcements you can. The enemy are now moving from our immediate front either to interpose between us and Fredericksburg or to get the inside road to Richmond." It is incredible that at that hour of the day the Federal general commanding did not know that, instead of moving from his immediate front, Lee was, at that very time, in line of battle across his front; since at 5 in the afternoon of the preceding day, he had arrived with Ewell, and, with his First and Second corps in position, had met a second Federal attack, which he had driven back, and Ewell, in a countercharge, had gained an advance of a half mile, on the right of the Catharpin road leading to Todd's tavern, while the First corps held his right, across the Brock road, leading to the same point along the divide between the Ny and the Po rivers, the two most northerly of the four, that, not far to the southeast, unite and make the Mattapony.

During the night of the 8th, the Confederates threw up rude and irregular defenses along the emergency line which they had taken, a part of it after dark. On the morning of the 9th, Lee rode along the line that had been occupied, but was not favorably impressed with it. At Ewell's suggestion, a somewhat elevated point, projecting between some of the southward branches of the Ny, near the right center, was taken into the lines and occupied by artillery; orders were also given for providing a second line of defenses, beyond the incurved line, as taken, on the right. Lee's position, as now occupied, extended from the Po river on the southwest, where the Louisa road to Spottsylvania Court House and Fredericksburg crosses the big bend of that river, in the arc of a circle, eastward, across the Brock road and the Po-Ny watershed, to a branch of the Ny river; while from its right center sprang a horseshoe salient, northward, eastward and southward, around the crest of the spur between two small branches of the Ny and overlooking that river to the northeastward. Ewell's men were disposed within this salient, which conformed, in a general way, to a broad bend of the Ny. Hill's men were to extend the line to the left, to the Po, and Longstreet's were to extend it to the right, from the Bald hill southward and then southeastward, covering the front of Spottsylvania Court House and the roads leading to Fredericksburg, thus leaving open no way to the southward on which Grant could move toward Richmond, as he had planned on the 7th. Held back by Hampton and Early, the most of Hancock's corps had been detained on the Brock road, near and behind Todd's tavern, during the 8th, while Anderson with the First and Ewell with the Second corps were engaged with Grant's advance near Spottsylvania Court House.

On the 9th, Grant sent Sheridan, with his cavalry, on a raid, moving from Alsop's at 4 in the morning, to first destroy Lee's ammunition train, then strike the James and open communication with Butler. Stuart safely guarded the ammunition train, but was not strong enough to prevent Sheridan passing his right and gaining the highway to Richmond. Early on the morning of the 9th, Burnside advanced across the Ny, on the road leading from Spottsylvania Court House to Fredericksburg, which he had reached by a circuitous march to the east-

ward, and was moving to strike Lee's right and rear. Early, temporarily in command of the Third corps, arrived in time to meet this attack, which had to advance across open fields, with infantry and artillery, and give it a handsome repulse. Thus brought into position, the Third corps held Lee's right, from the horseshoe salient around the front of Spottsylvania Court House; it also occupied a portion of the eastern front of the salient, while Ewell held the remainder of that front, its north projecting apex and its western face. Favorable positions for artillery were found throughout the line, which was made stronger with each passing hour while awaiting Grant's attack from the north and west, after the repulse of that of Burnside from the east.

Advancing on the 9th, Hancock took position on Grant's right and sent three divisions across the Po to menace Lee's left and rear from the west. These movements revealed to Lee that Grant intended to attack his entire front, and, with his superior numbers, which were double those of Lee, attempt to turn both his flanks. During the night of the 9th, in anticipation of Grant's attack, Lee sent Heth's division, of Hill's corps, across the Po, by a circuit to the southward, under the command of Early, who, moved into line across the Louisa road, fell upon Hancock's flank and rear, at dawn of the 10th, just as he was obeying Grant's recall to join in his proposed front attack. Heth severely punished Barlow's division, of Hancock's corps, on which his attack fell, and captured one of his guns, in this engagement, which became known as the "battle of Waite's Shop."

About the time of the failure of Hancock's flanking movement to Lee's left, at 9:30 of the 10th of May, Grant dispatched to Washington, still from "near" Spottsylvania Court House:

The enemy hold our front in very strong force and evince a strong determination to interpose between us and Richmond to the last. I shall take no backward steps but may be compelled to send back to Belle Plain [below Aquia creek on the Potomac] for further supplies. Please have supplies of forage and provisions sent there at once and 50 rounds of ammunition (infantry) for 100,000 men. Send General Benham with the necessary bridge train for the Rappahannock river. We can maintain ourselves at least, and, in the end, beat Lee's army, I believe. Send to Belle Plain all the infantry you can rake and scrape. With present position of the armies, 10,000 men can be spared from the defenses of Washington, besides all the troops that

have reached there since Burnside's departure. Some may also be brought from Wallace's department. We want no more wagons nor artillery.

This dispatch tells the condition of things within Grant's lines and his view of the situation, on the morning of the 10th, in a way that needs no comment.

At noon of the day before, May 9th, C. A. Dana, assistant secretary of war, who had joined Grant to watch events, reported to Secretary Stanton various matters that he had heard about, among others:

General Wilson, with his division of cavalry, occupied Spottsylvania Court House yesterday morning for an hour; but as Warren's corps had not yet made its appearance, and as columns of rebel infantry were gaining position on both his right and left, he fell back to Alsop's. Prisoners were taken by Wilson, who reported that two divisions of Longstreet's corps had just come, they having marched all night. General Grant at once gave orders for attacking these troops with the whole of Warren's corps, to whose support Sedgwick was hurrying up, in order to destroy them before the rest of the rebel army could arrive. Warren, however, proceeded with exceeding caution, and when he finally did attack, sent a single division at a time and was constantly repulsed. The general attack, which Generals Grant and Meade directed, was never made, for reasons I have not yet been able to learn; but successive assaults were made upon this and that point in the rebel positions with no decisive results. The last assaults were made just before dark, when the fighting was very sharp. . . . General Grant's orders, last night, were not to renew the fighting to-day; but if, as now appears to be the case, Lee has left anything open in front of our right, by massing on our left, he may attack at this weakened point of their lines with a view of passing toward Richmond on that side.

Hancock found Early, at the "open place" Grant was seeking, the next morning. At 11 of the morning of the 10th, Grant began his massed attack on Lee's left, which was met by Field's division and driven back by a withering fire of musketry and artillery. At 3 in the afternoon, a second massed attack was made on the First corps, near Lee's center, on the line of the Brock road, through the piney woods of the Po-Ny watershed. This also met a bloody repulse, after which the Confederates sprang over their breastworks and collected the guns and ammunition the enemy had left behind, and distributed these so that each Confederate was doubly armed. For a third time, near the close of the day, Grant made assault, with Hancock and Warren, against Lee's weak left. This front line, under Hancock, was driven back by Field's division, but his second line rushed bravely forward and leaped over the breastworks of Gregg's Texans,

who, refusing to yield, obtained aid from an adjacent brigade, which turned on the flank of the bravely-fighting Federals and forced them to retreat from the stubborn fight they had made.

At about the same hour of the closing day, Grant made assault on Ewell, along the western face of the great salient, a brigade of Sedgwick's corps attacking Dole's, in Ewell's center, and driving him from his works. The brigades of Daniel and Steuart then fell upon the flanks of Upton's Federal brigade, while those of Battle and Johnson met it in front. Upton tenaciously held against these what he had won; but when Gordon and Walker reinforced the attack on his flanks, he was compelled to retire with heavy loss. Ewell's guns, raking the front with furious fire, had prevented all attempts to reinforce the gallant Upton.

The Confederate right, under Early, was also attacked, several times, during the 10th, by Burnside's corps, on the Fredericksburg road. There the Confederate artillery had full play on the Federal lines, as they essayed to cross the broad fields in front, and Pegram and Cutts, with their big guns, easily repulsed all of Burnside's attacks. Gen. F. A. Walker, commenting on Grant's tactics, writes: "To assault 'all along the line,' as was often done in the summer of 1864, is the very abdication of leadership."

At 8:30 of the 11th, Grant dispatched to Halleck:

We have now ended the sixth day of very heavy fighting, the result to this time in our favor. But our losses have been heavy, as well as those of the enemy. We have lost to this time eleven general officers, killed, wounded and missing, and probably 20,000 men. . . . I am now sending back to Belle Plain all my wagons for a fresh supply of provisions and ammunition, and propose to fight it out on this line if it takes all summer. The arrival of reinforcements here will be very encouraging to the men, and I hope they will be sent as fast as possible and in as great numbers. . . . I am satisfied the enemy are very shaky, and are only kept up to the mark by the greatest exertions on the part of their officers, and by keeping them intrenched in every position they take. Up to this time there is no indication of any portion of Lee's army being detached for the defense of Richmond.

It was the condition of his own army and of his own method of campaigning and not Lee's, that Grant thus described. He little knew, although what he had so recently encountered should have taught him, the spirit of the men that, under Lee, confronted him.

The shifting about of troops in the Federal lines, on the 11th, led Lee to the conclusion that Grant was about to draw back from the Spottsylvania Court House field of combat; so he made preparations to meet any new movement he might attempt by ordering all the artillery, placed in difficult positions, to be withdrawn to where it could be quickly assembled for marching. Obeying this order, General Long withdrew the guns from the northern portion of the great salient, so that Edward Johnson's division, at its apex, was left on guard with only muskets and two pieces of artillery. Near midnight, of the 11th-12th of May, Johnson discovered, through the dense foggy mist then prevailing, that the Federal troops were massing in his front, and asked General Ewell to have the supporting artillery returned. Not fully realizing the importance of time under the existing conditions, Ewell gave orders, not for the immediate return of the guns, but that they should be returned at daybreak of the 12th. Before that time arrived, Hancock's superb corps, in solid mass, rushed upon the apex of the salient, expecting to carry it by assault. Johnson's command, a mere remnant of the division that had stormed Culp's hill, at Gettysburg, was on the alert and met this attack bravely; but musketry alone was not sufficient to drive back Hancock's many, massed battalions, which swarmed over the log breastworks and captured Johnson and 2,800 of his men. Just then, the batteries that had been ordered back came forward at a gallop, but only in time to fall into Hancock's hands and add their twenty cannon to his captures.

Flushed with victory, the Federal columns prepared to continue their assault, by dashing forward, through the salient, to the southward; but Lane's brigade, on Ewell's right, which had not been involved in the capture, as had Stuart's on its left, faced about, and, pouring a rapid and well-directed fire upon Hancock's advancing left flank, forced it to recoil. Promptly forming his men across the base of the salient, and taking direction from the noise of the advancing fire of the Federals, Gordon made ready to go forward and meet and drive back the Federal onset. At this juncture, Lee, roused from his quarters in the rear of the salient, by the mighty roar of the conflict in progress, came riding rapidly to Gordon's line and quietly took position to lead it forward. Gordon, in a tone clear, but not loud, spoke out: "This is no place for General

Lee." His men caught the words and instantly shouted, "General Lee to the rear," while Gordon, his mobile face showing the incarnation of heroic daring, fairly shouted to General Lee: "These men are Georgians and Virginians. They have never failed you; they will not fail you now." Just then a veteran stepped from the ranks, and seizing his bridle turned "Traveler" backward, and again the imperative order came from his soldiers: "Lee to the rear," and as he obeyed, Gordon's men rushed forward to death and to victory.

The steady roar of the battle, which had been continuous since half past 4 of the morning, from the dawning of the day, now swelled in volume as Gordon met Hancock in the pine thickets embraced within the salient. The Federal left was soon thrust back and Gordon held the works on the east. Ewell hurried forward Ramseur's brigade, which had occupied the extreme left of the salient, in attack upon Hancock's right; while from Early's command, the Third corps, came the brigades of McGowan and Harris, following up the advance of Gordon and Ramseur. Lee, remaining where Gordon had left him, again rode forward to lead Harris' Mississippians, who, seeing this, in turn shouted: "Lee to the rear," as they followed up Ramseur's attack on Hancock's right.

These rapid combinations and charges of Lee's men soon drove Hancock outside the salient, and only left him in possession of the outer trenches at its apex and along its northern front. Two divisions, from the Sixth corps, were hurried forward to support Grant's line along the northern and northwestern side of the salient. These engaged in combat with the brigades of Harris' Mississippians, McGowan's South Carolinians and Ramseur's North Carolinians, and from opposite sides of these log breastworks, a bloody struggle continued from early morning until late afternoon, with unflinching desperation on either side, fairly filling the trenches and piling their borders, on each side, with the slain and the wounded, and giving to this portion of the famous salient the name of "the Bloody Angle."

Grant continued to hurl division after division and corps after corps in fierce and continuing attack, upon every portion of Lee's line. The Fifth and part of the Sixth corps were charging his left, while Burnside, with another corps, was charging his right. A division of the

Fifth corps was added to Hancock's attack in the center. Lee had not another man to spare, but the few hardy veterans that sustained the keystone of this arch of defense, held it with a desperate and unyielding courage unsurpassed in the annals of human conflicts.

The Federal engineers had, by careful triangulations, mapped the great salient and, guided by this information, batteries were so placed, in all available positions, as to bring cross-fires to bear upon its defenders. Big mortars were placed in position that dropped their heavy shells into the Confederate lines. Cannon were dragged to the front, and their muzzles thrust through or across the Confederate log intrenchments, and fired upon Lee's three brigades of heroes, who, unhesitatingly, stood to their assigned duty. Infantrymen, from opposite sides of the works, climbed up and fired into the faces of their opponents; they grappled one another and attempted to drag each other across the breastworks; bayonet thrusts were made through crevices; the continuous musketry fire cut off large trees standing in the line of the works; the dead and the dying had to be flung to the rear to give room for the living, fighting ones, in the trenches; and, to add to the horrors of the combat, a cold, heavy rain set in and partly filled the trenches, where the combatants stood, until they seemed to fairly run with blood.

Lee's charges and lines of defense were greatly strengthened by his grandly served artillery, which, when not assigned to fixed positions, hastened to the battle, took every point of vantage it could find, and poured shot and shell, with telling effect, into every portion of Grant's advancing lines, breaking their ranks and often driving them to the rear. Wherever they found an open front, where they would not fire on their comrades, the unaided artillery drove back Federal attacks. The writer, who was on this field of awful combats, does not believe that human ear ever listened to a more steady and continuous roar of musketry and artillery than that which rose from that field of fierce contention, from the dawning of the day until late in the afternoon. The slackening fight continued until night closed the scene, when Hancock withdrew his surviving and nearly exhausted veterans from the ditch in which they had fought so long, leaving but a regiment behind as a picket. Gordon's men worked throughout the succeeding night, throwing

breastworks across the base of the salient, and not until near the dawn of the 13th were Lee's well-nigh exhausted men withdrawn from the long-held and much-fought-for horseshoe salient, to find rest behind the new works their comrades had constructed, thus straightening his front and giving him a shorter and more formidable line than he had held before. Notwithstanding the capture of Johnson's division, at the opening of the combat, Lee's losses, from his 50,000 present, were only some 8,000 men; but these were 18 per cent of his army. Grant had thrown twenty-two brigades against Lee's center, at the salient, but had failed to reach his rear, and had really gained nothing but great losses for his strenuous efforts; from his 100,000 in hand, 16,000 were killed or wounded.

At 6:30 of the afternoon of the 12th, after the close of the famous battle of Spottsylvania Court House, Grant dispatched to Halleck: "The eighth day of battle closes. . . . The enemy are obstinate and seem to have found the last ditch. We have lost no organization," etc. Dana, a half hour later, telegraphed to Stanton:

The battle has raged without cessation throughout the day. Wright and Hancock have borne the brunt of it. . . . Burnside's troops generally have borne themselves like good soldiers. I should here mention that only his white troops have been engaged, the colored division having been kept in the rear to guard the trains. Warren has gained nothing. His attacks were made in the forenoon, with so much delay, that Grant and Meade were greatly dissatisfied; but when they were made they were unsuccessful, though attended with considerable loss. The rebel works in his front were very strong, and finally, at about 1 o'clock, the chief portion of his troops were withdrawn from his lines and brought to the support of Wright. It was then intended to attempt a grand assault, with a very powerful column under Wright, at about 5 o'clock; but when the men were brought up, they were so tired from the long day's work, and the chances of success were so much short of certainty, that General Wright advised General Meade to postpone the attempt, and accordingly the obstinate battle was allowed to pause here. The results of the day are, that we have crowded the enemy out of some of his most important positions. . . . Our troops rest to-night upon the ground they have so victoriously fought for.

At 8 next morning, May 13th, Dana telegraphed again:

Lee abandoned his position during the night—whether to occupy a new one in the vicinity or to make a thorough retreat is not determined. . . . Though our army is greatly fatigued, from the enormous efforts of yesterday, the news of Lee's departure inspires the men with fresh energy. The whole force will soon be in motion, but the heavy rain of the last thirty-six hours renders the roads very difficult for wagons and artillery. . . . The proportion of severely

wounded is greater than either of the previous days' fighting. This was owing to the great use made of artillery.

At 6 in the afternoon of the same day, he dispatched:

The impression that Lee had started on his retreat, which prevailed at the date of my dispatch this morning, is not confirmed. Our skirmishers have found the rebels along the whole line, and the conclusion now is, that the retrograde movement of last night was made to correct their position after the loss of the key-points taken from them yesterday, and they are still before us in force. Of course we cannot determine, without a battle, whether their whole army is still here, and nothing has been done to-day to provoke one. It has been necessary to rest the men, and accordingly we have everywhere stood upon the defensive.

He then claimed that, in changing his lines, Lee had uncovered the roads leading southward along his right, and that Grant had ordered Meade to withdraw Warren from the right and Wright from the center, around to the left, turn Lee's flank, and force him to move southward.

On the evening of the 12th, that ever-to-be-remembered day of fearful carnage, the sad news came to Lee of the death of Gen. James Ewell Brown Stuart, the "Jeb" Stuart of the Confederacy and of history, who had fallen, the day before, at the Yellow Tavern, a few miles to the north of Richmond, in repulsing an attempt of Sheridan to capture that city. Fully occupied with the enemy in his front, Lee waited until the quiet of the 20th before officially announcing to his army the great loss he had sustained, a loss only second, in its far-reaching consequences, to that of "Stonewall" Jackson. In his tribute to this grand leader of his cavalry corps, he said:

Among the gallant soldiers who have fallen in this war, General Stuart was second to none in valor, in zeal, and in unflinching devotion to his country. His achievements form a conspicuous part of the history of this army, with which his name and services will forever be associated. To military capacity of a high order and to the nobler virtues of the soldier, he added the brighter graces of a pure life, guided and sustained by the Christian's faith and hope. The mysterious hand of an all-wise God has removed him from the scene of his usefulness and fame. His grateful countrymen will mourn his loss and cherish his memory. To his comrades in arms he has left the proud recollection of his deeds and the inspiring influence of his example.

Notwithstanding Grant's recorded assertion, "I never maneuver," he spent from the 13th to the 18th of May in front of Lee, maneuvering and waiting for reinforcements, until he had rested his "tired" men, and 25,000 fresh troops were added to his numbers. On the 14th, at 7:10 of the morning, his dispatch read:

The very heavy rains of the last forty-eight hours have made it impossible to move trains of artillery. Two corps were moved, last night, from our right to the left, with orders to attack at 4 a. m., but owing to the difficulties of the roads, have not fully got into position. This, with the continued bad weather, may prevent offensive operations today.

The next morning he again telegraphed:

The very heavy rains of the last three days have rendered the roads so impassable that little will be done until there is a change in the weather, unless the enemy should attack, which they have exhibited but little inclination to do for the last week. I believe it would be better to strengthen the corps here, with all reinforcements coming, than to have them formed into separate commands.

The next morning he dispatched:

We have had five days of almost constant rain without any prospect yet of its clearing up. All offensive operations necessarily cease until we can have twenty-four hours of dry weather. The army is in the best of spirits and feels the greatest confidence in ultimate success. . . . The promptness with which you have forwarded reinforcements will contribute greatly to diminishing our mortality list and insuring a complete victory. You can assure the President and secretary of war, that the elements alone have suspended hostilities, and that it is in no manner due to weakness or exhaustion on our part.

An attack was made by Grant on the morning of May 18th, with his Second and Sixth corps, in another attempt to break Lee's center. Advancing to Lee's new line, which had excluded the great salient, these 12,000 Federals were broken, in retreat, by the heavy fire of twenty-nine of Lee's guns, before they came within rifle range. In like manner Burnside's simultaneous attack on Lee's right was similarly repulsed. Grant could find no weak point for breaking through, so he drew back, farther to his left, and sought for a third road to Richmond. On the next day, the 19th, Lee sent Ewell around Grant's right, to ascertain what he was doing. In this movement Ewell was repulsed, with a loss of 900 men, but he had detained Grant another day in front of Spottsylvania Court House and inflicted a severer loss than he himself suffered, as Grant confessed.

On the afternoon of May 19th, Grant wrote: "I shall make a flank movement early in the morning, and try to reach Bowling Green and Milford station," and wished his base, in that event, changed to Port Royal. At 10 p. m., of the same day, he again wrote: "The enemy came out on our right, late this afternoon, and attacked, but were driven back until some time since dark. Not knowing

their exact position, and the danger our trains at Fredericksburg will be in if we move, I shall not make the move designated for to-night, until their designs are fully developed." On the 20th he reported that his casualties of the previous day were 196 killed, 1,090 wounded, and 240 missing.

When Grant began his forward movement, on the 4th of May, he not only ordered Butler forward, but also directed Sigel, in the Shenandoah valley, to make a simultaneous advance to capture Staunton and break Lee's communications with the Shenandoah valley, with the 6,500 men and 28 guns in his command. Apprised of this movement, Lee ordered Gen. John C. Breckinridge to collect at Staunton the infantry and cavalry outposts that had wintered in the mountains west of the Great valley, and had called upon the governor of Virginia to add to these the cadets from the Virginia military institute, and with these march down the valley to meet this new irruption. Breckinridge had some 4,500 men, including Gen. John Daniel Imboden's cavalry and McLaughlin's artillery company with eight guns. These met Sigel at New Market, on the 15th of May, and completely routed him, capturing six guns and nearly 900 prisoners. Breckinridge's infantry made a front attack, aided by the artillery, while Imboden fell on Sigel's flank. The mere boys from the institute fought like veterans in this, their first engagement. Halleck telegraphed to Grant, on the 17th: "Sigel is in full retreat on Strasburg. He will do nothing but run. Never did anything else." The day before, Grant received the unwelcome news that the "army of the James," under Gen. Ben Butler, from which he expected so much assistance, and which he was longing to join, had been successfully repulsed from a position it had gained on the railroad between Richmond and Petersburg, and driven back into the angle between the James and the Appomattox, where, as Grant says in his official report, "his army, therefore, though in a position of great security, was as completely shut off from further operations directly against Richmond, as if it had been in a bottle strongly corked."

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE MANEUVERS ON THE NORTH ANNA RIVER.

ON the night of May 20, 1864, Hancock led Grant's third southward movement, far to the eastward of Lee's position at Spottsylvania Court House, and followed the road along the line of the Richmond & Fredericksburg railroad toward Richmond, his advance reaching Milford station during the night of the 21st. Grant's losses, since he crossed the Rapidan, on May 4th, had been over 37,000; half of these in the Wilderness battles and the other half in those of Spottsylvania Court House. Lee had lost about one-third of that number. Dana states that the Federal losses were "a little over 33,000," and that when Grant "expressed great regret at the loss of so many men," Meade remarked: "Well, General, we can't do these little tricks without losses."

Apprised, by his scouts, of Grant's movement, Lee dispatched Ewell, whom he accompanied, at noon of the 21st, from the right of his position at Spottsylvania Court House across the country to Mud tavern and on the Telegraph or old stage road from Washington via Fredericksburg to Richmond as far as Dickinson's mill, where he encamped that night, nearer to Hanover Junction than was Grant's advance at Milford station, although Dana was of the opinion that Grant had slipped away without Lee's knowledge.

On the morning of the 22d, Grant telegraphed, from Guiney's station, the position of his advance, and ordered the transfer of his depot of supplies from near Aquia creek to Port Royal on the Rappahannock. During the forenoon of that day, Lee and Ewell reached Hanover Junction, having crossed the North Anna at the Telegraph road bridge; Anderson, with the First corps, followed at midday, and Hill, with the Third corps, crossed, at the same place, on the morning of the 23d, when Lee's whole army took position on the south bank of the North Anna, covering the roads leading to Richmond and the junction of the Virginia Central and Richmond, Freder-

icksburg & Potomac railroads, thus controlling two rail-ways to his base of supplies at Richmond and one to his other base at Staunton, and to a connection with Lynchburg. By this timely and well-executed movement, Lee had again, without loss or interruption, anticipated Grant's progressive, but indirect, "on to Richmond," and placed himself directly across the roads the latter desired to follow to the Confederate capital. Dana says, "Now, for the first time, Lee blocked our southward march;" a remarkable assertion, in view of the bloody stoppage in the Wilderness, which had diverted Grant toward Spottsylvania, far to the eastward, to find a new road to Richmond.

Breckinridge, coming from the valley, after his defeat of Sigel at New Market, and Pickett, from toward Richmond, with 9,000 men, awaited Lee at Hanover Junction. Thus concentrated and reinforced, the army of Northern Virginia was quickly posted in one of the best defensive positions it had ever occupied; with its sturdy First corps in the center, across the Telegraph road; its flanking and fighting Second corps on the right, across the railway to Fredericksburg and extending to the North Anna, where that river runs southward in front of the Cedar farm bridge; and its gallant Third corps on the extreme left, extending to the road that crosses the Ox ford of the North Anna, and covering the eastward approaches to the line of the Virginia Central railroad. Pickett and Breckinridge were held in reserve, in the rear of the center, near Hanover Junction.

The march of the Federal army, on the 23d, was much embarrassed by ignorance of the country and the incorrect and misleading maps used as guides; but by 1 p. m., its Sixth corps, in the advance, reached the vicinity of the North Anna, at the Telegraph bridge, and, later in the afternoon, forced Lee's First corps guard across that bridge, and, without much opposition, secured a foothold on the south bank of the river and soon crossed over a large force, which, later in the day, repulsed a vigorous attack by Anderson. Grant's Second corps soon followed his Fifth and took position on its right, covering the Telegraph bridge and road, and later, his Ninth corps extended this line, on the south bank of the river, to a junction with his Fifth corps, which, with the Sixth, he had detached from his direct line of march, at Harris' shop,

and sent to the right, to Jericho ford, a few miles above the crossing of the Telegraph road, where it succeeded, late in the day, in making a crossing and falling upon Lee's left. Forcing back the Third corps for some distance, the Federals advanced and established a line, to the southwest, across the Virginia Central railroad, about a mile northwest from Anderson's station, and, with its right returned, covering the roads leading to the rear. This bold and well-executed, aggressive movement not only cut Lee's line of communication westward and threatened the turning of his left, but gave great confidence to the Federal arms and an eager anticipation of victory. At 6 p. m., Hill sent Wilcox's division to drive the Federals back, but without success; for they had not only seized, but had at once fairly well fortified the line they had secured. The opposing forces spent the night in throwing up lines of defensive works. Early the next morning, Lee rode to his left and sharply rebuked his lieutenant for having allowed Warren to cross the South Anna and secure a position that cut his line of communication with the great storehouse of the Valley, saying to him: "Why did you not do as Jackson would have done—thrown your whole force upon these people and driven them back?"

His left having been forced back, Lee shortened his line by retiring his center, until it was nearly in the form of a right-angled triangle, with the right angle opposite Quarles' mill, or the Ox ford. The left, under Hill, was extended northeast and southwest, from the North Anna, across the Virginia Central railroad to Little river, facing the Fifth and Sixth Federal corps. The First and Second corps were extended southeast to near Hanover Junction, and thence eastward and southward in a salient.

Lee's new disposition of his army cut Grant's army into two parts. Finding himself in this predicament, after several unsuccessful attempts to break Lee's lines, Grant dispatched to Halleck, from Quarles' mills, on May 26th:

To make a direct attack from either wing would cause a slaughter of our men that even success would not justify. To turn the enemy by his right, between the two Annas, is impossible, on account of the swamp upon which his right rests. To turn him by his left, leaves Little river, New Found river and South Anna river, all of them streams presenting considerable obstacles to the movement of an army, to be crossed. I have determined, therefore, to turn the enemy's right, by crossing at or near Hanover town, thus crossing all these streams at once, and leave us still where we can draw supplies.

He then stated, that during the preceding night he had withdrawn the teams and artillery from his right, across the river, and moved them down in the rear of his left, and would commence "a forced march for Hanovertown to seize and hold the crossing." So he withdrew from Lee's front, on the night of the 26th, and sought another road to Richmond, farther to the southeast. General Lee, having been taken seriously ill, was unable to fall upon Grant on the north side of the North Anna, as he fully intended to do.

Grant had utterly failed to accomplish his purpose, after crossing the North Anna, as was confessed by his lame statement as to the position of Lee's army, and by his withdrawal during the night of the 26th. The remarkable conclusion of his dispatch, of that day northward, is:

Lee's army is really whipped. The prisoners we have show it, and the action of his army shows it unmistakably. A battle with them outside of intrenchments cannot be had. Our men feel that they have gained the morale over the enemy and attack with confidence. I may be mistaken, but I feel that our success over Lee's army is already insured. The promptness and rapidity with which you have forwarded reinforcements have contributed to the feeling of confidence inspired in our men and to break down that of the enemy. We are destroying all the rails we can on the Central and Fredericksburg roads. I want to leave a gap in the roads north of Richmond so big that to get a single track they will have to import rails from elsewhere.

Not quite sure of the future, after having broken so many promises as to a direct march on Richmond, Grant added a postscript: "Even if a crossing is not effected at Hanovertown, it will probably be necessary for us to move down the Pamunkey until a crossing is effected;" and advised that his base of supplies should be changed to the White House, the very place where McClellan had his, when Lee met him in front of Richmond about a year before this time.

It is interesting to recur to Grant's previous dispatches from the North Anna. On the morning of the 24th of May, after Lee had shortened his lines and well-punctuated them all along with artillery, Grant wrote: "The enemy have fallen back from North Anna; we are in pursuit. Negroes who have come in state that Lee is falling back to Richmond. If this is the case, Butler's forces will all be wanted where they are." At noon of the next day he wrote: "The enemy are evidently making a determined stand between the two Annas. It would

probably take us two days to get in position for a general attack or to turn their position, as may prove best. Send Butler's forces to White House, to land on north side and march up to join this army. . . . If Hunter can possibly get to Charlottesville and Lynchburg, he should do so, living on the country. The railroads and canals should be destroyed, beyond possibility of repair for weeks. Completing this, he should find his way back to his original base, or from about Gordonsville, join this army." At the same hour Dana wrote: "If a promising chance offers, General Grant will fight, of course; otherwise, he will maneuver without attacking. Our forces are strongly intrenched and perfectly safe, even if Lee should attempt to push his whole army upon either division of ours." He concluded a dispatch of the morning of the 26th, after telling of Grant's new movement, in these words: "One of the most important results of the campaign, so far, is the entire change which has taken place in the feeling of the armies. Rebels have lost all confidence and are already morally defeated. This army has learned to believe that it is sure of victory. Even our officers have ceased to regard Lee as an invincible military genius. On the part of the rebels this change is evinced, not only by their not attacking, even when circumstances seemed to invite it, but by the unanimous statement of prisoners taken from them. Rely upon it, the end is near, as well as sure;" this, after confessing, the day before, to disasters from Confederate attacks.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE RICHMOND CAMPAIGN OF 1864.

AS soon as apprised of Grant's withdrawal from the North Anna, on the 27th of May, Lee ordered the Second corps, now temporarily under Early, to march southward, between the two railways, then cross the Central at Atlee's, and take position covering the roads to Richmond from the Hanover town crossing of the Pamunkey, which he was confident Grant would now seek. The First corps followed, by the parallel Telegraph road. The next day, after a march of thirty hours, in which 24 miles of road were covered, these corps were in line of battle between the Totopotomoy and the Chickahominy, covering the roads leading to Richmond that Grant was now seeking. Fitz Lee's cavalry withstood the Federal advance until the entire army of Northern Virginia was in position, in the afternoon of the 28th, having a severe engagement with the Federal cavalry at Haws' shop, north of the Totopotomoy.

From the north side of the Totopotomoy, from Hundley's corner, Grant sent dispatch to Halleck, May 30th, saying:

There seems to be some prospect of Lee making a stand north of the Chickahominy, his right near Shady Grove. I have heard nothing yet of Smith's troops reaching White House. If I can get up to attack, will not await his arrival. I wish you would send all the pontoon bridging you can to City Point to have it ready in case it is wanted.

He was evidently now anticipating defeat in front of Richmond, and that he would need pontoons by which to escape to Butler on the south side of the James, even after a fresh corps, under Smith, should reach his right. On the morning of the 31st, from Haws' shop, Grant reported: "The enemy came out on our left last evening and attacked. . . . To relieve General Warren, who was on our left, speedily, General Meade ordered an attack by the balance of our line. General Hancock

was the only one who received the order in time to make the attack before dark. He drove the enemy from his intrenched skirmish line, and still holds it."

Lee now asked that his army might be reinforced with that of Beauregard from south of the James. These two armies held the interior defensive line, while Grant and Butler held the exterior offensive one. Beauregard, in turn, urged the Confederate authorities to send him part of Lee's army, that he might fall upon and capture Butler, while Lee held Grant in check, and that he could then come north of the James and join Lee in forcing Grant to a surrender. Lee did not approve of this suggestion, and again urged that Beauregard should come to aid him in continuous battle against Grant. Beauregard, persistent in his determination, telegraphed to Richmond: "War department must determine when and what troops to order from here." Lee's prompt response was: "If you cannot determine what troops you can spare, the department cannot. The result of your delay will be disaster. Butler's troops will be with Grant to-morrow."

On the 1st of June, Grant made an attack, late in the afternoon, from his left, with the Sixth corps and the corps under Smith, holding Warren, Burnside and Hancock in position to advance, all along his lines, to his right. Attacking at about 5 p. m., and continuing until after dark, he forced back Lee's front lines, under his initial attack, but finding a second line which commanded the one captured, he made no further progress, but repulsed several counterstrokes. During the night of that day he withdrew his right and moved it to his left, beyond the road leading to Cold Harbor, extending his right to defend his own flank in the same direction, now resting his right on the famous Turkey hill, from which McClellan had been routed, after a desperate struggle, in the first battle of Cold Harbor, in 1862.

The intense heat of the June days of lowland Virginia, intensified by the clouds of dust raised by every movement, and the want of drinkable water, brought suffering and weariness upon both the contending armies. To these there were added for Lee's men the pangs of hunger. A credible witness, in the artillery, states that his command had received but two issues of rations since leaving Hanover Junction; one of these was three army

crackers and a small slice of pork; two days later a cracker was issued to each soldier. This was all that could be done to give physical strength to the grim veterans that stood behind the breastworks they had hurriedly thrown up to meet Grant's last contention for reaching Richmond from the north side of the James.

On the morning of the 1st of June, from near Bethesda church, then in front of Lee's center, Dana wrote to Stanton, that, at about 5 of the previous afternoon, Sheridan drove a force of Fitz Lee's cavalry, supported by Clingman's infantry, after a severe fight, from Cold Harbor, and took possession of the place, which the Sixth corps, at 10 p. m., set out to occupy, to be followed by a still larger force. He was in ignorance of the fact that Lee was moving a heavy column in the same direction. Later, he wrote that the Sixth corps reached Cold Harbor at 9 a. m. of that day, closely followed by Smith's; that these maneuvered, and at 2 p. m. found that there was no longer any enemy before them, except a few holding part of the road between Bethesda church and Cold Harbor. Warren, who had been ordered to attack the Confederate column marching toward Cold Harbor, had only opened on it with artillery, and, "at 3 p. m., reported that the intrenchments of the enemy were exceedingly strong, and that his own lines were so long that he had no mass of troops to attack with." Dana added that Wright had blundered in executing his order to attack Cold Harbor, and Warren had failed to execute his orders, and "both Generals Grant and Meade are so intensely disgusted with these failures of Wright and Warren, that a change has been made in the disposition of the corps, which will give us a heavy, movable column, for attack or defense, under a general who obeys orders without excessive reconnoitering;" and concluded by saying: "Sheridan, with Gregg's and Torbert's divisions, has moved around Lee's right flank to attack him in the rear. We are now (6 p. m.) waiting to hear Sheridan's guns. General Grant's present design is to crowd the rebel army south of the Chickahominy, then he means thoroughly to destroy both the railroads, up to the North Anna, before he moves from here; besides, he wishes to keep the enemy so engaged here that he can detach no troops to interfere with the operations of Hunter."

Two hours later, Dana dispatched: "At about 5 o'clock we heard the cannon of Sheridan, and soon after Wright and Smith attacked Lee's right wing with their whole force. They moved from Cold Harbor in the direction of Mechanicsville. Judging from the sounds of artillery and musketry, the fight was furious. . . . At about 6 o'clock Warren attacked in the center, but apparently not with much force. His firing is that of a lively skirmish. Immediately upon Wright's attack, the enemy moved out on his left against Hancock, as if to try what strength we had in that direction. He was decisively repulsed. Hancock followed up the repulse, but was not able to get over the rebel works, and fell back to his own lines." At 6 a. m., of the 2d, Dana again wrote, of the contests of the 1st:

It appears that the rebels three times assaulted the lines of Griffin, and they came up in three lines. They were terribly slaughtered by canister, and went back in disorder every time. Wright carried the rebel works before him, but withdrew afterward on account of an enfilading fire. It appears that Sheridan did not attack, his order not having reached in time, and his troops being scattered. He will go in the morning. . . . Hancock moved during the night to Cold Harbor, where his advance arrived about daylight. His rear is now (6 a. m.) marching past these headquarters. In conjunction with Wright and Smith, he will this morning fall upon Lee's right. . . . Warren and Burnside are ordered to open as soon as they hear that the three corps on our left have begun the battle. . . . Our line now extends from near the Chickahominy to Totopotomoy creek, but Burnside is ordered to withdraw from the right to the center, as rapidly as possible.

In a dispatch to the secretary of war, June 1st, Lee wrote:

There has been skirmishing along the lines to-day. General Anderson and General Hoke attacked the enemy, in their front, this afternoon, and drove them to their intrenchments. This afternoon the enemy attacked General Heth and were handsomely repulsed by Cooke's and Kirkland's brigades. Generals Breckinridge and Mahone drove the enemy from their front.

On the 2d, Lee again wrote:

Yesterday afternoon the enemy's cavalry were reported to be advancing, by the left of our line, toward Hanover Court House and Ashland. General Hampton, with Rosser's brigade, proceeded to meet them. Rosser fell upon their rear, and charged down the road toward Ashland, bearing everything before him. His progress was arrested, at Ashland, by the intrenchments of the enemy, when he changed his direction and advanced up the Fredericksburg railroad. Gen. W. H. F. Lee came up at this time, with part of his division, and a joint attack was made. The enemy was quickly driven from his place and pursued toward Hanover Court House until dark.

General Lee added that Fitz Lee was forced to retire from Old Cold Harbor, and that he had extended his own lines in that direction, placing Hoke on the extreme right; and as the enemy's movements were still continuing to his right, on the morning of the 2d, he had moved Breckinridge's corps and two divisions of Hill's to the right. In concluding he said:

General Early, with Ewell's corps and Heth's division, occupied our left, and was directed to get upon the enemy's right flank and drive him down in front of our line. General Early made the movement in the forenoon, and drove the enemy from his intrenchments, following him until dark. While this attack was progressing, General Hill reinforced Breckinridge with two brigades of Wilcox's division, and dislodged the enemy from Turkey hill, in front of our extreme right.

Lee's center under Anderson, the First corps and Hoke's division, were now in line across the River road between New Cold Harbor and Old Cold Harbor, facing eastward and covering a highway to Richmond. The corps of Breckinridge and Hill extended the right to the Chickahominy, while the Second corps, under Early, extended Lee's line to the left, covering the roads leading from the northeast, strengthened on the left by Heth's division of the Third corps.

In the afternoon of the 2d, Lee took the offensive, by ordering Early to assail Grant's right and sweep down toward his left; but he found Grant's right returned with formidable works, and, as his offer of open battle was not accepted, he built strong earthworks in front of Grant's, where he spent the night of the 2d.

At 4 p. m. of the 2d, Dana dispatched Stanton:

There has been no battle to-day. Hancock's men were so tired with their night march, of nearly 12 miles, from their previous position on our extreme right, and the heat and dust so oppressive, that at 2 p. m. to-day, General Grant ordered the attack to be postponed till 4:30 a. m. to-morrow. The weather is now changed, and we are having a violent rainstorm. Our entire losses yesterday were, in round numbers, 2,500 killed and wounded. . . . The right of our lines is now at Bethesda church, and on the left the cavalry hold, down to the Chickahominy. [Of Rosser's fight, he said:] Wilson fought his way out without great loss, but was obliged to leave his dead on the field. There joined this army, yesterday, ten old and new regiments, making an additional force of 2,327 men. [A postscript reads] I omitted to state, in cipher, that Sheridan had a smart fight this morning, near Gaines' mill, but was unable to force the line of the enemy, owing to the commanding position of their batteries.

On the morning of June 3d, at half past four, Grant

opened the culminating battle of his "on to Richmond" campaign by direct roads. Lee's veterans had, by this time, all become skillful military engineers, and of their own impulse had thrown up lines of defense, abounding in salients whence heavy guns could send forth searching cross-fires, at short range, against every portion of an attacking enemy. The infantry were well provided with loop-holes, and crevices between logs, from which to fire, also at short range, with deliberate aim. Hunger but made them fiercer combatants, and as Grant's great host advanced, it was met all along the line by a furious fire from artillery and infantry that no body of soldiers, no matter how brave and determined, could long withstand. Hancock assailed Lee's right with double line of battle, followed by supports. His daring men, rushing forward, captured one of Lee's salients, which Breckinridge recovered, by a prompt fire of artillery, under which 3,000 of Hancock's men fell upon the field. The equally bold assaults upon Lee's center and left met with the same fate, and within ten minutes the whole front of Grant's line of assault was shattered, and his troops, in dismay, fled to cover.

At 9 o'clock Grant ordered another attack. Hancock refused to even give it to his men. Smith, with the Eighteenth corps, writes, "That order I refused to obey." McMahon, chief of staff of the Sixth corps, says that Grant sent a second, and then a third order for renewed attack, and when it "came to corps headquarters, it was transmitted to the division headquarters, and to the brigades and the regiments without comment. To move that army farther, except by regular approaches, was a simple and absolute impossibility, known to be such by every officer and man of the three corps engaged. The order was obeyed by simply renewing the fire from the men as they lay in position."

Unable to force his men to again attack Lee's position, Grant ordered the construction of regular approaches, as if he would lay siege to the Confederate position, professing that he did this to keep Lee from sending troops against Hunter, who had now entered the Shenandoah valley and was advancing on Staunton, there to meet an army coming from the westward, and follow out Grant's orders to advance to Charlottesville and Lynchburg to destroy railways and canals—an expedition which came

to grief, through the operations of General Early, as related in a subsequent chapter.

In these two Cold Harbor battles, of June 1st and 3d, Grant lost fully 10,000 men, of his 110,000, the larger portion of them in the assault on the 3d. From the time of his crossing the Pamunkey up to the date of his retreat to the James, on the night of the 12th, he had lost over 14,000 men, besides the 3,000 sick that he had sent to the North, reducing his numbers by over 17,000. Lee's losses were about 1,700 of his 58,000, but 3 per cent.

In fleeing from Lee's front, on the 3d, Grant left the ground intervening between Lee's and his own intrenchments, strewn with wounded, who lay exposed to intense heat and the glare of a June sun, enduring suffering that cannot be described, until the 5th; Grant, unwilling, thinking it a confession of defeat, as it really was, to send a flag of truce and ask permission to remove them. When he did send, it was with the remarkable proposition, "that hereafter, when no battle is raging, either party be authorized to send, to any point between the pickets or skirmish lines, unarmed men, bearing litters, to pick up their dead or wounded, without being fired upon by the other party." Lee made reply that Grant should follow the regular course and ask for a truce. This he did, but to find his wounded men dead and to blame Lee for the delay. Gen. F. A. Walker, in his history of Hancock's corps, writes: "If it be asked why so simple a duty of humanity as the rescue of the wounded and the burial of the dead had been thus neglected, it is answered that it was due to an unnecessary scruple on the part of the Union commander-in-chief. Grant delayed sending a flag of truce to General Lee for this purpose because it would amount to an admission that he had been beaten on the 3d of June. It now seems incredible that he should, for a moment, have supposed that any other view could be taken of that action."

At two of the afternoon of the 3d, Grant dispatched to Halleck:

We assaulted at 4:30 this morning, driving the enemy within his intrenchments at all points, but without gaining any decisive advantage. Our troops now occupy a position close to the enemy, some places within 50 yards, and are intrenching. Our loss was not severe, nor do I suppose the enemy to have lost heavily.

His next dispatch from Old Cold Harbor, on the 5th of June, reads:

A full survey of all the ground satisfies me that it would not be practicable to hold a line northeast of Richmond that would protect the Fredericksburg railroad to enable us to use it for supplying the army. . . . My idea, from the start, has been to beat Lee's army, if possible, north of Richmond, then, after destroying his lines of communication north of the James river, to transfer the army to the south side and besiege Lee, in Richmond, or follow him south if he should retreat. I now find, after more than thirty days of trial, that the enemy deems it of the first importance to run no risks with the armies which they now have. They act purely on the defensive, behind breastworks, or feebly on the offensive, immediately in front of them, and where, in case of repulse, they can instantly retire behind them. Without a greater sacrifice of human life than I am willing to make, all cannot be accomplished that I had designed outside of the city. I have therefore resolved upon the following plan: I will continue to hold, substantially, the ground now occupied by the army of the Potomac, taking advantage of any favorable circumstance that may present itself, until the cavalry can be sent west to destroy the Virginia Central railroad, from about Beaver Dam, for some 25 or 30 miles west. When this is effected, I will move the army to the south side of James river, either by crossing the Chickahominy and marching near to City Point, or by going to the mouth of the Chickahominy on the north side and crossing there. To provide for this last, and most probable contingency, six or more ferryboats, of the largest size, ought to be immediately provided. Once on the south side of James river, I can cut off all sources of supply to the enemy, except what is furnished by the canal. If Hunter succeeds in reaching Lynchburg, that will be lost to him also. Should Hunter not succeed, I will still make the effort to destroy the canal by sending cavalry up the south side of the river with a pontoon train to cross wherever they can. The feeling of the two armies now seems to be that the rebels can protect themselves only by strong intrenchments, while our army is not only confident of protecting itself without intrenchments, but that it can beat and drive the enemy whenever and wherever he can be found without this protection.

The preceding was Grant's last dispatch from north of the James. Notwithstanding Grant's assertion that his army was "confident of protecting itself without intrenchments," he had been making intrenchments of the strongest character, during his whole campaign, whenever he had halted, or wherever he had taken position after crossing the Rapidan, as the writer personally knows from having sketched them, from the Rapidan to the Chickahominy, immediately after they were evacuated.

Dana reported on July 3d: "The working parties of each of those three corps (Hancock's, Wright's and

Smith's) carried forward their approaches. Hancock's lines were thus brought within some 40 yards of the rebel works;" and again at 4 p. m. of the 9th: "Our engineers, under General Barnard, are now at work on an inner line of intrenchments to cover the withdrawal of the army from this position."

Informed of Hunter's progress up the Valley and the results of the battle of Piedmont, on the 5th of June, and of Hunter's junction with Crook, from the Kanawha region, at Staunton, on the 8th, Lee detached Breckinridge's division on the 10th, to prevent Hunter from crossing the Blue ridge toward Charlottesville and destroying the Virginia Central railroad, thus again anticipating and interfering with Grant's plan of campaign. On the 8th, Butler sent a body of cavalry and infantry to capture Petersburg and destroy the bridges across the Appomattox. Grant says of this movement, in his official report: "The cavalry carried the works on the south side and penetrated well in toward the town, but were forced to retire. General Gillmore, finding the works which he approached very strong, and deeming an assault impracticable, returned to Bermuda Hundred without attempting one." Thus failed the first Federal attempt to capture the "Cockade City."

On the 7th of June, Grant sent, as he reports, "two divisions of cavalry, under General Sheridan, on an expedition against the Virginia Central railroad, with instructions to Hunter, whom I hoped he would meet near Charlottesville, to join his forces to Sheridan's, and, after the work laid out for them was thoroughly done, to join the army of the Potomac by the route laid down in Sheridan's instructions." This raid of Sheridan was met by Hampton's cavalry at Trevilian's station of the Virginia Central (now Chesapeake & Ohio) railroad, on the 12th, and after a hotly-contested battle that lasted several hours, Sheridan was forced to retreat to Grant's rear, without having accomplished the mission on which he was sent.

Notwithstanding the assertions of Grant, previously quoted, as to the condition and tactical operations of the army of Northern Virginia, Lee, on the 12th of June, before Grant began drawing back from his front to retreat to the James, ordered his Second corps, now in command of Lieut.-Gen. Jubal Anderson Early (General

Ewell having been put in command of the troops in Richmond), to march to Charlottesville and thence by rail to Lynchburg, as expeditiously as possible, to intercept Hunter's advance, which he was making, by way of Lexington, toward that important railway center and depot of supplies. Early, by his energetic movements, was enabled to meet Hunter in front of Lynchburg, on the 17th and 18th, and drive him in disaster across to the Valley, at Salem, and into the Appalachians, in continuous retreat to the Kanawha, while he turned northeast and moved on Washington, as related in detail in a subsequent chapter.

After providing a new line of intrenchments, in front of Lee, for his rear guard, Grant, during the night of June 12th, began his retreat; or, as some would call it, his fifth flank movement, but far away from Lee's left, from Cold Harbor to the James. A division of cavalry under Wilson, and his Fifth corps, crossed the Chickahominy at the long bridges and guarded his flank to White Oak swamp, while his other corps, marching farther to the east, reached Wilcox's landing and Charles City Court House on the James, during the night of the 13th, all marching through a country familiar to the army of the Potomac from the operations of McClellan in 1862. On the morning of the 14th, Grant's Second corps began crossing the James, in ferryboats, at Wilcox's wharf, while pontoons were being laid, which were completed by midnight, on which the rest of his army crossed rapidly, and on the 15th, the whole of it was safely concentrated in Butler's rear, on the south side of the James.

The impartial historian, having in hand the records of the leaders of the army of the Potomac and of the army of Northern Virginia, with all their detailed statements, made during and after this bloody campaign from the Rapidan to the James, from May 4 to June 14, 1864, is forced to the conclusion, that, in so far as Grant's leadership was concerned, it was a disastrous failure. He had not accomplished one of his strategic plans, unless that be called one which placed his army on the banks of the James, below Harrison's landing, to which McClellan had retreated after his disastrous campaign of 1862, after a loss of more than 42,000 men from the vast army of over 140,000 which was under his command during the

campaign, when he might have secured the same position, by moving by water, without the loss of a man. The only claim that he could make for recognition as a capable military leader, based on what he did in these campaigns, is that he had thinned Lee's ranks some 20,000 veterans, by his bulldog method of conducting war, which Lee could not replace, and to that extent had weakened the resisting power of the Confederacy.

The condition of Grant's entire army, after this remarkable campaign, may be inferred from what Gen. F. A. Walker, the historian of Hancock's corps, acknowledged to be the best in Grant's army, writes concerning that body of famous veterans:

As the corps turned southward from Cold Harbor to take its part in the second act of the great campaign of 1864, the historian is bound to confess that something of its pristine virtue had departed under the terrific blows that had been showered upon it in the series of fierce encounters which have been recited. Its casualties had averaged more than 400 a day for the whole period since it crossed the Rapidan. . . . Moreover, the confidence of the troops in their leaders had been severely shaken. They had again and again been ordered to attacks which the very privates in the ranks knew to be hopeless from the start; they had seen the fatal policy of "assaults all along the line" persisted in, even after the most ghastly failures; and they had almost ceased to expect victory when they went into battle. The lamentable story of Petersburg cannot be understood without reference to facts like these.

General Grant, in his report, written July 22, 1865, thus summarizes this campaign:

During three long years the armies of the Potomac and Northern Virginia had been confronting each other. In that time they had fought more desperate battles than it probably ever before fell to the lot of two armies to fight without materially changing the vantage ground of either. The Southern press and people, with more shrewdness than was displayed in the North, finding that they had failed to capture Washington and march on New York, as they had boasted they would do, assumed that they had only defended their capital and Southern territory. Hence, Antietam, Gettysburg, and all other battles that had been fought, were by them set down as failures on our part and victories for them. And their army believed this. It produced a morale which could only be overcome by desperate and continuous hard fighting. The battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna and Cold Harbor, bloody and terrible as they were on our side, were even more damaging to the enemy, and so crippled him as to make him wary ever after of taking the offensive. His losses in men were probably not so great, owing to the fact that we were, save in the Wilderness, almost invariably the attacking party, and when he did attack, it was in the open field. The details of these battles, which for endurance and bravery on the part of the soldiery had rarely been surpassed, are given in the reports of Major-General Meade, and the subordinate reports accompanying it.

In his dispatch of June 5th, Dana states, that since his report of June 2d, 19,190 men had reinforced Grant's army, and that, at that date, it contained 115,000 fighting men. He concludes: "Generals Grant and Meade agree that Lee's whole command, here and south of Richmond, is now 80,000, exclusive of any mere militia that may have been at Richmond." In reality Lee had, at that time in his immediate command, less than 30,000 men, all told.

On the afternoon of June 5th, Dana, for the first time, intimates a retreat to the James by saying: "Sheridan thinks we shall have no difficulty in crossing the Chickahominy at Jones' bridge and below." On the morning of the 7th, he says: "Grant is now nearly ready to strike for the James; and he means to stay here but a short time," meaning at Cold Harbor. Again on the 8th: "Two officers of General Grant's staff are now with General Butler, making arrangements for the movement of this army to Bermuda Hundred. They ought to be back to-morrow. Possibly the march may begin to-morrow night." On the afternoon of the 9th, he reported: "Our engineers, under General Barnard, are now at work on an inner line of intrenchments to cover the withdrawal of the army from this position. Very probably this movement will begin to-morrow night." Again, on the morning of the 10th, Dana wrote: "General Grant is waiting for the report of Lieutenant-Colonel Comstock and Lieutenant-Colonel Porter, the officers sent Tuesday to General Butler, before deciding as to movement of the army. Possibly it may be necessary to send an army corps to General Butler, in order to make his position perfectly safe, while this army is moving to James river, and Lee is temporarily released from the danger of being attacked. . . . General Grant does not expect to be able to cross the Chickahominy higher than Long Bridge, but he will try to get over at Bottom's bridge and secure a road connected with that crossing." On the morning of the 12th, Dana reported the return of the messengers from Butler, and wrote: "Army moves to-night after dark. . . . If not opposed by enemy in force, column will strike James river opposite Bermuda Hundred. If resisted, they will move to point opposite Fort Powhatan. General Butler has been ordered to throw a bridge and corduroy across the marsh at the latter place."

Lee discovered, at daybreak of the 13th, that Grant had left his front. After advancing his skirmishers for nearly two miles, without finding the enemy, he moved his army to conform to Grant's movement, sending Anderson and Hill to the right to cover his front from White Oak swamp to Malvern hill, and Hoke to Petersburg, to anticipate Grant's next attack. His whole force north of the James, when Grant retreated, was less than 30,000 men. On the 14th, the Federal cavalry came to Malvern hill, to make a demonstration to cover Grant's crossing the James. Gen. W. H. F. Lee easily drove these back, while a brigade of infantry, supporting the cavalry at Smith's store, drove the enemy from that point.

On the 16th of June, Lee sent the divisions of Pickett and Field across the James, and on the 17th these drove Butler from a portion of Beauregard's old line, which he held in front of Bermuda Hundred. A cheerful dispatch from Lee reads: "We tried very hard to stop Pickett's men from capturing the breastworks of the enemy, but couldn't do it." The spirit of the Confederate army, and of its leader, at this time, could not well have been better expressed.

Satisfied that Grant would make no further attacks north of the James, but would again essay to make one in force on the south and against Petersburg, from the stronghold which he had secured south of the Appomattox to fall back upon in case of disaster, Lee sent the rest of his army across the James, and, on the afternoon of the 18th of June, joined Beauregard, who, from the 15th to the 18th, with some 10,000 men, had beaten back numerous assaults of nearly half of Grant's army, decreasing his numbers by fully 10,000 men during four days. These, added to those lost between the Rapidan and the James, made Grant's aggregate loss up to June 18th, nearly 65,000 men, which had been made good by the addition of 55,000 reinforcements to his ranks.

The armies of the Potomac and the James, and that of Northern Virginia, under their respective generals commanding, now confronted each other, south of the James, and the long and memorable siege of Petersburg began. Grant, after Butler's repulse of the 18th, wrote to Meade, giving the keynote of his future intentions: "Now we will rest the men and use the spade for their protection, until a vein can be struck."

CHAPTER XXVIII.

EARLY'S LYNCHBURG AND VALLEY CAMPAIGNS.

CONSIDERING the great disparity of forces engaged and the results accomplished, the Shenandoah Valley campaigns of 1864, by Lieut.-Gen. Jubal Anderson Early against the forces of Gen. David Hunter at and beyond Lynchburg, including the advance on Washington and the subsequent numerous contentions with the large army commanded by General Sheridan, were among the most remarkable and brilliant of the Confederate war in Virginia and Maryland. Unfortunately the record of these campaigns, as officially published, is a very meager one, as scarcely any reports concerning its operations were sent in to the Confederate government, and consequently few were found among the archives that were captured by the Federal forces during the retreat from Richmond, and since so impartially published. The Confederate portion of the story of these campaigns is mainly told by the maps and accompanying brief report and personal diary of the writer of this volume, which were furnished to the United States war department and are published in serial No. 99 of the War Records of the Union and Confederate armies, and in part 17 of the great Atlas accompanying these records. Aided by these, General Early wrote and published his brief, truth-telling narrative of the events of these campaigns. The Federal reports of these campaigns, as published in the Official Records, are voluminous, and numbers of the officers connected with the portion of the Federal army that Early contended with, have published narratives and magazine articles concerning these unique and but little understood campaigns.

The Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, after participating in all the battles and engagements of the Wilderness campaign, from the 3d of May until the 8th of June, 1864, was resting, in reserve, in a camp to the west of Gaines' mill, until the morning of the 13th

of June. Just preceding this date, two Federal armies—one under Hunter, coming up the Shenandoah valley, and another, under Crook, coming from the Kanawha from the west by way of the White Sulphur Springs—had made a junction at Staunton and moved up the valley to Lexington. Hunter had, on the 5th of June, encountered and defeated a small Confederate force, under Jones and Imboden, at Piedmont, a hamlet some fourteen miles northeast of Staunton, on the road leading to Port Republic. The force that was there defeated fell back to and held Rockfish gap, of the Blue ridge, where the Virginia Central railroad runs through a tunnel, and thus diverted Hunter's army from going in that direction toward Richmond to join Grant, and decided him to follow up the Valley to Lexington, where he had skirmishes with the cadets of the Virginia military institute and with a small force of Confederates that had fallen back as he advanced. Thence, after burning the Virginia military institute and committing other deeds of barbaric vandalism, he moved on to Buchanan, where he had another skirmish, June 14th, after which he turned across the Blue ridge toward Lynchburg, in front of which he appeared on the 17th of June; thus menacing not only Lee's communications with one of his principal bases of supplies, but also the rear of his army.

On the 13th of June, Lieut.-Gen. Jubal A. Early, who had been promoted and put in command of the Second corps, was detached from the army of Northern Virginia, and marched, at 3 a. m., by way of the Mountain road, to Auburn mills, on the South Anna, where he encamped that night. On the 14th, he marched to Gardiner's cross roads; on the 15th to the vicinity of Trevilian's, and on the 16th to the vicinity of Charlottesville. Thence, on the 17th, a portion of his command was taken by the trains of the Orange & Alexandria railroad to Lynchburg, and a portion of it marched to North Garden depot, whence, later, it was carried to Lynchburg by rail. Arriving at Lynchburg with Ramseur's and Gordon's divisions at 1 p. m., of the 17th, Early at once marched out on the Salem road, and taking command, put his men in position with those of General Breckinridge's command, consisting of Wharton's division of infantry, King's artillery, and Jackson's, Imboden's, McCausland's and Jones' brigades of cavalry, which he found holding

and constructing a line of defenses in front of that city.

On the 18th, Rodes' division arrived, brought by rail from North Garden. Early, his command now concentrated, formed a line of battle some three miles west and in front of Lynchburg; in the afternoon met and repulsed Hunter's attack, and compelled him to retreat that night by the Salem road. The next morning the "army of the Valley District," which the Second corps had again become, promptly pursued Hunter, over a hot and dusty road, and attacked his rear in a skirmish at Liberty, and there encamped for the night. On the 20th, Early continued the pursuit to the entrance to Buford's gap, where he had another skirmish with Hunter's rear guard. From Liberty he had sent most of his cavalry across the Blue ridge, by way of the Peaks gap, to Buchanan, to hold the Valley and prevent Hunter from retreating in the direction of Lexington. This force turned from Buchanan toward Salem, and was ready to fall on Hunter's right flank and co-operate with Early's pursuit, on the 21st, to Big Lick, and then across to Hanging Rock, a gap in the North mountains, on the Salem and Sweet Springs turnpike. There it struck the flank of Hunter's retreat, which had been expedited by Imboden's cavalry, which had marched to the left and crossed the Blue ridge southwest of Buford's gap and fallen upon Hunter's rear and left flank at Big Lick (now Roanoke) and forced him in rapid retreat through Salem, harassing and damaging his rear and capturing a portion of his train at Hanging Rock, as he escaped into the mountains west of the Valley. Imboden followed the rear of Hunter's retreating army across to New Castle, on the 21st and 22d. Ransom's cavalry, the command that had marched by way of Buchanan, attacked Hunter's line of retreat at 11 a. m. of the 21st, at Hanging Rock, and also in the vicinity of Salem, aiding Imboden in creating dismay in the ranks of the baffled and retreating army at the latter place; Early's strategy having attacked it in the rear and on both flanks at the same time.

The night of the 21st, the Valley army encamped between Big Lick and Hanging Rock, and there it remained on the 22d, except Ramseur's division, which moved eastward to the vicinity of Botetourt Springs, where headquarters were established, while Ransom's cavalry marched northward to the vicinity of Fincastle.

Hunter's army now disposed of and sent in disastrous defeat through the mountains to the Kanawha, and the Valley of Virginia now cleared of the enemy, Early started on June 23d, by easy marches, for Staunton, whither he had been ordered by Lee, there to await further instructions. He encamped the night of the 23d at Buchanan, and that of the 24th at Buffalo creek. On the 25th, reaching Lexington, he divided his command; one portion followed the Middlebrook road and encamped at Brownsburg, and the other the Greenville road and encamped at Midway, both of these roads leading to Staunton. A portion of the army marched to Middlebrook on the 25th. Ransom's cavalry had proceeded from Fincastle across to Clifton Forge, to intercept a possible turning of Hunter to the eastward, and thence, by way of Lucy Salina furnace, across the North mountain, and encamped at Colliertown on the 24th, then had marched to Middlebrook for the night of the 25th, thus covering widely the flank and front of the infantry movement against any possible attack by a force of the enemy coming in by any of the great highways leading from the west to Early's line of march. On the 26th, the cavalry continued along the highway on the western side of the Shenandoah valley and encamped near Buffalo gap and Churchville, covering the two great highways leading from Staunton toward the west and northwest. The same day the infantry reached Staunton, where it rested and refitted during the 27th.

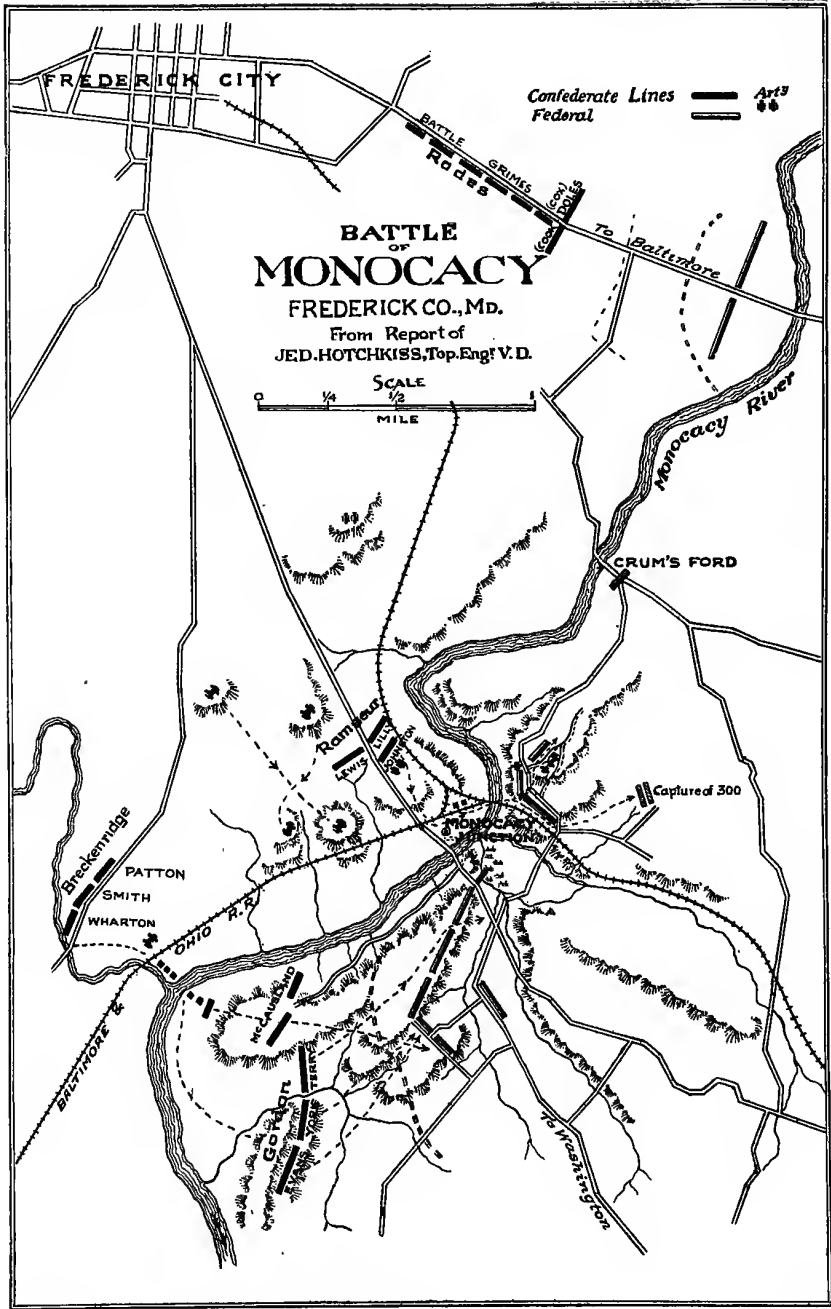
Having received instructions from General Lee to march down the Shenandoah valley and make demonstrations toward Washington, General Early lost no time in obeying his orders, and on the 28th, took up his line of march down the Valley turnpike, with most of his command, and encamping that night near North river, while the remainder of his infantry, taking the Keezletown road at Mt. Sidney, encamped on the south bank of the same North river at Rockland mills. The cavalry followed the back road parallel to and on the left of the infantry advance. On the 29th, a long march was made, through Harrisonburg and Keezletown, to Sparta, where the command was reunited and encamped.

The troops, animated by the familiar scenes of the Shenandoah valley and inspired by these with the remembrance of their famous exploits under Stonewall

Jackson, marched briskly forward, on the 30th, through New Market and Mt. Jackson, to the vicinity of Hawkins-town. The next day, July 1st, with like alacrity, the march was continued, through Edenburg, Woodstock and Maurertown, to a camp near Fisher's hill. On the 2d, the march was through Strasburg, Middletown and Newtown, to the Opequan at Bartonville; all places that recalled glorious victories. On the 3d, a long march carried Early's men through grand old Winchester, with its ever zealous and patriotic people, all of whom that were not in the army, cheering, meeting and welcoming the passing soldiery. A portion of the command went to Martinsburg and another portion to Leetown, on the way to Harper's Ferry. Part of the cavalry advanced from Winchester, by way of the Back Creek valley, to North Mountain depot, of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, cut off the retreat of a body of the enemy at Martinsburg, and protected the flank of the army moving in that direction; while another portion led the advance to Leetown, where it encountered the enemy's cavalry, and after a severe engagement drove it through Kearneysville.

On the 4th of July, Ramseur's division marched, by way of Flowing Springs and Brown's, to Halltown, and Rodes' division to the same point by way of Charlestown. This combined force drove the enemy from Halltown and Bolivar heights, and took possession of the latter with its skirmishers, the enemy shelling these from Maryland heights, where they had planted 100-pounder guns, also from Fort Duncan, north of the Potomac, and from works in front of Harper's Ferry. After dark the enemy evacuated the latter place, and Early's skirmishers took possession of it. The other divisions of the army marched from Martinsburg to Duffield's, on the Baltimore & Ohio, not far from Harper's Ferry, and the infantry was again united in that vicinity. McCausland's brigades of cavalry attacked North Mountain depot of the Baltimore & Ohio early on the morning of the 4th, took 200 prisoners, and then marched to Hainesville.

On the 5th of July, Gordon's division crossed the Potomac, at the familiar Boteler's ford, and then marched down the river, on the Maryland side, and encamped near the mouth of the historic Antietam. Vaughn, in command of Breckinridge's division (Breckinridge himself commanding a corps which Early had formed from Breck-



inridge's old division and Gordon's division), marched to Sharpsburg and encamped on the famous battlefield. McCausland advanced his cavalry to Shepherdstown, while Ramseur and Rodes spent the day at Harper's Ferry. On the 6th, Gordon continued his march down the Potomac to near Maryland heights, threatening the Federals holding that formidable position; while Ramseur and Rodes marched to the vicinity of Sharpsburg, leaving one brigade on guard at Harper's Ferry. The cavalry advance marched to Boonsboro, at the foot of the South mountain, while McCausland brought his force to the Antietam in front of Sharpsburg.

On the 7th, Gordon drove in the enemy's outposts at Fort Duncan and Maryland heights, and supported by Wharton (Breckinridge's division), he engaged the enemy to within 600 yards of these frowning and commanding fortifications. Rodes, threatening the rear of these same intrenched Federal forces, advanced to near Rohrersville, while Ramseur marched to near Sharpsburg. Lewis' brigade of Ramseur's division remained on Bolivar heights until late in the afternoon, when it rejoined him at Sharpsburg by the usual route. McCausland marched to Hagerstown, and there had an engagement with some United States regular cavalry, which he forced to retreat. The remainder of the cavalry marched across the mountains to the vicinity of Frederick City, where it had a slight engagement with the enemy's outposts.

On the 8th, Ramseur marched, by way of Boonsboro and Middletown, to the summit of the Catoctin mountain, where he found Early's cavalry advance in position, and where he encamped. Gordon and Wharton marched from Rohrersville, by way of Fox's gap and Middletown, to the foot of the Catoctin mountain; while Rodes, from Rohrersville, crossed the South mountain by Crampton's gap and encamped near Jefferson, also at the foot of the Catoctin mountain, but a few miles south from the camp of the other divisions, and in position to meet any demonstration from the enemy's force left on Maryland heights. McCausland marched all night, passed the Boonsboro gap at daylight and went on to Frederick City, where he skirmished with the enemy, and then encamped in front of the infantry at Middletown.

The battle of the Monocacy, a short and bloody battle, was fought on the 9th of July. Ramseur, at an early

hour of that morning, drove in the enemy's pickets, near Frederick City, and followed them through that town toward Monocacy Junction of the Baltimore & Ohio, on the eastern side of Monocacy river, where a Federal army, under Gen. Lew Wallace, occupied a strong position, protected by two well-constructed block-houses, one of them flanked by strong earthworks on a nearby hill, its main force occupying a commanding plateau extending southward from the block-houses and overlooking the lovely valley of the Monocacy. Ramseur promptly engaged the enemy in his front, skirmished with them, and brought several batteries into position to reply to those from the plateau that had opened on him. Having reconnoitered the enemy's position, Early ordered McCausland's brigade of cavalry, which had moved from Middletown by way of Jefferson, to cross the Monocacy, below the enemy, and get upon his flank. This movement was successful, and he quickly drove away the Federal cavalry and skirmished with its infantry. Gordon's division soon followed McCausland, struck the enemy's flank and drove it back in confusion, having turned its works, to a second line, which he also broke and completely routed, pursuing them for some distance and capturing many prisoners, until night closed the pursuit. McCausland's brigade followed the enemy's cavalry to Urbana, on the road to Washington city, and there had an engagement with them, after which he fell back to the Monocacy.

Rodes' division moved out on the road to Baltimore and had a brief skirmish with Wallace's discomfited and retreating army. Early's troops encamped on the battlefield, resting from their decisive, but dearly bought victory. Gen. Bradley Johnson's brigade of cavalry, formerly Jones', started on an expedition to the vicinity of Baltimore, riding by way of Liberty, Unionville and Westminster, then along the Western Maryland railroad to Relay and to Gunpowder bridge, on the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore railroad, which they destroyed; detached parties visited other important points to the north of Baltimore, and all returned, by way of Brookeville, to the vicinity of Washington, where they rejoined the main body on the 12th.

On Sunday, the 10th, the enemy retreated toward Baltimore. Early destroyed the iron bridge of the Balti-

more & Ohio railroad across the Monocacy, and the block-houses at the junction, and, having buried his dead and cared for his wounded, continued his march toward Washington City, by way of Urbana, with Gordon in front and Ramseur in the rear, who had some skirmishing with the enemy's cavalry, to near Gaithersburg, where he encamped. McCausland's, in advance, drove Wilson's cavalry contending with him to Rockville, where he encamped that night. On the 11th, with Rodes in front, Early advanced to Silver Spring, on the Seventh Street turnpike, on the borders of the District of Columbia and in sight of the dome of the capitol, where he engaged the enemy's skirmishers and drove them into the fortifications surrounding the city. The day was intensely hot, and the army much exhausted by its many long marches and by the severe and sanguinary battle it had fought at Monocacy. The forts and other works around Washington were found to be of a very formidable character, and fully manned; the whole surrounding country had been cleared off, so that every line of advance was exposed to the fire from the numerous forts and batteries that crowned the heights surrounding the Federal city. McCausland's cavalry brigade, in advancing from Rockville, took the Georgetown road, and had an engagement with the Federal cavalry near Tennallytown, while Colonel Mosby's command made a demonstration at the Chain bridge, northwest of Washington, on the Virginia side of the Potomac.

General Early learned, from a reliable source, soon after reaching the vicinity of Washington, that while his unexpected arrival had created great alarm, large reinforcements, consisting of two corps from Grant's army, were already beginning to arrive in Washington, by way of the Potomac, so that very soon the force of veteran soldiers in that city would be larger than his own. The delay caused by the well-contested battle of Monocacy had given the Federal authorities opportunity for bringing forward these reinforcements, and had made it not only inadvisable, but extremely hazardous for him to make an assault upon the works and attempt to capture the city. The 12th was spent in front of Washington, and Rodes' division had a heavy skirmish with the enemy in the afternoon on the Seventh Street turnpike, in front of Silver Spring, where Early had established his headquarters.

McCausland's cavalry was attacked on the Georgetown road, and he was forced, by superior numbers, to retire until infantry supports came to his relief.

At dark of the 12th of July, the trains were started to the rear, with Wharton's division in front, and at 11 p. m. the other divisions followed, with Ramseur in the rear, McCausland falling back by the river road and thus guarding the left flank of the march. Rockville was reached by daylight of the 13th, and Seneca creek at about noon of that day, where the army halted and rested until dark. McCausland marched to Edwards' ferry. The enemy's cavalry followed the main body to Rockville and attacked the rear guard, Jackson's brigade of cavalry, but were handsomely repulsed. The march was continued during the night, by way of Poolesville, the army reaching White's ford of the Potomac about midnight and resting there until dawn of the 14th, when it crossed the Potomac and went into camp on the Virginia side, on the road leading to Leesburg. The cavalry crossed into Virginia at Conrad's ferry, and then marched to Edwards' ferry, where it had an engagement with the Federal cavalry from the Maryland side.

The 15th was spent in camp, while the trains and prisoners were sent toward the Valley, by way of Upperville and Ashby's gap, convoyed by McCausland. The enemy made demonstrations along the Potomac, shelling the cavalry guarding the fords. On the 16th, the army again marched, by way of Leesburg and Purcellville, through Snicker's gap of the Blue ridge, with Jackson's cavalry in advance; and Gordon's and Wharton's divisions crossed the Shenandoah and encamped on its western side, between Snicker's ferry and Berryville, while the other divisions encamped on both slopes of the Blue ridge. McCausland followed after the trains to Ashby's gap, and Johnson marched on roads to protect the right flank from the enemy at Hillsboro, who had come in from Harper's Ferry, but he failed in doing this and an attack was made on the train, in passing through Purcellville, and some damage done; but the attack was soon repulsed, and a piece of artillery captured from the attacking party. McCausland crossed the river and went to the vicinity of Millwood.

On the 17th of July, the entire army got into camps on the western side of the Shenandoah, near Castleman's

ferry. Imboden went to Millwood, McCausland to Salem church, Jackson toward Charlestown, and Johnson farther to the left. The cavalry holding the rear fought the enemy's advance, on that day, at Snicker's gap of the Blue ridge. On the 18th the pursuing enemy crossed the Blue ridge at Snicker's gap, and made a furious attack on the Confederate camps, with their artillery on the bluffs overlooking the Shenandoah from the east. They attempted to cross the river at Cool Springs, but were met by Rodes and Wharton and driven back with considerable loss, Gordon engaging them at the same time near Castleman's ferry. In advancing across the mountain, the enemy met a lively cavalry contention. On the 19th an attempt was again made to cross the Shenandoah at Berry's ferry, from Ashby's gap, but this was frustrated and considerable loss inflicted on the enemy by the cavalry brigades of Imboden and McCausland.

On the 20th of July, Ramseur's division, with the cavalry of Vaughn and Jackson, which had been sent to Winchester the night before, marched out three miles toward Martinsburg, when it was vigorously attacked at Rutherford's farm, by Averell's Federal division of cavalry, its left flank turned and the entire force signally defeated, but saved from utter rout by Jackson's cavalry, which charged to the front and covered the retreat. One of the most notable instances of womanly courage and devotion was displayed upon this battlefield during the succeeding night, when one of the many noble women of the Valley that had gathered to care for the Confederate wounded, Miss Russell, held in her lap, during the entire night, the head of a Confederate soldier who could not be moved without the risk of his life, and thus saved him from death.

In the afternoon of the 20th, the trains were started up the Valley toward Newtown, and during the night Breckinridge's corps, consisting of Gordon's and Wharton's divisions, followed by McCausland, marched to Cedarville by way of Millwood, and on the 20th, to Middletown on the Valley turnpike. Rodes marched through White Post and on to Newtown, while Ramseur, having covered the evacuation of Winchester, marched to Kernstown.

The army marched to Cedar creek on the 21st, slowly followed by the enemy with a large force; on the 22d the march was continued to the vicinity of Strasburg, the

army encamping on Hupp's hill. McCausland moved to the vicinity of Front Royal. On the 23d, the enemy's cavalry attacked Early's rear guard near Newtown, but was driven back to Kernstown. McCausland's brigade marched up the North Fork of the Shenandoah from near Front Royal, to the vicinity of Buckton; the army remaining in camp near Strasburg, resting and cleaning up.

Having sent his prisoners, and the trains not needed, to the rear, and concentrated and rested his army, General Early again made a forward movement on the 24th, and marched toward Winchester, Gordon in front, preceded by Vaughn's cavalry, with Johnson on the right flank, Jackson on the left on the middle road, and Imboden on the back road. The enemy's pickets were driven in at Bartonsville, and the cavalry engaged them, at Kernstown, at 10 a. m. The infantry following soon came up, and a line of battle was formed, with Wharton on the right and Gordon on the left of the Valley turnpike, and Ramseur still further to the left on the middle road. Wharton soon turned the enemy's left flank, and they retreated in confusion from Stonewall Jackson's first battlefield of his famous Valley campaign. Johnson engaged the enemy's cavalry on the Front Royal road, and Rodes was moved across to cut off their retreat. They made desperate efforts to repulse the Confederate attack, but were pressed vigorously, not only by the cavalry, but also by Rodes and Gordon, through Winchester, and the infantry pursuit continued to Stephenson's and the cavalry to Bunker Hill, forcing them to burn and abandon 70 wagons and 12 caissons. The Confederate artillery did excellent work during this second Kernstown-Winchester engagement. The army went into camp between Winchester and Stephenson's. McCausland's cavalry marched that day by way of Cedarville to Winchester and on to Stephenson's. The Federal forces retreated toward the Potomac, the Confederate cavalry following to Martinsburg, where it had a lively skirmish with the Federal rear guard.

On the 25th, there was a heavy rain in the morning, after which the army marched to Bunker Hill. The cavalry, following the enemy to Martinsburg, again had a lively skirmish with its rear guard, covering its retreat across the Potomac. On the 26th, General Early marched to Martinsburg and encamped in its vicinity; the cavalry

continuing to opposite Williamsport, Md. The 27th and 28th were spent in destroying the Baltimore & Ohio railroad in the vicinity of Martinsburg, the cavalry guarding the flanks of the army.

On the 27th of July, McCausland, with his own and Johnson's brigades of cavalry, started on a memorable raid to Chambersburg, Pa., by way of Clear Spring, Md., where he encamped that night, reaching Chambersburg, by way of Mercersburg and St. Thomas, on the 30th, and demanding a named sum of money as an indemnity for the wanton burning of the house of Hon. A. R. Boteler, near Martinsburg, and that of Governor Letcher, by Hunter, in Lexington; declaring, at the same time, that if the indemnity were not paid, he would burn the town in retaliation and to put a stop to such vandalism. Payment was not made, and the town was given over to the flames. The same day McCausland marched to McConellsburg for the night, and on the 31st fell back to the Potomac, at Hancock, then followed the National road to Cumberland, August 1st, and thence down that river to Old Town, where he crossed into Virginia and encamped that night at Springfield. The next day he marched up the South branch of the Potomac to Romney, where he spent the 3d; then on the 4th he crossed over to New Creek, then back to Burlington and on to Moorefield on the 6th, where he was attacked and surprised in his camp by Averell's cavalry that had been following him, and driven out with loss and in confusion toward Lost river, which his shattered forces reached on the 7th. On the 8th, he rejoined the army at Mt. Jackson, in the Shenandoah valley.

On the 29th of July, Rodes and Ramseur marched to Williamsport, their skirmishers driving the enemy to Shepherdstown and clearing the way for McCausland to cross at McCoy's ford. The enemy's cavalry fired on their line of march at Falling Waters. After the passing of McCausland, the infantry returned to the Virginia side to encamp. These divisions fell back to Martinsburg on the 30th, and on the 31st to Bunker Hill, between which and Darkesville the entire army encamped, and where it remained during the 1st, 2d and 3d of August.

On the 4th of August, Breckinridge's corps, to draw attention from McCausland, advanced to Shepherdstown, by way of Leetown, while Rodes and Ramseur marched,

by way of Martinsburg, to Hainesville. On the 5th, Breckinridge crossed the Potomac at Williamsport and encamped near St. James college, between Williamsport and Hagerstown. On the 6th, Rodes and Ramseur returned to Virginia, by way of Williamsport, and encamped at Hammond's mill, while Breckinridge recrossed to the Virginia shore opposite Williamsport, by way of Tilghmanton. Some of the Confederate cavalry made a demonstration as far as Hagerstown.

On the 7th of August, the march of the army was continued, through Martinsburg, to the former camps at Bunker Hill and Darkesville. There General Early received information that a large Federal force was being concentrated at Harper's Ferry; and on that day the Middle military division of the United States army, consisting of the Middle department and the departments of Washington, of the Susquehanna and of West Virginia, was constituted, and Maj.-Gen. Philip H. Sheridan, of the United States army, was assigned to its command. Upon that day it is generally considered that the Valley campaign of Early and Sheridan began.

The preceding details as to the marches, encampments and engagements of the army of the Valley District, commanded by General Early, may be thought confusing and uninteresting; but in no other way can so good an idea be given of the boldness and energy, as well as of the strategic and tactical ability of the commander of that army. It is hoped that these details will also show the reader that Early had not only toughened and disciplined his little army, by keeping it constantly employed and in fighting trim, but had, in the best manner possible, impressed upon the authorities at Washington the necessity for bringing from Grant's army a large contingent of veteran troops and placing them in command of a leader of acknowledged ability and forceful activity, if they would protect the capital of the nation from assault, prevent incursions into the rich territory of the adjacent States of Pennsylvania and Maryland, and especially if they would keep open the great line of communication for the transport of supplies and the moving back and forth of armies that the Baltimore & Ohio railroad had proven to be.

It is well for the narrative to pause, to call attention to the fact that the bold movements of Early had not

only removed the apprehensions of Lee as to an attack in his rear by the large force that had been intrusted to Hunter, but had relieved Lee in the defense of Richmond by the distraction caused by the Maryland campaign, and the withdrawal of so many men from Grant's besieging army; also to consider the heroic achievements of this little army of men in the brief period from June 13th to August 7th, during which it had made direct marches from Richmond to beyond Lynchburg, into the Valley near Salem, then down the Valley into Maryland and to the very gates of Washington, fighting two important battles and engaging the enemy in uncounted skirmishes and engagements worthy of record. No less remarkable was Early's masterly retreat from Washington, back into the Shenandoah valley, warding off blows that from all sides were aimed at his movements, and giving better ones in return, so that he was not only able to maintain himself and provide for his army in the lower valley, but to destroy long stretches of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, and exact tribute from a wealthy Pennsylvania town for the wanton destruction of the private property of prominent citizens in Virginia.

The student of military history can but be impressed with the way in which Early dealt with Hunter; with the boldness and ability of his treatment of the defensive garrison occupying the strong position on Maryland heights at Harper's Ferry, merely toying with it in advancing and then, unhesitatingly, leaving it in his rear and ignoring it in passing on to Washington, a treatment quite unlike that of Lee's ever memorable Maryland campaign; the promptness and originality of his attacks on Lew Wallace, at Monocacy, when he landed a brigade of infantry on his enemy's flank, across a deep river, by the unheard of device of having each man of a brigade of cavalry take an infantryman behind him, in a dash through the river, and thus enable him to surprise the enemy by turning his flank with an infantry force, supported by a wing of cavalry, from a direction supposed to be unapproachable, and, so far as the writer knows, introducing to armies a novel method of movement and attack.

After spending August 8th and 9th in his camps at Bunker Hill and Darkesville, Early fell back to Stephenson's depot and sent Breckinridge to the mouth of

Abraham's creek, where he encamped, while Ramseur marched to Winchester, to meet a reported advance of the enemy from Romney, Rodes remaining at Stephenson's. The Federal advance made demonstrations on the Martinsburg, the Berryville and the Millwood roads, in the afternoon of the 10th, but was easily repulsed. On the morning of the 11th, Early concentrated his forces and formed a line of battle covering the approaches to Winchester from the east and southeast, also from the south and southwest. Ramseur observed the Front Royal road, Breckinridge the roads leading to Berryville and Millwood, and Rodes the one leading to Martinsburg. Some skirmishing and cannonading took place on the Millwood road, but it was soon ascertained that the Federal forces were aiming to reach the Valley turnpike, in Early's rear; to check this, Gordon was moved to the vicinity of Newtown, and took position covering the approaches to that place from the south and southeast, the remainder of the army following. About dark, Gordon had a brisk skirmish with the enemy, repulsing them, at the double toll-gate, where the turnpike road leading from Charlestown, by way of Berryville, Millwood and White Post, intersects the turnpike leading from Winchester to Front Royal, by which Sheridan was advancing to get in Early's rear. The latter encamped in the vicinity of Newtown.

On the morning of the 12th, the Confederate army marched, took position, and formed a line of battle behind Cedar creek, the enemy forming on the north side, and the armies engaged in skirmishing. In the afternoon Early retired beyond Strasburg to Fisher's hill, posting cavalry on his flanks and in front. The next day a line of defense was selected on Fisher's hill, following the bluff on the south bank of Tumbling run and extending from the North Fork of the Shenandoah northwest across the valley to the back road and the Little North mountain. Along this, rude intrenchments were made. On the 14th the enemy's skirmishers advanced across Cedar creek and engaged those of Early. A detachment of Federal troops drove the Confederate signal men from the peak on the end of Three-top mountain, or Massanutton; but this was soon driven off, with loss, by a detachment of sharpshooters, and this admirable point of observation recovered. On the 15th the

enemy's pickets were driven across Cedar creek and his position reconnoitered from the commanding point in the Valley turnpike, near Stickle's, overlooking his camps along Cedar creek.

The reinforcements sent by Lee to Early, under Anderson, marching by way of Front Royal, had their pickets attacked by the enemy at Guard hill, on the road from Front Royal to Winchester, to Anderson's disadvantage. This was followed by the Kernstown-Winchester engagement. On the morning of the 17th, apprised of the approach of additional troops to Early's assistance, by the skirmish at Guard hill, the enemy fell back from Cedar creek, burning barns and hay and grain ricks as they retired down the Valley, in order to destroy the subsistence on which Early depended for a supply for his army. Pursuit was immediately begun, down the Valley turnpike, with McCausland's cavalry in front, followed by Gordon, and with Jackson's cavalry on the Middle road and Johnson's on the back road. The enemy was overtaken at Kernstown and his skirmishers driven in, when it was found that his cavalry was supported by a brigade of infantry, posted on Bower's hill, in front of Winchester. Early promptly formed in line of battle, with a brigade of Wharton's division on his left and Ramseur's sharpshooters on his right. These advancing about dark, under a heavy fire of musketry and artillery, drove the enemy from the hill and through Winchester, McCausland having helped the movement by marching to the right of Winchester and coming in by the Berryville road. General Anderson, with Kershaw's division of infantry and Fitz Lee's of cavalry, advanced by the Front Royal road and encamped on the Opequan.

On the 18th, Rodes pushed out a reconnoissance on the Berryville road and Ramseur on the Martinsburg road, while Anderson came forward and encamped on the Front Royal and Millwood road, and Wharton and Gordon encamped on Abraham's creek, near Winchester. McCausland pushed the advance to Stephenson's depot, on the road to Martinsburg and Shepherdstown. On the 20th there was some cavalry skirmishing along the Opequan.

On the 21st, Early marched from Bunker Hill to the vicinity of Charlestown, driving the Federal cavalry from the line of the Opequan back upon an infantry sup-

port near Cameron station, and, engaging these about 9 a. m., he drove them toward Charlestown, in front of which some severe skirmishing took place; he also shelled the enemy's position. The Federals threw up rude fortifications in front of their lines and boldly resisted. Early encamped in front of the enemy near Cameron station. Vaughn's, Johnson's and Jackson's brigades of cavalry advanced to Leetown and then crossed to the vicinity of Charlestown; while McCausland's cavalry brigade followed the enemy's cavalry from the Opequan to Summit Point and covered the left of Rodes' advance. Fitz Lee, advancing his cavalry division by way of Berryville, engaged the enemy on that road, while Anderson forced them back on the Summit Point road. The enemy retired during the night, and on the morning of the 22d his cavalry was driven through Charlestown, and Early established his line of battle in the immediate front of that place, with Fitz Lee on his right and Lomax on his left. Anderson came to the vicinity of Charlestown. The army remained in this position on the 23d and 24th, extending its left along the Leetown road. The Federals drove in Early's pickets on the 24th; but they were easily repulsed and driven to within the defenses of Harper's Ferry.

On the 25th of August, leaving Anderson in front of Charlestown, with cavalry on his flanks, Early marched for Shepherdstown, by way of Leetown, with Wharton in front, and while on the march stumbled on Wilson's and Merritt's large divisions of Federal cavalry, which were starting on a reconnoissance up the Valley and had halted in a piece of woods to feed and rest, about two miles from Leetown, neither party expecting to meet the other. After some confusion, which was soon checked, Early formed a line of battle and boldly advanced, forcing the enemy back rapidly, although he met with bold and determined contention, during which artillery was used, through Kearneysville, on the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, to near Shepherdstown, where another brave stand was made and the opposing forces engaged in combat until dark, when part of the Federal cavalry, under Custer, escaped across the Potomac and part of it toward Harper's Ferry. Early's infantry encamped near Shepherdstown. The cavalry divisions of Fitz Lee and Lomax, preceding Early from Charlestown, met at Lee-

town, advancing by way of Smithfield, and went on to the Potomac at Williamsport, by way of Martinsburg, where they had an artillery duel with the enemy across the river, the next day. During the Kearneysville combat, Early sent Gordon's division around to the Federal flank, where that incomparable fighter and his fighting division made valorous and telling charges, in one of which Gordon was wounded in the face, by a saber slash.

On the 26th the army marched back to Leetown, with Ramseur in advance. The cavalry marched to Shepherdstown, after its artillery engagement at Williamsport. In the afternoon, the Federals from Harper's Ferry made an attack on Anderson's comparatively small force at Charlestown, which he repulsed. On the 27th the army marched to its old camps at Bunker Hill; Rodes by way of "The Bower," and Ramseur by way of Smithfield. Anderson fell back from Charlestown, by way of Smithfield and Brucetown, to Stephenson's. The cavalry that had been left at Charlestown retired to Smithfield, but was ordered back to hold its position in front of Charlestown. On the 28th the enemy's cavalry attacked Early's and compelled it to cross the Opequon. After a brisk engagement at Smithfield, Fitz Lee retired toward Brucetown, and Lomax toward Bunker Hill, thus allowing the enemy to occupy Smithfield, in the vicinity where they burned barns and houses. To stop this vandalism, Ramseur was advanced and crossed the Opequon, driving in the Federal cavalry; and Early's infantry, aided by sharp artillery practice, drove the Federals back across the Opequon, and from some rude works which they had constructed in front of Smithfield, and then returned to camp, leaving the cavalry behind. These the enemy again engaged in the afternoon and drove them back across the Opequon. McCausland advanced videttes on Gordon's right, from his position at Beeson's ford. Quiet prevailed on the 30th; but the enemy made some demonstrations along the Opequon on the 31st, which were met by the cavalry. On that day Anderson moved back to near Winchester, and Rodes marched to Martinsburg and back, on a reconnoissance.

Quiet prevailed September 1st, but on the 2d the enemy was reported as moving in force from Harper's Ferry and Charlestown toward Berryville. Early marched

three divisions of infantry, preceded by cavalry, across the country to near Stone's chapel, on a reconnoissance, Vaughn's brigade of cavalry, which had been left at Bunker Hill, having been stampeded by Averell's, the enemy was enabled to get on Johnson's flank and rout the whole command, capturing wagons, etc. Rodes, who had been left at Stephenson's, learning of this attack, moved forward rapidly and drove the enemy back to Bunker Hill. In the afternoon, in consequence of this attack, Early returned to camps in the vicinity of Bruce-town and Stephenson's, McCausland moving from Bruce-town to Rodes' right. Fitz Lee and Anderson moved toward Berryville, intending to recross the Blue ridge the next day, on the way to Richmond; Lee, hard pressed at Petersburg, having requested Early to return to him these troops. Early intended to move toward Charlestown the next day and engage the enemy's attention during Anderson's movement.

On the 3d of September, Sheridan started two divisions of cavalry, from near Charlestown, through Berryville and White Post, to raid on Early's rear, while he followed with his large infantry force to reoccupy his former position near Berryville. Fitz Lee, marching to cover Anderson's right, encountered the advance of Sheridan's cavalry, on the 3d, near White Post. He retired toward Newtown to guard Early's rear. Anderson, resuming his march on the 4th, crossed the Opequan, and between that stream and Berryville unexpectedly encountered part of Crook's corps, the advance of Sheridan's infantry movement, occupying an earthwork in front of Berryville and barring his progress. He promptly massed an attack and drove the enemy out of its works and back upon the main body of Sheridan's army, which he found occupying and fortifying a strong position, extending for over two miles along the Berryville and Summit Point road.

Informed of Anderson's engagement and the host he had encountered, and comprehending the critical position in which he was placed, Early abandoned his contemplated movement toward Charlestown, and at daylight, on the 4th, marched with three of his divisions for relief and support, leaving Gordon's division, the infantry portion of Anderson's command, audaciously extended as a strong skirmish line along Sheridan's entire front; aware that the Federal cavalry, returning from its raid, which

Fitz Lee had frustrated, was to Sheridan's rear, between Berryville and the Shenandoah. Early placed Ramseur's division on Kershaw's left and then moved, with Wharton's and Rodes' divisions, along the enemy's front toward his right, to reconnoiter and attack that flank if a favorable opportunity offered. Early, in his "Memoirs of the Last Year of the War for Independence, in the Confederate States of America," writes of this reconnoissance:

After moving in this way for two miles, I reached an elevated position from which the enemy's line was visible, and within artillery range of it. I at first thought that I had reached his right flank, and was about making arrangements to attack it, when casting my eye to my left, I discovered, as far as the eye could reach with the aid of glasses, a line extending toward Summit Point. The position the enemy occupied was a strong one, and he was busily engaged fortifying it, having already made considerable progress. It was not until I had had this view that I realized the size of the enemy's force, and as I discovered that his line was too long for me to get around his flank, and the position was too strong to attack in front, I returned and informed General Anderson of the condition of things. After consultation with him, we thought it not advisable to attack the enemy in his intrenched lines, and we determined to move our forces back to the west side of the Opequon, and see if he would not move out of his works.

After remaining in front of the enemy at Berryville until 2 p. m. of the 5th, Early returned the divisions of Rodes, Wharton and Ramseur to Stephenson's, by way of the burnt factory. Rodes, in front, reached Stephenson's just in time to form a brigade on the right of the Confederate cavalry, which was falling back before superior numbers, commanded by Averell, and to aid in driving him back, for several miles, through a hard rain with considerable loss. On the morning of that day Anderson retired from the front of Berryville to the west side of the Opequon, having concluded to remain with Early, who was now confronted by such a large army of the enemy. It was quiet on the 6th, but on the 7th the enemy made demonstrations at the Yellow House, near Brucetown, and on the Martinsburg road, and also on the Millwood and Front Royal roads, not far from Winchester. These were all repulsed. There was enforced quiet on the 8th owing to a hard rain, but on the 9th the enemy advanced to the Opequon, below Brucetown, and burned some mills. They retired when met by Wharton.

On the 10th Early marched, with Rodes in front, preceded by some of Lomax's cavalry, through a very hard rain, and encountered the enemy's cavalry near Darkes-

ville, compelled it to retreat, followed by Lomax, through and beyond Martinsburg. The infantry returned to Bunker Hill, but the cavalry remained at Darkesville. The next day, leaving the cavalry at Darkesville, the infantry marched back to Stephenson's. It was quiet along the lines on the 12th, but on the 13th the enemy again advanced, by the old Charlestown road, and an artillery duel took place, across the Opequon, lasting most of the day, the Federals withdrawing at night. On the 14th of September General Anderson again marched away, unmolested, from Early's command, with Kershaw's infantry division and Cutshaw's artillery, by way of Front Royal. Early's army remained in camp, near Stephenson's, on the 15th and 16th.

On the afternoon of the 17th, the divisions of Gordon and Rodes, preceded by Jackson's brigade of cavalry, marched to Bunker Hill. On the 18th Gordon advanced to Martinsburg, meeting the enemy's pickets at Big Spring and driving them through the town, making some captures and burning Baltimore & Ohio railroad bridges, and afterward returning to Bunker Hill, Rodes continuing to Stephenson's.

Capt. L. W. V. Kennon, U. S. A., in a paper criticising Sheridan's campaign, states that while Early was at Martinsburg, at this time:

He learned at the telegraph office that Grant was with Sheridan at Charlestown. Early's movements up to this time had been conducted with conspicuous skill and judgment, although with audacity that bordered on rashness. He states, however, that the events of the last month had satisfied him that the commander opposed to him was "without enterprise, and possessed of an excessive caution which amounted to timidity." Otherwise he would not have volunteered to make so perilous a move as this one to Martinsburg. It is evident that he held a different opinion of Grant, for on learning of his presence in the Valley he "expected an early move," and at once sent Gordon back to Bunker Hill, with orders to march to Stephenson's depot by sunrise the next morning. Rodes' division was moved the same night to Stephenson's, where, also, Early himself returned.

The appearance of Grant in this part of the theater of war was, in truth, indicative of his urgent desire for speedy action. Early's continued presence in the lower valley was not merely annoying and humiliating, but it was retarding the progress of the campaign in front of Richmond, and was a hindrance of which Grant was very anxious to rid himself.

The battle of Winchester, of September 19th, was opened by an advance of the enemy along the Berryville

road toward Winchester, and across the Opequon, at 3 a. m. Ramseur, on the west bank of the Opequon, with Johnson's and Jackson's cavalry on his right, opposed and delayed this advance. Rodes came up from Stephenson's at 10 o'clock and formed on Ramseur's left, and Gordon, arriving about noon from Bunker Hill, formed on Rodes' left. These dispositions placed Early's army facing in a semi-circle to the south, southeast and east of Winchester, along the Opequon and its Red Bud branch, across and in advance of the Winchester and Berryville road. Wharton was formed to the rear and left of Gordon, extending the line northward across the Martinsburg road, on which he drove back several advances of the enemy's cavalry. The Federal infantry, about midday, made a furious attack all along the line; but its advances were all repulsed, with great slaughter, by the Confederate infantry and artillery. At 1 p. m. Sheridan massed his large body of cavalry and attempted to turn the Confederate left, but this attack was also repulsed. At 4 p. m. this attempt was renewed, and this great force, consisting of two divisions of cavalry backed by a fresh corps of infantry, turned and got in the rear of Early's left, when the whole line gave way and the army retreated, near sundown, some of it in confusion and disorder, but most of it in an orderly way, followed by the enemy's cavalry to Kernstown, where they were gallantly repulsed by Ramseur, who brought up the rear. The Confederates fell back to Newtown, with Gordon in advance, where they encamped about midnight, the enemy having been too roughly handled to follow up with vigor the advantages it had gained, mainly through the efforts of its great cavalry corps, of more than 10,000 well mounted and ably led men, which Early had no corresponding force to meet.

On the 20th, at daylight, Early continued his retreat, falling back through Strasburg to Fisher's hill, and there taking the position he had previously occupied. The brave Maj.-Gen. Robert E. Rodes having been killed at Winchester, Ramseur was put in command of his division, and Brig.-Gen. John Pegram took command of Early's old division, which he had hitherto commanded. Fitz Lee's cavalry retired to Front Royal, and one division of the enemy's cavalry came on to near Strasburg. Early spent the 21st in his works on Fisher's hill, the enemy

making some demonstrations, in the forenoon, with infantry on his right and center and cavalry on his left. Late in the afternoon the enemy drove in the Confederate skirmish line on the middle road and gained possession of the end of a ridge, the summit of which was cleared, but which was screened in front from Early's view by a skirt of forest occupying the slope to Tumbling run. Upon this point, which commanded Early's position, Sheridan massed his artillery, protecting it with earthworks. Wickham, in command of Fitz Lee's cavalry, fell back from Front Royal, up the South Fork of the Shenandoah, to Milford.

The battle of Fisher's Hill, on the 22d of September, was opened by an advance of Sheridan's infantry, in line of battle, all along the Confederate front, at an early hour, and an engagement of skirmishers. At 9:30 a. m. the infantry contention was hot in front of the center; at 1 p. m. Sheridan advanced several lines of battle, close to the front of Ramseur, the left of Early's infantry line, but only succeeded in driving in his skirmishers; at 4:30 p. m. the enemy drove in Gordon's skirmishers, on Early's center, between the Manassas Gap railway and the Valley turnpike, and at the same time opened a heavy and most destructive fire from the commanding ridge on the bluff between the railway and the North Fork of the Shenandoah. At the same time Crook's corps of Federal infantry, having made a concealed detour, through the woods, westward, to the foot of the Little North mountain beyond the back road, formed in line of battle, and advancing, fell upon Early's left flank, which was extended beyond Ramseur's division by a weak body of cavalry, compelling that to retreat in confusion, and then pushing forward in attack on the left and rear of Early's infantry. About 5:30 p. m. Early attempted to withdraw his whole line, especially retiring his left to meet this flank movement of the enemy; but Sheridan's attack was so rapid and vigorous, on both flank and front, that the left of the Confederates gave way in great confusion, and admitted Crook's corps to the rear of the whole line northwest of the railway. Under the overwhelming pressure of this attack the entire line gave way, and the whole army of the Valley, at about dark, retreated in great disorder, except some of Wharton's division which formed a rear guard, and some of the

artillery brigade, which continued fighting until Early ordered them to desist. The success of Sheridan's movement was greatly aided by the plunging fire of his massed artillery on the commanding ridge in front of Early's center.

A few infantry and some artillery rallied on the hill at the Four-mile house, not far back from Fisher's hill, and for a time checked the rather feebly sustained pursuit of the enemy. The Confederate army retreated rapidly, the enemy following to Tom's brook, some three miles in the rear of Early's position at Fisher's hill, where they were again checked by Smith's brigade, of Wharton's division, and gave up the pursuit. The retreat continued all night, the army reaching Mt. Jackson at an early hour on the morning of the 23d, where it remained in line of battle during the day, skirmishing some with the enemy's cavalry, which came up and threw a few shells, but made no earnest attempt to advance. The trains were sent across the North Fork of the Shenandoah, by a bridge that the engineering company of Captain Hart had completed the day before. After dark Early retired across the river and encamped at Rude's hill.

Forming a line of battle on Rude's hill on the morning of the 24th, Early remained there until noon, Averell's division of cavalry advancing to the river and throwing a few shells at Early's front, at the same time moving a large cavalry force up the opposite side of the river to turn Early's flank, his largely superior numbers enabling him to drive Early's cavalry rapidly back on the middle road. Early then withdrew in line and in column, and formed again in the rear of New Market, to meet this flank movement. In the same way, skirmishing and using his artillery, he took position as the enemy advanced, and fell back to Tenth Legion, where he formed a line of battle late in the afternoon, which he held until after dark, when, leaving Jackson's cavalry on picket, he followed his trains by the Keezletown road, Ramseur in front, five miles to Flook's, where he arrived and went into camp about midnight. The Federals pursued his cavalry to near Harrisonburg.

September 25th the trains moved on at an early hour, by way of Peale's cross roads and Port Republic, to Brown's gap, and at daylight the troops followed, with

Pegram in advance, and occupied Jackson's old camp within the western entrance to Brown's gap, the cavalry encamping between the South and the Middle rivers, covering the infantry position. The enemy advanced to Harrisonburg.

On the 26th, Kershaw's division, which had been ordered back to Early from Culpeper Court House, on its way back to Lee, and had crossed the Blue ridge at Swift Run gap, came up the South Fork of the Shenandoah, and turning off from the River road to Lewiston, joined the rest of the army, in Brown's gap, after having had an encounter with the enemy's cavalry and artillery, on the old battlefield of Port Republic, as he was about to turn off from the river road. This attack was from Fremont's old position, across the river, but was repulsed by Kershaw's artillery. In the early morning of the same day, the Federal cavalry came on from Harrisonburg and drove the Confederate cavalry across South river. Pegram's division, with artillery, was advanced into the plain in front and east of Weyer's cave, and engaged the enemy, repulsing several charges of cavalry. Ramseur, with his skirmishers, repelled an advance of the enemy on the Port Republic and Brown's Gap turnpike at about the same time that Kershaw's line of march was attacked at Lewiston. Wharton and Gordon were moved out and put in position to support the other divisions, if necessary. Wickham's cavalry brigade (which had come up the Luray valley and joined Early at Port Republic) was moved to the left, to Patterson's ford, or South river, in the afternoon, to meet a reported move of the enemy. The Federal cavalry went into camp between Weyer's cave and Mt. Meridian, and also between the South and the North rivers, with skirmishers on the eastern side of South river.

The Weyer's cave attack was made on information by Engineer Hotchkiss in reference to the position of the enemy's camp, and that it could be readily reached by roads concealed by forests, by way of Patterson's ford. Wickham's cavalry led the advance, followed by Gordon with artillery, and by Ramseur, Wharton guarding the right flank of the movement while Pegram engaged the enemy's attention in front, and Kershaw guarded, on the right, the approaches to Brown's gap from the northeast. The movement was a success and the troops were

in position for a surprise, when the artillery, without orders from Early, opened prematurely upon the enemy's camp. Thus warned, they fled precipitately, pursued by the cavalry, with which their rear skirmished, toward Mt. Meridian. A portion of the enemy fled across North river toward Cross Keys, followed by Pegram, who crossed that river and joined with Gordon and Ramseur in the pursuit, damaging the enemy considerably with artillery from the hill above Port Republic, as they fled across North river. Returning, the army took Jackson's old camp between the rivers, except Kershaw, who remained in Brown's gap.

On the morning of the 28th, after some delay from a misunderstanding of orders, Early marched for Waynesboro, the enemy having gone thither by way of Staunton. The trains crossed South river at Patterson's ford and went up the east side of that stream, with Ramseur in front, followed by Gordon. Pegram marched on the right flank by the Waynesboro road, from Mt. Meridian, turning by the Dogtown road, five miles from Waynesboro. Early, with Kershaw's division, followed by Gordon, marched by the way of New Hope and Hermitage, striking the outpost of the Federal cavalry at the latter place and driving it in toward Dogtown. Pegram also encountered the enemy, about four miles from Dogtown, and drove them to that place, then formed a line, after dark, and pursued them to the Waynesboro and Staunton road and toward Fishersville, the Confederate cavalry having previously gone, by a byroad, to near the tunnel of the Virginia Central railroad through the Blue ridge, which the Federal cavalry was seeking to destroy, and driven it back across South river and through Waynesboro to where Pegram struck its camp. The army encamped, after dark, in the vicinity of Waynesboro, where it remained on the 29th and 30th, while the engineer troops and pioneers were rebuilding the Central railroad bridges across South river and Christian's creek, which had been routed near Waynesboro, retreated through Staunton, Spring Hill and Mossy creek near Mt. Crawford, wantonly burning barns, mills, factories, grain and hay ricks, and driving all the live stock they could find before them, as they went, in obedience to Sheridan's orders to destroy the Valley "so that even a crow travers-

ing it would have to carry a haversack." Early's cavalry, on the 30th, followed the enemy as far as Middle river.

On the 1st of October the Confederate forces moved to the vicinity of Mt. Sidney: Gordon, Kershaw and Pegram marching by the direct old Winchester road, to the Willow Spout, and then down the Valley turnpike to three miles beyond Mt. Sidney; while Ramseur and Wharton moved by the Mt. Meridian road and across by Piedmont to within three miles of Mt. Sidney. The cavalry took position along North river. On the 2d, Sheridan's cavalry drove in the Confederate pickets near Mt. Crawford, but the Stonewall brigade, of Gordon's division, drove them back and held the turnpike bridge over North river at that point. The cavalry had an engagement with the enemy at Bridgewater, forcing Custer's Federal division of cavalry to retire, by a well-planned attack on his front and flanks. Quiet reigned on the 3d and 4th, with the exception of some skirmishing along the line of North river. On the 5th, Gordon advanced to near Naked creek and Brig.-Gen. Thomas L. Rosser joined the army with his cavalry brigade of some 600 service and toil-worn men and horses, which had come up from Richmond by way of Lynchburg. This brigade was attached to Fitz Lee's division, to the command of which Rosser was assigned, Wickham having resigned.

On the morning of the 6th the enemy left the camps near Harrisonburg, Mt. Crawford and Bridgewater, after destroying crops, burning buildings in every direction, before and during their march, and driving before them all the live stock, both old and young, they could find. The Confederate cavalry was soon in pursuit, and the infantry, Gordon in front, followed at 11 a. m., and marched to the vicinity of Harrisonburg; three of the divisions encamping beyond that town. Lomax's cavalry went by the Keezletown road to Peale's, while Rosser, with Fitz Lee's division, took the back road and fell on the enemy's rear at Brock's gap, with vigor, capturing a portion of its train and pursuing it to Timberville. Kershaw had reinforced Early, at Brown's gap, with 2,700 muskets for duty and Cutshaw's artillery, about making up for his losses at Winchester and Fisher's Hill, and he had determined to attack Sheridan on the 6th if he had not retreated down the Valley.

On the 7th the march was continued to New Market, Pegram and Wharton encamped on the Timberville road; Gordon and Ramseur on the Forestville, and Kershaw on the Luray roads. The cavalry pursued the enemy to the line of Stony creek, the strong position that Jackson had held against Banks' advance in the spring of 1862. Early's infantry remained in camp in the vicinity of New Market on the 8th, while Rosser on the back road drove the enemy to Round hill, having an engagement with them near Tom's brook, while Lomax drove them to the same stream on the Valley turnpike.

Custer's cavalry turned on Early's on the 9th, and drove it back, with a loss of artillery; Lomax to Mt. Jackson, on the Valley turnpike, and Rosser to Stony creek, on the back road, where the latter rallied and turned upon the pursuing foe and routed them, capturing their train and eight pieces of artillery. Ramseur and Kershaw were advanced to Rude's hill to meet the enemy, coming up the Valley turnpike; but they retired to Edenburg, and at night Early's advance again held the line of Stony creek. On the 10th and 11th, the infantry remained in camp while the pioneers were repairing the telegraph line from Staunton to New Market. On the 11th, Lomax's division of cavalry crossed over from New Market to the Page valley. On the 12th the march was resumed, Ramseur in front, and the army advanced to the vicinity of Woodstock, preceded by Payne's cavalry brigade, which halted at Pugh's run while Rosser marched from Timberville to Stony creek.

Early continued his advance on the 13th, with Gordon, preceded by Payne's cavalry, in the lead, and reached Hupp's hill, beyond Strasburg, by 10 a. m. Concealing his infantry behind the hill and a screen of woods, Early put his artillery in position and surprised Sheridan's camp, on the opposite side of Cedar creek, by opening on it with several batteries, and driving the Federals from their posts and camps, on the left of their position, in great disorder. Sheridan promptly advanced a brigade across Cedar creek, from his center, and opened from the batteries on his right, on the Belle Grove ridge. Early's artillery shelled the advancing column, while his infantry, still concealed, slowly withdrew. The enemy, supposing Early was retreating, advanced rapidly, when Conner's brigade of Kershaw's division and the skirmish-

ers of Gordon and Wharton, suddenly charged on them from their ambush and handsomely routed them, with severe loss. Rosser advanced, on the back road, to Cedar creek, and engaged the cavalry guarding that approach to Sheridan's rear. Lomax continued down the Page valley, through Luray and Front Royal, and drove the Federal pickets from Guard hill, above the forks of the Shenandoah, on the Front Royal and Winchester turnpike. After this bold, well-planned and successful attack on Sheridan's camp (one that should have shown him its vulnerable location), Early's first Cedar creek battle, he fell back to Fisher's Hill and went into camp. The Federal cavalry continued the burning of crops, barns, etc., in the vicinity of Front Royal, until driven away by Lomax.

Early remained at Fisher's hill during the 15th, having some skirmishing with the enemy on Hupp's hill, as he reconnoitered, and found them busily fortifying the north bank of Cedar creek and the camp which they had reoccupied, with so little judgment and in apparent ignorance of the weakness of that position, as they learned to their cost a little later, when the famous battle of Cedar Creek was joined.

All was quiet during the day of the 16th, but at night Rosser's brigade of cavalry, each cavalryman taking an infantryman of Grimes' brigade of Ramseur's division, mounted behind him, marched to surprise the cavalry camp of the enemy on the back road, near Cedar creek; but he found only a picket, which he captured, the camp having been moved. On the 17th of October, Early's troops were advanced a mile or more, to between Tumbling run and Strasburg, to cover Rosser's movement, and reconnoissances were made in front of Strasburg, while General Gordon and Captain Hotchkiss of the engineers went to the signal station, on the end of Three-top mountain, to reconnoiter the enemy's position with reference to an attack; Captain Hotchkiss, from this lofty point of observation, which overlooked all of Sheridan's camps, making a map showing the position of Sheridan's army and its defensive works, and locating all its guards and pickets. Pegram advanced to Cedar creek, on the back road, to ascertain the feasibility of an attack from that direction.

From the reports of General Gordon and Captain

Hotchkiss, and the remarkable location of Sheridan's camps, as shown by the map that was exhibited, General Early became convinced that, notwithstanding the great disparity of the opposing forces (knowing that his own numbered but about 10,000 of all arms, while those of the enemy numbered 50,000 effective men), an unexpected and successful attack could be made on Sheridan's camps. Accordingly he summoned his division commanders to headquarters, and after the situation had been explained by General Gordon and Captain Hotchkiss, it was decided, with but one dissenting voice, that the attack should be made, and the plan proposed by General Early should be carried into effect that night and the following day.

Early's plan assigned to each division its place and time of attack, almost precisely as it was subsequently carried into execution. Gordon, with the Second corps, composed of Gordon's, Ramseur's and Pegram's divisions, was to march, after dark, from the Fisher's hill encampment to a crossing of the North Fork of the Shenandoah, near its right, which the pioneer corps was to bridge for it, then along and around the base of the Three-top mountain, by a blind and concealed pathway, to its northeastern end, and then, by fording the North Fork of the Shenandoah at Bowman's ford, with a squadron of Payne's cavalry in advance, to capture the enemy's picket and turn his left flank. Kershaw was to march to Strasburg at a later hour, then by a country road to Bowman's mill, on Cedar creek, and attack the enemy; Wharton, at a still later hour, was to move along the Valley turnpike, followed by the artillery of the army, past Strasburg to Hupp's hill, and remain there and be ready to second the other attacks. Rosser's cavalry was to advance by the back road and engage the enemy's cavalry, which had its extensive camp on its right and not far from the back road. The marches were so arranged that each of the attacking forces should be in position and ready to begin the assault at precisely 5 o'clock, about daylight of the morning of the 19th; Rosser to attack first, on the left, then Gordon on the right, and lastly, Kershaw in the center. The precise time of Wharton's attack was to depend on circumstances. During the day the materials were secretly collected for the foot bridge across the North Fork of the Shenandoah,

and about dark that stream, and other small ones on Gordon's route, were bridged, and the path along and around the mountain was cleared out by the pioneers under Captain Hart, and Gordon commenced his march, across the river and around to a place in the woods near the end of the mountain, at 8 in the evening.

At midnight following October 18th, Kershaw and Wharton marched from Fisher's hill along the turnpike to Strasburg, where Kershaw turned to the right along the byroad leading to Bowman's mill, while Wharton continued along the turnpike to near the crest of Hupp's hill. Before 5 a. m. of the 19th, Kershaw and Wharton were resting in their assigned positions, and Gordon had been waiting for some time, not far from Bowman's ford on the south bank of the North Fork of the Shenandoah, opposite the Federal cavalry picket guarding the road leading to the Belle Grove farm and around to the flank and rear of the Federal encampment, especially that of the Eighth corps, along which this byroad led, on to the east. Rosser, with his cavalry, was also in position on the Back road, and ready to attack.

As the hour appointed for the assault drew near, General Early, who had accompanied Kershaw's division, the head of which was resting on the bluff above the south bank of Cedar creek, was considerably disturbed by a movement in the Federal camp (the moving of a wagon train, as was afterward learned), which, unconscious of impending danger, lay before him, slightly concealed by the fog that was rising from Cedar creek and from the river. This stir in the camps led him to suspect that his movement had been discovered. Fortunately, the appointed hour came at about this time, when, practically without further orders and with remarkable precision, the three prearranged simultaneous attacks began. Payne's cavalry dashed across the river, in front of Gordon, and captured the outer pickets; Gordon followed with the bold rush characteristic of the famous Stonewall brigade, which was in his advance, and soon fell on the rear of the encampment of the Nineteenth corps, with a line of battle having Ramseur's division on the right and Gordon's division on the left, supported by Pegram's. At the same time Kershaw's division fairly sprang down the steep slope of the south bank of Cedar creek, rushed across that stream, and deploying, with Wofford on the

right, Humphreys in the center and Bryan, with Conner in echelon, on the left, charged rapidly up the long slope north of the creek, captured the battery that crowned its summit, turned its guns upon the as yet profoundly sleeping Eighth corps, rushed upon its flank, then bore to the left, and crossing the Valley turnpike fell upon the flank of the Nineteenth corps, there encamped on the Belle Grove farm. By these rapid and nearly simultaneous advances Kershaw's command and that of Gordon were, practically, brought into line of battle, with Gordon on the right and Kershaw on the left, that swept like wildfire through the camps of the Eighth and Nineteenth corps, routed the sleeping soldiers from their tents, and drove them, some half-dressed and all dazed, to retreat in wild confusion or to promptly surrender, and giving little opportunity for any rally except by some of those in the more distant parts of the encampment, who were quickly aroused and formed by their officers, and who, with desperate courage, vainly strove to check the on-rushing tide of the victorious Confederates.

When the sun rose and tempered the sharp air of that frosty October morning, it beheld Kershaw and Gordon in full possession of the camps and earthworks of the Eighth and Nineteenth corps of Sheridan's army and the captors of a large number of prisoners, many pieces of artillery, most of the camp equipage and the trains belonging to these two large bodies of infantry, and preparing to attack the Sixth corps, which was encamped farthest to the enemy's right and on high ground beyond Meadow branch, a tributary of Cedar creek, that, running from the northeast and on the western side of the Valley turnpike, enters the former stream at Hottle's mill, where several roads converge to a ford across Cedar creek.

As soon as the Valley turnpike was uncovered by the movements of Kershaw and Gordon, and the way was clear, Wharton's division moved forward, and the artillery galloped rapidly across Cedar creek and along the turnpike, and was soon ready to join in, on the right, in the attack on the Sixth corps, which had already been begun by Kershaw, Ramseur and Pegram in that order from the left. The gallant and indomitable Col. Tom Carter soon had his own and some of the captured artillery playing on the Sixth corps and its batteries, that

brave body of Federal soldiery having had time to rally and deploy before the Confederates had reached its position. The infantry attack on the Sixth corps, especially that by Wharton's division on the right, was but partially successful, as the swampy character of the ground along Meadow run prevented it from getting across, and the furious fire of the enemy drove it back; but the Confederate artillery, formidable in the number and character of its guns and in the magnificent handling of these by its officers and men, soon forced the Sixth corps from its position, so that before noon the entire infantry command of the Federal army had been routed and driven nearly two miles beyond Middletown, and Early had halted in the pursuit, apprehensive that the 10,000 Federal cavalry, which Rosser had merely routed from their camps on Sheridan's right, might cross over and fall upon his little army which he had drawn up in line of battle on a road having stone fences along it, leading northwestward from the Valley turnpike, from near the northeastern end of Middletown; with Gordon on the left extending into a body of woods along the Middle road, followed on the right by Kershaw, Ramseur and Pegram up to the turnpike, and with Wharton on the right of that great highway, in the very position that Stonewall Jackson had taken, but for a brief interval only, when preparing to advance against Banks' retreating army on the 24th of May, 1862.

As soon as the Federal cavalry was apprised of the disaster that had fallen upon Sheridan's infantry, it broke camp, started its trains for the rear, sent a portion of its force to meet Rosser's attack, and at once moved its main body to the eastward into deployment covering the retreating and demoralized infantry and artillery, bringing its numerous batteries into position, especially occupying the commanding ridge, or high rising ground to the north of Middletown, in front of the position that Early had taken, thus giving opportunity to the Federal officers to rally and reorganize their discomfited forces, which they speedily did; the panic that had taken possession of them having subsided when they found they were not being pursued, and that their well-mounted and well-trained cavalry force was on hand to protect them from further molestation.

Unfortunately for the Confederate cause, General

Early, though an able strategist, a most skillful commander, and one of the bravest of the brave, as all know, and as had been well attested—literally on scores of battlefields—did not possess the sublime confidence that characterized Stonewall Jackson in periods of emergency, and at this critical moment, intoxicated with success (but not with liquor, as some have falsely asserted), hesitated; unwilling to believe, although informed to the contrary by some of his officers who had reconnoitered its new position, that the Sixth corps was still intact, concealed in the forest in front of his left. Therefore he did not advance, although repeatedly warned of the dangerous character of the position he had taken if the Federal forces should be concentrated, for a counterstroke, on the commanding ground in his front. The handful of thinly-clad men who had cheerfully waited during the long chilly night for the hour of attack to come—part of whom had unhesitatingly waded through a cold and deep river, and won a magnificent victory over nearly five times their number—had been held in battle array, with only cold rations to warm them, in the biting north winds of a late October day, ready and eager to advance again upon the foe, and do again what they had done for Stonewall Jackson upon the same ground. This inexcusable delay, although abundant excuses have been offered for it, enabled the commanders of the Federal regiments, brigades and corps to rally and reform their men, so that when Sheridan, who had been absent, reached them from Winchester not long before noon, after a ride, not of 20 miles at a headlong speed, but of 10 miles in about two hours, he found his army reformed by Crook and ready to advance, with all arms of the service, overlapping, on either flank, the little band of Confederate heroes that, from his position, he could plainly see stretched out in a thin line not far in front. When all was ready, at about 4 p. m., with a great mass of cavalry upon his flanks, and especially upon his right, Sheridan ordered an advance and attacked Early's line, turning his left; and the mere weight of numbers, especially of cavalry, forced the whole line to give way and retreat just before dark, throwing most of it into confusion, although several bodies of its well-trained and tried soldiers, especially Ramseur's men, in whose front, bravely fighting, he fell mortally wounded,

effectually held in check, in position after position, and seriously damaged, with well-directed volleys of both musketry and artillery, the overwhelming force that pressed upon them. Most of the Confederates made good their retreat, and the Federal infantry did not pursue them beyond Belle Grove house, near the middle of their old encampment, but was quite content to go into camp not far from where they had been so unceremoniously and badly routed in the early morning.

When the sun set, the Confederates, although discomfited and retreating, were still in possession of the fruits of victory, having sent to the rear the 1,500 prisoners they had taken, a long line of captured wagons and stores, and many pieces of artillery, with their caissons and other equipments, when a small body of Federal cavalry, crossing Cedar creek at Hottle's mill, came by a blind way to the top of Stickley's hill, on the Valley turnpike to the west of Cedar creek, and following along the crowding and retreating, but unguarded trains, drove off the drivers with their sabers and turned wagons and guns across the road. The trains had been checked after dark at Spangler's mill, just west of Strasburg, where a short bridge, not more than 20 feet long, across the high banks of a small creek, had broken down under the weight of a heavy gun, and so cut off further retreat for all of the train of wagons and artillery, including a large portion of the captured guns, that had not yet crossed the bridge. The Confederate infantry, in its retreat, had avoided the main road, giving that up to the trains, and was falling back on roads more to the west, so that none of them were in position, in the gathering darkness, to defend these trains, and even if they had been, nothing could have been done toward replacing the bridge.

These accidental captures enabled Sheridan to claim that he had turned the disgraceful rout of his great army, in the morning, into a grand victory in the evening; when, in truth, but for this easy and unpreventable capture, by an insignificant body of cavalry, Early could have made the substantial claim that he had not only won an almost unexampled victory in the morning, but that he had brought away the fruits of it, even though driven by superior numbers from an untenable position that he had unwisely and too long held, when he should have either promptly followed the retreating foe, when on the run in

the morning, or quickly retired with the grand honors he had won.

Early's men retreated up the Valley, in and by ways that no man can describe, during the whole night, but they nearly all answered to roll calls the next day in their old camps at New Market. Rosser brought up the rear with his cavalry, which the enemy's cavalry slowly followed to Edenburg and the line of Stony creek, where Rosser had halted. Sheridan was quite content to rest, the next day, and reorganize his demoralized army, in his old Cedar creek camps. His pursuit of the retreating Confederates was without vigor or results.

Having learned, by sad experience, the weakness of his former position, Sheridan, on the 21st, brought his infantry across Cedar creek and took and fortified, with great care, a new position on Hupp's and the adjoining hills, between Strasburg and Cedar creek, so slowly had he learned the lesson of the important part that the topographical element plays in war, and which Early so well understood and had made such good use of in the two attacks he had made on Sheridan's Cedar creek camp. Lomax's division of cavalry, which came from Front Royal to the vicinity of Middletown on the 19th, but too late to be of any value in Early's attack on Sheridan, fell back by the way it advanced to Milford, in the Page valley, where it took and fortified a position which the Federal cavalry, following, attacked on the 26th, but was repulsed. All was quiet in the infantry camps up to that date, when Rosser's brigade marched from its camp near Timberville across, by New Market, to Luray.

The army remained undisturbed in its camps in the vicinity of New Market, holding the line of Stony creek with its cavalry, as well as its position at Milford in the Page valley, and at points along the Rappahannock, east of the Blue ridge, until the 10th of November, on which day Early again marched down the valley, with Kershaw's division in front, and bivouacked in the vicinity of Woodstock, Rosser's cavalry advancing to Fairview on the back road, and Lomax's to Front Royal in the Page valley. Marching again at 6 a. m. of the 11th, Pegram in advance, preceded by Payne's brigade of cavalry, Early drove the enemy's pickets from Middletown and up to a line of fortifications that Sheridan was holding beyond Newtown. He then formed a line of battle between Middle-

town and Newtown and had some skirmishing with the enemy, Rosser coming in by the back and middle roads, to the north of Newtown, and joining in the skirmishing on the left, came up on the right and extended the line toward Cedarville. The 12th was spent in line of battle at the same place, "Rosser having an engagement with the enemy's cavalry, which drove part of his force back for some distance along the back road, but bringing up the rest of his division, he, in turn, drove Custer back and resumed his former position. The enemy also attacked McCausland's brigade, of Lomax's division, near Cedarville, and was several times repulsed, but finally made a successful attack and drove him back, toward Front Royal, with the loss of two pieces of artillery." While Early was holding this advance, Captain Hotchkiss, his topographical engineer, was enabled to go over and sketch the battlefield of Cedar Creek, or Belle Grove, and gather the data for the map that is published in the War Records Atlas. After dark, on the 12th, the army fell back to and encamped on Fisher's hill. On the 13th, Grimes' brigade in front, it marched to camps between Edenburg and Hawkinstown; and on the 14th, Gordon in front, it returned to its old camps in the vicinity of New Market, headquarters having been established the day before at that place.

Kershaw's division started up the Valley, en route for Richmond, on the 15th. Up to that date, General Early's command had marched, since the opening of the campaign, on the 13th of June, 1,670 miles, and had engaged in seventy-five battles and skirmishes.

On the 17th, Pegram's division marched up the Valley to Big Spring. On the 22d, two divisions of the enemy's cavalry came as far as Rude's hill. To meet these, Early marched three divisions of infantry, Gordon's, Wharton's and Grimes', from their camps near New Market, and took position on Rude's hill to meet them. The enemy came boldly across the broad expanse of Meem's bottoms to make attack, but there met with such a hot fire of infantry and artillery that they went back, in great disorder, considerably damaged by the reception they had met. They were followed, by Early's infantry skirmishers, to Hawkinstown, and by a brigade of cavalry to below Edenburg. The army returned to its New Market camps that night, after hav-

ing marched 25 miles and had an engagement during the day.

On the 29th, Rosser, after a long march, surprised, by able strategy, the enemy's camp at New Creek, on the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, capturing 800 prisoners and eight pieces of artillery. The army remained in its New Market camps until December 6th, taking the cars at Staunton on the night of the 7th. Wickham's brigade retired that day from Mt. Jackson to Timberville. This movement of the Second corps from the Valley was brought about by a report that the Sixth corps of Sheridan's army had already gone to Richmond to join Grant, and that more of the same army were moving in that direction. Grimes' division of Early's army left for Richmond on the 14th of December.

The famous Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, Jackson's old command, embracing the remnants of his old division and his old brigade, now left the Shenandoah valley for the last time, under the command of Maj.-Gen. John B. Gordon, one of the ablest, bravest and boldest of the surviving brigade and division commanders of the immortal Stonewall Jackson, General Evans, of Georgia, succeeding to the command of Gordon's division. This remarkable body of veterans, a mere fragment of its former self when, in the meridian of its strength of numbers and efficiency, Jackson led it against Pope at Cedar run, had, in four successive campaigns, played a most important part in the great military operations in the Shenandoah valley, that have not only made that region famous in the annals of history, but have made its movements and conflicts with superior forces opposed to them, the subjects of admiration and study of the military men of all the civilized fighting nations of the world. Thenceforward the small remnant of the Second corps, the few surviving veterans who had passed through so many memorable conflicts, became a portion of the army of Northern Virginia at Petersburg, participating, with unflinching manliness, in the remarkable defense of that beleaguered city, until the fall of Richmond and General Lee's retreat to Appomattox Court House, where it was actually repulsing an attack of a portion of the Federal army, and successfully driving it back when the truce was called that led to the surrender, when, with the intrepid Gordon at its head, it

laid down its arms and left its memory, without a stain, embalmed in the undying history of Virginia and of the Confederacy.

General Early remained at New Market until December 16th, when Wharton's division fell back to near Mt. Crawford, Rosser's cavalry toward Swoope's, near Buffalo gap, west of Staunton, and Lomax's cavalry to Swift Run gap. Wharton's division, a mere regiment in numbers, the only infantry now left with Early, went into winter quarters near Fishersville, between Staunton and Waynesboro, on the 19th; on which day two divisions of Federal cavalry crossed the Blue ridge, at Chester gap, near Front Royal, and made demonstrations toward Gordonsville. The same day the signal stations reported an advance of the enemy up the valley to Woodstock. On the 20th, Early again started down the valley, with Rosser in advance, followed by Wharton, the former marching to Harrisonburg, and the latter to Naked creek beyond Mt. Sidney. The Federal cavalry came to Lacey's Springs. On the 21st, through a blinding snow-storm, Early moved forward to attack the enemy. Rosser, marching at dawn, fell on Custer's division, consisting of Pennington's and Chapman's brigades, at Lacey's, or Big Spring, on the Valley turnpike, having, in crossing over from the middle road, struck the Federals in flank, with Payne's brigade in front, followed by Morgan's, just as they were saddling their horses to advance on Wharton. Rosser routed their First and Second brigades, capturing 35 prisoners and their wagons and ambulances; but they rallied on their Third brigade, compelled him to fall back, and recaptured their wagons, when they at once retreated down the valley. Rosser was unable to get his whole command together for this attack, and so had joined issue at a disadvantage. Wharton was halted at the Big Spring, some two miles southwest of Harrisonburg.

On the 22d, Wharton marched back to near Staunton, as did also Payne's and Wickham's brigades. On the 23d, two brigades of Wharton's division took cars at Staunton for Gordonsville, to assist in repulsing the movement of cavalry that had crossed the Blue ridge at Chester gap, on the 19th. One of Wharton's brigades went into its former camp at Fishersville.

On the 24th, the brigades of Jackson, Imboden and

McCausland met the advance of the Federal cavalry on the Liberty Mills road, northwest of Gordonsville, destroying the stores there collected, and breaking General Lee's line of supply over the Virginia Central railroad. This engagement closed the contentions of General Early with the Federals for the year 1864. He then established his headquarters at Staunton, put Wharton's division in winter cantonment near Fishersville; Long's artillery battalion went into camps near Waynesboro, the rest of the artillery that had been with Early having gone to Richmond. Early located remnants of his war-worn cavalry in small camps in Piedmont, in the Valley, and in the Appalachia, far out to the front, to the east, northeast, north and northwest, where forage could be had for their horses, and where they could prevent incursions of the enemy and give Early intelligence of any forward movements. Signal stations were located and telegraphs put in order connecting these cavalry camps with headquarters at Staunton.

CHAPTER XXX.

THE SIEGE OF PETERSBURG.

FOILED in his attempts to turn Lee's flank south of the James by the capture of Petersburg, through Beauregard's brave resistance for four days against his repeated assaults, Grant drew back and commenced throwing up formidable lines of intrenchments, all along his front, during the night of June 18th and the following Sunday. Lee's army, facing to the eastward, was as busily occupied in throwing up equally strong defensive works, preparing to hold Petersburg as the key to the defenses of Richmond, in obedience to the Confederate authorities, although Lee himself would have preferred to draw Grant farther into the interior, away from his tidewater base and fortress, where he could have maneuvered against him in the open country and amid Nature's great fortifications, which so abound among the mountains of Virginia.

At this time, Beauregard's left rested on the navigable Appomattox, about one mile north of east from Petersburg, where the Appomattox turns northward, for five miles, to the vicinity of Port Walthall, and thence eastward, for about four miles, to City Point, where that river enters the James. On his right, Anderson, with the First corps, extended the Confederate line for some three miles to the southward, in front of Petersburg, crossing the Norfolk & Petersburg railroad in the vicinity of the Jerusalem plank road, thence westward, for some two miles; the Third corps, under A. P. Hill, extended the Confederate right, on the south of Petersburg, to the Weldon & Petersburg railroad. Pickett's division took up the line on the west side of the Appomattox and extended it north to the James, at the big bend opposite Dutch gap. The fortifications on the north of the James, from Chaffin's bluff northward, along the front of Richmond, were held by batteries and by local troops, in command of Lieut.-Gen. R. S. Ewell.

Subsequently the Confederate works were extended to the southwest of Petersburg for more than 10 miles, to beyond Hatcher's run, until Lee's line of defensive works, consisting of forts and redoubts connected by breastworks and strengthened by all means known to the art of war, extended for nearly 40 miles.

The Federal fortifications, commencing on the river road north of the James, in front of the Confederate lines, extended for four miles to the south, to Fort Brady, above Dutch gap; then were resumed, opposite the big bend of the James, and extended across the neck of the Bermuda Hundred peninsula, for nearly four miles, to the big bend of the Appomattox; then again resumed, upon the south side of that river and along its eastern side, and extended for over four miles, by redoubts and detached works, to the City Point railroad, on the bank of the Appomattox, and were thence prolonged, for 15 miles or more, around the front of Petersburg, to beyond Hatcher's run, frequently as double lines. South of these main defensive works, a line of formidable intrenchments protected the rear of the besieging army; while numerous forts, connected by heavy breastworks, extended across the City Point peninsula, making an enclosed camp for the base of supplies and the headquarters of the Federal army.

Grant "rested his men," as he had promised, with the vigorous use of intrenching tools, until near the end of June, constructing works far more formidable than those opposing him, and making such preparations as are only made when a great fortress is to be taken by protracted and regular siege operations. Within these well-fortified lines Grant collected more than 107,000 men, most of them veterans of the armies of the Potomac and of the James. To oppose these, Lee had, in his 40-mile line, for the defense of Richmond and Petersburg, some 54,000 men, the remaining veterans of the army of Northern Virginia, and of the department of North Carolina and Southern Virginia, Beauregard's army. Grant's supplies easily reached him by water, up the broad navigable James to City Point. Lee drew his, mainly from the South, by three railroads that met at Petersburg and were thence continued by single line to Richmond. The first Federal assault cut the roads leading to City Point and Norfolk.

Grant's first movement was to cut the road leading south to Weldon, that he might extend the strong arm of his fortifications westward, across that road, and hold it from Lee's use. On the 21st of June, he sent his Second and Sixth corps southward, across the Jerusalem plank road, which ran from Petersburg south, between the Norfolk and the Weldon railroads, and directed these to take position on the left of his Fifth corps, thus, by a great wheel of his left, hoping to flank Lee's right south of Petersburg. The battle line, when formed, was composed of the Fifth corps on the right, the Second in the center, and the Sixth on the left. This formidable line of attack was extended still farther to the left, by 6,000 cavalry, under Wilson, designed to strike the railway still farther to the south and then sweep up to the northward. Lee, in person, was at his right, on the morning of the 22d, when the Federal columns advanced to his front. Three of A. P. Hill's brigades were moved southward to meet the Federal columns, the movement of which was not in concert, and the Confederates discovered a wide gap between the Sixth and the Second corps. Into this, Mahone led Hill's brigades, through the pine forests, and fell, in fierce assault, on the left flank of the Second corps, driving it back in confusion, behind defensive works, with a loss of 1,700 men and four guns.

The next day the Sixth corps renewed the attempt to reach the railroad, when it was driven back with a loss of 500. Wilson's cavalry reached the railroad, at Reams' Station, nine miles south of Petersburg, on the 22d, and, after breaking the track, moved westward to the Southside railroad, where, on the 23d, after a vigorous attack on the division of W. H. F. Lee, it was driven back, and on the 24th, retreated toward Petersburg, having been turned back from Staunton river bridge by the local militia, closely followed by Lee. Hampton, who had hurried southward from his victory over Sheridan at Trevilian's, joined Lee in the pursuit. Reaching Reams' Station, Wilson found Mahone across his track, with two brigades of infantry, while Lee was closely pressing his rear. Thus assailed, his troops were routed, leaving behind them, not only a long supply train and thirteen guns, but loads of plunder robbed from private houses, and a thousand negro slaves taken from Virginia planta-

tions. Wilson's raid had been one of pillage, and he well merited the punishment he received at Reams' Station.

Early's Valley campaign and his advance on Washington, brought confusion to Grant's plans, in the early part of July, as narrated in the preceding chapter, and compelled him to organize a large force, under Sheridan, to look after Early, while he continued to hold his well-fortified lines and intrenched camps on the James and on the Appomattox.

During all the month of July, Grant's great army was busy throwing up parallels and driving mines in advancing upon Petersburg. In front of the Blandford cemetery, to the northeast of that city, there was a salient in the Confederate line known as Elliott's. At that point, the Federal lines, under Burnside, were but a hundred yards away, and in their rear was a deep ravine, from which Pennsylvania miners drove a main gallery, for 510 feet, under Burnside's works, the intervening space, and to well under the Elliott salient in the Confederate line. From this main gallery lateral ones were extended, right and left, and in these works were placed 8,000 pounds of powder, and the appliances for its explosion under Confederate works and the guns of Pegram's and Elliott's batteries. Grant proposed to spring this mine and thus blow open a way, through the Confederate intrenchments, by which he could send three of his corps, nearly half of his army, and capture Petersburg from Lee. The preparations for this peculiar kind of strategy by one who was always desiring open-field fighting, were all complete on the 28th of July.

On the 27th of July, Grant sent Sheridan's cavalry, and Hancock with the Second corps, across to the north side of the James, to attack the Confederate works at Chaffin's bluff, hoping to there break through and capture Richmond, or, at least, to create a diversion that would draw a large portion of Lee's army to the north of the James, and thus help to secure success for Burnside's attack, after the explosion of his mine. Crossing the river at Deep Bottom, Hancock drove back Kershaw's division and captured four pieces of his artillery, but on following up his success he encountered an intrenched line of battle, which brought him to a stand. On the 29th, Lee hurried cavalry and five divisions of infantry over the James, to aid in keeping back Hancock, leaving

Pickett between the Appomattox and the James, and but three divisions in the defenses of Petersburg, with but 13,000 men of all arms, to receive Burnside's assault on the morning of the 30th.

Meade was reluctant to spring his mine without having the steady Hancock behind Burnside, so Grant recalled the half of the Second corps, gave up the idea of a direct movement on Richmond, and reinforced Burnside, as Meade desired. Sheridan's cavalry was also brought back, to create a demonstration on Lee's right, and so, by threatening his wings, divert attention from the intended assault on his center.

In his official report of 1865, Grant thus describes this battle of the Crater:

On the morning of the 30th, between 4 and 5 o'clock, the mine was sprung, blowing up a battery and most of a regiment, and the advance of the assaulting column, formed by the Ninth corps, immediately took possession of the crater made by the explosion and the line for some distance to the right and left of it, and a detached line in front of it, but for some cause failed to advance promptly to the ridge beyond. Had they done this, I have every reason to believe that Petersburg would have fallen. Other troops were immediately pushed forward, but the time consumed in getting them up enabled the enemy to rally from his surprise (which had been complete) and get forces to this point for its defense. The captured line thus held, being untenable and of no advantage to us, the troops were withdrawn, but not without heavy loss. Thus terminated in disaster what promised to be the most successful assault of the campaign.

This explosion partially destroyed Elliott's brigade and opened a wide gap into Petersburg, without a single Confederate soldier present to contest the passage of Burnside through to the rear of Lee's lines. More than one hundred and sixty Federal guns concentrated their fire on the Confederate works, to the right and left of this breach, to engage attention while Burnside made his assault. This terrific explosion, for the time being, naturally terrified the nearby men of both armies, and twenty minutes passed before Burnside's leading brigade advanced, cautiously, up the slope of the crater and took shelter in its yawning opening, which was 135 feet in length and 30 feet in depth. The commanding hill of Blanford cemetery, within the Confederate lines, was just in front of the assaulting column and undefended; but Burnside's men lingered within the crater and failed to move on to this point of vantage. Another brigade

of the assaulting column followed, and that also took shelter in the great pit, and there an entire Federal division remained, as a confused mass, which its officers tried in vain to move forward, in face of the scattering fire that the Confederate infantry, now rushing in from all directions, poured into the crater.

Haskell's battery, the one nearest at hand on the plank road, was speedily moved forward and its fire was added to that of the musketry. Hamilton Chamberlayne, though sick in a near hospital, hastened to reinforce Haskell with his guns, while Wright and Langhorne, from the left, screened by a small body of pines, raked with canister, from their position in a salient, the ground between the crater and the Federal line of intrenchments, across which Burnside must send reinforcements. Grant's artillery showered shot and shell upon these Confederate batteries, but they stood bravely to their work. Burnside sent two more divisions to push forward the hesitating assault, but most of the men of these found refuge in the swarming mass that already nearly filled the bottom of the crater. Meade, watching from the rear, and learning, on demand, from Burnside the cause of this delay, excitedly asked: "Do you mean to say your officers and men will not obey your orders to advance?" Burnside wrote reply: "I mean to say that it is very hard to advance to the crest."

At 8 o'clock a negro division was sent forward to march over the white Federal soldiers in the crater. These quickly sought refuge in the adjacent, unoccupied Confederate rifle-pits. A division of the Tenth corps was now added to the assaulting column, which, encouraged by the power of numbers, was bracing itself for an advance to the Cemetery hill. At this juncture of affairs, General Lee, from beyond the Appomattox, arrived and took charge of the defense. Two of Hill's brigades were drawn from his right, and Mahone promptly ordered these to cover the breach; Pegram's battery came forward to join the combat; through the covered way, which led from the plank road to the ravine in front of the crater, Weisiger's brigade, of Mahone's division, rushed to the brink of the crater. The negro division fled from the rifle-pits, at sight of the charging Virginians, and leaped into the crater, followed by most of the other Federal troops that had ventured beyond it.

Wright's Georgia brigade soon came to the aid of Weisiger, and by about midday the Confederate line was re-established by the capture of its broken works. Volleys were poured into the crater, until the mass of Federal soldiers, there entrapped, surrendered at discretion. Grant had brought 65,000 of his soldiers to this grand assault, which, through the lack of audacious courage in his officers and men, brought to him not only failure, but a loss of nearly 5,000 of his soldiers. A howl of despair arose in every portion of the North. Gold went up to \$2.80 for a dollar, as compared with greenbacks. The New York Herald advised that an embassy should be sent to the Confederate government, "to see if this dreadful war cannot be ended in a mutually satisfactory treaty of peace."

Early in August, Grant sent Sheridan, with the Sixth corps of infantry and Torbert's and Wilson's divisions of cavalry, to the Shenandoah valley to look after the troublesome Early. To meet these, and aid his lieutenant, Lee dispatched Fitz Lee's division of cavalry and Kershaw's division of infantry from his First corps, in the same direction. Believing, from information received, that Lee had sent three divisions of his army away from Petersburg, thus greatly weakening his defensive force, Grant decided, on the 13th of August, "to threaten Richmond from the north side of the James, to prevent his sending troops away, and, if possible, to draw back those sent." That night he moved the Second corps and Gregg's division of cavalry from the army of the Potomac, and the Tenth corps from Butler's army of the James, to the north of the river, and the next day these assaulted the Confederate lines in front of Richmond, only to be repulsed, with the loss of 1,000 men; although Grant claims to have captured six pieces of artillery, several hundred prisoners, and to have detained troops that were under marching orders to Early. Gen. F. A. Walker writes of this movement: "It should be frankly confessed that the troops on our side engaged, behaved with little spirit. . . . When it is added that the two brigades most in fault were the Irish brigade and that which had been so long and so gloriously commanded by Brooke, it will appear to what a condition the army had been reduced by three months of desperate fighting."

Having drawn a portion of Lee's army north of the James, Grant, on the 18th, sent Warren, with the Fifth corps, to his left, to capture the Weldon railroad and attack Lee's right. Following the plank road southward to the Globe tavern, on the railroad south of Petersburg, Warren then turned northward, along the railway, toward Petersburg, until Heth's division of Hill's corps struck his exposed left flank and captured nearly a thousand of his men. The next day, A. P. Hill confronted Warren with two divisions, assailing his left with Heth's, while Mahone's fell on his right. Warren, after a loss of 2,900 men, threw up works and assumed the defensive. Hill attacked him again, on the 21st, but was repulsed with considerable loss.

During this affair between Hill and Warren, Grant withdrew Hancock and Gregg from the north side of the James, and, on the 21st, sent these to Reams' Station, south of Petersburg and beyond Warren's division, to tear up the track of the railway, in the meantime holding some old Confederate works at the station. To interfere with this destructive work, Lee sent A. P. Hill, with eight brigades of infantry, preceded by Hampton's division of cavalry. On the 24th these attacked Hancock. Pegram's artillery secured a position which took Hancock's lines in both reverse and enfilade, with eight guns at very short range. This unexpected and rapid fire opened the way for a charge, by Heth's division, when the larger portion of Hancock's men took a panic and broke in flight, leaving their works, 9 guns, 12 flags, over 3,000 muskets, and 2,150 prisoners, in Hill's hands, with a loss to him of but 720 men. It was an unheard-of thing for the veteran soldiery of Hancock to be thus discomfited, and they were only saved from utter rout by the desperate fighting of a small number of steadfast men, led by Hancock in person. Walker, in his *Life of that great soldier*, attributed this defeat to "the weakened spirit of our (Hancock's) men," adding:

Hancock had seen his troops fail in their attempts to carry the entrenched positions of the enemy, but he had never before had the mortification of seeing them driven, and his lines and guns taken, as on this occasion; and never before had he seen his men fail to respond, to the utmost, when he called upon them, personally, for a supreme effort; nor had he ever before ridden toward an enemy, followed by a beggarly array of a few hundred stragglers, who had been gathered together and pushed toward the enemy. He could no longer conceal from himself that his once mighty corps retained but

the shadow of its former strength and vigor. . . . "I do not care to die," cried Hancock, "but I pray God I may never leave this field." The agony of that day never passed away from the proud soldier.

Grant's only mention of this affair in his final report is: "On the 24th, the Second corps and Gregg's division of cavalry, while at Reams' Station destroying the railroad, were attacked, and after desperate fighting a part of our line gave way and five pieces of artillery fell into the hands of the enemy."

The various combats between the two opposing armies at Petersburg, during the month of August, resulted in a loss of about 8,000 men to Grant and 2,000 to Lee. Grant persistently continued his attacks on Lee's flanks, but mainly on his right, his object being to so extend his left to the westward as to capture and hold Lee's lines of communication with the South. In his report, Grant writes: "By the 12th of September a branch railroad was completed from the City Point & Petersburg railroad to the Weldon road, enabling us to supply without difficulty, in all weather, the army in front of Petersburg. The extension of our lines across the Weldon railroad compelled the enemy to so extend his that it seemed he could have but few troops north of the James for the defense of Richmond." This railway extension was between two lines of formidable intrenchments, safely guarding it from attack.

After reaching the conclusion just mentioned, Grant, on the night of September 28th, sent the Tenth corps, under Birney, and the Eighteenth corps, under Ord, to the north of the James, by the way of Deep Bottom (a way by which he had already so many times sent expeditions for the same purpose), to attack the "few troops" which he supposed Lee now had at Chaffin's farm, or Fort Harrison, for the defense of his right, resting on the James. The Federal attack was made on the morning of the 29th, as Grant reports, "carrying the very strong fortifications and intrenchments below Chaffin's farm, known as Fort Harrison, capturing fifteen pieces of artillery and the New Market road and intrenchments. This success was followed up by a gallant attack on Fort Gilmer, immediately in front of the Chaffin's farm fortifications, in which we were repulsed with heavy loss. Kautz's cavalry was pushed forward on the road to the right of this, supported by infantry, and reached the

enemy's inner line, but was unable to get further. The position captured from the enemy was so threatening to Richmond that I determined to hold it. The enemy made several desperate attempts to dislodge us, all of which were unsuccessful, and for which he paid dearly." Grant's loss in this affair was 2,300 men.

Supposing that Lee's right at Petersburg had been weakened in meeting the attack north of the James, Meade, on the 30th of September, sent four divisions to attack Lee's right, at Poplar Spring church. Hill met the flank of these with two divisions and forced them back, with a loss of over 2,000 men. Parke, commanding the Ninth corps, attributed this disaster to "the large amount of raw material in the ranks [that] has greatly diminished the efficiency of the corps."

On the 7th of October, Lee attacked Kautz's cavalry, north of the James, and, as Grant reports, "drove it back with heavy loss in killed, wounded, and prisoners, and the loss of all the artillery—eight or nine pieces. This he followed by an attack on our intrenched infantry line, but was repulsed with severe slaughter." On the 13th, Butler essayed to drive the Confederates from his front, where they were constructing some new defensive works, but he was driven back with heavy loss.

On the 27th of October, it was said to strengthen Lincoln's prospects in the near-at-hand presidential election with the report of a victory, Grant sent a column, consisting of 3,000 cavalry and 32,000 infantry, to turn Lee's right at Hatcher's run, 14 miles to the southwest of Petersburg. His plan of engagement provided that Hancock should march westward, following the Vaughn road across Hatcher's run, and place himself across the Boydton plank road. He was then to march northward, recross Hatcher's run and the Southside railroad in the rear of Lee's right. Gregg's cavalry and the Fifth and Ninth corps were moved to the Federal left to support Hancock. In the morning the Ninth corps attacked the extreme right of Lee's intrenchments, to engage attention while Hancock made his flanking movement. Finding Lee's men ready for the attack, the Ninth corps halted and threw up breastworks for its protection. Hancock reached his assigned position, across the Boydton plank road, but when he would advance he found Hill standing ready, on the northern bank of the

run, to oppose his northward march. A division of the Fifth corps was then moved to the left to strengthen Hancock, but most of its regiments lost their way in the intricacies of the forest roads in that region. The Federal line was not well established, and its left was broken into fragments in the bewildering forest. Heth promptly met Hancock's flank movement with one of his own. He sent Mahone's division westward, across the run, and, hurrying them into the gap that had been left between the Fifth and Second corps, fiercely attacked Hancock's right, while Hampton's cavalry fell on his left. Hancock's superior force enabled him to repulse these attacks and re-establish his lines, but Hill captured six of his guns and 700 prisoners.

During the succeeding night, Grant withdrew his unsuccessful movement, after a loss of 1,761 men, and left Hill in possession of the field of contention. In his final report, after describing the movement to where the battle of Hatcher's Run took place, Grant wrote:

At this point we were six miles from the Southside railroad, which I had hoped, by this movement, to reach and hold. But finding that we had not reached the end of the enemy's fortifications, and no place presenting itself for a successful assault by which he might be doubled up and shortened, I determined to withdraw to within our fortified lines. Orders were given accordingly. Immediately upon receiving a report that General Warren had connected with General Hancock, I returned to my headquarters. Soon after dark the enemy moved out across Hatcher's run, in the gap between Generals Hancock, and Warren, which was not closed as reported, and made a desperate attack on General Hancock's right and rear. General Hancock immediately faced his corps to meet it, and after a bloody combat drove the enemy within his works, and withdrew that night to his old position.

On this same October 27th, Grant ordered Butler to make a demonstration north of the James, on the defenses of Richmond on the Williamsburg road and on the York River railroad, to the west of Fair Oaks and Seven Pines. Grant reports that "in the former he was unsuccessful; in the latter he succeeded in carrying a work which was afterward abandoned, and his forces withdrawn to their former position." Butler had attempted to steal into Richmond by way of the concealed roads through the White Oak swamp, but Longstreet, who had just returned to his command, not only drove him back, but inflicted upon him a loss of more than 1,000 men.

"From this time forward," says Grant in his report, "the operations in front of Petersburg and Richmond, until the spring campaign of 1865, were confined to the defense and extension of our lines and to offensive movements for crippling the enemy's lines of communication and to prevent his detaching any considerable force to send South. By the 7th of February (1865), our lines were extended to Hatcher's run, and the Weldon railroad had been destroyed to Hicksford." In December, Grant recalled the Sixth corps from the Shenandoah valley to his army, when Lee at once brought the Second corps, from the same region, to the trenches at Petersburg. Sheridan's big army of 56,000 men had neither cut the Virginia Central railway at Staunton, Charlottesville or Gordonsville, nor had it captured Lee's base of supplies at Lynchburg, having been held in the valley by Early, who had inflicted upon him a loss of 17,000.

Dr. Henry Alexander White, in his every way admirable *Life of Lee*, says of the army of Northern Virginia, at this time:

Winter poured down its snows and its sleet upon Lee's shelterless men in the trenches. Some of them burrowed into the earth. Most of them shivered over the feeble fires kept burning along the lines. Scanty and thin were the garments of these heroes. Most of them were clad in mere rags. Gaunt famine oppressed them every hour. One quarter of a pound of rancid bacon and a little meal was the daily portion assigned to each man by the rules of the war department. But even this allowance failed when the railroads broke down and left the bacon and the flour and the meal piled up beside the tracks in Georgia and the Carolinas. One-sixth of this daily ration was the allotment for a considerable time, and very often the supply of bacon failed entirely. At the close of the year (1864) Grant had 110,000 men. Lee had 66,000 on his rolls, but this included men on detached duty, leaving him barely 40,000 soldiers to defend the trenches that were then stretched out 40 miles in length from the Chickahominy to Hatcher's run. With dauntless hearts these gaunt-faced men endured the almost ceaseless fire of Grant's mortar batteries. The frozen fingers of Lee's army of sharpshooters clutched the musket barrel with an aim so steady that Grant's men scarcely ever lifted their heads from their bomb proofs.

On the 5th of February, Grant again sent a large force to his left to capture Lee's defenses on Hatcher's run. This was driven back by three divisions of Confederates, and the Federal line of the Fifth corps was broken by a charge of Gen. C. A. Evans' division. During this engagement, the brave Gen. John Pegram, who commanded at Rich mountain in July, 1861, was killed.

Lee's small force fought, with its usual vigor and obstinacy, during the severe weather of the three days and nights of this second Hatcher's Run engagement. Lee wrote of them: "Under these circumstances, heightened by assaults and fire of the enemy, some of the men had been without meat for three days, and all were suffering from reduced rations and scant clothing, exposed to battle, cold, hail and sleet. . . . The physical strength of the men, if their courage survives, must fail under this treatment."

Environed by defeats in every direction, except in the immediate neighborhood of Richmond, and seeing the Federal armies closing in upon this last stronghold of the Confederacy, President Davis, grasping the last straw offering relief, on the 6th of February, 1865, appointed General Lee commander-in-chief of all the Confederate armies. In his first general order, after reluctantly accepting this added responsibility, Lee said, in substance: "Deeply impressed with the difficulties and responsibilities of the situation, and humbly invoking the guidance of the Almighty God, I rely for success upon the courage and fortitude of the army, sustained by the patriotism and firmness of the people; confident that their united efforts, under the blessing of Heaven, will secure peace and independence." In a second order on the 14th, he said of his soldiers: "The choice between war and abject submission is before them. To such a proposal, brave men, with arms in their hands, can have but one answer. They cannot barter manhood for peace, nor the right of self-government for life or property. But justice to them requires a sterner admonition to those who have abandoned their comrades in the hour of peril."

At this crisis the homes of those beyond the confines of Virginia, which heretofore had not felt the presence of the enemy, were being overrun with ruthless destruction, as by Sherman's march from Atlanta to the sea, and the wanton damages of scattered bodies of Federal soldiers. Large numbers of absentees were unable to return to their commands, and Lee's army was being depleted by constant desertions. He appealed to these sorely tried men to come back, offering pardon; adding, "Our resources, wisely and vigorously employed, are ample; and with a brave army, sustained by a deter-

mined and united people, success, with God's assistance, cannot be doubted."

The urgent need for recruits to Lee's army brought to the front the question of employing negro slaves as soldiers. During the secret discussion of this matter, in the Confederate Congress, Lee, in reply to a letter from one of its members, wrote on the 18th of February: "I think the measure not only expedient, but necessary. The enemy will certainly use them against us if he can get possession of them. . . . I believe we should provide resources for a protracted struggle—not merely for a battle or campaign. . . . In my opinion, the negroes, under proper circumstances, will make efficient soldiers. . . . I think those who are employed should be freed. It would be neither just nor wise, in my opinion, to require them to serve as slaves."

On the 19th of February, when Sherman's great and victorious army was driving Johnston's back to the vicinity of Charlotte, Lee wrote: "It is necessary to bring out all our strength, and, I fear, to unite our armies, as separately they do not seem to be able to make head against the enemy. . . . Provisions must be accumulated in Virginia, and every man in all the States must be brought off. I fear it may be necessary to abandon all our cities, and preparations should be made for this contingency." On the 25th he wrote an earnest letter to Governor Vance, of North Carolina, in reference to desertions from his army and the causes that induced them, concluding: "I think our sorely tried people could be induced to make one more effort to bear their suffering a little longer, and regain some of the spirit that marked the first two years of the war."

At a conference between President Davis and General Lee, early in March, 1865, it was decided that Lee should march his army to Danville, and there, joining to it the 18,000 under Johnston, give battle, in North Carolina, to Sherman's 90,000, before Grant could reach him. Before doing this, Lee proposed to check Grant's efforts at extending his left toward the Southside railroad, leading to Danville, by assaulting Fort Stedman near the center of Grant's line of works near the Appomattox, and almost immediately in front of the famous Crater. On the 25th of March, Lee placed the remnant of the Second corps, now under command of Gen. John B. Gor-

don, in front of the Blanford suburb of Petersburg, with its left resting in reserve. At the word of command, just before the dawning of the day, Gordon's men leaped over their intrenchments, rushed across the 150 yards between these and Fort Stedman, and captured that and three adjacent batteries. The attack had been delayed by the tardiness of Longstreet's supporting detachment, and the plan of assault was but half carried out on the approach of full daylight. Gordon tried, in vain, to capture the forts on his right and left, as his efforts were not seconded by the advance of his supporting forces. Daylight enabled the Federal batteries, from a commanding position, to rake Gordon's lines, and Federal infantry were pushed forward in overwhelming numbers to attack him. After inflicting a loss of 2,000 upon Grant, and suffering one of 3,000 in his own command, Gordon was compelled to retire. Grant reports that, after this repulse, "General Meade at once ordered the other corps to advance and feel the enemy in their respective fronts. Pushing forward, they captured and held the enemy's strongly intrenched picket line, in front of the Second and Sixth corps, and captured 834 prisoners. The enemy made desperate attempts to retake this line, but without success. Our loss in front of these was 52 killed, 864 wounded, and 207 missing."

Writing of this period, Grant says, in his final report:

I had spent days of anxiety lest each morning should bring the report that the enemy had retreated the night before. I was firmly convinced that Sherman's crossing the Roanoke would be the signal for Lee to leave. With Johnston and him combined, a long, tedious and expensive campaign, consuming most of the summer, might become necessary. By moving out I would put the army in better condition for pursuit, and would at least, by the destruction of the Danville road, retard the concentration of the two armies of Lee and Johnston, and cause the enemy to abandon much material that he might otherwise save. I therefore determined not to delay the movement ordered.

On the night of the 27th, three divisions of the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth corps, preceded by McKenzie's cavalry, took up the line of march, and was in position, near Hatcher's run, on the morning of the 29th. The Fifth corps moved at 3 a. m. of that day, the Second at 9. Sheridan's cavalry reached Dinwiddie Court House the night of the 29th, and the left of the infantry advance extended to the Quaker road, near its junction with the

Boydton plank road, and Grant now had an unbroken line from the Appomattox to Dinwiddie Court House. He now had, in his immediate command, 124,700 men, 13,000 of whom were well mounted cavalry. To oppose these, Lee had about 45,000, less than 5,000 of whom were cavalry, under Fitz Lee, mounted on mere skeletons of poorly-fed horses. So far, Grant's movement had met with but little opposition, but Hill held, threateningly, his line in front of the position that had been gained. Lee quickly transferred his cavalry and Pickett's division from his left to his right, and at the close of March 30th, with 10,000 infantry and cavalry, under Pickett, Lee's right menaced Grant's advance at Five Forks. The next morning, Lee, in person, led three brigades from his right and drove Warren's corps behind Gravelly run. Pickett forced Sheridan back to Dinwiddie Court House, but, finding Federal infantry in support, he withdrew to Five Forks, where, detached from support, Sheridan's cavalry and Warren's corps, overlapping his flanks, fell upon and routed him on the 1st of April.

On the morning of the 2d of April, the Federal Sixth corps broke through Lee's attenuated line, four miles southwest of Petersburg. In an attempt to recover that captured line, the brave and impetuous A. P. Hill lost his life, and Lee lost one of the ablest of his corps lieutenants. A fierce contention was kept up all along the line, the Confederates continuing to fight, in broken masses, with desperate courage. Heavy blows were inflicted upon Grant's solid lines, but numbers at last won, and the enemy gained the rear of Lee's lines on his right. Riding back toward Petersburg from this disaster, General Lee remarked to one of his aides, "This is a sad business, Colonel." And soon after, he added, "It has happened as I told them at Richmond it would happen. The line has been stretched until it is broken." As he continued slowly riding to his rear, the shells from the advancing batteries of the enemy began to burst about him. An eye-witness of the scene writes: "He turned his head over his right shoulder, his cheeks became flushed, and a sudden flash of the eye showed with what reluctance he retired before the fire directed upon him. No other course was left him, however, and he continued to ride slowly toward his inner line—a low earth-

work in the suburbs of the city—where a small force was drawn up, still ardent, hopeful, defiant, and saluting the shells, now bursting above them, with cheers and laughter. It was plain that the fighting spirit of his ragged troops remained unbroken; and the shout of welcome with which they received him, indicated their unwavering confidence in him, despite the untoward condition of affairs."

That Sunday night, the 2d of April, 1865, under cover of darkness, Lee evacuated Petersburg and turned the head of his army, along both banks of the Appomattox, to Amelia Court House, on the line of the Richmond & Danville railroad, which the officials of the Confederate government had passed over, late in the day, after General Lee had telegraphed to President Davis, when in church at Richmond, near the middle of the day, that his lines were broken and he must evacuate Petersburg. The forces in front of Richmond, under Ewell, were called in and marched across the James, by two roads, also toward Amelia Court House, after unwisely setting fire to the storehouses of Richmond and destroying, in conflagration, a large part of the city which for four long years army after army of invaders had tried in vain to capture.

The cheerfulness with which a veteran soldier accepts whatever the fortunes of war may bring him, was well illustrated by Lee's soldiers in the beginning of this, their last march. One of their comrades writes of them: "In excellent spirits, probably from the highly agreeable contrast of the budding April woods with the squalid trenches, and the long, unfeared joy of an unfettered march through the fields of spring. General Lee shared this hopeful feeling in a very remarkable degree. His expression was animated and buoyant; his seat in the saddle erect and commanding, and he seemed to look forward to assured success in the critical movement which he had now undertaken."

CHAPTER XXXI.

CLOSING EVENTS IN SOUTHWEST VIRGINIA AND THE VALLEY.

VERY serious damage was inflicted on the Confederates in Virginia in the last of December, 1864, by the raid, or expedition, of Gen. George Stoneman, of the Federal army, from east Tennessee into southwest Virginia, mainly for the purpose of destroying the salt works at Saltville, from which not only the State of Virginia and the Confederate armies, but also adjacent States of the Confederacy, drew their supplies of salt; the lead mines and works on New river, in Wythe county, from which the Confederacy obtained the larger proportion of its supply of lead for its ordnance department, and the numerous niter works in operation in that part of Virginia. The further object of this expedition was to drive away the Confederate cavalry that was wintering in east Tennessee and Virginia, not far from the Virginia line, and at the same time to damage, as much as possible, the Virginia & East Tennessee railroad, extending from Lynchburg to Bristol, from which large supplies of food and forage were sent to the army of Northern Virginia.

Leaving Knoxville, December 10, 1864, General Gillem's command united with Stoneman's, which had advanced from Cumberland gap, near Bean's Station, east Tennessee, on the 12th, and had a skirmish with the outposts of Gen. Basil Duke near Rogersville; then an action with his advance at Kingsport, Tenn., on the 13th, defeating Duke and driving his command toward Bristol, near which place, at Papertown, on the 14th, Stoneman attacked Vaughn's Tennessee brigade, of the Confederate army, which was guarding the railroad and the main turnpike road leading into the southwestern part of the Great valley of Virginia, and forced him back toward Abingdon. Another skirmish took place on the 15th near that place, and another near Glade Spring, as Vaughn, in falling back, resisted the advance of the Federal raid.

Gen. J. C. Breckinridge, in command of the Confederate forces in southwest Virginia, having been duly advised of the movements of Stoneman's command, promptly made every effort to collect his scattered men to meet them; but in that inclement season it was impossible to get them together at so short a notice. Witcher's regiment of cavalry was nearly 100 miles away, in and near Mercer county, across the mountains to the northeast. A small body of militia, under General Preston, occupied the earthworks that defended the salt works at Saltville.

Pushing forward with great energy, and having at his command some 5,500 men, nearly twice as many as Breckinridge could get together, Stoneman drove Vaughn's and Duke's commands before him, and pressing on passed Glade Spring, paying no attention to the Confederate force at Saltville, until he was delayed, by an action at Marion, on the 16th, but only for a short time, as his superior force enabled him to flank Breckinridge's command and compel the larger portion of it to retreat southward toward North Carolina. Riding rapidly still further up the valley, Stoneman was again opposed, in a skirmish at Mt. Airy, on the 17th and 18th. Detaching a portion of his command from Marion to destroy the lead works, by way of the Rye valley, he sent another portion on to Wytheville, where it destroyed a number of warehouses filled with army supplies, burning a church that had been used for this purpose, and destroying the railway bridges and stations for a few miles northeastward of Wytheville.

Having accomplished so much in the way of damaging the Confederacy, Stoneman retired to the vicinity of Glade Spring, and on the 20th and 21st drove away the small force at the salt works and greatly damaged that important and indispensable salt-making establishment. On the 22d he retired from Saltville. Burbridge's portion of his command then returned westward, by the way of Pound gap, on the 27th, to Catlettsburg, at the mouth of the Big Sandy in Kentucky, and Gillem's command returned to Knoxville on the 29th, reporting that it had marched 461 miles during this expedition, in intensely cold and inclement weather.

The damage inflicted upon southwest Virginia by this Federal raid, in the destruction of railway and turnpike

bridges, railway stations and warehouses, iron works, woolen mills, lead works, and army supplies of all kinds, was very injurious to the Confederacy, greatly crippling its defensive power in that region, and was also a serious blow to the army of Northern Virginia by depriving it of supplies from that great storehouse of agricultural wealth. But the damage inflicted was by no means as great as was claimed by the Federal officers, in command of the expedition, in their official reports. Much of it was soon repaired, and the lead and salt works were again quickly put in operation and the railway trains to running.

Instances of heroism and fidelity to the Confederate cause in these days of extremity were not wanting. Colonel Witcher marched his command 90 miles in twenty-five hours, and reached Marion in time to aid in forcing the enemy to retire, although he was greatly inferior in numbers. Maj. J. Stoddard Johnston, General Breckinridge's adjutant-general, who was at Wytheville without any force, collected six or eight men and held the enemy at bay for two hours, by establishing a picket post, to which they sent in a flag of truce and demanded an unconditional surrender. He agreed, but required a half hour in which to withdraw his troops. The terms were declined, but by his ruse he gained an hour and a half of time, and then left with his four men, having in the meantime saved a considerable quantity of stores by sending them eastward on the railroad. He continued to picket with his handful of men, and kept up communication with General Lee by telegraph, and probably by his bold doings prevented the enemy from advancing further. Adjt.-Gen. H. T. Stanton, of the Confederate army, reported that when the Federal forces came to opposite the lead works on New river, and found the ferryboat was on the other side, they offered \$500 to any one who would bring it over; but no one was mercenary enough to respond. They only reached the lead works by having a few bold troopers swim their horses across the deep river.

On the 2d of January, 1865, General Early had a conference with Gen. R. E. Lee, at Richmond, in reference to the difficulties that confronted him in the Shenandoah valley, the lower portion of which was still held by a large army under Sheridan, while but the fragments of an army, chiefly of broken down cavalry, remained in his command. Lee told Early that he was left in the Valley to

create the impression that his force was much larger than it really was, and he instructed him to put on a bold front and do the best he could in holding Sheridan at bay.

In consequence of a great drought, during the summer of 1864, the corn crop in the Valley was a short one, and Sheridan had destroyed much of the crops of small grain and hay. This scarcity of subsistence compelled Early to send Fitz Lee's two brigades of cavalry and part of his artillery to General Lee at Petersburg, and King's battalion of artillery to southwest Virginia. Subsequent withdrawals left Early's army consisting of two small brigades, less than a full regiment in numbers, of Wharton's infantry division, Nelson's battalion of artillery, and the cavalry of Lomax and Rosser.

Early established his headquarters in Staunton, placed his artillery in a camp near Waynesboro, cantoned Wharton's infantry near Fishersville, and widely and far to the front distributed his cavalry—practically almost disbanded it—on outpost duty, in Piedmont, in the Valley and in Appalachia, in camps where forage could be obtained for their horses. Wickham's brigade of cavalry at Barboursville, held the line of Robertson river from its head near Milam's gap, and down the Rapidan to the vicinity of Raccoon ford. Rosser's brigade, with headquarters at Swoope's, eight miles west of Staunton, had its advanced pickets at Milford, in the Page valley of the Shenandoah, on the line of Stony creek near Edenburg, in the main Shenandoah valley, at Harper's Ferry, on Lost river, and on the South Fork of the Potomac, some miles south of Moorefield, while on the west it occupied McDowell. Imboden's brigade, with headquarters at the Upper Tract in Pendleton county, some ten miles north of Franklin, picketed the South Branch of the Potomac, well toward Moorefield, and the North Fork of the Potomac, on the road leading northwest from Franklin. William L. Jackson's brigade, with headquarters at the Warm Springs, picketed the line of Jackson's river, at Hightown and points to the south of that, Cheat mountain, on the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, near the Big Spring beyond Marlinton, and points in the upper Greenbrier valley. McCausland's brigade, with headquarters at Callahan's, west of Covington, had a camp of observation near the White Sulphur Springs and picketed at Lewisburg. Lomax had his headquarters at Mill-

boro, on the Virginia Central railroad, and Payne's brigade was encamped near Lexington. Such was the disposition, in widely scattered camps of a few cavalrymen at each place, many miles from headquarters, with numerous intervening mountains and streams to cross, when Sheridan began his second Valley campaign, starting from Winchester on the 27th of February, 1865.

Rosser's expedition to Beverly, western Virginia, was one of the striking episodes of the early part of the year 1865. Leaving his camp, near Swoope's, on the Virginia Central railroad, eight miles west of Staunton, on January 7th, he crossed the Big North, Shenandoah, Shaw's ridge and Bull Pasture mountains, and encamped that night at McDowell, on the Bull Pasture river. On the 8th, crossing Jackson's River mountain, passing through Monterey and crossing the Alleghany mountain, he encamped at Yeager's, on the Back Alleghany, near the old encampment of Gen. Edward Johnson during the previous winter. On the 9th, crossing Greenbrier river and the Cheat mountains and river, he encamped at Stipe's, near the western foot of Cheat mountain, not far from Huttonsville. On the 10th, marching through Huttonsville and down Tygart's valley, he attacked the Federal camp, that night, at Beverly, having proceeded from Huttonsville on byways east of the Tygart's Valley river, and thus was enabled to attack the enemy's camp in the rear, turning its fortifications, which were constructed with reference to an attack from Parkersburg on the west to Beverly. Just before crossing Files creek, on the north side of which was the encampment of the Eighth and Thirty-fourth Ohio volunteer infantry, General Rosser divided his command into two portions—the Eighth Virginia mounted infantry, commanded by Colonel Cooke moved to the left and attacked the eastern side of the Federal camp, interposing itself between that camp, which was just to the north of Beverly, and its fortifications, thus preventing its occupation; while Rosser's brigade, composed of the Eleventh, Twelfth and Seventh Virginia cavalry regiments and the Eighth Virginia of Payne's brigade, moved farther to the right and attacked the northern side of the camp. The attack was a complete surprise and success.

After caring for his prisoners, destroying the encampment and recuperating his command, on the morning of

the 11th, Rosser, later in the day, started upon his return, and on the 18th reached his old camp near Swoope's.

On the 18th of January, Echols' old brigade of Wharton's division, left for Dublin Depot in southwest Virginia, and McCausland's came to Fishersville, en route to its winter quarters in Alleghany and Greenbrier counties. On the 20th, Jackson's cavalry came, from toward Gordonsville, on its way to winter quarters in Bath and adjacent counties. On the 22d the Federal cavalry captured Early's picket at Edenburg, but was repulsed and the picket retaken. The month of January was very cold and stormy, with intervals of thawing which broke up the roads and made traveling very difficult.

On the 2d of February, two battalions of artillery, under Col. Thomas L. Carter, left the vicinity of Waynesboro and went to Richmond. On the 7th snow fell to the depth of eight inches, interrupting railway communication. On the 8th, Payne's brigade received orders to cross the Blue ridge, from Lexington, where it had gone into camp. There was sadness at headquarters on hearing of the defeat of the Second corps near Petersburg, and of the death of Gen. John Pegram, commanding one of its divisions, who had begun his military career at Rich mountain in the early part of July, 1861. On the 9th, Gen. Fitz Lee left for Richmond. On the 20th a portion of the general hospital of the army, which had so long been located at Staunton, was removed to Richmond, and on the 22d the Churchville company of cavalry also marched for Petersburg.

On the 24th of February, Major-Generals Crook and Kelley, of the Federal army, were brought as prisoners to Staunton, by a squad of McNeill's company of partisan rangers, having been boldly and adroitly captured from their beds at Cumberland, Md., in the midst of an army of 5,000 men, and brought out on the night of the 21st, mounted on their own horses. General Early interviewed these two Federal officers, and General Crook, who was in command of the Federal army at the battle of Cedar Creek, on the morning of September 19th, in the absence of General Sherman, confessed to him that the Sixth corps was as badly damaged, or nearly so, as were the Eighth and Ninth, by Early's attack, and was, in his opinion, in no condition to resist a third attack, if such had been made.

On the 27th of February, the regular monthly court day of Augusta county, there was a large meeting of the citizens of the city and county, which was earnestly addressed by Hon. John Randolph Tucker, Hon. A. H. H. Stuart and others, in reference to supplying the wants of Lee's army. The meeting was quite enthusiastic, and a large subscription of supplies and money was promptly made by those present.

On the 28th of February the enemy was reported as again marching up the Valley with a large force, rumor saying that it was Hancock with 20,000 men. Its advance reached Mt. Jackson the night of the 27th and approached Harrisonburg late on the 28th. Great excitement prevailed in Staunton, military stores were removed and arrangements made for breaking up camp. Many citizens left for places of greater safety. On the 1st of March, General Early broke camp at Staunton and the last train left for the east at 4:30 p. m., just after Early and his staff left Waynesboro, where the army had been ordered to concentrate. The enemy came on rapidly, driving before it the small force of cavalry that opposed its progress, capturing the wagons and cattle of refugees that were trying to escape along the Valley turnpike, and encamped south of Middle river, some four miles from Staunton, some of its scouts coming into the city during the night. It was afterward reported that quite a number of "Jessie scouts," dressed as Confederate soldiers, had not only been in Staunton during the day, but that they had actually assisted in loading the railway trains. A thaw had taken place so that the roads were badly broken up and the mud very deep, except on the macadamized Valley turnpike. The mud was particularly deep between Staunton and Waynesboro, making it very difficult to move trains and artillery. Wharton strongly picketed the road at Fishersville and spent the night in his old camp. The movement of the enemy was so sudden and unexpected that it was impossible to collect the widely scattered cavalry, and Rosser had but about a score of men to watch the enemy's movements. Early's wagon train encamped beyond South river at Waynesboro, in the entrance to Rockfish gap.

On the 2d of March, Wharton's division reached Waynesboro at an early hour, and was put in line of battle, his whole force being only about 800 men, with his left on

the northwest front of the town and his right near the Central railway. He was located on a ridge, on the western edge of the town, with four pieces of artillery placed on his right, near the railroad and on the River road, and on the road leading to Staunton. His left rested in the edge of a small body of woods. The day was bitterly cold, with a biting wind and a steadily falling, heavy sleet. Sheridan came on, at an early hour, and drove in Early's pickets, having destroyed the railroad bridge over Christian's creek as he advanced. He first made a feint of attacking and then fell back, creating the impression that he had retired and gone into camp.

At about 2 p. m. he again advanced in force and formed in line of battle about a mile in front of Waynesboro, across and at right angles to the Staunton road, with skirmishers in front and deployed some distance to the left. Early's artillery opened on this advance, especially that near his left, breaking the enemy's line and compelling them to fall back, seemingly, as could best be observed through the blinding sleet for some distance; but about 3 p. m. a heavy mass of cavalry that had been moving, concealed, from the Federal right, came through the open woods and turned Early's left, which made but a feeble resistance, with its little band of benumbed men, against the mass of well-mounted cavalry that fell on them. The whole line at once gave way, and wild panic and stampede took place. The enemy, its whole force being cavalry and mounted infantry, dashed furiously forward into the swarm of flying men, following those that escaped across the river and the Blue ridge at Rockfish gap, capturing all the artillery and trains and about 1,000 prisoners, many of them citizens and convalescents who had retreated with the army from Staunton. General Early and most of his staff escaped to the mountain. The discomfiture was complete, and nothing was now left to oppose the advance of Sheridan across the Blue ridge and along the line of the Central railroad toward Richmond, or toward James river to cross to Lee's rear, which it did that night and on the morning of the following day, after sending a brigade back down the Valley, with the prisoners and a few of the captured wagons and artillery, but leaving many of the latter stuck in the mud between Staunton and Waynesboro.

On the 4th, Rosser, having collected a portion of his

command, followed down the Valley, after the force conveying the prisoners, and encamped at Middle river. On the 5th, William L. Jackson arrived at Buffalo gap and sent a portion of his cavalry to aid Rosser, by way of the War Springs turnpike to Harrisonburg, where Rosser fell on the enemy's rear, late in the day, and pursued them to Melrose. On the 6th, Colonel Smith's brigade followed down the Valley to join Rosser, who pursued the enemy to Rude's hill, where he again made a vigorous attack on their rear, on the 7th, and came very near recapturing the Confederate prisoners, McNeill having placed his rangers in front of them, at the bridge over the North Fork, thus bringing them between two fires, but they escaped by a ford on a farm road leading westward. Rosser made his attack at 10 a. m. This was probably the last noteworthy engagement that took place in the Shenandoah valley, where more than a hundred notable conflicts had been engaged in during the Confederate war.

On the 9th of March, General Rosser, who was now the ranking officer remaining in the Valley, having collected quite a body of his cavalry and learning that Sheridan's cavalry had turned from Charlottesville toward Lynchburg, determined to intercept and turn them back. Imboden's brigade, from the South Branch valley, reached Staunton on the 10th, and on the 11th Rosser marched, at sunrise, with about 500 men, toward Lexington, encamping at Bell's, beyond Midway; marching at sunrise of the 12th, crossing the Blue ridge at Tye River gap, then by way of Massie's mills and Fleetwood and on by Hubbard's to Harris', three miles beyond Lovingston, where he went into camp at midnight. Sheridan had been frustrated in his attempt to get to the rear of Lee's army by finding that the bridge across the James, at Hardwickville, was burned, and had turned down the river toward Scottsville, destroying property of all kinds as he went.

On the 13th, Rosser took the old stage road leading toward Charlottesville as far as Rockfish river, where he turned, through byways, toward Scottsville on the James, which he passed through, and marched down the river for five miles, following Sheridan's rear, along desperately muddy and badly cut up roads, until 10 p. m. On the 14th the pursuit was continued for 20 miles to

Columbia, where a rest of three hours was taken, and then the march was continued across to the "Three-Chop" road, some 15 miles, to Hadensville, where camp was taken at 11 p. m. Evidence of destruction of property of all kinds lined the roads that Rosser followed.

Marching again on the 15th, by way of Thompson's cross-roads, Payne's mill, Salem church, the Louisa road and Goodall's tavern, Ashland was reached and bivouac taken at 11 p. m., the enemy having been driven from that place about dark, by a force from Richmond. On the 16th Rosser moved toward Hanover Court House. On the 27th of March the brigades of Jackson and Imboden, returning to the lower Valley, reached Churchville, eight miles northwest of Staunton, having turned back from following after Sheridan at Hanover Junction. On the 30th, Gen. L. L. Lomax was ordered to take command of the Valley district.

On April 3d rumors reached Staunton, first that Richmond had been evacuated, and second that the Federals were again coming up the Valley, and that some 300 had reached Woodstock, but that Col. C. T. O'Ferrall had attacked these in their camp at Hawkinstown and routed them. Lomax at once impressed teams to haul his stores to Lexington. On the 4th the enemy advanced to Fisher's Hill and on the 5th to Maurertown, the Confederate cavalry skirmishing with them as they advanced. On the 6th, report having arrived that the enemy had again retired down the Valley, Lomax started toward Lexington and marched ten miles. On the 7th, passing through Lexington and by way of the mouth of Buffalo, the march was continued to the Rope Ferry, on James river below Balcony Falls, a distance of 46 miles. Great excitement prevailed among the people, and wild rumors of every kind were flying about.

On Saturday, April 8th, Lomax continued his march down the James, by the Amherst road, to Lynchburg, reaching there with his staff about 2 p. m., followed by his command after dark. That city was found greatly excited at the near approach of the enemy from the west, a few hundred as reported, and the citizens had determined to surrender the place. General Lomax soon restored confidence, and collecting convalescents and other soldiers that had straggled in, he took possession of the trenches covering the front of the city; but soon learning that the

force from the west had retired, and hearing rumors that disaster had overtaken General Lee's army at Appomattox Station, he marched toward Farmville, but returned and encamped near Lynchburg, his command having traveled 36 miles.

On Sunday, April 9th, General Lomax, accompanied by Engineer Hotchkiss, made an inspection of the defenses of Lynchburg, then went to his camp, three miles down the James, where rumor after rumor came in, saying that General Lee had had a battle on the 8th, losing most of his train and artillery; and that there was further combat on the morning of the 9th, when he had surrendered. These rumors were confirmed, later in the day, although there were some officers present who were of the opinion that Lee had escaped, with part of his army, toward Danville. Gloom and sadness pervaded the entire community. Later in the day Generals Rosser and Munford arrived, with the remnants of their forces and Lynchburg swarmed with broken and fugitive fragments of commands.

On the 10th, Lomax marched, at 6 a. m., toward Danville, by way of Rustburg, his command reaching Pan-nill's bridge, on the Staunton, or Roanoke river. He established his headquarters four miles further on at Mc-Daniel's, after a ride of 30 miles. Rosser, with his staff, rode on to Danville, expecting to meet Gen. R. E. Lee and his army at that point. The whole country was full of soldiers claiming to have escaped from Lee's surrender. On the 11th, Lomax's command marched, by way of Chalk Level, to seven miles beyond Pittsylvania Court House, toward Danville. On the 12th positive and reliable information was received that Gen. Robert E. Lee had surrendered himself and the army of Northern Virginia. As soon as the troops were reliably informed as to this momentous and opinion-changing event, a complete demoralization and disintegration of the cavalry and artillery of Lomax's command took place; nearly all the Virginia troops determining to go home, as the surrender of General Lee led them to firmly believe that there was no further hope for the Confederacy. Large numbers of soldiers swarmed across the country that had left the army of Northern Virginia without surrendering, though but few had brought away their arms. A portion of the cavalry went away during the night of the 11th. On the 12th

Col. William Nelson, one of the most chivalric of an army of chivalrous men, disbanded his artillery battalion, leaving his guns at Pittsylvania Court House, and distributing the horses among his men, as he sadly bade them God-speed to their homes. General Lomax went to Danville to see the secretary of war; his cavalry division melted away during the day, and but few were left to follow the gallant Gen. William L. Jackson, as, indulging a forlorn hope, he turned back toward the Valley. General Rosser, after having conferred with the secretary of war, John C. Breckinridge, at Danville, rode back to Lynchburg and disbanded his division. Nearly every house in all the region westward from Appomattox was full of soldiers returning to their homes, and of deserters and skulkers that were coming out of their holes.

The cavalry from Grant's army reached Lynchburg on the 13th. The remnants of Jackson's and Lomax's divisions of cavalry, that had retired to the Valley, disbanded at Buchanan, on the 15th, until the 1st of May. On the 17th it was learned that General Hancock, in command of the Federal forces in the lower Valley, had invited all soldiers in that region, belonging to the army of Northern Virginia, to come in and be paroled on the same terms as were those that were captured at Appomattox Court House, saying that all that did this would be permitted to remain, undisturbed, at their homes. The proposition of President Lincoln that Virginia should come back to the Union, without conditions, gained circulation on the 18th, and exercised a favorable influence upon the entire community.

Late in the month of April, bands of marauders terrorized the people by gathering up what they claimed to have been Confederate government property. In reality they were stealing cattle, sheep and other things, wherever they could find them. A conflict of citizens took place with some of these, three miles from Staunton, on the 20th, on which day word came to the Valley that Lincoln had been assassinated. There was a general expression of indignation and profound regret at this sad and untimely event.

On the 24th of April the full bench of the justices of the peace of Augusta county, one of the leading ones of Virginia in all respects, met in Staunton, to take steps to prevent the plundering and stealing that was going on

throughout the county by these bands of men pretending to gather up public property, and issued an address to all the people, calling on them to abide by the laws; the sheriff was also ordered to go on with the collection of taxes. Many men of the soldier element were still in a state of uncertainty as to what to do.

On the 29th, about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, some 800 Federal soldiers marched into Staunton and went into camp near the city. They were very quiet and disturbed no one. Generals Rosser and William L. Jackson, who were in Staunton, left in the morning of that day. On Monday, May 1st, the Federal provost marshal commenced paroling soldiers of the Confederacy, more offering for parole than could be accommodated. Large numbers of negroes collected at the Federal camp. Rosser and Jackson, with a few followers, left for the southwest of the Valley on the morning of the 2d, and the Federal troops left Staunton, returning toward Winchester.

On Monday, May 8th, many of the citizens of Augusta county met in Staunton, declaring that armed resistance had ceased in Augusta county and that the only way to make the laws conform to those of the United States was, from necessity, to call a convention of the State of Virginia, on the basis of the members of the house of delegates, and recommending the appointment of a committee to go to Richmond and ascertain whether the Federal authorities would allow such a body to meet and deliberate. Gen. John B. Baldwin endorsed the resolutions, in forcible and patriotic remarks, and they were unanimously adopted, and the chairman was authorized to appoint the committee. This action by this influential county and the able committee named to represent it, finally led to the appointment of a committee of nine, representing the whole State, that had much to do in securing the political rehabilitation of Virginia and her ultimate restoration to the Union.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE APPOMATTOX CAMPAIGN AND LEE'S SURRENDER.

ON Sunday, April 2, 1865, the day following the defeat of Pickett at Five Forks, the day of the breaking of the Petersburg lines and the death of A. P. Hill, General Lee sent the following dispatch to Gen. J. C. Breckinridge, the Confederate secretary of war:

I see no prospect of doing more than holding our position here till night. I am not certain that I can do that. If I can I shall withdraw to-night north of the Appomattox, and, if possible, it will be better to withdraw the whole line to-night from James river. The brigades on Hatcher's run are cut off from us; the enemy have broken through our lines and intercepted between us and them, and there is no bridge over which they can cross the Appomattox this side of Goode's or Beaver's, which are not very far from the Danville railroad. Our only chance, then, of concentrating our forces is to do so near the Danville railway, which I shall endeavor to do at once. I advise that all preparation be made for leaving Richmond to-night. I will advise you later, according to circumstances.

This dispatch was received in Richmond at 10:40 of the morning of Sunday, April 2, 1865, and was at once sent to President Davis, who was at that time attending service at St. Paul's church, not far from the war department. He at once left the church and preparations were begun for the immediate evacuation of Richmond; and late in the day the officials of the Confederate States government took a train for Danville, and those of the State of Virginia started toward Lynchburg.

On the afternoon of the 2d, at 4:55, a dispatch from General Lee read; "I think the Danville road will be safe until to-morrow;" but at 7 p. m. he communicated:

It is absolutely necessary that we should abandon our position to-night or run the risk of being cut off in the morning. I have given all the orders to officers on both sides of the river, and have taken every precaution that I can to make the movement successful. It will be a difficult operation, but I hope not impracticable. Please give all orders that you find necessary in and about Richmond. The troops will be directed to Amelia Court House.

On the 5th of April the most of Lee's army reached Amelia Court House, where, he had been officially informed, he would find a food supply for his army. Of this he subsequently wrote: "Not finding the supplies

ordered to be placed at Amelia Court House, nearly twenty-four hours were lost in endeavoring to collect in the country subsistence for the men and horses. The delay was fatal and could not be retrieved." That day General Grant, accompanied by the Second and Sixth corps, reached the Richmond & Danville road at Jetersville, beyond Amelia Court House, and placed a superior force across Lee's advance. It is more than probable that if Lee could have rationed his army at Amelia Court House, he would have pushed his way through Sheridan's opposition and marched to Danville. The same night the Ninth corps, following along the Southside railroad, reached Nottoway Court House, within a short march of Burkeville Junction of the Richmond & Danville road. It was evident, and doubtless well known by Lee, that the entire Federal army could now be concentrated, in a few hours, to oppose his march toward Danville and a junction with Johnston. Under these circumstances, on the night of the 5th, Lee left Amelia Court House and marched northward and westward, seeking to reach Farmville, on the way to Lynchburg as his objective, hoping to thus place his army west of Grant and in a position to draw supplies from the depot at Lynchburg.

On the 6th, Sheridan's cavalry, accompanied by the Sixth corps, interposed between the breaks in Lee's marching columns at the passage of Sailor's creek, not far from where that stream enters the Appomattox. Lee's strong arm, the artillery, which had always rendered most efficient service whenever called on, was not at hand in this emergency, and the Federal Second corps fell upon the rear guard of the Confederate Second corps under Gordon, and captured nearly 8,000 of Lee's men, together with Generals Ewell, Kershaw, Hunton, Corse, DuBose and G. W. Custis Lee. Many of those captured were the men that Ewell had brought, from the immediate defenses of Richmond, to Lee at Amelia Court House, following the highway along the Richmond & Danville railroad.

Reaching Farmville on the 6th, Lee found bread and meat for his men, whose principal subsistence since leaving Petersburg had been parched corn. On the 7th, four miles beyond Farmville, Lee formed line of battle in opposition to Crook's cavalry and the Federal Second corps and repulsed their attack.

From Farmville, Lee had turned northward to the old Richmond and Lynchburg stage road, on the north side of the Appomattox river, and on the 8th he was striving, by that circuitous way, to again get beyond Grant's advance and reach Lynchburg, which was now his objective point. Sheridan's cavalry, accompanied by Gibbon with the Twenty-fourth infantry corps, following the more direct and shorter road, secured possession of the Lynchburg road at Appomattox station in the afternoon of the 8th, and effectually blocked Lee's further progress toward Lynchburg.

On the morning of the 7th, from Farmville, Grant, as he says, "feeling now that General Lee's chance of escape was utterly hopeless," sent the following letter to General Lee:

GEN. R. E. LEE:

General: The result of the last week must convince you of the hopelessness of further resistance on the part of the army of Northern Virginia in this struggle. I feel that it is so, and regard it as my duty to shift from myself the responsibility of any further effusion of blood, by asking of you the surrender of that portion of the Confederate States army known as the army of Northern Virginia.

U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-General.

Early on the morning of the 8th, while still at Farmville, Grant received the following reply, dated the 7th:

LIEUT.-GEN. U. S. GRANT:

General: I have received your note of this date. Though not entertaining the opinion you express of the hopelessness of further resistance on the part of the army of Northern Virginia, I reciprocate your desire to avoid useless effusion of blood, and therefore, before considering your proposition, ask the terms you will offer on condition of its surrender.

R. E. LEE, General.

To this Grant immediately sent the following reply:

GEN. R. E. LEE:

General: Your note of last evening, in reply to mine of same date, asking the condition on which I will accept the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, is just received. In reply I would say that, peace being my great desire, there is but one condition I would insist upon, namely, that the men and officers surrendered shall be disqualified for taking up arms again against the government of the United States until properly exchanged. I will meet you, or will designate officers to meet any officers you may name for the same purpose, at any point agreeable to you, for the purpose of arranging definitely the terms upon which the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia will be received.

U. S. GRANT.

The Federal pursuit was resumed at the same time, Meade following Lee north of the Appomattox, while Sheridan, with the Twenty-fourth and Fifth corps, pushed

forward by the direct road to Appomattox station, where the stage road to Lynchburg, the one Lee was following, reaches and crosses the Southside railroad. Lee turned upon Meade with frequent contention, during the 8th, holding him back by his rear guard. Late in the afternoon Sheridan reached Appomattox station, drove away Lee's advance guard and "captured twenty-five pieces of artillery, a hospital train, and four trains of cars loaded with supplies for Lee's army," writes Grant in his report. About midnight of that day, April 8th, Grant, who accompanied Meade in following after Lee, received the following note from the latter:

LIEUT.-GEN. U. S. GRANT:

General: I received at a late hour your note of today. In mine of yesterday I did not intend to propose the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, but to ask the terms of your proposition. To be frank, I do not think that the emergency has arisen to call for the surrender of this army, but as the restoration of peace should be the sole object of all, I desired to know whether your proposals would lead to that end. I cannot, therefore, meet you with a view to surrender the army of Northern Virginia, but as far as your proposal may affect the Confederate States forces under my command, and tend to the restoration of peace, I should be pleased to meet you at 10 a. m. to-morrow, on the old stage road to Richmond, between the picket lines of the two armies.

R. E. LEE, General.

On the morning of the 9th of April, when Lee found that Grant's infantry had possession of the road he was following toward Lynchburg, he said, with suppressed emotion: "There is nothing left but to go to General Grant, and I would rather die a thousand deaths." Then, after a thoughtful pause, he added: "How easily I could get rid of this and be at rest. I have only to ride along the line and all will be over. But it is our duty to live. What will become of the women and children of the South, if we are not here to protect them?" At about this time he received, in reply to his of the 8th, the following note, of the 9th, from General Grant:

GEN. R. E. LEE:

General: Your note of yesterday is received. As I have no authority to treat on the subject of peace the meeting proposed for 10 a. m. to-day could lead to no good. I will state, however, General, that I am equally anxious for peace with yourself, and the whole North entertain the same feeling. The terms upon which peace can be had are well understood. By the South laying down their arms they will hasten that most desirable event, save thousands of human lives, and hundreds of millions of property not yet destroyed. Sincerely hoping that all our difficulties may be settled without the loss of another life, I subscribe myself,

U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-General.

On the morning of Sunday, April 9th, just as Lee's advance was making a desperate charge in endeavoring to break through Sheridan's cavalry at Appomattox station, the Fifth and Twenty-fourth corps of Federal infantry advanced and drove back the Confederate charge. At about that time a white flag was sent, from the Confederate lines, "requesting a suspension of hostilities, pending negotiations for a surrender." Lee at this juncture, accepting the inevitable, addressed the following note to Grant:

LIEUT.-GEN. U. S. GRANT:

General: I received your note of this morning on the picket line, whither I had come to meet you and ascertain definitely what terms were embraced in your proposal of yesterday with reference to the surrender of this army. I now ask an interview in accordance with the offer contained in your letter of yesterday for that purpose.

R. E. LEE, General.

After dispatching this reluctantly written note, General Lee exchanged his war-worn uniform for a new one that he had in his baggage, and rode to Appomattox Court House, where arrangements had been made for the solicited interview between General Grant and himself, at the house of a Mr. McLean, who had removed to this remote place from the battlefield of Manassas, in which he was living in July, 1861, only to have in his new house, four years later, the closing scene of the bloody drama of the great civil war.

The two great commanders soon met, and after a brief but courteous interview, the terms of surrender were agreed to and formulated in the following correspondence:

Appomattox Court House, Va., April 9, 1865.

GEN. R. E. LEE:

General: In accordance with the substance of my letter to you of the 8th instant, I propose to receive the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia on the following terms, to wit: Rolls of all officers and men to be made in duplicate, one copy to be given to an officer to be designated by me, the other to be retained by such officer or officers as you may designate; the officers to give their individual paroles not to take up arms against the government of the United States until properly exchanged, and each company or regimental commander sign a like parole for the men of their commands. The arms, artillery, and public property to be parked and stacked, and turned over to the officers appointed by me to receive them. This will not embrace the side-arms of the officers, nor their private horses or baggage. This done, each officer and man will be allowed to return to his home, not to be disturbed by United States authority so long as they observe their paroles and the laws in force where they may reside.

U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-General.

Headquarters Army of Northern Virginia, April 9, 1865.

LIEUT.-GEN. U. S. GRANT:

General: I have received your letter of this date containing the terms of surrender of the army of Northern Virginia as proposed by you. As they are substantially the same as those expressed in your letter of the 8th instant, they are accepted. I will proceed to designate the proper officers to carry the stipulations into effect.

R. E. LEE, General.

The courtesy of General Grant, on this memorable and to Lee soul-trying occasion, could not have been surpassed. On the suggestion of General Lee that most of the horses of the Confederate privates were their personal property, Grant directed that they should be allowed to retain them; and on intimation that Lee's men were without rations, he promptly ordered that they should be abundantly supplied from the captured trains. He showed not the slightest spirit of exultation, in his demeanor, at the grand victory he had achieved, and quickly repressed a disposition, manifested by a portion of his army, to celebrate its triumph with salvos of artillery.

On the morning of the day of the surrender, Lee had, according to the reports of his ordnance officers, 7,892 organized infantry with arms, less than 2,100 effective cavalry, and but 63 pieces of artillery; a mere handful in contrast with the mighty host of 107,496 (reported as in Grant's command on the 10th of April) that surrounded him, and a portion of which his half-starved but ever heroic veterans, though few in number, were actually driving before them at the very moment he sent forward a flag of truce.

Dr. Henry Alexander White describes the feelings of Lee's veterans who were present at this time (in his *Life of R. E. Lee* in "The Heroes of the Nations" series), in these words:

Among the Confederate soldiers themselves there had been scarcely thought of surrender. When they saw their beloved leader riding back from the place of negotiations, their grief was well-nigh unspeakable. They halted his horse and gathered in clusters about him. Tears were running down every cheek as the grim, ragged veterans came up to wring his hand. Only sobs were heard, or prayers uttered in broken words, calling down the benedictions of Heaven upon Lee. The tears in his own eyes formed his answer to the agony of his men. He could only say, in a tone that trembled with sorrow, "Men, we have fought through the war together. I have done the best I could for you. My heart is too full to say more."

On the next day, Monday, April 10th, General Lee issued, to the survivors of the famous army of Northern Virginia, the following farewell order:

GENERAL ORDERS, NO. 9.

Headquarters Army of Northern Virginia, April 10, 1865.

After four years of arduous service, marked by unsurpassed courage and fortitude, the army of Northern Virginia has been compelled to yield to overwhelming numbers and resources.

I need not tell the survivors of so many hard-fought battles, who have remained steadfast to the last, that I have consented to this result from no distrust of them; but, feeling that valor and devotion could accomplish nothing that could compensate for the loss that would have attended the continuation of the contest, I have determined to avoid the useless sacrifice of those whose past services have endeared them to their countrymen.

By the terms of the agreement, officers and men can return to their homes and remain there until exchanged.

You will take with you the satisfaction that proceeds from the consciousness of duty faithfully performed; and I earnestly pray that a merciful God will extend to you His blessing and protection.

With an unceasing admiration of your constancy and devotion to your country, and a grateful remembrance of your kind and generous consideration of myself, I bid you an affectionate farewell.

R. E. LEE, General.

General Grant, in his official report, dated July 22, 1865, said: "General Lee's great influence throughout the whole South caused his example to be followed, and to-day the result is that the armies lately under his leadership are at their homes, desiring peace and quiet, and their arms are in the hands of our ordnance officers." After congratulating his soldiers for the success of their efforts, he concluded his report in these noble words: "Let them hope for perpetual peace and harmony with that enemy whose manhood, however mistaken the cause, drew forth such herculean deeds of valor."

Leaving Maj.-Gen. John Gibbon at Appomattox, with the Fifth and Twenty-fourth army corps and McKenzie's cavalry, to complete the paroling of the surrendered army and take charge of public property, General Grant immediately ordered the rest of his army back to the vicinity of Burkeville, the junction of the Southside and the Richmond & Danville railroads. The losses of the Union army under Grant, from March 29th to April 9th, the period of the Appomattox campaign, were 10,780; numbers that attest the character of the last struggle of the army of Northern Virginia.

From "near Appomattox Court House," where he had tarried after the surrender, Gen. R. E. Lee, on the 12th

of April, 1865, made his last report of military operations of the army under his control, to President Davis, in these words:

Mr. President: It is with pain that I announce to Your Excellency the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia. The operations which preceded this result will be reported in full. I will therefore only now state that, upon arriving at Amelia Court House on the morning of the 4th with the advance of the army, on the retreat from the line in front of Richmond and Petersburg, and not finding supplies ordered to be placed there, nearly twenty-four hours were lost in endeavoring to collect in the country subsistence for men and horses. This delay was fatal, and could not be retrieved. The troops, wearied by continual fighting and marching for several days and nights, obtained neither rest nor refreshment; and on moving, on the 5th, on the Richmond & Danville railroad, I found at Jetersville the enemy's cavalry, and learned of the approach of his infantry and the general advance of his army toward Burkeville. This deprived us of the use of the railroad, and rendered it impracticable to procure from Danville the supplies ordered to meet us at points of our march. Nothing could be obtained from the adjacent country. Our route to the Roanoke was therefore changed, and the march directed upon Farmville, where supplies were ordered from Lynchburg. The change of route threw the troops over the roads pursued by the artillery and wagon trains west of the railroad, which impeded our advance and embarrassed our movements.

On the morning of the 6th, General Longstreet's corps reached Rice's station, on the Lynchburg railroad. It was followed by the commands of Generals Anderson, Ewell, and Gordon, with orders to close it as fast as the progress of the trains would permit, or as they could be directed on roads farther west. General Anderson, commanding Pickett's and B. R. Johnson's divisions, became disconnected with Mahone's division, forming the rear of Longstreet. The enemy's cavalry penetrated the line of march through the interval thus left and attacked the wagon train moving toward Farmville. This caused serious delay in the march of the center and rear of the column, and enabled the enemy to mass upon their flank. After successive attacks, Anderson's and Ewell's corps were captured or driven from their position. The latter general, with both of his division commanders, Kershaw and Custis Lee, and his brigadiers, were taken prisoners. Gordon, who all the morning, aided by Gen. W. H. F. Lee's cavalry, had checked the advance of the enemy on the road from Amelia Springs and protected the trains, became exposed to his combined assaults, which he bravely resisted and twice repulsed; but the cavalry having been withdrawn to another part of the line of march, and the enemy massing heavily on his front and both flanks, renewed the attack about 6 p. m., and drove him from the field in much confusion.

The army continued its march during the night, and every effort was made to reorganize the divisions which had been shattered by the day's operations; but the men being depressed by fatigue and hunger, many threw away their arms, while others followed the wagon trains and embarrassed their progress. On the morning of the 7th, rations were issued to the troops as they passed Farmville, but the safety of the trains requiring their removal upon the ap-

proach of the enemy, all could not be supplied. The army, reduced to two corps, under Longstreet and Gordon, moved steadily on the road to Appomattox Court House; thence its march was ordered by Campbell Court House, through Pittsylvania, toward Danville. The roads were wretched and the progress slow. By great efforts the head of the column reached Appomattox Court House on the evening of the 8th, and the troops were halted for rest. The march was ordered to be resumed at 1 a. m. of the 9th. Fitz Lee, with the cavalry, supported by Gordon, was ordered to drive the enemy from his front, wheel to the left, and cover the passage of the trains; while Longstreet, who from Rice's station had formed the rear guard, should close up and hold the position. Two battalions of artillery and the ammunition wagons were directed to accompany the army, the rest of the artillery and wagons to move toward Lynchburg. In the early part of the night the enemy attacked Walker's artillery train near Appomattox station, on the Lynchburg railroad, and were repelled. Shortly afterward their cavalry dashed toward the Court House, till halted by our line. During the night there were indications of a large force massing on our left and front. Fitz Lee was directed to ascertain its strength, and to suspend his advance till daylight if necessary. About 5 a. m. on the 9th, with Gordon on his left, he moved forward and opened the way. A heavy force of the enemy was discovered opposite Gordon's right, which, moving in the direction of Appomattox Court House, drove back the left of the cavalry and threatened to cut off Gordon from Longstreet, his cavalry at the same time threatening to envelop his left flank. Gordon withdrew across the Appomattox river, and the cavalry advanced on the Lynchburg road and became separated from the army.

Learning the condition of affairs on the lines, where I had gone under the expectation of meeting General Grant to learn definitely the terms of the surrender of the army, I requested a suspension of hostilities until these terms could be arranged. In the interview which occurred with General Grant in compliance with my request, terms having been agreed on, I surrendered that portion of the army of Northern Virginia which was on the field, with its arms, artillery, and wagon trains, the officers and men to be paroled, retaining their side-arms and private effects. I deemed this course the best under all the circumstances by which we were surrounded.

On the morning of the 9th, according to the reports of the ordnance officers, there were 7,892 organized infantry with arms, with an average of seventy-five rounds of ammunition per man. The artillery, though reduced to sixty-three pieces, with ninety-three rounds of ammunition, was sufficient. These comprised all the supplies of ordnance that could be relied on in the State of Virginia. I have no accurate report of the cavalry, but believe it did not exceed 2,100 effective men. The enemy were more than five times our numbers. If we could have forced our way one day longer, it would have been at a great sacrifice of life, and at its end I did not see how a surrender could have been avoided. We had no subsistence for man or horse, and it could not be gathered in the country. The supplies ordered from Lynchburg could not reach us, and the men, deprived of food and sleep for many days, were worn out and exhausted. With great respect, your obedient servant,

His Excellency Jefferson Davis.

R. E. LEE, General.

Maj.-Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, who commanded the cavalry corps of the army of Northern Virginia during the Appomattox campaign, sent to Gen. R. E. Lee, from Richmond, April 22, 1865, a report of the operations of his command from the 28th of March to the 8th of April. Of the events near the time of the surrender, he wrote:

During the evening of the 8th I received orders to move the cavalry corps to the front and to report in person to the commanding general. Upon arriving at his headquarters I found General Longstreet there, and we were soon after joined by General Gordon. The condition of our situation was explained by the commanding general to us as the commanders of his three corps, and the correspondence between General Grant and himself, as far as it had then progressed, was laid before us. It was decided that I should attack the enemy's cavalry at daylight, then reported as obstructing our further march; Gordon was to support me, and in case nothing but cavalry was discovered we were to clear it from our route and open a way for our remaining troops; but in case they were supported by heavy bodies of infantry, the commanding general should at once be notified, in order that a flag of truce should be sent to accede to the only alternative left us. The enemy enabled to take position across our line of march by moving up from Appomattox station, which they reached earlier than our main advance, in consequence of our march being retarded by our wagon trains.

At daybreak on the 9th, Gordon's command, numbering about 1,600 muskets, was formed in line of battle a mile west of Appomattox Court House, on the Lynchburg road. The cavalry corps was formed on his right, W. H. F. Lee's division being nearest the infantry; Rosser's in the center, and Munford's on the extreme right, making a mounted force of about 2,400 men. Our attack was made about sunrise, and the enemy's cavalry quickly driven out of the way, with a loss of two guns and a number of prisoners. The arrival at this time of two corps of their infantry necessitated the retiring of our lines, during which, and knowing what would be the result, I withdrew the cavalry, W. H. F. Lee retiring toward our rear, and Rosser and Munford out toward Lynchburg, having cleared that road of the enemy. Upon hearing that the army of Northern Virginia had surrendered, the men were generally dispersed and rode off to their homes, subject to reassembling for a continuation of the struggle. I rode out in person with a portion of W. H. F. Lee's division, the nearest to me at that time, and previous to the negotiations between the commanders of the two armies. It will be recalled that my action was in accordance with the views I had expressed in the council the night before—that if a surrender was compelled the next day, I would try to extricate the cavalry, provided it could be done without compromising the action of the commanding general, but that I would not avail myself of a cessation of hostilities pending the existence of a truce. I had an understanding with General Gordon that he should communicate to you the information of the presence of the enemy's infantry upon the road in our front. Apart from the fond, though forlorn hope that future operations were still in store for the cavalry, I was desirous that they should not be included in the capitulations because the ownership of their horses was vested in themselves, and

I deemed it doubtful that terms could be offered allowing such ownership to continue. A few days convinced me of the impracticability of longer entertaining such hopes, and I rode into the Federal lines and accepted for myself the terms offered the officers of the army of Northern Virginia. My cavalry are being paroled at the nearest places for such purposes in their counties. . . .

I particularly regret not being able to do justice in this, the only way I can, to the many acts of gallantry performed by officers and men upon the memorable retreat; but such conduct is usually derived from the reports of subordinate officers, the absence of which will explain it. I testify, however, to the general conduct of my officers and men as highly creditable to themselves upon every occasion which called forth its display. They fought every day, from the 29th of March to the 9th of April, both inclusive, with a valor as steady as of yore, and whose brightness was not dimmed by the increasing clouds of adversity. I desire to call attention to the marked and excellent behavior of Generals W. H. F. Lee, Rosser, and Munford, commanding divisions. . . . The notice of the commanding general is also directed to Brig.-Gens. Henry A. Wise and Eppa Hunton, commanding infantry brigades, and who were more or less under my command until Amelia Court House was reached. The disheartening surrounding influences had no effect upon them; they kept their duty plainly in view, and they fully performed it. The past services of Gen. Henry A. Wise, his antecedents in civil life, and his age, caused his bearing upon this most trying retreat to shine conspicuously forth. His unconquerable spirit was filled with as much earnestness and zeal in April, 1865, as when he first took up arms four years ago, and the freedom with which he exposed a long life laden with honors proved he was willing to sacrifice it if it would conduce toward attaining the liberty of his country.

[After paying well-merited tributes to the officers of his staff, in the conclusion of his report, Gen. Fitz Lee has this to say of a typical young Virginian:] I deeply regret being obliged to mention the dangerous wounding of my aide-de-camp, Lieut. Charles Minnegarode, Jr. One of the last minie balls that whistled on its cruel errand over the field of Appomattox passed entirely through the upper part of his body. He fell at my side, where for three long years he had discharged his duties with an affectionate fidelity never exceeded, a courage never surpassed. Wonderfully passing unharmed through the many battles fought by the two principal armies in this State (for an impetuous spirit often carried him where the fire was hottest), he was left at last, writhing in his great pain, to the mercy of the victors upon the field of our last struggle. . . . Lieutenant Minnegarode combined the qualities of an aide-de-camp to a general officer in a remarkable degree. His personal services to me will forever be prized and remembered, whilst his intelligence, amiability and brightness of disposition rendered him an object of endearment to all.

Brevet Brig.-Gen. Charles A. Whittier, of the United States volunteers, in a paper read before the Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, makes the following comments:

The army of Northern Virginia will deservedly rank as the best

army which has existed on this continent; suffering privations unknown to its opponents, it fought well from the early Peninsula days to the surrender of that small remnant at Appomattox. It seemed always ready, active, mobile; without doubt it was composed of the best men of the South, rushing to what they considered the defense of their country against a bitter invader; and they took the places assigned them, officer or private, and fought until beaten by superiority of numbers. The North sent no such army to the field, and its patriotism was of an easier kind; there was no rallying-cry which drove all the best—the rich and the educated—to join the fighting armies. All avocations here went on without interruption; the law, the clergy, educational institutions, merchants and traders, suffered nothing from a diminution of their working forces; we had loyal leagues, excellent sanitary and Christian commissions, great “war governors” (Andrew, Curtin and Morton), and secretaries, organizers of victory; we had a people full of loyalty and devotion to the cause, and of hatred for the neighbor who differed as to the way in which the war should be conducted, never realizing that the way was by going, or sending their best and brightest.

As a matter of comparison: We have lately read that from William and Mary’s college, Virginia, thirty-two out of thirty-five professors and instructors abandoned the college work and joined the army in the field. Harvard college sent one professor from its large corps of professors and instructors!

We thought our own Massachusetts a pattern of loyalty and patriotism during the war. Read the “Record of Massachusetts Volunteers,” as published by the State; the bounties paid (thirteen million dollars by the State, and more millions by the cities and towns—a worthless expenditure—to give Massachusetts a nominal credit, but of no service in sending good fighting men to the front); the desertions; the hosts of men who never joined their regiments; and there is so much to be ashamed of! An effort to fill the required quota, without reference to the good service to be rendered! The enlisting officers at one time put out their posters with something like this: “Enlist in the heavy artillery regiments. No marching, no fighting, comfortable quarters, etc.!” [General Whittier then furnishes a list of Massachusetts artillery and infantry regiments, containing 20,957 men, of which only 95 were killed in battle.] This does not indicate brilliant or useful service; and yet the material was probably better than that of any regiments of the State. The same class of men in the South was in the thickest of the fight, and their intelligence and patriotism did a great work. And what a power these twenty thousand men I have mentioned would have been, with a little discipline and drill, added to the army of the Potomac—an army corps of twenty thousand young men from Massachusetts alone! If it was so with us, it is reasonable to suppose that other Northern States pursued the same selfish policy.

APPENDIX.

LIST OF REGIMENTS AND BATTALIONS FROM VIRGINIA IN THE CONFEDERATE STATES ARMY, 1861-65. COMPILED IN WAR RECORDS OFFICE, UNITED STATES WAR DEPARTMENT.

First Artillery regiment (known as Hardaway's battalion, also as First Virginia battalion light artillery): Brown, J. Thompson, major, colonel; Cabell, Henry Coalter, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Coleman, Lewis M., lieutenant-colonel; Hardaway, Robert A., major, lieutenant-colonel; Moseley, Edgar F., major, lieutenant-colonel; Randolph, George W., colonel; Stribling, Robert M., major, lieutenant-colonel; Watson, David, major.*

First Artillery battalion. (See First regiment.)

First Cavalry battalion (merged into Ninth Cavalry): Beale, Richard L. T., major; Johnson, John E., lieutenant-colonel.

First Cavalry battalion Local Defense Troops: Browne, William M., colonel.

First regiment Partisan Rangers. (See Sixty-second mounted infantry.)

First Cavalry regiment: Brien, L. Tiernan, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Carter, R. Welby, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Drake, James H., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Irving, Charles R., major, lieutenant-colonel; Jones, William E., colonel; Lee, Fitzhugh, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Morgan, William A., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Stuart, James E. B., colonel; Swann, Robert, major.

First Infantry battalion regulars (Irish battalion): Bridgford, D. B., major; Munford, John D., major; Seddon, John, major.

First Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops (Armory battalion): Ayres, Thomas H., major; Downer, William S., major; Ford, C. H., major.

First battalion Reserves: Duke, Richard Thomas Walker, lieutenant-colonel; Strange, James M., major.

First battalion Valley Reserves: Miller, W. A. J., major.

First Infantry Local Defense Troops: James, James F., colonel.

First Infantry regiment (Williams' Rifles): Dooley, John, major; Fry, William H., lieutenant-colonel; Langley, Frank H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Moore, Patrick T., colonel; Mumford, William P., major; Norton, George F., major; Palmer, William H., major; Skinner, Frederick G., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Williams, Lewis B., Jr., colonel.

First Infantry regiment State Line: Berkley, Henry M., lieutenant-colonel; Nighbert, James A., major; Radford, Richard C. W., colonel.

* Names are arranged in alphabetical order.

First Militia regiment, Seventh brigade: Albert, H. St. George, colonel; Lutz, Levi P., major; Sipe, Emanuel, lieutenant-colonel.

First regiment Reserves: Averett, C. E., major; Boswell, T. T., major, lieutenant-colonel; Farinholt, Benjamin L., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

First regiment State Reserves, second-class militia: Danforth, John B., colonel; Spencer, Thomas J., lieutenant-colonel.

First Kanawha regiment Infantry (became the Twenty-second regiment, which see).

Second Heavy Artillery regiment (Home Artillery, or Virginia Home Artillery. Became Twenty-second battalion Virginia Infantry, May 23, 1862): Burwell, W. P., major; Pannill, Joseph, lieutenant-colonel; Tansill, Robert, colonel.

Second Cavalry battalion (transferred to Fifth Cavalry): Pate, H. Clay, lieutenant-colonel.

Second Cavalry regiment (also called Thirtieth regiment): Breckinridge, Cary, major, lieutenant-colonel; Graves, William F., major; Langhorne, John S., major; Munford, Thomas T., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Radford, Richard Carlton Walker, colonel; Watts, James W., lieutenant-colonel.

Second battalion Reserves: Cook, Edward B., major; Guy, John H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Scruggs, D. E., major, lieutenant-colonel; Waller, Richard P., lieutenant-colonel.

Second Infantry regiment: Allen, James W., colonel; Botts, Lawson, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Colston, Raleigh T., major, lieutenant-colonel; Jones, Francis B., major; Lackland, Francis, lieutenant-colonel; Moore, Edwin L., major; Nadenbousch, John Q. A., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Randolph, William Welford, lieutenant-colonel; Stewart, Charles H., major.

Second Infantry regiment Local Defense Troops: Scruggs, D. E., colonel; Tanner, William E., lieutenant-colonel.

Second Militia regiment, Seventh brigade: Buswell, Thomas, lieutenant-colonel; Finter, Cullen W., major; Reid, Peter C., major; Spitler, Mann, colonel.

Second regiment Reserves: Brockenbrough, colonel.

Second State Reserves. (See Nineteenth Militia.)

Second Kanawha regiment Infantry (became Thirty-sixth regiment, which see).

Second Infantry regiment State Line: Ball, Martin V., major; Harrison, James, lieutenant-colonel; Peters, William E., colonel.

Third Artillery Local Defense Troops: Dorman, James B., major; Porter, John C., colonel; Shields, John P., lieutenant-colonel.

Third Cavalry regiment: Carrington, Henry, major; Carter, William R., major, lieutenant-colonel; Feild, William M., lieutenant-colonel; Goode, Thomas F., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Johnston, Robert, colonel; Owen, Thomas H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Phillips, Jefferson C., major; Thornton, John T., lieutenant-colonel.

Third battalion Reserves: Archer, F. H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Bond, Thomas H., major; Hood, W. H., lieutenant-colonel; Jarvis, William H., major.

Third battalion Valley Reserves: McCune, Samuel, major.

Third Infantry regiment (formerly Third battalion): Callcote, Alexander D., major, lieutenant-colonel; Mayo, Joseph, Jr., lieuten-

ant-colonel, colonel; Pryor, Roger A., colonel; Pryor, William H., lieutenant-colonel; Scott, Joseph V., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Third Infantry regiment Local Defense Troops (Departmental): Baker, Bolling, major; Henley, John A., major; Jamison, S. G., major; McAnerney, John, Jr., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Sutherland, S. F., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Third Militia regiment, Seventh brigade: Hottel, J. A., lieutenant-colonel; Newell, John H., major; Sibert, James H., colonel.

Third regiment Reserves: Booker, Richard A., colonel; Ewers, William M., major; Leftwich, Joel B., lieutenant-colonel.

Third Infantry regiment State Line: Breckenridge, P. G., major; Clarkson, John N., colonel; Swann, Thomas B., lieutenant-colonel.

Fourth Heavy Artillery regiment (ordered known as Thirty-fourth Virginia Infantry): Bagby, John R., major; Goode, John Thomas, colonel; Harrison, Randolph, lieutenant-colonel; Leigh, J. Wickham, major.

Fourth Cavalry regiment: Hobson, Alexander M., major; Lee, Stephen D., colonel (temporarily); Old, Charles, major, lieutenant-colonel; Payne, William H., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Randolph, Robert, major, lieutenant-colonel; Robertson, Beverly H., colonel; Utterback, Robert E., major; Wickham, Williams C., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Wooldridge, William B., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Fourth Infantry battalion: Tyler, Nat, lieutenant-colonel.

Fourth Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops (Naval battalion): Curlin, Martin W., major; Minor, R. D., major.

Fourth battalion Reserves: Godwin, D. E., major.

Fourth Infantry regiment: Bennett, Matthew D., major; Gardner, Robert D., lieutenant-colonel; Kent, Joseph F., major; Moore, Lewis T., lieutenant-colonel; Preston, James T., colonel; Pendleton, Albert G., major; Ronald, Charles A., colonel; Terry, William, major, colonel.

Fourth Militia regiment, Seventh brigade: Horn, O. P., major; Maupin, William A., colonel.

Fourth regiment Reserves (also called Fifth regiment): Poague, Alpheus W., major, lieutenant-colonel; Preston, Robert T., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Fourth Infantry regiment State Line: Houtshell, David S., colonel; Jackson, William A., lieutenant-colonel; Radford, John T., major.

Fifth Cavalry regiment, Provisional Army (disbanded?): Allston, Benjamin, major; Mullins, John, major.

Fifth Cavalry regiment (consolidated with Fifteenth Cavalry, November 8, 1864): Allen, James H., lieutenant-colonel; Boston, Reuben B., colonel; Douglas, Beverly B., major; Eells, John, major; Harding, Cyrus, Jr., major; Pate, H. Clay, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Fuller, John W., major; Rosser, Thomas L., colonel.

Fifth and Fifteenth Virginia Cavalry (consolidated November 8, 1864): Harding, Cyrus, Jr., major.

Fifth battalion Reserves: Henry, P. M., lieutenant-colonel.

Fifth Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops (Arsenal battalion): Brown, W. Le Roy, lieutenant-colonel; Ennis, Philip J., lieutenant-colonel; Vaughan, John B., major.

Fifth Infantry battalion: Archer, F. H., lieutenant-colonel; Foster, William R., major; Wilson, John P., Jr., major.

Fifth Infantry regiment: Baylor, William S. H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Harman, William H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Harper, Kenton, colonel; Koiner, Absalom, major; Newton, James W., major; Williams, Hazel J., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifth Infantry regiment State Line: Edmundson, David, lieutenant-colonel; Preston, C. H., major; Preston, Robert T., colonel.

Sixth Cavalry regiment: Cabell, J. Grattan, major, lieutenant-colonel; Field, Charles W., colonel; Flournoy, Thomas S., major, colonel; Flournoy, Cabell E., major; Green, John Shac., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Grimsley, Daniel A., major; Harrison, Julien, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Richards, Daniel T., lieutenant-colonel.

Sixth Infantry battalion: Wilson, John P., major.

Sixth Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops (Tredegar battalion): Tanner, William E., major.

Sixth battalion Reserves (also called Sixteenth): Smith, John H. A., major; Smith, Robert, lieutenant-colonel.

Sixth Infantry regiment: Corprew, Thomas J., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Lundy, William T., major, lieutenant-colonel; Mahone, William, colonel; Rogers, George T., major, colonel; Taylor, Robert B., major; Williamson, Henry W., lieutenant-colonel.

Seventh Cavalry regiment: Ashby, Turner, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Dulany, Richard H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Funsten, Oliver R., major; Hatcher, Daniel C., major; Jones, William E., colonel; Marshall, Thomas, major, lieutenant-colonel; McDonald, Angus W., colonel; Myers, Samuel B., major.

Seventh Infantry battalion (merged into Sixty-first regiment): Wilson, Samuel M., lieutenant-colonel.

Seventh Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops: Morton, B. C., major.

Seventh battalion Reserves: Chrisman, George, major.

Seventh Infantry regiment: Flowerree, Charles C., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Kemper, James L., colonel; Patton, Waller Tazewell, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Swindler, Aylett A., major; Williams, Lewis R., Jr., lieutenant-colonel.

Eighth Cavalry battalion (transferred to Tenth Cavalry): Davis, J. Lucius, lieutenant-colonel; Duffield, C. B., major.

Eighth Cavalry regiment: Bowen, Thomas P., major, lieutenant-colonel; Cook, Alphonso F., lieutenant-colonel; Corns, James M., colonel; Edmondson, P. M., major; Fitzhugh, Henry, major, lieutenant-colonel; Jenifer, Walter H., lieutenant-colonel; Jenkins, Albert G., lieutenant-colonel.

Eighth battalion Reserves: Miller, major.

Eighth Infantry regiment: Berkeley, Edmund, major, lieutenant-colonel; Berkeley, Norborne, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Berkeley, William N., major; Hunton, Eppa, colonel; Tebbs, Charles B., lieutenant-colonel; Thrift, James, major.

Ninth Cavalry regiment: Beale, Richard L. T., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Johnson, John E., colonel; Lee, William H. F., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Lewis, Meriwether, major, lieutenant-colonel; Swann, Samuel A., major; Waller, Thomas, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Ninth Infantry battalion (merged into Twenty-fifth regiment): Camden, G. D., Jr., major; Hansbrough, George W., lieutenant-colonel.

Ninth battalion Reserves: Taylor, Arch., major.

Ninth Infantry regiment: Crutchfield, Stapleton, major; Gilliam, James S., major, lieutenant-colonel; Godwin, David J., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Hardin, Mark B., major; Owens, John C., major; Phillips, James J., colonel; Preston, John Thomas Lewis, lieutenant-colonel; Richardson, William J., lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Francis H., colonel.

Ninth Militia regiment: Gresham, Thomas Robert, lieutenant-colonel; Saunders, William A., major.

Tenth Heavy Artillery battalion: Allen, William, major; Hensley, James O., major.

Tenth Cavalry regiment: Caskie, Robert A., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Clement, William B., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Davis, J. Lucius, colonel; McGruder, Zachariah S., lieutenant-colonel; Rosser, J. Travis, major.

Tenth battalion Reserves: Byrd, William W., major.

Tenth Infantry regiment: Coffman, Isaac G., major; Gibbons, Simeon B., colonel; Martz, Dorilas Henry Lee, lieutenant-colonel; Stover, Joshua, major; Walker, Samuel T., major, lieutenant-colonel; Warren, Edward T. H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Eleventh Cavalry battalion: Bradley, Benjamin F., major.

Eleventh Cavalry regiment (formed from Seventeenth battalion and two companies Fifth Virginia Cavalry): Ball, Matt Dulaney, major, lieutenant-colonel; Funsten, Oliver R., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Harness, William H., major; Lomax, Lunsford L., colonel; McDonald, Edward H., major.

Eleventh battalion Reserves: Bosang, William H., major; Wallace, Samuel M., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Eleventh Infantry regiment: Clement, Adam, major (appointment canceled); Funsten, David, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Garland, Samuel, Jr., colonel; Hutter, J. Risque, major; Harrison, Carter H., major; Langhorne, Maurice S., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Otey, Kirkwood, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Twelfth Artillery battalion: Boggs, Francis J., major.

Twelfth Cavalry regiment: Burks, Richard H., lieutenant-colonel; Harman, Asher Waterman, colonel; Knott, John L., major; Massie, Thomas B., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twelfth Infantry regiment: Brockett, Edgar L., major; Feild, Everard Meade, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Jones, Richard W., major; Lewellen, John Richard, major, lieutenant-colonel; May, John P., major; Taylor, Fielding L., lieutenant-colonel; Weisiger, David A., colonel.

Thirteenth Artillery battalion: Gibbes, Wade Hampton, major; King, J. Floyd, major, lieutenant-colonel; Owen, William Miller, major; Belsches, Benjamin W., major; Chambliss, John R., Jr., colonel; Gillette, Joseph E., major; Phillips, Jefferson C., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Savage, Alexander, lieutenant-colonel; Upshaw, Thomas E., major, lieutenant-colonel; Winfield, Benjamin F., major.

Thirteenth Infantry regiment: Crittenden, Charles T., major; Goodman, George Augustus, major, lieutenant-colonel; Hill, Ambrose P., colonel; Sherrard, John B., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Walker, James A., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Fourteenth Cavalry battalion (Chesapeake battalion. Transferred to Fifteenth Cavalry): Burroughs, Edgar, major.

Fourteenth Cavalry regiment: Bailey, Robert Augustus, lieuten-

ant-colonel; Cochran, James, colonel; Eakle, Frank B., major; Gibson, John A., lieutenant-colonel; Jackson, George, major; Thorburn, Charles E., colonel.

Fourteenth Infantry: Evans, Moses F. T., major, lieutenant-colonel; Godwin, David J., lieutenant-colonel; Hodges, James G., colonel; Poindexter, Parke, lieutenant-colonel; Poore, Robert H., major; Shelton, William D., major; White, William, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Wood, William W., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fourteenth Militia regiment (Eighteenth brigade): Harness, William H., colonel.

Fifteenth Cavalry battalion (Northern Neck Rangers. Transferred to Fifteenth Cavalry): Critcher, John, major.

Fifteenth Cavalry regiment (consolidated with Fifth regiment, November 8, 1864): Ball, William B., colonel; Burroughs, Edgar, major; Collins, Charles Read, major, colonel; Critcher, John, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifteenth Infantry regiment: August, Thomas P., colonel; Clarke, Charles H., major; Crenshaw, James R., lieutenant-colonel; Morrison, Emmet M., major, lieutenant-colonel; Peyton, Thomas G., major, lieutenant-colonel; Tucker, St. George, major, lieutenant-colonel; Walker, John Stewart, major.

Sixteenth Cavalry battalion (transferred to Thirteenth Cavalry): Belsches, Benjamin W., major.

Sixteenth Cavalry regiment: Ferguson, Milton J., colonel; Graham, William L., lieutenant-colonel; Nounnan, James H., major.

Sixteenth Infantry regiment: Colston, Raleigh E., colonel; Crump, Charles A., colonel; Crutchfield, Stapleton, colonel; Ham, Joseph H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Holladay, Francis D., major; Page, John C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Parrish, Henry T., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Whitehead, Richard O., major, lieutenant-colonel; Woodhouse, John T., major.

Seventeenth Cavalry (transferred to Eleventh Cavalry): Funsten, Oliver R., lieutenant-colonel; Patrick, William, major.

Seventeenth Cavalry regiment (formed from French's Cavalry battalion): French, William H., colonel; Smith, Frederick F., major; Tavenner, William C., lieutenant-colonel.

Seventeenth Infantry regiment: Brent, George William, major; Corse, Montgomery D., colonel; Herbert, Arthur, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Marye, Morton, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Munford, William, lieutenant-colonel; Simpson, Robert H., major; Tyler, Grayson, major, lieutenant-colonel.

Eighteenth Artillery battalion: Hardin, Mark B., major.

Eighteenth Cavalry regiment: Beall, David Edward, lieutenant-colonel; Imboden, George W., colonel; Monroe, Alexander, major.

Eighteenth Infantry regiment: Carrington, Henry A., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Cabell, George C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Wall, Edwin G., major; Withers, Robert E., colonel.

Nineteenth Heavy Artillery battalion: Atkinson, John Wilder, major, lieutenant-colonel; Cary, N. R., major.

Nineteenth Cavalry regiment: Downs, George, major; Jackson, William L., colonel; Kesler, Joseph K., major; Thompson, William P., lieutenant-colonel.

Nineteenth Infantry regiment: Boyd, Waller M., major; Cocke, P. St. George, colonel; Ellis, John T., major, lieutenant-colonel;

Gantt, Henry, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Peyton, Charles S., major, lieutenant-colonel; Rust, Armistead Thomson Mason, colonel; Strange, John B., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Taylor, Bennett, major, lieutenant-colonel; Watts, William, major.

Nineteenth Militia regiment (afterward Second State Reserves): Evans, Thomas J., colonel; Powell, D. Lee, lieutenant-colonel; Pendleton, S. T., major.

Twentieth Artillery battalion (De Lagnel's battalion): De Lagnel, Johnston, major; Robertson, James E., major.

Twentieth Cavalry regiment: Arnett, William W., colonel; Evans, Dudley, lieutenant-colonel; Hutton, Elihu, major; Lady, John B., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twentieth Infantry regiment (disbanded): Crenshaw, James R., lieutenant-colonel; Pegram, John, lieutenant-colonel; Tyler, Nat., lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-first Cavalry regiment: Edmundson, David, lieutenant-colonel; Halsey, Stephen P., major; Peters, William E., colonel.

Twenty-first Infantry battalion (Pound Gap battalion. Merged into Sixty-fourth Virginia): Stemp, Campbell, lieutenant-colonel; Thompson, John B., major.

Twenty-first Infantry regiment: Berkeley, William R., major; Cunningham, Richard H., Jr., lieutenant-colonel; Gilham, William, colonel; Kelly, Alfred D., major; Moseley, John R., major; Moseley, William P., lieutenant-colonel; Patton, John M., Jr., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Shipp, Scott, major; Witcher, William A., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Twenty-first Militia regiment: Jones, Warner T., colonel; Seawell, William H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Taliaferro, Thomas S., major; Taylor, Fielding L., lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-second Cavalry regiment: Bowen, Henry S., colonel; Kendrick, Henry F., major; Radford, John T., lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-second Infantry battalion (formed from Second Virginia Artillery): Bowles, John S., major; Johnson, James C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Tayloe, Edward Poinsett, lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-second Infantry regiment (formerly First Kanawha regiment): Bailey, Robert Augustus, major; Barbee, Andrew R., lieutenant-colonel; Jackson, William A., lieutenant-colonel; McDonald, John C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Patton, George S., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Smith, Isaac N., major; Tompkins, Christopher Q., colonel.

Twenty-third Cavalry regiment (formed from consolidation, seven companies Forty-first battalion and two companies O'Ferrall's battalion): Calmese, Fielding H., major; O'Ferrall, Charles T., lieutenant-colonel; White, Robert, colonel.

Twenty-third Infantry battalion: Blessing, William, major; Cecil, William P., major; Derrick, Clarence, lieutenant-colonel; Hounshell, David S., major.

Twenty-third Infantry regiment: Camden, J. D., major; Coleman, Clayton G., Jr., major, lieutenant-colonel; Crenshaw, James H., lieutenant-colonel; Curtis, George W., lieutenant-colonel; Fitzgerald, John P., major, lieutenant-colonel; Pendleton, Joseph H., major; Richardson, Andrew J., major; Scott, Andrew V., major; Taliaferro, William B., colonel; Taliaferro, Alexander G., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Walton, Simeon T., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-fourth battalion Partisan Rangers (disbanded January 5, 1863): Scott, John, major.

Twenty-fourth Cavalry regiment: Barham, Theodore G., lieutenant-colonel; Robertson, John R., major; Robins, William T., colonel.

Twenty-fourth Infantry regiment: Bentley, William W., major; Early, Jubal A., colonel; Hairston, Peter J., Jr., lieutenant-colonel; Hamrick, Joseph A., major; Hammet, J. P., major; Maury, Richard L., major, lieutenant-colonel; Terry, William R., colonel.

Twenty-fifth Cavalry regiment: Edmundson, Henry A., lieutenant-colonel; Hopkins, Warren M., colonel; McConnell, Sylvester P., major.

Twenty-fifth Infantry battalion Local Defense Troops: Bossieux, Louis J., major; Elliott, Wyatt M., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-fifth Infantry regiment: Duffy, Patrick B., lieutenant-colonel; Harper, Wilson, major; Heck, Jonathan M., lieutenant-colonel; Higginbotham, John C., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Lilley, Robert D., major, lieutenant-colonel; Porterfield, George A., colonel; Rege, Albert G., major; Robinson, John A., major, lieutenant-colonel; Smith, George H., colonel; Thompson, William T., major.

Twenty-fifth Militia regiment: Arnold, Mark, colonel; Arnold, P. M., lieutenant-colonel; Lewis, H. B., major.

Twenty-sixth regiment Cavalry (formed from Forty-sixth and Forty-seventh Cavalry battalions): Kesler, Joseph K., lieutenant-colonel; Ruffner, Henry D., major.

Twenty-sixth Infantry battalion: Edgar, George M., major, lieutenant-colonel; Woodram, Richard, major; Council, James C., lieutenant-colonel; Crump, Charles A., colonel; Fitzhugh, Patrick H., major; Garrett, Joshua L., major; Page, Powhatan R., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Perrin, William K., major; Wheelwright, William H., major.

Twenty-seventh Cavalry battalion Partisan Rangers (Trigg's battalion. Transferred to Twenty-fifth Cavalry): Edmundson, Henry A., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-seventh Infantry regiment: Carpenter, Joseph, lieutenant-colonel (appointment declined); Echols, John, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Edmondson, James K., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Frazer, Philip F., major; Gordon, William W., colonel; Grigsby, Andrew J., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Haynes, Charles L., lieutenant-colonel; Paxton, Elisha F., major; Shriver, Daniel M., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Twenty-eighth Artillery battalion: Tabb, William B., major.

Twenty-eighth Infantry regiment: Allen, Robert C., major, colonel; Paul, Samuel B., lieutenant-colonel; Preston, Robert T., colonel; Spessard, Michael P., major; Watts, William, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Wingfield, William L., lieutenant-colonel; Wilson, Nathaniel C., major.

Twenty-ninth Infantry battalion. (No field officers given. Most of line officers found in Sixty-fourth Infantry.)

Twenty-ninth Infantry regiment: Bruster, Ebenezer, major; Giles, James, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Haynes, Alexander, major, lieutenant-colonel; Horne, William R. B., major; Leigh, William, lieutenant-colonel; Moore, Alfred C., colonel; Smith, Edwin R., major, lieutenant-colonel; White, Isaac, major.

Thirtieth Cavalry regiment. (See Second Cavalry regiment.)

Thirtieth battalion Sharpshooters: Clarke, J. Lyle, lieutenant-colonel; Otey, Peter, major.

Thirtieth Infantry regiment: Barton, William S., major; Cary, R. Milton, colonel; Chew, Robert S., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Gouldin, John Milton, major, lieutenant-colonel; Harrison, Archibald T., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Peatross, Robert O., major.

Thirty-first Light Artillery battalion: Nelson, William, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Thirty-first Infantry regiment: Arbogast, James C., major; Boykin, Francis M., lieutenant-colonel; Chenoweth, Joseph H., major; Cooper, William P., major; Hoffman, John S., major, colonel; Jackson, Alfred H., lieutenant-colonel; Jackson, William L., colonel; McCutchen, J. S. Kerr, major, lieutenant-colonel; Reynolds, Samuel H., colonel.

Thirty-first Militia regiment: Baldwin, Robert F., colonel; Denny, W. R., lieutenant-colonel; McCooie, Thomas E., lieutenant-colonel; Moore, L. T., colonel; Riely, J. C., major; Washington, B. B., major.

Thirty-second Cavalry battalion (consolidated with Fortieth Cavalry battalion): Robertson, John R., major.

Thirty-second Infantry regiment (formed from Montague's and Goggin's Infantry battalions): Cary, John B., lieutenant-colonel; Ewell, Benjamin S., colonel; Goggin, James M., major; Lee, Baker P., Jr., major; Montague, Edgar B., colonel; Sinclair, Jefferson, major; Willis, William R., lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-second Militia regiment: Coiner, David W., lieutenant-colonel; McCune, Samuel, colonel; Wilson, William M., major.

Thirty-third Cavalry battalion (transferred to Seventeenth Cavalry): Armesy, Thomas D., major.

Thirty-third Infantry regiment: Cummings, Arthur C., colonel; Golladay, Jacob B., major; Grace, Philip T., major; Holliday, Frederick W. M., major, colonel; Huston, George, major, lieutenant-colonel; Jones, John R., lieutenant-colonel; Lee, Edwin G., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Neff, John F., colonel; Spengler, Abraham, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Thirty-fourth Cavalry battalion: McFarlane, John A., major; Straton, William, major; Witcher, Vinson A., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-fourth Infantry regiment (Fourth Heavy Artillery prior to March 8, 1864?): Bagby, John R., major; Goode, John Thomas, colonel; Harrison, Randolph, lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-fourth Militia regiment: Deatherage, W. W., colonel; Haddox, C. B., major; Kinsey, Benjamin F., lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-fifth Cavalry battalion: Ferneyhough, George M., major; Myers, Franklin M., major; White, Elijah V., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-fifth Infantry regiment. (No rolls or roster.)

Thirty-sixth Cavalry battalion: Sweeney, James W., major.

Thirty-sixth Infantry regiment (formerly Second Kanawha regiment): Fife, William E., major, lieutenant-colonel; Linkons, Benjamin R., lieutenant-colonel; McCausland, John A., colonel; Reid, L. Wiber, lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Thomas, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Thirty-seventh Cavalry battalion: Claiborne, James R., major; Dunn, Ambrose C., lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-seventh Infantry regiment: Carson, Robert P., lieutenant-colonel; Fulkerson, Samuel V., colonel; Terry, John F., lieutenant-colonel; Williams, Titus V., major, colonel; Wood, Henry C., major.

Thirty-seventh Militia regiment: Coles, Thomas R., major; Downing, Joseph, major; Littrell, Leroy N., lieutenant-colonel; Straughan, Samuel L., colonel.

Thirty-eighth Artillery battalion: Blount, Joseph G., major; Dearing, James, major; Read, John P. W., major; Stribling, Robert M., major.

Thirty-eighth Infantry regiment: Cabell, Joseph R., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Carrington, Isaac H., major; Edmonds, Edward C., colonel; Griggs, George K., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Lee, Henderson L., major; Martin, George A., lieutenant-colonel; Whittle, Powhatan Bolling, lieutenant-colonel.

Thirty-ninth Cavalry battalion: Richardson, John H., major.

Thirty-ninth Infantry regiment (disbanded January 25, 1862): Cary, N. R., major; Finney, Louis C. H., lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Charles, colonel.

Thirty-ninth Militia regiment: Davenport, John M., lieutenant-colonel.

Fortieth Cavalry battalion (consolidated with Thirty-second battalion to form Forty-second battalion): Robins, William T., lieutenant-colonel; Wren, John F., major.

Fortieth Infantry regiment: Brockenbrough, John M., colonel; Cox, Fleet W., major, lieutenant-colonel; Cunningham, Arthur S., lieutenant-colonel (temporary command); Stakes, Edward T., major; Taliaferro, William T., major; Walker, Henry H., lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-first Cavalry battalion (transferred to Twenty-third Cavalry): White, Robert, major, lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-first Infantry regiment: Blow, George, Jr., lieutenant-colonel; Chambliss, John R., Jr., colonel; Etheridge, William H., major; Minetree, Joseph P., major, lieutenant-colonel; Parham, William Allen, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Smith, Francis W., major.

Forty-first Militia regiment: Garland, William D., lieutenant-colonel; McClanahan, Meredith M., major; Oldham, Thomas, colonel; Rains, William W., major.

Forty-second Cavalry battalion (transferred to Twenty-fourth Cavalry): Robertson, John R., major; Robins, William T., lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-second Infantry regiment: Adams, P. B., major; Burks, Jesse S., colonel; Deyerle, Andrew J., colonel; Lane, Henry, major; Langhorne, Daniel A., lieutenant-colonel; Martin, William, lieutenant-colonel; Penn, John E., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Richardson, Jesse M., major; Saunders, Samuel H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Withers, Robert W., lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Forty-third Cavalry battalion: Chapman, William H., major; Mosby, John S., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Forty-third Infantry regiment. (No rolls, no roster.)

Forty-third Militia regiment: Wright, John A., lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-fourth Infantry battalion: Batte, Peter V., major.

Forty-fourth Infantry regiment: Anderson, David W., major; Buckner, Thomas R., lieutenant-colonel; Cobb, Norvell, major, colonel; Hubard, James L., lieutenant-colonel; Jones, A. C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Scott, William C., colonel.

Forty-fifth Infantry battalion: Beckley, Henry M., lieutenant-colonel; Woodson, Blake L., major.

Forty-fifth Infantry regiment: Browne, William H., colonel; Davis, Alexander M., major; Ficklin, Benjamin F., lieutenant-colonel; Harman, Edwin H., lieutenant-colonel; Heth, Henry, colonel; Peters, William E., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Sanders, William C., major; Werth, William H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Wharton, Gabriel C., major.

Forty-sixth Cavalry battalion (consolidated with Forty-seventh battalion to form Twenty-sixth Cavalry): Kesler, Joseph K., lieutenant-colonel; Ruffner, Henry D., major.

Forty-sixth Infantry regiment: Davis, J. Lucius, colonel; Duke, Richard Thomas Walker, colonel; Fry, Hugh Walker, Jr., major; Harrison, Randolph, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Hill, James C., major; Richardson, John H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Wise, Peyton, major, lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-sixth Militia regiment: Johnson, John H., colonel.

Forty-seventh Cavalry battalion (consolidated with Forty-sixth battalion to form Twenty-sixth Cavalry): Harman, William N., major.

Forty-seventh Infantry regiment: Bruce, James D., major, lieutenant-colonel; Green, Charles J., major; Green, William J., lieutenant-colonel; Lyell, John W., lieutenant-colonel; Mayo, Robert M., major, colonel; Richardson, George W., colonel; Tayloe, Edward Poinsett, major.

Forty-seventh Militia regiment: Harris, Benjamin J., major.

Forty-eighth Infantry regiment: Campbell, James C., major; Campbell, John A., colonel; Dungan, Robert H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Faris, Wilson, major; Garnett, Thomas S., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Stewart, D. Boston, major; White, Oscar, major, lieutenant-colonel.

Forty-ninth Infantry regiment: Christian, Charles B., major, lieutenant-colonel; Gibson, John Catlett, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Murray, Edward, lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Caleb, major; Smith, William, colonel.

Fiftieth Infantry regiment: Finney, William W., lieutenant-colonel; Perkins, Lynville J., major; Poage, Thomas, colonel; Reynolds, Alexander W., colonel; Salyer, Logan H. N., major, lieutenant-colonel; Thorburn, Charles E., major; Vandeventer, Alexander, lieutenant-colonel, colonel.

Fifty-first Infantry regiment: Akers, William T., major; Cunningham, George A., lieutenant-colonel; Dickey, Stephen M., major; Forsberg, Augustus, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Graham, David P., major; Hounshell, David S., major; Massie, James W., lieutenant-colonel; Reynolds, Samuel H., lieutenant-colonel (declined); Wharton, Gabriel C., colonel; Wolfe, John P., major, lieutenant-colonel; Yonce, William A., major.

Fifty-first Militia regiment: Glass, William W., major, lieutenant-colonel; Pritchard, Solomon S., lieutenant-colonel; Shryock, Charles E., colonel; Wotring, Daniel E., major.

Fifty-second Infantry regiment: Baldwin, John B., colonel; Harman, Michael G., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Lilley, John D., major, lieutenant-colonel; Ross, John D. H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Skinner, James H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Watkins, Thomas H., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifty-second Militia regiment: Carter, Hill, colonel; Christian, Bat. D., major; Valden, Vulosko, major.

Fifty-third Infantry regiment (formed from Tomlin's and Montague's battalions and Company A of Waddill's battalion): Aylett, William R., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Edmundson, Henry A., major; Grammer, John, Jr., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Leigh, William, major; Martin, Rawley White, major, lieutenant-colonel; Montague, Edgar B., lieutenant-colonel; Stevenson, Carter L., colonel; Timberlake, John C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Tomlin, Harrison B., colonel; Waddill, George M., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifty-third Militia regiment: Adams, H. W., colonel.

Fifty-fourth Infantry regiment: Deyerle, John S., major; Edmundson, Henry A., lieutenant-colonel; Harman, Austin, major; Shelor, William B., major, lieutenant-colonel; Taylor, James C., major; Trigg, Robert C., colonel; Wade, John J., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifty-fourth Militia regiment: Robinson, E. C., colonel.

Fifty-fifth Infantry regiment: Archer, Robert H., lieutenant-colonel; Burke, Thomas M., major; Christian, William S., major, lieutenant-colonel; Fauntleroy, Robert B., major; Lawson, Charles N., major; Mallory, Francis, colonel; Rice, Evan, major, lieutenant-colonel; Saunders, Andrew D., major; Ward, William N., major.

Fifty-sixth Infantry regiment: Green, William E., major, lieutenant-colonel; McPhail, John B., major; Slaughter, Philip Peyton, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Smith, Timoleon, major, lieutenant-colonel; Stuart, William D., colonel.

Fifty-seventh Infantry regiment (formed from Keen's Infantry battalion): Armistead, Lewis A., colonel; Carr, George W., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Dyer, David, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Fontaine, Clement R., major, colonel; Hanes, Garland B., major; Heckman, David P., major; James, Waddy T., lieutenant-colonel; Keen, Elisha F., major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Magruder, John Bowie, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Ramsey, William H., lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Andrew J., major; Wade, Benjamin H., major, lieutenant-colonel.

Fifty-seventh Militia regiment: Kamey, Sanford J., colonel.

Fifty-eighth Infantry regiment: Board, Francis H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Booker, George E., major; Crutchfield, Stapleton, major, lieutenant-colonel; Goode, Edmund, colonel; Kasey, John G., major, lieutenant-colonel; Letcher, Samuel H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Walker, Edward T., major.

Fifty-ninth Infantry regiment: Anderson, Frank P., lieutenant-colonel; Henningsen, Charles F., colonel; Jones, Joseph, lieutenant-colonel; Lawson, John, major; Mosby, Robert G., major; Tabb, William B., colonel.

Fifty-ninth Militia regiment: Copeland, John R., colonel.

Sixtieth Infantry regiment: Corley, James L., lieutenant-colonel; Gilliam, William A., lieutenant-colonel; Hammond, George W., major, lieutenant-colonel; Jones, Beuhring H., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Rowan, William S., major; Spaulding, J. W., lieutenant-colonel; Starke, William E., colonel; Summers, John C., major, lieutenant-colonel; Swank, William A., lieutenant-colonel (acting); Sweeney, James W., major; Taylor, Jacob N., major.

Sixty-first Militia regiment: Billups, Robert S., major; Bohannon,

John G., colonel; James, Lemuel, lieutenant-colonel; Shipley, James S., major.

Sixty-first Infantry regiment (formed from Seventh battalion): Groner, Virginius D., colonel; McAlpine, Charles R., major; Niemeyer, William F., lieutenant-colonel; Stewart, William H., major, lieutenant-colonel; Wilson, Samuel M., colonel.

Sixty-second Mounted Infantry regiment (also called First Virginia Partisan Rangers): Doyle, Robert L., lieutenant-colonel; Hall, Houston, major; Imboden, George W., major; Lang, David B., major, lieutenant-colonel; Smith, George H., colonel; Imboden, John D., colonel.

Sixty-third Infantry regiment: Dunn, David C., lieutenant-colonel; French, James M., major, colonel; Lynch, Connally H., lieutenant-colonel; McMahan, John J., colonel.

Sixty-fourth Mounted Infantry regiment (formed from Twenty-first [Pound Gap] battalion): Gray, Harvey, major; Pridemore, Auburn L., lieutenant-colonel, colonel; Richmond, James B., major, lieutenant-colonel; Slemper, Campbell, colonel.

Sixty-fourth Militia regiment: Dillard, John L., colonel.

Sixty-seventh Militia regiment: Cunningham, John F., major; Robinson, Israel, lieutenant-colonel; Sencendiver, Jacob, colonel.

Seventy-seventh Militia regiment: McDonald, Edward H., colonel; Simms, Gilmore F., lieutenant-colonel; Smith, Abraham, major; Vandiver, Joseph L., major.

Eighty-second Militia regiment: Blankenbaker, E. Finks, major; Carpenter, Simeon, lieutenant-colonel; Troyman, James W., colonel.

Eighty-fourth Militia regiment: Dennis, Thomas C., colonel.

Eighty-seventh Militia regiment: Gresham, Thomas Robert, colonel; Saunders, William A., major.

Eighty-eighth Militia regiment: Antrim, C. W., major; Carver, D. C., lieutenant-colonel; McKennie, M., colonel.

Eighty-ninth Militia regiment: Davison, Samuel, major; Flagg, John S., lieutenant-colonel; Johnston, Samuel, colonel; Rider, E. C., major.

Ninty-first Militia regiment: Crenshaw, John B., major.

One Hundred and Eighth Militia regiment: Rowan, John M., colonel.

One Hundred and Ninth Militia regiment: Jones, E. P., colonel.

One Hundred and Tenth Militia regiment: Lavender, J. G., major.

One Hundred and Fourteenth Militia regiment: Monroe, Alexander, colonel.

One Hundred and Fifteenth Militia regiment: Mallory, Charles K., colonel; Smith, M. B., major; Wray, George, major.

One Hundred and Twenty-first Militia regiment: Sperry, J. G., colonel.

One Hundred and Twenty-second Militia regiment: Dearthmont, W., colonel.

One Hundred and Fifty-sixth Militia regiment: Adams, T. C., major; Bennett, Thomas F., colonel; Ross, D. Lee, lieutenant-colonel; Taylor, James A., major.

One Hundred and Fifty-seventh Militia regiment: Terri, George P., colonel.

One Hundred and Sixty-second Militia regiment: Fleisher, H. H., lieutenant-colonel; Abbitt, Wyatt, colonel.

One Hundred and Seventy-ninth Militia regiment: Morris, Robert F., colonel; Richardson, John H., colonel.

One Hundred and Eighty-fifth Militia regiment: Darst, James H., major.

One Hundred and Eighty-ninth Militia regiment: Rowan, John M., colonel.

One Hundred and Ninety-eighth Militia regiment: Compton, John R., colonel.

Botetourt regiment (Home Guard): Aunspaugh, Charles, major; Burks, Richard H., colonel; Burks, Robert S., lieutenant-colonel.

Cohoon's Infantry battalion (see also Sixth battalion North Carolina Infantry): Cohoon, John T. P. C., lieutenant-colonel.

French's Cavalry battalion (merged into Thirty-second regiment): Goggin, James M., major.

Harris' Heavy Artillery battalion (disbanded June 10, 1862): Harris, N. C., lieutenant-colonel.

Henry's regiment Reserves: Henry, P. M., colonel; Hobson, Joseph A., lieutenant-colonel; Reynolds, A. D., major.

Jackson's Cavalry battalion (afterward Jackson's Tenth Cavalry): Jackson, William L., lieutenant-colonel.

Jackson Hospital battalion: Scott, H. C., major.

Keen's Infantry battalion (merged into Fifty-seventh regiment): Keen, Elisha F., major.

Montague's Infantry battalion (attached temporarily to Thirty-second regiment, August 19, 1861. Afterward, November 9, 1861, merged into Fifty-third regiment): Montague, Edgar B., major.

Mosby's regiment Partisan Rangers: Chapman, William H., lieutenant-colonel; Mosby, John S., colonel; Richards, A. E., major.

Morris' Independent Infantry battalion: Morris, Z. F., acting major.

O'Ferrall's Cavalry battalion (merged into Twenty-third Cavalry): O'Ferrall, Charles T., major.

Richmond Howitzers (also called Richmond battalion): Randolph, George W., major.

State Line Artillery: Jackson, Thomas E., colonel.

Stuart Horse Artillery battalion: Beckham, R. F., major; Pelham, John, major; Williams, S. C., lieutenant-colonel.

Swann's Cavalry battalion: Swann, Thomas B., lieutenant-colonel.

Tomlin's Infantry battalion (merged into Fifty-third Infantry): Tomlin, Harrison B., major.

Waddill's Infantry battalion (Company A of this battalion went into Fifty-third Infantry): Waddill, George M., acting major.

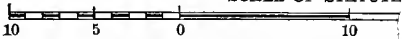
Wade's regiment Reserves: Wade, James M., colonel.

MAP SHOWING
of
BATTLE
of
VIRGINIA

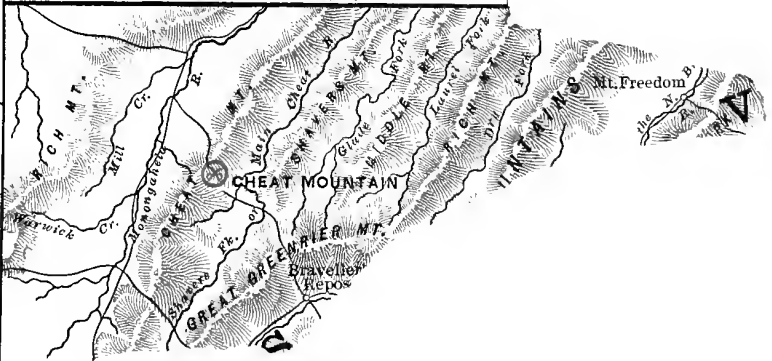
COMPILED FROM
OFFICIAL WAR RECORDS
1898

BY COURTESY OF THE CHESAPEAKE

SCALE OF STATUTES



COPYRIGHT, 1898, BY CHESAPEAKE

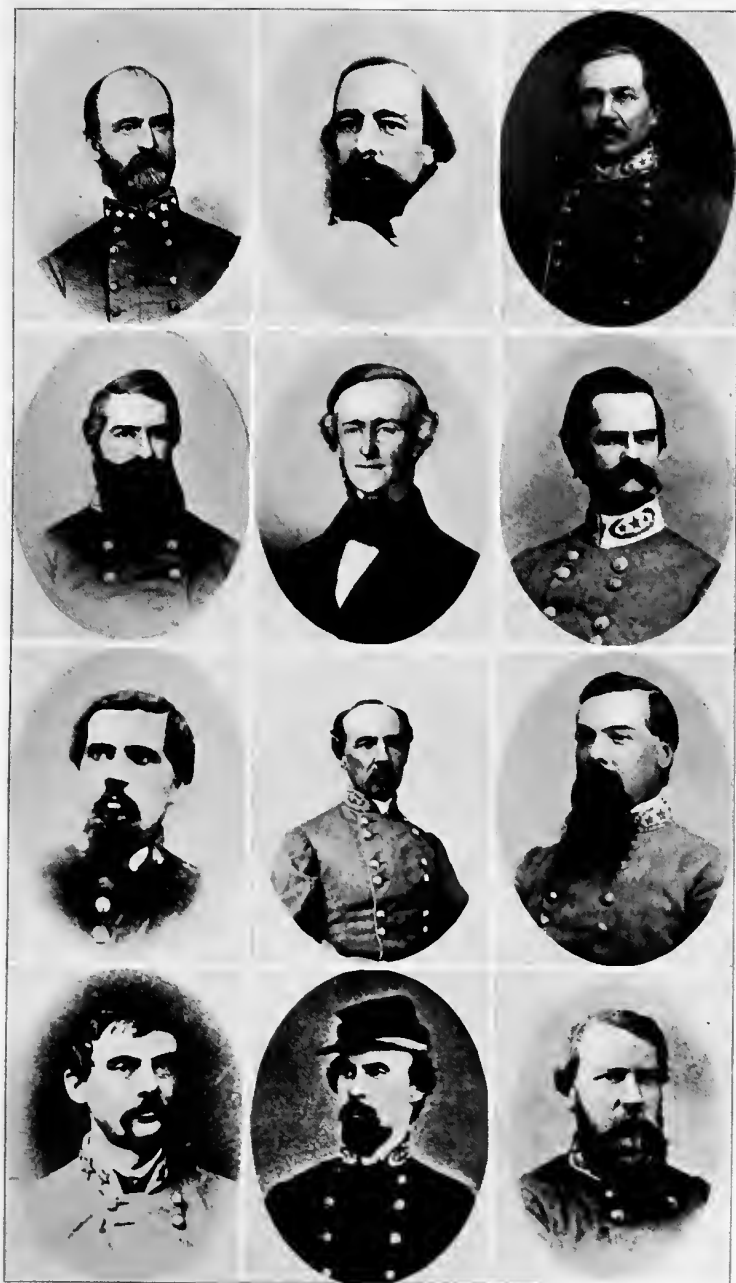


BIOGRAPHICAL.

MAJOR-GENERALS AND BRIGADIER-GENERALS, PROVISIONAL ARMY OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES, ACCREDITED TO VIRGINIA.

Brigadier-General Joseph Reid Anderson, of Virginia, was a graduate of the United States military academy, class of 1836. He was appointed to a lieutenancy in the Third artillery. He served for a time as assistant engineer in the engineer bureau at Washington, and on July 1, 1837, was transferred to the corps of engineers as brevet second lieutenant. In this line of duty he assisted in the building of Fort Pulaski, at the entrance of the Savannah river. He resigned his commission September 30, 1837, to accept the position of assistant engineer of the State of Virginia; was chief engineer of the Valley turnpike company, 1838-41, and subsequently, until the outbreak of war, was head of the firm of Joseph R. Anderson & Co., proprietors of the Tredegar iron works and cannon foundry at Richmond. Entering the Confederate army, he was commissioned brigadier-general in September, 1861, and was assigned to command of the Confederate forces at Wilmington, N. C. Early in the spring of 1862, he was called to Virginia, and on April 25, 1862, he was ordered with his brigade to the vicinity of Fredericksburg, where General Field was then stationed, and instructed by General Lee to assume command in that quarter, attack the enemy or confine his field of operations. Fredericksburg was occupied by McDowell's Federal troops, and Anderson commanded the Confederate force confronting him during the Peninsula operations under Johnston. He was then assigned to a new division formed under A. P. Hill, and in command of the Third brigade of Hill's light infantry, he participated in the battles of Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill and Frayser's Farm. In the latter he was particularly distinguished in the gallant action of his Georgia brigade, and was seriously wounded. He resigned July 19, 1862. Subsequently he gave his attention to the management of the Tredegar iron works. His death occurred at the Isle of Shoals, N. H., September 7, 1892.

Brigadier-General Lewis Addison Armistead was born at New Bern, N. C., February 18, 1817, a son of Gen. Walker Keith Armistead, who, with four brothers, served in the war of 1812. He was appointed a cadet in the United States military academy in 1834, and on July 10, 1839, he became second lieutenant in the Sixth United States infantry. In March, 1844, he was promoted first lieutenant, and in this rank entered the war with Mexico, in which he was distinguished, receiving the brevet rank of captain for gallantry at Contreras and Churubusco, and brevet major for his services at Molino del Rey. He continued in the army until the beginning of the Confederate war, serving for some time against the Indians on the border, and being promoted captain in 1855. He was given the rank of major, Confederate States army, to date from March 16, 1861, and later in the same year became colonel of the Fifty-seventh Virginia regiment, which he commanded in the neighborhood of Suffolk and in the defense of the Blackwater in the following winter. April 1, 1862, he was promoted brigadier-general, and in this rank he was assigned to the command of a brigade in the division of Benjamin Huger. At Seven Pines, on the first day, he was distinguished for personal bravery, making a heroic stand with a small part of his men against an entire brigade of the enemy until reinforced by Pickett. On June 25th, he was stationed about 5 miles from Richmond, between York River railroad and the Williamsburg road, where he was engaged in continual skirmishing until the advance to Malvern hill. In this latter battle he was ordered by General Lee to "charge with a yell" upon the enemy's position, after the action of the artillery had been shown to be effective. "After bringing on the action in the most gallant manner by repulsing an attack of a heavy body of the enemy's skirmishers," General Magruder reported, "he skillfully lent support to the contending troops" in front of his position. After this campaign he was identified with the excellent record of R. H. Anderson's and Pickett's divisions, commanding a brigade consisting of the Ninth, Fourteenth, Thirty-eighth, Fifty-third and Fifty-seventh Virginia regiments. On September 6th, at the outset of the Maryland campaign, he was assigned to the duty of provost marshal-general of the army, considered by General Lee at that



Brig.-Gen. L. A. ARMISTEAD.
 Brig.-Gen. TURNER ASHBY.
 Brig.-Gen. JAS. DRAHING.
 Brig.-Gen. JOHN ECHOLS.

Brig.-Gen. E. H. CHILTON.
 Brig.-Gen. P. ST. GEO. COCKE
 Brig.-Gen. M. D. CORSE.
 Brig.-Gen. J. R. CUAMBLISS.

Brig.-Gen. JOS. R. ANDERSON.
 Brig.-Gen. R. L. T. BEALE
 Brig.-Gen. R. E. COLSTON
 Brig.-Gen. S. M. BARTON

juncture of the greatest importance, and in that capacity he brought up the rear of the army as it advanced. He participated in operations of General McLaws against Harper's Ferry, and after the retreat was left at Shepherdstown to guard the ford. He continued with Pickett's division throughout its subsequent duty. Reaching the battlefield of Gettysburg on the 3d of July, he formed his men in the second line of assault against Cemetery hill. "Conspicuous to all, 50 yards in advance of his brigade, waving his hat in the air, General Armistead led his men upon the enemy with a steady bearing which inspired all with enthusiasm and courage. Far in advance of all, he led the attack till he scaled the works of the enemy and fell wounded in their hands, but not until he had driven them from their position and seen his colors planted over their fortifications." This was the testimony of Colonel Aylett, who succeeded to the immediate command of the remnant of the brigade that was led into action. General Lee wrote in his report, "Brigadier-Generals Armistead, Barksdale, Garnett and Semmes died as they had lived, discharging the highest duties of patriots with devotion that never faltered and courage that shrank from no danger."

Brigadier-General Turner Ashby, a hero of the South whose memory is cherished with peculiar tenderness by the people of the Shenandoah valley, was born at Rose Hill, Fauquier county, in 1824. He was a grandson of Capt. John Ashby, of the revolutionary war. At the time of John Brown's raid he was captain of a volunteer cavalry company, which he led to the scene of trouble. On the 16th of April, 1861, he was at Richmond, with other bold spirits, and took part in the planning of the capture of Harper's Ferry. The next morning, the day of the passage of the ordinance of secession, he went to his home to call out his cavalry company. His brief career from that time was of the most romantic nature, and he speedily became the idol of the volunteer troopers who rallied at Harper's Ferry in April and May, to recruit Jackson's forces. He was assigned to command of the Confederate post at Point of Rocks, where his activity and alertness were of great value. In June he was in command of a troop of Col. Eppa Hunton's regiment, but obtained permission to rejoin his own regi-

ment, Col. Angus McDonald's legion, and McDonald recommended him to promotion as lieutenant-colonel, speaking of him at this early date, June 25th, as "already known as one of the best partisan leaders in the service." Meanwhile Ashby, in addition to his other duties, had attracted attention by his daring in making a trip to Chambersburg, Pa., disguised and unattended, and obtaining complete information regarding the Federal force under Patterson. He was soon promoted lieutenant-colonel, and the rank of colonel followed in a few months. While Johnston was moving to Manassas, to the support of Beauregard, Ashby and Stuart, with their cavalry commands, were very successful in masking the transfer of the troops until it was too late for Patterson to have any influence upon the battle of July 21st. In October, General Jackson was assigned to the Valley district, and Ashby, as colonel of the Seventh Virginia cavalry, was put in command of the cavalry. In February he was authorized by the war department to raise cavalry, infantry and heavy artillery. During one of the engagements of 1861, his brother, Capt. Richard Ashby, to whom he was tenderly attached, had been slain by the enemy, and the circumstances of the death so affected him as to give to his natural heroism an extraordinary enthusiasm. Turner Ashby was of striking aspect and splendid personality when he came to take command of Jackson's cavalry. In form he was trimly built, in movement graceful, and when mounted on his splendid horse, he appeared a chevalier of romance. The attachment of his men to him was displayed on all occasions, and his own devotion to Jackson was so great that he was accustomed to say, "I would follow him or go where he commanded without knowing anything except that it was Stonewall Jackson's order." His faith in Jackson was like Jackson's faith in Lee. It is this trust of the army in its leaders reciprocated by the faith of the leaders in the army which makes heroes in battles. In March he withdrew with Jackson from Winchester, before the advance on Banks, but on the 22d returned and by an audacious attack drove in the enemy's outposts. The battle of Kernstown immediately followed, in which Ashby, with his cavalry and artillery, and an infantry support, rendered effective service upon the Confederate right. After this Jackson was rapidly reinforced, and

Ashby's force was recruited to the dignity of a brigade, though his commission as brigadier-general was not issued until May 23d. He pursued the Federals after the battle of McDowell, played a prominent part in the rout of the Federals at Middletown, and defended the rear during the Confederate retreat up the Valley early in June. On the 3d his horse was shot under him while his men were burning the bridge over the Shenandoah. "Ashby has infernal activity and ingenuity in this way," Shields reported to Washington. On June 6th, near Harrisonburg, he repulsed an attack, capturing the Federal commander, Sir Percy Wyndham. He immediately planned an ambush of the pursuing Federal advance, and a fierce combat ensued. As Ashby led the attack, his horse was shot under him, and he rushed forward on foot, urging his men to charge, when a ball pierced his breast and he fell forward dead. His death was felt as a severe loss to the army. Jackson wrote to General Imboden: "Poor Ashby is dead. He fell gloriously. I know you will join with me in mourning the loss of our friend, one of the noblest men and soldiers in the Confederate army." In his official report he wrote: "As a partisan officer, I never knew his superior. His daring was proverbial, his powers of endurance almost incredible, his tone of character heroic, and his sagacity almost intuitive in divining the purposes and movements of the enemy." In October, 1866, his body was reinterred with impressive ceremonies in the Stonewall cemetery at Winchester, where the anniversary of his death is annually commemorated by the strewing of flowers upon the graves of the unknown dead.

Brigadier-General Seth Maxwell Barton was one of four sons of Thomas Bowerbank Barton, a lawyer of Fredericksburg, Va., all of whom served in the Confederate States army. He was graduated at the United States military academy in 1849, and promoted brevet second lieutenant, Third infantry. After serving a year at Fort Columbus, N. Y., he was promoted second lieutenant, First infantry, and assigned to duty in the Southwest, where he served mainly until 1861, winning promotion to first lieutenant in 1853 and captain in 1857. He was stationed during most of this period at the Texas forts, was adjutant of his regiment, 1855 to 1857, fought against the Comanche Indians in 1857, and in 1861

participated in the march to Fort Leavenworth. After his resignation, which took effect June 11, 1861, he entered the Confederate service, with the rank of captain of infantry, C. S. A., and became lieutenant-colonel of the Third Arkansas regiment, Col. Albert Rust, which constituted part of the command of Gen. Henry R. Jackson, in the West Virginia campaign of 1861. He fortified Camp Bartow, on the Greenbrier, and in command of his regiment participated in the heroic defense of the works in October, at which the enemy met with his first repulse in that region. He subsequently acted as chief engineer of the army during the Bath and Romney expedition, winning special mention by Stonewall Jackson. When Gen. E. Kirby Smith was assigned to the department of East Tennessee, Barton was sent to his assistance, with promotion to brigadier-general. During the Cumberland Gap campaign he commanded the Fourth brigade, consisting of Alabama and Georgia regiments and Anderson's Virginia battery. Subsequently, with Stevenson's division, he took part in the defense of Vicksburg. At the time of Sherman's advance by way of Chickasaw bayou late in December, 1862, he commanded the Confederate center, his troops bravely holding their ground under a severe fire of musketry and artillery, which continued for three days, and repulsing five assaults on the 29th. The siege of Vicksburg followed, and he was surrendered July 4, 1863, but soon afterward exchanged. He was then given command of Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division; was stationed at Kinston, N. C., during the latter part of the year, and was the leader of one of the columns in the demonstration against New Bern about February 1, 1864. On May 10th he participated in the battle of Drewry's Bluff, against Butler, fighting bravely in the midst of his men, and being the first to take possession of the guns from which the enemy were driven. Immediately after this he was relieved from command by Gen. Robert Ransom. His restoration was petitioned for twice by the regimental officers of the brigade, who expressed entire confidence in his skill and bravery. General Ransom himself admitted that the personal gallantry of General Barton could not be questioned. Though feeling that injustice had been done him, he remained in the service, and accepted command of a brigade for the defense of

Richmond, comprising artillery and reserve infantry, under Lieutenant-General Ewell. He served at Chaffin's farm until the evacuation of Richmond, and then joined in the retreat of Custis Lee's command, as far as Sailor's creek, where he was captured April 6, 1865. Since the war General Barton has made his home at Fredericksburg, Va.

Brigadier-General Richard L. T. Beale was born at Hickory Hill, Westmoreland county, Va., May 22, 1819, and was educated at Northumberland academy and Dickinson college, Pa. Then taking up the study of law, he was graduated by the law department of the university of Virginia in 1838. Subsequently he was engaged in the practice of his profession and attained prominence in the political field. From 1847 until 1849 he represented his district in Congress, to which he declined re-election. He was a delegate to the State reform convention in 1850, and was elected to the State senate in 1857. Upon the secession of Virginia he enlisted in the cavalry service, and being promoted captain and then major, was put in command at Camp Lee, near Hague, on the lower Potomac, where his intelligence and excellent judgment were of much value. Subsequently he served under Col. W. H. F. Lee, in the Ninth cavalry regiment until Lee was promoted brigadier-general, when he was advanced to the rank of colonel and given command of the regiment. In December, 1862, he attracted attention and much favorable comment by a bold expedition into Rappahannock county, in which the Federal garrison at Leeds was captured, without loss. On April 16, 1863, he won the praise of J. E. B. Stuart for his heroic service in meeting and repelling the threatened raid of Stoneman's cavalry division, and during the renewed movement by Stoneman at the close of the month, he was for a week in almost constant fighting, his regiment everywhere behaving valorously and capturing many prisoners. At the battle of Fleetwood he led the Ninth in the brilliant charge in which Gen. W. H. F. Lee was wounded and Colonel Williams killed. He participated in Stuart's raid through Maryland, fought at Gettysburg, and rendered faithful service in the cavalry affairs during the return to Virginia. During the fight at Culpeper Court House he was in command of W. H. F. Lee's brigade. In March, 1864, having been stationed on the Northern

Neck, he made a forced march to intercept Dahlgren and his raiders, and a detachment of his regiment under First Lieut. James Pollard, Company H, successfully ambushed the Federals, and aided by other detachments captured about 175 men and killed Dahlgren. The papers found upon Dahlgren's person, revealing a design to burn Richmond and kill President Davis and cabinet, were forwarded by Colonel Beale, through Fitz Lee, to the government. A correspondence with the Federal authorities followed, in which they disavowed all knowledge of such a design. He participated in command of his regiment in the campaign from the Rapidan to the James, was distinguished in the fighting at Stony creek, and toward Reams' Station, in July, capturing two Federal standards; and in August, upon the death of General Chambliss, was given command of the brigade. February 6, 1865, he was promoted brigadier-general, and in this rank he served during the remainder of the struggle.

Brigadier-General John Randolph Chambliss was born at Hicksford, Greenville county, Va., January 23, 1833; was graduated at the United States military academy in 1853, and being promoted to brevet second lieutenant, mounted riflemen, served at the cavalry school at Carlisle, Pa., until the following spring, when he resigned. He then returned to his home at Hicksford, where his father was a wealthy planter, and was engaged in agriculture until the spring of 1861. Meanwhile his military education was called into service by the State, and he held the position of aide-de-camp to the governor, with the rank of major, 1856-61; also commanded as colonel a regiment of Virginia militia, 1858-61, and was brigade inspector for the State two years. His father was a delegate to the convention of 1861, and he himself manifested hearty allegiance to Virginia throughout that momentous period. He was commissioned colonel of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment in July, 1861, and until the fall of 1862 was under the orders of Gen. D. H. Hill, in the department south of the James river. During the Maryland campaign he was put in command of the forces on the Rappahannock, between Warrenton and Fredericksburg, with his own regiment, the Second North Carolina cavalry, and the Sixty-first Virginia infantry. He performed his duties with such vigilance

and activity as to receive the warm commendation of Gen. R. E. Lee. In November he was assigned with his regiment to W. H. F. Lee's cavalry brigade, with the gallant record of which he was identified, as one of the bravest and ablest of its officers, until he gave his life for the cause which he had served with entire fidelity and self-sacrificing devotion. In April, 1864, when the cavalry corps of the Federal army proposed to cross the Rappahannock and cut off Lee's communications with Richmond, Chambliss was particularly prominent in the defeat of the movement by Lee's brigade. At Beverlyford with 50 men he drove two Federal squadrons into the river, capturing a number of prisoners. He and his men were commended both by Generals Lee and Stuart as deserving the highest praise for distinguished bravery. In the famous battle of Brandy Station, June 9, 1863, after W. H. F. Lee was wounded and Col. Sol Williams killed, Chambliss took command of the brigade, and served in that capacity during the fighting about Aldie and Middleburg. Then riding with Stuart into Pennsylvania, he made a brilliant attack upon Kilpatrick at Hanover, driving him through the town and capturing his ambulances and a number of prisoners. His brigade and Fitz Lee's reached Gettysburg late on July 2d, and on the 3d he engaged in the fierce cavalry fight on the left of the Confederate line, between the York pike and Hanover road. Upon the retirement of the army, he aided efficiently in the protection of the Confederate trains. During the Bristoe campaign, still in command of the brigade, he reinforced Lomax at Morton's ford and defeated the enemy; and at Brandy Station the same two brigades fought with the utmost gallantry under their intrepid leaders, Chambliss winning anew the commendation of Stuart. Promoted brigadier-general in December, 1864, he continued in command of the brigade which he had led so long, through the cavalry fighting from the Rapidan to the James, gaining fresh laurels in the defeat of the enemy at Stony creek. Finally, in a cavalry battle on the Charles City road, on the north side of the James, he was killed while leading his men, August 16, 1864. His body was buried with honor by the enemy,

and soon afterward delivered to his friends. General Lee wrote that "the loss sustained by the cavalry in the fall of General Chambliss will be felt throughout the army, in which, by his courage, energy and skill, he had won for himself an honorable name."

Brigadier-General Robert Hall Chilton, of Virginia, was born about 1816, and entered the military academy at West Point in 1833, where he was graduated in 1837, and promoted second lieutenant of the First dragoons. He served on frontier duty at Fort Leavenworth, Kan.; in the Osage country, among the Choctaws, in the Indian Territory, and at various other frontier posts, until 1844, when he was sent into Texas, on the expedition to the Falls of the Brazos. Meanwhile he had been promoted first lieutenant, and during the Mexican war he received promotion to captain, and brevet major for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Buena Vista. Subsequently he returned to frontier duty, from which he was transferred in 1854 to the pay department at Washington, with the rank of major. He served in this capacity at New York, Detroit and San Antonio, Tex., until the spring of 1861, when he resigned and entered the Confederate service as lieutenant-colonel in the adjutant-general's department, soon being promoted colonel. When General Lee took command of the army of Northern Virginia, he applied to Gen. Samuel Cooper for a suitable officer for chief of staff, and Colonel Chilton was at once assigned to that important position. General Lee had served with him in Mexico and Texas, and later in the progress of the war took occasion to write General Chilton that he had always been zealous and active in the discharge of his official duties, and never known to be actuated by any other motive than the interests of the service. With promotion to the rank of brigadier-general, and appointment to the position of inspector-general of the army of Northern Virginia, October 28, 1862, Chilton served in the conspicuous position of chief of staff through all the campaigns and battles of the army of Northern Virginia, from June 1, 1862, until April 1, 1864, when he resigned. After the close of hostilities he made his home at Columbus, Ga., where he became interested in manufacturing and resided until his death, in 1879.

Brigadier-General Philip St. George Cocke was born in Virginia in the year 1808. He was educated at the United States military academy, and graduated in 1832 with the rank of brevet second lieutenant, and was soon assigned as second lieutenant to the artillery then stationed at Charleston, S. C. He served here during the exciting years of 1832-33, becoming adjutant of the Second artillery, July 13, 1833. On April 1, 1834, he resigned, and from that time until the outbreak of the Confederate war lived the life of a planter in Virginia and Mississippi. He devoted his energies and talents to agricultural pursuits, published a book on "Plantation and Farm Instruction," in 1852, and from 1853 to 1856 was president of the Virginia State agricultural society. He was prominent in Virginia councils during the momentous month of April, 1861, and on April 21st, having been appointed brigadier-general in the State service, he was assigned to command of the important frontier military district along the Potomac river. Three days later, from his headquarters at Alexandria, he reported to General Lee, stating that he had but 300 men in sight of an enemy of 10,000 rapidly increasing. Lee commended the policy Cocke had pursued, and advised him to make known that he was not there for attack, but that an invasion of Virginia would be considered an act of war. Cocke made his headquarters at Culpeper, April 27th, and on May 5th Alexandria was evacuated. He was given charge of the mustering of volunteer troops in a large part of the State, with rendezvous at Leesburg, Warrenton, Culpeper, Charlottesville and Lynchburg, and he issued a proclamation urging rapid enlistment in defense of the State, not for aggression. In the Confederate States service he was given the rank of colonel, and in the army of Beauregard was assigned to command of the Fifth brigade, consisting of the Eighth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-eighth and Forty-ninth Virginia regiments. For ability shown in strategic movements at Blackburn's ford he was officially thanked by Beauregard. On July 20th he was stationed at Ball's ford, on Bull run, and in the Confederate preparations for the battle of the 21st, he was given command also of Evans' brigade and various unassigned companies, including cavalry and artillery. The contemplated advance which he was to make against Centreville was abandoned on account of the Federal

flank movement, and while Evans, reinforced by Bee and Bartow, opposed the enemy in that quarter, he sustained the attack in the vicinity of the stone bridge, with his headquarters at the Lewis house, until at 2 p. m., about an hour before the arrival of Elzey, he led his brigade into action on the left with "alacrity and effect." This was his last battle. After eight months' service, during which he was promoted brigadier-general in the provisional army, he returned home, shattered in body and mind, and his life was terminated December 26, 1861.

Brigadier-General Raleigh Edward Colston was born at Paris, France, of Virginia parentage, October 31, 1825. When seventeen years old he came to America with a passport, as a citizen of the United States, issued by Minister Carr, and entering the Virginia military institute, was graduated in 1846. He remained at the institute as a professor until April, 1861, when he marched to Richmond in command of the corps of cadets. In May he was commissioned colonel of the Sixteenth Virginia regiment of infantry, at Norfolk, and was later assigned to command of a brigade and a district on the south side of the James river, with headquarters at Smithfield. He was promoted brigadier-general December 24, 1861. In the spring of 1862 he moved his brigade, composed of the Thirteenth and Fourteenth North Carolina and Third Virginia regiments, to Yorktown, and participated in the defense of that post, and after the retreat to Williamsburg, in the battle there and at Seven Pines. He was then disabled by illness until December, 1862, when he was assigned to command of a brigade in the department of Southern Virginia and North Carolina, and from January to March, 1863, was in command at Petersburg. After the battle of Fredericksburg he was assigned, at Stonewall Jackson's request, to the Third brigade of Jackson's old division, and previous to the battle of Chancellorsville was given command of the division, which was distinguished for heroism on the 2d and 3d of May, participating, under his command, in the onslaught made in the evening of Saturday, and fighting desperately during the storm of battle which swayed to and fro over the Federal works on Sunday morning. On Sunday afternoon he made an advance toward the United States ford, in which his division, suffered severely. His divi-

sion lost at Chancellorsville 1,860 men out of about 6,000, including 8 brigade commanders, 3 of whom were killed. General Colston rendered especially valuable services in rallying the men under the terrific fire of the enemy's artillery, after Jackson fell, and again on Sunday morning after the Federal forces had reoccupied their intrenchments. In the latter part of May, on account of the objection of the colonels of North Carolina regiments to service under a Virginia brigade commander, General Lee put a Marylander, George H. Steuart, in command, and General Colston was ordered to report to General Cooper at Richmond. In October he was assigned to command at Savannah, Ga. In April, 1864, he returned to Virginia, and was assigned by General Wise to provisional command at Petersburg. On the night of June 8th-9th the lines were threatened by the Federal cavalry, and the alarm bells called out the home guards, old men and boys, the regular troops having been transferred to Lee's army. Immediately offering his services to General Wise he was ordered to take command on the line of lunettes, which then constituted the major part of the defenses, with the injunction to hold out until Wise could bring up his reserves. Colston joined Major Archer, who had less than 200 at the point attacked, and skillfully directed the desperate defense, holding his position until almost surrounded, when he made an orderly retreat, in which he seized a musket and fought with his men. The time gained by this gallant resistance enabled Graham's battery and Dearing's cavalry to come up in time to rout the Federal column, which was about to occupy the city. In July, General Colston was assigned to command of the post at Lynchburg, where he remained until the surrender. Subsequently he was engaged in lecturing and in the conduct of a military academy at Wilmington, N. C., until 1873, when he entered the military service of the Khedive of Egypt, in which he remained until 1879, meanwhile conducting two important exploring expeditions to the Soudan. During his last expedition he was paralyzed, and was carried hundreds of miles across the desert on a litter. Returning to Virginia he engaged in literary work and lecturing, and from 1882 to 1894 held a position in the war department at Washington. He passed the remainder of his days in the Soldiers' home at Richmond, and died July 29, 1896.

Brigadier-General Montgomery D. Corse was born at Alexandria, D. C., March 14, 1816, and after receiving an academic education entered business with his father at his native city. Taking a prominent part in the organization of local militia at the time of the Texas troubles, he served through the Mexican war as captain of Company B, First regiment Virginia volunteers. Early in 1849 he sailed to California, and during the opening of the gold fields was occupied there in various ways, including service as captain of the Sutter Rifles, of Sacramento city, until 1856, when he returned to Alexandria and formed a partnership with his brother in the banking business. In 1860 he organized the "Old Dominion Rifles" at Alexandria, and later in the year became major of the battalion which included the Alexandria Riflemen, Capt. Morton Marye, the Mount Vernon Guard, his own company under Capt. Arthur Herbert, and the Alexandria artillery, Capt. Delaware Kemper. Major Corse served as assistant adjutant-general until the evacuation of Alexandria, and was then assigned with his battalion to the Seventeenth Virginia regiment, of which he was promoted colonel. In Longstreet's, later Kemper's brigade, he took part in the affair at Blackburn's ford and the battles of Manassas, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond. In the second battle of Manassas he commanded the brigade, and was slightly wounded, but continued on duty; fought at Boonsboro, receiving a second wound; and led the remnant of his regiment, 56 men, in the battle of Sharpsburg. The story of their devotion is told by the fact that but seven remained in the ranks at the end of the fight—Maj. Arthur Herbert, Lieut. Thomas Perry, and five privates. Colonel Corse was severely wounded and for a time lay within the enemy's lines, but was recovered by an advance of the Confederate troops. In October, General Kemper forwarded to the secretary of war two battle-flags captured by the Seventeenth regiment, asking that they be preserved with some honorable mention of the brave men commanded by Colonel Corse, "by whose splendid gallantry the trophies were captured." Upon this communication General Longstreet endorsed: "Colonel Corse is one of the most gallant and worthy officers in this army. He and his regiment have been distin-

gushed in at least ten of the severest battles of the war." R. E. Lee added: "This regiment and its gallant colonel challenge the respect and admiration of their countrymen." November 1, 1862, he was promoted to brigadier-general and assigned to the command of Pickett's old brigade. While in winter quarters he obtained leave of absence and was married to Elizabeth Beverly, but was soon afterward called to Fredericksburg to take command of a new brigade of Virginians for Pickett's division, composed of the Fifteenth, Seventeenth, Thirtieth and Thirty-second regiments, to which the Twenty-ninth was added later. During the Pennsylvania campaign of 1863 he was on duty with his brigade at Hanover Junction. Rejoining the army near Winchester, he moved in advance as Lee fell back toward the Rappahannock, and rendered valuable service in driving the enemy from Chester and Manassas gaps. In the fall and winter of 1863-64 he took his brigade to southwest Virginia and east Tennessee, co-operating with Longstreet; engaged the enemy at Dandridge in January, and then returned to Petersburg. Ordered at once to Kinston, N. C., he took part in the operations against New Bern until called to the defense of Richmond. He and his brigade were distinguished in the defeat of Butler at Drewry's bluff, May 16th. He shared the service of Pickett's division during the siege of Petersburg and Richmond. In the spring of 1865 Corse and his men fought bravely at Dinwiddie Court House and Five Forks, and ended their military career with honor at Sailor's creek. After the surrender by Ewell, General Corse was conveyed to Fort Warren, and there confined until August, 1865. He left Washington on his way to Fort Warren on the day that Lincoln was assassinated, and he and the fourteen generals accompanying him narrowly escaped the violence of a mob at a town in Pennsylvania, on the next morning. Nothing saved them that day but the pluck and determination of the small guard of Union soldiers and officers who had them in charge. After his release from Fort Warren he returned to Alexandria and engaged in the banking business with his two brothers, J. D. and William Corse. He was very seriously injured in the fall of a part of the capitol at Richmond. It is probable that the injuries received on this occasion caused in part the blindness from which he suffered for

some years. With the exception of poor eyesight he was in the best of health until about a year before his death, which occurred February 11, 1895, after a short illness.

Brigadier-General James Dearing, of Virginia, was born in Campbell county, April 25, 1840. He was a great-grandson of Col. Charles Lynch, of revolutionary fame, who, through his summary way of treating the Tories, gave his name what is now known as "lynch law." He was educated at Hanover academy, Virginia, and was appointed a cadet in the United States military academy. He resigned as soon as the adherence of Virginia to the Confederacy was determined upon, and entered the Confederate army. He chose the artillery service at the outset, becoming a lieutenant of the Washington artillery, of New Orleans, a fine organization which created much enthusiasm on its arrival in Virginia. His brilliant service in the artillery led to his promotion to captain of a battery attached to Pickett's division. As lieutenant and captain he participated in the principal battles of the army of Northern Virginia until after Chancellorsville, when he was promoted major, and put in command of a battalion of eighteen guns in the reserve artillery of Longstreet's corps. He reached the battlefield of Gettysburg with Pickett's division, and took part in the tremendous artillery duel which followed on the third day. In the winter of 1863-64, Pickett, having been assigned with the remnant of his division to the district of North Carolina, with headquarters at Petersburg, Va., found himself in need of cavalry, and collecting various companies of mounted men, he wrote to the secretary of war, "I shall assign them to the command of Major Dearing, and ask that he may be ordered to the command of these troops, with the temporary rank of colonel. He is a young officer of daring and coolness combined, the very man for the service upon which he is going, a good disciplinarian, and at the same time generally beloved by his men. I am not saying too much in his absence in assuring you that General Longstreet would strongly endorse his claims to promotion had he the opportunity." Dearing was at once given this command, though Lee wrote a few days later, in ordering the New Bern expedition, "I propose Major Dearing for the command of the artillery of this expedi-

tion." The appreciation of his service in the artillery was still further shown on April 5, 1864, when Lieutenant-Colonel Dearing was ordered to report to General Lee for assignment to command of the horse artillery of the army of Northern Virginia. Dearing's service, however, was from the beginning of 1864 in the cavalry. The regiment collected for him by Pickett was called Dearing's Confederate cavalry, and other cavalry commands were put in his charge during the New Bern expedition, in which he was distinguished, and was promoted brigadier-general. Early in May he was called to the Petersburg lines, on account of the opening of Grant's campaign. At first stationed on the Weldon railroad, and in command of a brigade consisting of his regiment, a Georgia regiment and two other North Carolina regiments of cavalry, a Virginia battalion and Graham's light artillery, he was soon called to the line of Swift's creek and Drewry's bluff, to meet the advance of Butler. On June 9th his command engaged Grant's cavalry at Reservoir hill, and drove the enemy from the field by an impetuous charge. On the 15th of June, Grant's whole army now being south of the James, Dearing's regiment made a gallant stand against the advance, which Beauregard reported as of incalculable advantage to his command. Subsequently he commanded a brigade of W. H. F. Lee's cavalry division, and shared the duties of that command throughout the remainder of the war. During the retreat in April, 1865, he was mortally wounded in a remarkable encounter with Brig.-Gen. Theodore Read, of the United States army. The two generals met on the 5th of April at High Bridge on the Appomattox, at the head of their forces, and a duel with pistols ensued. General Read was instantly killed, but General Dearing lingered for a few days after the surrender of General Lee, when he died in the old City hotel at Lynchburg.

Brigadier-General John Echols was born March 20, 1823, at Lynchburg, Va., and was educated at the Virginia military institute, Washington college and Harvard college. Entering upon the practice of law at Staunton he soon attained distinction. He was a man of magnificent figure, standing 6 feet 4 inches, and his mental qualities fully sustained his physical capacity for

leadership. After taking a prominent part in the Virginia convention of 1861, he offered his military services, and was promptly commissioned lieutenant-colonel, and ordered by General Lee to call out and muster in the volunteer forces in the vicinity of Staunton, including the mountain counties, for Johnston's army. This work done he was assigned to the Twenty-seventh regiment, which he commanded at First Manassas, where he had a gallant part in earning the title of the "Stonewall brigade." He was soon afterward promoted colonel, and in this rank served with Stonewall Jackson in the Shenandoah valley through the winter and spring of 1861-62. In Jackson's report of the battle of Kernstown he related that "Col. John Echols with his regiment, with skirmishers thrown forward, kept in advance and opened the infantry engagement, in which it was supported by the Twenty-first. Well did these two regiments do their duty, driving back the enemy twice in quick succession. Soon a severe wound compelled the noble leader of the Twenty-seventh to leave the field." This wound, received March 23d, disabled him for some time. His gallantry was recognized by promotion to brigadier-general in April, 1862, and a few months later he was assigned to command of a brigade of the army of Western Virginia, with which he was afterward prominently identified. He participated as a brigade commander in Loring's occupation of the Kanawha valley in September, and after Loring had withdrawn to the mountains, Echols was assigned to the command of the army of the department of Western Virginia, superseding Loring. He promptly reoccupied Charleston, but was again compelled to retire before superior forces. He resigned his department command in the spring of 1863, and during the following summer served upon the court of inquiry held at Richmond to investigate the cause of the fall of Vicksburg, Gens. Howell Cobb and Robert Ransom being the other members. Later in the year he commanded the Confederate forces in the battle of Droop Mountain, West Virginia, a hard-fought contest, in which his command, though forced to retire, gave an effectual check to the Federal plans. In May, 1864, he commanded Breckinridge's right wing at the successful battle of New Market, in the Valley, and was then called with his brigade to Lee's army on the Cold Harbor line, where he

served with credit. On August 22, 1864, he was given charge of the district of Southwestern Virginia, and on March 29, 1865, was ordered to the command of the western department of Virginia, relieving General Breckinridge. On April 2d he began a march to unite with Lee, and reached Christiansburg on the 10th, where he received a telegram announcing the surrender at Appomattox. It was a terrible blow to his little army of 6,000 or 7,000 men, and caused indescribable consternation. At a council of war it was determined to march to unite with Johnston's army, and Echols set out at the head of Vaughn's and Duke's brigades on the 11th. Subsequently he accompanied President Davis to Augusta, Ga., and was for a short time in command at that place. After the close of hostilities he re-entered the law practice at Staunton, also exerted a beneficent influence in public affairs as a member of the committee of nine, in restoring Virginia to its proper relations with the general government, and as a member of the Virginia legislature. He was one of the early members of Stonewall Jackson camp, Confederate veterans, at Staunton, and was always faithful to the soldiers of the Confederacy. He was very successful both in law and in business, displaying great executive ability; became president of the Staunton National Valley bank, and receiver and general manager of the Chesapeake, Ohio & Southwestern railroad. The duties of the latter office required his residence in Kentucky during the last ten years of his life. He was twice married, first to a sister of Senator Allen T. Caperton, of West Virginia, and after her death to Mrs. Mary Cochrane Reid, of New York. He died at the residence of his son, State Senator Edward Echols, at Staunton, May 24, 1896.

Brigadier-General John B. Floyd, of Virginia, was born at Blacksburg, Pulaski county, June 1, 1801. He was the son of Hon. John Floyd, a Democratic statesman of the old school, who served in Congress for several terms, was governor of the State, and in 1852 was a candidate for the presidency of the United States. Young Floyd was educated at the college of South Carolina, with graduation in 1826, after which he studied law and was admitted to practice. Turning to the West for a field of effort, he removed to Arkansas, but three years

later again made his home in Virginia. He resumed the practice of his profession in Washington county, and took an active and prominent part in the political affairs of the day. After serving three terms in the legislature he was elected governor of Virginia in 1850. In 1853 he was again elected to the legislature, and in 1856 he was a delegate to the national Democratic convention. In the ensuing campaign he supported Buchanan, and when that gentleman was inaugurated president he called Floyd to his cabinet as secretary of war, where he served until the latter part of December, 1860. After the secession movement had begun in the South it was charged by Floyd's political opponents in the North that he had been secretly aiding in advance the Confederate cause by dispersing the army to distant points on the frontier, by shipping an undue proportion of arms and munitions to Southern posts, and that he was privy to the abstraction of \$870,000 in bonds from the department of the interior. He was indicted accordingly at Washington, but he promptly met the charges, appeared in court and gave bail, and demanded trial. In January, 1861, the charges were investigated by a committee of congress, and he was completely exonerated. After leaving Washington he returned home and remained there until the spring of 1861, when he was commissioned brigadier-general in the Confederate army, May 23d. In command of his brigade he participated in the West Virginia campaign, joining General Wise in the Kanawha valley and taking command in that district August 12th. On the 26th he defeated Colonel Tyler, of Rosecrans' command, at Carnifax Ferry, but from lack of co-operation was unable to follow up his success. Here he fought a battle with Rosecrans in September, and at Gauley Bridge had another engagement in October. He was subsequently assigned to the army under Albert Sidney Johnston, in command of a brigade of Virginia troops, the Thirty-sixth, Fiftieth, Fifty-first and Fifty-sixth and Virginia artillery. In the organization of the Central army of Kentucky he commanded one of the three divisions. When Grant advanced from Cairo, Johnston intrusted the defense of Fort Donelson to Generals Floyd, Pillow and Buckner, Floyd taking general command by virtue of seniority. He withstood an assault by both the land and naval forces of the enemy on February 13th and

14th, and on the next day, believing his position untenable, ordered an attack in the hope of cutting a path of retreat through the investing lines. A fierce and stubborn battle followed, in which Pillow was successful in gaining possession of the Charlotte road and Buckner was equally successful on the Wynn's Ferry road. Floyd then "started for the right of his command to see that all was secure there," his intention being to hold the positions gained and immediately move out the entire army. During his absence a change was made in the disposition of the troops by General Pillow, and the enemy pressed forward, and with the help of reinforcements regained so much of their lost ground that it became necessary to withdraw to the original Confederate position. A council of war followed, in which the generals were united that resistance was useless against the great investing force, but both Pillow and Floyd declared that they would not surrender, and General Buckner assumed that responsibility. Forrest took out his cavalry through the submerged river road, and General Floyd, with a large part of his brigade, embarked on the river transportation and reached Nashville in safety. He subsequently had command of the "Virginia State Line," operating in southwestern Virginia, finally retiring to his home at Abingdon, Va., where he died August 26, 1863.

Brigadier-General Samuel Garland was born at Lynchburg, Va., December 16, 1830, of an old Virginia family, his great-grandmother having been a sister of President Madison. His father, Samuel Garland, Sr., a well-known lawyer, died when his son was five years old. He entered a classical school at the age of seven years, and was graduated at the Virginia military institute, where he was the founder and president of the first literary society of that institution. In 1851 he was graduated in law at the university of Virginia, and he at once entered upon the practice of the profession at Lynchburg. His career during the period before the war was one of worthy prominence, and he became widely esteemed as a skillful lawyer and polished gentleman. In 1859, after the affair at Harper's Ferry, he organized the Lynchburg Home Guard, of which he was the first captain. He was not by inclination a military man, entering the service both in 1859 and 1861 as a matter of duty; but when enlisted

in the fight, no labor was too fatiguing and no peril too hazardous for his devoted and intrepid spirit. On April 23, 1861, he left home with his well-drilled and disciplined company, and proceeded to Richmond, where his men were mustered into the service of Virginia, as Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, on the following day. Of this regiment, composed of four Lynchburg companies and commands from other Virginia towns, he was placed in command as colonel, a few days later. He took his regiment to camp at Manassas, where it joined the brigade of General Longstreet. In the fight at Blackburn's ford the regiment was distinguished, and Colonel Garland was mentioned by General Longstreet, with others, as having "displayed more coolness and energy than is usual amongst veterans of the old service." In the famous battle of the 21st, the regiment was intended to take an active part, but the Federal flank movement caused the fight to open in another quarter. After the engagement Colonel Garland was detailed to collect the spoil of battle on the field. In the fight at Dranesville, in December, he was reported as behaving with great coolness. In the absence of orders he held his line until the rest of the Confederate force was entirely withdrawn from the field. In February, 1862, he was commended by General Johnston as fully competent to command a brigade. In March he moved with his regiment to the Peninsula, where the brigade came under the command of A. P. Hill. In the battle of Williamsburg, the most severe loss was sustained by the Eleventh regiment, and Hill reported that "Colonel Garland, though wounded early in the action, refused to leave the field, and continued to lead his regiment until the battle was over, and his example had a most happy effect in showing his men how to win the battle." Immediately after this Garland was promoted brigadier-general, and was assigned to the command of a brigade of D. H. Hill's division, which after Seven Pines was composed of the Fifth, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Twentieth and Twenty-third North Carolina regiments. He was distinguished for gallant conduct in the heat of the fight at Seven Pines; at Gaines' Mill, asked permission and made a flank attack at an opportune juncture, which decided the fate of the day, his men cheering and charging and driving the enemy; and he was in the attacking columns

at Malvern Hill. During the Second Manassas campaign he was with Hill's division, holding McDowell in check at Fredericksburg, after which he joined the army in the Maryland campaign. At Fox's gap, on South mountain, his North Carolinians, scarce 1,000 in all, sustained the first attack of Cox's corps of McClellan's army on September 14th. They held their ground with wonderful heroism in the face of a furious attack. With them, where the fight was hottest, stood General Garland, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Colonel Ruffin. It was to him the post of duty. On one side lay McClellan with 30,000 men; on the other was the short road to Harper's Ferry, beleaguered by Jackson. The enemy must be held back a day, or the Federals, under an active commander, could overwhelm the divided Confederates. In this position, early in the fight, he received a mortal wound, from which he died on the field. "Had he lived," wrote Gen. D. H. Hill, "his talents, pluck, energy and purity of character must have put him in the front rank of his profession, whether in civil or military life."

Brigadier-General Richard Brooke Garnett, a cousin of Gen. R. S. Garnett, was a native of Virginia and a graduate of the same West Point class in which his cousin was a member. Promoted second lieutenant of the Sixth infantry on graduation, he began his services in the field in the Florida war of 1841-42. He subsequently served in garrison at Jefferson barracks, Mo., and on frontier duty at Fort Towson, Indian Territory, and Fort Smith, Ark., and as aide-de-camp to Brigadier-General Brooke at New Orleans. He was promoted first lieutenant in February, 1847, and continued in service, at San Antonio, Tex., and at Fort Pierre, Dak., where he was promoted captain. He assisted in quelling the Kansas disturbances in 1856-57, was detailed to escort the southern boundary commissioners in 1857, served again in Kansas, and was engaged in the Utah expedition and the subsequent march to California. In the latter territory and in New Mexico he served until he resigned to offer his services to the Confederate States. He was commissioned major, corps of artillery, C.S.A., and in November, 1861, promoted brigadier-general. Jackson, then in the Shenandoah valley with a small force, was reinforced soon afterward, and Garnett went with these forces, and

at the battle of Kernstown, March 23, 1862, he commanded the Stonewall brigade. During the Maryland campaign he commanded Pickett's brigade. In the westward movement on September 14th, with his brigade he reached Boonsboro after a hot and tiresome march over the mountains, to which he was ordered to return that afternoon to dispute the mountain pass with the Federal army. His troops, almost exhausted, took a position before Turner's gap, on the eastern slope of the South mountain, under artillery fire, and sustained for some time a fierce attack from Reno's corps of McClellan's army. On the 17th, Garnett and his men fought to the southeast of Sharpsburg village, in support of the Washington artillery, and later in the day in conjunction with S. D. Lee's battalion, and were distinguished for bravery. General Garnett was subsequently identified with the record of Pickett's division, in command of his brigade, consisting of the Eighth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-eighth and Fifty-sixth Virginia regiments, which he finally led into action during the memorable charge on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg. The brigade moved forward in the front line, and gained the enemy's strongest line, where the fighting became hand to hand and of the most desperate character. The brigade went into action with 1,287 men and 140 officers, and after the struggle about 300 came back slowly and sadly from the scene of carnage. General Garnett's part in this fatal action is thus reported by his successor in command, Maj. Charles S. Peyton: "Of our cool, gallant, noble brigade commander it may not be out of place to speak. Never had the brigade been better handled, and never has it done better service in the field of battle. There was scarcely an officer or man in the command whose attention was not attracted by the cool and handsome bearing of General Garnett, who, totally devoid of excitement or rashness, rode immediately in rear of his advancing line, endeavoring, by his personal efforts and by the aid of his staff, to keep his line well closed and dressed. He was shot from his horse while near the center of the brigade, within about 25 paces of the stone wall."

Brigadier-General Robert Selden Garnett, born in Essex county, Va., December 16, 1819, was graduated at the United States military academy in 1841, and pro-

moted second lieutenant of artillery. He served at the West Point academy from July, 1843, to October, 1844, as assistant instructor of infantry tactics. In 1845 he was assigned to duty as aide-de-camp to General Wool, and in this capacity rendered conspicuous service in the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma, winning promotion to the rank of first lieutenant of the Fourth artillery. He subsequently served as aide-de-camp to General Taylor, and participated in the battles of Monterey and Buena Vista, where he won the brevets of captain and major. After peace was declared he was transferred to the infantry and promoted captain. In 1852-54 he was commandant corps of cadets and instructor in infantry tactics at West Point. Receiving promotion to major in March, 1855, he commanded the troops sent against the Indians on Puget sound in the far northwest, and remaining there was in charge of the Yakima expedition in 1858. Subsequently he traveled in Europe on leave of absence until the year 1861, when he returned, resigned his commission, and entered the Confederate army. He was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, C. S. A., to date from March 16th, and served as adjutant-general under Gen. R. E. Lee, in command of the Virginia forces. Early in June he was commissioned brigadier-general and ordered to proceed to Staunton and assume command of the troops to operate in northwestern Virginia. In a few days he was engaged in the unfortunate campaign in West Virginia, where his life was sacrificed. It was very early in the war; he found difficulty in obtaining supplies, clothing and shelter for his men; the sentiment in that vicinity was against the Confederacy, and he was confronted by overwhelming odds. Without a trace of faintheartedness, he established his headquarters at Laurel hill, and there and at Rich mountain intrenched his troops. On June 10th, Pegram was dislodged from Rich mountain, and a superior force compelled Garnett to abandon Laurel hill and fall back. He was pursued by the Federals, and a brisk action occurred on the Cheat river, at Carrick's ford, July 13th. At the next ford on the same day, while with his rear guard, he was instantly killed by a volley of the enemy, falling, as President

Davis wrote, in exemplification of the "highest quality of man, self-sacrifice for others." His body, kindly cared for by General McClellan, was subsequently transferred with tokens of respect to the hands of his friends.

Brigadier-General David Bullock Harris, a distinguished military engineer, was born at Fredericks hall, Louisa county, Va., September 28, 1814. He was graduated at the United States military academy in 1833, with promotion to brevet second lieutenant of First artillery, and a year later was called to the position of assistant professor of engineering at West Point. On August 31, 1835, he resigned from the army and entered the profession of civil engineering, for some time being employed on the James river and Kanawha canal. Subsequently he became a planter and exporter of tobacco and flour. Early in 1861 he was commissioned captain of engineers of the Virginia forces, and was assigned to the staff of General Beauregard, with whom he was associated from that time until the end of the war. He was the first to reconnoiter the line at Bull run, planned and constructed the works for the defense of Manassas Junction, and in the heat of the fight of July 21st, at the critical moment when Elzey led his brigade upon the field, he guided that officer into position. He accompanied Beauregard to the Mississippi valley, and after inspecting the defenses at Columbus, Ky., was intrusted with the construction of works at Island No. 10 and vicinity, to which the artillery was removed from the Columbus fortifications. After the fall of New Orleans he located and constructed fortifications for heavy guns at Vicksburg, and thence he went with Beauregard in 1863 to Charleston, S. C. Of his work here, Beauregard wrote, "My best and almost only assistant for planning the construction of batteries and making the selection of sites on which they were to be erected was Maj. D. B. Harris, the chief engineer of the department, on whom I placed the utmost reliance, and who always thoroughly understood and entered into my views." Early in May, General Beauregard was at Petersburg, in command of the department of North Carolina and Southern Virginia, and here Harris, now promoted colonel, found immediate field for work at Drewry's bluff, where his services and

advice contributed greatly to the successful defense of the Confederate lines. He continued on duty in the defense of Petersburg, with promotion to the rank of brigadier-general, until his death, October 10, 1864.

Major-General Henry Heth was born in Chesterfield county, Va., December 16, 1825. He is the son of John Heth, of the Black Heth estate, in that county, who served as a colonel in the volunteer forces of Virginia, and as an officer in the United States navy in the war of 1812, when he was captured with Decatur and taken to Bermuda, whence he escaped with two comrades in an open boat. An uncle of his, Col. William Heth, fought at Quebec under General Montgomery and was distinguished in the revolutionary war. Henry Heth was educated at the United States military academy, and graduated in 1847 with the rank of brevet second lieutenant of the Second infantry. His first service was in the war with Mexico, when he was made second lieutenant of the Eighth infantry. He was engaged in the skirmish at Matamoras and at Galaxara in 1847-48, and in 1848 at the evacuation returned to Jefferson barracks. On the Indian frontier he was on duty at Fort Atkinson, Fort Kearny and Fort Laramie, taking a conspicuous part in many Indian fights, and winning a first lieutenantcy in June, 1853, with promotion to adjutant in November, 1854, and to captain, Tenth infantry, in March, 1855. Soon after the latter promotion he led a detached company, mounted as cavalry, in the Sioux expedition under General Harney, which ended in the victory at Blue-water. In 1857 he was assigned to special duty in preparing target practice for the army, and in 1858 he rejoined his regiment in Utah, where he remained until the latter part of 1860, when he returned to Virginia on leave of absence. When coercion seemed inevitable he resigned his Federal commission, served on the staff of General Taliaferro at Norfolk, as captain, and accepted the duty of organizing the quartermaster's department at Richmond. He was commissioned major, C. S. A., and soon promoted colonel of the Forty-fifth Virginia regiment, in which capacity he organized General Floyd's command at Wytheville, for the West Virginia campaign, and after participating in the battle of Carnifax Ferry, conducted Floyd's retreat from Cotton Hill. In January,

1862, he was promoted brigadier-general, and assigned to the command in West Virginia, where he fought in May of that year the battle of Giles Court House, in which he was opposed to Col. R. B. Hayes, and later the battle of Lewisburg. In June he joined Gen. Kirby Smith at Knoxville, Tenn., and accompanied him in the movement into Kentucky. After reaching Lexington he was given charge of a division of infantry and a brigade of cavalry, and moved against Cincinnati, some of his troops, on September 6th, reaching the suburbs of Covington, but he was withheld from an attack by positive orders. In February, 1863, he joined the army of Northern Virginia, and was assigned to the command of Field's brigade, of which he had charge in the battle of Chancellorsville. On the wounding of A. P. Hill in the first day's fight, he succeeded to command of the division but was himself wounded in the opening of the fight next day, which General Lee noted with regret in his dispatch to President Davis. He was promoted major-general and placed in command of a division of General Hill's corps, consisting of the brigades of Pettigrew, Brockenbrough, Archer and Davis. Engaging in the Pennsylvania campaign, he moved to Cashtown, and thence sent Pettigrew's brigade to Gettysburg to procure a supply of shoes. The brigade returned with information of Federal advance. Heth attacked the Federals under Reynolds the next day, and fought a desperate battle, a worthy opening of the great three days' struggle, in which he lost in twenty-five minutes 2,700 out of 7,000 men, and half his officers, and was himself severely wounded. He was subsequently engaged in the affair at Falling Waters, and in the following October, with two brigades attacked Warren's corps of Meade's army, fighting the battle of Bristoe Station. After wintering at Orange Court House, he commanded the advance of Hill's corps, marching on the plank road to resist Grant's flank movement on May 5th. He replied for three hours to the attacks of General Hancock on the Brock road; was distinguished for intrepid fighting about Spottsylvania on the 10th, 11th and 12th of May, and a few days later engaged General Warren at Nowell's Turnout. June 3d he took part in the battle of Bethesda Church. During the siege of Petersburg he served on the lines from July, 1864, until the evacuation, occupying the extreme right

of Lee's lines during September, October and November. He fought gallantly on the Weldon railroad August 18th, 19th and 20th; at Reams' Station captured 2,000 men, 9 pieces of artillery and many flags; at Burgess' Mill in November, 1864, and in all the struggles on the right, and lastly commanded at Burgess' Mill when the Confederate lines were broken. He conducted his division on the retreat and surrendered with the army on April 9th. During the following years he gave his attention to mining for a time, and then engaged in insurance at Richmond, Va.

Brigadier-General Eppa Hunton was born September 23, 1823, in Fauquier county, Va. The Huntons originally settled in New England, but the ancestor of General Hunton removed at an early period to Lancaster county, Va., where his great-grandfather, William Hunton, married Judith Kirk, and afterward made his home in Fauquier county. From him the descent is through his fourth son, James, and through the latter's second son Eppa. The senior Eppa Hunton was in the service of his country during the war of 1812, at Bladensburg and Craney island, and as a brigade inspector of the Virginia militia. His wife, the mother of General Hunton, was Elizabeth Marye, daughter of William Brent, who removed his family from Dumfries to Fauquier county during the revolutionary war, in which he served with distinction as a captain of infantry. The ancestors of this patriot came over with Lord Baltimore; one of his grandsons, Col. George W. Brent, was a gallant Confederate soldier. After the early death of his father, General Hunton was reared by his devoted mother, and aided by his uncle, the distinguished Charles Hunton, for four years president of the State senate, he studied under the Rev. John Ogilvie, and subsequently he taught school for three years, at the same time pursuing the study of law under the guidance of the late Judge John Webb Taylor. Admitted to the bar in 1843, he began practice at Brentsville, the county seat of Prince William county. In this period his military inclinations, doubtless inherited from his father, were manifested by his acceptance of the colonelcy of the Prince William regiment, and four years later of the rank of general, commanding the brigade. In 1848 he married Lucy Caro-

line, daughter of Robert and Clara B. Weir, through her mother connected with the Wallers of Virginia. The only child of this union surviving is Eppa Hunton, Jr., a distinguished lawyer of the Warrenton bar, who married Erva Winston, daughter of the gallant Gen. William H. Payne. In 1849 General Hunton was elected commonwealth's attorney for Prince William county, and was continued in this office by popular vote until he relinquished it for other duties in 1861. In the campaign of 1860 he was an elector on the Breckinridge ticket, and missed success by the misspelling of his name on a few ballots. In the famous Virginia convention of 1861 he took the peculiar position of favoring secession for the sake of the Union, arguing that if all the Southern States promptly withdrew, war would be avoided, and reconstruction on favorable and lasting terms would soon follow. After the passage of the ordinance he was placed upon the military committee, to recommend measures of defense; but feeling that his proper place was in the field, he resigned his commission in the State militia, and as a result of an application drawn up by his friend, Hon. Ballard Preston, and signed by every member of the convention, he was appointed colonel of the Eighth Virginia regiment, which he was ordered to organize and equip. This was rapidly accomplished at Leesburg, where he collected a body of as brave men (as he himself declared) as ever fought for liberty. They won imperishable renown upon every famous field of the army of Northern Virginia. Arriving at Manassas three days before the great battle of 1861, he was able on account of his familiarity with the country, to grasp the importance of the blind road from Centreville to Sudley, and he placed there a picket of five mounted men, from whom he received and transmitted to Beauregard the first intelligence of McDowell's flank movement. In the fight his regiment won special mention for gallantry. Subsequently General Hunton was severely afflicted physically, and underwent several surgical operations. In this condition he was hauled to the battlefield of Ball's Bluff in a spring wagon, and commanded his regiment, selecting a position which he maintained for many hours against five regiments of the enemy, repulsing their assault. Finally charging, with another regiment, he drove the Federals over the bluff and captured their guns

and many prisoners. After this his regiment joined the main army at Centreville and was attached to Pickett's brigade, then commanded by Gen. Philip St. George Cocke. In 1862 General Hunton was on sick leave at Lynchburg when Lee was about to attack the Federals before Richmond, and against the protests of his physician he rejoined his beloved regiment and commanded it through the Seven Days, so glorious in the history of the army. At the battle of Gaines' Mill, where Pickett's brigade made a brilliant assault and carried the three fortified lines of the enemy, before the assistance from Jackson came up, Pickett was wounded early in the assault, and Hunton, as senior colonel, carried on the successful action, which was never officially reported, owing to Pickett's severe wounds, and General Hunton's continued ill health, on account of which he was sent back to Lynchburg by General Longstreet. Again with his regiment and Pickett's division, at Gettysburg, he was wounded and his horse killed while leading his command in the charge against Cemetery hill, where his men were nearly all killed or wounded or captured, some of them beyond the stone fence, the first line of the enemy. His promotion to brigadier-general, well deserved and nobly won, but long delayed, as President Davis expressed to him after the war, on account of his reported feeble health, was dated from Gettysburg. His brigade, consisting of the Eighth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-eighth and Fifty-sixth regiments of Virginia infantry, he was ordered to recruit at Chaffin's farm on James river. Early in the spring of 1864 he brought his command into the campaign against Grant, and served with conspicuous gallantry throughout, the brigade suffering particularly heavy losses at Cold Harbor, where General Hunton lost his adjutant-general and warm friend, Captain Linthicum. While Grant was preparing to cross the James, Lee was planning to fight at Malvern hill, and with his cavalry on the north side of the river he was not advised of Grant's movement until Beauregard was compelled to abandon the Howlett house line and Drewry's bluff, and rush to the defense of Petersburg. At this juncture Pickett's division was ordered from Malvern hill to retake Beauregard's position, General Hunton to take the lead toward Drewry's bluff. Making one of the most rapid marches of the war, he found the position still in our hands, and

he then marched toward Petersburg with the Eighth deployed as skirmishers, until he struck the enemy, and after a hot fight, drove the Federals across Beauregard's lines to their own. This very important duty was so brilliantly performed as to elicit the enthusiastic praise of General Lee. During subsequent movements in the long siege, Hunton's brigade became separated from its division. On the last of March, 1865, he was ordered with his own and two other small brigades to hold the White Oak road on the left of Five Forks, where Pickett and Fitz Lee confronted Sheridan's cavalry. His line had hardly been formed when a division of Warren's infantry corps advanced and was immediately attacked by Hunton and driven back to Gravelly run. With reinforcements the Federals were able to push Hunton back to the fortified lines, but the delay that had been caused greatly embarrassed Sheridan and led to Warren's unjust suspension from command. Two days later the retreat began, and Hunton's brigade marched with Wise's brigade, and Fitz Lee's cavalry in the rear. On this mournful march it was a continual conflict with the enemy's rapid advance. On one occasion in crossing a bridge, General Hunton found it necessary to form his brigade to meet the enemy from all sides while the cavalry and other troops crossed over, which he did with wonderful skill and courage. Next day he united his command with Pickett's division, and though sick, he remained with his men. At Sailor's creek the division recaptured Huger's artillery and repulsed the assaults of Custer. General Hunton soon comprehended that these charges were to prevent his retreat until the Federal infantry could surround him, but his superior officers were unable to meet the movement. The gallant men fought to the last, and many broke their muskets rather than surrender them, but were soon overpowered. Only eight men of Hunton's old regiment escaped. General Hunton was now suffering severely with physical illness, and was kindly cared for by the gallant Custer at his headquarters. He was thence carried to Petersburg, passed through Washington a few hours before the assassination of President Lincoln, and remained in prison at Fort Warren, where he was kindly treated and won the admiration of his guards, until the latter part of July. During the war his home, at Brentsville, had been destroyed, and his wife

and son had taken refuge at Lynchburg, where Federal General Turner took command after the surrender. He had faced General Hunton on the Howlett house lines, and immediately ordered that his former enemy's family should be supplied with every comfort, a courteous act which General Hunton gratefully acknowledged. On his return to civil life, he resumed the practice of law at Warrenton. It was a time of great privation, but he had confidence in his strength. An incident of this period of struggle was his refusing to sell his war-horse, "Old Morgan," for \$500, a princely sum just then; but his family sustained him in keeping the faithful horse. With renewed health, and a brave and confident spirit, fortune soon smiled again, and he became independent and prosperous. Before his political disabilities were removed he was elected to Congress from the Eighth Virginia district. By successive re-elections until he voluntarily retired, he sat in Congress eight years, rendering valuable and important services. In the Forty-third Congress, his first, he joined in the memorable struggle under Samuel J. Randall, for two days and two nights, against the passage of a "force bill." In the Forty-fourth, under Democratic control, he was chairman of the committee on revolutionary pensions, second on the judiciary committee, member of other committees, and as chairman of the sub-committee which investigated the famous charges against James G. Blaine, demonstrated his ability and fairness, and had occasion to encounter the highly gifted Republican leader in the committee room and on the floor of the House, and always with credit. During the proceedings in Congress which followed the contested election of Samuel J. Tilden, General Hunton was a member of the special committee that framed the electoral commission bill, but refused his signature to the report until the last moment. He was elected one of the five who represented the House upon that commission, becoming one of the judges of the highest court the world had ever known. He labored earnestly for the success of Tilden before this tribunal, and his anxiety and the disappointment at the result caused him a severe attack of illness. As a member of the District of Columbia committee in the Forty-fifth and its chairman in the Forty-sixth Congress, he and the Hon. J. C. S. Blackburn framed the present form of administration of that

district, under which the Federal government bears an equal share of its expenses. Through the wise provisions of Blackburn and Hunton the city of Washington has wonderfully developed, realizing the dreams of its great founder. General Hunton resumed the practice of law after March 4, 1881, forming a partnership with the Hon. Jeff Chandler at Washington city, and enjoyed an extensive and lucrative business. In May, 1892, he was appointed United States Senator for Virginia, by Governor McKinney, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of the lamented Barbour, and this was confirmed by the legislature. He served until March 4, 1895, holding places on the committees on the District of Columbia, postoffices and post roads, and the chairmanship of the committee to establish a State university, a project which he advocated in an elaborate and able speech. While in the Senate he favored earnestly the repeal of the "Sherman silver law," with the understanding that free coinage of silver should follow; and voted for the Wilson tariff bill after an income tax had been added, as the best legislation that could be obtained. He left the Senate with a fine reputation for solid sense, capacity for hard work, and adherence to the tenets of his party. In 1896 he was prominent in the Virginia campaign in behalf of the candidacy of William J. Bryan. In appearance General Hunton is striking and impressive. He is a man of full stature, and a face and head that are indicative of massive strength, which, morally and mentally, is his distinctive characteristic. In the excitement of battle his bearing was superb. In the contests of the forum, the Senate, or the hustings, he was calm, earnest and impressive, and uniformly fair to his opponent. In repartee his play is vigorous, and those who play with him are not unlikely to receive a bruise, but if he knows it, it hurts him more than it does them. Finally, he is a gentleman upon whose integrity and moral character no scrutiny can develop the vestige of a stain.

Brigadier-General John D. Imboden, at the time of the passage of the ordinance of secession of Virginia, was a resident of Staunton, in the Valley. He had been a candidate for a seat in the convention, but was defeated by the candidate of the Union party. The policy he advocated was independent secession, and the maintenance

of an independent State which could mediate between the North and South and lead in the formation of a new Union, with local rights more clearly defined. Holding the position of captain of the Staunton artillery, a natural leader, and influential among the younger men, he at once took an important part in the action which secured Harper's Ferry to the State. He was called to Richmond a day or two before the ordinance was passed, and with other commanders of volunteer companies, under the leadership of ex-Governor Wise, arranged for a concentration of State forces at Harper's Ferry as soon as the action of the convention could be surely predicted. He called out his company by telegraph, and at sunrise following the momentous day, April 17th, was with his command at Manassas. He and other young and enthusiastic leaders were the forerunners of the spirit which was to dominate Virginia for four years, but at that moment they were coldly received by the majority of the people, not yet aroused. Proceeding to Harper's Ferry, he equipped his battery partly at his private expense, his men making caissons from carts found at the armory. Under the command of Col. T. J. Jackson he was posted at the Potomac bridge at Point of Rocks, and by the order of that afterward famous commander, captured and sent to Winchester a number of Baltimore & Ohio railroad trains. After the organization of the army in the Valley under General Johnston, he was attached to Bee's brigade, with which the Staunton artillery went into the battle at Manassas, July 21st, 1861. He was just in time to take a good position near the Henry house as the Federal attack fell upon the Confederate flank, and immediately became engaged with the famous batteries of Ricketts and Griffin. For half an hour after the Confederate infantry were driven across Young's branch, Imboden's battery fought alone, finally retiring and taking a new position supported by Stonewall Jackson, where it was in action until the ammunition was exhausted. Subsequently Captain Imboden, Lieut.-Col. Robert B. Lee and Maj. W. L. Cabell constituted a board of investigation, which reported in explanation of the failure to pursue McDowell to Washington that the food and transportation were inadequate. During Jackson's Valley campaign, 1862, Imboden, with a commission as colonel, was engaged in organizing a command at Staunton. In

charge of artillery and cavalry detachments, he held a bridge at Mount Crawford during the battle of Cross Keys, and participated in the battle of Port Republic. When Jackson left for Richmond, Imboden's little force, Robertson's cavalry and Chew's battery, were left in the Valley, and Imboden continued the organization of his force there and in the mountain counties. His command was known as the First Virginia partisan rangers, under the orders of General Jackson, but early in 1863 it was mustered in as the Eighteenth Virginia cavalry. In January, 1863, General Lee wrote him: "I hope you will meet with speedy success in filling up your command to a brigade, when I shall take great pleasure in recommending your promotion." He was soon afterward promoted to brigadier-general, and the Twenty-fifth, Thirty-first and Sixty-second Virginia infantry, and McClanahan's battery, were assigned to his command, for operations in northwest Virginia and the Valley, reporting directly to Gen. Robert E. Lee. With this force he made a successful expedition in northwest Virginia in April and May. During the Gettysburg campaign he raided on the left flank of Lee's army, and on the retreat his services were of great value. General Lee attached to his command eight guns of the famous Washington artillery, Major Eshelman, and other artillery. He made a splendid fight at Williamsport, holding out against the attack of 7,000 men until Fitzhugh Lee came up, saving the trains and the wounded of Lee's army. On July 21st General Imboden was assigned to command of the Valley district, Stonewall Jackson's old district. When General Lee made his Bristoe campaign of October, 1863, Imboden was instructed to advance down the Valley and guard the mountain passes. He captured the garrison at Charlestown on the 18th, for which he was complimented by Lee. Early in May, 1864, he marched from Mount Crawford to meet the invasion under Sigel, and held the Federals in check until, reinforced by Breckinridge, the successful battle of New Market was fought. Breckinridge being called again to Lee, Imboden's small command was pushed back to Mount Crawford, where he was reinforced by Vaughn, and W. E. Jones took command, to meet with serious defeat at Piedmont. General Imboden then, in command of his own, Jackson's and McCausland's brigades, fought Hunter's advance



Brig.-Gen. THOS. JORDAN.
 Brig.-Gen. HENRY A. WISE.
 Brig.-Gen. JULIUS A. DELAGNEL.
 Brig.-Gen. WM. L. JACKSON.

Brig.-Gen. WALTER H. STEVENS.
 Maj.-Gen. HENRY HETH.
 Brig.-Gen. ROOBER A. PRYOR.
 Brig.-Gen. E. P. PAXTON.

Brig.-Gen. THOS. T. MUNFORD.
 Brig.-Gen. JAMES A. WALKER.
 Brig.-Gen. JOHN McCAUSLAND.
 Brig.-Gen. JOHN R. JONES.

until Early came to Lynchburg. Subsequently he participated in the advance upon Washington, and Early's campaign against Sheridan, and was on duty in the Valley until the close of hostilities.

Major-General Edward Johnson was born in Kentucky, April 16, 1816, and was graduated at the United States military academy in 1838 and promoted second lieutenant of the Sixth infantry, U. S. A. He served during the operations against the Florida Indians from 1838 to 1841, and subsequently was on duty in the southwest. He rendered honorable service during the war with Mexico, taking part in the siege of Vera Cruz in March, 1847, the battle of Cerro Gordo, the skirmish at Amazogue and the battle of Churubusco; earned the brevet of captain at Molino del Rey, and was brevetted major for gallant and meritorious conduct at Chapultepec. He also participated in the assault and capture of the Mexican capital. Subsequently he was on duty at the frontier, being stationed at various posts in Kansas, Dakota and California. He was also for a time with the garrison at Fort Columbus, N. Y. Early in 1861 he resigned his Federal rank of captain, and was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, corps of infantry, C. S. A. As colonel of the Twelfth Georgia infantry he was called to Virginia and sent to the relief of Garnett, but was not able to reach that officer before his death. Falling back he occupied Alleghany mountain, and two Virginia regiments were added to his command. In December he defeated an attack by Milroy, his troops fighting splendidly under his inspiring leadership, and he was at once promoted brigadier-general. In May, 1862, with his command, the army of the Northwest, he defeated Milroy at McDowell. This battle was fought under his direction and by his own command, reinforced by Taliaferro. Stonewall Jackson commended his "skill, gallantry and presence of mind." Near the close of the battle Johnson was severely wounded. In February, 1863, he was promoted major-general, and at the reorganization following the death of Jackson he was put in command of a division of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, under Lieutenant-General Ewell, comprising Stuart's, Nicholls', J. M. Jones' and the Stonewall brigades. Soon afterward he was conspicuous in his third defeat of

Milroy. Deploying his division east of Winchester, he masked the operations of Early, and after that officer had captured the Federal works, he cut off the retreat of the enemy, inflicting great loss and demoralizing his forces. Then marching to Carlisle, Pa., he reached the battlefield of Gettysburg on the evening of the first day's fight. He was ordered to the attack upon Culp's hill on the second day and was successful in carrying the enemy's intrenchments, where the fight was renewed, and raged with great fierceness, on the morning of July 3d. During the operations on the Rapidan in November, 1863, he fought successfully at Payne's farm. At the Wilderness, May 4, 1864, he took position on the Orange turnpike with his division and sustained the attack of Warren's corps, which opened the bloody fighting of that campaign. On the 12th of May, he held the "bloody angle" at Spottsylvania, and having been weakened by the withdrawal of artillery to meet an anticipated flank movement, was overwhelmed by a morning attack of Hancock's corps, in which he and a large part of his command were captured. After his exchange he was assigned, September, 1864, to command of Anderson's division of the army of Tennessee. In the corps of Gen. S. D. Lee he took part in Hood's Tennessee campaign, commanding the advance and occupying Florence, Ala., October 30th. He led a desperate charge in the battle of Franklin, and fought at Nashville, December 15th and 16th; on the latter day being captured, with a large part of his division, in the general defeat of Hood's army. After the close of the war he retired to his farm in Chesterfield county, Va., and resided there until his death, February 22, 1873.

Brigadier-General John Marshall Jones was born at Charlottesville, Va., July 26, 1820, and was educated for the profession of arms at West Point, graduating and receiving the rank of brevet second lieutenant of infantry in 1841. His first service was at Fort Mackinac, Mich. In 1843-45 he was stationed successively at Detroit, in Florida and in Texas, with the army of occupation; but he did not participate in the Mexican war, during that period and until 1852, being on duty at the military academy as an instructor in infantry tactics. He was promoted first lieutenant, Seventh infantry, in 1847. After this, with the exception of some time spent as a member

of a board of revision of tactics, he was on duty in the west, escorting Whipple's topographical party, on the Utah expedition and the march to New Mexico, and in garrison duty, until he was granted leave of absence in 1861. He was promoted captain in 1855, and held this rank when he resigned to enter the Confederate service. He was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, corps of artillery, C. S. A., and in September was assigned to duty as adjutant-general, on the staff of Maj.-Gen. Richard S. Ewell. Participating in this capacity in the battles of Front Royal, Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic, of the Valley campaign, he was commended in each report of General Ewell for the coolness and efficiency with which he performed his duties. He was with General Ewell through the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, at Cedar mountain, and Groveton, where Ewell was wounded, and subsequently being appointed inspector-general of the division, was commended for gallantry on the field of Fredericksburg by General Early. After participating in the battle of Chancellorsville he was promoted brigadier-general in May, and assigned to the command of the old Second brigade of Jackson's division, now Edward Johnson's division, Ewell's corps. He reached the field of Gettysburg with his brigade about sunset July 1st, and on the following day took part in the assault upon Culp's hill, but fell with a dangerous wound when near the first line of the enemy's intrenchments. The brigade was commanded during the remainder of the battle by Lieut.-Col. R. H. Dungan. Returning to his brigade in September, he commanded it during the operations on the Rappahannock and Rapidan, and led the advance of his division on November 27th, to Payne's farm, where he received a serious wound in the head, early in the fight, while gallantly exposing himself at the front. Notwithstanding his hurt, he reported for duty a few days afterward, when a general engagement was supposed to be imminent. On May 5, 1864, Jones' brigade opened the terrific struggle in the Wilderness, driving back the Federal flanking skirmishers early in the day. He sustained the first attack by Warren's corps, the enemy suddenly striking his right flank and driving his men back in confusion. In a desperate attempt to rally his brigade, the brave commander and his aide-de-camp, Captain R. D. Early, were killed. General Ewell, in his

report of the campaign, alluding to the fact that out of his fourteen generals, three had been killed, four wounded and two captured, said of General Jones: "I consider his loss an irreparable one to his brigade."

Brigadier-General John R. Jones entered the Confederate service as captain of a company of the Thirty-third Virginia regiment, Stonewall brigade, and shared the services of that command at First Manassas and in the Valley campaign of May and June, 1862, winning promotion to lieutenant-colonel of his regiment. On June 23, 1862, he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the command of the Second brigade of Jackson's division. In this capacity he served at Cold Harbor and Malvern hill, until wounded in the night following the latter battle. His command in this campaign was composed of the Forty-eighth, Forty-second and Twenty-first Virginia regiments, the First Virginia battalion, the Hampton artillery and Jackson's battery. He resumed command of his brigade, which had fought under Bradley T. Johnson at Second Manassas, after it had reached Frederick in the march through Maryland. He then assumed command of Jackson's division, and was in charge of it at Harper's Ferry. After the surrender of that post he marched at 1 o'clock on the morning of the 16th of September to reinforce Lee at Sharpsburg. There he took position on the extreme left. His brigade and Winder's (Stonewall) formed his front line, and the two, numbering less than 400 men, attacked at 6 o'clock on the morning of the 17th, held back the enemy for nearly an hour, then retired to the second line, and after remaining for half an hour under a terrific storm of shot and shell, advanced and repulsed the enemy. Jones, disabled by the explosion of a shell above his head, early in the battle turned over the command to Brig.-Gen. William E. Starke, who fell in the fight, leaving Col. A. J. Grigsby in command of the Stonewall division. Jones' own brigade was successively commanded by Capts. John E. Penn, A. C. Page and R. W. Withers, the first two of whom each lost a leg. The division numbered about 1,600 at the beginning of the fight, and lost about 700 in killed and wounded. He commanded his brigade at Fredericksburg, and at Chancellorsville, on the first day, where the Second and Third brigades, Jackson's

division, were the first to charge upon and capture the first line of intrenchments of the enemy, in an open field beyond Wilderness church. On account of his disability the brigade was commanded next day by Col. T. S. Garnett until the latter was killed, when Col. A. S. Vandevanter succeeded him.

Major-General Samuel Jones was born in Virginia in 1820, and was graduated at West Point, with promotion to a lieutenancy in the artillery, in 1841. He served on the Maine frontier, during the boundary dispute, until 1843; in Florida, 1845-46; and from 1846 to 1851 was on duty at the United States military academy, as assistant professor of mathematics and instructor of infantry and of artillery. Then having been promoted first lieutenant First artillery, he was on various duty, at New Orleans, at Fort McHenry, on the Texas frontier, etc., with promotion to captain in 1853, until November, 1858, when he became assistant to the judge-advocate of the army. He remained in that position, at Washington, until April, 1861. On entering the Confederate service he was commissioned major, corps of artillery, C. S. A., and with promotion to lieutenant-colonel, was appointed assistant adjutant-general of the Virginia forces. During the organization of Beauregard's army and the battle of First Manassas, he served as chief of artillery and ordnance, and his services were gratefully acknowledged by the general commanding. Promotion to colonel was accorded him during this service, and he was promoted brigadier-general to date from the day of victory. He was on duty in the Potomac district, in command of a brigade of Georgia regiments subsequently under George T. Anderson, until January, 1862, when he was put in command of the army of Pensacola, relieving General Bragg. On March 3d he assumed command of the department of Alabama and West Florida, with headquarters at Mobile. In April, being promoted brigadier-general, he was assigned to command of a division of the army at Corinth under General Van Dorn, including the brigades of Rust, Maury and Roane, and in June he was put in command of Hindman's division. Later he was in charge at Chattanooga, and in September was stationed at Knoxville in command of the department of East Tennessee. From December 4, 1862, until March 4, 1864, he commanded

the department of Western Virginia, with headquarters at Dublin, Va., and in general charge of the operations in defense of the Virginia & Tennessee railroad and the salt mines. Subsequently he was in command of the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida until succeeded by General Hardee in October. During this period Charleston harbor was defended, and the Federal expedition in Florida was defeated at Olustee. He commanded the district of South Carolina until January, 1865, and the department of South Georgia and Florida until May 10, 1865, when he surrendered at Tallahassee. Then retiring to private life he was engaged in farming, with his residence at Mattoax, Va., from 1866 until 1880, when he was appointed to a position in the office of the adjutant-general at Washington. In 1885 he was transferred to the office of the judge-advocate-general. His death occurred at Bedford Springs, Va., July 31, 1887.

Brigadier-General William E. Jones was born near Glade Spring, Washington county, Va., in May, 1824. He was educated at Emory and Henry college and at West Point, and began service in the United States army with the rank of brevet second lieutenant in the class of 1848. In 1847 he had received from Emory and Henry college the degree of master of arts. His connection with the old army continued until his resignation in 1857, he then having the rank of first lieutenant, mounted rifles. During this period he first served in Missouri and Kansas, marched to Oregon in 1849, remained there and in Washington Territory until 1851, and after that was mainly on duty in Texas. After his retirement he was engaged in farming in his native county until 1861. Upon the passage of the ordinance of secession he had ready a company of cavalry, the Washington Mounted Rifles, with which he joined Stuart in the Valley and took part in the First Manassas campaign. At this time Gen. J. E. Johnston declared that his company was the strongest in the First Virginia cavalry regiment, "not surpassed in discipline and spirit by any in the army," and recommended that Stuart be given brigade command and that Jones, "skillful, brave and zealous in a very high degree," should succeed to the colonelcy, with Fitzhugh Lee as lieutenant-colonel. Consequently he became colonel of the First, upon the

organization of Stuart's brigade, and in the spring of 1862 was intrusted by Stuart with important duties in watching the enemy from the Blue ridge to the Potomac. He was watchful and vigorous and made the enemy feel his presence. Soon afterward, being displaced by a regimental election, he was assigned to the Seventh regiment, Robertson's brigade. Rejoining Stuart in August he was distinguished in the Second Manassas campaign, his regiment fighting splendidly at Brandy Station, and winning commendation on several other occasions. He participated in the raid around McClellan's army following the battle of Sharpsburg, and on November 8th, having been promoted brigadier-general, was assigned to command of Robertson's, or the "Laurel brigade," largely composed of the men who followed Ashby in the valley. December 29th he was assigned to command of the Valley district, including his brigade and all other troops operating in that region, being selected for this post by Stonewall Jackson. With the co-operation of General Imboden he made, in April and May, 1863, a very successful raid upon the Baltimore & Ohio railroad west of Cumberland, destroying an immense amount of public and railroad property. Then joining Stuart with his splendid brigade, he bore the first shock, and both in morning and evening the brunt of battle, in the famous cavalry fight of Brandy Station, June 9, 1863, his brigade ending the fight with more horses and more and better small-arms than at the beginning, and capturing two regimental colors, a battery of three pieces and about 250 prisoners. During the advance of Lee into Pennsylvania, Jones, who had been pronounced by Stuart "the best outpost officer" in the cavalry, was depended upon mainly to cover the rear and flank of the army. He defeated a Federal cavalry regiment at Fairfield, Pa., and after the retreat of Lee was begun pushed forward rapidly to protect the wagon trains of Ewell's division. Hurrying on with his staff on the night of July 4th, he found Emack's Maryland company with one gun, holding at bay a Federal division, with only half the train gone by. He joined in the desperate fight in person and with his companions until his command was scattered by a charge of cavalry. Separated from his followers, he made his way alone to Williamsport and organized all the men he could gather in the confusion for the defense of the place before the

arrival of Imboden. Then, with half a dozen companies, he made his way through the enemy's lines to his command, and returned with it to participate in the attacks on Kilpatrick at Hagerstown and on Buford at Williamsport. During the campaign, he reported, his brigade fought in three battles and the affair at Boonsboro, and captured over 600 prisoners. Soon afterward an unfortunate break in his relations with General Stuart, which had existed since the fall of 1861, became so intensified as to have serious results. Col. O. R. Funsten was given temporary command of the brigade, and on October 9th General Jones was ordered to report for duty in southwest Virginia. There he organized an excellent cavalry brigade, with which he co-operated with Longstreet in east Tennessee, and in November defeated the enemy near Rogersville. At Saltville, Va., in May, 1864, with Gen. John H. Morgan, he foiled Averell's designs against that post, defeated the Federals at Wytheville, and pursued them to Dublin. On May 23d he was assigned to command of the department of Southwest Virginia in the absence of General Breckinridge. It was at that moment a position of great importance, as the district was in a turmoil on account of the incursions of Averell and Crook and Sigel, and Hunter was preparing to advance on Lynchburg. Early in June three strong columns of the enemy were marching against him, and he made a stand with his own brigade, Imboden's and Vaughn's before Hunter, at Piedmont. In the desperate fight which followed, June 5th, he was killed and his body fell into the hands of the enemy.

Brigadier-General Thomas Jordan was born in Luray valley, Va., September 30, 1819. He was graduated at the United States military academy in 1840, and entered the active service as second lieutenant of the Third infantry, in garrison at Fort Snelling, Minn. Taking part in the Seminole Indian war, he was among those who surprised and captured the chief, "Tiger Tail," near Cedar Keys, in November, 1842. Subsequently he served on frontier duty until 1846, when he was promoted first lieutenant. In the Mexican war he served creditably at Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma, and being promoted captain and quartermaster in 1847, he remained at Vera Cruz for a year after the war. His services from that

time, in the United States army, were rendered in the Southern garrisons and on the Pacific coast. May 21, 1861, he resigned and was commissioned captain, corps of infantry, C. S. A. He was with the forces first collected at Manassas Junction as lieutenant-colonel and staff officer, and when Beauregard took command there he was promoted colonel and made chief of staff and adjutant-general of that army. During the battle of July 21st he was intrusted with the important duty of directing from the rear the disposition of reinforcements, and after the fight he accompanied President Davis to the field. His assistance in the organization of the forces there was gratefully acknowledged by Beauregard, whom he subsequently accompanied to the west. He inspected the forces at Columbus, Ky., and advised their withdrawal, and during the advance from Corinth rendered important service in the preparation for the battle of Shiloh. In this famous conflict he was very active along the line, giving orders as occasion required in the name of General Johnston, and at one time having with him and under his direction the chiefs of staff of the different corps commanders. For his invaluable services on this field he was promoted brigadier-general, April 14, 1862. Subsequently he served as chief of staff with General Bragg until after the Kentucky campaign. When Beauregard was called to the defense of Charleston, he joined his old commander as chief of staff of that department. In May, 1864, he was assigned to the command of the Third military district of South Carolina. After the restoration of peace in the United States, General Jordan became chief of the general staff of the Cuban insurgent army. In May, 1869, he landed at Mayari with 300 men, and ammunition and supplies for 6,000, and in December of the same year succeeded to the chief command of the army of independence. He gained a signal victory over superior forces of the enemy at Guaimaro in January, 1870, but on account of a want of supplies he soon resigned and returned to the United States. Of recent years he has resided at New York, and edited the *Mining Journal*. In 1868 he published, in association with J. B. Pryor, a valuable work on "The Campaigns of Lieutenant-General Forrest," and his minor contributions to Confederate history have been numerous and interesting.

Major-General James Lawson Kemper was born in Madison county, Va., June 11, 1823, of a family descended from John Kemper, of Oldenburg, who settled in Virginia in 1714, in the "Palatinate Colony." He was educated at the Virginia military institute and Washington college, where he took the degree of master of arts, and his subsequent study of the law was pursued at Charleston, Kanawha county. In 1847 he was commissioned captain in the volunteer army by President Polk, and he joined General Taylor's army after the battle of Buena Vista. Subsequently he became prominent in the political life of the State, and served ten years as a member of the house of delegates, two years as speaker, and for a number of years as chairman of the committee on military affairs. He was also president of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute. On May 2, 1861, he was commissioned colonel of Virginia volunteers and assigned to the command of the Seventh regiment of infantry. Joining his regiment at Manassas he rendered efficient special service to General Beauregard in procuring him 200 wagons. He was in battle at Blackburn's ford, and on July 21st, assigned to the brigade commanded by Col. Jubal A. Early, he aided in striking the final blow on the extreme left of the Federal line, which immediately preceded the rout of McDowell's forces. Three days after this battle his regiment was assigned to the brigade commanded by General Longstreet, and subsequently by A. P. Hill, under whom Colonel Kemper, with the Seventh regiment, was in the hottest of the fight at Williamsburg. Immediately after this he was given command of the brigade which had been successively under Longstreet, Ewell and A. P. Hill, and he fought his regiments with distinguished skill and courage during the first day at Seven Pines and throughout the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond. At Frayser's he made a gallant advance over difficult ground, broke the enemy's line and captured a battery. With Longstreet's corps he reached the scene of battle at Manassas, August 29, 1862, and in the subsequent fighting served in command of a division consisting of his own, Jenkins', Pickett's and N. G. Evans' brigades. At South mountain he commanded his brigade, and in conjunction with Garnett, the two commands not exceeding 800 men, met Hatch's force of 3,500 before Turner's

Gap. This little force of Confederates performed prodigies of valor, causing General Doubleday to report that he had engaged 4,000 or 5,000 men under the immediate command of Pickett, and Hooker reported that Hatch, after a "violent and protracted struggle" in which he was "outnumbered and sorely pressed," was reinforced by Christian's brigade, in spite of which the resistance of the enemy was continued until after dark. It was by such self-sacrificing bravery that McClellan's army was delayed until Lee could concentrate at Sharpsburg. In the latter battle he commanded his brigade, also at Fredericksburg, his brigade meanwhile having been assigned to Pickett's division of Virginians. Before the battle of Chancellorsville he was detailed to operate near New Bern, N. C., where he rendered efficient service but fought no important battles. He rejoined Pickett before Suffolk, and marched with him into Pennsylvania. On the third day of the fighting at Gettysburg he led his brigade in the heroic charge upon Cemetery hill. As the division concentrated in making the final assault, Kemper fell desperately wounded, his brother brigadiers, Garnett and Armistead, being killed a few moments later. He was brought off the field, but subsequently fell into the hands of the Federals. After three months' imprisonment and when it seemed unlikely that he would recover, he was exchanged for General Graham, of the United States army. His injuries prevented further service in the field, but his gallant deeds were rewarded by promotion to major-general, and he was given command of the reserve forces of Virginia, until the close of the war. He then returned to Madison county, cultivated his land and resumed the practice of law, also taking an active part in the political movement which resulted in the formation of the Conservative party in Virginia, which he earnestly aided by voice and pen. In this work he was so conspicuous as to be a candidate for elector-at-large for the State in 1872, and in the following year he was nominated and elected governor. He served in this honored position for four years from January 1, 1874. General Kemper died April 7, 1895.

Brigadier-General Edmund G. Lee was born at "Lee-land," Va., May 25, 1835. He was educated at Hallowell's school at Alexandria, and at William and Mary

college, and then entered the profession of the law. With the earliest volunteers for the defense of the State he went to the front as second lieutenant of the Second Virginia regiment. Soon promoted first lieutenant, he was appointed aide-de-camp on the staff of Stonewall Jackson, of whose brigade the Second formed a part at First Manassas. Of the Thirty-third regiment, same brigade, he was promoted major, and later lieutenant-colonel; and in this rank he participated in the Valley campaign of 1862, and the subsequent operations of that year. At Fredericksburg, having been promoted colonel, he commanded his regiment. Early in 1863, on account of ill health, he retired from the service, but in the fall of the same year he returned to active duty and in June, 1864, was assigned to temporary command at Staunton, Va., with orders to do all in his power to organize the local forces and aid in the defense of the Valley. But the Confederates met with a serious reverse at that point immediately afterward; Gen. W. E. Jones was killed, and Staunton was occupied by the Federals. On September 20, 1864, Colonel Lee was promoted brigadier-general, and he was subsequently sent to Canada on secret service for the government. After the war his ill health compelled him to spend the winters in the far South. He died at Yellow Sulphur Springs, Va., August 24, 1870.

Major-General Fitzhugh Lee was born at Clermont, Fairfax county, Va., November 19, 1835. He is the son of Sydney Smith Lee, who was a brother of Robert E. Lee, and son of Gen. and Gov. Henry Lee. Sydney Smith Lee had a distinguished naval career for over forty years, beginning as a midshipman when fourteen years of age. He commanded a vessel at Vera Cruz, was three years commandant at Annapolis, and for the same period in charge of the Philadelphia navy yard; commanded Commodore Perry's flagship in the Japan expedition, and when the first Japanese ambassadors came to America, he was associated with Farragut and D. D. Porter in a committee for their reception and entertainment. He resigned his position as chief of the bureau of coast survey to join the Confederacy, and was on duty at Norfolk; in command of fortifications at Drewry's bluff; chief of the bureau of orders and detail,

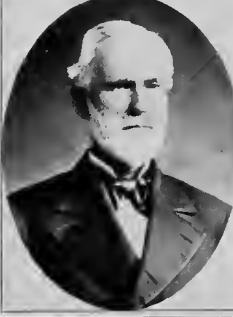
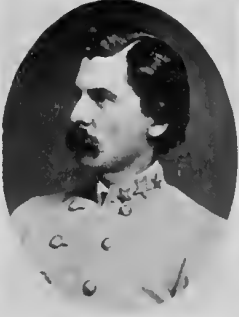
and in command of fortifications on the James during the siege of Richmond. Fitzhugh Lee was graduated at the United States military academy in 1856, and after serving until January 1, 1858, in the cavalry school at Carlisle, Pa., as an instructor, he was assigned to frontier duty in Texas with his regiment, the Second cavalry. He served at several Texas posts, and on May 13, 1859, in a fight with Comanche Indians was shot through the lungs with an arrow, and his life despaired of. In 1860 he was ordered to report to West Point as instructor of cavalry. In 1861 he resigned his commission as first lieutenant, and tendered his services to his native State. He was commissioned first lieutenant, corps of cavalry, C. S. A.; promoted lieutenant-colonel, First Virginia cavalry (Stuart's regiment), August, 1861, and colonel, March, 1862. His first service was rendered in staff duty, under General Beauregard at Manassas, and as adjutant-general of Ewell's brigade during the battle of First Manassas. In the spring of 1862, with his regiment, he aided in covering the retreat from Yorktown, and in the raid of the cavalry under Stuart, around McClellan's peninsular army, he was particularly distinguished in the capture of the camp of his old Federal regiment, and in the defense as rear guard while Stuart's other commands built a bridge over the Chickahominy, which he was the last man to cross. He was recommended by Stuart for promotion to brigadier-general, which soon followed, and at the organization of the cavalry division, July 28th, he was put in command of the Second brigade, consisting of the First, Third, Fourth, Fifth and Ninth Virginia regiments and Breathed's battery. He took an active part in the cavalry operations in August, connected with Jackson's advance northward, and in the capture of Manassas depot; participated in Stuart's advance into Maryland, screening the movements of the army, and after McClellan could no longer be held in check at South mountain, his brigade covered the retreat through Boonsboro, where there was a fierce and protracted fight. He succeeded in delaying the enemy through the greater part of September 16th, and then joined the army before Sharpsburg. In November his brigade was reorganized. He served on the Confederate left above Fredericksburg in December, took part in the raid on Dumfries and Fairfax Station, and in February,

1863, moved to Culpeper to guard the upper Rappahannock, giving battle to Averell at Kellysville, an action which Stuart reported as "one of the most brilliant achievements of the war," which he took "pride in witnessing." At the field of Chancellorsville he led the advance of the flank movement, rode with Jackson to reconnoiter the position of Howard, and commanded the cavalry in the Sunday battle. During Stuart's raid of June, 1863, he captured part of Custer's brigade at Hanover, and reached Gettysburg in time for a fierce hand-to-hand cavalry fight on July 3d. During the retreat he rendered distinguished service. He was now promoted major-general and in September took command of one of the two cavalry divisions, with which, when R. E. Lee decided to push Meade from his front on the Rapidan, he held the lines while the main army moved out on the enemy's flank. He fought about Brandy Station and encountered Custer at Buckland Mills. After the contest with Grant in the Wilderness his division, thrown in front of the Federal advance toward Spottsylvania, engaged in one of its most severe conflicts. The Confederate troopers were a terrible annoyance to the Federals, "swarming in the woods like angry bees," and Sheridan started on a raid to Richmond to draw them off. At the resulting battle of Yellow Tavern, where Stuart was fatally wounded, at Hawes' Shop and Cold Harbor, and at Trevilian's, he contested with Sheridan the honors of the field, and August, 1864, found him again opposed to that famous Federal officer in the Shenandoah valley. Here he commanded the cavalry of Early's army. He fought the spirited battle of Cedarville, and at Winchester, September 19th, displayed great courage and energy in attempting to save the field. In the midst of a terrible artillery fire his famous horse "Nellie" was shot, and at the same time he received a wound in the thigh which disabled him for several months. On recovering he made an expedition into northwestern Virginia in the following winter. Upon the promotion of Hampton to lieutenant-general, Lee became chief of the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, and commanded that corps at Five Forks. After rendering invaluable service on the retreat, he was ordered to make an attack, on April 9th, at Appomattox, supported by Gordon, and in this movement, which met overwhelming

opposition, his cavalry became separated from the main body. He participated in the final council of war, and after the surrender returned to Richmond with Gen. R. E. Lee. He then retired to his home in Stafford county, and resided later near Alexandria. In 1874 he delivered an address at Bunker Hill which greatly aided the restoration of brotherly feeling. He was a conspicuous figure at the Yorktown centennial, and at the Washington centennial celebration at New York city, at the head of the Virginia troops, he received a magnificent ovation. In 1885 he was nominated for governor by the Democratic party and made a memorable and successful campaign against John S. Wise. After serving as governor until 1890, he became president of the Pittsburg & Virginia railroad. In 1896 he was sent to Cuba as consul-general at Havana, under the circumstances one of the most important positions in the diplomatic service. In this he represented the United States with such dignity and ability that he was retained in the place after the inauguration of President McKinley, through all the trying difficulties preceding the war with Spain. After the outbreak of war he was made a major-general of volunteers in the United States army, and at the close of hostilities was appointed military governor of the province of Havana.

Major-General William Henry Fitzhugh Lee, the second son of Gen. Robert E. Lee, was born at Arlington, Va., May 31, 1837. He was educated at Harvard college, where he was graduated in 1857. In the same year he was appointed second lieutenant of the Sixth infantry, United States army, and in this rank he served in the Utah campaign under Albert Sidney Johnston, and subsequently in California. Early in 1859 he resigned his commission and took charge of his farm, the historic White House, on the Pamunkey river. He was heartily in sympathy with the Confederate cause, and organized a cavalry company early in 1861, becoming one of the leading spirits in the formation of the gallant body of troopers which were subsequently distinguished in the history of the army of Northern Virginia, and contributed so effectively to its successes. In May he received the rank of captain, corps of cavalry, C. S. A., and in the same month was promoted major in the regular

army. During the West Virginia campaign he acted as chief of cavalry for General Loring. In the winter of 1861-62 he was ordered to Fredericksburg, Va., and was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Ninth Virginia cavalry regiment, promotion to the colonelship following in March. With his regiment he was attached to the cavalry brigade of J. E. B. Stuart, and shared its operations during the retreat from Yorktown toward Richmond. In the famous raid around McClellan's army Stuart's men were led by the three colonels, Fitz Lee, W. H. F. Lee and W. T. Martin; the artillery under Breathed. His troopers defeated the enemy's cavalry at Hawes' Shop, June 13th, during this expedition. Upon the organization of the cavalry division in the following month, his regiment was assigned to the brigade of Fitzhugh Lee, and he participated in the operations of this command in the campaign of Second Manassas. After serving on the advanced line before Washington, during the advance into Maryland, he was particularly distinguished in the rear-guard fighting after the action at Turner's pass. Squadron after squadron of his regiment bore the brunt of the attacks of the Federal advance until they were the last to enter Boonsboro. At this point Colonel Lee was unhorsed and run over in crossing a bridge; and severely bruised and at first unconscious, lay by the roadside for some time in full view of the passing enemy. He managed to escape and finally reached the army on the Antietam, where he was welcomed as one from the dead. Subsequently he commanded a detachment of Lee's brigade during the Chambersburg raid, and held the advance during the return movement in the rear of McClellan's army. His intrepid conduct and coolness in demanding the surrender of a largely superior force of the enemy which held White's ford on the Potomac, caused the withdrawal of this obstacle which might have been fatal to the safe return of Stuart's command to Virginia. At the reorganization in November he, having been promoted brigadier-general, was given command of the brigade of cavalry consisting of the Fifth, Ninth, Tenth, Fifteenth Virginia and Second North Carolina. During the operations preceding and following the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville he was frequently engaged, and during the combats with Pleasanton's cavalry before the



Maj.-Gen. L. L. LOMAX.
Brig.-Gen. R. D. LILLEY.
Maj.-Gen. J. E. B. STUART.
Brig.-Gen. R. L. PAGE.

Maj.-Gen. Wm. SMITH.
Brig.-Gen. H. H. WALKER.
Brig.-Gen. A. W. REYNOLDS.
Brig.-Gen. EPPA HUNTON.

Maj.-Gen. SAMUEL JONES.
Brig.-Gen. JNO. B. FLOYD.
Brig.-Gen. J. D. IMBODEN.
Brig.-Gen. W. C. WICKHAM.

Gettysburg campaign he fought at Fleetwood Hill and Brandy Station, where he engaged the enemy in a series of brilliant charges with his regiments, in one of the last of which he received a severe wound through the leg. General Stuart reported "the handsome and highly satisfactory manner" in which he handled his brigade, and the deplorable loss "for a short time only, it is hoped, of his valuable services." But, in his helpless condition, he was taken prisoner by Federal raiders and carried to Fortress Monroe, where, and at Fort Lafayette, he was held until March, 1864. On his return to the army he was promoted major-general and assigned to the command of a division of the cavalry. He participated in the operations of the cavalry from the Rapidan to the James in 1864; was at Malvern hill when Grant crossed the river; opposed Wilson's raid against the Weldon railroad in June; commanded the cavalry at Globe Tavern, August; at Five Forks held the right of the Confederate line; and during the retreat to Appomattox, aided Gordon in repulsing repeated assaults. After the surrender he retired to his plantation, and resided there until his removal to Burke's Station in 1874. He was president for a time of the State agricultural society, served one term in the State senate, and sat in the Fiftieth, Fifty-first and Fifty-second Congresses as representative of the Eighth Virginia district. He died at Alexandria, October 15, 1891.

Brigadier-General R. D. Lilley entered the Confederate service in the spring of 1861 as captain of the Augusta Lee Rifles, a volunteer company, which marched through the mountains under Col. J. M. Heck, after the battle of Philippi, to recruit the forces in western Virginia. At Huttonsville, General Garnett ordered two regiments to be formed from the volunteer and militia organizations, and the Rifles was assigned to the Twenty-fifth Virginia infantry, under Colonel Heck. This regiment occupied Rich mountain, and there Captain Lilley, in command of his company, took part in the defense of Camp Garnett. During the night retreat from that post, he and part of his company followed the lead of Major Hotchkiss, over the mountain, and reached Beverly in safety; but the remainder of the column became separated and were captured by McClellan. He remained with the

army of the Northwest through the fall and winter of 1861, and shared its valorous service in the defeats of the Federals at the Greenbrier river and Alleghany mountain, and at McDowell in May, 1862. Subsequently his regiment was attached to Early's brigade of Ewell's division, and he was identified with the career of that famous brigade throughout 1862. At the battle of Cedar Mountain he attracted the attention of General Early by his gallantry in advancing among the foremost, with a small body of men, including the color-bearer, after the regiment had been thrown in disorder by a rear attack. At Second Manassas he again won commendation for his gallantry in driving back a column of the enemy while in command of the brigade skirmish line. He was promoted major in January, 1863. In April and May, the Twenty-fifth was with Imboden in western Virginia, and rejoining the army was assigned to J. M. Jones' brigade of the Stonewall division. Major Lilley won high praise by his services in command of the skirmish line of this brigade at Gettysburg, and was promoted lieutenant-colonel. He served with distinction at Mine Run, and after the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the command of Early's old brigade. In this capacity he served in the expedition through Maryland against Washington. Soon after his return to the Valley he was severely wounded and captured at a battle near Winchester, July 20, 1864, but was recaptured four days later. On November 28, 1864, he was given command of the reserve forces of the Valley district, where he served during the remainder of the war. General Lilley died November 12, 1886.

Major-General Lunsford Lindsay Lomax, a distinguished officer of the Confederate States provisional army, who rose from the rank of captain to that of major-general in the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Newport, R. I., the son of Mann Page Lomax, of Virginia, a major of ordnance in the United States army. His mother, Elizabeth Lindsay, was a descendant of Captain Lindsay, who commanded a company in the light horse cavalry of Harry Lee during the Revolution, and lost an arm in the war for independence. His father, also, was of an old Virginia family. Young Lomax was educated in the schools

of Richmond and Norfolk, and was appointed cadet-at-large, July 1, 1852, to the military academy at West Point, where he was graduated July 1, 1856, and promoted to a brevet lieutenancy in the Second cavalry. He served on frontier duty in Kansas, Nebraska and that region, with promotion to second lieutenant of the First cavalry, September 30, 1856, and first lieutenant, March 21, 1861, until the secession of his State from the United States. Resigning April 25, 1861, he offered his services to Virginia, and was appointed captain in the State forces April 28th. He was at once assigned to the staff of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, as assistant adjutant-general, and later was transferred to the field of operations beyond the Mississippi, as inspector-general upon the staff of the gallant Texan, Brigadier-General McCulloch, who commanded a division of Van Dorn's army. After McCulloch fell he was promoted inspector-general on the staff of Maj.-Gen. Earl Van Dorn, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He served in this capacity from July, 1862, until October, when he was made inspector-general of the army of East Tennessee. While with the western armies he participated in the battles of Pea Ridge, Ark., Farmington and Corinth, Miss., the first defense of Vicksburg from siege, Baton Rouge, La., Spring Hill and Thompson Station, Tenn. On February 8, 1863, he was promoted colonel and called to the eastern campaigns. As colonel of the Eleventh Virginia cavalry, in W. E. Jones' brigade, he participated in the raid in West Virginia, and the subsequent Pennsylvania campaign, including the battles of Brandy Station, Winchester, Rector's Cross-roads, Upperville, Gettysburg and Buckland. On July 23, 1863, he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the command of a brigade of cavalry organized for him of the Fifth, Sixth and Fifteenth Virginia regiments, and the First Maryland cavalry. Under his command this brigade was one of the principal factors in the subsequent operations of Fitz Lee's division, including the fighting at Culpeper Court House, Morton's Ford, the second encounter at Brandy Station, Tod's Tavern, the Wilderness campaign, Cold Harbor, Yellow Tavern, Reams' Station and Trevilian's. His gallant and cool leadership in these important engagements led to his promotion, August 10, 1864, to the rank of major-general. He was given command of a

division composed of the cavalry brigades of Bradley T. Johnson, W. L. Jackson, Henry B. Davidson, J. D. Imboden and John McCausland, and rendered prominent and distinguished service in the Valley campaign of the army under General Early, at the battles of Winchester, Tom's Brook and other encounters. At the battle of Woodstock, October 9th, he was made a prisoner by Torbert's cavalry, but made his escape about three hours later by personally overthrowing his captor. On October 31st he was assigned to the command of the cavalry wing of the army under Early, and on March 29, 1865, was put in entire command of the Valley district of the department of Northern Virginia. After the fall of Richmond he moved his forces to Lynchburg, and when Lee surrendered sent the news to General Echols, with whom he endeavored to form a junction with the remnants of his own, Fitz Lee's and Rosser's divisions. He succeeded in joining the army in North Carolina, and surrendered his division with Johnston, at Greensboro. Thence he returned to Caroline county, Va., and engaged in farming, to which he quietly devoted himself during the succeeding years until 1889, when he was called to the presidency of the college at Blacksburg. He resigned this position after five years' service. For several years he has been engaged in the official compilation of the records of the war, at Washington, D. C.

Brigadier-General Armistead Lindsay Long was born in Campbell county, Va., September 13, 1827. He was educated at the United States military academy, with graduation in the class of 1850, and promotion to brevet second lieutenant of artillery. He served in garrison at Fort Moultrie until 1852, and on frontier duty in New Mexico, with promotion to first lieutenant, Second artillery, until 1854. His subsequent service was at Fort McHenry and Barrancas barracks, until 1855, when he was again ordered to the frontier. With the exception of a period at Fortress Monroe he was on duty in Indian Territory, Kansas and Nebraska until 1860. When the crisis arrived between the North and South he was stationed at Augusta arsenal, Ga., but was transferred to Washington, where he served as aide-de-camp to General Sumner until his resignation, which took effect June 10, 1861. Repairing to Richmond he accepted the com-

mission of major of artillery in the Confederate service, and soon accompanied Gen. W. W. Loring, assigned to the command of the army of Western Virginia, as chief of artillery. He served in the Trans-Alleghany, performing the duties of inspector-general in addition to those of his regular position, during the summer and fall of 1861, and was then ordered to report to Gen. R. E. Lee in the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida. The association with the future commander-in-chief of the Confederate armies, begun amid the mountains of West Virginia, was continued throughout the four years' war, with intimate friendship and confidence. When Lee was given command of the army of Northern Virginia, Long was appointed military secretary with the rank of colonel. During the subsequent campaigns he rendered valuable service upon the field, especially in posting and securing the artillery. His efficiency in the disposition of artillery was particularly shown upon the fields of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. In September, 1862, he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the duty of chief of artillery of the Second corps of the army. He was actively engaged during the Bristoe and Mine Run campaigns, and throughout the severe fighting of 1864 managed his artillery with vigor and unflinching judgment, sharing the battles of Ewell's corps until disabled by illness. He organized the artillery which accompanied Early in his campaign against Washington. Throughout the disasters which befell Early's army in the Shenandoah valley, subsequently, his artillery corps behaved with a steadfast gallantry and unflinching courage that elicited the unbounded praise of the lieutenant-general commanding. General Long was with the Shenandoah army at the final disaster at Waynesboro and afterward accompanied Gordon's corps in the withdrawal from Richmond, participated in its engagements in April, 1865, and finally was surrendered and paroled at Appomattox. After the war closed he was appointed chief engineer of the James River & Kanawha canal company. Soon afterward he lost his eyesight by reason of exposure during his campaigns. He then removed to Charlottesville, where he passed the last twenty years of his life in total darkness. During this period his active mind was much employed in recalling the incidents of the war, and it was then that he wrote

the Memoirs of Gen. R. E. Lee, a model of biographical history, containing a very clear and most intelligent account of the military operations of the army of Northern Virginia. This book was published in 1886. He also prepared reminiscences of his army life, and a sketch of Stonewall Jackson, which so far has not been published. By reason of his infirmity he was compelled to use a slate prepared for the use of the blind, and to depend on members of his family and on friends for much assistance. Under all these disadvantages he worked along uncomplainingly, drawing his interest and delight from what was most pleasant in his past life, cheerful, and always with placid courage looking forward to the end of his sad but honored career. He died April 29, 1891, leaving a wife and two children, Virginia L. and E. McLean.

Major-General John Bankhead Magruder, conspicuous in the early operations in Virginia, was born at Winchester, Va., August 15, 1810. He was graduated at the West Point military academy in 1830, with the brevet of second lieutenant, Seventh infantry, and was assigned to the artillery school at Fort McHenry, Md. He subsequently served in various garrisons, on recruiting service and in the occupation of Texas. On March 31, 1836, he was commissioned first lieutenant of artillery. In the Mexican war he commanded the light battery attached to General Pillow's division, and after gallant service at Palo Alto was made captain of the First artillery. At Cerro Gordo he won the brevet rank of major, and he afterward participated in the skirmish of La Hoya, Ocalaca, the storming of Chapultepec and the capture of the city of Mexico. After the close of this war he served in Maryland and California and was in command of Fort Adams at Newport, R. I. At the formation of the Confederacy he promptly tendered his services and was commissioned colonel, C. S. A., March 16, 1861. Promotion rapidly followed to brigadier-general, June 17th, and major-general, October 7, 1861. He was assigned to command of the artillery in and about Richmond on April 29th, and soon afterward was given charge of the Virginia State forces in that locality. Put in command of the district of Yorktown in May, he defeated a Federal force at Big Bethel, the first battle of the war, in which his success gave confidence to the Confederate soldiers

everywhere, and correspondingly depressed the Northern troops. He remained in this command until February, 1862. Stationed at Yorktown, with about 12,000 men, confronting McClellan's great army of invasion, he demonstrated his remarkable ability as a master of ruse and strategy, causing McClellan to believe that a force superior to his own disputed his advance. Magruder was not actively engaged at Seven Pines, but after General Lee took command, he was put in charge of the left wing of the Confederate army, and during the operations north of the Chickahominy was left before Richmond to engage the attention of the Federals. No one could have better performed this feat than "Prince John," as he was known in the old Federal army, on account of his lordly air and brilliant ability to bring appearances up to the necessities of occasion. During the retreat of McClellan his troops made a spirited attack at Savage Station, and at Malvern Hill nine brigades under his orders made a heroic charge against the Federal position, but were repulsed with fearful slaughter. At this time the Confederate government determined to prosecute more vigorously the war in the West and attempt to recover lost territory in Missouri and Louisiana, and a department was formed of the Trans-Mississippi, and General Magruder sent to its command, with the understanding that Generals Hindman, Taylor and Price would report to him. If this plan had been carried out, doubtless the history of the war in that region would have been other than it is, but there was a change before Magruder could reach the field, and he was recalled to Richmond and subsequently assigned to the district of Texas. He directed his attention at once to the defenseless condition of the coast, and caused the equipment of two cotton clad gunboats, and when the Federals attempted to occupy Galveston he recaptured the town January 1, 1863, made prisoners of the garrison, and caused the whole Federal blockade fleet to hoist the white flag, although the uninjured vessels afterward escaped. He continued in command, the district being enlarged to include New Mexico and Arizona, and in March, 1864, sent most of his forces to reinforce General Taylor against Banks. After the close of hostilities he went into Mexico and entered the army of Maximilian with the rank of major-general, serving until the downfall of the emperor. Then returning to the United

States he lectured for a time upon his Mexican experience, at Baltimore and other cities, finally settling at Houston, Tex., in 1869. He died at that city, February 19, 1871.

Major-General William Mahone was born at Monroe, Southampton county, Va., December 1, 1826. His family in Virginia was descended from an Irish progenitor of the Colonial period. Both his grandfathers served in the war of 1812, and his father commanded a militia regiment during the Nat Turner insurrection. He was graduated at the Virginia military institute in 1847, after which he taught two years at the Rappahannock military academy. He then entered upon a career as civil engineer in which he became distinguished, engaging in the construction of new railroads in Virginia, notably the Orange & Alexandria and Norfolk & Petersburg lines. Overcoming obstacles that had been pronounced insuperable in the construction of the latter line, he subsequently became president of the railroad company. He then conceived his great project of consolidating various roads into a system from Norfolk to Bristol, Tenn., with the ultimate object of extending connections to the Mississippi and to the Pacific coast. But these enterprises were brought to a sudden check by the political events of 1860-61. He promptly offered his services to Virginia, was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, and soon promoted colonel of the Sixth Virginia regiment. Serving first at Norfolk, he was promoted brigadier-general November 16, 1861. After serving in the defense of Drewry's bluff, he fought his brigade in Huger's division at Seven Pines, where his men and Armistead's struck the enemy a telling blow on the second day. He participated in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, and in Anderson's division of Longstreet's corps conducted his brigade into action at the battle of Second Manassas with conspicuous gallantry, receiving a severe wound which prevented his participation in the Maryland campaign, though his famous brigade was distinguished in the valorous defense of the South mountain passes. Returning to his command, he served through the succeeding struggles on the Rappahannock and in Pennsylvania, and during the first day's fighting in the Wilderness was intrusted with the command of his own,

Wofford's, Anderson's and Davis' brigades, in an attack on the flank and rear of Grant's advance, which rolled Hancock's command back in confusion and promised to repeat the victory of Chancellorsville, when Longstreet fell, as Jackson had fallen on the former field. When his division commander was called to fill Longstreet's place, Mahone was given command of Anderson's division, and Longstreet added his voice to that of A. P. Hill in recommending the promotion of the dashing infantry chieftain. As a division commander, though without the official rank, he was distinguished in a successful attack upon Hancock, May 10th, and the severe repulse and almost capture of a portion of Warren's corps on the North Anna. Before Petersburg he brilliantly defended the Weldon railroad, and at the time of the breaking of the Confederates lines by the explosion of a mine, July 30th, he was specially distinguished. Moving promptly with his division to the relief of Gen. Bushrod Johnson's men, he engaged in repeated desperate charges, which finally resulted in the utter repulse and terrible slaughter of the enemy. Here the tardy promotion arrived, he being promoted major-general on the field by General Lee, which was promptly confirmed by the President and Congress. Of Mahone's part in the battle of the Crater, Col. W. H. Stuart, of the Sixty-first Virginia, has said: "The whole movement was under his immediate and personal direction, and to him, above all, save the brave men who bore the muskets, belong the honor and credit of recapturing the Confederate lines." To the last he held his men together in a remarkably spirited and unified organization, which was inspired with a strong *esprit du corps*, and distinguished for readiness to take all chances in either defense or assault. He surrendered at Appomattox, and returned to the railroad management from which he had been called four years before. Becoming president of the two lines extending from Petersburg to Bristol, Tenn., he consolidated the three companies into the Atlantic, Mississippi & Ohio railroad company, which he managed until the financial crisis of 1873, when a foreign combination gained control and the system became known later as the Norfolk & Western. Though defeated in this great enterprise he managed that upon the sale of the lines \$500,000 was paid to the State of Virginia for her claim, the whole amount of

which he subsequently caused to be appropriated for educational purposes. Before the close of the war General Mahone had served in the Virginia senate in addition to his duties in the field, and during the reconstruction period he exerted a very powerful influence toward the comparatively peaceful restoration of home rule which was brought about in his State. In 1878 he was defeated in a contest for the Democratic nomination for governor. In 1879, under his leadership, the "Readjuster" party was formed in Virginia, which for a time controlled the State, and General Mahone was elected to the United States Senate, where he soon became identified with the Republican party, which through his efforts carried the State elections in 1881. He led Virginia delegations to the Republican national conventions of 1884 and 1888, and in 1889 was nominated for governor by his party, but defeated. He continued to retain political leadership, and in his later years made his home at Washington, where he died October 8, 1895.

Major-General Dabney Herndon Maury was born at Fredericksburg, Va., May 20, 1822, the son of Capt. John Minor Maury, United States navy, whose wife was the daughter of Fontaine Maury. His descent is from the old Virginia families of Brooke and Minor, and the Hnguenot emigrés, the Fontaines and Maurys. He was educated at the classical school of Thomas Harrison, Fredericksburg, studied law at the university of Virginia, and was graduated at West Point in 1846, with the rank of brevet second lieutenant in the mounted rifles. A theater for active service in his profession was awaiting him in Mexico, where he was at once ordered. He conducted himself with soldierly valor in this war, particularly at the siege of Vera Cruz and the battle of Cerro Gordo, where he was severely wounded, and received the brevet of first lieutenant for gallantry. In further recognition of his services he was presented with a sword by the citizens of Fredericksburg and the legislature of Virginia. For several years subsequent to the Mexican war he was detailed for service at the United States military academy, first as assistant professor of geography, history and ethics, and afterward as assistant professor of infantry tactics. In 1852 he was transferred to frontier duty in

Texas, in which he continued, with promotion to first lieutenant mounted rifles, until 1858, when he was appointed superintendent of the cavalry school at Carlisle, Pa. From April 15, 1860, until the outbreak of the Confederate war he was assistant adjutant-general, with the rank of brevet captain, in New Mexico. He promptly acted with his State in 1861, and was commissioned captain, corps of cavalry, C. S. A., to date from March 16th. Subsequently he was promoted colonel, was appointed adjutant-general of the army at Manassas, and when Gen. Earl Van Dorn was assigned to command the Trans-Mississippi department, early in 1862, he became his chief of staff and adjutant-general. In his report of the battle of Elkhorn Tavern, General Van Dorn wrote: "Colonel Maury was of invaluable service to me both in preparing for and during the battle. Here, as on other battlefields where I have served with him, he proved to be a zealous patriot and true soldier; cool and calm under all circumstances, he was always ready, either with his sword or pen." Maury was promptly promoted brigadier-general. He accompanied Van Dorn to the consultation with A. S. Johnston and Beauregard at Corinth previous to the battle of Shiloh, and subsequently was transferred with the main Confederate force east of the Mississippi, where his service was afterward given. When Price took command of the army of the West at Tupelo, he commanded one of its two divisions, including the brigades of John C. Moore, W. L. Cabell and C. W. Phifer, and the cavalry of F. C. Armstrong. Little of Maryland, commanding the other division, fell at Iuka, where Maury was held in reserve, and afterward served as rear guard, repelling pursuit. About a fortnight later he commanded the center in the battle of Corinth, against Rosecrans, and gallantly engaged the enemy, who was driven from his intrenchments and through the town. During the subsequent retirement he defended the rear, fighting spiritedly at Hatchie's bridge. He was promoted major-general in November, 1862, and on December 30th, arrived before Vicksburg from Grenada, to support S. D. Lee, who had repulsed Sherman's attack at Chickasaw bayou, and was assigned to command of the right wing. He continued in service here, his troops being engaged at Steele's bayou and in the defeat of the Yazoo Pass expedition, until he was ordered to Knoxville, April 15th, to

take command of the department of East Tennessee. A month later he was transferred to the command of the district of the Gulf. In this region, with headquarters at Mobile, he continued to serve until the end of the war. During the siege of Atlanta, in command of reserve troops, he operated in defense of the Macon road. In August, 1864, in spite of a gallant struggle, the defenses of Mobile bay were taken, and in March and April, 1865, Maury, with a garrison about 9,000 strong, defended the city against the assaults of Canby's army of 45,000 until, after heavy loss, he retired without molestation to Meridian. But the war was now practically over, and on May 4th, his forces were included in the general capitulation of General Taylor. Subsequently he made his home at Richmond, Va. He has given many valuable contributions to the history of the war period, and in 1868 organized the Southern historical society, the collections of which he opened to the government war records office, securing in return free access to that department by ex-Confederates. In 1878 he was a leader in the movement for the reorganization of the volunteer troops of the nation, and until 1890 served as a member of the executive committee of the National Guard association of the United States. In 1886 he was appointed United States minister to Columbia, a position he held until June 22, 1889. Since then he has been occupied in literary pursuits, being the author of a school history of Virginia, and other works.

Brigadier-General Patrick T. Moore was born at Galway, Ireland, September 22, 1821, son of John Moore, who removed to Canada with his family in 1835, and soon after was appointed consul at Boston. Coming to Richmond at the age of twenty-nine years, General Moore engaged in business as a merchant, until the outbreak of war, when, having been for some time a captain of militia, he offered his services to the State. In the spring of 1861 he was commissioned colonel of the First regiment, Virginia infantry, which was assigned to Longstreet's brigade of the army under Beauregard at Manassas. He participated in the affair at Blackburn's ford and the battle of Manassas, in the latter action being one of the Confederates who paid the penalty of glorious victory, receiving a severe wound in the head while leading his regi-

ment. His conduct received the generous recognition of Generals Longstreet and Beauregard in their official reports. During the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond he served upon the volunteer staff of General Longstreet, but his wound prevented further service at the head of his regiment. In May, 1864, he was temporarily assigned to duty in organizing and placing in the field the reserve forces of Virginia, under General Kemper, and was put in command of the rendezvous of reserves at Richmond. Later in the year, being promoted brigadier-general, he was given command of the First brigade, Virginia reserves, part of the force of Lieutenant-General Ewell, in command of the department of Richmond. After the close of the struggle he returned to Richmond, and all the fruits of his former business success having been swept away, he engaged in insurance agency, which was his occupation until his death, February 20, 1883.

Brigadier-General Thomas Taylor Munford, a distinguished cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at the city of Richmond, in 1831, the son of Col. George Wythe Munford, for twenty-five years secretary of the commonwealth. He was graduated at the Virginia military institute in 1852, and until the outbreak of the war, was mainly engaged as a planter. He went into the Confederate service as lieutenant-colonel of the Thirtieth Virginia mounted infantry, organized at Lynchburg, May 8, 1861, and mustered in by Col. Jubal A. Early. This was the first mounted regiment organized in Virginia, and under the command of Col. R. C. W. Radford, was in Beauregard's army at the battle of First Manassas. Subsequently it was entitled the Second regiment of cavalry, General Stuart's regiment being numbered First, at the reorganization under Stuart, when Munford was promoted colonel of the regiment. On the field of Manassas he had commanded three squadrons composed of the Black Horse, Chesterfield, and Wise troops, the Franklin rangers, and three independent companies, and pursued the enemy further than any other command, capturing many prisoners and ten rifled guns, which he turned over to President Davis at Manassas. His career as a cavalry officer thus brilliantly begun continued throughout the war, and was notable for faithful service in whatever command was allotted him. In the spring

of 1862, attached to Ewell's command, he skirmished in Rappahannock county, and then joined Jackson in the Valley. Upon the death of General Ashby he was recommended by Gen. R. E. Lee as his successor. In this capacity he participated in the battle of Cross Keys, and captured many prisoners at Harrisonburg. With his regiment he led Jackson's advance in the Chickahominy campaign, and on the day of battle at Frayser's farm, his men were the only part of the corps to cross the river and attack the Federals at White Oak swamp. He joined Stuart's command in the Manassas campaign, leading the advance of Ewell's division, and received two saber wounds at Second Manassas. In September, assigned to the command of the brigade, he took part in the Maryland campaign, in which his men sustained the main losses of the cavalry division, fighting at Poolesville, Monocacy church, Sugar Loaf mountain, Burkittsville and Crampton's gap. At the latter pass of the South mountain, with about 800 men, dismounted, he made a gallant defense against the advance of a Federal corps. At Sharpsburg he was actively engaged on the 17th and 18th, on Lee's right wing, guarding the lower fords of the Antietam, crossed the Potomac in the presence of the enemy, and defended the retreat from Boteler's ford. In October, when the Federal army advanced in Virginia in two columns, he was put in command of one division of the cavalry to confront Hancock's troops. Subsequently he was transferred to Fitzhugh Lee's brigade, which he commanded after Chancellorsville at Beverly's ford and Aldie. He took part in the Gettysburg campaign, the Bristoe campaign, and the cavalry operations in the spring of 1864 under Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, participated in the Valley campaign with Early, and being promoted brigadier-general in November, 1864, was assigned to the command of Fitzhugh Lee's division. In this rank he made a gallant fight at Five Forks, and on the retreat from Richmond was associated with General Rosser in the defeat of the Federals at High Bridge, capturing 780 prisoners; also in the battle of April 7th, when the enemy was again defeated and Federal General Gregg was captured. At Appomattox, at daybreak of April 9th, he commanded the cavalry on the right of the Confederate line, in the attack, and driving the enemy from his front, moved toward Lynchburg. After the sur-

render of Lee he endeavored to collect the scattered Confederate bands and make a junction with Johnston's army, but after the latter command capitulated he disbanded his men late in the month of April. In his final report Gen. Fitzhugh Lee called attention to the excellent service of General Munford as a division commander. With the close of the war he retired to his home, and since then has been engaged in the management of agricultural interests in Virginia and Alabama, with his home at Lynchburg. He has served two terms as president of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute.

General Richard L. Page, distinguished in the naval and military history of the Confederate States, was born in Clarke county, Va., in 1807. The worthy Virginia family to which he belongs is descended from John Page, an immigrant from England in early days, one of whose descendants, John Page, wedded Jane Byrd Westover. Their son, Mann Page, was father to William Byrd Page, born at North End, Gloucester county, in 1768, who was a farmer by occupation, and died at Fairfield, Clarke county, in 1812. He married Ann Lee, who was born at Leesylvania, Prince William county, in 1776, and died at Washington, D. C. She was a daughter of Henry Lee, and sister of Gen. Henry Lee, the famous cavalry officer, known as "Light Horse Harry," father of Gen. Robert E. Lee. Another brother, Charles Lee, was attorney-general of the United States in Washington's administration. Richard L. Page, son of William Byrd and Ann Page, became a midshipman in the United States navy March 12, 1824, being first assigned to the sloop-of-war John Adams, of the West Indies squadron, Commodore Porter, making two short cruises. In 1825 he was ordered to the frigate Brandywine to convey General La Fayette to France under Commodore Morris. In the Mediterranean he was transferred to the frigate Constitution. He returned to the United States in 1828 in the Constitution, after which he was ordered to the frigate Constellation, Commodore Wadsworth, and was detached from her at New York to prepare for his examination. From 1830 to 1834 he was attached to the sloop-of-war Concord as passed midshipman and sailing master, which ship, after conveying John Randolph as minister to Russia, joined the squadron in the Mediterranean. March 26, 1834, he

was commissioned lieutenant and ordered to the *Enterprise* on the Brazil station, was then transferred to the Ontario, afterward served as executive officer of the schooner *Enterprise* on the East India station, was transferred to the sloop-of-war *Peacock*, and returned to the United States in the fall of 1837, having circumnavigated the globe, when he was given two years' leave of absence to visit Europe. Subsequent duty was as ordnance officer in the Norfolk navy yard, then to the frigate *Macedonia* in the West Indies for two cruises of one year each, with Commodores Wilkinson and Shubrick; next two years at the Norfolk naval rendezvous; then as executive officer of the sloop-of-war *Fairfield* of the Mediterranean squadron in 1844 and 1845. Returning in the *Fairfield* to the United States, he was ordered to the receiving battleship *Pennsylvania* at Norfolk in 1845. He was executive officer, and for two years lieutenant commanding the frigate *Independence*, flagship of Commodore Shubrick, during the Mexican war. Returning home in 1849, he was ordered on ordnance duty at Norfolk navy yard. In 1852-54, in command of the United States brig *Perry*, he served with the African squadron, and following that cruise became executive officer at the Norfolk navy yard, and a member of the Retiring board. He was promoted commander September 14, 1855. As assistant inspector of ordnance he remained at Norfolk until the spring of 1857, when he was given command of the sloop-of-war *Germantown* and attached to the East India squadron, returning to the United States in her in 1859. At the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy he was on duty at Norfolk as ordnance officer, to which he had been recalled a year previous. As soon as Virginia seceded he resigned his rank and office, and was appointed aide-de-camp on the staff of Governor Letcher of Virginia, with special duties in the organization of a State navy. He superintended the erection of the fortifications at the mouth of the James river, and those on the Nansemond river and Pagan creek. On June 10, 1861, he entered the navy of the Confederate States, with a commission as commander. Until the evacuation of Norfolk he served as ordnance officer at the navy yard, and during the actions of the Virginia in Hampton Roads he served as a volunteer in firing the 11-inch gun at Sewell's point against the Federal vessels. With the



Brig.-Gen. W. H. PAYNE.	Brig.-Gen. JOHN M. JONES.	Brig.-Gen. G. C. WHARTON.	Brig.-Gen. ROBERT S. GARNETT.
Brig.-Gen. RICHARD B. GARNETT.	Maj.-Gen. JAN. L. KEMPFER.	Brig.-Gen. D. B. HARRIS.	
Maj.-Gen. FITZHUGH LEE.	Brig.-Gen. A. L. LONG.	Brig.-Gen. WM. E. STARKE.	

machinery and mechanics removed from Norfolk at its evacuation, Commander Page, having been promoted to captain, established the ordnance and construction depot at Charlotte, N. C., which he managed with such efficiency that the works became indispensable to the Southern Confederacy. In this important duty he was engaged for about two years, except the period of his assignment to the command of the naval forces at Savannah, and with Commodore Tattnall on the gunboat Savannah at the naval battle of Port Royal. March 1, 1864, he was commissioned brigadier-general in the provisional army and assigned to the command of the outer defenses of Mobile bay. He established his headquarters at Fort Morgan, where, on August 8th, he was summoned to surrender by Farragut's flag lieutenant and General Granger's chief of staff. Although he had but about 400 effective men and twenty-six serviceable guns to oppose 10,000 troops and over 200 guns of the attacking forces, he gallantly replied that he would defend the post to the last extremity. During the succeeding two weeks the enemy was busy advancing his lines on the land side, meantime keeping up a desultory fire day and night, and on the morning of August 22d a furious bombardment began. The heavy guns on Mobile point were trained at a distance of only 250 yards, and the enemy's navy took station at convenient points, the ironclads at close range, and an incessant fire followed. During twelve hours 3,000 shells were thrown into the fort. But General Page and his heroic men kept up the fight with all their power; the citadel of the fort took fire at 9 o'clock at night; the walls of the fort were repeatedly breached, and the best guns disabled. Serving the guns that were left and spiking those dismounted, fighting the fire which was threatening the magazine, and throwing into the cisterns all powder not immediately needed, the garrison fought all night in a storm of shot and shell, until, with no means of defense, they were compelled to capitulate on the following morning, August 23d, with all the honors of war. The defense of Fort Morgan under the command of General Page is one of the most celebrated instances of heroism in the history of the war. After the capitulation, General Page was held as a prisoner of war until September, 1865. Since that date he has resided at Norfolk, where he now enjoys the esteem and honor due his long and distinguished public

services. For nearly seven years of this time he served with marked efficiency as superintendent of the public schools of Norfolk. In 1841 he married Miss Alexina Taylor, of Norfolk, Va.

Brigadier-General Elisha Franklin Paxton, who fell at Chancellorsville while leading the Stonewall brigade, was a native of Rockbridge county, Va., of Scotch-Irish and English descent. His grandfather, William Paxton, commanded a company from Rockbridge at the siege of Yorktown in 1781. His father, Elisha Paxton, served in the war of 1812. General Paxton was educated and graduated at Washington college, Va., and at Yale college, and in 1849, at the head of his class in the university of Virginia, was graduated in law. This profession he practiced with much success at Lexington until 1860, when failing eyesight compelled him to seek other occupation. He was engaged in farming near Lexington when the political campaign of 1860 was in progress, and his ardent temperament and strong convictions did not permit him to remain an indifferent spectator of the important events of that year. After the election he advocated the immediate secession of Virginia, and when that action was finally decided upon he sustained his words by deeds of self-sacrifice. He was first lieutenant of the Rockbridge rifles, the first of ten companies to go from that county, and left his home April 18, 1861, for Harper's Ferry. His company was attached to the First Virginia brigade, under Gen. Thomas J. Jackson, and at the first battle of Manassas, it formed a part of the Fourth Virginia regiment. In that memorable fight Lieutenant Paxton attracted attention by the conspicuous gallantry which ever afterward distinguished him as a soldier. Subsequently his company was assigned to the Twenty-seventh infantry, of which he was promoted major in October, 1861. In the following spring he became a member of General Jackson's staff, and later was appointed adjutant-general and chief of staff, Jackson's corps, army of Northern Virginia. On September 27, 1862, Jackson, having well tested his courage and ability, manifested great confidence in him by recommending the volunteer soldier for promotion to brigadier-general and assignment to command of the Stonewall brigade. The appointment was made by President Davis, and General Paxton took

charge of the brigade November 15, 1862. His letters show that owing to a deep sense of the responsibilities of the rank and a modest estimate of his own qualifications, he accepted the command with much reluctance; but his subsequent record vindicated Jackson's judgment. He commanded the brigade in but two great battles, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. At the former engagement he handled his troops with skill and promptness, and during part of the 13th occupied the front line of the division of General Taliaferro, by whom he was particularly mentioned in official report. On May 2, 1863, during Jackson's flank movement he was stationed to guard an important point, the Germanna junction, from which he was called to the main line the following night, after Jackson had fallen and the command had devolved upon Stuart. Early in the morning of Sunday, May 3d, the attack was renewed with irresistible vigor, and Paxton led his men through the dense woods against the Federal position. Dismounting, he marched on foot in the front line of his brigade until they came within the enemy's fire, when he was instantly killed by a shot through the breast. Dr. R. L. Dabney relates that when the news of General Paxton's death was conveyed to General Jackson, then on his deathbed, the great commander showed much emotion, "and spoke in serious and tender strain of the genius and virtues of that officer." His loss was mentioned with appreciative reference to his ability and courage in the official report of General Lee. At the time of his death he was thirty-five years of age. His remains now lie within a few feet of his chief in Lexington cemetery.

Brigadier-General William Henry Fitzhugh Payne, a distinguished cavalry commander of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Clifton, the homestead of his family in Virginia, January 27, 1830. His family, prominently associated with the history of the Old Dominion, was founded in America by John Payne, who with his brother William came to the colony in 1620. Fourth in descent from John Payne was Capt. William Payne, who was born in 1755 at Wakefield, Westmoreland county, the birthplace of George Washington. He did an extensive business as a merchant at Falmouth and Fredericksburg, served three years in the Continental army, includ-

ing the battles of Guilford Court House and Yorktown, and died at Clifton in 1837. By his second marriage, to Marian Morson, of Scottish descent, he had one son, Arthur A. M. Payne, born at Clifton in 1804, who was a prominent man, and widely known as a breeder of fine horses, among them Passenger. He married Mary Conway Mason Fitzhugh, daughter of Judge Nicholas Fitzhugh, of the District of Columbia, and granddaughter of Augustine Washington. The eldest of their six children is General Payne, who has well sustained the ancestral reputation of worthy citizenship, and faithful service, both in civil and military life, in the best interests of the community and the commonwealth. After completing his education in the university of Virginia and preparing himself for the practice of law, he formed a partnership for professional work with Samuel Chilton, at Warrenton. In 1856, at the age of twenty-six years, the ability he had demonstrated warranted his election to the office of commonwealth's attorney, which he continued to fill with satisfaction to the public until 1869, except during the period he passed in the military service. He was among the first to answer the call of the State immediately after the passage of the ordinance of secession, and as a private participated in the occupation of Harper's Ferry. Soon after his arrival there he was promoted to a captaincy in the Black Horse cavalry, a rank which he held from April 26th to September 17, 1861, when he was promoted major and assigned to the Fourth Virginia cavalry. With this command he participated in the early operations of the Peninsular campaign. In the battle of May 5th at Williamsburg, Colonel Robertson being sick and Lieutenant-Colonel Wickham having been wounded on the previous day, he commanded the regiment in a fierce fight on the Telegraph road, and received, as stated in General Stuart's report, "a very severe, and I fear, mortal wound in the face." His capture followed and he was held as a prisoner of war two or three months. As soon as exchanged, though not yet fully recovered, he returned to duty early in September, 1862, and being promoted lieutenant-colonel, was assigned to the temporary command of the Second North Carolina regiment of cavalry, with which he held Warrenton, Va., with about 3,000 wounded Confederate soldiers, also capturing a number of Federal prisoners. In November he was ordered into hospital at

Lynchburg, but on his application was given command of the troops at that post. In February, 1863, he was able to rejoin the Fourth regiment, and held command, in the absence of Colonel Wickham, until March 20th, when he was again given command of the Second North Carolina. The gallant Col. Sol Williams, the regular commander, returned to his men on June 8th, but on the next day, in the battle of Brandy Station, lost his life, and Payne continued to lead the regiment, and in that capacity took part in Stuart's Pennsylvania raid. When Stuart was confronted by Kilpatrick, Payne with his regiment was thrown against the rear of Farnsworth's brigade at Hanover, Pa. So gallant was the charge that one Federal regiment was scattered, and Kilpatrick's command might have been routed had adequate support been at hand. But here Colonel Payne's horse was killed under him, and he himself, with a severe saber cut in the side, again fell into the hands of the enemy. After a long imprisonment at Johnson's island, Ohio, he was exchanged, and being promoted brigadier-general, commanded a brigade of three cavalry regiments, the Fifth, Sixth and Fifteenth Virginia, in Early's campaign in the Shenandoah valley, including the battles of Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. He was next transferred to Richmond and remained there during the siege, in the final operations commanding a brigade composed of the Fifth, Sixth and Eighth Virginia cavalry and Thirty-sixth Virginia battalion, in Munford's division. At the battle of Five Forks, April 1st, he was again badly wounded, and was sent to Richmond to rejoin the army. During the evacuation he failed to reach his corps and took refuge near his old home, where he was captured on the night of Lincoln's assassination. Carried into Washington the next day, he narrowly escaped violence at the hands of the populace, blindly enraged by the terrible crime of the night before. He again suffered prison life at Johnson's island, after the actual close of the war. Since the return of peace he has devoted himself to the practice of law, also serving in the legislature of Virginia in the session of 1879-80. He was married in May, 1852, to Mary Elizabeth Winston Payne, daughter of Col. W. Winter Payne, who represented the Sumter district of Alabama in Congress in 1841-48. Ten children were born to this union, of whom eight survive.

Major-General John Pegram was born in Virginia, January 24, 1832. He was appointed a cadet from Virginia in the United States military academy, and was graduated in 1854, with promotion to brevet second lieutenant of dragoons. He served on frontier duty, first at Fort Tejou, Cal., and afterward at Fort Riley, Kan., where he was commissioned second lieutenant of dragoons, and at Forts Lookout and Randall, Dak. His duties in the west were relieved for a time in 1857, by assignment as assistant instructor of cavalry. Promoted first lieutenant of the Second dragoons, he became adjutant of that regiment, and resumed his frontier service until 1858, when he was given leave of absence for two years for a tour of Europe. On his return he continued in the United States army until May 10, 1861, when he resigned. He was commissioned captain, corps of cavalry, C. S. A., and was promoted rapidly to higher grades. As lieutenant-colonel he participated in the operations of General Garnett's command about Beverly, W. Va., in the summer of 1861, and when confronted by the Federal forces in overwhelming numbers under McClellan and Rosecrans, Pegram was intrusted by Garnett with the command of one of the two bodies in which he divided his forces. A rear attack by Rosecrans compelled him to withdraw after a gallant fight, from Rich mountain, and two days later he was compelled to surrender with half his command. After his return to the army he was assigned to the staff of General Bragg at Tupelo, Miss., as chief of engineers, July, 1862, and later became chief of staff of Gen. E. Kirby Smith, in command in east Tennessee. In that capacity he participated in the Kentucky campaign and the battle of Richmond, where his services were gratefully recognized in the report of the general commanding. In November he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the command of a cavalry brigade of Tennesseans in Smith's army. With his brigade he participated in the battle of Murfreesboro, and subsequently was upon outpost duty and various active operations until the battle of Chickamauga, where he commanded a division of Forrest's cavalry corps. Subsequently he was transferred to the army of Northern Virginia and the infantry service, being given command of a brigade in Early's division of the Second corps, composed of the Thirteenth, Thirty-first, Forty-ninth, Fifty-

second and Fifty-eighth Virginia regiments. With this gallant body of veterans he was in the campaign from the Rapidan to the James, and was particularly distinguished during the second day of the fight in the Wilderness, when his brigade repelled the persistent assaults of the Federals, determined to turn the flank of Ewell's corps. In command of Early's division he took part in the campaign against Sheridan in the Shenandoah valley in the fall of 1864, and after the return of these forces to the Petersburg lines he was promoted major-general and continued in command of the division, a part of Gordon's corps, throughout the winter. On February 6, 1865, he moved from camp to reconnoiter and was attacked by the enemy in heavy force on Hatcher's run. His men were pressed back in spite of a brave resistance until reinforced by the division of C. A. Evans, when the enemy was in turn forced to retire. After meeting a second check the Confederates reformed and charged again, driving the Federals, and in this moment of success General Pegram fell mortally wounded. His death occurred on the same day.

Brigadier-General William Nelson Pendleton, of Virginia, like Bishop Polk, of the Western army, entered the service of the Confederacy from the service of the church. He was born at Lexington, Va., December 23, 1809, and was appointed to the United States military academy in 1826, where he formed a close friendship with R. E. Lee and Jefferson Davis. He was graduated in 1830 and began service in the garrison at Augusta, Ga., with the rank of second lieutenant of artillery. Subsequently he served one year as assistant professor of mathematics at West Point, and with the artillery at Fort Hamilton, until 1833, when he resigned and became professor of mathematics in Bristol college, Pa., later becoming connected with the faculty of Delaware college. In 1837 he became a clergyman in the Episcopal church, in which he continued with distinction during the remainder of his life, receiving the degree of doctor of divinity. During the period of 1861-65, however, his talents were given to the defense of Virginia and the Confederacy. He entered the service as captain of a Lexington company, and in a few weeks was commissioned captain, corps of artillery, C. S. A. He served in command of

the Rockbridge artillery until a short time before the battle of First Manassas, when he was promoted colonel and made chief of artillery of the army under Gen. Joseph E. Johnston. Arriving on the field of Manassas with Johnston's command, he promptly brought his artillery into action in support of the Confederate left, where the battle was raging the hottest, and rendered effective service. It is told that he paused before his first order to fire to say with solemn reverence, "Lord, have mercy on their souls." From this time he continued in command of the artillery under Johnston, with promotion to the rank of brigadier-general, and after Lee took charge of the army of Northern Virginia, he served under him in the same capacity until the close of the war. Before the Pennsylvania campaign he had given the artillery an excellent organization, and under his direction it rendered telling service in the great artillery duels at Gettysburg. Through the remainder of the struggle he did his duty with devotion, and in the final retreat from Petersburg brought off his guns, making gallant stands against the enemy at Rice's Station and Farmville. During the night of April 8th, part of his command, under General Walker, was captured. On the 9th the artillery took part in a spirited attack upon the enemy, but hostilities were soon arrested, and he, with General Longstreet and General Gordon, represented the Confederate army in arranging the details of the surrender. Meanwhile, General Pendleton had continued to hold his ministerial charge at Lexington, and while on military duty had exercised his spiritual privileges. After the war he resumed his post at Lexington, where General Lee was a vestryman of his parish. He represented Virginia in the general convention of his church, both before and after the war, and received the degree of doctor of divinity in 1868. His only son, Col. "Sandie" Pendleton, was a member of Stonewall Jackson's staff, and fell mortally wounded at the battle of Winchester, in September, 1864. General Pendleton passed away January 15, 1883.

Major-General George Edward Pickett was born at Richmond, Va., January 25, 1825, son of a planter of Henrico county. He was graduated at the United States military academy in the class of 1846, which included George B. McClellan, J. L. Reno, Thomas J. Jackson,

George Stoneman, Dabney H. Maury, D. R. Jones, C. M. Wilcox, S. B. Maxey and others who attained prominence in the war of the Confederacy. Going into the war with Mexico he was promoted second lieutenant, Second infantry; was transferred to the Seventh and finally to the Eighth infantry, and participating in all the important engagements of Scott's army, was brevetted first lieutenant for gallantry at Contreras and Churubusco; earned the brevet of captain at Chapultepec, and finally took part in the capture of the Mexican capital. He subsequently served with the Eighth infantry on frontier duty in Texas until 1855, when he was promoted captain Ninth infantry, and given a year's assignment to Fortress Monroe. He was afterward on duty in Washington territory, until the spring of 1861. In 1856 he occupied San Juan island with sixty men, and forbade the landing of British troops, winning the thanks of the territorial legislature for his gallant and firm discharge of duty, and the commendation of General Harney for "cool judgment, ability and gallantry." His loyalty and firmness saved the rights of the United States until the title to the island was confirmed by international arbitration, and "Fort Pickett" guarded one end of the island until the British finally retired. His first commission in the Confederate service was as major of artillery, regular army. On July 23, 1861, as colonel in the provisional army, he was assigned to temporary command on the lower Rappahannock, with headquarters at Fredericksburg, and on February 28, 1862, being promoted to brigadier-general, he was ordered to report to General Longstreet. Commanding a brigade of Longstreet's corps, he won commendation for "using his forces with great effect, ability and his usual gallantry," at Williamsburg. On the second day of the battle of Seven Pines he was particularly distinguished for his good generalship during an attack by Hooker's command. An order to withdraw was received, which was obeyed by the other brigade commanders after the repulse of the first attack; but "Pickett, the true soldier," as Longstreet writes, "knowing that the order was not intended for such an emergency, stood and resisted the attack," holding his ground against odds of ten to one for several hours longer. The enemy attempted to creep up quietly and capture the Virginians, but they met him with a fearful fire that drove him back

to the bushes, which ended the battle. At Gaines' Mill, fighting on the right with Longstreet, his brigade broke Porter's line just west of the Watts house, attacking with such vigor as almost to gain possession of the Federal reserve artillery. In this assault Pickett fell severely wounded, and he was for some time absent from his brave command, which under his leadership had won the title of "the gamecock brigade." In October, 1862, he was promoted to major-general and assigned to a division of Longstreet's corps, composed of his old brigade under Garnett, and the brigades of Armistead, Kemper and Corse, all Virginians, and Micah Jenkins' South Carolina brigade. Though there were five or six other Virginia brigades, in other divisions, this was distinctively "the Virginia division" of the army, and comprised all the Virginia brigades in Longstreet's corps except Mahone's. He held the center of the line at Fredericksburg, and after that battle was sent with his division to Richmond, which was supposed to be threatened by the Federal movements. He was reinforced by Hood's division, and General Longstreet, in command, operated against Suffolk. Pickett went into the Gettysburg campaign with three brigades, Garnett's, Kemper's and Armistead's, and Dearing's artillery. He reached the battlefield with his men on the forenoon of the third day of battle, and was selected to make the attack upon the Federal center on Cemetery hill, Heth's division under Pettigrew to form the left of the line, which should be supported by Pender's division under Trimble. The attack was to be made after the enemy's artillery had been weakened by the massed fire of the Confederate artillery, which began at 2 o'clock. After a terrific artillery battle there was a lull in the Federal fire, and the Confederate ammunition being near exhaustion, General Alexander sent a note to Pickett: "For God's sake, come quick. The eighteen guns are gone; come quick, or my ammunition won't let me support you properly." Pickett handed the note to Longstreet, who had strongly objected to the proposed assault with the forces available. To Pickett's question, "General, shall I advance?" Longstreet said nothing, but nodded his head. Pickett then accepted the duty with apparent confidence and "rode gaily to his command," before going into the fight writing on the envelope of a letter to his betrothed:

If Old Pete's nod means death, then good-bye and God bless you, little one." The story of the charge has been often eloquently related. The Federal artillery was supplied with ammunition in time to work havoc in the Confederate ranks—the shattered lines closed up and gained the summit of the ridge and planted the stars and bars in the Federal lines—and disappeared in a tornado of fire. Very few came back unhurt. In September, 1863, Pickett was assigned to command of the department of North Carolina, embracing Petersburg and Southern Virginia. He made a demonstration against New Bern in the latter part of January, 1864. In May he joined Lee on the North Anna, and from that time commanded his old division, Armistead's, Pickett's, Corse's and Kemper's brigades, now under Barton, Hunton, Corse and Terry, until the close of hostilities. On June 16th, Lee arrived at Drewry's bluff with Pickett's division, and witnessed the gallant recapture of the Confederate lines from Butler. He wrote to Longstreet: "We tried very hard to keep Pickett's men from capturing the breastworks of the enemy, but could not do it." He remained before Bermuda Hundred until March, 1865, when he was sent to Lynchburg to oppose Sheridan's raid, and then marched with Longstreet north of Richmond in an attempt to intercept the Federal cavalryman, whom he finally met on March 31st and April 1st at Dinwiddie Court House and Five Forks. In these hard-fought battles Pickett commanded the infantry, Fitzhugh Lee the cavalry, and as Longstreet writes: "His execution was all that a skillful commander could apply. Though taken by surprise, there was no panic in any part of the command. Brigade after brigade changed front to the left and received the overwhelming battle as it rolled on, until crushed back in the next. In generalship, Pickett was not a bit below the 'gay rider.'" Reinforced too late to avoid defeat, he rallied and checked the cavalry pursuit at Amazon creek, preventing worse disaster. Here again, as at Gettysburg, he had been fated to make the decisive fight, with insufficient forces, and the inevitable followed. He marched with his division from Petersburg, escaped from the disaster at Rice's Station with 600 men of his splendid division, and finally was surrendered April 9, 1865, with the last of the army of North-

ern Virginia. Subsequently he engaged in business at Richmond, but did not survive the first decade following the war, dying at Norfolk, July 30, 1875.

Brigadier-General Roger Atkinson Pryor was born near Petersburg, Va., July 19, 1828, and was graduated at Hampden-Sidney college in 1845, and at the university of Virginia in 1848. Subsequently he prepared for the legal profession, and was admitted to the bar, but relinquished the practice on account of delicate health, and entered journalism. After an association with the Washington Union he became editor of the Richmond Enquirer in 1853, and rapidly attained prominence. In 1855, at the age of twenty-seven years, he was sent to Greece by President Pierce, as special commissioner for the adjustment of certain difficulties with that government. On his return he established a political journal at Richmond, called *The South*, in which he presented with great vigor the most radical opposition to encroachments upon the local rights and industrial methods of the South. He was elected to Congress in 1859, to fill a vacancy, and was re-elected in 1860. While in Congress his aggressiveness and passionate oratory gave him national prominence, and led to several duels. He took a prominent part in the proceedings of the Charleston Democratic convention in 1860, and after the presidential election ardently advocated the formation of the Southern Confederacy and the union with it of Virginia. Repairing to Charleston, S. C., he became a member of the volunteer staff of General Beauregard, and with his comrade, A. R. Chisholm, accompanied Aide-de-camps James Chestnut and Stephen D. Lee in the visit to Fort Sumter April 12th, notifying Major Anderson that fire would be opened on the fort. Thence they went by boat to Fort Johnson, where Capt. George S. James was ordered to open the fire. James, who was a great admirer of Pryor, offered the honor to him, as General Lee relates, but he replied, with much the same emotion as had characterized Anderson's receipt of the notice of bombardment, "I could not fire the first gun of the war." From their boat midway between Johnson and Sumter, he witnessed the opening of the bombardment. After the flag on Sumter was shot down he was sent with Lee to offer assistance in subduing the fire in the fort, and discovered

that Colonel Wigfall had made arrangements for surrender. Soon afterward he was assigned as colonel to the command of the Third Virginia regiment, stationed at Portsmouth and vicinity, and later in the year was elected a member of the First Confederate congress, in which he served with prominence as a member of the military committee. Continuing in military command, he moved his regiment to Yorktown in March, 1862, and engaged in battle at Yorktown and Williamsburg, after which he was promoted brigadier-general. In this rank he participated in the battle of Seven Pines, and was particularly distinguished, his men fighting bravely and with heavy loss, in the victories won at Gaines' Mill and Frayser's Farm. With Longstreet's corps he took part in the second battle of Manassas, and shared the distinction won by Anderson's corps at Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg. In November General Lee requested Pryor to return to Richmond and organize a brigade to operate south of the James river. He rendered valuable services in that field until his resignation, August 26, 1863. In 1864 he was captured by the United States troops and for a time confined at Fort Lafayette. Upon the close of hostilities he urged a policy of quiet acquiescence in the results of the war, but did not long remain in the South, removing to New York city, and embarking in the practice of law, in which he attained great distinction. The degree of LL. D. was conferred upon him by Hampden-Sidney college.

Brigadier-General Alexander Welch Reynolds was born in Clarke county, Va., in August, 1817, and was graduated at the United States military academy in 1838, in the class of Generals Beauregard, Hardee, Edward Johnson and Stevenson. He was promoted second lieutenant First infantry on graduation, and first lieutenant a year later; served in the Florida war as adjutant of his regiment in 1838-40, and again in 1840-41; subsequently was on frontier duty in the northwest, and then on recruiting service until 1847, when he was promoted captain and assigned to quartermaster duty. In the latter capacity he served at Philadelphia, in the Mexican war, and in Indian Territory and New Mexico. He was on duty as a quartermaster at various points, mainly in Texas, from 1857, until he left the United States service

to enter the Confederate army, in which he received the rank of captain of infantry. In July, 1861, he was commissioned colonel of the Fiftieth Virginia infantry, Floyd's brigade, with which he participated in Floyd's campaign in West Virginia. He was in command of the post at Lewisburg during the winter following. After the men had returned from the Fort Donelson campaign, Colonel Reynolds was ordered in April to collect his regiment and go to the support of Gen. E. Kirby Smith, at Knoxville. A few weeks later, he was in command of a brigade composed of the Thirty-ninth and Forty-third Georgia infantry, to which was added Latrobe's Maryland battery. With this command he was sent to Chattanooga, and thence to Vicksburg, where he was assigned to Stevenson's division, in command of a brigade of four Tennessee regiments. He was commended officially for his faithful service during the siege of Vicksburg. Being exchanged in July, 1863, he resumed command of his brigade, when it was restored to the service, with the rank of brigadier-general. After the battle of Chickamauga he was assigned to a brigade composed of the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina and the Fifty-fourth and Sixty-third Virginia, which he commanded in the battle of Missionary Ridge. Subsequently his brigade was attached to Stevenson's division, Hardee's corps, with which he was actively engaged in the Atlanta campaign, until painfully wounded at New Hope church. Upon the close of hostilities he went to Egypt, and in 1866 was appointed a brigadier-general in the army of the khedive. After serving in the Abyssinian war he resided for a time at Cairo, and died at Alexandria, Egypt, May 26, 1876

Brigadier-General Beverly Holcombe Robertson, a native of Virginia, was graduated at the United States military academy in 1849, and promoted to brevet second lieutenant of the Second dragoons. After a year at the cavalry school at Carlisle, Pa., he was promoted second lieutenant, and ordered to the West. He served in New Mexico, Kansas and Nebraska, participating in battle with the Apache Indians at Jornada del Muerto, and with the Sioux at Blue Water, and earning promotion to first lieutenant, until 1859, when, being ordered to Utah, he became adjutant of his regiment

and acting assistant adjutant-general of the department of Utah. He was promoted captain March 3, 1861, but in August, having severed his connection with the United States service, he accepted a commission as colonel, Virginia volunteer cavalry. In the cavalry brigade organized by General Stuart in the latter part of 1861, he commanded the Fourth regiment, Virginia cavalry. After Yorktown had been abandoned, and the Federal lines were close to Richmond, he made a gallant fight at New Bridge, in an attempt to repossess Mechanicsville, exercising brigade command in the action. In June, Jackson having concluded his Valley campaign, Robertson was promoted brigadier-general and sent to Mount Jackson to take command of Ashby's cavalry, and protect that region. From Ashby's command was organized the Seventh cavalry regiment, Col. W. E. Jones; the Twelfth regiment, Col. A. W. Harman; and the Seventeenth battalion (later the Eleventh regiment), Maj. O. R. Funsten. These, with the Sixth regiment, Col. P. S. Flournoy, and the Second regiment, Col. T. T. Munford (which had accompanied Jackson), constituted Col. Robertson's brigade when he rejoined Stuart on the Rapidan river in August. Very soon afterward he participated in the victory at Brandy Station, and was congratulated by Stuart upon the superior discipline and stability of the command he had organized. During the battle of Groveton he was in command on the right holding back Porter, and on the 30th of August, made a handsome cavalry fight against Buford's brigade, on the Federal left flank, driving the enemy and capturing 300 prisoners. On September 5th, General Robertson was ordered to the department of North Carolina for the organization and instruction of cavalry troops. In this capacity he displayed excellent ability, also participating in the demonstration against New Bern in March, 1863. Of his brigade he led two regiments, the Fourth and Fifth North Carolina cavalry, to reinforce Stuart in May, 1863; took an important part in the fight at Upperville, and during the Gettysburg campaign, commanded the cavalry division left with the main army, with orders to watch the enemy, and follow in the rear of Lee, after Stuart started on his raid through Maryland. This division consisted of his North Carolina brigade and his former Virginia brigade, now commanded by W. E.

Jones. On the last day of the Gettysburg battle his command fought a cavalry battle near Fairfield, and during the retreat was engaged in repeated skirmishes, particularly at Funkstown and Hagerstown. After the return to Virginia, his two regiments having been reduced to 300 men, he asked to be transferred to another field, and was assigned in October to the command of the Second district of South Carolina. In this field he remained, with enlarged command, during the remainder of the war, defeating the Federal attempt to possess John's island in July, 1864, commanding the cavalry forces which covered the retreat of Hardee from Charleston, and participating in several engagements with Sherman's troops. General Robertson is now engaged in the insurance business at Washington, D. C.

Major-General Thomas Lafayette Rosser was born upon a farm in Campbell county, Va., October 15, 1836, the son of John and Martha M. (Johnson) Rosser. The family removed from Virginia to Texas in 1849, and from that State Rosser was appointed to the United States military academy in 1856. The course of study being then five years, he was in the graduating class when it was ordered into the field by President Lincoln. He immediately resigned, and proceeding to Montgomery was commissioned first lieutenant in the regular army of the Confederate States. Being assigned as instructor to the Washington artillery of New Orleans, he commanded the Second company of that organization at the battles of Blackburn's Ford and Manassas in July, 1861, and with Stuart at Munson's hill and the battle of Lewinsville. His success in shooting down McClellan's observation balloon won him promotion to captain, and in this rank he commanded his battery in the defense of Yorktown and on the retreat up the peninsula. At the battle of Mechanicsville he was severely wounded, and was soon promoted to lieutenant-colonel of artillery, and a few days later to colonel of the Fifth Virginia regiment of cavalry. Thus began his career as a cavalryman, in which he won great distinction as a dashing, intrepid and skillful officer. He commanded the advance of Stuart's expedition to Catlett's Station, in the campaign against Pope, and captured the latter's orderly and horses; in the fight at Groveton, Va., August 28, 1862, commanded



Brig.-Gen. P. T. MOORE.
 Maj.-Gen. WM. MAHONE.
 Brig.-Gen. W. E. JONES.
 Maj.-Gen. G. W. C. LEE.

Brig.-Gen. DANIEL RUGGLES.
 Maj.-Gen. W. H. F. LEE.
 Brig.-Gen. D. A. WEISIGER.
 Maj.-Gen. GEO. E. PICKETT.

Maj.-Gen. EDWARD JOHNSON.
 Maj.-Gen. CARTER L. STEVENSON.
 Brig.-Gen. R. LINDSAY WALKER.
 Brig.-Gen. EDWIN G. LEE.

the only cavalry with Jackson; and confronted and held in check the forces of Fitz John Porter on August 29th. At South Mountain he commanded the only cavalry at Crampton's gap, and with Pelham's artillery took a prominent part in the gallant fight. He participated in the battle of Sharpsburg, and subsequently for a time led Fitzhugh Lee's brigade during the fighting against Pleasanton. At the opening of the battle at Kelly's ford, he was upon court-martial duty, with Stuart and Pelham, but rode immediately to the front with those officers, and finding his regiment in the rear, charged with it upon the enemy who was crowding back the Confederate front, and drove him back some distance. The Federals, reaching a wood, dismounted and opened a heavy fire, in which Rosser fell severely wounded, and Pelham was killed while leading his regiment in another charge. Rosser was disabled until the Pennsylvania campaign, when he rode with Stuart around Hooker and Meade, and participated in the three days' fight at Gettysburg. After this battle he was promoted to brigadier-general, and assigned to the old brigade of Turner Ashby, "the Laurel brigade." With this gallant command he was conspicuous in the campaigns of 1864. On May 5th, the opening day in the Wilderness, "a large force of cavalry and artillery on our right flank was driven back by Rosser's brigade," and on June 2d he "fell upon the rear of the enemy's cavalry" near Hanover Court House, and "charged down the road toward Ashland, bearing everything before him," quoting the telegraphic reports of Gen. R. E. Lee. At Trevilian's station he drove Custer back against Fitz Lee and captured many prisoners, but was painfully wounded while leading a charge at the head of his brigade. He also took part in the famous "cattle raid," while Grant was about Petersburg. He won all the distinction possible in the desperate struggle against Sheridan's overwhelming forces in the Shenandoah valley, and in command of Fitzhugh Lee's division saved Early's army at the battle of Cedar Creek, holding the line and checking the enemy's pursuit until 9:30 p. m., then taking position in the works at Fisher's hill, and safely conducting Early's retreat to New Market next day. He was promoted major-general in November, 1864. He conducted the successful expedition against New Creek, W. Va., taking many prisoners and great quanti-

ties of stores, and in January, 1865, with 300 men, crossed the mountains in deep snow and bitter cold, and surprised and captured two infantry regiments in their works at Beverly, W. Va. Returning to the vicinity of Petersburg in the spring of 1865, he commanded a division of cavalry during the remainder of the struggle, fighting with honor at Five Forks, and at High Bridge, April 6th, defeating and capturing the entire command of General Read, who fell in combat with General Dearing. On April 7th, Rosser captured General Gregg, and rescued a wagon train near Farmville, and in the last hour of battle at Appomattox, a little after daylight April 9, 1865, charged the Federal cavalry and escaped from the fatal field with his command. Under directions from the secretary of war, he began a reorganization of the scattered troops of the army of Northern Virginia, but was made a prisoner about the time of Johnston's surrender. After the return of peace he was for a time superintendent of the National express company under General Johnston, was assistant engineer in the construction of the Pittsburg & Connellsville railroad, and in the spring of 1870 became connected with the construction of the Northern Pacific railroad. Beginning in an humble capacity he became chief engineer of the eastern division in 1871, and built the main part of the road. Later he was chief engineer of the Canadian Pacific, and located and built the road west of Winnipeg. Since 1886 he has resided near Charlottesville, Va.

Brigadier-General Daniel Ruggles, a native of Massachusetts who tendered his services to Virginia at the beginning of the great war, was born January 31, 1810, and was graduated at the United States military academy in the class of 1833. His military service was rendered mainly with the Fifth infantry in the Northwest until the Florida war of 1839-40, in which he participated with the rank of first lieutenant. He was then stationed in Wisconsin and Michigan until 1845, when he took part in the military occupation of Texas. Going into the Mexican war next year, he took part in the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma, and won promotion to captain. In 1847 he served at Vera Cruz, San Antonio and Molino del Rey, and was promoted brevet major for gallantry at Contreras and Churubusco, and brevet lieu-

tenant-colonel for his services at Chapultepec. From the close of that war until 1858 he was on duty mainly in Texas. After taking part in the Utah expedition, he was on sick leave of absence until the outbreak of the Confederate war, when he resigned from the United States army. He was commissioned brigadier-general of Virginia volunteers in April, and assigned to the command of the State forces along the line of the Potomac from Mount Vernon south, and in May was put in command of troops from the counties surrounding Fredericksburg, where he was stationed. His rank then became that of colonel in the provisional army. The troops under his command repulsed the attacks of Federal vessels at Aquia creek and Mathias point in June, 1861. In August following he was commissioned brigadier-general, provisional army, Confederate States, and ordered to Pensacola, Fla., and two months later to New Orleans, where he organized a brigade which was sent to Corinth early in 1862, General Bragg desiring the benefit of the experience and soldierly ability of Ruggles in that quarter. He reported the landing of Grant's army at Shiloh, March 16th, and in the great battle which followed, in April, he commanded the first division of Bragg's corps, consisting of the brigades of Anderson, Gibson and Pond, and was conspicuous through the two days' fight for the skill and gallantry with which he handled his troops. After he had driven the enemy from his front, a rally was made, which would have resulted disastrously to the Confederates if Ruggles had not made a rapid and masterly concentration of artillery at a point enfilading the right flank of Prentiss' division. The artillery, thus admirably placed, worked havoc in Prentiss' command, and drove back the reinforcements coming to his assistance, so that within an hour the entire command surrendered to the infantry attack, in which Ruggles' men had an important part. During the next day his troops fought valiantly, and he shared their danger, on one occasion leading the charge of the Seventeenth Louisiana, with its regimental flag in his hand. He fought the successful battle of Farmington, May 9th, and continued in division command during the siege of Corinth, but on June 26th was assigned to the district comprising the gulf counties of Mississippi and Louisiana east of the river. He commanded the left wing of Breckinridge's army in the successful battle of

Baton Rouge; in August was put in command at Port Hudson, and later was given command of the First military district of Mississippi, with headquarters at Jackson. In April, 1864, he made his headquarters at Columbus, where he had a force of about 3,000 men, and was in the field opposing various Federal expeditions during the Vicksburg campaign. Subsequently he remained for some time unassigned, though anxious for duty in spite of his advanced age, but finally accepted the post of commissary-general of prisoners of war. After the close of hostilities he resided at Fredericksburg, Va., except four years when in charge of a large estate in Texas. He was a member of the board of visitors of the United States military academy in 1884. His death occurred at Fredericksburg in 1897.

Brigadier-General James E. Slaughter, a native of Virginia, entered the military service of the United States in April, 1847, as second lieutenant of Voltigeurs. He was transferred to the First artillery in June, 1848, and was an officer of that command until the formation of the Confederate States, with promotion in 1852 to the rank of first lieutenant. He received a commission as first lieutenant, corps of artillery, Confederate States army, and became inspector-general on the staff of General Beauregard after the transfer of the latter to the department of Alabama and West Florida. After the bombardment at Pensacola, in which Lieutenant Slaughter rendered valuable service under fire, General Beauregard reported that to him, probably more than to any one else in the command, he was indebted for patient labor and unceasing vigil given to the organization and instruction of the troops. Beauregard earnestly recommended his promotion to brigadier-general, which was bestowed in the spring of 1862. In May he was appointed chief of the inspector-general's department of the army of the Mississippi, under General Bragg. In this duty he continued through the Kentucky campaign, and was then assigned to the charge of the troops of Mobile, that port being threatened by Federal invasion. Thence he was transferred in April, 1863, to Galveston, Tex., as chief of artillery for General Magruder. Later in the year he was given charge of the eastern sub-district of Texas, and command of all the troops of the Second

division. During the remainder of the war period he played an important part in Confederate affairs in Texas, for some time performing the duties of chief of staff.

Brigadier-General William E. Starke went to the assistance of Gen. R. S. Garnett at Laurel hill, early in July, 1861, as colonel, and served as his aide-de-camp in the disastrous retreat on the Cheat river. His coolness and judgment in the midst of the confusion that followed the death of General Garnett were highly commended by Colonel Taliaferro, who succeeded to command. Subsequently he was put in command of the Sixtieth Virginia regiment, and sent to Lewisburg, to the support of General Floyd, whence, in December, he was ordered to accompany General Donelson's brigade to Bowling Green, Ky. It appears, however, that he was instead, attached to General Wise's command, stationed at Goldsboro, N. C. During the Seven Days' campaign in Virginia he commanded his regiment in Field's brigade, and was commended for gallantry, and his promotion to brigadier-general followed early in August, 1862. Reporting for duty to General Jackson, he was assigned to command of the Second Louisiana brigade and marched with it to Manassas. In that campaign he took command of the Stonewall division, after General Taliaferro was wounded on the 28th. He was with Jackson at the capture of Harper's Ferry, and at Sharpsburg was called on again to take command of the division, after the fall of J. R. Jones. Soon afterward he himself fell mortally wounded, pierced by three minie balls, and survived but an hour. Gen. Bradley T. Johnson, in reporting the battle of Second Manassas, said: "I cannot forbear doing but scant justice to a gallant soldier now no more. It was my fortune during the two days of battle, during which he commanded the division, to be thrown constantly in contact with Brigadier-General Starke. The buoyant dash with which he led his brigade into the most withering fire on Friday, though then in command of the division; the force he showed in the handling of this command; the coolness and judgment which distinguished him in action, made him to me a marked man, and I regretted his early death as a great loss to the army and the cause." His name deserves lasting remembrance in association with the Stonewall division.

Brigadier-General Walter Husted Stevens, whose Confederate service was rendered in Virginia, was born at Penn Yan, N. Y., August 24, 1827. He was appointed from New York to the United States military academy, where he was graduated fourth in the class of 1848, and promoted in the army to brevet second lieutenant, corps of engineers. After a short service at Newport harbor, R. I., he was assigned to the repair of fortifications, defending the approaches to New Orleans until 1853, when he was put in charge of the survey of the rivers and harbors of Texas. From 1853 to 1857 he served as lighthouse inspector on the coast of Texas, with the rank of second lieutenant until 1855, when he was promoted first lieutenant. He was superintending engineer of the construction and repair of fortifications below New Orleans, 1854-60, superintended the construction of the custom house and the fortifications at Galveston, and was a member of the special board of engineers for Gulf defenses. Entering the service of the Confederate States in May, 1861, he accompanied General Beauregard to Virginia, as a member of his staff, and with the rank of captain, corps of engineers. He served with the advance forces at Fairfax Court House for some time before the battle of Manassas, and laid out the works there in an admirable manner, General Beauregard reporting that he had "shown himself to be an officer of energy and ability." General Bonham commended him for his indefatigable labors, and constant attention to execution of orders, in camp and field, and Gen. J. E. Johnston especially mentioned his valuable services during the battle of July 21st. He was promoted major, and appointed chief engineer of the army of Northern Virginia, under Johnston, and was commended for his skillful and devoted services both in his own profession and as a member of the general staff at Seven Pines. After General Lee came into command of the army, he was succeeded by Colonel Gilmer, and with promotion to colonel was given charge of the defensive works around Richmond. In command of the troops and defenses of Richmond in 1863-64, he participated in the operations against Kilpatrick's and Dahlgren's raid, and rendered valuable assistance to General Beauregard when the city was threatened by Butler. In August, 1864, he was

promoted brigadier-general and assigned to his former position of chief engineer of the army of Northern Virginia. After the close of the war he went to Mexico and became superintendent and constructing engineer of the railroad from Vera Cruz to the capital, the property of which he skillfully preserved from damage during the war of that period. He died at Vera Cruz, November 12, 1867.

Major-General Carter L. Stevenson, a Virginian distinguished in the western armies throughout the war, was a graduate of the National military academy, of the class of 1838. He went into the United States army with the rank of second lieutenant, and was assigned to the Fifth infantry. He served on frontier duty in Wisconsin, and was promoted first lieutenant September 22, 1840. His principal service after this was rendered in the Florida war and in the military occupation of Texas, until the Mexican war. He participated with distinction in the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma as well as other events of this struggle, and in June, 1847, was promoted captain in the Fifth infantry. He served for a time as aide-de-camp to Brigadier-General Brady; was in garrison at East Pascagoula, Miss.; on frontier duty at Fort Gibson, I. T., and Fort Belknap, Tex.; and while engaged in Pacific railroad exploration, skirmished with the Apache Indians. He took part in the Seminole war of 1856-57, fighting at Big Cypress swamp and near Bowleytown, and marched in the famous Utah expedition; subsequently continuing on frontier duty until 1861, when, obeying the call of his State, he tendered his services for her defense. He received the commission of lieutenant-colonel, corps of infantry, C. S. A., and with the rank of colonel took command of the Fifty-third Virginia infantry. When Beauregard was transferred to the west, he recommended the promotion of Stevenson, among others, to brigade and division command of the western troops, and Stevenson was accordingly made brigadier-general in February, 1862. On March 15th, he was ordered to report to General Huger for assignment on the Weldon railroad, but soon after was transferred to the department of East Tennessee, and given command of a division of troops. After the Federal General Morgan seized Cumberland Gap, he was in command of the Con-

federate force which threatened that position and compelled Morgan's withdrawal. After July 17th he pursued the Federal forces into Kentucky, and there made a junction with Kirby Smith, with whom he served during the return to Murfreesboro. In October he was promoted major-general. In December, 1862, he was sent by Bragg from Murfreesboro with 10,000 men to reinforce Pemberton at Vicksburg, already threatened by the Federal army. He reached the field of battle at Chickasaw bluffs just after the repulse of Sherman, and by reason of his rank was assigned to the command of the forces in front of the enemy. He was subsequently in command of a division under Pemberton, and during the unfortunately planned operations against Grant, bore the brunt of the battle at Champion's hill, and after the defeat at Big Black bridge was left in charge of the retreating columns, while Pemberton hastened to Vicksburg. During the long siege he took a conspicuous part as commander of the right of the Confederate lines. After the surrender of Vicksburg he was for a time under parole, but he returned to the army before Chattanooga and was given a division of Hardee's corps, with command on the right, including Lookout mountain, from which he withdrew just before the battle of Missionary Ridge to reinforce the main line on the ridge. He took part in this battle, and was subsequently identified with the army of Tennessee as a division commander until the close of the war. During the Atlanta campaign he had a division of Hood's corps, and led his troops in brilliant action at Resaca, Kenesaw mountain and elsewhere. After the promotion of Hood he held temporary command of the corps. During the Tennessee campaign he commanded a division of the corps of S. D. Lee, which, holding the center of the line before Nashville, earned distinction by stubborn fighting despite the general disaster, and after the wounding of Lee he had the immediate command of the division covering the retreat, a trust which was ably performed. With his division of the army of Tennessee, reduced to 2,600 men, he participated in the operations in the Carolinas against Sherman, and surrendered with Johnston in April, 1865. After the war he was occupied as a civil and mining engineer until his death in Caroline county, Va., August 15, 1888.

Major-General James Ewell Brown Stuart, chief of cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Patrick county, Va., February 6, 1833. His ancestry in America began with Archibald Stuart, who sought refuge from religious persecution in western Pennsylvania in 1726, and subsequently removed with his family to Augusta county, Va., about 1738. The next generation was distinguished by the services of Maj. Alexander Stuart, who fell dangerously wounded while commanding his regiment at Guilford Court House. John Alexander, son of the latter, spent part of his life in the West, serving as Federal judge in Illinois and Missouri, and as speaker of the house in the latter State. His son, Archibald Stuart, lawyer, soldier of 1812, representative in Virginia legislatures and conventions, married a descendant of the distinguished Letcher family, and their son became the brilliant Virginia cavalry leader. General Stuart pursued his youthful studies at Emory and Henry college, and then entering the National military academy, was graduated in 1854, and was commissioned second lieutenant in October of that year. He served in Texas against the Apaches with the mounted riflemen until transferred to the new First cavalry in May, 1855, with which he served at Fort Leavenworth. November 14, 1855, he was married at Fort Riley to the daughter of Col. Philip St. George Cooke, and in the following month he was promoted first lieutenant. He remained on the frontier and in Kansas, and was wounded at the Indian battle of Solomon's River in 1857. At Washington, in 1859, he carried secret instructions to Col. R. E. Lee, and accompanied that officer as aide, against the outbreak at Harper's Ferry, where he read the summons to surrender to the leader, theretofore known as "Smith," but whom he recognized at once as "Ossawatomie" Brown of Kansas. Lieutenant Stuart received a commission as captain from Washington in April, 1861, but he had decided to go with Virginia, and tendered her his services as soon as his resignation was accepted, May 7th. He was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of Virginia infantry, May 10, 1861, with orders to report to Jackson at Harper's Ferry, and was promoted colonel July 16th. With about 350 cavalymen he at once assumed the duties which distinguished his service throughout the war. He became the eye of the army under Jackson and

Johnston, so effectually that Johnston afterward wrote him from the West: "How can I eat, sleep or rest in peace without you upon the outpost." He screened Johnston's movement to Manassas, and in the fighting of July 21st made an effective charge, of which Early wrote: "Stuart did as much toward saving the battle of First Manassas as any subordinate who participated in it." He pursued the Federals twelve miles and subsequently held the heights in sight of Washington, with headquarters on Munson's hill. September 24, 1861, he was promoted brigadier-general in the Confederate army. He encountered the enemy before Munson's hill and at Dranesville, and being transferred to the Peninsula early in 1862, covered the retreat from Yorktown, opening the fighting at Williamsburg; and after the Federals had approached Richmond he won the admiring attention of both nations by his brilliant ride around McClellan's army. On July 25, 1862, he was promoted major-general. There followed his raid to the rear of Pope's army, capturing a part of the staff of the Federal general and his headquarters at Catlett's station; the raid in conjunction with General Trimble, in which the Federal depot at Manassas Junction was destroyed. Subsequently he was in command before Washington, screening the movement into Maryland, his gallant troopers being engaged in frequent skirmishes and fighting most gallantly in the battles at the South Mountain passes. At Sharpsburg he covered the left flank, and with his famous horse artillery repulsed the advance of Sumner's corps. In October occurred his daring raid to Chambersburg, Pa., returning between McClellan's army and Washington, evading numerous Federal expeditions against him, and losing but one man wounded. His success demoralized the Federal cavalry, and did much to render halting and impotent the subsequent movements against Lee, in opposition to which his command was almost constantly engaged. About midnight of May 2d, after Jackson and Hill had fallen, Stuart took command of the First corps of the army, at Chancellorsville, and on the 3d, with splendid personal courage and brilliant generalship, continued to drive the Federals by an audacious attack of 20,000 against 80,000, until he had gained Chancellor's house and a safe position. He remained in command of the corps until Hooker had retreated across the river.

After several brilliant encounters with the enemy's cavalry during the subsequent maneuvers, he set out again between the Federal army and Washington, with orders to meet Early at York, Pa. After eight days and nights of steady marching, and the last three in almost constant fighting, he reached Gettysburg with a large train of Federal supplies, and on the third day of the battle made a fierce attack upon the enemy's right. His cavalry saved the Confederate trains at Williamsport, on the retreat. In the spring of 1864 he conducted the advance of A. P. Hill's corps against Grant on May 5th, and giving Lee notice of the movement to Spottsylvania, hastened to throw his cavalry before the enemy's advance. Then being called southward by Sheridan's raid, he interposed his cavalry between the Federals and the Confederate capital at Yellow Tavern, where, on May 11th, he received a wound from which he died at Richmond on the following day. The death of Stuart produced a gloom in the South, second only to that which followed the loss of Jackson. His characteristics were such as to make him a popular hero. Personally he was the embodiment of reckless courage, splendid manhood, and unconquerable gayety. He could wear, without exciting a suspicion of unfitness, all the warlike adornments of an old-time cavalier. His black plume, and hat caught up with a golden star, seemed the proper frame for a knightly face. A laugh was always at his lips, and a song behind it. He would lead a march with his banjo-player thrumming at his side. As he rode down the lines at Chancellorsville, the commander of an army, and the successor of Stonewall Jackson, whose fall had torn the hearts of his soldiers, he sang in a rollicking way: "Old Joe Hooker, come out of the Wilderness." As a soldier he was a born leader. He demonstrated his ability to direct an army after the wounding of Jackson, and Jackson, who knew before the trial, sent word to him: "Tell General Stuart to act on his own judgment and do what he thinks best. I have implicit confidence in him." On other fields he had shown the brilliancy of a Napoleon in the management of artillery. Thus in all arms of the service he had won the highest honors. In emergency he was calm, quiet, and perfect master of all his resources. A boy in camp, and a lover of fun, he was a daring sabreur in the fight, and always fully

awake to the demands of duty. He had the instinctive knowledge of the situation that belongs to the soldierly genius, and the constant readiness to act on the instant that wins battles against inertia and slothfulness. But he was never known fully while he lived. He was careless of how lightheartedness and gayety may be misjudged, and it was left to his friends after his death to tell that he indulged in none of the vices supposed to be habitual with soldiers, was never profane, and even abstained from card-playing. He was a faithful husband and father, and altogether one of the purest of men, as well as the bravest. One of these true friends, John Esten Cooke, in describing his last moments, has written: "As his life had been one of earnest devotion to the cause in which he believed, so his last hours were tranquil, his confidence in the mercy of heaven unshaken. When he was asked how he felt, he said, 'Easy, but willing to die, if God and my country think I have done my duty.' His last words were: 'I am going fast now; I am resigned. God's will be done.' As he uttered these words he expired."

Major-General William Booth Taliaferro, a representative of an old and famous Virginia family, was born at Belleville, Gloucester county, Va., December 28, 1822. He was educated at Harvard college and William and Mary, being graduated at the latter institution in 1841. His activity was directed to a military channel by the Mexican war, and on April 9, 1847, he became captain of a company of the Eleventh United States infantry. He was promoted major August 12th, and held this rank during the following year, his command being disbanded August, 1848. He then returned to the pursuits of civil life, and was one of the Democratic presidential electors in 1856, but continued to be prominent in military affairs and commanded the State forces at the time of John Brown's raid. As major-general of Virginia militia, he took command at Norfolk on April 18, 1861, and later with the rank of colonel was assigned to the post and troops at Gloucester point, opposite Yorktown. Subsequently he marched with the Twenty-third Virginia regiment to reinforce General Garnett in West Virginia. During the retreat from Laurel hill, Colonel Taliaferro was in command of the rear guard which gallantly contested the

enemy's pursuit at Carrick's ford, just before Garnett was killed. At the battle on Greenbrier river, October 3d, he commanded a brigade, consisting of his own regiment, the Twenty-fifth and Forty-fourth Virginia regiments, and contributed largely to the victory by his cool and gallant conduct. On March 4, 1862, he was promoted brigadier-general. He joined Jackson in the Valley early in December, and with a brigade composed of the Tenth, Twenty-third and Thirty-seventh Virginia, took a prominent part in the defeat of the Federals at McDowell, where he was in immediate command on the field after Edward Johnson was wounded, and participated in the victories at Cross Keys and Port Republic. Continuing in command of Jackson's Third brigade, he fought at Cedar mountain, August 9th, and after the death of General Winder was given charge of Jackson's division. In this command he continued during the subsequent operations about Manassas, participated in the maneuvers around Pope's army, and on August 28th, when Jackson determined to strike the enemy as he moved along the Warrenton pike, he immediately ordered Taliaferro to take his division and attack. In the fierce fight which followed, sustained on the Confederate side by Taliaferro and Ewell, both those commanders were seriously wounded. He was able to return to the field in time to participate in the battle of Fredericksburg, where he rendered efficient service in repelling the Federal force which secured temporary lodgment in the Confederate lines. His subsequent military career was in the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, to which he was assigned in March, 1863, as commander of the district of Savannah. During the famous assault on Battery Wagner, July, 1863, he had charge of the defenses and troops on Morris island, and next month he took command of a division on James island. February 20, 1864, he was given temporary command of all troops in the district of East Florida, which embraced the forces that day engaged at Olustee. Returning March 5th to James island, in May he was assigned to the Seventh district of South Carolina, and the entire State was put under his military charge in December of that year. When Sherman's army reached Savannah, he exercised command to the north of that city, with the forces of Jenkins, Harrison and Chestnut, at Coosawat-

chie and Pocotaligo, guarding the route of escape for Hardee. In the latter part of December he was given command of a division made up of Elliott's, Rhett's and Anderson's brigades, with which he participated in the subsequent movements, being promoted on January 1, 1865, to the rank of major-general. After the surrender of Johnston's army, he returned to Gloucester, Va., where he completed his long career of honor and usefulness. He served ten years in the State legislature, and rendered good service in the cause of education as a member of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute, William and Mary college and other State institutions. His death occurred at his home in Gloucester county, February 27, 1898.

Brigadier-General James B. Terrill, a brave Virginia soldier, never wore the title which is here given him, but won it by his bravery and devotion, and fell in battle upon the day his promotion was confirmed by the Congress of the Confederate States. He was born at Warm Springs, Bath county, February 20, 1838, and was educated at the Virginia military institute. In 1858 he began the study of law with Judge Brockenbrough at Lexington, and two years later entered upon the practice of his profession at his native town. He was among the first to enter the military service in 1861, and in May was elected major of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry regiment, of which A. P. Hill was colonel. He served with his regiment under Jackson in the lower Shenandoah valley and at First Manassas, and at Lewinsville commanded the infantry in the gallant fight under Col. J. E. B. Stuart. Promoted lieutenant-colonel he served with credit in the Shenandoah Valley campaign of 1862, winning honorable mention at Cross Keys and Port Republic. He was commended in general orders for gallantry at Cedar Mountain and Second Manassas. At Fredericksburg he commanded his regiment, and took an active part in driving back the column of Federals which succeeded in penetrating the first line on the right. He continued in command of his regiment, sharing the operations of Early's division, until his death, contributing in no slight degree to the remarkable efficiency of his command, of which it was said that "the Thirteenth was never required to take a position that they did not

take it, nor to hold one that they did not hold it." After participating in the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania he was killed in an encounter with Warren's corps, near Bethesda church, May 30, 1864, and was buried by the enemy.

Brigadier-General William Terry, whose worthy record is identified with that of the Stonewall brigade, which he commanded in 1864 and 1865, was born in Amherst county, Va., August 14, 1824. He was educated at the university of Virginia and graduated in 1848. The next three years he devoted to teaching and the study of law. After his admission to the bar in 1851, he made his home at Wytheville, and was engaged in the practice during the succeeding decade, also for a time editing the Wytheville Telegraph. He was lieutenant of the Wythe Grays at the time of the John Brown affair at Harper's Ferry, to which point he went with his company in 1859. In April, 1861, he was again at Harper's Ferry, and was assigned to the Fourth Virginia regiment, Jackson's brigade, as first lieutenant of his company. He participated in the brilliant service of his regiment at the first battle of Manassas, and in the spring of 1862 was promoted major, in which rank he served with credit on the fields of Gaines' Mill and Malvern Hill. He was with Jackson's corps in the famous campaign against Pope, was wounded in the battle of Second Manassas, July 28th, and was mentioned for gallantry in the report of General Taliaferro. In the same rank he commanded the Fourth regiment in the battle of Fredericksburg, after the wounding of Colonel Gardner; also at Chancellorsville, where his command lost 140 men out of a total of 355; and at Gettysburg and Payne's Farm. Promotion rapidly followed, to colonel of the Fourth regiment to date from September, 1863, and to brigadier-general after the Wilderness and Spottsylvania campaign, in which he participated with credit. On May 21st he was assigned to the command of a brigade formed from the survivors of the Stonewall brigade and the brigades of J. M. Jones and G. H. Steuart, who had escaped from the disaster of May 12th at the "bloody angle." In this capacity he took part in the fighting on the Cold Harbor line, and the defense of Petersburg, and commanded his brigade during Early's campaign in the Shenandoah valley, partici-

pating in the defeat of the Federals at Shepherdstown August 25th, and fighting gallantly at Winchester, where he was one of the seven distinguished Confederate generals who fell killed or wounded. He returned with his brigade to the Petersburg lines, and on March 25, 1865, was again wounded while leading his command in the sortie of Gordon's corps against Fort Stedman. During the retreat of the army to Appomattox, he was at home disabled by wounds, but when the news of the surrender reached him, he mounted his horse, with indomitable courage, and started out to join the army in North Carolina. He subsequently resumed his law practice at Wytheville, and in 1868 was nominated for Congress, but could not make the race on account of political disabilities. Upon the removal of these he was elected to the Forty-second and Forty-fourth Congresses. On September 5, 1888, he was drowned while attempting to ford a creek near his home. By his marriage to Emma, daughter of Benjamin Wigginton, of Bedford county, in 1852, there are four sons and three daughters, who survive.

Brigadier-General William Richard Terry was born at Liberty, Bedford county, Va., March 12, 1817. After his graduation by the Virginia military institute in 1850, he devoted himself to agricultural and commercial pursuits until the secession of Virginia, when he promptly entered the military service as captain of a company of cavalry organized in Bedford county. He led his men to Manassas, and after serving at Fairfax Court House, participated in the cavalry charge which demoralized the broken right wing of the Federal army on the night of April 21st, continuing until midnight in pursuit of the enemy. His conduct at the battle of First Manassas won the attention of his commanders, and in September following, at the request of General Early, he was promoted colonel and assigned to the command of the Twenty-fourth Virginia infantry, from which Early had been promoted to brigadier-general. In May, 1862, at the battle of Williamsburg, the Twenty-fourth Virginia and Fifth North Carolina regiments made a brilliant and heroic charge upon the enemy's position, and Terry, leading his regiment, fell severely wounded, but earned a reputation as an inspiring and irresistible leader in assault



Brig.-Gen. A. G. JENKINS.
 Maj.-Gen. JOHN PEGRAM.
 Brig.-Gen. J. A. TERRILL.
 Brig.-Gen. W. N. PENDLETON.

Maj.-Gen. J. B. MAORUDER.
 Maj.-Gen. D. H. MAURY.
 Maj.-Gen. W. B. TALLIAFERRO.
 Brig.-Gen. B. H. ROBERTSON.

Brig.-Gen. SAMUEL GARLAND.
 Brig.-Gen. WM. TERRY.
 Maj.-Gen. THOS. L. ROSSER.
 Brig.-Gen. J. E. SLAUGHTER.

that he fully maintained throughout the war. Longstreet and D. H. Hill both praised the men and their gallant leaders, the latter expressing the opinion that the caution exhibited by the Federals in their subsequent movements "was due to the terror inspired by the heroism of those noble regiments. History has no example of a more daring charge." Hancock, who bore the brunt of the attack, declared that the two regiments deserved to have the name "Immortal" inscribed on their banners. Under Terry's leadership the regiment fought with the same heroism at Second Manassas, and after the wounding of Colonel Corse, then commanding Kemper's brigade, Colonel Terry succeeded him in temporary command. He was with his regiment in all its battles, and was seven times badly wounded. One of the most desperate of his wounds was received at Gettysburg, in the memorable assault of Pickett's division. He commanded Kemper's brigade from the fall of 1863 until nearly the close of the war, with promotion to brigadier-general in May, 1864. Assigned to the department of North Carolina and Southern Virginia with Pickett, he took part in the expedition against New Bern, and in May, 1864, bore a worthy part in the gallant stand made against Butler at Drewry's bluff. Throughout the long defense of Richmond and Petersburg he was one of the trusted brigadiers of Pickett's division, and finally, on March 31, 1865, just before the abandonment of the Confederate capital, he fell severely wounded near Dinwiddie Court House, leading his men in the successful fight of Pickett's division, which preceded the disaster at Five Forks. After the close of the war he served eight years in the Virginia senate, held the office of superintendent of the State penitentiary two terms, and from April, 1886, to 1893, was superintendent of the Soldiers' Home at Richmond. This office he was forced to surrender by failing health, which continued until his death, March 28, 1897, at his home in Chesterfield county. He was married in young manhood to Miss Pemberton, of Powhatan, who, with two sons and three daughters, survived him.

Brigadier-General Henry Harrison Walker, a native of Virginia, was appointed from that State to the United States military academy in 1849, and was graduated in 1853 with the brevet of second lieutenant of infantry.

His service with the United States army was rendered first in barracks at Newport, Ky., and then until 1855 in New Mexico. He became second lieutenant, Sixth infantry, in 1855, and first lieutenant in 1857, and in the latter year was appointed aide-de-camp to Governor Walker of Kansas. After assisting in quelling the disturbances in that State, he served upon the staff of General Clarke, at San Francisco, three years. The secession of Virginia called him from frontier duty at Fort Churchill, Nev., to offer his services to his native State. He received at first a commission as captain of infantry in the regular army of the Confederate States. Subsequently he was promoted lieutenant-colonel of the Fortieth Virginia infantry regiment, Field's brigade. At Gaines' Mill he was twice wounded, and was mentioned by General Field as "a gallant and meritorious officer," and by Gen. A. P. Hill as one of those deserving especial mention for conspicuous gallantry. In July, 1863, after having been in charge of a convalescent camp, he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to the command of his old brigade, which had meanwhile been under the leadership for some time of Gen. Henry Heth and Colonel Brockenbrough. He served creditably as a brigade commander in the battles of Bristoe Station and Mine Run, in the latter affair his brigade being the first infantry to meet the enemy and check his advance. In December he was ordered to the Shenandoah valley to reinforce Early, and was recalled from that region in March, 1864, to the main army. He did good and brave service through the bloody battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, until severely wounded on May 10, 1864. On November 10th he was assigned to duty as a member of the general court-martial of the department of Richmond, and his brigade, much reduced, was consolidated with Archer's.

Brigadier-General James A. Walker, now living in Wytheville, Va., is the son of Alexander Walker and Hannah Hinton, whose ancestors were among the early Scotch-Irish settlers of the valley of Virginia. He was born in Augusta county on the 27th of August, 1832. After receiving the best elementary education that the schools of the neighborhood afforded, he entered the fourth class at the Virginia military institute in 1848.

Here he remained until the spring of 1852, and was in the graduating class of that year, when he took offense at some remark made to him by Stonewall Jackson (then Professor Jackson), in the lecture room, and a passage of sharp words took place between the two. Cadet Walker, feeling that he had been publicly insulted and wronged by Professor Jackson, sent him a challenge to fight a duel. It is related of Jackson by one with whom he consulted on the occasion, that, notwithstanding he was a grave professor and the challenger a mere boy, he for a considerable time, debated in his mind the propriety of accepting the challenge, expressing a serious wish that it was possible to do so. Walker's rebellion in the class-room was a grave offense, at an institution where strict military discipline is maintained; but the sending of a challenge to one of the principal officers and professors was a crime not to be overlooked or forgiven, and though Walker stood high in his class, and was popular with all who knew his honest heart and chivalric qualities, he was court-martialed and dismissed from the institution. In after years, when Jackson and Walker met, as officers in the field, and the former saw his wayward pupil in the front of every fight, always prompt, never shirking the most arduous duties, nor flinching in the most trying and dangerous situations, he freely blotted from his remembrance all thought of the occurrence between them at the institute, and pushed him for promotion whenever there was an opportunity to do so. They became friends and no officer in the army stood higher in the esteem of Jackson than Walker. After the war General Walker's diploma was sent to him by order of the board of visitors, and he is enrolled as a graduate of the Virginia military institute. After leaving the institute, Walker accepted a position in the engineer corps, then engaged in locating the line of the Covington & Ohio (now Chesapeake & Ohio) railroad, from the Big Sandy river to Charlestown, and in this rough and unexciting life he spent eighteen months. He then resigned and returned to his home in Augusta county. Shortly afterward he began to read law in the office of Col. John B. Baldwin, at Staunton. During the session of 1854-55 he took a law course at the university of Virginia, and immediately afterward began to practice his profession at Newbern, Pulaski county, Va. In 1860 he

was elected commonwealth's attorney of that county and filled that position until the spring of 1863. Immediately after the John Brown raid, Walker organized a local militia company, the Pulaski Guards, and being elected their captain, drilled them so faithfully that when Governor Letcher called for troops from Virginia, his was one of the best companies mustered into the service. In April, 1861, Captain Walker and his company were ordered to report for duty at Harper's Ferry, and there joined Stonewall Jackson's command. Captain Walker remained with the Fourth regiment until after the skirmish at Falling Waters, and for conspicuous gallantry and exhibition of high soldierly qualities, was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and assigned to duty in the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, of which A. P. Hill was colonel. Hill was made brigadier in March, 1862, and soon afterward Walker was made full colonel. When General Jackson left Manassas for Yorktown, Colonel Walker's regiment formed part of General Ewell's division. Later he joined Jackson's command, and participated in the battles of the famous Valley campaign. Colonel Walker commanded a brigade nearly all the year of 1862. At Sharpsburg he commanded Trimble's brigade, and at Fredericksburg, Early's. In the spring of 1863 he was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general, and by the request of Stonewall Jackson was ordered to take command of the old Stonewall brigade. At the head of this famous body of soldiers he fought at Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, Fredericksburg, Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, and at the latter place, the 12th of May, 1864, received a musket ball in the elbow of the left arm, which caused an excessively painful wound, which compelled resection of the bones and his temporary retirement from service. In July, 1864, with his arm still in a sling and his health feeble, he was again called into service and assigned to the defenses of the Richmond & Danville and "Southside" railroads, these roads covering Lee's main line of communication and supplies. He was successful in holding back the raiding cavalry, and in keeping the railroad communications open with the south and west, and for this service received the warm commendations of his superior officers. In February, 1865, General Walker asked leave to return to the front once more, and solicited the favor of taking charge of the

brigade, which, by the death of the gallant Pegram, was left without a brigadier, and in which was his old regiment, the Thirteenth Virginia, a body of troops than whom, he has often been heard to say, no braver ever fought in all the famous armies of the world. His request was granted. Being the senior brigadier, during Early's absence in the valley of Virginia, with an independent command, he led two brigades of the division in a successful attack on Hare's hill. Still at the head of this division General Walker retreated, with General Lee, fighting by the way at Sailor's creek, High Bridge and Farmville, to Appomattox, where he surrendered himself and about 1,500 officers and men to Grant. The war over, General Walker returned to his home in Pulaski county, and immediately went to work putting out a crop of corn, with the two mules he had brought home from the army with him. As soon as possible he began to practice law, and gave his entire time to his profession until the summer of 1868. In that year, without any solicitations on his part, he was nominated as the conservative candidate for lieutenant-governor, and had canvassed several counties before the election was postponed by order of the military authorities, and Congress commenced reconstructing the State. When later it was found expedient to nominate a Northern Democrat and Gilbert C. Walker's name was mentioned, General Walker withdrew his name and canvassed the State for Walker against Wells. In 1871 he was elected to the house of delegates. In 1876 he was made lieutenant-governor on the ticket with Governor Holliday. During the debt controversy in Virginia, General Walker sided actively with the debt-paying element. After his term as lieutenant-governor expired, he took, for several years, little part in State politics, being kept busy by the demands of a large law practice. He was also much interested and very active in the development of the mineral resources of Virginia. While studying the interests of his section of the State, he became an enthusiastic "Protectionist" in politics, and, at that time, indeed, the Democratic party in southwestern Virginia was pronounced in its advocacy of protection principles. When, a year or two later, Mr. Cleveland avowed his free trade policy and became the Democratic leader and their candidate for President, General Walker severed his connec-

tion with that party, and has since been a Republican in principle and affiliation. He was elected to Congress from the Ninth district of Virginia by the Republicans in 1894, and was re-elected in 1896. In July, 1898, he was a third time nominated. In the official records of the civil war, published by the government, General Walker's name, coupled with honorable mention for gallant conduct or faithful services, occurs a number of times in the reports of Confederate officers. One interesting fact connected with him is this, that he is the only officer who ever commanded the Stonewall brigade who survived the war. All of the others, Generals Jackson, Winder, Garnett and Paxton, were killed in battle. Colonels Allen, Botts and Baylor, while temporarily in command of the Stonewall brigade, also fell at the head of their troops. As the sole surviving commander of this famous brigade, General Walker has been an object of much interest in the North and West, and in the last ten years has been a number of times invited to make addresses on commanders of the civil war and kindred subjects, in the cities of those sections. He has in this way been one of those ex-Confederate officers who have had much to do with the present era of good feeling between the sections. Like Wheeler and Lee and others, he has long been broad-minded enough to see that loyalty to the "lost cause" is entirely consistent with loyalty to the government under which he lives and from which he claims protection.

Brigadier-General Reuben Lindsay Walker was born at Logan, Albemarle county, Va., May 29, 1827. His father was Capt. Lewis Walker, and his early home was in a part of the State noted for wealth and refinement, the prominent families of which were connected with his by blood and affinity. He was graduated in 1845 at the Virginia military institute, where his popularity among his fellow cadets is one of the pleasant traditions of the school. After graduation he adopted the profession of civil engineer, and became employed upon the extension of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad. In 1857 he married a daughter of Dr. Albert Elam, of Chesterfield county, and a few years later engaged in farming in New Kent county. He was sergeant-at-arms of the memorable Virginia convention of 1861, and immediately after the

passage of the ordinance of secession he applied to Governor Letcher for commission and permission to organize an expedition to surprise and capture Fortress Monroe. The governor denied him this opportunity, but his ability was recognized by a commission as captain and assignment to command of the Purcell battery, the first company of that arm to leave Richmond. He was stationed with this company on the Potomac near Aquia creek, and from that region he reached the field of First Manassas in time to shell the retreating Federals with his six Parrott guns. He subsequently was in action at Potomac creek, Aquia creek, Marlborough point, Free Stone point and Evans' point during the summer and fall of 1861. March 31, 1862, he was promoted major, and in this rank he served as chief of artillery of A. P. Hill's division. During the Seven Days' battles he was sick at Richmond, but after that he was identified with the operations of A. P. Hill's command until the close of the war. During the reduction of Harper's Ferry, in the Maryland campaign, he crossed the Shenandoah with several batteries and secured a position on Loudoun heights that commanded the enemy's works. At Fredricksburg Hill reported that Lieutenant-Colonel Walker "directed the fire from his guns with admirable coolness and precision." Promotion to colonel rapidly followed, in which rank he fought at Chancellorsville, and when Hill was called to command the Third army corps, Colonel Walker was appointed chief of artillery of that command. At Gettysburg he commanded sixty-three guns and handled them with skill and effect, and later in 1863 he took part in various minor engagements. In the campaign of 1864 he served in all the principal battles, beginning with the Wilderness and closing with Reams' Station. In January, 1865, he was promoted brigadier-general and assigned to command of the Third artillery corps, still attached to Hill's army corps. Of the conduct of his command in the final days at Petersburg, it was reported: "The conduct of officers and men was worthy of all praise, and that of the drivers and supernumeraries of the artillery, who had been by General Walker armed with muskets, deserves special mention. Those in Fort Gregg fought until literally crushed by numbers, and scarcely a man survived." On the retreat he reached with his artillery a point between Appomat-

tox Court House and Station, where he was attacked by Custer's cavalry division on April 8th. The dashing Federal general reported: "The enemy succeeded in repulsing nearly all our attacks, until nearly 9 o'clock at night, when by a general advance along my line he was forced from his position." On the next day the army was surrendered, and General Walker retired to private life, with a record of participation in sixty-three battles and combats. In 1872, after some years devoted to farming, he removed to Alabama, as superintendent of the Marion & Selma railroad, but four years later returned to Virginia. He was connected with the Richmond & Danville railroad, later had charge of the Richmond street railways, took part in the construction of the Richmond & Alleghany railroad, and was superintendent of the building of the women's department of the State penitentiary. In 1884 he became superintendent of construction of the Texas State capitol and resided at Austin until 1888. Subsequently he lived upon his farm at the confluence of the James and Rivanna rivers, until his death, June 7, 1890.

Brigadier-General Daniel Adams Weisiger, in early manhood was a resident of Petersburg, Va., where he engaged in mercantile pursuits until November, 1846, when, the State of Virginia being called upon for a regiment for service in Mexico, he volunteered and aided in recruiting a company of 85 men, of which he was elected senior second lieutenant. He was finally promoted to the adjutancy of the regiment, which office he held until the close of the war, and his regiment was mustered out at Fort Monroe, in August, 1848. He returned to Petersburg and was again engaged in business until April, 1861. In May, 1853, he was unanimously elected colonel of the Thirty-ninth "regiment of Virginia militia," which he commanded until 1860, when a battalion of volunteers, uniformed, armed and fully equipped for active service, was formed, and he was unanimously tendered the command. On April 20th he was ordered to move with his command to Norfolk. With his command and a battery of artillery, he arrived there in the afternoon of that day, and witnessed the evacuation of the navy yard that night. On May 9, 1861, he was appointed colonel in the Confederate States service, and his battalion of five

companies was soon recruited to a full regiment, and designated as the Twelfth Virginia regiment. Upon the reorganization of the army in May, 1862, he was re-elected colonel without opposition. After the evacuation of Norfolk, he and his regiment took a position at Drewry's bluff, and there acted in support of the fort during the attack by the Federal gunboats, which was handsomely repulsed. Soon afterward the regiment was ordered to Richmond, and became a part of the army of Northern Virginia. Leading the Twelfth, Colonel Weisiger participated in the battle of Seven Pines, and on June 25th was engaged in a heavy skirmish at French's farm on the Charles City road. This proved to be the commencement of the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, which culminated in the battle of Malvern Hill on July 1, 1862. In that combat Weisiger's regiment was on the extreme right of the lines, occupied the last ridge in front of McClellan's army, and held that position during the night when the Federal army retreated to Harrison's landing on James river. Late in the month of August, 1862, the Twelfth was ordered to join the army of Northern Virginia. On August 30th they arrived at the field of Second Manassas, early in the morning, and were held in reserve until the afternoon, when they were ordered to the front and placed on the right of the line of battle. After passing over a burning rail fence, causing some confusion, which was soon rectified, the regiment encountered a heavy artillery fire in which Adjt.-Gen. William E. Cameron was severely wounded by a piece of shell. In a very short time Brig.-Gen. William Mahone was wounded and carried from the field, and the brigade came under the command of Colonel Weisiger. About this time Brig.-Gen. A. R. Wright, of Georgia, reported that he was hard pressed and wanted Weisiger's assistance. The latter immediately complied, but in the movement was caught under a heavy fire and dangerously wounded and taken from the field. In consequence he was disabled for duty in the field. On May 6, 1864, the second day of the fighting in the Wilderness, General Longstreet was wounded and was succeeded by Gen. R. H. Anderson, he by General Mahone, and Colonel Weisiger was placed in command of the Virginia brigade as Mahone's successor. He commanded the brigade thenceforward, in the battles of the campaign from

the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, and in nearly every battle around Petersburg from June 20, 1864, until the evacuation. When the Federal troops occupied the gap in the Confederate works made by the terrific mine explosion of July 30th, he led his Virginia brigade, only 800 strong, against about 5,000 of the enemy, with such gallantry and success that he was promoted to brigadier-general, to date from the battle of the Crater. During his military career he participated in over twenty battles and skirmishes, was wounded three times, and two horses were shot under him. He finally led his brigade on the march to Appomattox, and was surrendered with the army.

Brigadier-General G. C. Wharton was elected major of the Forty-fifth regiment, Virginia infantry, in July, 1861, this being one of the regiments organized by General Floyd in southwest Virginia. A month later he became colonel of the Fifty-first regiment, which he led through the Western Virginia campaign of General Floyd during the summer and fall of 1861. Accompanying Floyd to Kentucky early in 1862, he was assigned at Fort Donelson to the command of a brigade composed of his own and the Fifty-sixth Virginia regiment. In his report of the battle, General Pillow particularly commended the gallantry of Colonel Wharton and his brigade, who, after being under fire or fighting in the ditches four days, advanced and drove the enemy from their front on February 15th. On the next day, surrender having been decided upon, a considerable part of Floyd's command was brought away in safety, and Wharton rendered valuable service in preserving the government stores at Nashville. Subsequently returning to southwest Virginia, he defeated a Federal regiment at Princeton, May 17, 1862, and in September participated in Loring's occupation of the Kanawha valley, as commander of the Third brigade of the army of Western Virginia. Subsequently he was in command at the Narrows of New river, with his own and Echols' brigade, until February, 1863, when he was stationed in the neighborhood of Abingdon. When Gen. Sam Jones was ordered in July to send troops to Lee's army, Wharton was detached, and Jones sent word to Lee, "He is an admirable officer, has commanded a brigade for eighteen months.

Let him command my troops until I come." He was stationed at Winchester, and was temporarily in charge of the Valley district. Soon afterward he was promoted brigadier-general, and in August returned to his former station on the Virginia & Tennessee railroad. Later he was transferred to General Longstreet's command in east Tennessee, until April, 1864, when he was ordered to report to General Breckinridge. In command of his brigade of veterans he took a conspicuous part in the defeat of Sigel at New Market, and served with honor in the Confederate lines at Cold Harbor. Returning toward the southwest for the defense of Lynchburg, he took part in the pursuit of Hunter down the valley and the expedition through Maryland to Washington. During the Shenandoah campaign he commanded a division comprising the infantry brigades of the old army of Western Virginia. After suffering severely during the valley battles of 1864, the division was badly cut up in the fight at Waynesboro, March 2, 1865. After the close of the war General Wharton lived at Radford.

Brigadier-General Williams Carter Wickham was the son of William Fanning Wickham and Anne Carter, and the great-grandson of Gen. Thomas Nelson, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence and the commander-in-chief of the Virginia Line in the Revolutionary army. He was born at Richmond, Va., September 21, 1820, moved with his parents to Hanover county in 1827; was educated at the university of Virginia, and admitted to the bar in 1842. He practiced in a country circuit for a few years, and then gave up the law for the life of a Virginia planter. On January 11, 1848, he married Lucy Penn Taylor, great-granddaughter of John Penn, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence from North Carolina. He was elected to the Virginia house of delegates in 1849; was presiding justice of the county court of Hanover county for many years. In 1858 he was commissioned captain of Virginia volunteer cavalry, and in 1859 was elected to the State senate from the district composed of Hanover and Henrico, as a Whig. In 1861, elected by the people of Henrico to the State convention as a Union man, he was bitterly opposed to the war and voted against the ordinance of secession, but immediately upon the secession of Virginia,

he determined to share the fortunes of his people, and took his company, "the Hanover dragoons," into active service. He participated in the first battle of Manassas and the preceding outpost skirmishes, and in September, 1861, was commissioned by Governor Letcher, lieutenant-colonel of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. On May 4, 1862, he received a severe saber wound in a cavalry charge at Williamsburg, which prevented him from participating in the battles around Richmond. While wounded he was taken prisoner at his home on McClellan's advance, paroled, and speedily exchanged by special cartel for his wife's kinsman, Lieut.-Col. Thomas L. Kane, of the Pennsylvania "Bucktails." In August, 1862, he was commissioned colonel of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, and in that rank he participated in the battles of Second Manassas, Boonsboro, Sharpsburg and the frequent engagements of the cavalry under General Stuart. During the advance of the army of the Potomac into Virginia, after the battle of Sharpsburg, he was again wounded, by a piece of shell, in the neck, while temporarily in command of Fitz Lee's brigade at Upperville. Recovering from this wound, he regained his command in time to take part in the battle of Fredericksburg, December 12, 1862. When the army went into winter quarters, he was on the picket lines on the Rappahannock river from Fredericksburg to a point above the junction of the Rapidan, and was on those lines when Burnside made his unsuccessful attempt to cross the river again. In the spring of 1863, he and his command participated actively in the outpost conflicts preceding the battle of Chancellorsville, and was posted on the right flank during that battle. Prior to the opening of the campaign in 1863, while in command of his regiment at the front, he announced himself a candidate for the Confederate Congress from the Richmond district, and without going into the district was elected shortly after the battle of Chancellorsville, by an unparalleled majority. He, however, remained at his post in the army, leaving his seat in Congress vacant until the fall of 1864. On the advance into Pennsylvania Colonel Wickham's command formed a part of the force which Stuart took on his raid around Meade's army, rejoining the army of Northern Virginia on the eve of the battle of Gettysburg, was posted on the extreme left flank during that engagement, and

aided in covering the retreat. On September 9, 1863, he was commissioned brigadier-general, and put in command of Wickham's brigade of Fitzhugh Lee's division. The cavalry of both armies had frequent encounters during the following months, the engagements at Bristoe, Brandy Station and Buckland Mills being the most serious until February, 1864, when the fighting to repel Kilpatrick's raid upon Richmond, and Custer's attack on Charlottesville was very desperate. In March and April, 1864, General Wickham and his brigade were again on guard on the Rapidan and Rappahannock rivers. He took part in the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, and when Sheridan moved on Richmond, he was with Stuart on May 11th at Yellow Tavern. "Order Wickham to dismount his brigade and attack," was the last order given by General Stuart to a brigade of cavalry. Subsequently he was actively engaged in the battles of Totopotomay, Cold Harbor, Trevilian's, Reams' Station and many of the lesser cavalry engagements. On August 10, 1864, he and his command were ordered from the south side of the James river to join Early's army in the valley of Virginia, Fitzhugh Lee being in command of the cavalry corps with General Wickham in command of Lee's division. At the battle of Winchester on September 19, 1864, General Wickham covered the retreat. Rallying his men with great ability, General Early again sustained a terrific reverse at Fisher's hill, September 22d, and his army was saved from destruction by the successful defense of the Luray valley by Lee's cavalry division under the command of General Wickham, against the advance of Torbert's corps on which Sheridan relied to intercept the retreat of Early at New Market in the main valley. Rejoining General Early at Brown's gap, Wickham was ordered to guard Rockfish gap, and on arriving at the foot of the mountain attacked the Federal cavalry at Waynesboro, driving them back. The next day the enemy retreated down the valley, and the lines of the armies were established at Bridgewater. General Wickham resigned his commission in the Confederate army on October 5, 1864, transferred his command to General Rosser, went to Richmond and took his seat in Congress when the session opened. It took him but a few days after the assembling of the Confederate Congress to ascertain that the end of

the Confederacy was drawing near, and for a brief period he had the hope that reunion could be brought about upon a basis which, while it would in no way tarnish the honor of the armies or people of the South, would save the lives of thousands of noble men, and preserve some of their property from the wreck of war. After the failure of the Hampton Roads conference, he continued at his post in Richmond, awaiting the end. After the surrender of the armies, General Wickham addressed himself to the effort to restore friendly relations between the sections of the Union; to reorganize on a mutually satisfactory basis the labor necessary for the farming operations of the country, and to induce his fellow-citizens to accept the situation. The condition of the South was terrible. General Wickham stood side by side with his old constituents and shared their fate. He had been educated a Whig and a Union man. When the war ended, his political faith remained unchanged, and as the Whig party had disappeared, he adopted the principles of the party which he regarded as its legitimate successor. On April 23, 1865, in an open letter, he aligned himself with the Republican party. This step estranged very many of his old associates from him. In November, 1865, he was elected president of the Virginia Central railroad company; in November, 1868, president of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, and in 1869 was made vice-president of the company with C. P. Huntington as president, and continued as such until 1875, when he was appointed its receiver, which position he held until July 1, 1878, when he became its second vice-president and so continued until his death. He was elected chairman of the board of supervisors of Hanover county in 1871, and was continuously re-elected as long as he lived. In 1872 he was a member of the electoral college of Virginia, and cast his vote for General Grant. In 1880 he was honored by a tender of the secretaryship of the navy by President Hayes, but declined on account of business engagements. In 1881 he was tendered the nomination for governor of the State by the Republican convention, but declined to accept it. Opposing the "readjuster party" in 1883, he again became a member of the State senate, and was the chairman of the finance committee of that body until his death, although he occupied an independent position and declined to go into any caucus.

While not an impassioned speaker, he was brave and calm and cool, and possessed in a remarkable degree the capacity to arouse manifestations of enthusiasm and personal attachment. On the 23d of July, 1888, he died in his office in Richmond of heart failure. The men of his old command, from many of whom he had become politically estranged, resolved that "in the camp and on the field of battle, in the fatigue of the march, in the gloom of the hospital, under the depression of the waiting and in the glory of the charge, he was the friend, the comrade, the guardian, the leader of his men, the beau-ideal of a soldier and of a commander," and they organized to perpetuate his memory in bronze. In 1890 the general assembly of Virginia provided for a site on the capitol grounds for the statue of General Wickham, which was unveiled on October 29, 1891, the oration being delivered by Gen. Fitzhugh Lee.

Brigadier-General Henry Alexander Wise was born at Drummondtown, Accomack county, December 3, 1806, a descendant of John Wise, who came to Virginia from England about 1650, and was a man of influence in the colony. Maj. John Wise, father of General Wise, clerk of Accomack county and twice speaker of the Virginia senate, died in 1812, and his wife, Sarah Corbin, in 1813. Young Wise was cared for by his kinsmen, and educated at Washington college, Pa. After his graduation in 1825, he studied law three years with Henry St. George Tucker, and in 1828 removed to Nashville, Tenn., for the practice of his profession. Returning to Accomack in 1831, he soon became prominent politically, and in 1833, as a supporter of Jackson, was elected to Congress, the contest at the polls being followed by a duel in which his opponent for Congress was wounded. He was re-elected in 1835 and again in 1837, and was a zealous advocate of the admission of Texas. In 1837 he acted as second in a duel between William J. Graves, of Kentucky, and Jonathan Cilley, of Maine, both congressmen, in which Cilley was killed, and Wise was made to suffer much of the opprobrium of the unfortunate affair. He was very influential in causing the nomination of John Tyler for vice-president and exerted considerable power under his administration. Tyler appointed him minister to France, but the Senate objecting, he

was appointed to Brazil in 1844, and remained there until 1847. He was a Democratic elector in 1848 and 1850, and a member of the constitutional convention of 1850. In 1855 he made a brilliant campaign for the governorship against the Know-Nothing party and was elected. In 1859 he published a treatise on territorial government, upholding the doctrine of congressional protection of slavery in the new territories. The execution of the servile insurrectionist, John Brown, December 2, 1859, was one of the last events of his administration. In 1861 he sat in the Virginia convention, and as a member of the committee on federal relations, presented one of the three reports upon the position Virginia should take in the crisis. He entered heartily into the military defense of the State, and obtained permission to raise an independent partisan command. In May he was advised by President Davis to take a commission as brigadier-general of provisional forces with command in the Kanawha valley. Reaching Charleston from a sick bed, in June he completed the organization of Wise's Legion, in command of which, with the Kanawha volunteers, he endeavored patriotically to withstand the superior forces sent against him. He fought with intelligence and skill in the vicinity of Charleston, and selected the position at Sewell mountain, where Lee took command, confronting Rosecrans until that officer retreated. In the fall of 1861 he was assigned to command at Roanoke island, N. C., where, in his absence, many of his legion were captured, and his son, Capt. O. Jennings Wise, of the Richmond Light Infantry Blues, was mortally wounded. His feeble health now kept him from the field for some time, but in 1863 he was given command of the district between the Mattapony and the James, with his brigade, the Twenty-fourth, Thirty-fourth and Forty-sixth infantry, a battalion of artillery and a squadron of cavalry. While at Chaffin's farm, he conducted some gallant attacks upon the enemy, and recovered Williamsburg from General Dix. He subsequently served under Beauregard at Charleston, with his command drove the enemy from John's island, and took part in two battles in Florida. Returning to Virginia in May, 1864, on June 1st he was assigned to command the First military district, including Petersburg. He participated in the defeat of Butler at Drewry's bluff, and on June 15th his brigade alone held

at bay the army corps of A. J. Smith, until Lee could cross the James. Faithful to the last, he commanded his brigade in Anderson's corps during the siege of Petersburg, gallantly fought in the front line of battle March 29 and 31, 1865, and during the retreat, on April 6th, made a gallant and successful charge against the enemy. In Gen. Fitzhugh Lee's report of the final operations, he wrote most fitly: "The past services of Gen. Henry A. Wise, his antecedents in civil life, and his age, caused his bearing upon this most trying retreat to shine conspicuously forth. His unconquerable spirit was filled with as much earnestness and zeal in April, 1865, as when he first took up arms four years ago, and the freedom with which he exposed a long life laden with honors proved he was willing to sacrifice it if it would conduce toward attaining the liberty of his country." After the war he engaged in the practice of law at Richmond. His death occurred September 14, 1876. His sons who survived him were Richard Alsop, a distinguished physician, and John Sergeant, captain Richmond Light Infantry Blues, and after the war a congressman from Virginia.

Julius Adolphus De Lagnel, the hero of Rich Mountain, commissioned brigadier-general in the provisional army of the Confederate States, was born in New Jersey, and was appointed from Virginia to the United States army on March 8, 1847, as second lieutenant of the Second infantry. In January, 1849, he was promoted first lieutenant. Resigning his commission upon the formation of the Confederacy, he tendered his services to the new government, and was commissioned captain, corps of artillery, C. S. A. Going into western Virginia with General Garnett, he became his chief of artillery, and was stationed at Rich Mountain, with the command of General Pegram. When the latter officer perceived that McClellan intended to flank his position by taking possession of the crest of Rich Mountain, he sent DeLagnel with several companies of infantry and one piece of artillery to defend the mountain to the last extremity. Here he withstood the attack of a largely superior force under Rosecrans, making a desperate fight until his men were forced back by the heavy fire of musketry and artillery.

With indomitable courage he fought his gun alone until the enemy were upon him, and he fell severely wounded. In the confusion he managed to hide himself in a mountain thicket until the Federal troops were withdrawn, when he obtained shelter with a sympathetic mountaineer. Here he was cared for until his recovery, when he attempted, disguised as a herder, to make his way through the Federal lines. He was successful until he had reached the last picket post, when an inquisitive soldier noticed that his boots were of a kind unusual among the natives, and being pulled off, they revealed his name. The latter was well known, as there had been much speculation regarding his mysterious disappearance from the battlefield, and he was promptly sent as a prisoner to Federal headquarters. Upon his return to the service, he was promoted major, Twentieth battalion Virginia artillery, and was offered the commission of brigadier-general, which he declined. He subsequently served in the ordnance bureau at Richmond.

ADDITIONAL SKETCHES ILLUSTRATING THE SERVICES OF OFFICERS AND PRIVATES AND PATRIOTIC CITI- ZENS OF VIRGINIA.

William Harrison Ackiss, of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry, was born May 12, 1841, in Princess Anne county, Va. He enlisted in the Princess Anne cavalry in July, 1861, and in January, 1862, was appointed courier for General Mahone. At the evacuation of Norfolk he assisted in spiking the heavy guns, and subsequently as a courier participated in the Seven Days' campaign and the battles of Second Manassas, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. He then returned to his cavalry squadron, now known as Company E, Fifteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, and shared its services until, in the fighting of the Wilderness battles in May, 1864, he was severely wounded. Subsequently he was upon detached duty until the surrender. He was paroled at Norfolk, April 15, 1865. Since then he has resided upon his farm in Princess Anne county. His son, Harrison Seneca Ackiss, clerk of the United States court, for the eastern district of Virginia, was born in that county July 31, 1868, and was graduated at the National business college, Poughkeepsie, N. Y., in 1888. After engaging in business and later in the study of law at Norfolk, he was in April, 1890, appointed deputy clerk of the United States court, in which capacity he served for two years, then receiving from Judge Robert W. Hughes the appointment of clerk of the court. Though but twenty-one years of age when given this responsible position he has performed his duties with such fidelity and capability as to win the commendations of the bar and the public. Meanwhile he has retained a connection with business interests, and as a member of the Light Artillery Blues, takes much interest in military affairs. On November 5, 1893, Mr. Ackiss was married to Lizzie Daughtrey Anderson, daughter of William A. Anderson, of Norfolk, and they have one child—Ella Daughtrey.

James Adams, of Norfolk, a gallant soldier and at the last commander of Company K of the Sixty-first infantry, was born in County Down, Ireland, April 9, 1843, the son of James and Esther (Hawthorne) Adams. His father was a merchant in the native land and passed his life there. When young Adams was fourteen years of age he came to America and after remaining at Chester, Pa., where he went from the city of New York, his landing place, three or four years, removed to Norfolk, where an uncle resided, in the latter part of the year 1860. In the spring of 1862 he entered the military organization known as the Floyd Guards, and was chosen fourth sergeant. This company, under the command of Capt. Maximilian Herbert, was attached to Cahoon's battalion, and served during its first year of duty mainly on picket in the vicinity of Petersburg. In July, 1862, the battalion was disbanded, but Captain Herbert subsequently succeeded in reorganizing his company and

securing its assignment to the Sixty-first Virginia infantry regiment as Company K. With this command Sergeant Adams shared the fortunes of Mahone's gallant brigade, and by his excellent service won promotion to the rank of first sergeant, and richly deserved a commission. The company joined the Sixty-first regiment just after the battle of Cedar Mountain, and was a part of the small force commanded by Col. V. D. Groner, which throughout the entire day held in check the Federal army at Warrenton. He participated in the two battles at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, Yellow Tavern, Burgess' Mill, and all the other fighting of Mahone's brigade. The lieutenants of the company falling into the hands of the enemy at the time of the breaking of the lines at Petersburg, Sergeant Adams commanded the company on the retreat. At Appomattox it had but two privates to report for duty. On the day before the surrender Sergeant Adams had been captured by Federal cavalry while stopping, as he supposed, out of reach of the enemy, to prepare some food which was the first he had seen for two or three days. After his parole he returned to Norfolk and engaged in the city transfer business, to which he has since given his attention. Early in the '70's, when Gen. B. F. Butler visited Norfolk, Sergeant Adams, considering that Federal commander an exception, refused to carry him in his hack, an incident which gained for him a wide notoriety at the time. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, St. Paul's Episcopal church, and the order of Red Men. He was married in August, 1861, to Sarah Roberts, of Baltimore, who died November 26, 1883.

Captain Richard Henry Toler Adams, of Lynchburg, Va., whose faithful service in the Confederate cause was identified with the brigade, division and corps of Gen. A. P. Hill, is a native of the city where he now resides, born November 6, 1839. At the age of ten years his home was made in Appomattox county, where he was educated. In 1857 he removed to Richmond and was there engaged in the wholesale grocery trade until April, 1861, when he returned to Lynchburg to enlist in the Home Guard, or Company G of the Eleventh regiment, Virginia infantry. With this command he served as a private until May, 1862, in the meantime taking part in the battles of Blackburn's Ford, First Manassas and Dranesville, and in the spring of 1862, upon the promotion of his brigade commander, A. P. Hill, to the command of the Light division of Jackson's corps, Adams was promoted captain in the signal service and assigned to General Hill's division. He reported for this duty just before the battle of Cold Harbor, July, 1862, and subsequently was with General Hill until he was killed before Petersburg. In the discharge of his duty he was with his command in the battles of Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, and served in the trenches before Petersburg from June, 1864, until April, 1865. His service was of an active and perilous nature. Three horses were killed under him during the war, and he was wounded at Petersburg. During the siege of Harper's Ferry, in 1862, stationed on Loudoun heights, he transmitted General Jackson's order of attack to Maryland heights in five minutes—rapid work which elicited

the warm compliments of the general. At Sharpsburg he went into the battle and shared in the hard fighting which resulted in the repulse of Burnside. Since the close of hostilities Captain Adams was for some time engaged in dealing in coal and lumber, doing an extensive business, and since 1891 has been interested in coal mining operations in the Pocahontas district of West Virginia. Since 1875 he has been doing an extensive export tobacco business. He is an influential citizen of Lynchburg, and has served upon the city council.

Judge Stephen Adams, a distinguished attorney of Lynchburg, Va., recently appointed to the bench, was educated at Yale college and was graduated with the class of 1850. Immediately thereafter he made his home at Lynchburg and entered upon the study of law with Robert J. Davis, Esq. In 1854 he was admitted to the bar and then embarked in the practice in Raleigh county, now West Virginia, where he was living at the outbreak of the war. Thoroughly devoted to the cause of the State he organized a company of which he was elected captain, and was commissioned in that rank when the company was mustered in as a part of the Twenty-second Virginia regiment of infantry. Captain Adams was, however, very soon afterward detached from the regiment and placed in command of the military post at Sulphur Springs, Va. He remained there until July or August, 1861, when he rejoined the army at Big Sewell mountain, with the men of his command, and was assigned to the Thirtieth Virginia battalion, an organization of sharpshooters with the rank of senior captain. During the remainder of his service he was for a large part of the time in command of the battalion, which rendered gallant service on many hard-fought fields. He participated in the battle of Cold Harbor, June 1, 1864; was in command after the wounding of Maj. Peter J. Otey, of his battalion at the fight at New Market, May 15, 1864; and took part in all the fights under Early in the Shenandoah valley until wounded and captured at Winchester on September 19th. He was then sent as a prisoner of war to the Baltimore hospital, and detained until just before the surrender of the army, when he was exchanged and paroled. Returning to Virginia he made his home at Lynchburg, and resuming the practice of law, soon attained prominence in that profession. In 1880 he represented his county in the legislature of Virginia, and in 1896 he was appointed to the office of judge of the Campbell county court.

John H. Alexander, of Leesburg, who served the Confederacy in the gallant band of troopers known as "Mosby's men," is a native of Clarke county, born in September, 1846. In April, 1864, having reached the age of eighteen years, he enlisted in the Confederate army as a private in Company A of the Forty-third Virginia battalion, under the command of Colonel Mosby, and during the following year of the war participated in the many daring and romantic exploits of that famous body of cavalry. The service was constant and arduous and was effective in the interests of the cause far out of proportion to the numerical strength of the command, owing to the fertile ingenuity of the commander. During the Adamstown raid, made in co-operation with Early's expedition against Washington, Mr. Alexander was wounded in an action with Federal troops. After the surrender of the command, on April 22, 1865,

he was arrested on the charge of breaking parole, but was released after being held at Winchester two weeks. He then went to Loudoun county, and resumed his school work, completing his education in the university of Virginia. Determining to make his career in the profession of the law, he equipped himself in this direction and began the practice at Leesburg in 1871, for eleven years being a law partner of Gen. W. H. Payne. In 1895 he was elected commonwealth's attorney for Loudoun county, but resigned the office after a brief tenure. He has met with notable success in his profession, and is a valued citizen and popular gentleman. He maintains memberships in the Clinton-Hatcher camp, at Leesburg, and John S. Mosby camp, of Confederate veterans. In the Knights of Pythias order he is prominent as past supreme representative of Virginia, and was a member of the commission for revision of the constitution and laws of the order, and is now chief tribune of the Supreme Tribunal of the world. He is happily married to Emma H. Hughes, of Loudoun county, and they have five children.

Thomas L. Alfriend, of Richmond, was born at that city in 1843. He is a member of the fourth generation of his family in Virginia, his great-grandfather being a native of Scotland. His grandfather, Colin Alfriend, born in the Old Dominion, died at the age of forty years. His father, Thomas M. Alfriend, a native of Petersburg, served during the war in the local defense troops at Richmond, and survived until 1885, when he passed away at the age of seventy-five years. The subject of this mention rendered faithful service throughout the war of the Confederacy, enlisting on May 14, 1861, in Company B of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry regiment. With this command he served as a private something over a year, participating during that period in the battles of Big Bethel, Yorktown, Savage Station, and Malvern Hill. After the close of the Seven Days' battles he was ordered on detached service at Richmond, and was connected first with the headquarters of Gen. Gustavus Smith, and subsequently with the headquarters of Gen. Arnold Elzey. In the fall of 1863 he returned to duty in the field, being transferred to the artillery command of Capt. W. W. Parker, with the rank of orderly-sergeant. Going to the West with General Longstreet, he participated in the engagements at Campbell's Station, Tenn., Bean's Station and the fighting around Knoxville. Subsequently returning with the battery to Virginia he fought at Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction, North Anna river, Howlett house, and on the retreat from Richmond at Sailor's creek, where he was among the captured. Thence he was carried as a prisoner of war to Point Lookout, and held until June 23, 1865. Returning to Richmond he became engaged three days after his arrival in the insurance business, which he has carried on ever since that time with notable success. He is a valued member of both the R. E. Lee and George E. Pickett camps, Confederate veterans, and is highly esteemed as a citizen.

Captain Henry A. Allen, of Portsmouth, Va., distinguished in the history of the Old Dominion Guard, was born at Portsmouth, November 11, 1831. His parents were William and Sarah (Tabb) Allen, the father a native of Princess Anne county, and the mother of Elizabeth City county. He was reared and educated at Portsmouth and apprenticed to the craft of a brick-mason, in which he

was occupied until the outbreak of the war. He had gained a knowledge of military tactics as a student for four years in the Portsmouth military academy, and was one of the organizers of the Old Dominion Guard, on June 26, 1856, in which he held the rank of lieutenant before the war. With his comrades he entered the active service of the State on April 19, 1861, and in June the company became Company K of the Ninth Virginia regiment of infantry. Until the evacuation of Norfolk the company was stationed at Pinner's Point, where in April, 1862, the company was re-enlisted for the war and Allen, who had been promoted corporal and sergeant, was elected second lieutenant. He was soon promoted first lieutenant, and after the death of Captain Vermillion at Malvern Hill he became captain, and commanded his company until Gettysburg. He participated in all the battles of his regiment except Drewry's Bluff, and shared the brave and distinguished service of Armistead's brigade. At Gettysburg, on the third day of the battle he led the nineteen men of his company in the charge of Pickett's division against Cemetery hill, in which all but one were killed, wounded or captured. Captain Allen, who reached the stone wall, was among the captured, and during the remainder of the war, almost two years, he suffered the deprivations and misery of the Northern prison camps. Finally paroled in July, 1865, he returned to Portsmouth and resumed his previous occupation, in which he has since been quite prosperous as a contractor and builder. He has served one term as city collector, and is a valued member of Stonewall camp, Confederate veterans. On September 1, 1853, he was married to Sarah Burton, who died in June, 1854. In October, 1857, he was married to Sarah Brown. His home is blessed with three children.

Obadiah M. Allen, of Martinsville, Henry county, a gallant and faithful soldier of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, was born in the county where he now resides, June 6, 1840. He enlisted for the service of the Confederate States as a member of Company H, Twenty-fourth Virginia infantry, which at the start was commanded by Col. Jubal A. Early, later distinguished in high command. His first battle was at Blackburn's ford, July 18th, where the Twenty-fourth with Kemper's Seventh and Hays' Louisiana regiment, were under the brigade command of Colonel Early. In the battle of First Manassas, which soon followed, the Twenty-fourth was sent to the assistance of Longstreet by Colonel Early, and shared the duties of Longstreet's brigade in the attack at Blackburn's ford and the pursuit of the defeated enemy. Private Allen remained with his regiment near Manassas during the rest of the year 1861, and through the winter, and then accompanied it to Richmond and Williamsburg. At the latter place the regiment was particularly distinguished in the fight of May 5th against the advance of McClellan's army. Moving through the woods to meet the enemy before Fort Magruder, the gallant command emerged in the face of a New York battery supported by a brigade under General Hancock. Without pausing or wavering they charged under heavy fire, without support at first, driving back the battery and infantry before them. The Fifth North Carolina came to their aid, and the two regiments joined in an attack and did not give way, despite the fearful odds against them, until ordered to retire

by General Hill. For their bravery in this action the boys of the Twenty-fourth received unstinted praise in the official reports. They lost severely, and again at Seven Pines, where as a part of General Garland's brigade, they made a fierce attack through swamp and thicket, upon the enemy. When Lee took command the regiment was assigned to General Kemper's brigade, Longstreet's division, later commanded by Pickett, and thereafter was identified with the service of those commands. It was distinguished for intrepidity at Frayser's farm, and sustained its good record throughout the war. This was shared by Private Allen, who was in every action of Pickett's division, except at Petersburg, including Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Plymouth, N. C., Drewry's Bluff and Cold Harbor. From June 5, 1861, to December 25, 1863, he never lost a day from duty, and at the latter date received a furlough in recognition of his fidelity. Fortunately he was never wounded, though his clothing was frequently cut by rifle balls, and his wrist was grazed by a cannon ball on the day following the capture of Harper's Ferry. On March 7, 1865, he received his first sick furlough, of twenty days, and soon after his return he took part in the fight at Five Forks, and was captured. He was confined at Point Lookout until his parole, June 26, 1865. Since the war he has been engaged in farming, also since 1879 in tobacco warehousing, and has been successful in business. He was married November 7, 1865, to Miss E. J. Munn, and has seven children: Nannie S., Sallie O., Annie E., Fanny F., Peachy L., Lucy D., and R. J. Allen.

S. Brown Allen, of Staunton, Va., a veteran of the Fourteenth Virginia cavalry, was born in Bath county, in 1845, and soon afterward was brought by his parents to Augusta county, where he was reared and educated. He entered the military service of Virginia early in 1861 as a private in the Churchville cavalry company, which was attached to the command of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston and assigned to picket duty. A few months later the company with three others was organized in a cavalry battalion, and in 1862 it became Company A of the Fourteenth cavalry. In this command Private Allen served throughout the remainder of the war, being promoted to corporal just before the battle of Gettysburg, and sergeant six months later. During his service he participated in the battles of Allegheny Mountain, Camp Bartow, McDowell's, Droop Mountain, took part in the month's skirmishing with the Federals under Averell up the valley from Sweet Spring mountain to Lynchburg, and then returning down the valley he participated in Early's successful pursuit of the enemy to the Potomac river. Continuing under Early's command he shared in the march through Maryland to the defenses before the city of Washington, in 1864, and took part in the subsequent battles at Winchester, Cedar creek, Fisher's Hill, Port Republic and Waynesboro. In the campaigns about Richmond he served gallantly at Culpeper Court House, Brandy Station, Gordonsville, and then being engaged at Petersburg from early in 1865, was in the action at Five Forks, and the final combat at Sailor's Creek. At Appomattox he did not surrender, but with many others, being mounted, went through the enemy's lines and escaped. Returning to Augusta county a veteran at the age of twenty years, he went upon the farm, and has continued ever since in agri-

cultural pursuits. He has taken a prominent part in political affairs, and was one of Mahone's trusted lieutenants in his memorable revolt against the Democratic party, in 1879, on the question of the readjustment of the Virginia State debt. During the years 1882 and 1883 he served the State as auditor of public accounts. For several years he held a position in the office of the secretary of the United States Senate, and during the administration of Benjamin Harrison he served as deputy collector of internal revenue for the counties of Augusta, Rockbridge, Highland, Alleghany, Bath and Botetourt. He is now United States marshal for the western district of Virginia, having been appointed, after a spirited contest, by President McKinley. A brother of Mr. Allen's, William F. Allen, born in 1842, entered the same command in April, 1861, and became second lieutenant of Company C of the Fourteenth cavalry. He was killed at Gettysburg, in the second day's fight, and fell dead in the arms of his brother.

Thomas B. Amiss, M. D., of Luray, Va., who was recognized as one of the faithful and skillful among Confederate surgeons, was born in Rappahannock county, Va., July 4, 1839. He was educated at the Virginia military institute at Lexington, and subsequently took a medical course at the university of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated in March, 1861. The important events of that period prevented his embarking in the practice at once, and in the following month he was busily engaged in putting in practice, instead, the lessons he had learned at Lexington, drilling the volunteer companies of Rappahannock and Culpeper counties. He enlisted as a private in Company B, Sixth Virginia cavalry, and served with that command until after the first battle of Manassas, when, in September, 1861, he was commissioned assistant surgeon and assigned to duty in Bailey's factory hospital at Richmond. He served at that post of duty until after the Peninsular campaign, when he was assigned as surgeon to the Thirty-first regiment, Georgia infantry, Col. Clement A. Evans, then encamped near Gordonsville. He served in the field with this command through the Cedar Mountain, Manassas and Sharpsburg campaigns, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and then, in the spring of 1863, on account of impaired health, he was assigned to hospital duty and ordered to report to Dr. Curry at Salisbury, N. C. When that garrison was transferred to Andersonville, Ga., he was ordered to report to Major Webb, at Weldon, N. C., where he remained until the surrender of Johnston's army, when he was paroled. Returning to Virginia he practiced medicine in Rappahannock county until 1874, since when he has devoted himself to professional duties at Luray, meeting with pronounced success, and holding an influential place in the community. He was married July 16, 1861, to Miss Mary E. Miller of his native county, and they have three children: Thomas Jackson, superintendent of education of Walker county, Ala.; Frederick T., a graduate of the Virginia military institute, and a civil engineer at Luray; and a daughter, Nannie M., the wife of J. B. Martin, an attorney at law of Luray, Va.

George William Ammen, of Roanoke, was born in Botetourt county in 1847. He was reared and educated in his native county, and there, in his eighteenth year, enlisted in the service of the Con-

federate States. He became a private in Company D of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, January 19, 1865, and served gallantly in the final engagements of the army of Northern Virginia, participating in the skirmishes on the Howlett house line, several skirmishes with Sheridan's cavalry on the Pamunkey river, and the actions at Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and High bridge. On the day following the fight at High bridge, he was pronounced unfit for further duty on account of physical disability, and he consequently, on the evening of April 8th left Appomattox for his home and was at Lynchburg at the time of the surrender of the army. He farmed in his native county until his removal in 1876 to Big Lick, now Roanoke, where he clerked for Fishburne Bros. until 1887, when he engaged in the laundry business. While in Botetourt county he was honored by election to local offices, and in 1878 he was elected deputy sergeant of Big Lick, a position he held for two years. Mr. Ammen was married in Coles county, Ill., in 1883, to Lottie R. Greer, and they have five children—Tipton G., John N., George W., Rudolph and Lottie E. Daniel Ammen, father of the foregoing, a native of Botetourt county, also served in the Confederate cause, as his age permitted, as captain of the Botetourt Home Guards. John Neville Ammen, an older brother of George W., was distinguished for long and devoted service in behalf of his native State. He was born in Botetourt county in 1842, and was a member of the Fincastle Rifles, a volunteer company under the command of Capt. William H. Anthony, which served at Harper's Ferry during the John Brown affair of 1859. In April, 1861, he went out with his command, which became Company D of the Eleventh Virginia regiment of infantry, and subsequently served throughout the entire war. He was among the first troops to occupy Manassas junction, and participated in the fighting in that vicinity in July, 1861, and after that there was not an engagement of the army of Northern Virginia in which he did not bear his full share of danger, fatigue and suffering. His innate cheerfulness made him the life of his camp, and added to his intrepid courage, made him a most valuable soldier. He was wounded while taking part in Pickett's immortal charge at Gettysburg, and again at the Wilderness, and at Five Forks fell into the hands of the enemy, by whom he was held as a prisoner of war until July, 1865. At this last disastrous engagement he was promoted from sergeant to captain for gallantry on the field of battle. After the war he went West and finally settled at Denver, was prosperous in business, married in Roanoke and became the father of three children. But a few days after the birth of his third child, James N. Ammen, an insidious disease terminated his life, June 23, 1895. Touching tributes to his moral worth were made officially by the Lutheran church of that city of which he was a member.

Captain Abner Anderson, of Danville, Va., was born in Pittsylvania county, Va., December 2, 1832, the son of Joseph E. and Minerva C. (Terry) Anderson, the father being a merchant and farmer in that county. During the first two years of the war Captain Anderson served as quartermaster of the Eighteenth Virginia regiment, and during the last two years, his health having failed, he was attached as a clerk to the quartermaster's post at Danville. After the close of hostilities he remained at the latter

city, and continued in the management and editorial charge of the Weekly Register, which he had first taken control of in 1856. In 1882 he established the Daily Register, and in 1886 and 1887 he was upon the editorial staff of the Richmond Whig. Since 1894 he has held the office of superintendent of schools at Danville. He maintains a membership in Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate Veterans.

Captain Edward Willoughby Anderson, C. S. A., was born at St. Augustine, Fla., November 11, 1841, of distinguished and patriotic ancestry. His grandfather, Col. William Anderson, a native of Chester, Pa., was the son of the Rev. James Anderson, first pastor of the Presbyterian church at Middletown, near Chester, and a firm supporter of the patriot cause during the Revolution. Colonel Anderson entered the United States navy, served with Decatur in the capture of the Macedonian, and toward the end of his life was colonel of marines and in charge of the navy yard at Norfolk, Va., the family home of his wife, Jane Willoughby, who was a descendant of Col. Thomas Willoughby, who came to Virginia in 1610, owned Willoughby Point, opposite Fortress Monroe, and was prominent in the early settlement of the Old Dominion, being a member of the colonial council under Lord Berkeley. The maternal grandfather, Capt. Elihu Brown, of Portsmouth, N. H., was also distinguished in the navy during the war of 1812, as commander of the privateer Fox. The father of Mr. Anderson, Capt. James Willoughby Anderson, was graduated at West Point in 1833, became an officer of the Second United States infantry, served with distinction in the Seminole war, capturing some of the chief Indians lone-handed, and lost his life in the Mexican war during the charge at Churubusco, in August, 1847. When the disruption of the Union was imminent, young Anderson naturally felt that he should follow the action of his people and it was for the Confederacy he volunteered to draw his sword. He was at the time a cadet at the United States military academy, where he had been appointed at large by request of Gen. Winfield Scott, after receiving an education in liberal arts at the college of the City of New York. In March, 1861, after the secession of South Carolina and Mississippi, he declined to take the oath of allegiance, and resigned his cadetship with sincere regret, and left West Point for the South, being the first to take that decisive step. Arriving at Richmond in April, 1861, he became an officer in the Virginia provisional army, and as lieutenant was assigned to the Sixth Virginia infantry as drill-master. Subsequently he was appointed to the engineer corps of the regular army of the Confederate States, as a cadet, not having yet reached the age of twenty-one years. He served as an officer of engineers at Fort Norfolk, St. Helena and Craney island, until the evacuation of that district, when he went with General Huger to General Lee, and began an active career with the army of Northern Virginia, which included nearly all its famous campaigns and battles. He served during the Peninsular campaign, participating in the battles of the Chickahominy, Cold Harbor and Malvern Hill, and then lay in hospital for sixty days on account of injuries received at Cold Harbor. Subsequently he was placed in charge of the artillery store at Richmond, but soon applied for permission to go to the front, and

became assistant chief of ordnance on the staff of General Lee, a position he held until after the battle of Fredericksburg, in December, 1863. Subsequently he served upon the staff of Maj.-Gen. W. D. Pender, commanding a division of A. P. Hill's corps, until Pender fell mortally wounded at Gettysburg, and after that time upon the staff of the successor to the command of the "Light Division," Gen. Cadmus Wilcox, until the surrender at Appomattox. Meanwhile he was commissioned captain of artillery in the regular army. He was at Appomattox Court House when the surrender of Lee's army took place, but made his way to the headquarters of Gen. J. E. Johnston, in North Carolina, and at the surrender of the latter, started with Gen. Wade Hampton to join the army of the Trans-Mississippi. Hampton did not proceed further than Yorkville, S. C., but Captain Anderson went on with General Lee's scout, Shadbourne, and his party, toward Texas. With three others he reached Alexandria, in the Red river country, but the Federals being in possession, and Gen. Kirby Smith having surrendered, Captain Anderson went to New Orleans and returned to Virginia upon a transport steamer. This terminated his military career, and for a livelihood he engaged in teaching school for a year at Norfolk. During his residence there he was married to Miss Lizzie Masi, daughter of the Virginia educator and composer, Prof. P. H. Masi. In 1867 he removed to Washington, D. C., studied law in the Columbian university, and was admitted to the bar in 1871. In his subsequent practice he has made a specialty of patent law, a department of jurisprudence in which he has attained high rank. His investigations in this line of work are models of accuracy and thoroughness, and the correctness of his conclusions is seldom found to be questionable. In the midst of an active professional career he has retained a lively sympathy for his comrades in the Confederate army, and maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp, of Norfolk, and in the Washington Confederate Veterans association, of which he was the organizer and president.

Linnæus B. Anderson, M. D., a prominent physician of Norfolk, Va., is a native of Caroline county, of that State, and the son of Dr. Thomas Bates Anderson, who was born in Hanover county, January 14, 1792, the son of John Anderson, and he of Thomas Anderson, of English birth, who was a naval architect of Gloucester, Va. Of the ancestry of the latter no authentic record is possessed. He was born February 10, 1733, and married Frances Jones, of Gloucester, March 29, 1757. She, according to tradition and the corroboration of associated facts, was the daughter of Elizabeth (Cary) Jones, daughter of William Cary and granddaughter of Col. Myles Cary, the immigrant to Virginia, whose ancestral lines run back to Sir William Cary, husband of Mary Boleyn, the sister of Anne Boleyn, and father of William Cary, lord mayor of Bristol. Dr. Thomas B. Anderson's mother was a Miss Trevilian, whose mother was Sophia Terry, akin to the families of the same name in Lynchburg and southwest Virginia, and to the Bates family of Missouri. His father, John Anderson, who was in his minority during the Revolution, and had small facilities for education, was nevertheless a man of fine natural mental powers, and having determined to fully educate his children, sent his son, Thomas B., to the academies

of Mr. Byars and Mr. Thomas Nelson, where, as the classmate of I. Winston Jones and Joseph M. Shepherd, he completed his academic studies. He then passed two years in the office of Dr. Carter Berkley, and in 1809 entered the university of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated in medicine in 1811. He was prominent in his profession until his death, May 3, 1872. His wife, mother of Linnaeus B., was Harriet, daughter of John McLaughlin, whose wife was nearly related to Commodore Maury and Gen. John Minor. Dr. L. B. Anderson was educated principally by his father and prepared for matriculation in the Richmond medical college, where he was graduated at the age of eighteen years. Entering the practice at once in association with his father, he continued that partnership for more than thirty years, practicing in the Virginia counties of Caroline, Hanover, Louisa and Spottsylvania. He then removed to Norfolk, where he has been active and prominent in his profession during fifteen years. He faithfully supported the Confederacy, but during the first two years of the war was kept out of the military service by continued illness. In 1863 he engaged in the scouting service for General Pettigrew, of the army of Northern Virginia, and afterward was authorized to organize a company of scouts, first called Home Guards, and later the North Anna Mounted Rifles, or the North Anna Scouts. With the rank of captain he led this troop in an adventurous and valuable service, being attached at different times to the commands of Gens. W. H. F. Lee, Kemper and Stuart, and others, but mainly under the immediate orders of Gen. Robert E. Lee. He was finally paroled at Richmond by Colonel Evans, of the United States army, about ten days after the surrender at Appomattox. During his professional career he has been devoted to the routine of practice, but has also taken an active part in the social life of the profession, and has contributed freely to the literature of medicine. He was a member of the first medical organization in Virginia in 1851, was first vice-president of the society of alumni of the Virginia medical college, for two years was president of the Norfolk medical society, and was a member of the Pan-American medical congress at Washington. Since the war he has been active in public affairs and has rendered efficient public service as magistrate of Hanover county. He was a director in the Richmond, Fredericksburg & Potomac railroad company. Dr. Anderson was married February 4, 1846, to Edmonia T., daughter of John T. Anderson, of Hanover county. Their children living are Dr. Hermann B. Anderson, of Hanover county, Capt. Havelock Anderson, of Kansas City, now serving in United States army, Thomas J. Anderson, general passenger agent for the Seaboard Air Line railroad, William T. Anderson, postmaster of Norfolk, Sydney J. Anderson, water inspector of Norfolk, Mrs. I. T. Jackson, of Charlottesville, and Mrs. Dr. E. O. Peyton, of Augusta county, Va. William T. Anderson, of Norfolk, son of the foregoing, was born in Hanover county, July 6, 1865. He was educated in the school of Alfred Duke, continued his studies at Hatcher's academy in Orange county and at Richmond college, and then in the summer of 1885 removed to Norfolk, which has since been his home. In 1891 he became one of the incorporators and a director of the Nottingham & Wrenn company, which stands at the head of the

coal and lumber trade in the city. He is also one of the principal stockholders in the Tidewater ice company. In 1892 he became the representative of his ward upon the Democratic executive committee, and was reappointed in 1894. In 1896 he was elected to a membership in the city council, and by his party was chosen chairman of the executive committee for the city organization. Both these positions he resigned on March 2, 1897, to accept from President Cleveland the appointment of postmaster of Norfolk. In 1890 Mr. Anderson was married to Miss Kate Nottingham, and they have four children.

William A. Anderson, a distinguished citizen of Lexington, Va., who participated with gallantry in the early achievements of the Stonewall brigade, was born in Botetourt county in 1842. At the passage of the ordinance of secession he was a student at Washington college, Lexington, and left that institution in April, for the military service of the State, as orderly-sergeant of the Liberty Hall Volunteers, which became Company I of the Fourth regiment of infantry. He participated with this command in the affair at Falling Waters, and in the battle of July 21, 1861, at Manassas, when he received a wound in the knee which confined him to his bed for five months and for years compelled him to resort to the use of crutches. Nevertheless, in 1864, while yet on crutches, he was a member of an artillery company formed in Albemarle county, of disabled soldiers, and saw some service there and with the home guards of Rockbridge county in raids against Averell and other Federal commanders. After the war he studied law in the university of Virginia, graduating in 1866, and since then has been engaged in the practice of his profession at Lexington. He has been prominent in political affairs, as a campaign speaker and for ten years as member of the State executive committee of the Democratic party. In 1869 he was elected to the State senate and served until 1873. Subsequently he was a member of the house from 1883 to 1885 and from 1887 to 1889. During the Paris exposition of 1888 he served as one of the United States commissioners, and prepared a report on the railway exhibit, transportation, etc. In recognition of his services he received a diploma and medal from the French government.

John S. Apperson, M. D., of Marion, Va., was born August 21, 1837, in Orange county, Va., and passed the first six years of his life upon the field where the bloody battle of Chancellorsville was fought a quarter of a century later. In 1859 he removed to Smyth county, and was engaged in the study of medicine when the crisis arrived between the North and South. Upon the day that Fort Sumter surrendered he enlisted as a private in the Smyth Blues, a volunteer organization which soon afterward was called to Richmond and thence sent to Harper's Ferry, where it became Company D of the Fourth Virginia infantry, brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson, the "Stonewall brigade." Soon after reaching this rendezvous Private Apperson, on account of his professional acquirements, was detailed as hospital steward under Surgeon Harvey Black, with whom he served until just before the battle of Fredericksburg, when he was attached to the field infirmary of the Second corps, army of Northern Virginia, the first organized traveling infirmary of the civil war. It was a thoroughly equipped field hospital, acting intermediary to the field and general hospitals. In the course of

his valued and faithful service Dr. Apperson was present at every engagement of the armies of Lee and Jackson, except the fight at Seven Pines. He was with Jackson at Kernstown, Bull Pasture Mountain and McDowell, Front Royal, Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic, then all the battles of Jackson's corps through 1862, from the Chickahominy to Fredericksburg. He passed the winter at Guiney's Station, and in the following year served upon the battlefields of Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg and Payne's Farm, and during the return from Pennsylvania was actively engaged in a skirmish at Williamsport, in command of a small body of Confederates, driving off a party of the enemy. After wintering at Orange Court House he was present in all the battles from the Wilderness to Richmond, then in the Lynchburg campaign, the pursuit of the Yankees down the valley, the expedition through Maryland, including the battle of Monocacy, and the skirmishes before Washington, closing this busy year with the campaign of Early against Sheridan. After wintering at Fishersville, and witnessing the disastrous fight at Waynesboro, he rejoined Lee at Richmond March 25, 1865, and soon afterward participated in the movement toward Lynchburg which closed at Appomattox. He came home with a mule, the only pay received for his services, which he disposed of to obtain drugs, and he then began the practice of medicine. In 1867 he was graduated at the university of Virginia, and established himself for professional work at Chilhowie, where he remained until 1887. At this time he became a member of the building committee of the Southwestern asylum for the insane, and upon the completion of the institution served two years as assistant physician. Then after two years' practice at Glade Springs he made his home at Marion, where he has since continued in practice, with the exception of one year spent at Chicago. In 1868 Dr. Apperson was married to Ellen V. Hull, who died in 1887, and two years later he was married to Miss Lizzie Black.

Frank M. Arthur, a prosperous farmer of Nansemond county, Va., and a veteran of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, was born at the family home, where he now resides, in 1843. He is the son of James S. Arthur, also a farmer, and the grandson of John S. Arthur, a native of England, who came to America and settled in that county, subsequently serving as a soldier in the war of 1812. The mother of Mr. Arthur was Charlotte, daughter of James Ward, also a soldier of 1812. Early in 1862, being about nineteen years of age, Arthur enlisted in Company I of the Ninth Virginia regiment of infantry, formerly known as the Craney Island artillery, and soon afterward fought in his first battle at Malvern Hill, where the company behaved like veterans. He subsequently participated in the battles at Warrenton Springs, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, and the December battle of Fredericksburg. Marching into Pennsylvania with the army, he was one of the heroes who charged up the slope of Cemetery hill in the battle of Gettysburg, on July 3d. His company lost twenty-seven out of thirty-eight men that went into the fight. Private Arthur was among those who gained the Federal lines, and was near General Armistead when the latter fell. He was captured and confined at Fort Delaware and Point Lookout about fourteen months, and while in prison was elected second lieutenant by his

comrades. On being exchanged he rejoined his company at Richmond, and participated in the fighting during the long siege of Richmond, in command of his company. At the battle of Five Forks he was again captured on April 1, 1865, and from then until the latter part of June was confined at Johnson's island, Ohio. Then returning to his home, he resumed the occupation of farming, and still resides upon the farm of one hundred and ninety-two acres on the banks of the Nansemond, which has always been in possession of his family since his ancestor acquired it. He was married in 1872 to Mary, daughter of Hardy C. Williams, of Gates county, N. C., and they have one child living, William Hardy Arthur, a student in the university college of medicine.

Captain William Aylett Ashby was born in Culpeper county, Va., in 1838, the son of John Thompson and Emily Buckner Ashby. His early life was spent at Culpeper Court House. In 1859 the Culpeper Minute Men were organized, and he was elected sergeant, the company being commanded by Capt. Tazewell Patton. The Minute Men were ordered to Harper's Ferry in April, 1861, and were assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia regiment, Col. A. P. Hill's regiment. Sergeant Ashby was appointed quartermaster sergeant of this regiment at Winchester in the spring of 1861. This position he held until the spring of 1863, when he was elected first lieutenant of Company E, Thirteenth Virginia. He was made captain of this company soon after the battle of Fredericksburg, the captain of Company E having been killed in battle. Captain Ashby was in the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, and many other engagements. He was with General Ewell at Lynchburg, and with General Early in the campaign of the Valley of Virginia, and took part in its engagements. He was captured at Fisher's Hill, and remained in prison until the close of the war. Immediately after the war he was in Baltimore for about six years, connected with a large dry goods house, then moved to Culpeper Court House and was a merchant there for fifteen years. He was appointed postmaster under Cleveland's second administration. He married Miss Nellie P. Alcocke, of Culpeper, Va., and they have two sons, one practicing law at Newport News, Va., and the other chief clerk of division of Chesapeake & Ohio railway company from Ashland to Louisville, Ky. C. Aylett Ashby, son of the foregoing, was born in Culpeper county, July 19, 1874, and was graduated in law at Richmond college, in 1896, and at once established himself at Newport News, where he is highly regarded, and has the promise of a successful career.

General Turner Ashby Camp Guard: At Winchester, Va., where the memory of the chivalrous Confederate hero, Gen. Turner Ashby, is specially precious, his name is honored by the title of the organized camp of Confederate veterans, also by an auxiliary association, known as Gen. Turner Ashby Camp Guard, of Winchester, which is worthy of notice. The purpose of the guard is to cherish and perpetuate the memories of Confederate soldiers, and their heroic struggle for their cause, to aid in ministering to the wants of disabled comrades and their widows and orphans, and to act as an escort of the camp at its public appearances. The membership is restricted to sympathizers and sons of Confederate soldiers or sailors. The roll in 1897 bore the names of sixty-

five gallant young men of Winchester, under the command of Capt. A. M. Baker, who has been prominent in the formation of the association, and is entitled to much credit for its success. The public appearances of the Guard, uniformed in full gray, and bearing swords, are always a subject of flattering comment. This organization, the first of its kind in the country, is deemed worthy of mention here, as an instance of the honor paid to the Confederate cause by the generation which has taken the place of the soldiers of 1861-65.

Lieutenant William W. Athey, of Leesburg, a distinguished veteran of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, was born near Mount Vernon, Va., August 15, 1836. In the spring of 1855 he removed to Leesburg, which has been his home since that date, except during the period of his service in the Confederate army. He enlisted among the first, in the spring of 1861, as a member of Company C of the Seventeenth regiment of infantry, under command of the gallant M. D. Corse. At the time of enlistment he was appointed third sergeant, and on the organization was promoted to the rank of sergeant-major of the regiment. On July 1, 1861, he was promoted first sergeant of the company, and on April 29, 1862, first lieutenant, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. He participated in the battles in 1861 of Blackburn's Ford and Manassas, and in 1862, during the Maryland campaign, fought at South Mountain or Boonsboro, where his gallantry received special mention in the official report of Colonel Corse. Here he was slightly wounded. In the Peninsular campaign of 1862, he fought at Williamsburg, Seven Pines and Frayser's farm, and was captured by the enemy in the latter engagement, but fortunately was exchanged after a month's imprisonment. Subsequently he participated in the battle of Fredericksburg, the siege of Suffolk, Manassas Gap, July 21, 1863; Flat Creek Bridge, May 14, 1864, and Drewry's Bluff. At the time of the surrender at Appomattox he was absent on leave, and soon afterward was paroled. He then quietly resumed the duties of civil life, and became engaged in the tailoring business, which was his occupation before the war. He maintains a membership in the Clinton-Hatcher camp. Lieutenant Athey was married in 1858, and his family includes five children.

Colonel T. P. August. After Virginia had passed the ordinance of secession (April 17, 1861), T. P. August, one of her prominent citizens, at once began to raise a regiment, and on May 21, 1861, was on the peninsula at the head of a regiment of Virginia volunteers in the army operating under General Magruder. His regiment became the Fifteenth Virginia and he received from the Confederate government the confirmation of his rank as colonel. He continued to serve under General Magruder until after the Seven Days' battles around Richmond in the summer of 1862. In his report of these battles General Magruder says: "Col. T. P. August was particularly distinguished." He was wounded and was unable to participate in the Second Manassas and Maryland campaigns. At Fredericksburg he was again at the head of his regiment. At the time of the battle of Chancellorsville he was with Longstreet in southeast Virginia. He was afterward on detached duty, and was not engaged in active campaigning again dur-

ing the war. Since the return of peace he has spent most of his time in Richmond, engaged in the practice of law.

Major William J. Baker, of the Confederate States army, a brother of Gen. Lawrence S. Baker, and a descendant of Gen. Lawrence Baker, of the Continental army, was born in North Carolina, a son of Dr. John B. Baker, a leading physician of Gates county, and for many years a prominent member of the legislature of that State. He was educated for the legal profession, and on reaching manhood was admitted to practice by the supreme court of the State. He pursued the practice of law until North Carolina entered the Confederacy, when he volunteered for military duty, and was assigned to the general staff of the army. Early in his military career he was on duty at headquarters in Norfolk, and later was in the field as a member of the staff of Gen. J. J. Pettigrew, until that officer was killed during the retreat from Gettysburg. At the time of the surrender at Appomattox he was post commander at Raleigh, N. C., and at once repaired to the headquarters of Gen. J. E. Johnston, with whom he was surrendered at Greensboro. Subsequently he made his home at Norfolk, and was engaged in the practice of law and business pursuits until his death in 1882. The wife of Major Baker was Sarah F. Collins, of Portsmouth, who died in 1889. Their son, William Lawrence Baker, was born at Norfolk, July 29, 1857, and was educated at the school of Prof. N. B. Webster, Norfolk, and Brigham's school at Mebaneville, N. C. Subsequently he was for three years employed by the Merchants' and Miners' transportation company, for several years was purser with the Washington steamship line, and after ten years' service as a cotton weigher, resigned that position for the office of city collector, to which he was elected in 1896. He was formerly a member of the Light Artillery Blues, and is connected with several fraternal orders.

Colonel John Brown Baldwin, one of the most loved leaders of the Virginia people during the period following the war of the Confederacy, was born at Spring Farm, near Staunton, January 11, 1820, and died September 30, 1873. He was the eldest son of the late Judge Briscoe G. Baldwin, of the supreme court of appeals, whose wife was Martha Steele Brown, daughter of Judge John Brown, chancellor of the Staunton circuit. Destined by ancestral inspiration and his own inclinations to a legal career, he obtained a liberal education at Staunton academy and the university of Virginia, and then entered the law office of his father. At the age of twenty-one he became the professional partner of his brother-in-law, Hon. A. H. H. Stuart, and three years later embarked upon an independent career as a practitioner. On September 20, 1842, he was married to Susan Madison, eldest daughter of the eminent lawyer, John Howe Peyton. As a whig he participated in the political campaign of 1844, and at the age of twenty-four years first attracted public attention to his remarkable powers as an orator. At this time, as throughout his life, the great power of his oratory lay in the strength of his arguments, his firm and unwavering grasp of the essential points at issue, and the consciousness of his audience that he honestly believed every word he said. He was not ornate, but his sentences were full of meaning and fell with sledge-hammer weight. Elected to the legislature he soon distinguished himself, and courageously took such ground regarding the proposed new

constitution that he was defeated at the next election. He continued to take part in the political campaigns, and held rank in the militia as a colonel. In 1860 he was one of the most ardent supporters of the Union, and opened the State campaign for Bell and Everett by a powerful speech at Richmond. In 1861 he sat in the State convention from Augusta county, and during the session had an interview with President Lincoln as a representative of the Union members. He returned greatly disappointed, and when it became certain that secession and war were inevitable he retired to his chamber and broke into tears. But when the ordinance had been ratified by the people he signed it, and with entire bravery took up the issue of the State. He accepted the office of inspector-general of the Virginia troops from Governor Letcher, and when these troops had been turned over to the Confederate States, he was commissioned colonel of the Fifty-second Virginia infantry. With this command he served in the West Virginia campaign until prostrated by a physical ailment which finally terminated his life. Before his recovery he was elected to the Confederate Congress, where he served with distinction during the continuance of the government, meanwhile, during the recesses of Congress, frequently being in active service as colonel of a home regiment of reserves. In May, 1865, he took an active part in a meeting at Staunton to advocate the restoration of peace and the preservation of order, and in the fall he was elected to the house of delegates, of which he served as speaker. In December, 1867, he was prominent in the great convention for organization against the "Underwood constitution," and there proposed a system of political organization that became of great efficiency. In 1868 he was president of the convention of the conservative party, and declined the nomination for governor in a speech which led a prominent journal to say that he had "reached the zenith of the confidence of the people of Virginia and stood before them almost without a peer." He was chairman of the Virginia delegation to the Democratic national convention of 1868, and in the winter following was one of the committee of nine which visited the United States Congress and secured concessions which resulted in the defeat of the objectionable clauses of the "Underwood constitution." Of this action it was said: "A few gentlemen who preferred the welfare of the State to their own popularity, organized a movement which saved their fellow citizens almost in spite of themselves." These political services were episodes in his life. As said of him by the Baltimore Sun, "He devoted his best energies to the restoration and re-establishment of his native State upon a sound basis, and the development of her varied interests." He was the father of the Augusta county fair, served faithfully as one of the board of visitors of the State university, and the extension of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad to the Ohio river may almost be said to be due to his efforts. The eminence which he might have attained in the future and happier years of the State, when it was free to honor its distinguished sons, may only be surmised.

Colonel Robert F. Baldwin was born at Winchester, August 29, 1820, the son of Dr. Archibald Stewart Baldwin (whose father was Dr. Cornelius Baldwin), who practiced medicine for fifty years at Winchester, his native place, was eminent in his profession, and a gentleman of the old school. Robert F. Baldwin was educated for

the profession in which his father and grandfather had been distinguished, and after studying in both the university of Virginia and the university of Pennsylvania, was graduated by the latter. He then, until the outbreak of war, was the professional partner of his father, speedily gaining prominence as a physician. In 1861, with true-hearted and chivalrous impulses, he gave his services as a soldier to his State, and was commissioned colonel of the Thirty-first Virginia regiment. During the winter of 1861-62, after General Jackson had retired from West Virginia to the Shenandoah valley, he was left with a part of his command and two other militia regiments, at Bloomery Gap, Hampshire county, where, about daylight, February 14th, he was attacked by a large force under Gen. Frederick Lander. Colonel Baldwin, with his men, went out to meet the enemy, and gallantly kept him at bay until the wagon-train of the command and most of the soldiers could escape. During the mêlée General Lander, observing Baldwin's intrepid conduct, gave the order: "Cease firing at that gallant officer, surround and capture him," and this was accomplished. His captor sent him to Fort Chase with a letter asking for him kindness and consideration as a gallant officer and true gentleman. At the prison camp he was detailed to treat the sick until he was exchanged. His health was then very delicate, but desiring to give the South his services to the utmost of his ability, he accepted a commission as surgeon, and was assigned to the Fifth infantry, Stonewall brigade. After field duty at Cross Keys and Fort Republic, it became apparent he could not sustain the fatigues of that service, and he was put in charge of the hospital at Staunton, where he remained until the close of hostilities. Resuming his practice at Winchester then, he was, after the death of Dr. F. T. Stribling, appointed superintendent of the State hospital for the insane at Staunton. Here he was distinguished for his kindness, conscientious devotion to duty, and professional skill, until he died, in November, 1879, lamented by the press and people of the State. The wife of Colonel Baldwin, Caroline, daughter of Hon. Richard Barton, once a member of the Virginia assembly, died six months before her husband. William B. Baldwin, son of the foregoing, of recent years a citizen of Norfolk, where he is winning a creditable place among the business men of that city, was born at Winchester, April 16, 1865. He was reared at his native town and educated in the Shenandoah valley academy. During the year 1881 he went to Norfolk to enter business life, in which he has met with creditable success. November 19, 1895, he was married to Bessie Saunders Taylor, daughter of Col. Walter H. Taylor, and grand-niece of Gen. R. L. Page.

David W. Ballentine, one of the survivors of the charge of Pickett's division at Gettysburg, now a resident of Portsmouth, was born at that city in 1840, the son of David and Elizabeth (Cuthrell) Ballentine. He entered the service of Virginia at the opening of the war as a sergeant in the Portsmouth Rifle company, organized in 1792, and was first stationed at the naval hospital, and later at Pig Point, where he participated in the artillery fight with the Harriet Lane. In February, 1862, he went with his company to reinforce the Third Georgia regiment in its fight with Reno near South Mills, and then returning to a battery near Norfolk, witnessed the famous naval combat of the Virginia and Monitor.

With the Ninth regiment, Armistead's brigade, he took part in the battle of Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' campaign, his command being hotly engaged at Malvern Hill. He was next in battle at Warrenton Springs, soon afterward at Second Manassas, and subsequently participated in the engagements at Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. During the succeeding fall and winter he was with his brigade in North Carolina and in the Suffolk campaign. Then rejoining Lee's army he marched into Pennsylvania, and on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg was one of the irresistible line of gray that swept up Cemetery hill and drove the enemy from their position; but standing there unsupported in the midst of the Federal army, were swept away in a storm of fire. Of the forty-eight men of the Portsmouth Rifles who went into action, only seven were able to report for duty the next day. Sergeant Ballentine, falling wounded, was captured, and from that time until February, 1865, was held as a prisoner of war at Fort Henry, Fort Delaware and Point Lookout. On rejoining his regiment he fought in the trenches before Petersburg, and after the evacuation fought his last battle at Five Forks, where he was again captured, and held at Point Lookout until June, 1865. He then resumed his work as a builder, which he abandoned to enter the army, and in 1866 began railroad work, in which he has rapidly won promotion, now being master carbuilder for the Seaboard Air Line railroad. He has taken a worthy part in public and social affairs, has served twenty-six years upon the city council, part of the time as vice-president, has been a director of the Portsmouth and Norfolk building and loan association many years, and is a member of Stonewall camp, and the Masonic and other fraternal orders. In 1877 he was married to Ruth H., daughter of Thomas H. Myers.

Colonel Charles A. Ballou, a Virginian soldier of the war of 1812, and subsequently colonel of State militia, who died in 1865, gave three sons to the Confederate service. Their mother was Rebecca A. Medley, daughter of Capt. Isaac Medley, of the war of 1812. The oldest son, Dr. Isaac T. Ballou, enlisted with a company from Halifax county and served throughout the war as a surgeon. The youngest, James E. Ballou, was in business at Memphis, Tenn., when the war began, and on his way to Virginia fell in with a Mississippi regiment bound for Manassas, which he joined. At the battle of Ball's Bluff, his first encounter with the enemy, he was shot through the body and killed. Charles A. Ballou, the second son, born in Halifax county, December 4, 1834, was debarred from service in the field by delicate health which had previously compelled him to abandon his studies at Washington college, and take up the profession of civil engineering as a means of promoting his strength. He volunteered in 1861, but was compelled to give up going, on account of physical disability. In 1863, anxious to render some service, he entered the quartermaster's department, in which he continued until the close of the war. Reporting to Maj. Charles S. Carrington, at Richmond, he was then ordered to report to Capt. Harry Robinson, at Danville, and put in charge of the government stores at New's Ferry, where he remained during the continuance of the war. While there he participated in the defeat of the Federal party which undertook to destroy the Staunton river bridge. After the war Mr. Ballou engaged in civil engineering, including railroad work, was principal of the Winston academy in

1873-74, and in July of the latter year became city engineer of Danville, a position he has ever since held; also since 1876, discharging the duties of superintendent of the water works and gas works. He is a member of the Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate veterans.

Dr. Sidney B. Barham, a native of Surry county, was graduated in medicine at the medical department of Hampden-Sidney college, now the medical college of Virginia, in 1861, and though in frail health, tendered his services to the Confederate government. He served as acting assistant surgeon in general hospital, No. 11, at Richmond, Surgeon St. George Peachy in charge, in the fall of 1862, and then was compelled by his health to retire. But during the remainder of the war he faithfully ministered, as he was able to the wounded and sick soldiers and their families, without charge. His son, Judge Thomas J. Barham, of Newport News, was born in Surry county, November 31, 1863, was graduated at Randolph-Macon college in 1886, and completed a law course at the State university under John B. Minor in 1889. After practicing for a time at Smithfield, he located at Newport News in 1891, and was soon afterward elected police magistrate. Three years later, upon the incorporation of the city in 1896, he became its first judge of the corporation court. He is a member of the local and State bar associations. In 1896 he was married to E. Louise, daughter of A. Fred. Biggers, formerly a prominent educator and citizen of Lynchburg. Judge Barham reveres the memory of the soldiers of the Confederacy and is a member of the Sons of Confederate Veterans of Newport News.

Andrew J. Barker, of Washington, D. C., who served in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Alexandria, Va., in 1842. When he was ten years of age his home was made at Washington, where he resided until the beginning of the war of the Confederacy. He then entered the military service of the State of Virginia, and though not enrolled at first, served from August, 1861, until the fall of Fort Donelson, Tenn. He then, in February, 1862, enlisted in the battery commanded by Capt. W. W. Parker, and participated in nearly all the subsequent operations of that body of artillery. He was engaged at the second battle of Manassas, at Sharpsburg, Md., where he was hit but not seriously hurt, at Fredericksburg, at Chancellorsville, at the three days' struggle at Gettysburg, where his battery fired the last shot from the Confederate lines on the last day, in the siege of Knoxville, Tenn., with Longstreet, through the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania Court House, and in the defense of Richmond on the Howlett house line. During the last three months of the siege of Richmond, he was detailed for duty as a courier, and in one of his trips was severely injured in the foot. In April, 1865, he was sent to hospital at Chester Station, Va., whence he soon followed the army, and after the surrender, in which he did not participate, proceeded, though crippled, to Jackson, Miss., in the hope of joining a Confederate command. In Mississippi he remained a few months, finding employment at the town of McNutt's, after which he went to St. Mary's, Ind., and was occupied as a clerk for a year and a half. He made his home at Washington, D. C., in 1868, and since then has been engaged as a carpenter and builder, later in the grocery trade, and since 1875 in speculative investments. In 1875 Mr. Barker was married to Susan A., daughter of Capt. Edward John-

son, of Dorchester, Md., and they have two children, Edward F. and Lulu Amelia.

Thomas F. Barksdale, a highly esteemed citizen of Roanoke, Va., was born in Halifax county in 1833. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, where he received a training that made him subsequently a useful soldier in the Confederate army. After his graduation in 1855 he taught school for two years in Floyd and Roanoke counties, and in 1859 returned to Halifax to embark in the practice of law, for which he had meanwhile fitted himself by professional studies. This occupation he abandoned in April, 1861, to enter the military service of the State with the Halifax Light Infantry, a volunteer organization in which he held the rank of orderly sergeant. With his company he was assigned to the Fifty-third Virginia infantry regiment, and was promoted to junior second lieutenant. Lieutenant Barksdale served with this regiment during the year of enlistment, returning home in May, 1862. Subsequently he became a member of the Fifth regiment of cavalry, in which command he served until disabled by wounds received in battle. He fought in the initial conflict on Virginia soil, at Big Bethel, went through the bloody battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, and participated in the famous cavalry battle at Yellow Tavern, where he received two wounds, one in the right arm and one in the left shoulder, which were so serious as to incapacitate him for further service. He rejoined his command in the winter of 1864-65, but was sent to the hospital at Charlottesville for treatment. After the close of hostilities he made his home at Roanoke, where he has since resided, and is successfully engaged in real estate brokerage.

Robert G. Barlow, of Williamsburg, Va., a Confederate soldier, identified for four years with the career of the Thirty-second Virginia infantry regiment, was born at Williamsburg, September 4, 1842. His parents, Robert J. Barlow, a native of New Kent county, and Sarah Grave, who was born at Williamsburg, gave yet another son to the Confederate cause, who served in the Thirty-second regiment until just on the eve of the return of peace he was killed at Dinwiddie Court House, March 31, 1865. Robert entered the service in April, 1861, with the Junior Guards of Williamsport, which became Company C of the Thirty-second regiment, Corse's brigade, Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, and served through the four years' struggle as a private and sergeant. He participated in many engagements in Virginia, Maryland, Pennsylvania, Tennessee and North Carolina, his principal battles being Seven Pines, Savage's Station, Malvern Hill, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Yellow Tavern, Second Cold Harbor, Drewry's Bluff and Five Forks. Through all this fiery trial he was so fortunate as to pass without a wound, though his clothing was frequently pierced by bullets. On the retreat from Petersburg, in 1865, he was captured at High Bridge, and was imprisoned for a short time at Libby prison, Richmond. After the close of hostilities he returned to Williamsburg and resumed his former employment as a carpenter, which has occupied him ever since. For three years past he has held the post of carpenter at the Eastern lunatic asylum at Williamsburg. He is a valued member of Magruder-Ewell camp, Confederate veterans. February 11, 1868, he was married to Mrs. Mary Ann Crandel, daughter of James West, and widow of Rich-

ard Crandel, a Confederate soldier who was mortally wounded at Sharpsburg. They have five children: Charles W., Carrie M., Cora T., Mary Ann, and Robert T. Barlow.

Harvey G. H. Barnes, of Richmond, who added honor to the record of the Second Richmond Howitzers, by his faithful service in the field and heroic endurance of prolonged captivity, entered the Confederate service as a private in the Howitzers about February 22, 1862, being then about eighteen years of age. Soon called into action in the Peninsular campaign, he fought with his command at Winn's Mill, Williamsburg, and the Seven Days' battles before Richmond. In the Maryland campaign that presently followed, he participated in the battles of Williamsport and Sharpsburg, and in December following, shared in the credit of the decisive defeat of the invading Federals at Fredericksburg. In 1863 he was at Brandy Station, fought at Chancellorsville, and in the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, and reached the field of Gettysburg in the afternoon of the second day's fight. He was engaged at once, and until the night of the third day, when he was captured by Kilpatrick's command. Subsequently he served as a prisoner of war through the autumn and winter of 1863, the whole of 1864, and the spring of 1865, until March of that year, when he was exchanged. At once reporting for duty at Richmond, he was granted a furlough, but he returned to the front a week later, and joined the Howitzers at Fort Clifton, on the line of Petersburg defenses. After the brief but gallant service which ensued, he joined in the retreat, and fought in the rear guard of the army at Sailor's Creek, where he had the misfortune to be again captured. Sent to City Point and Newport News, he was detained there until his parole in June, 1865. Since the war he has occupied an honorable position in the community, and is now employed as paying teller of the State bank. He is an active member of the Howitzer association.

Captain O. W. Barrow, a gallant veteran of Pickett's division, now a citizen of Danville, is one of three brothers who served in the army of Northern Virginia. Their parents were Benjamin Barrow, of Dinwiddie county, and Susan Ann Watkins, of Henry county, who were married in 1835. Robert P. Barrow, the second son, was a medical student at the beginning of the Confederate era, promptly enlisted as a private in Company H, Twenty-fourth Virginia infantry, was detailed in the medical department of the regiment, and was killed at Williamsburg, May 5, 1862, while trying to rescue the body of George Houston, the color-bearer of his regiment. William W., the youngest, enlisted as a private in the same company, and served throughout the four years, with promotion to sergeant. He was seriously wounded at Cold Harbor. His death occurred March 4, 1889. O. W. Barrow, the oldest, born in Henry county, April 15, 1836, left his occupation as a clerk to enlist, June 5, 1861, in the same company with his two brothers, and during the first year of service became quartermaster-sergeant of the regiment. At the reorganization, May 10, 1862, he was elected captain of the company, the rank he held during the three years of war which followed. At Seven Pines he was severely wounded in the left hip, and was not able to resume command of his company until the battle of Fredericksburg, when he was again wounded, but slightly. At Gettysburg he commanded the skirmish line on Pickett's right. At the reunion on this battlefield in 1887, Captain Bar-

row formed the acquaintance of William F. Lynch, the Federal commander of the skirmish line who confronted him. The two became warm friends, and while congratulating the Federal soldier upon his success in subsequently gaining the brevet rank of brigadier-general, Captain Barrow took occasion to say that he was still a captain, but that if the Confederate soldiers had enjoyed the privilege of promotion on the field, they would all have been brigadier-generals before the end of the war. While serving under General Hoke in the siege of Plymouth, N. C., Captain Barrow was severely wounded in the right knee by a fragment of shell, from the effects of which he has never recovered. Immediately after the battle of Drewry's Bluff he and his adjutant stood on guard alone one night, watching the line of Grant's army, while the exhausted men of the regiment slept. He was at this time frequently in command of the regiment as senior captain, and he held that honor in the last dress parade of the gallant Twenty-fourth. At Five Forks, where Pickett's division was hotly beset, he was captured, and the remainder of the war period, up to June, 1865, he passed at Johnson's island. On returning to the South he engaged in the grocery business at Baltimore, and in 1871 he established himself in the same trade at Danville, but went out of that business several years ago and has since been engaged in the tobacco business. He is a member of Cabell-Graves camp and is an influential citizen.

James E. Barry, first lieutenant of the famous United Artillery, of Norfolk, was born in Savannah, Ga., where his father, James Barry, resided previous to his removal to Norfolk, in 1818. His father, who was engaged in business at Norfolk, as a dealer in crockery, died December 20, 1871, at the age of ninety-eight years. His mother, whose maiden name was Margaret Ann Ahern, died at Norfolk of yellow fever in 1826. Lieutenant Barry is descended from an ancient and honorable family in Ireland, his great-grandfather being James III, earl of Barrymore. After the retirement of his father from business, in 1855, he succeeded him in trade, and continued in that occupation until the outbreak of the war. Meanwhile, in early manhood, he held rank as first lieutenant of the Light Artillery Blues, and when the United Artillery was organized at Norfolk a few days before the burning of the navy yard, he was elected second in command to Captain Kevill. He served at Fort Norfolk, and was one of the detail of thirty-one men selected to fill out the fighting force of the Virginia during the attack on the Federal fleet and the engagement with the Monitor. During the interval between the battle of Seven Pines and the subsequent aggressive movements under Lee, Lieutenant Barry commanded the ironclad railroad battery which operated on the York River road. He continued with the battery during all of its well-known service, during a large part of the time in command, until his health broke down in the winter of 1864-65, near the end of the war, when he accepted an honorable discharge, at the advice of the post surgeon. After the close of hostilities he returned to Norfolk, and devoted his time to the care and improvement of his large estate. Since then this has been his chief occupation, but he has also rendered valuable service as a member of the city council, and for twelve years held the position of president of the Bank of Commerce. He maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp of Confederate Veterans, in which he has held the rank of

paymaster. On May 19, 1852, he was married to Mary M. Moran, a native of County Wexford, Ireland, and daughter of Nicholas and Margaret (Cheevers) Moran. She is the great niece of William Moran, known at Norfolk as William Plume, who came from Ireland with his kinsman, Commodore John Barry, became a conspicuous figure in the early history of Norfolk, and dying in 1807, was interred in St. Mary's churchyard. She is also a niece of Jasper and Thomas Moran, former prominent merchants of Norfolk. Her mother was the fifth in descent from Sir Christopher Cheevers, head of the family of Cheevers of Mount Leinster, and a descendant of the Duke of Somerset, Lord Protector of England. Mr. and Mrs. Barry have had three sons, Thomas Moran, James E., Jr., and Robert Emmett, deceased. Thomas M. married, in 1878, Virginia Lovett, of Norfolk, and they have five children, John Cheevers Moran, Mary Robinette, James Edward, Frederick James R., and Margaret Virginia.

William Stone Barton, late judge of the Tenth judicial district of Virginia, and during the Confederate era prominent in the military service, was a member of a Fredericksburg family, conspicuous for its efforts in the cause of Southern independence. The father was Thomas Bowerbank Barton, a lawyer of distinction, who died in 1872. The mother bore the maiden name of Susan Stone. All of their four sons were in the Confederate army. Howard T., with the rank of surgeon, was connected with the medical department until the end; Seth Maxwell, whose services are elsewhere mentioned, rose to the rank of brigadier-general; and Thomas Scott served in the commissary department. William Stone Barton, the oldest brother, was born at Fredericksburg, September 29, 1820, and was educated at Hanson's academy and the university of Virginia. He studied law under his father and Judge John Tayloe Lomax, of Fredericksburg, and began the practice of his profession at that city in 1841. During the next twenty years he was a successful attorney, was for a long time an influential member of the city council and a leader in public affairs. He was also captain of the Washington Guards, and when his company and the Fredericksburg Grays were formed in a battalion in 1860, he was commissioned major. During 1861 he served as major of the Thirtieth Virginia regiment, and participated in its service. Upon the reorganization, in 1862, he was transferred from the line to staff duties, and throughout the remainder of the war Major Barton served as judge advocate general in the army of Northern Virginia. Before his death he stated that the most pleasant recollections he had of the great struggle were of the lives he had been permitted to save from hasty condemnation. In this service he not only preserved for the army some good soldiers, but brought happiness again to many a pleading wife whose husband had for some offense brought himself under the stern judgment of a court-martial. After the war he resumed his law practice at Fredericksburg, and by his honorable and genial life became one of the most popular citizens of the town. From 1870 until his death he held the office of judge of the circuit comprising the city of Fredericksburg and eight counties. His wife, Marion Eliza Jenifer, of Maryland, passed away three years before his demise, which occurred January 16, 1898.

William Upshur Bass, a prominent wholesale merchant of Rich-

mond, is a native of that city, born in 1844. He was reared and educated at Richmond until the secession of the State, when, though he had not yet reached the military age, he entered with enthusiasm into the Confederate cause. He enlisted, April 21, 1861, as a private in Company D of the First Virginia regiment of infantry, and served about seven months before it was discovered that he was under the required age. He was then discharged from the service, but in spite of this he managed to remain with his company another three or four months, and rendered active service in many important engagements. Finally returning to Richmond he soon afterward became a member of the President's Guard, with the rank of first sergeant, and subsequently was promoted first lieutenant. With this command he served at the president's home, and in and about the city in its defense and finally, during the siege of 1864-65 at Fort Harrison. At the evacuation of the city, he was captured by the Federal troops, and paroled there. Among the battles in which he participated were Bull Run, First Manassas, Mason's Hill, Munson's Hill, Fairfax Court House, Falls Church and the fighting at Fort Harrison in defense of Richmond, in all of which he rendered honorable service as a Confederate soldier. Lieutenant Bass was in command of the company that brought the prisoners off of the boat Shawsheen. After the close of the war he engaged in commercial pursuits and is now successfully conducting a wholesale grocery business. In March, 1864, Lieutenant Bass was married to Sallie E., daughter of Robert Redford, a native of Virginia, and they have four sons and three daughters living, and have lost one daughter. Lieutenant Bass is a valued member of both the R. E. Lee and G. E. Pickett camps of Confederate veterans at Richmond.

Rev. Henry Wilson Battle, D. D., was born July 19, 1856, in the town of Tuskegee, Ala., which in those days few southern communities outranked in wealth and refinement. In the first part of the century, his grandfather, Dr. Cullen Battle, a man of refined culture and ample wealth, had emigrated from the Old North State. Henry's father rendered distinguished services to the South in the hour of her need and her greatest peril. On the platform during those years of heated debate, that finally precipitated the civil war, his eloquent tongue was often heard, and his name was often coupled with Alabama's greatest forensic orator, William L. Yancey. And when the war of words became a war of swords, there was not a braver soldier, or more gallant officer, to follow the fortunes of the Confederacy than Brig.-Gen. Cullen A. Battle, of the army of Northern Virginia. Early in life Henry W. Battle showed the marks of this heredity in his strong mental endowments and oratorical gifts. Before he had attained his majority he was chosen by the executive committee of the Democratic party of Alabama to canvass the State with the famous orator, Gen. Alpheus Baker, and at the following session of the legislature, his disabilities of nonage were removed by special act, to enable him to hold office. At the age of nineteen he became a member of one of the most distinguished and brilliant bars in the South. Three years after his admission to the bar, and while there was pending a flattering proposition to practice law in New York, to the surprise of his friends he suddenly announced his purpose to enter the gospel ministry, and in less than a month he had entered the Southern Baptist theological seminary. Dr. Battle's first pastorate was at Columbus,

Miss., one of the most prominent churches of that State. A not overstrong constitution soon felt the effect of the Columbus climate, and after three years of successful work, he was compelled to seek a more invigorating atmosphere. This brought him at length to North Carolina, where, with tokens of divine blessing, he served in several town pastorates. It was at this time and in the Old North State that he found his helpmeet, a woman in every way suited to share his life work, its toils and its honors. He was on the 11th of June, 1889, married to Miss Margaret Stewart, of Clinton, N. C. At this writing it has been six years since Dr. Battle came to the pastorate of the First Baptist church of Petersburg, Va., and his ministry in the Cockade city has been an uninterrupted success. Presiding over a large congregation of wealthy and cultivated people, he measures up to the full requirements of the high position and exerts a commanding influence on the moral and spiritual life of the city. In the State of Virginia Dr. Battle easily takes a front rank in the Baptist denomination and his voice is heard and influence felt in all her councils. He is the honored president of the Sunday School and Bible board, and a valued trustee of the Woman's college at Richmond, Va. Soon after his coming to Virginia he received from Wake Forest college, the honorary degree of doctor of divinity.

Oscar F. Baxter, of Norfolk, a veteran of the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Currituck county, N. C., where his family had resided for several generations, his grandfather, Isaac Baxter, having been a prosperous planter, and sheriff of the county for over forty years. He was left an orphan in early boyhood by the death of his father, Isaac N. Baxter, in 1855, and by the death of his mother, whose maiden name was Frances Bray, in 1852. From 1855 until 1862 he made his home with his uncle, Dr. Oscar F. Baxter, for whom he was named, who had served in the United States army as a surgeon during the Mexican war, and subsequently held the same rank in the Confederate States army. At the age of seventeen he left his uncle's home at Kempsville, Princess Anne county, Va., and in May, 1862, entered the Confederate service as a private in Burrough's Fourteenth battalion of cavalry. After the evacuation of Norfolk in 1862, this battalion was united with the Fifteenth battalion of cavalry, the two forming the Fifteenth Virginia regiment of cavalry. Still later the Fifteenth was consolidated with the Fifth Virginia regiment of cavalry. With this gallant command he endured the dangers and hardships of a soldier's life, sharing in fatiguing marches and going sometimes for three days and nights without food, and missing none of the engagements of his regiment except when he was a prisoner of war. Among the prominent battles of his service were Seven Pines, Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Culpeper Court House, Brandy Station, Luray, Winchester, Fisher's Hill, Gainesville, Trevilian Station, Reams' Station. In 1864 he was captured in eastern North Carolina and was confined at Point Lookout seven months. On being exchanged he rejoined his command and served until the surrender at Appomattox, receiving his final parole at Norfolk. Returning to his home before he was twenty-one, he engaged in farming until 1891, meanwhile removing to Broad Creek, Princess Anne county. Since 1891 he has resided at Norfolk, and has been occupied with real

estate business. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, and of the orders of Masons and Knights of Pythias. He is a communicant of St. Peter's Episcopal church. He was married January 16, 1872, to Mary Granby Scott, who died May 19, 1897, leaving three children, Mary Armitt, Alan Leonidas, Frank Clifton.

C. B. Beale, of Norfolk, a gallant soldier of the Thirty-first North Carolina infantry, was born in Hertford county, N. C., June 10, 1843. His father, William Beale, born in the same county January 1, 1800, dying in 1861, was a very successful farmer, owning two plantations and a large number of slaves. His mother, whose maiden name was Martha Ann Britt, born February 8, 1808, dying in 1886, was a descendant of the excellent Goodman family, of Virginia. Young Beale was educated in Buckhorn academy of his native township, until he had reached the age of seventeen years, when he enlisted, in April, 1861, as a private in the Hertford Light Infantry. Shortly afterward he was sent home on a sick furlough, and during his absence the company was captured by General Butler at Cape Hatteras. He then enlisted in the Hertford County Guards, Company G of the Thirty-first North Carolina regiment of infantry, in which he served during the remainder of the war, being promoted to fifth sergeant of his company and sergeant major of his regiment. At Roanoke island, February 12, 1862, he was captured with his entire command and paroled for six months, after which the regiment was reorganized at Raleigh in September. He participated in the fight at White Hall, N. C., where he was wounded in the right shoulder, was engaged against a colored division under General Terry on James island, August 16, 1863, and two days later served in the defense of Battery Wagner, on Morris island, against the attack of the Federals, which lasted from sunrise until 1 o'clock of the following morning, and ended in their repulse with a loss of 2,000. He assisted in the capture of the Federal gunboat *Smith Briggs*, at Smithfield, Va., and was next with the gallant command which fought its way through Butler's lines between Richmond and Petersburg, May 12, 1864, and joined the Confederate force at Drewry's bluff, fighting there on May 16th, and at Bermuda Hundreds on the day following. On May 31st he fought against Grant at Cold Harbor, his regiment losing 110 men in ten minutes, and took part in the repulse of the Federals next day. On the following day, while attempting to dislodge the enemy who had occupied a gap between Early and Hoke, the attacking Confederates lost about half their men, and Sergeant Major Beale was wounded in the left temple. He declined an offered furlough, and was so anxious to rejoin his regiment that the hospital officials sent him to the command, on the Petersburg lines, in an ambulance, June 16th, and during that night and the next day he took part in the repulse of the Federal assault. Though now in a serious physical condition he stayed in the trenches, and fought again August 19th, in defense of the Weldon railroad. He next participated in the attempt to recapture Fort Harrison, where the regiment went in with 202 men, the remaining 20 being detailed as an ambulance corps, and had 200 men killed or wounded, he finding himself in the fiercest engagement he had yet encountered. In the early part of the fight one of the bones of his right leg was shattered, but finding he could yet walk he pressed on until within forty yards of the fort, when his left leg was struck above the knee

joint, fracturing the femur. He fell, and believing that if he did not have the care of friends he could not recover, he crawled to a point where he could hide behind a tree and await the night, when he was picked up by the ambulance corps. After a month in hospital and a furlough of sixty days he rejoined his regiment at Wilmington, N. C., on crutches, and in an ambulance accompanied his regiment to Sugar Loaf in support of Fort Fisher. Subsequently he participated in the three days' fight at Kinston, N. C., and at Bentonville, and fought in the last battle of the war. He was captured and paroled at Neal's Ferry, N. C., in May. Since 1867 he has resided at Norfolk, and was employed in the wholesale grocery business and the dairy business until 1893, when he became a commission merchant, his present occupation. He is a member of Spurgeon Memorial Baptist church, and of the order of Royal Arch Masons. He has two daughters living, Essie R., wife of Percy R. Jones, of Florence, Ala., and Eva P., wife of C. E. Herbert, of Norfolk.

Edward T. Beall, adjutant of William Watts camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Roanoke, Va., is a native of Monongalia county, now included in the State of West Virginia. Born February 21, 1847, he was far under the military age at the outbreak of the war, but he was thoroughly imbued with the patriotic impulses which brought so many Virginians into the field at the first call to arms. Finally, on November 29, 1862, being in his sixteenth year, he became a member of Company F of the First Virginia Partisan Rangers. In the following month a reorganization was made, in consequence of which he was assigned to Company H of the Sixty-second Virginia regiment of infantry. With this command he served gallantly until captured by the enemy. He participated in an engagement at Beverly, W. Va., in April, 1863, on July 6th fought at Williamsport, Md., and on October 18th took part in the engagement at Charlestown, W. Va. After this he was engaged in several scouting expeditions in Randolph county, and on the return from the last of these, December 6, 1863, he fell into the hands of the Federals. From that date until after the close of the war he suffered the hardships and deprivations, and mental and bodily suffering incident to imprisonment in the Northern camps. He was held three months at Camp Chase, Ohio, and thence was transferred to Fort Delaware, where he was kept from March 4, 1864, to June 20, 1865. He still has in his possession his order of release which restored him to friends and home. Since the war he has been a worthy and valued citizen, as becomes a brave veteran of the army of Northern Virginia. In October, 1873, he was married to Miss Judith Lowry, and they have two daughters, Mary Triplett, born July 6, 1875, and Mildred Key, born June 24, 1877.

C. W. Beatie, of Chilhowie, Va., was born in Smyth county, January 28, 1828, the son of Robert and Pauline Beatie. He was reared in Smyth county and resided there until he entered the Confederate service. He enlisted as a private in Derrick's battalion in the command of General Loring, and was soon afterward made assistant quartermaster. Though before the close of the war he was past the age limit fixed at the reorganization of 1862, he continued in the service, and faithfully performed the duties of a soldier. After his service with General Loring he became a member of King's battery, stationed at the defenses of Richmond, and served

in this capacity until the Confederate capital was evacuated. Before the investment of the city by Grant he had been serving with his company in southwest Virginia, defending the salt works at Saltville, but being ordered back, he served on the lines, until the retreat to Appomattox began. His company was disbanded at Newbern, Pulaski county, and he then returned to Chilhowie, where he now resides. He is married to Flora Bailey, a native of West Virginia, and they have four children: Alonzo C. Bailey, Catherine P., Carrie A. and Rowena. T. T. Beatie, a brother of the foregoing, now residing near Alexandria, Va., served with Mosby's cavalry throughout the war, winning by his gallantry the rank of lieutenant.

Major Henderson Moffett Bell, formerly a member of the well-known law firm of Echols, Bell & Catlett, of Staunton, and conspicuous during the war for important services rendered the army of Northern Virginia, is a native of Augusta county, born in 1826. He is the son of James Bell, born in the same county in 1772, died in 1856, who served for a considerable period as sheriff and high sheriff and was for thirty years presiding justice of the county court. The father of the latter was Joseph Bell, also a native of Augusta county, born in 1742, who during the Revolution occupied the position of supply agent in Augusta county for the army, and survived until 1823. The latter's father, William Bell, the founder of the family in America, left his native land, the north of Ireland, with his four eldest children, about 1722, and after residing in Pennsylvania until 1738, made his home in Augusta county, where he died in 1756 and was interred at Fort Defiance, near Staunton. Major Bell was graduated at Washington college in 1847, then studied law with Judge Lucas P. Thompson at Staunton, and in 1849 was admitted to the bar. He continued in the practice with much success until April, 1861, when he entered the military service of the State, and was at once assigned to the duty of receiving and forwarding troops to the front, and stationed at Staunton. In the following August he was commissioned captain and assigned by Col. M. G. Harman to the quartermaster's department, in charge of that branch of the service at Staunton. In 1862 he was promoted major, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war, in charge of the quartermaster's department of the Valley. The duties of this important position were discharged by him with remarkable efficiency. He furnished all the supplies from Staunton for the armies of Jackson and Lee with satisfactory promptness, and was able to do so without in any case resorting to impressment. During the period of this service he organized factories for the production of shoes and clothing, and made and set up machines for the manufacture of shoe-pegs, concerns which were able to turn out from one hundred and fifty to two hundred pairs of shoes daily and about the same number of suits of clothing. With the surrender of the army, which put an end to this activity, he was paroled at Staunton, and returned to the duties of his profession. A law partnership was soon formed between General Echols, Col. R. H. Catlett and himself, which continued for a number of years, and gained a prominent position in the legal profession of the State. In 1869 he yielded to the wishes of the people of the county that he should represent Augusta in the State legislature, and held a membership in the important assembly which

reorganized the State government. As chairman of the committee of schools and colleges, and as a member of the committee on courts of justice, he took a conspicuous part in the organization of the free school system and the reorganization of the judiciary. During his membership he was one of the victims of the capitol disaster, but escaped with no greater injury than the breaking of an arm. In 1852, Major Bell was married to Ann M., daughter of William Kinney, of Staunton, a prominent lawyer, president of the Central bank of Virginia, and for many years a member of the Virginia house and senate. They have three children living: Richard Phillips, Ann, and Henderson Moffett, Jr.

Edward L. Bennett, of Leesburg, a gallant soldier of the Thirty-fifth battalion of cavalry, was born in Loudoun county, near Leesburg, May 21, 1842. There he was reared and educated, and early in the second year of the Confederacy, on March 20, 1862, enlisted in Company A in the command of Col. E. V. White, as a sergeant. In this command he served under Stonewall Jackson in the arduous but brilliant campaign in the valley, fighting at Front Royal, Winchester, Strasburg, Cross Keys, Port Republic, thence proceeding to the support of Lee and fighting in the Seven Days' battles which drove McClellan's army from the front of Richmond. Subsequently in the same year he fought at Brandy Station, at Cedar Mountain and the second battle of Manassas, where the enemy was again defeated, and then joined in the campaign in Maryland, taking part in the heroic stand made at Sharpsburg against the overwhelming odds of the Federal army. His service continued throughout 1863, including the Pennsylvania campaign, his command leading the advance to Gettysburg, and the battle of Gettysburg. In 1864 he fought in the Wilderness campaign, and in June met Sheridan at Trevilian Station, where he was struck in the right leg by a shell, causing a wound which resulted in the amputation of the limb. This very severe injury brought about his retirement from the service of the Confederate States, though still anxiously devoted to the cause. Returning from hospital to his home he soon embarked in mercantile business in which he was engaged for five years. He then entered upon a long official career, in which he has been honored with important trusts by the people, and has repaid this confidence by faithful and efficient service. For twelve years he served as commissioner of revenue, and since then has served as clerk of the circuit court. Mr. Bennett is still a true comrade to the survivors of the army of Northern Virginia, and maintains a membership in the Clinton Hatcher camp.

William H. Benson, for many years a resident of Chesterfield county, and head of a staunch patriotic Confederate family, was born in Somerset county, Md., February 9, 1811. He followed the trade of a merchant tailor a large part of his life, settled in Kinsale, Westmoreland county, in 1826, removed to Richmond about 1851, and died March 6, 1887. During the war he resided upon his farm, three miles from Richmond, and though too old for military service, aided the Confederate cause in every way that he could. In latter years he described as the happiest day of his life the occasion when he volunteered to feed the entire command of Gen. Custis Lee. To furnish this entertainment he found it necessary to use everything on his farm which could be quickly converted into food, of all of which he made a cheerful offering, and after everything else available was eaten up and the soldiers were about

to leave he took many of them to his granary and had them fill their knapsacks with corn. His wife, Martha Fry Redman, was born in Westmoreland county, December 3, 1817. They were married at Point Pleasant, April 4, 1833, and in 1883, at Richmond, they celebrated their golden wedding anniversary. September 13th following, the wife and mother passed away. These parents reared eleven children, two of whom, Henry Clay and Charles Edward, served in the Confederate army. Henry Clay Benson was a member of the Ninth Virginia cavalry throughout the war, served as standard-bearer, was twice wounded in battle, and finally was paroled at Appomattox. He died at Gurley, Ala., January 1, 1891. Charles Edward Benson served in the Otey battery, surrendered at Appomattox, and died at Richmond, October 7, 1870. Another son of this family, John Redman Benson, died before the war at the age of nineteen years, just after completing a course of study at the Virginia military institute. The youngest and only surviving son, Thomas Moore Benson, now a prosperous coal merchant of Newport News, Va., was born at Richmond, November 29, 1854. He made his home at Newport News in 1883, where he speedily became successful in business and influential as a citizen. By his marriage, May 20, 1885, to Annie Louise, daughter of Col. George W. Nelms, of Newport News, he has four children: George William, Annie Louise, Fanny Moore and Charles Mayer.

John L. Berkeley, principal of the public schools of Danville, Va., was born in Westmoreland county, January 11, 1843, son of Landon C. and Sarah Ann (Campbell) Berkeley. His father, born in 1819 in Hanover county, died in 1892, was a lawyer of prominence, served two terms in the Virginia legislature from Westmoreland and Richmond counties; was a member of the Patrick Henry Rifles, Fifteenth Virginia regiment, during the first year of the war, serving with Magruder on the peninsula; and during the next three years was assessor of tax-in-kind in Hanover county. Previous to the war John L. was educated at Hanover and Aberdeen academies. When his father retired from active service he entered the army as a private in Captain Nelson's battery, the Hanover artillery. He was with this command until the fall of 1862, and then was transferred to the Amherst artillery, Capt. T. J. Kirkpatrick. He participated in the artillery fighting at Fort Magruder and Yorktown; and was with his battery at Fredericksburg, Winchester, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Second Cold Harbor, and other encounters with the enemy. At the Cold Harbor struggle with Grant's army in 1864, he was severely wounded and rendered unfit for further service, being confined for a long time in hospital. At the return of peace he engaged in educational work, in which he has since made an honorable and praiseworthy career. After teaching in Maryland until 1869 he attended two sessions of the Georgetown medical college, taught one year at Lynchburg, conducted a private school in Louisa county seven years, and in 1878 established a private school at Danville, where he has since resided, with the exception of two years' association with Dr. C. L. C. Minor, in the Shenandoah valley academy at Winchester. He has been principal of one of the public schools of Danville since 1889. He maintains a membership in Cabell-Graves camp. In 1894

he was married to Fannie M., daughter of Maj. J. W. Bruce, and they have one son, Scott Bruce Berkeley.

Colonel Joseph Virginius Bidgood, a gallant soldier who is now prominent in the Virginia organization of the United Confederate Veterans, was born at Portsmouth, Va., in 1841. In his youth he entered William and Mary college and was yet a student there when the crisis of 1861 arrived. In April, among the earliest volunteers for the defense of the Old Dominion, he enlisted as a private in Company C of the Thirty-second regiment of infantry. He continued with this command throughout the war, first in Semmes' brigade of McLaws' division, Magruder's corps, and subsequently, by change made just before the battle of Fredericksburg, in M. D. Corse's brigade of Pickett's division. At the reorganization he was promoted sergeant-major of his regiment, and just after the battle of Five Forks he was further promoted adjutant of the regiment. His service included honorable duty in the memorable battles of the Seven Days before Richmond, Sharpsburg, Md., Monocacy Bridge, Crampton's Gap, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, the fighting on the line between Petersburg and Richmond, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. At the latter disastrous encounter he was wounded and captured. Being then carried to the military prison at Point Lookout, and refusing to take the oath, he was held until paroled in June, 1865. He then returned to Virginia and made his home at Richmond, where he has subsequently resided. He presently engaged in the organization of the First Virginia regiment of State troops, in which he rendered valuable service first as captain, and through the successive grades of major and lieutenant-colonel. Afterward he was elected and commissioned colonel of the First Virginia cavalry. His service one year in this capacity completed twenty years of honorable duty in the Virginia militia, and he was retired by Governor McKinney with the rank of colonel of cavalry. From the first he took an active part in the organization of the Confederate Veterans association, being a charter member and a lieutenant commander of R. E. Lee camp, at Richmond, and also a member of George E. Pickett camp of the same city. In February, 1892, his valuable services to the order were recognized by his appointment as adjutant-general of the Virginia division, a position he has since most efficiently occupied.

Joseph L. Bilisoli, late sergeant-major of the Ninth Virginia infantry, Armistead's brigade, army of Northern Virginia, now a leading business man of Portsmouth, Va., was born at that city October 27, 1840. His family was founded in Virginia by Antonio S. Bilisoli, a native of Corsica, and a relative of Napoleon Bonaparte, who came to America with the fleet of Count de Grasse, which rendered such vital assistance in securing American independence, and afterward removed to San Domingo, where he married Adelaide Accinelli, daughter of Rosalie Michaux, one of the refugees from Acadie. With his wife's father, who was a shipbuilder, Antonio Bilisoli came to Portsmouth in 1798 and engaged in shipbuilding and the West India trade for about twenty years, subsequently conducting a mercantile establishment, and dying in 1845. He had five children: Joseph A., Lucrece, who married Admiral August Louvel (commander of the department at Brest), of the French navy; Virginia, who married Don Jose Lorenzo

Monis, president of the cortes of Portugal; Adèle, who married James Chaleron, a sugar merchant of New Orleans; and Elise, wife of E. d'Anfossi. Joseph A. Bilisoly, born at Portsmouth, December 4, 1799, died December 15, 1880, was prominent as a merchant from 1820 to 1863. He married Eliza Ann, daughter of Francis Benson, a custom house officer whose father came to America from Ireland in 1783. Her mother was Sophia, daughter of Epaphroditus Butt, of Great Bridge, Va., who was a soldier in the battle of Great Bridge, in the Revolutionary war. Representatives of all these families which have been mentioned did patriotic service in the Confederate army. In the Old Dominion Guard, which went into service April 20, 1861, there were Dr. Virginus B. Bilisoly, First Lieut. L. Augustus Bilisoly, who was wounded both at Seven Pines and Second Manassas; A. L. Bilisoly, promoted first lieutenant, P. A. C. S.; and Joseph L. Bilisoly. Joseph L. Bilisoly, son of Joseph A. Bilisoly, was educated in the Virginia collegiate institute, and at the secession of the State was a partner in the mercantile business of his father. He went into the service with the Old Dominion Guard, later Company K, Ninth Virginia infantry, and after serving at Pinner's Point and witnessing the famous naval battles in Hampton Roads, joined Armistead's brigade of Anderson's division in the Peninsular campaign of 1862. He took part in the battle of Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' fighting, and then marching northward, fought at Warrenton Springs and Second Manassas. During the Maryland campaign, after crossing the Potomac at White's ford, he assisted in destroying the Monocacy bridge, took part in the capture of Harper's Ferry and was in the heat of the fight at Sharpsburg. Subsequently he shared the record of Pickett's division at Fredericksburg and in the Suffolk campaign, and reaching the field of Gettysburg on the third day of the battle, participated in the memorable assault upon the Federal line on Cemetery hill, from which few of his regiment returned. All of the officers of his command having been killed or disabled, it became Mr. Bilisoly's duty to make out the report of casualties. When the regiment returned to Culpeper Court House, he was appointed sergeant-major of the regiment, and in February, 1864, he was detailed as hospital steward at Pickett's division headquarters. In this capacity he served during the remainder of the war, making out the last report of the division. Returning to Portsmouth after the surrender he was for some time connected with the retail and wholesale drug trade, and then in the railway service until 1883, when he became employed in the Bank of Portsmouth. He was rapidly promoted and since 1889 has held the position of cashier, contributing in no slight degree to the popularity and prosperity of the institution. He is also president of the Portsmouth land and improvement company, vice-president of the Citizens' light, heat and power company, and connected with other enterprises. He is a member of the Sons of the American Revolution. In 1862 he was married to Mary Elizabeth, daughter of the late Joseph Bourke, a prominent business man of Portsmouth, whose father, Joseph Bourke (originally Bourge), was a native of San Domingo of French descent. Mr. Bilisoly has five children: Walter L., Frank, Lorena, Adele, and Louvel Antonio.

Lisle Augustus Bilisoly, M. D., an officer distinguished in the early service of the Old Dominion Guard of Portsmouth, was born

at that city April 3, 1834, of a family conspicuous for its loyalty and patriotic devotion. After receiving an academic education in the Portsmouth schools, he studied medicine at the Homeopathic college of Philadelphia, and was graduated in 1855. He then, until the beginning of the war, practiced his profession at his native city, also taking an active part in the organization and maintenance of the Old Dominion Guard, Third regiment Virginia volunteers, in which he held the rank of second lieutenant. In this rank he entered the active service on April 20, 1861, and served at Pinner's Point during the Confederate occupation of that region. The company being assigned to the Ninth Virginia regiment as Company K, he participated in the Peninsular campaign and was wounded in the battle of Seven Pines, June 1, 1862. After his recovery he participated in the battles of Warrenton Springs and Second Manassas, in the latter engagement receiving a severe wound that disabled him from further active duty in the field. He subsequently acted as surgeon of his regiment until 1863, when he retired from the service, and returned to Portsmouth. Since then he has been prominent in the medical practice of his city and an influential citizen. He has served four years upon the city council, two years as health officer, and ever since the war period has held the position of surgeon for the Seaboard Air Line railroad. In 1856 Dr. Bilisoly was married to Miss Rosa Mills, of Alexandria, Va. Their oldest son, Alonzo A. Bilisoly, received the degree of doctor of medicine from the university of Maryland in 1894, and since then has been associated with his father in professional work. He is a member of the State medical society and surgeon of the Fourth Virginia regiment.

William J. Binford, of Henrico county, the only survivor of three young brothers who served in the cause of Virginia and the Confederacy, was born at the city of Richmond, July 29, 1846, and was reared from infancy upon his father's farm in Hanover county, the scene of the first fighting of the Seven Days' battles of 1862. He is the son of William A. Binford, a native of Goochland county, where his ancestors, members of one of the oldest and most worthy families of Virginia, had resided for several generations. His grandfather, Thomas Binford, was a soldier of the Revolution, and represented his county in the Virginia legislature, an honor also bestowed upon his immediate ancestors as well as William A. and William J. Binford. The mother of William J. Binford was Lucy, daughter of Johnson Eubank, a contractor and one of the wealthiest citizens of Richmond in his lifetime. She was a woman of remarkable talent for public affairs, as well as possessed of the tender womanly virtues, and was widely known as the president of the Ladies' association of the Virginia agricultural society, and regent of the Mount Vernon association. Mr. Binford passed his youth upon the farm of his father in Hanover county, a plantation of five hundred acres, worked by one hundred and fifty slaves, and was reared amid the comforts and social influences of the old régime. On January 1, 1862, in his sixteenth year, he enlisted as a private in a company of the Hanover troop of cavalry, Company G of the Fourth Virginia cavalry regiment, then commanded by General Robertson, later by General Wickham, and throughout the war under the leadership of Fitzhugh Lee. He shared the campaigns and battles of this regiment throughout the war, partici-

pating in numberless engagements, prominent among which were the actions at Williamsburg, Catlett's Station, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, the Shenandoah Valley fights, Fredericksburg, Kelly's Ford, Brandy Station, Aldie, Upperville, Snicker's Gap, Boonsboro, Hanover, Carlisle, Westminster, Gettysburg, Spottsylvania, Yellow Tavern, Chickahominy and Trevilian Station. He was first wounded at Kelly's ford, being cut from his horse by a saber blow, and at Trevilian's he was shot through the body. The latter injury caused his confinement in the hospital at Richmond for eight months. Immediately after the death of General Stuart he was appointed by Gen. Fitzhugh Lee chief of scouts for the cavalry, and the duty of this position he performed from the time of his recovery until the close of the war, finally being paroled at Appomattox. He then for six years gave his attention to farming in Hanover county, after which he became connected with the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, with which he has remained to the present, except two years as a passenger conductor on the Richmond & Alexandria road. He entered the employment of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company in 1871, and a few months later was promoted freight conductor. In 1880, on the recommendation of General Wickham, he became a passenger conductor, and since 1882 he has served as freight and passenger conductor. Both as a railroad man and an active and influential politician he has a wide acquaintance. For twenty years he has served in State and national conventions, and in 1893-94 he represented Henrico county in the legislature of Virginia. He was married in early manhood to Miss Virginia Morment, who died in 1892, and in 1897 he married Miss Laura, daughter of James C. Mitchell, of Richmond. Six children are living, five of whom are promising young men. One of these, Jesse H. Binford, graduated with first honors at Richmond college, and is engaged in the practice of law at Hot Springs, Ark. Wirt Binford, a younger brother of the foregoing, served in the command of Colonel Mosby, and met his death in the fight at Hominy church, March 17, 1865. Another younger brother, James, a member of the second company of Richmond Howitzers, was killed at Sailor's Creek.

Charles H. Binns, Jr., a Confederate veteran and a pioneer of the thriving young city of Newport News, Va., was born at Providence Forge, New Kent county, Va., August 1, 1843. His father, Charles H. Binns, senior, born in Surry county, January 4, 1812, was a merchant and farmer by occupation, and died in 1890. His mother, Adelaide B. Colgin, was a native of Charles City county. Mr. Binns passed his childhood upon his father's farm, and was educated in the school at Lexington, taught by William N. Pendleton, afterward chief of artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, and in the Virginia military institute, which he entered in March, 1862. He remained at the latter institution as a cadet, receiving a military training, until the fall of 1863, and at the time of the burial of Gen. T. J. Jackson at Lexington had the honor of serving in the military escort. Upon leaving the institute he enlisted as a private in the Fourth battery, heavy artillery, Richmond defenses, and was subsequently attached to Custis Lee's division of Ewell's corps. He participated in the defense of Fort Harrison and the bombardment of Dutch Gap, and was in the retreat of the army from Richmond as far as Sailor's Creek, where his corps of the army suf-

fered disaster. After gallant participation in the desperate fight made by the Confederate troops, he joined in the surrender to superior numbers, and was subsequently held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout until June 23, 1865. He engaged in the management of extensive farms along the James river until 1882, when he made his home at Newport News, where he has taken an active part in the advancement of the interests of the city. He has been notably successful in his civil pursuits, and is now in comfortable circumstances, as a good Confederate soldier deserves. He has served one term as registrar of the Newport News magisterial district. In Magruder camp, United Confederate Veterans, he is an active member and holds the rank of first lieutenant. He was married in 1876 and four daughters adorn his home.

Spottswood Bird, a native of the Old Dominion, though only eighteen years of age when the army of Northern Virginia stacked arms at Appomattox, had seen service in the Confederate cause, and performed the duties of a soldier in camp and field. He was born in King and Queen county, Va., in 1847, where he passed the years of childhood and youth, receiving his education in the county schools and in the local academy until the outbreak of the war, which interrupted the preparation of so many of the youth of Virginia for the pursuits of civil life. Early in 1863, being sixteen years of age, and anxious to serve his State, he joined an organization of home guards, and performed such duties as were assigned him in this connection until the fall of 1864, when he enlisted in the Twenty-fourth Virginia cavalry, as a private in Company F. His regiment was part of the brigade of Gen. M. W. Gary, of South Carolina, and participated in the fights with General Butler's army, north of the James river, and in other and continuous skirmishes about Richmond. When the city was evacuated, and the army had mainly crossed the James, the last bridge left was Mayo's bridge at the foot of Fourteenth street. This was guarded all the night of the 2d of April, while Richmond and Manchester were brilliant as day, the river between flashed in the glare of burning buildings, and the earth quaked with the terrific explosions of the military magazines. Just at break of day Gary's cavalry came up, the last of the army to cross the river, while about them the Federal lines were plainly seen in motion. As Gary's rear guard rode over, this last bridge was burned, and the cavalry hastened to join the westward movement of Lee's army, which terminated at Appomattox Court House. On the morning of the 9th of April, 1865, Gary's cavalry brigade occupied the advance skirmish line on the hills of Appomattox, dismounted and fighting as infantry until the last imperative order came to cease firing, after the flag of truce had passed directly through their line. Here the war experience of Mr. Bird and his comrades ended, and he returned home, and gave his attention to the pursuits of civil life. He remained in his native county until 1891, meanwhile establishing a business at the county seat, King and Queen Court House, with which he is still connected. In 1891 he removed to Baltimore, where he is occupied as treasurer of the Ryland-Brooks lumber company. Mr. Bird's ancestry is identified with the history of Virginia for many years back. His maternal great-grandfather, Captain Roy, served with credit in the war of the Revolution.

Major Henry Lawson Biscoe, since the war engaged in business

at the city of Washington, is a native of Virginia, born in Lancaster county in 1841. He was reared in his native county and in 1860 completed his education at the Columbian university at Washington. Soon after the secession of the State he volunteered for military service, and in May, 1861, became a private in Company B of the Fortieth Virginia infantry. He served in this command about four months, and was then commissioned as disbursing officer for the regiment, with the rank of captain. Three months later he was assigned to the staff of Brig.-Gen. J. J. Pettigrew, and served with him in the left wing at Seven Pines. That commander being wounded and captured, he was assigned to the staff of Gen. William D. Pender, commanding a brigade in A. P. Hill's division. He was promoted major for gallantry and meritorious conduct, and served in this rank until the end of the war, at that time being on the staff of Brig.-Gen. Alfred M. Scales, of A. P. Hill's corps of the army of Northern Virginia, having been attached to the staff of that officer since the battle of Chancellorsville. After the battle of Seven Pines he participated in the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, and the battles of Sharpsburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and other minor engagements, and surrendered with the army at Appomattox. During the retreat from Gettysburg, he was captured at Falling Waters, but had the good fortune to be recaptured within an hour. After the dispersal of the army he returned to his home in Lancaster county, and in 1866 removed to Washington, where he has made his home ever since and has been successfully engaged in the lumber trade. He is influential in business and political circles, is a member of the board of trade with the official position of director of that body, and is president of the Virginia Democratic association of the District. He maintains a membership in the Washington camp of Confederate veterans.

Carter R. Bishop, of Petersburg, though but twelve years of age at the outbreak of the war, enjoys the honor of having participated in the Confederate service, as one of the cadets of the Virginia military institute, the West Point of the South. He is the son of Carter R. Bishop, a member of an old and worthy Virginia family, who married Miss Mary Elizabeth Head, of Rhode Island; served during the war with the reserve forces, and subsequently was cashier of the Commercial bank of Petersburg, until his death in 1877. He was a native of Prince George county. Carter R. Bishop attended school during the earlier part of the war and in 1864 he gained admission as a cadet to the Virginia military institute. With the cadet corps under command of Colonel Shipp he participated in the defense of Richmond. Just before the surrender the cadets were stationed at an important point in the lines, almost without support and facing the great Federal army, four of the boys being assigned to each picket post, about one hundred yards apart. Upon the evacuation, young Bishop was taken prisoner, April 3d, but he was released soon after the surrender of the army, and he then returned to his home at Petersburg and the studies of his youth. He subsequently entered Hampden-Sidney college, and was graduated in 1870, with the first honors of his class. For five years he was engaged in teaching school in Kentucky. In 1877 he succeeded his father as cashier of the Commercial national bank at Petersburg, and later held the position with the bank of Petersburg until 1886, when upon the organization of the National bank of Petersburg, he

became cashier of that bank, the position he has since occupied. He is a courteous popular official and a capable financier, holding the confidence alike of the public and of his financial associates. He is active in preserving the heroic memories of the army of Northern Virginia, and holds the rank of adjutant in A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1881 he was married to Miss Kirk, of Culpeper county.

Lieutenant Conrad R. Bitzer, of Herndon, Va., who served faithfully throughout the war of the Confederacy as a member of the Eighth Virginia regiment of infantry, was born in Loudoun county, April 27, 1838. He was reared and educated in that county; and there enlisted among the first to take up arms for Virginia, on the 17th of April, the day of the State's secession from the Union. His command became a part of the Eighth regiment, under command of Col. Eppa Hunton, and was known as Company A. In this company he was first enrolled as orderly-sergeant, and this position he held until February, 1862, when he was promoted second lieutenant. His meritorious conduct caused his further promotion in April, 1863, to first lieutenant, the rank which he held at the close of the war. He went into battle at Manassas in July, 1861, in Cocke's brigade of Beauregard's army, and in the following October was with his regiment prominently engaged in the defeat of General Stone's invasion at Ball's Bluff. In 1862, in Pickett's brigade of Longstreet's division, he took part in the battle of Seven Pines; and the ensuing Seven Days' fights, and subsequently participated in the second battle of Manassas and the famous struggle at Sharpsburg, Md. In the campaigns and battles of his regiment which followed, notably at Fredericksburg and the bloody fight in the Wilderness, he served faithfully. He then went to Clarke county, Va., to resume the occupations of civil life, and was engaged in teaching and farming until his return two years later to Loudoun county, where in 1874 he entered the railway service as station agent at Purcellville. In 1882 he was transferred to his present position at Herndon, Fairfax county, in the service of the Southern railway. He is a prominent member of the Masonic order and the Knights of Pythias, and represented the latter in the grand lodge of Virginia in 1896. On March 24, 1860, he was married to Miss Sarah Reed, of Clarke county, and they have one child, a daughter.

Benjamin Blackford, M. D., conspicuous for faithful and important service in the medical department of the army of Northern Virginia, and subsequently distinguished in the medical profession, especially as an alienist, was born in Luray, Va., in the year 1834. He is a son of Dr. Thomas T. Blackford, a well-known physician, of Lynchburg, Va., who was born at Pine Grove Furnace, Pa., in 1794, served in the Maryland Line at the bombardment of Fort Mchenry in 1814, and died at Lynchburg in 1863. The family was founded in America by Benjamin Blackford, a Scotchman and an adherent of Prince Charles, who, after being captured at Culloden and imprisoned in Warwick castle, where his name is still legible, carved in the stone wall of his cell, was banished to America, and made his home in New Jersey in 1745. His son, Martin Anthony Blackford, born in Ayrshire in 1729, came to New Jersey ten years later. Benjamin Blackford, son of the latter and grandfather of Dr. Blackford, was born in New Jersey in 1767, entered the Continental army at the age of fourteen, was present at

the surrender of Cornwallis, and died at Lynchburg in 1855. Dr. Blackford was reared at Lynchburg, and educated at the university of Virginia, afterward studying and receiving the degree of doctor of medicine at Jefferson medical college, Philadelphia, in 1855. After serving two years as resident physician of the Philadelphia hospital, he began practice at Lynchburg, and continued until April, 1861, when upon the passage of the ordinance of secession, he entered the service as surgeon of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, Confederate army. About the same time he was ordered to Richmond, and assigned to duty as one of the medical officers of the camp of instruction. In June he was detached and sent to Culpeper Court House to establish a military hospital, of which, the first established for the army, he was put in charge until after the first battle of Manassas, when he was ordered on duty at Manassas with the medical director of the army of Northern Virginia. In August he was detailed to establish hospitals at Front Royal, where he remained in charge until the spring of 1862. He then established the general hospitals at Liberty, Va., and remained at that post until the close of the war, except during the Hunter raid against Lynchburg, when he participated in the operations in the field, and was in charge of one of the hospitals at Lynchburg. At the close of hostilities he resumed his practice at Lynchburg, and remained there until 1889, when, having gained favorable repute for skill in the treatment of mental diseases, he was appointed superintendent of the Western State hospital at Staunton, a position he has since filled with entire satisfaction to the public. He has served as president of the Lynchburg medical association, president of the State medical society, and is a member of the American medical association, the Medico-Psychological association of America, and the Southern association of superintendents of insane hospitals. In addition to his valued participation in various organizations of this nature he has been a frequent contributor to the medical press. His energy and executive capacity, formerly displayed in the organization of Confederate military hospitals, have also been manifested during his management of the Western hospital in the increase of its capacity more than one-third and the addition of many important improvements. Dr. Blackford is a member of Garland-Rodes camp at Lynchburg, and Stonewall Jackson camp at Staunton, U. C. V. In 1871 he was married to Emily Byrd, daughter of the late Robert Neilson, of Baltimore, and they have six children living: Thomas Atkinson, Benjamin Ogle, Robert Neilson, Charles Minor, William Arthur and George Tayloe Blackford.

Benjamin L. Blackford, of Washington, D. C., was born at Fredericksburg, Va., in 1837, was reared at Lynchburg, and educated in the university of Virginia. He entered the Confederate service in April, 1861, as a sergeant of the Eleventh regiment of Virginia infantry, and served as such until June, 1861, when he was promoted second lieutenant of engineers. He rendered valuable services in the engineer corps during the remainder of the war, receiving promotion in 1864 to captain of engineers. He participated in the battles of Norfolk, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' fight before Richmond, the defense of Fort Fisher, N. C., the defense of Petersburg, Va., and during the retreat from Richmond he fought at Sailor's creek and Appomattox, being slightly wounded at the latter field. After the war had ceased he resumed his professional work as a

civil engineer at Lynchburg, and thence removed in 1868 to Washington, where he has resided since that time.

Charles Minor Blackford, a prominent attorney of Lynchburg, Va., was born at Fredericksburg, October 17, 1833. At the age of fifteen years he came to Lynchburg, which has since been his home, and thence attended the law school of the university of Virginia, the training school of many eminent jurists. He was graduated at this institution in 1855 and then embarked in the profession at Lynchburg. In April, 1861, he abandoned a lucrative business to enlist in the Confederate service, and became the first lieutenant of Company B of the Second Virginia cavalry. In this rank he served until August, 1861, when he was elected captain of the company. In January, 1863, he was appointed judge advocate of the First corps of the army of Northern Virginia, commanded by General Longstreet, and in this position, combining both the functions of prosecutor and judge in the courts-martial of the army, he served with notable tact and efficiency until the close of the war. During his career in the army Major Blackford participated in the first battle of Manassas, part of Jackson's Valley campaign, Slaughter Mountain, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Gettysburg, and Suffolk. He was paroled at Charlottesville, Va., in April, 1865, and then resumed the practice of the law at his former home. In his professional undertakings he has been eminently successful. His honorable career as a citizen, and distinction as a jurist, have well-rounded out a life honored in its earlier years by prominent service in the cause of the Confederate States.

Henry Edmundson Blair, for nearly a quarter of a century judge of the Fourteenth judicial circuit of Virginia, served with distinction as an officer of artillery in the army of Northern Virginia. He was born at Richmond in 1825, was reared there and in Montgomery county and was educated at the Richmond academy. After a study of law he was admitted to the bar at Salem, Va., in 1847, and engaged in the practice there in ante-bellum days. He attained such distinction as to be elected commonwealth's attorney in 1856, a position which he held through the war period and until 1868. In May, 1861, he abandoned his professional work to enlist as a volunteer in Hupp's battery, where he was at once given the rank of second lieutenant and promoted in the winter of 1862 to first lieutenant, the rank he held during the remainder of the war. His record includes service at Craney island during the first year of the war, the battles of Williamsport, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the second and third days of Gettysburg, Mine Run, Spottsylvania, Second Cold Harbor, Fort Gilmer, and artillery duty on the lines about Richmond during the long siege of 1864-65, and on the retreat to Appomattox, where he was paroled. During the Dahlgren raid he was captured by the enemy but was able to escape after three days. After the close of hostilities he returned to the home and professional business which he had established at Salem, and since then has maintained his residence at that city. In the session of the legislature of 1874 he served as representative of his county and in the same year was elected judge of the Fourteenth circuit, a position to which he has since been regularly re-elected at the expiration of each term. As a gallant veteran, as a public-spirited citizen, and as an able jurist and fearless judge, he is held in the highest estimation by the people. A brother of Judge Blair, Prof. Wal-

ter Blair of Hampden-Sidney college, was also in the military service of the Confederate States.

Lisle A. Blamire, of Norfolk, a son of a gallant Confederate soldier, was born at Norfolk, March 3, 1870. His grandfather, Edward T. Blamire, served as a captain in the Mexican war and held the same rank in the State militia. His father, Edward T. Blamire, a native of Portsmouth, Va., entered the Confederate service in 1861 with the Old Dominion Guard, a famous company organized at Portsmouth in 1856, which was ordered into active service April 20, 1861, and in the following June became Company K of the Ninth Virginia regiment of infantry. In the operations of this regiment he participated until the last two years of the war, when he was assigned to the engineer corps, where he served until the surrender. At one time falling into the hands of the enemy, he experienced the deprivations and suffering of a prisoner of war at Point Lookout. His death occurred November 26, 1896. Lisle Blamire was reared at Norfolk and educated in the school of Christian Brothers and St. John's military academy of Alexandria, leaving his studies at the age of seventeen to take a place as clerk in his father's dry-goods establishment. Two years later he accepted a clerkship with the Norfolk & Southern railroad company, where he remained one year, and then was for six years connected with the freight department of the Norfolk & Carolina railroad. Then, after a few months with the railroad company he had first served, he formed a partnership with his brother, James B. Blamire, in the tea and coffee trade, doing business under the titles of Blamire Brothers, and the Imperial tea and coffee company.

Major George Booker and family: Major George Booker, of Elizabeth City county, paymaster, in 1861, of the army of the Peninsula under General Magruder, was born at Sherwood, the old family estate on the Back river, in Elizabeth City county, October 5, 1805. He was the son of Richard Booker, born in 1778 at Sherwood, where he lived the life of a prosperous planter, serving as magistrate and going out with the Virginia troops to take part in the war of 1812. He married Elizabeth Slaughter and died in 1823. The father of Richard was George Booker, born in Amelia county in 1723, who came to Elizabeth City county in his eighteenth year, served twenty years in the legislature, was a neighbor and friend of Chancellor Wythe and prominent as a lawyer and politician, fought in the Revolutionary war, and enjoyed the intimate personal friendship of General Washington. He died at the age of ninety years, as the result of accident. His father bore the name of Richard. The ancestral line is traced back to a family of prominent London merchants. Major Booker was reared at the ancestral home—which had first been granted to the Purifey family by George III., and thence passed through the hands of the Marshalls to the Bookers about two centuries ago. He was educated at William and Mary college, studied law and was admitted to the bar but never practiced, devoting instead his attention wholly to his estate, which was valued in 1860 at over \$160,000, aside from the fifty slaves. Before his twenty-first birthday he sat in the legislature, and served several terms afterward. He represented his district in all the national Democratic conventions up to the one held at Charleston, was very influential in political affairs, and was intimately acquainted with Webster, Clay, Calhoun, and other conspicuous men of that period.

He originally opposed secession, but heartily sustained the decision of his State, and in 1861, though far past the age for military service, accepted the position of paymaster of the army, under Magruder, on the peninsula. He served in this capacity until the reorganization, when his physical condition made it imperative that he should retire from active duty, but he retained his rank of major during the existence of the Confederacy. He died in 1868, leaving his widow, Ann Massenburg, daughter of William Massenburg, a merchant of Hampton. She was born in 1816, married in 1833, and after a noble and devoted life died July 17, 1897, at which time seven of the eleven children who were born to her survived.

Captain Richard M. Booker, oldest son of the foregoing, was born at the family home, two and a half miles from Hampton, February 3, 1837. He was educated at the military academy of John B. Carey, at Hampton, and in William and Mary college. So full of faith was he in the justness of the Southern cause and so enthusiastic in its support, that he left home and kindred in February, 1861, to enlist in the Confederate service in Georgia. In March he became a private in the Oglethorpe Light infantry, organized at Augusta under Captain Clark. The company went into rendezvous at Macon, was assigned to the First Georgia regiment, and thence ordered to the navy yard at Warrenton, opposite Pensacola. In July the command was ordered to Richmond and Private Booker went ahead in order to visit his parents, then in refuge at Williamsburg. On rejoining his regiment, he found awaiting him a commission as lieutenant in the regular army, C. S. A., which had been forwarded from Montgomery. He was at once detailed as drill-master at Camp Lee, and later ordered to report to Captain Todd, a half-brother of Mrs. Lincoln, with whom he served until February, 1862, in the conversion of several tobacco warehouses at Richmond into military prisons. He subsequently served for several months upon the staff of General McLaws, at Yorktown, and assisted his father in the duties of paymaster under General Magruder until just before the battle of Williamsburg, when he was ordered by the secretary of war to Richmond, where he was appointed assistant provost-marshal for the western district of the city. He rendered faithful duty in that capacity for more than a year, after which he served until November, 1863, as a member of the general court-martial of the Confederate army, under Colonel Nolan. Then applying for orders to the field, he was promoted captain and assigned as adjutant of the post at Fort Caswell, at the mouth of the Cape Fear river, under Col. T. M. Jones. He continued in this duty and that of boarding officer for the blockade-running squadron until Christmas, 1864, when, being crippled by rheumatism, he was carried under fire of Butler's guns to Wilmington, and thence to Petersburg, where he lay in hospital for some time. He left Petersburg with the army, was captured in Amelia county, April 6th, but escaped and was paroled at Richmond two weeks later. The devotion which characterized his entrance into the Confederate service was manifested throughout his military career. He was an able, conscientious and useful officer, and did his whole duty in whatever capacity he was called upon to act. His career since the war has been quite successful. He left the farm in 1870 to enter the oyster trade at Hampton, in which he continued ten years, and then gave his attention to the manufacture of brick, which he has developed into

an extensive business. He maintains memberships in R. E. Lee camp No. 1, at Richmond, and R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, at Hampton, United Confederate Veterans; is past commander of the latter camp, and is a director of the State soldiers' home, of Richmond. Captain Booker was married December 13, 1866, to Emily Wood, daughter of Maj. George Wray, descendant of a leading English family, who served upon the staff of General Magruder and died of yellow fever at Galveston during the war. They have four children living: George W., Emily W., Richard M., and Philip W. Booker.

George Booker, a gallant Confederate soldier, now well known as the proprietor of the Sherwood hotel at Old Point Comfort, was born at Sherwood farm, near Hampton, August 31, 1844, the second son of Maj. George Booker. He received his education at Williamsburg and at the Hampton military academy, until that institution was closed early in the war. His first military experience was gained at about the age of seventeen years, upon the arrival of Gen. John B. Hood in the peninsula. That officer selected young Booker and several other boys, familiar with the country, for the duty of securing information regarding the Federal forces at Old Point and the naval and ordnance strength of the enemy. While in the performance of this duty his party of four was surprised by eight or ten Yankees and ordered to surrender. But knowing their fate if they did so, they made a gallant retreat under heavy fire, and were able to kill three of their pursuers by a return fire and escape without injury themselves. During this period, also, he went through the Federal lines twice to visit his old home, procuring provisions and considerable valuable information for the Confederate army. He took part in the battle of Big Bethel, and, in 1862, assisted in transporting quartermaster and commissary stores on schooners up the river to Richmond. He there met his brother, assistant provost-marshal, who secured for him a position in the same line of duty, in which he continued until early in 1863, when he enlisted as a private in the First company of Richmond Howitzers. In the operations of this command he took part, up to and including the battle of Gettysburg. During the terrible artillery duel of the second day, which continued until after dark, he was wounded four times, simultaneously, by the explosion of a shell. Captain McCarthy, afterward killed at Cold Harbor, assisted him to the rear, but as he went his right arm, which was about the captain's neck, was pierced by a bullet. He was laid under a tree and the captain secured a litter and went in search of help to carry him to a barn near by; but before this could be done the tree was struck by a shell, fragments of which demolished the litter and wounded him on the head and in the back. His friend got him into the hands of the surgeons before he had suffered any further as a target for the enemy, but he was so badly hurt that he was reported as dead and was necessarily left in the temporary hospital on the field of battle, where he remained two weeks. He was then placed in a hospital at Baltimore, and a month later was so fortunate as to be included in a special exchange of five hundred totally disabled prisoners. He was in his mother's care at Petersburg for a year before he was fit for the lightest duty; but toward the last of the war he assisted his father, then connected with the quartermaster's department. For twenty years after the close of hostilities, Mr. Booker was engaged alternately in agricultural and mercantile pursuits,

meanwhile, on January 12, 1871, becoming united in marriage with Laura Winder Garrett, daughter of Hon. Richard E. Garrett, and grand-niece of Gen. John H. Winder. Five of their children are living. From 1885 to 1889 he served as postmaster at Fort Monroe and while in this office frequently had his attention called to the demand for a second hotel at Old Point Comfort. In 1889 he began the construction of the Sherwood hotel, which bears the name of the Booker homestead, and it has become a popular resort under his management. In 1894 he was appointed to a second term as postmaster. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp No. 3, Confederate Veterans, and is popular with his comrades as well as with a wide circle of acquaintances.

Marshall A. Booker, the fourth son of Maj. George Booker, was born at Sherwood, November 15, 1851. As a boy he observed the stormy scenes of 1861 to 1865, but was too young to go to the field of battle. Driven from home by the military operations which at an early date were carried on upon the peninsula, he was a refugee with his mother and her family at Williamsburg, Petersburg and Clarksville, until the cessation of hostilities. Returning to the devastated home after the close of war, he found it necessary to find employment at Hampton soon afterward as a clerk in a commission store. From 1869 to 1871 he attended the school of W. Gordon McCabe at Petersburg, and after this he devoted himself to the care of the Sherwood farm until 1875, when he received the appointment of superintendent of the farm connected with the hospital for the insane at Williamsburg. In February, 1877, he embarked in business at Hampton, and since that date has given his whole attention to mercantile and manufacturing pursuits, with gratifying success. For several years he conducted a hardware establishment at Hampton, with his brother, H. R. Booker, as a partner. He then traveled five years as salesman for a wholesale hardware house of Baltimore and subsequently conducted a wholesale house in the same line of trade at Staunton. In 1889 he took part in the organization of the Basic City car works, of which he became secretary and treasurer in 1890. Since 1892 he has resided at Hampton, where, in 1894, he established a wholesale grocery and commission house, which speedily became one of the prominent business concerns of the city. On November 25, 1885, he married Miss Mary Elliott Bechtel, of Baltimore, and they have three children: Mary Ethel, Ilma, and John Marshall.

Harry Wise Booker, one of the younger sons of the family of Maj. George Booker, a family noted for patriotic endeavor in time of war and for honorable success in their civil pursuits, was born on the Sherwood farm, March 5, 1854. In childhood he experienced the misery and deprivation attending war, as a refugee from his home, and on his return to his birthplace after the close of hostilities he realized the devastation and enormous loss which were suffered by the South. In childhood his mother was necessarily his tutor, and he could have had no better. He completed his education at William and Mary college, and then, after teaching school for a time spent two years in Texas. Returning to Hampton in 1876, he engaged in the mercantile trade under the firm name of H. W. Booker & Co., from 1878 to 1894. In the latter year he accepted the position of deputy clerk of Elizabeth City county, under his brother, John Booker, the third son of Maj. George Booker.

This brother served from 1863 until the close of the war in the Confederate army, first as a member of the staff of Gen. H. A. Wise, and subsequently in the signal service. He has become physically unable to perform the duties of the office of clerk and they fall entirely upon his younger brother and deputy. He is an able and popular official. On June 13, 1882, Mr. Booker was married to Fanny, only daughter of Maj. Baker P. Lee, of Hampton, and they have two children: Bessie Lee and Mary Neely. Mr. Booker cherishes the memory of the patriotic services of his father and brothers, and is an active member of the Hampton camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans.

Hunter R. Booker, a very successful business man of Hampton, Va., is the sixth and youngest son of Maj. George Booker, and not the least conspicuous of a notable family. He was born at the ancestral homestead, near Hampton, March 23, 1858, and his infancy and boyhood days were passed amid the discomforts of refugee life, largely within hearing of the uproar of battle. Shortly before the war came to an end the family made its way back to Sherwood and began to repair the ruin wrought by the military occupation. Hunter remained there until he was fourteen years of age, and then went to Baltimore and found employment as fireman in a machine shop. Soon afterward, however, he took a position in a wholesale house in New York and remained there a year. He then returned to Hampton and, after attending school a few months began his career as a druggist's clerk with the munificent salary of \$5 per month. He served at this rate for three years and a half. On February 1, 1877, he bought out his employer, on credit, and speedily manifesting splendid business ability, was able to gain a good commercial standing in the first year. By strict economy and intense application to his work, he has since then built up a thriving business, now embracing, in addition to both wholesale and retail trade in drugs, a hardware department. He has a fine home and is comfortably established for life. He was married October 15, 1887, to Mattie A., daughter of Maj. Samuel R. Chisman, formerly chief quartermaster of the army under Gen. J. E. Johnston. They have two children: Dorothy Whiting and Ann Wythe.

R. S. Booker, a gallant soldier of Company I, Fifty-sixth Virginia infantry regiment, enlisted in 1861 and was with his regiment in its service as a part of Garnett's brigade of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia. J. E. Booker, brother of the above, was born at Hampden-Sidney, in Prince Edward county, Va., the son of Frederick A. and Sarah (Johns) Booker. The latter was a daughter of John Claybrook Johns, a cousin of Bishop Johns, and connected with the Claybrook and Calhoun families of Virginia. Frederick A. Booker, a merchant, and for many years sheriff of his county, was the son of Edward Booker, a well-known attorney who represented his county seven terms in the Virginia legislature, served in the war of 1812, and was the legal representative of John Randolph, particularly during the latter's service as minister to France. George Booker, the father of Edward, held the office of sheriff many years, and was a soldier of the Revolution. The family is one of the oldest in America, and is traced back to the Rochettes, of French-Huguenot lineage. Mr. Booker studied at Hampden-Sidney college, and during the war was at Charlotte Court House.

From 1870 to 1876 he served as a commissioner of revenue, and in 1878 he made his home at Suffolk, where a year later he became business manager of the Suffolk Herald. Four years afterward he became owner of the paper. He was elected to the house of delegates in 1893 and served with credit on the finance committee, and as chairman of the committee on schools and colleges, and also as chairman of the committee on public buildings. He was re-elected in 1895 and again in 1897. He is prominent in political affairs, is chairman of the county democracy, and has been delegate to several State conventions.

Richard M. Bolling, a prominent citizen of Princess Anne county, was born in Goochland county, March 7, 1841, of a distinguished Virginia family, and to his honor he added credit by faithful service with the army of Northern Virginia. His family was founded in Virginia by Robert Bolling, son of John and Mary Bolling, of Bolling hall, near Bradford, Yorkshire. Robert Bolling was born in the parish of All-Halloway, Tower street, London, December 26, 1646. He came to Virginia in 1660, at the age of fourteen years. He was married in 1675 to Jane Rolfe, daughter of Thomas Rolfe, and granddaughter of the Indian princess, Pocahontas. His place of residence, near Petersburg, was known as Cobb's plantation, and passed successively to his son, John Bolling, then to the latter's son, John, then to his son Thomas, and then to William Bolling. The latter married Mary Randolph, of Curles Neck, a first cousin of John Randolph of Roanoke, and their son, Thomas, was the father of the subject of this mention. Thomas Bolling was an influential planter of Goochland county and survived until 1889. His wife was Mary Louise, daughter of Richard Morris, a distinguished attorney of Hanover county. Richard Bolling was reared in Goochland county and prepared for college at Hanover academy under Hilary P. Jones; but he abandoned his studies in the spring of 1861 to enter the service of the Confederate States. Becoming a private in the Goochland troop of cavalry, he was stationed at Union Mills, near Manassas, and during the battle of July 21, 1861, served as a courier for General Ewell. His troop was made a company of the Fourth Virginia cavalry under Gen. Beverly H. Robinson, and he served with that command until after the battle of Williamsburg, when he became sergeant-major of artillery in Boggs' battalion, and was stationed at Richmond. In 1863 he was elected second lieutenant of the company of Capt. A. J. Rogers, which became Company G of the Twenty-fourth Virginia cavalry, the command with which he served during the remainder of the war. During his service, which terminated at Appomattox, he was twice wounded. One, a painful wound in the face, which disabled him for some time, was received at Darbytown, and the second was a wound in the arm, received near Amelia Court House. After the close of hostilities he farmed for several years on Bolling's island, Goochland county, and then embarked in the profession of civil engineering. While thus engaged he participated in the survey of several railroads in Virginia, was for a time in the employ of the United States rolling stock company at Urbana, Ohio, and Chicago, and was city engineer at Montgomery, Ala., from 1887 until 1890. In the latter year he removed to Princess Anne county and purchased an oyster farm on Lynnhaven bay, where he now resides. He was married October 24, 1882, to Miss

Anne Montgomery Barksdale, daughter of Robert Barksdale, of Amelia county, and granddaughter of Judge John Robertson, of Mount Athos, Va. Two children have been born to them: John Rolfe, who died in infancy, and Mary Frances Monro, born June 4, 1885.

General Stith Bolling, of Petersburg, Va., captain in the Confederate service and appointed brigadier-general by Governor Walker, in 1870, is a native of Lunenburg county, where he was born February 28, 1835. His father, a prosperous farmer of that county, was born in Nottoway county in 1808 and died in 1888. His mother, Mary T. Irby, was also a native of Nottoway county. General Bolling was reared upon the home farm until he reached the age of nineteen years, and was then engaged in the wholesale business with his brothers at Richmond until 1861, when he returned to his native county and enlisted as a private in the Lunenburg cavalry company. His soldierly qualities were speedily recognized by promotion to orderly-sergeant, then to second lieutenant, and in 1862 he was elected captain. In this rank he served during the remainder of the war, commanding Company G, Ninth Virginia cavalry, W. H. F. Lee's brigade of Stuart's command. During a considerable part of the war he was attached to the staff of Gen. W. H. F. Lee as acting adjutant-general. He was wounded six times; first, near Culpeper Court House; second, near Green House; third, at Morton's Ford, where he was struck on the head by a cannon ball and left on the field for dead, but was able to report for duty three months later; fourth, at Guinea's Station, where he was shot through the thigh; fifth, near Petersburg, and last at Gaines' Mill. After the war he returned to agricultural pursuits in Lunenburg county. In 1869 he was elected to the Virginia house of delegates, and in 1871 he was re-elected. In 1875 he was appointed by Governor Kemper inspector of tobacco, an office which he held until 1882, meanwhile making his home at Petersburg, where he has resided since. In the latter part of 1882 he was appointed postmaster at Petersburg by President Arthur, and this office he had in charge during a term of four and a half years. In July, 1889, he was appointed a second time to this office by President Harrison, and in 1898 was again appointed by President McKinley. General Bolling has been active in the political arena as a republican, has served four years as a member of the State executive committee of that party, taken part in the canvasses of the State, and in 1888 was a candidate for presidential elector. He is vice-president of the chamber of commerce and president of the tobacco association, and has rendered valuable service as president of the board of public schools. He was married May 9, 1860, to Cornelia Scott-Forrest, of Lunenburg county, and they have four children, two of whom are living, Mary E. and Cornelia I. The names of the two children, deceased, were Jessie S. and Stith Forrest, the latter having just finished a course at college prior to his death.

James D. Bondurant, of Lynchburg, who experienced long and arduous service in the army of Northern Virginia, as an artilleryman, is a native of Bedford county, where he was born in 1846. On account of his youth he was not received as an enlisted soldier during the first year of the war, but in April, 1861, he became attached to the Bedford Light Artillery, under Capt. Tyler C. Jor-

dan. This was a hard-fighting organization, distinguished on the many battlefields of the First corps of the army. As a volunteer Private Bondurant served until the reorganization in the spring of 1862, when he was regularly mustered in. He subsequently was promoted gunner, and continued in the service until the end of the war. Stationed early in the struggle in the vicinity of Yorktown, he was in the artillery action at Dam No. 1, below that point, served during the retreat and at the battle of Williamsburg, and shared the work of his battery through the Seven Days' battles, and at Second Manassas. During the Maryland campaign he took part in the defense of the South Mountain passes, and shared the important service of the artillery battalion of Gen. S. D. Lee at Sharpsburg. Subsequently he served in the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and the three days' fighting at Gettysburg, after which he went with Longstreet to the assistance of General Bragg, taking part in the battles of Chickamauga, Look-out Mountain, Missionary Ridge and the Knoxville campaign, in which there were a large number of encounters with the enemy. Returning to Virginia, he participated in the Wilderness and Spottsylvania campaigns and the Shenandoah Valley campaign under Early, and during the following winter served on the Howlett house line before Richmond. A few days before the surrender he was sent to Bedford county to secure horses and forage for his company, and while upon this duty the end came. Mr. Bondurant's service, thus briefly outlined, was brave and self-sacrificing and he did not escape serious injury from the storms of shot and shell to which he was so frequently exposed. He was slightly wounded, first at Manassas, and a second time in the battle of the Wilderness. After the war he remained in Bedford county several years and learned the trade of carpentry, which he followed at Lexington and Baltimore, and, since 1872, at Lynchburg, where he is now prominent in the contracting and building trade. He is a member of the Masonic chapter and commandery, and is steward of the Memorial Methodist church. In 1872 he was married to Alice, daughter of the late Berry Hughes, of Campbell county.

Thomas R. Borland, of Norfolk, now prominent among the attorneys of eastern Virginia, served throughout the entire war in the army of Northern Virginia, and surrendered at Appomattox when he was just past his twenty-first birthday. He was born at Murfreesboro, N. C., March 3, 1844, the son of Roscius C. Borland, who was born in Nansemond county, Va., in 1807, and removed to North Carolina, where he married Tempe, daughter of David Ramsay, a planter of Scotch descent, and made his home in that State. He was a promising lawyer and a member of the North Carolina legislature at twenty-one years of age, but his career was cut short by death when he had reached the age of thirty-five years, his wife having passed away two years previous. The grandfather of Mr. Borland, Dr. Thomas Wood Borland, came from Scotland with his father to America prior to the year 1800, became a surgeon in the United States navy, under commission from President Thomas Jefferson, and afterward was for a considerable period presiding magistrate of Nansemond county and representative in the Virginia legislature. Thomas R. Borland, left an orphan in infancy, was taken by his uncle, Dr. Euclid Borland, who when the lad had reached the age of eleven years, entered him at school at Bolmar,



T. R. BORLAND

West Chester, Pa., where he remained four years, subsequently attending the Bloomfield academy, in Albemarle county, Va. In April, 1861, though but seventeen years of age, he enlisted as a private in Company K of the Ninth Virginia infantry, with which command he served throughout the entire war. During the first year of his service he was engaged at Pinner's Point, in Norfolk harbor, and during the following years of struggle he took part in many engagements, among the most important of which were the battle of Seven Pines, the fighting on the York River railroad, Malvern Hill, Gettysburg, Warrenton Springs, the siege of Suffolk, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. As a member of the division of General Pickett he participated in the historic charge upon Cemetery hill, on the third day at Gettysburg, and received a wound in the shoulder on that occasion. At Appomattox he was present and capitulated with the remnant of the army. Then, at the age of twenty-one years, with such a momentous experience behind him and all of the career of manhood in the future, he determined to take up the profession of law. With this end in view he entered the law department of the university of Virginia, becoming a member of a class of eighty students, about half of whom were Confederate soldiers, and about two-thirds of whom have since held positions of more or less importance in the service of State or nation. In this famous class were Senators John W. Daniel, of Virginia, and Charles J. Faulkner, of West Virginia. After his graduation in 1867, Mr. Borland traveled abroad two years, visiting England, France and Switzerland, and then, in 1869, made his home at Norfolk, and entered upon the practice of the law. In the same year he was elected city attorney and two years later was chosen to represent the county in the house of delegates. Beginning in 1878 he was four times elected commonwealth's attorney at Norfolk, holding the office most satisfactorily to the public for a period of eight years. In the political movement led by Gen. William Mahone he was an earnest participant and in May, 1869, he was appointed by President Harrison to the office of United States district attorney for the eastern district of Virginia, holding that position until his resignation in 1893. In 1892 he was the unsuccessful candidate of his party for Congress from the Norfolk district. Mr. Borland was married in 1871 to Mary L. Camp, who died in 1878 leaving two children, of whom one survives. In 1879 he was wedded to Miss Carrie Barney, of Richmond. They have three children living.

Captain James N. Bosang, of Pulaski City, during the years 1862-63 commander of the famous "Pulaski Guards" in the Stonewall brigade, was born in the county of which he is now a resident, May 2, 1836. He became a member of the Guards in 1859, the organization having been made at the time of the raid on Harper's Ferry by John Brown; and on April 17, 1861, he went into active service with his company, which then had for its commissioned officers, James A. Walker, later brigadier-general, captain; R. D. Gardner, first lieutenant, and T. J. Boyd, second lieutenant. The company was called to Richmond and was there detailed for some time in the duty of drilling new companies, after which it moved to Harper's Ferry and was assigned as Company C to the Fourth Virginia infantry. At the first battle of Manassas the regiment was distinguished and received the special praise of General Jackson

for its gallantry in attacking the enemy. Here Sergeant Bosang shared the perils of his company, which lost twenty-one men out of sixty-one engaged, and was promoted first sergeant for his meritorious conduct. In the following spring he became first lieutenant, and soon after this promotion was made captain of the company, the former commander rising to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He fought under Jackson in the campaigns in the valley of the Shenandoah, the Seven Days before Richmond, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and after the death of his general shared the service of Johnson's division through the Gettysburg campaign and the battle of the Wilderness until he was captured in the disaster that befell the command at Spottsylvania Court House. He fell upon this field, wounded in the groin, and was taken to the hospital at Washington, then to the Old Capitol prison and from there to Fort Delaware, where he was one of three hundred who refused to take the oath as long as any of their comrades were still in the field. On this account he was compelled to endure the hardships of prison life until July 25, 1865, over fourteen months after his capture. Two brothers of Captain Bosang served in the same company with him: John A., who became a lieutenant and was killed at Spottsylvania; and Henry, who was first wounded at Second Manassas, afterward became major commanding a battalion, was wounded a second time during Averell's raid in southwest Virginia, and died from his wounds after the war, while in California. Captain Bosang has been a resident of Pulaski City since the return of peace. In 1893 his patriotic service and estimable qualities as a citizen were rewarded by election to the office of clerk of the county and circuit courts. By his marriage to Mary F. Cecil he has seven children: Jessie N., N. L., Viola M., Callie F., Ella N., Maggie L., James G.

Evan J. Boshier, of Richmond, an honored veteran of the Second Richmond howitzers, is a native of that city, born in September, 1845. In March, 1863, at the age of seventeen years, he enlisted as a private in the Second Richmond howitzers, and from that date until the close of the war shared gallantly in the conspicuous action of that command. In the list of battles in which he participated are the famous names of Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, Spottsylvania, the Wilderness, Cold Harbor, Berryville, Cedar Creek, the defense of Petersburg, Sailor's Creek and Appomattox. Joining in the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, he received his parole and returned to Richmond, where he embarked in civil life at the age of twenty-one years. During the period that has elapsed since the dark day at Appomattox he has achieved prominent citizenship in his native city and is now prosperous and busy as a manufacturer. In 1868 he took a leading part in the reorganization of the Richmond Howitzers, and since then has served in all the ranks of the association, in 1880 being elected to the position of captain.

Robert S. Boshier, one of the most prominent business men of Richmond, Va., widely known in the South and throughout the whole country, was born at that city in 1843. He entered the service of the Confederate States in May, 1861, as a member of the Second company of Richmond howitzers, an organization of artillery that was famous in the army of Northern Virginia and did un-

excelled service throughout the war. The howitzer battery was first under the command of Maj. George W. Randolph, at a later date secretary of war, served at the battle of Big Bethel, and in the latter part of April had 225 drilled men. Increased in numbers of men and guns, the battery was divided into three companies, and the Second, at first under command of Captain Hudnall, after the Peninsula campaign came under the leadership of Capt. David Watson. Subsequently Watson's battery; the Third howitzers, under Capt. B. H. Smith; the Powhatan artillery, Capt. W. J. Dance; the Rockbridge artillery, Capt. A. Graham; and the Salem artillery, Capt. A. Hupp (later Capt. C. B. Griffin), formed the First regiment Virginia light artillery. The Second howitzers served under the command of Col. J. Thompson Brown in the Maryland campaign, and a section aided Gen. J. E. B. Stuart in a demonstration at Williamsport, covering the crossing of Lee's army after the battle of Sharpsburg. At Fredericksburg the Second howitzers served under the command of the gallant John Pelham, repelling the dangerous advance of the enemy in the vicinity of Hamilton's crossing. This battery, as well as the others, was admirably managed and bravely fought. It went into action after marching all the previous night, and coming upon a field strewn with the wrecks of other batteries, behaved in a manner that elicited the praise of observers. The First artillery regiment rendered important service in the battle of Chancellorsville, where, after Colonel Crutchfield was wounded, Colonel Brown took command of the artillery of Jackson's corps. The regiment was under the command of Captains Watson and Dance. The fame which the First regiment and the Second howitzers had by this time obtained, was fully sustained by their effective service on the field of Gettysburg. Taking position on the ridge near the Lutheran cemetery on the second day, they became at once engaged; and on the third day they fought on the right of the Fairfield road. Colonel Brown reported, "the First Virginia artillery and a portion of Carter's and Nelson's battalions engaged the enemy's batteries in order to divert their fire from our infantry advancing from the right. This fire was well directed and its effect very noticeable." Subsequently when the army was withdrawn to the Hagerstown line, and the larger part of it had moved thence to cross the Potomac, an advance of the enemy was so firmly and gallantly met by Ramseur's men and the Second Richmond howitzers, so General Rodes reported, that the Federals fell back with a loss of many killed and wounded. During the campaign of 1864 the regiment was known as Hardaway's battalion. Col. J. T. Brown was in command of this battalion, Nelson's and Braxton's. On the 10th of May, after going through the Wilderness fight, the battery did very effective service at Spottsylvania Court House, and Major Watson was mortally wounded. On the 12th, where the battery did much to save the battle lines, Colonel Hardaway was wounded and Captain Dance took command of the battalion. Throughout the subsequent campaign, which ended with the Federal army crossing the James river, and all through the siege of Richmond and the final Appomattox campaign, the Second howitzers were distinguished for faithful and effective service. Robert S. Boshier, beginning his service with this gallant battery as a private, shared all of its battles, and at the time of the surrender at Appomattox held the rank of sergeant. Since

the war he has devoted himself to business pursuits, achieving great success, and is now one of the leading citizens of Richmond.

Captain John Clinton Boude was born in Frederick county, Va., November 23, 1833, and came of an ancestry distinguished for military spirit. His father, Rudolph Thomas Clarkson Boude, served in the war of 1812 as a member of the Baltimore light infantry Blues, Thirty-third regiment, Maryland volunteers; his grandfather, Joseph Boude, served in the Revolutionary war, in which conflict the latter's brother, Thomas, earned the rank of major in Anthony Wayne's Pennsylvania regiment, and was promoted for gallantry at Stony Point. The family, of French origin, resided at Baltimore, from which place the father of Captain Boude removed to Virginia after the war of 1812, married Elizabeth Ewing and became the father of eight children. John Clinton Boude, the sixth of these children, was reared in the lower valley, but in 1855 made his home at Lexington. Watching the tide of events with intelligent scrutiny, he saw long before the war broke out that the drift of politics was inevitably in that direction, and his expression of this conviction led to his being called an "original secessionist." Though unconnected with the institution of slavery, and as a matter of principle opposed to it, yet he fully believed in the righteousness of the cause of the South, and during the excitement attending the John Brown invasion, gave expression, on the Rockbridge fair ground, to perhaps the first secession sentiment uttered in the State. It made the blood run cold in the veins of those who heard it, but the rapid progress of events soon justified his prophetic power. The Rockbridge Rifles was presently organized, of which he became sergeant, and when the State seceded his company was among the first mustered into active service. The company was assigned temporarily to the Fourth and Fifth regiments and finally to the Twenty-seventh regiment of infantry, forming part of the famous "Stonewall" brigade. He participated in every campaign and battle of "Stonewall" Jackson, except the battle of Kernstown, he then being absent on recruiting service, and early in 1862 his gallantry earned promotion to the captaincy of his company. He received a slight wound in the wrist at the second battle of Manassas and at the battle of Chancellorsville, May 3, 1863, he was struck by a minie ball which shattered his knee joint and necessitated the amputation of his leg. As soon as he could wear an artificial leg he was appointed enrolling officer for Rockbridge county, a position he held until the close of the war. Faithful and true in the performance of duty and patient in suffering, he won the admiration of all, which was expressed by his election in 1864 to the clerkship of the circuit court and his continuous re-election during a period of thirty-two years—the remainder of his life. Having graduated in the law school of Washington and Lee university, he was a good lawyer and discharged his official duties with remarkable efficiency. Notwithstanding his crippled condition, his strong constitution and indomitable will were such that he was public spirited in a high degree and accomplished remarkable undertakings in civil life. For many years he served upon the city council and school board, was secretary of the Jackson memorial association and commander of Lee-Jackson camp, Confederate Veterans; was master of Mountain City lodge, F. & A. M., for fifteen years, and at his death was its last surviving charter member. He

was district deputy grand master for about twenty years and a regular attendant at the sessions of the grand lodge; was prominent in the Royal Arch chapter and the Knights Templar and was active in the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. He was a firm believer in the Christian religion, and in early manhood became a member of the Evangelical Lutheran church. He was married June 9, 1875, to Dora A., daughter of James and Margaret McMullin Plunkett. Her father was a soldier of the war of 1812, and at the time of his death, in 1865, was the oldest native of Lexington. Her brother, Robert W. Plunkett, served in the Forty-second Virginia regiment in the Confederate war until disabled by a wound. Mrs. Boude still resides at the Lexington home where Captain Boude died, May 28, 1896. He passed away suddenly, with no special disease, but from the effects of his Confederate service, and was laid to rest by his comrades and Masonic brethren, in a spot he had selected years before, on Memorial day, with a Confederate flag waving over his final resting place.

Captain E. E. Bouldin, of Danville, Va., was born in Charlotte county, March 31, 1838, the son of Hon. James W. Bouldin, whose wife was Almeria, daughter of Rev. Clement R. Read, one of the first trustees of the old Hampden-Sidney college. James W. Bouldin, a lawyer of distinction, served for several terms in the United States Congress as the successor of his brother, Thomas Tyler Bouldin, who succeeded John Randolph in Congress and died suddenly while addressing that body in 1834. The grandfather of Captain Bouldin was Wood Bouldin, who married Joanna, sister of Gov. John Tyler, and aunt of President Tyler. The family is an old one in America, this branch being descended from Col. Thomas Bouldin, who built the second frame house in Charlotte county, about 1745. Captain Bouldin was educated at the university of Virginia, and after admission to the bar entered upon the practice of law in Goliad, Tex., early in 1860. In April he served under General Van Dorn in the capture of the Federal troops that were about to leave Texas for the North, and immediately thereafter he returned to Virginia and enlisted as a private in the Charlotte cavalry. With this troop he served in the Laurel Hill and Rich Mountain campaign, and soon afterward was promoted first lieutenant. In the following spring he was elected captain of the company—the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. The company participated in the Kanawha valley campaign in the battalion of Major Jackson, and later became Company B of the Fourteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, Col. James Cochrane. This regiment was part of Jenkins' brigade, the advance guard of Lee's army in the Pennsylvania campaign, and Captain Bouldin, with a squadron of cavalry, was the first to enter Chambersburg. On July 3, 1863, he commanded his regiment in the famous cavalry fight between Stuart and Gregg on the Federal right, in which half of the Fourteenth who were engaged were killed or wounded, and he was struck and painfully hurt by a spent ball. He was actively engaged in protecting the Confederate trains on the retreat, and at the Potomac river his arm was broken by the explosion of a shell which killed several of his men. After his recovery he commanded the extreme rear guard of General McCausland's command in the movement from Covington to Lynchburg before Hunter, also the rear guard in the Chambersburg raid of 1864, and on the

return from that expedition he was captured at Moorefield. He was imprisoned for eight months at Camp Chase and was then exchanged and assumed command as senior captain of the Fourteenth regiment. In that capacity he took part in the battle of Five Forks and the fighting on the retreat to Appomattox. On the night of April 8, 1865, being on the right of Lee's army, he was ordered by W. H. F. Lee to capture a battery of the enemy just in front of his position, which was gallantly accomplished and the guns turned on the enemy. In this charge, James Wilson of Rockbridge county, color-bearer of the Fourteenth regiment, was killed, and the latter is believed to have been the last man of the army of Northern Virginia killed in battle. On returning from this charge Captain Bouldin was informed that the army was about to be surrendered and was given the option of cutting his way out or surrendering. All his men declared for the former alternative, and they rode out across the James river and to the Peaks of Otter, where Captain Bouldin sent home all the men not from his own county and then led the latter to Charlotte county, and a few weeks later had his command paroled at Farmville. Since August of that memorable year Captain Bouldin has been engaged in the practice of law, with much success, at Danville. Since the surrender he has not permitted his name to be used in connection with political office. He was one of the Confederate officers who located the lines of the cavalry fight at Gettysburg, which are now appropriately marked by monuments. In 1871 he was married to Lucy L. Edmonds, and they have seven children living: James W., Bessie E., wife of Julian Meade; Joseph N., Alma K., Lucy L., Fannie H., and Hattie.

Aubin L. Boulware, prominently associated with the financial affairs of the Virginia capital, was born in King and Queen county, December 27, 1843. He resided in his native county until he reached early manhood. In his nineteenth year, in July, 1862, he became a member of Company H of the Ninth Virginia cavalry regiment and with this gallant command he served as a private until the close of the war. He shared with honor in the operations of the cavalry brigade of Gen. W. H. F. Lee, under the command of the famous J. E. B. Stuart, and after the death of the latter general in the division of Gen. W. H. F. Lee. His record of service in the Confederate cause embraces participation in the battles of Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Miller's Mill, Brandy Station, Catlett Station, six days' fighting at Upperville, the struggle in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania, Reams' Station, Five Forks, and the fighting on the retreat from Richmond, including Sailor's Creek. He was wounded in the affair at Miller's creek, and again at Five Forks. At the close of this arduous and devoted career in the army of Northern Virginia, Mr. Boulware returned to civil life, entered the university of Virginia, from which he received the degree of master of arts, taught school for a year or two, meanwhile preparing himself for the practice of law, which he began at Richmond. During the subsequent years of his life he attained prominence as a lawyer, banker and business man, and gained an influential position in the city which his worth and probity richly deserved. He was a true comrade to the survivors of the army and maintained a membership in the R. E. Lee camp of Confederate Veterans until he departed this life, June 12, 1897.

N. R. Bowman, of Lynchburg, well remembered by his comrades as a faithful soldier of the Confederate States, was born in Botetourt county in 1837. He was reared in Prince Edward and Charlotte counties until 1855, when he made his home at Lynchburg. He entered the service in the spring of 1862 as orderly-sergeant of a company of artillery, organized at Lynchburg, and with this command was assigned to the artillery battalion of Col. T. S. Rhett, for service in the defense of Richmond. His health was delicate, and in about four months it gave way to such an extent that he was unable longer to perform his duties with the battery. He was then detailed by Colonel Rhett for duty in the ordnance bureau, but his increasing disability compelled him to go home a few months later. In 1864, having somewhat recovered his health, he volunteered as a private in Company B of the Second Virginia cavalry, of General Munford's division, with which he served until the close of the war. While with the Second cavalry he participated in the battle of Cedar Creek and the skirmishes which accompanied the retreat from the valley of the Shenandoah. Since the close of hostilities Sergeant Bowman has been engaged in business at Lynchburg, where he is highly regarded by his former comrades and the community generally. He has served in the city council, and in various ways honorably discharged those duties of good citizenship becoming a Confederate veteran.

Richard Simon Boykin, a prominent citizen of Suffolk, Va., was born in Southampton county, May 1, 1846, the son of Maj. John Boykin, also a native of that county, where the family has resided for many years. His ancestor, William Boykin, came from England in 1634 and settled on a large estate granted him in the county of Isle of Wight, which then comprised the territory of Southampton county, in which part of the Boykin estate lies. Maj. John Boykin had two or three farms in Virginia and one near Holly Springs, Miss., and led the life of a planter until his death in 1857. His wife, the mother of R. S. Boykin, was Caroline, daughter of Col. Richard Kello, whose father, William Kello, came to Virginia from England. She died in 1868. Mr. Boykin, in his youth, was educated in the schools of Berlin, Southampton county, and in Nansemond and Caroline counties and spent two years at Harrison's school, a famous institution in Amelia county. On leaving this school it was with the intention of entering the university of Virginia, but the war was making such demands then upon the strength of the State, that as a loyal citizen, though but a boy of seventeen years, he enlisted in the Confederate service early in 1864, as a private in Company A of the Eighteenth Virginia battalion of artillery. His gallantry as a soldier earned him promotion to the rank of lieutenant, but he never received his commission on account of the speedy close of the war. He participated in the battle of Sailor's Creek and was among the captured, and on July 6, 1865, was paroled and released. Five members of his family being engaged in the medical profession, he took up the study of medicine with his uncle, Dr. Samuel B. Kello, but soon abandoned the study and began reading law under Judge George T. Bartlett, of Georgia, his cousin. On completing his studies he was admitted to the bar, and then, on account of his mother's illness, he returned to Virginia, and after her death, which soon followed, he took charge of the estate. The assumption of these

duties led to his abandoning a professional career, and he remained on the homestead, leading the life of a planter until 1892. He then removed to Suffolk and embarked in the insurance business, in which he has met with marked success. During his life he has been honored by being called upon for public services, being elected at the age of twenty-one to the position of magistrate, which he was soon compelled to resign on account of poor health, caused by his confinement as a prisoner of war. For a number of years he was a member of the executive committee of the Democratic party of Southampton county, and in 1888 he was elected a member of the State legislature, in which position he served two years. During both terms of the presidency of Mr. Cleveland he served as deputy collector of internal revenue, in charge of the Norfolk division. During his residence in Southampton county he was for a short time one of the owners and editors of the Petersburg Mail. Mr. Boykin is still a true comrade of the Confederate soldiery, and is a member of Tom Smith camp, of Suffolk, of the United Confederate Veterans. He was married in 1872 to Miss Nannie Urquhart, of Southampton county, who died in 1881, leaving four children. On April 6, 1887, he wedded Miss Susie Pretlow, of Surry county, and three children have been born to them.

Andrew J. Bradfield, of Leesburg, one of the surviving original members of the Loudoun Guards, was born in Loudoun county in 1836. At the age of sixteen years he was honored by appointment as deputy clerk in the office of the clerk of courts in Clarke county. In 1858 he returned to Loudoun county and had charge of the clerk's office of the circuit court of said county until the outbreak of the war. He was then among the first to offer their services to the defense of the State, and becoming one of the original members of the Loudoun Guards, was elected to the rank of sergeant. He was mustered into the service of the State in this rank and served throughout the entire war in the army of Northern Virginia. Early in the conflict he fought in the ranks at Blackburn's Ford, and at the Manassas battle of July 21, 1861. Subsequently, on account of failing health, which made it impossible to sustain the fatigues of active service, he was assigned to duty in the commissary department, in which his services were rendered during the remainder of the war of the Confederacy. He surrendered with the army at Appomattox and then returned to Leesburg, where he was soon afterward appointed deputy clerk. Subsequently by appointment and by election he held the office of clerk until 1870, when he declined to qualify, though re-elected, and engaged in the banking business, which has been his occupation since that date. He is one of the prominent and influential men of the city and highly esteemed by the community. He is a warm friend of the ex-Confederate soldiers and maintains a membership in Clinton-Hatcher camp, United Confederate Veterans.

William Henry Bramblitt, M. D., a prominent physician and citizen of Pulaski City, Va., who in earlier life gave four years' service to the Confederate cause, was born in Bedford City, January 29, 1820. He was reared from infancy near New London, Campbell county, and was educated for the profession of medicine, being graduated in 1857 by the university of New York. Soon after he had entered upon the duties of his profession the crisis of 1861 arrived and he entered enthusiastically into the military preparation

for the defense of his native State. Early in 1861 he organized a company of cavalry in Grayson county, where he was then engaged in practice, of which he was elected captain. This company, known as the Grayson Cavalry, Col. W. H. Jenifer commanding, served under Gens. John B. Floyd and Henry Heth in southwest Virginia and the Kanawha valley of West Virginia during 1861, and during this period he commanded his company with efficiency and gallantry. At the close of the first year's service he was transferred to the medical department, commissioned surgeon, and assigned to the Sixty-third Virginia infantry regiment. With this command he served in the army of the Kanawha, and in the Southwest Virginia and East Tennessee campaigns of 1863, and was with the regiment in Buckner's corps of the army of Tennessee during the battle of Chickamauga. Subsequently he was on hospital duty at Forsyth, Ga., and at the Floyd House hospital, Macon, until the close of the war. He was captured by the enemy at the fall of Macon, April 20, 1865. While in the military service and since then he has been distinguished for his success in some of the most difficult and dangerous of surgical operations. After the close of hostilities he resumed the practice of his profession at Newbern, Pulaski county, Va., and in 1884 he removed to his present home at Pulaski City, where he is engaged actively in his profession.

Major Thomas A. Brander, of Richmond, distinguished as an artillery officer of the Confederate States army, was born in that city December 12, 1839. In his youth he engaged in mercantile employment and was so occupied when the troops of Virginia were called out to repel the threatened invasion. As a private he had served with Company F, First Virginia regiment, at Harper's Ferry and Charlestown, during the John Brown affair, and in the same station he entered the service in 1861. He was at once promoted second lieutenant of Company A, Twentieth regiment, Virginia volunteers. With this command he participated in the campaign in West Virginia, fighting at Rich Mountain July 11, 1861. On his return from this campaign he was promoted to a captaincy in the provisional army, and in the fall and winter of that year he assisted in the organization and equipment of Letcher's battery, an artillery command of six guns, of which he was appointed junior first lieutenant. In this rank he served until after the battle of Chancellorsville, when his bravery and efficiency were recognized by promotion on the field to captain of the battery. He retained this command until January, 1865, when he was promoted major of artillery and assigned to the battalion of Col. William T. Poague, with whom he served until Appomattox. Among the battles in which he participated, the most notable are Rich Mountain, Mechanicsville, Malvern Hill, the three days' fight at Chancellorsville, the engagement at Fredericksburg in 1862, when he was badly wounded, Harper's Ferry, Gettysburg, Spottsylvania Court House, all the fighting on the Petersburg line during the siege, and the two battles at Reams' Station. When he had done his whole duty as an intrepid and devoted soldier, he returned to Richmond at the close of the struggle and embarked in business, giving his attention mainly to insurance agencies. He is universally popular as a gentleman and a business man, and is influential in many directions for the good of the community. He

has served as alderman of Richmond, and during the first administration of President Cleveland held an office with the collector of customs at that city. A warm supporter of the various Confederate organizations, he has been honored by his comrades with conspicuous position. He is past commander of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, United Confederate Veterans, and past commander of the grand camp of the State. This later important position, with the rank of major-general, he held during the years of 1894, 1895, 1896 and 1897. He is also prominent in the maintenance of that noble institution, the Soldiers' Home, of which he is vice-president and chairman of the executive committee.

Colonel Carter M. Braxton, distinguished as an artillery officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Norfolk, Va., September 5, 1836. His father, Carter M. Braxton, was a prominent lawyer in southeastern Virginia, and served as a captain in the war of 1812. The latter's father, who bore the same name, was the son of Carter Braxton, a well-remembered patriot of colonial days, and one of the signers of the declaration of independence. The maiden name of Colonel Braxton's mother was Elizabeth Mayo. When he was two years of age his parents removed to King and Queen county, where, and in the cities of Richmond and Fredericksburg, he passed his childhood and youth. He was educated at the Hanover academy at Fredericksburg, and was prepared for the profession of civil engineering, of which he began the practice in 1853. In this line of work, to which his life was chiefly devoted, he early showed remarkable talent, and was intrusted with responsible positions, being chief engineer of the Fredericksburg & Gordonsville railroad at the outbreak of the war in 1861. In April of that year he promptly resigned his civil employment to serve the State, and accepted a commission as captain of engineers in the Virginia army. In this capacity he was assigned to duty on the Potomac defenses under Col. Thomas Williamson, but soon afterward was made captain of the Fredericksburg Light Artillery, in which he had served as lieutenant previous to the war. This soon became famous as Braxton's battery, and was distinguished for the brave and steady performance of duty throughout the four years' struggle. It served on the Potomac previous to the Peninsular campaign, and in the latter contest fought from Mechanicsville to Frayser's Farm, with the division of A. P. Hill. General Archer reported that "Capt. Carter M. Braxton, with his Fredericksburg battery, seconded by Lieutenant Marye, rendered efficient service at Mechanicsville and Gaines' Mill, and displayed remarkable skill and gallantry," and General Hill, in reviewing the whole campaign, gave him especial mention for conspicuous gallantry. Subsequently Captain Braxton was identified with the campaigns and battles of Hill's division, and after the latter's promotion, with the Second army corps, under Hill and Ewell and Gordon, until the fateful 9th of April, 1865. With his division he took part in the fights at Slaughter's Mountain, Chantilly, Groveton, Second Manassas, the investment of Harper's Ferry, during which he shelled the Federal works from Bolivar heights, and at Sharpsburg he acted temporarily as chief of artillery during the disability of Colonel Walker. At Fredericksburg, General Hill reported that "though sick he appeared on the field and fought his guns." After this battle, being promoted major, he was second

in command of Lieut.-Col. T. H. Carter's battalion on the fields of Chancellorsville, Winchester and Gettysburg. At Chancellorsville he took part in Jackson's flank movement, and on the second day, in command of several batteries pushed forward gallantly until he had planted his guns upon the enemy's works. After the return to Virginia he commanded a battalion of artillery in the Mine Run campaign, and about this time was recommended by General Pendleton, chief of artillery, as one of the officers most deserving of promotion. The rank of lieutenant-colonel was soon afterward conferred upon him, and he retained command of a battalion of the artillery of the Second corps. He fought with Ewell in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania, where, throughout the bloody day of May 12th, he rendered important service. He continued to be actively engaged, so far as natural conditions permitted, in this campaign up to and including the battle of Cold Harbor, and then was transferred with Early's division to the Shenandoah valley. He took part in Early's advance down the valley and expedition against Washington including the battle of Monocacy, and after the return to the valley was engaged in the battles of Winchester and Fisher's Hill, against Sheridan. At Winchester, on the left of the Confederate army, he was early in the action, left facing the enemy at short distance without support. The situation was critical, but as General Early has written: "Braxton's guns, in which now was our only hope, resolutely stood their ground, and under the personal superintendence of Lieut.-Col. C. M. Braxton, and Col. T. H. Carter, then my chief of artillery, opened with canister on the enemy. The fire was so rapid and well directed, that the enemy staggered, halted and commenced falling back." As a result of Colonel Braxton's coolness, the battle that morning resulted in a victory for the Confederates. In January, 1865, Colonel Braxton was assigned to the heavy artillery at Chaffin's Bluff, and later he was on duty in the fortifications near Richmond, and during the final part of the siege, he was in charge of the artillery attached to the command of Gen. R. H. Anderson on the extreme right of the lines. He fought at Hatcher's Run and later at Five Forks, and surrendered with the army at Appomattox. He then returned to Fredericksburg and resumed his profession as a civil engineer, in which he became connected with several important enterprises. He built the Richmond, Fredericksburg & Potomac, and the Potomac, Fredericksburg & Piedmont railroads, located the Fredericksburg & Alexandria railroad, and as chief engineer of construction for the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, built the terminals at Newport News. With the same company he served as engineer of maintenance of way until 1889, when he resigned to carry out a contract he had undertaken to build a portion of the shipyard at Newport News. Subsequently he was engaged in many important building contracts, and was interested in the real estate business. At Newport News, where he made his home, he was one of the most highly regarded citizens, and was widely known for his military and professional services. One of his cherished honors was the post of commander of Magruder camp, United Confederate Veterans. He was a member of the official board of his Baptist church, and in masonry had the advanced rank of the Scottish rite and Thirty-second degree. He was married February 14, 1865, to

Miss Fannie Hume, who died four months later, and on March 23, 1868, he was wedded to Miss Nannie Alsop, by whom he had six daughters living. Colonel Braxton died May 27, 1898.

Major Elliott Muse Braxton was born in Matthews county, Va., October 8, 1823. His father, Carter M. Braxton, was the son of Carter Braxton, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and a lawyer of eminence. Major Braxton studied law with his father and commenced the practice in Richmond City, subsequently removing to Richmond county. In 1857 he was nominated by the Democratic party for the State senate, and was elected over Col. Robert W. Carter, who had long represented the district and who was supposed to be invincible on account of his ability, popularity and the party majority behind him. Braxton was re-elected in 1853 without opposition. In the spring of 1860 he removed to Fredericksburg, and when the war broke out he raised a company of which he was elected captain. He was afterward commissioned as major and served on the staff of Gen. John R. Cooke, through the struggle for Southern independence. Returning to Fredericksburg at the close of the war, he became the senior member of the law firm of Braxton & Wallace. In 1870, when Virginia was allowed, for the first time after the reconstruction period, representation in Congress, Major Braxton was selected as the nominee of the Democratic party from the Eighth congressional district of Virginia and served in the Forty-second Congress. He was renominated by his party in 1872, but was sacrificed together with such men as General Morgan, of Ohio, and Michael Kerr, of Indiana, as a result of the statesmanship that nominated Greeley as the presidential candidate. In 1854 Major Braxton was married to Miss Anna Maria Marshall, of Fauquier county, granddaughter of Chief Justice Marshall. They had seven children, four daughters and three sons. A devoted husband and father died on October 2, 1891, in the sixty-eighth year of his age. He lived a Christian, from his early married life being a member of the Protestant Episcopal church. The following resolutions were passed by the vestry of St. George church: "The death of Hon. Elliott Muse Braxton being announced to the vestry of St. George Episcopal church, at a meeting held on this 5th day of October, this body feels that it is only a just tribute to put on record its testimony to the honorable career and reputation of this distinguished member of the vestry. Elliott M. Braxton was a Christian, consistent in all his acts to the faith which he professed. He was a gentleman whose wise counsel will be missed in the deliberations of this body. He was a citizen filled with public spirit only limited by a just recognition of individual rights. He has held with credit high and exalted public representative office. He lived a life to be emulated and died without a stain upon his honor. The vestry tender heartfelt sympathy to each member of his family."

Elliott M. Braxton, son of the foregoing, was born at Fredericksburg, Va., February 6, 1867, and was educated at the university of Virginia, studying law also at that institution. While teaching school at Fredericksburg he continued his legal studies and began the practice at Washington, D. C., in association with Gen. Eppa Hunton. Since 1891 he has been engaged in the practice at Newport News, for several years past as a partner of A. S. Segar, and

is regarded as one of the prominent young men of his profession. In 1893 he was married to Jennet P., daughter of Judge Thomas C. Fuller, of the United States court of private land claims at Santa Fe, N. M., and they have one child, Elliott M.

William P. Brett, of Newport News, a veteran of Mahone's brigade, army of Northern Virginia, is a native of the city of Richmond, born April 4, 1840, the son of Hudson and Rebecca C. (Bendle) Brett. He was reared and educated in his native city, and when just past the age of twenty-one entered the service of his State as a private in the Richmond Greys. This company was first assigned as Company A to the First Virginia regiment, but on April 19, 1861, was detached and sent to Norfolk, being the first of the Richmond military organizations to leave the city for the front. At Norfolk it became a part of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry, and was assigned to the brigade of General Mahone, which displayed its admirable discipline and fighting qualities on many of the most famous fields of the four years' war which followed. With his regiment he participated in the battles of Drewry's Bluff, Seven Pines, King's School House, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Sharpsburg, Second Fredericksburg, United States Ford, and Spottsylvania. After the latter battle he was promoted to ordnance sergeant by General Mahone, and in that capacity he participated in the subsequent service of the brigade, at Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, and many months of service in the trenches before Petersburg, the battles of the Crater, Reams' Station and Yellow Tavern, finally surrendering with Lee. During this long and gallant service he was wounded four times, in the battles of Crampton's Gap, Fredericksburg, Spottsylvania and the Wilderness. After the close of hostilities he resided at Richmond until 1886, when he removed to Newport News. For six years he was in the service of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, and since then he has held the position of chief wharf clerk of the Merchants and Miners' transportation company. He still enjoys his Confederate comradeship and is an active member of the Magruder camp, No. 36, Confederate Veterans. In 1873 he was married to Mary V. Alexander, of Fredericksburg, and they have three children living.

Henry Wilmot Brewer, a prominent civil engineer of Georgetown, D. C., was born at that city in 1834, and there reared and educated. On reaching manhood he embraced the profession of civil engineering, in which he gained such proficiency as to be appointed in 1858 to the United States coast survey, with the rank of master's mate in the navy. He continued in this employment until the outbreak of the war, when, thoroughly in sympathy with the cause of the South, he resigned his commission in April, 1861, and taking with him sixty or seventy men of like mind regarding their duty in the impending struggle, he repaired to Alexandria, Va., and joined the Washington volunteers. When these volunteers were mustered into the service he became second lieutenant of Company H, Seventh Virginia infantry, in which rank he served until the reorganization in the spring of 1862. The regiment was then disbanded and he went to Richmond and sought service where his professional acquirements would be more directly useful, and received the appointment of assistant engineer for the

Richmond defenses, in which capacity he served for one year. Then, desiring more active service, he opened a recruiting camp near Richmond, supplying men for the cavalry command of Maj. Harry Gilmor, of Maryland. Subsequently he was made captain of a company in this battalion, and served under Gilmor in the valley and in the Pennsylvania raid until the affair at Moorefield, W. Va., in 1864, when he was among those captured by the enemy. He suffered nine months' imprisonment at Camp Chase, Ohio, and was then sent to Richmond, but before he could rejoin his command, the war had ceased. The list of engagements in which he participated includes the following: First Manassas, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Chambersburg and New Creek. Captain Brewer was paroled at Lynchburg in May, 1865, and then returned to Washington. Not long after his return he was appointed city engineer of Georgetown, in which position he served for several years with general satisfaction. Subsequently he performed similar duties under the board of public works, and for three years was in the service of the United States government in the work of gauging rivers. Since then he has been engaged in the general duties of his profession. Captain Brewer was married in 1892 to Florine A., daughter of Rev. Dr. Wellons, of Suffolk, Va.

William M. Bridges was born in Richmond, Va., May 5, 1835, and was educated in the schools of Richmond and at Emory and Henry college, Va. He removed to New Orleans, La., in 1857, and was there when the military organizations began to be formed for the defense of the Confederacy. He was among the New Orleans troops at the surrender of Baton Rouge arsenal to Gen. Braxton Bragg; and was a non-commissioned officer in the Crescent Rifles, Bradford's battalion, which early volunteered to reinforce General Bragg at Pensacola, Fla. The Rifles became a part of Major Bradford's battalion of Louisiana troops, but Mr. Bridges' service with the command was limited to about three weeks, he then receiving a commission from Governor Moore as second lieutenant in the first regiment of Louisiana artillery, his commission being in the regular army, and his regiment being one of the eight regiments of regulars in the Confederate States army. He served at Fort Jackson, below New Orleans, until the surrender of the Mississippi defenses in that quarter, a period of eleven months. Upon his exchange he was detached from his regiment by order of the secretary of war and assigned to the staff of Gen. Johnson K. Duncan. He reported to him at Chattanooga, Tenn., and served on his staff throughout Bragg's Kentucky campaign. Upon Duncan's death at Knoxville, Tenn., in December, 1862, Lieutenant Bridges was transferred to the staff of General Bragg, in command of the army of the Mississippi. In this capacity he participated in the battle of Murfreesboro, Tenn. In January, 1863, he rejoined his regiment at Vicksburg, which place the Federal army was attempting to invest, and was assigned to the staff of Brig.-Gen. Edward Higgins, in command of the river front, as inspector of the river batteries. In this important position he served during the remainder of the siege of Vicksburg, and until the capitulation to Grant in July. He was paroled with the remainder of the army and observed the parole until he was declared exchanged in the following September. He was then

transferred to Charleston, S. C., promoted captain of artillery, and given command by General Beauregard of a light battery on James island, where he served until the evacuation of the city. With four guns he joined General Johnston's army, with which he finally surrendered at Greensboro in April, 1865. Returning to Richmond, he went from there in the fall of 1865 to Louisville, Ky., where he engaged in the tobacco business until 1872, when he again became a citizen of Richmond. In 1868 Gen. Peyton Wise, then inspector of tobacco for the Tobacco association of Richmond, having declined re-election, Captain Bridges was elected in his place and has been subsequently annually re-elected to this office to the present time—1898.

Captain W. H. Briggs, of Emporia, Va., during life a prosperous farmer and influential citizen, was born in Sussex county, October 16, 1833, and was a descendant of one of the old and notable Virginia families. His father, Dr. William Briggs, a prominent physician and member of the Virginia legislature, was a son of William Briggs, a soldier of 1812, and for many years high sheriff of the county. Dr. Briggs married Rebecca, daughter of Maj. James Dillard, who served in the Virginia troops during the war of 1812. Captain Briggs had received his education at the university of Virginia, and had embarked in his agricultural career when the war broke out. He went to the front early in 1861 as captain of the Greenville Guards, a volunteer company of infantry, and was stationed on the peninsula near Yorktown and Williamsport during the first year of the war. Here, also, he participated in the battles against McClellan's army in the spring of 1862, during the Seven Days' battles and the battle of Malvern Hill, and subsequently participated in the second battle of Manassas. He was then transferred to the cavalry and in this branch of the service he was engaged in campaigns about Richmond and Petersburg until detailed on special service, which occupied him until the close of the war. At the end he was paroled at Petersburg and returned to Emporia, and his work as a farmer. In addition to the management of an estate of seven hundred acres he also conducted a mercantile business. For about twelve years he held the position of superintendent of schools for Greenville and Sussex counties, and during both the first and second administrations of President Cleveland, his prominence as a citizen and influential service in his party were recognized by his appointment as deputy collector of internal revenue. Captain Briggs was married March 5, 1855, to Miss Virginia Land, who died September 11, 1868. June 8, 1870, he was married a second time, to Miss Hart Cook, who survives him.

Admiral Brinkley is a survivor of one of the families of Nansemond county, who loyally supported Virginia in the great struggle, his parents being Admiral and Margaret J. Brinkley. The father, a farmer, born about 1809, in Nansemond county, of which his father, Jacob Brinkley, was also a native, died in December, 1849, and was survived but four years by his wife, a daughter of Job Saunders. Three of their sons entered the Confederate service. Robert B. became captain of Company I, Forty-first Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade, and after a faithful and distinguished service was killed in a skirmish at Hanover Junction in May, 1864. Hugh G. held the rank of lieutenant in the same com-

pany until he was captured in 1863, near Blackwater river, while returning from a furlough. Being held at Point Lookout and afterward at Johnson's island, he scorned to obtain his liberty by abandoning his convictions, and being so unfortunate as not to be exchanged, remained a prisoner of war until after the surrender. He then engaged in business at Norfolk, and so continued until his death in 1869. John R. served faithfully in Captain Barham's company of cavalry throughout the war, and afterward engaging in farming, died at his home in Nansemond county about 1883. Admiral Brinkley, a younger son, now a prominent wholesale merchant of Norfolk, was born near Suffolk, March 8, 1850, and has taken a prominent part in the upbuilding of the Old Dominion since the war. Educated in a log schoolhouse, he entered business life with his brother, Hugh G., at the age of seventeen. In 1871 he became a retail grocer on his own account, in Portsmouth, and ten years afterward developed into the wholesale trade. In 1882 he became a member of a prominent wholesale firm of Norfolk, in a few years becoming the head of the house. He was married in 1871 to Fannie Fern Daughtrey, who died about three years later. His present wife is Laura O., daughter of Bassett and Elizabeth (Grimes) Warren, and niece of Capt. Cary Grimes, the gallant artillery commander.

James Peyton Britton, a gallant North Carolina soldier, was born in 1842, in Hertford county, N. C. Losing his parents before reaching the age of ten years, he found employment in young manhood as the overseer of a farm in Bertie county. In the spring of 1861 he volunteered as a private in the company of Capt. Thomas M. Garrett, Fifth North Carolina infantry, Iverson's brigade, Rodes' division. He participated in the battle of Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Cedar Run, Second Manassas, South Mountain, Harper's Ferry, Culpeper Court House, Gettysburg, Williamsport, and other famous engagements, in all twenty-seven encounters with the enemy. At South Mountain he received a wound in the chin which kept him in hospital at Petersburg for two or three months, and on returning to his command he was promoted orderly-sergeant. In the bloody fighting of the first day at Gettysburg, in which his regiment was almost annihilated, after his company was mowed down by the storm of grape and canister, Sergeant Britton wrapped the tattered battle flag around his arm and carried it from the field. He was with "Bob" Lee to the end at Appomattox, and then returned to his native State, and in 1867 was married to Miss Annie E. Lesoms. In 1890 he removed to Arkansas, but retired from farm life in 1897 and made his home at Oakdale, Norfolk county.

Joseph Edward Britton, oldest son of the foregoing, was born in North Carolina in 1869, and was reared and educated in that State. At the age of twenty-one years he entered the Norfolk business college, and after graduation found employment as a clerk at Portsmouth. Subsequently he purchased the business and continued it until 1894, when he removed to Norfolk, and established a wholesale and commission house. He is interested in various enterprises of importance, and in real estate, and has manifested a remarkable tact and skill in business which promise unqualified success. He is popular socially, maintains membership in several fraternal orders, and is a trustee and clerk of the South Norfolk

Baptist church. In 1894 he was married to Miss Sallie Owen, daughter of Rev. A. E. Owen, D. D., of Portsmouth, formerly in the Confederate States service.

Colonel John M. Brockenbrough was, in June, 1861, in command of his own regiment, the Fortieth Virginia and Cook's battery at Mathias Point on the Potomac. In concert with Col. (afterward brigadier-general) George E. Pickett, he was charged with the defense of the Rappahannock. On April 20, 1862, when the Federal forces appeared before Fredericksburg, Field's brigade, to which Brockenbrough's regiment was attached, had quite a spirited skirmish with the enemy before falling back. During the Seven Days' battles Colonel Brockenbrough was actively engaged at Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill and Frayser's Farm. He participated also in the campaign against Pope, ending with the defeat of that general at Second Manassas and Ox Hill. At the last named battle Brockenbrough commanded the brigades of Branch and Field. Generals Lee and Jackson, in their reports, spoke in high terms of the gallant fighting of these troops under the leadership of Brockenbrough. During the Maryland campaign Colonel Brockenbrough was still in command of Field's brigade and in A. P. Hill's division of Jackson's corps participated in the capture of Harper's Ferry and in the bloody battle of Sharpsburg. At Fredericksburg he still had command of a brigade and again at Chancellorsville, after the wounding of Heth. At Gettysburg he commanded the Second brigade of Heth's division in the corps of A. P. Hill and had a hand in the first day's victorious battle, which drove the enemy through Gettysburg to the heights beyond. After the Pennsylvania campaign Colonel Brockenbrough was placed on detached duty and served the Confederacy in other fields of duty.

Henry Laurence Brooke, a prominent lawyer of Richmond, born in Stafford county in 1808, died in 1874, was a son of John Taliaferro Brooke, twin brother of Francis T. Brooke, judge of the supreme court of appeals of Virginia. Elder brothers of the latter were Dr. Lawrence Brooke, surgeon of the "Bon Homme Richard," under Capt. John Paul Jones, and Robert Brooke, governor of Virginia in 1794. The father of these distinguished sons was Richard Brooke, son of Edmond Brooke, who came to Virginia from England with Gov.-Gen. Alexander Spotswood in 1715, and served with the governor in his famous reconnoissance beyond the Alleghanies. He was one of those who received on their return the decoration which led to the members of the expedition being subsequently designated as the "Knights of the Golden Horse-Shoe." Henry Laurence Brooke married Virginia Tucker, sister of John Randolph Tucker and Beverly Tucker, the latter of whom was consul to Liverpool during the administration of President Buchanan, and subsequently was an adherent and personal friend of the Emperor Maximilian, of Mexico. The father of this family was Henry St. George Tucker, president of the supreme court of appeals of Virginia, son of St. George Tucker, who held the same high judicial function and by his marriage to Fannie Bland, became the stepfather of John Randolph of Roanoke, who traced his descent through his mother to the royal blood of England and through his father to the Indian princess Pocahontas. The families of Tucker and Brooke were loyal to Virginia in her hour of trial, and faithfully supported the Confed-

erate States by influence and force of arms. Henry Laurence Brooke gave two young sons to the army of Northern Virginia, St. George T. Brooke, now professor of law in the university of Virginia, who served during three years in General Wickham's brigade of cavalry, and was badly wounded at Hawe's Shop; and Frank J. Brooke, now a minister in the Presbyterian synod of Virginia, who during the last two years of the war was a courier with Gen. Custis Lee, and was captured at Sailor's Creek. Another son, Judge David Tucker Brooke, of Norfolk, was born at the city of Richmond, April 28, 1852, and passed his boyhood in the midst of the exciting events which occurred in and about the capital of the Confederacy from 1861 to 1865. After witnessing as a boy the evacuation of the city by the army of Northern Virginia he went to West Virginia, and remained there until 1870, when he entered the university of Virginia. After studying there for one year, he was compelled to seek lucrative employment and for several years engaged in teaching school at Norfolk, meanwhile studying law under the preceptorship of Tazewell Taylor, and gaining admission to the bar in 1874. The prominence which he soon obtained in his profession led to his election in 1884 to the office of judge of the corporation court, which he held for a period of eleven years. In 1895 he resumed the active practice as an attorney, in which he is meeting with notable success. Judge Brooke was married in 1880 to Miss Lucy Higgins, of Norfolk, by whom he has six children.

Commander John M. Brooke, of the Confederate States navy, whose contributions to the sciences of navigation, deep sea topography and naval warfare will forever associate his name with the modern advancement of knowledge in those directions, was born at Tampa Bay, Fla., in 1826. He entered the United States navy as a midshipman in 1841 and was graduated at the naval academy, Annapolis, in 1847. From 1851 to 1853 he was stationed at the naval observatory, and while there invented the deep-sea sounding-lead, by means of which specimens of the deep-sea bottom were for the first time brought to light, and it was made possible, not only to have positive evidence that bottom had been reached by the sounding, but also to have some knowledge of the character of the bottom. This invention was of inestimable value in the preparation of the maps of the deep seas and in the laying of the numerous submarine cables now so important a factor in the life of the civilized world. In recognition of his important services in this direction he received from the king of Prussia the gold medal of science, awarded by the academy of Berlin. From the naval observatory he was ordered to the North Pacific and Behring straits exploring expedition under command of Commodore Ringgold, and from 1853 to 1861 he was occupied in making extensive surveys off the coast of Japan, and on a route from California to China, serving as a pathmaker on the ocean wastes of the Pacific. At this time he held the rank of lieutenant in the United States navy, a commission which he promptly resigned upon the secession of Virginia. Proceeding to Richmond he reported to Commodore Barron, and was by the latter referred to Gen. R. E. Lee, with whom he served a few days as military secretary. He was soon afterward commissioned lieutenant, C. S. N., and assigned to the ordnance department, and while on this duty was asked,

early in June, 1861, by Mr. Mallory, secretary of the navy, to design an ironclad war vessel. In his study of the subject he reached the idea of extending the ends of the vessel under water beyond the armored shield, in order to obtain fineness of line, buoyancy and protection of hull. To prevent the banking up of water on these submerged ends a superstructure of ship-iron was provided for. He submitted outline drawings of this design to Secretary Mallory, who approved and adopted them. The official report of Secretary Mallory upon this subject states: "On the 10th day of June, 1861, Lieut. John M. Brooke, Confederate States navy, was directed to aid the department in designing an ironclad vessel and framing the necessary specifications. He entered upon this duty at once and a few days thereafter submitted to the department, as the result of his investigations, rough drawings of a casemated vessel, with submerged ends and inclined iron-plated sides. The ends of the vessel, and the eaves of the casemate, according to his plan, were to be submerged two feet; and a light bulwark, or false bow, was designed to divide the water and prevent it from banking up on the forward part of the shield with the vessel in motion, also to serve as a tank to regulate the ship's draught. His design was approved by the department and a practical mechanic was brought from Norfolk to aid in preparing the drawings and specifications. This mechanic aided in the statement of details of timber, etc., but was unable to make the drawings, and the department then ordered Chief Engineer Williamson and Constructor Porter from the navy yard at Norfolk, to Richmond, about the 23d of June, for consultation on the same subject generally, and to aid in the work. Constructor Porter brought and submitted the model of a flat-bottomed, light-draft propeller casemated battery, with inclined iron-covered sides and ends, which is deposited in this department. Mr. Porter and Lieutenant Brooke have adopted for their casemate a thickness of wood and iron and an angle of inclination nearly identical. Mr. Williamson and Mr. Porter approved of the plan of having submerged ends to obtain the requisite flotation and invulnerability and the department adopted the design, and a clean drawing was prepared by Mr. Porter of Lieutenant Brooke's plan, which that officer then filed with the department." The report goes on to say that Mr. Williamson, Lieutenant Brooke and Mr. Porter, under direction, investigated the condition of the sunken frigate Merrimac, and recommended the adaptation of the plan to the use of her hull and engine, which proceeded with Mr. Williamson in charge of the engineer's duties, Lieutenant Brooke in charge of preparing, testing and forwarding the armor, and devising the ordnance, and Mr. Porter in charge of construction of the vessel and originating all the interior arrangements. "The novel plan of submerging the ends of the ship and the eaves of the casemate, however," said the secretary, "is the peculiar and distinctive feature of the Virginia. It was never before adopted." The result of the work under this plan, throughout which Lieutenant Brooke made important suggestions regarding the general construction, was the famous Virginia, whose action in Hampton Roads revolutionized naval warfare. Soon afterward Lieutenant Brooke received from Lieut. Robert D. Minor a letter of congratulation containing these words: "You richly deserve the gratitude and thanks of

the Confederacy for the plan of the now celebrated Virginia, and I only wish you could have been with us to witness the successful operations of this new engine of naval warfare, fostered by your care and watched over by your inventive mind. It was a great victory, though the odds were nearly seven to one against us in guns and numbers. But the iron and the heavy guns did the work, handled by such a man as glorious Buchanan, and with such officers and men as we had." Lieutenant Brooke continued to render services of great value in the ordnance department and was promoted to the rank of commander and made chief of naval ordnance and hydrography. In 1863 he proposed that a thirteen-inch Blakely rifle of novel construction should be fired with the powder charge placed wholly in front of the chamber, an experiment which, when made, led to the discovery of the utility of what is now known as the air-space, admittedly one of the most important discoveries in the history of ordnance. Upon the evacuation of Richmond, Commander Brooke joined the Confederate forces at Greensboro, N. C., where he was paroled. He then returned to Richmond, and went with his little daughter to Lexington, where upon his arrival he was asked by General Smith, superintendent of the Virginia military institute, to accept a professorship in the faculty of that school. The appointment was promptly made and he has since then continued in this honorable public service.

Captain John L. Brooke, a gallant soldier of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, was born in Gloucester county, Va., in October, 1824. With his family he removed to Culpeper county in 1855, and became the owner of an estate of about one thousand acres. He lived the life of a planter until the spring of 1862, when he organized a company in Culpeper county, which was mustered into the Confederate service as a part of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry. He commanded a company at Cedar Mountain, Winchester, the Second Manassas, and minor engagements, until his capture in October, 1863. He was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout, and Old Capitol prison until the end of the year. During the following eight months he was released on parole, owing to his enfeebled health, and he was incapacitated for further service. February 20, 1869, he died at Fox Neck, the family estate in Culpeper county, which had been sadly devastated by the war. Warner L. Brooke, son of the foregoing, was born in Fauquier county, October 12, 1854. In 1878 he made his home at Norfolk, and from the following year until 1887 was connected with the Ocean View hotel and railroad company. Subsequently he became engaged in business at Norfolk, as a broker, the enterprise soon developing into a wholesale grocery business under the firm name of Brooke, Campbell & Co. By changes in the partnership the business title became Brooke Brothers, and finally W. L. Brooke & Co. Mr. Brooke has taken much interest in the State military service, serving five years, from 1883 to 1888 as color bearer of the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, and subsequently for five years as a member of the Lee Rifles. He is a communicant of St. Luke's Episcopal church and a member of the fraternity of the Royal Arcanum. On February 26, 1884, he was married to Miss Maria Fassman, of Nashville, Tenn., and they have one child, Douglas Shelby.

Samuel Selden Brooke, of Roanoke, Va., who served with the rank of captain in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Stafford county, Va., November 10, 1844. In 1858 he entered the Virginia military institute, but abandoned his studies in April, 1861, to answer the call of his State. He enlisted on April 21, 1861, in the Stafford Guards, a volunteer company organized at the time of the Harper's Ferry disturbance in 1859. He was mustered into the service of Virginia as a private in Company I of the Forty-seventh Virginia infantry, and about a month later was elected junior second lieutenant. In this rank he served until the reorganization in 1862, when he was elected and commissioned as captain. During the remainder of the war and until the surrender at Appomattox, he held this command. His record is an honorable and distinguished one, including service in the fight at Aquia Creek, with Federal naval forces, just before the first battle of Manassas; Yorktown, Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Cold Harbor, Cedar Mountain, three days of fighting at Second Manassas, the capture of Harper's Ferry, the fighting of A. P. Hill's division at Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the first and third days at Gettysburg, including Pickett's charge, Bristoe Station, all of the fighting in the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Jericho Ford, Second Cold Harbor, the defense of Petersburg, including two battles on the Weldon railroad and at Jones' House. He served in the trenches at the Crater for a week after the explosion. He was wounded at Second Manassas and Bristoe Station. At Sailor's Creek his company was captured, but he surrendered with the army at Appomattox. After that event he made his way on foot to Fredericksburg, Va., and for about five years was engaged as a clerk in a lumber yard. Subsequently he was married at Fredericksburg to Betty Lewis Young, daughter of John J. Young, and until 1875 lived at his old home in Stafford county, occupied in farming. At the close of that period he embarked in the practice of law at Fredericksburg, which profession he forsook at a later date to enter journalism. He was first business manager of the Fredericksburg News, then editor of the Fredericksburg Star, until 1882, when he founded the weekly Leader at Roanoke. This newspaper he sold in 1886, when he received the appointment of clerk of the Hustings court, a position he has worthily occupied since that date.

William T. Brooke, a prominent civil engineer, who has for several years held the position of city engineer of Norfolk, Va., was born in Fauquier county, in January, 1847, of a family which had for several generations resided in Virginia. He is the eldest son of Capt. James V. Brooke, now a resident of Warrenton, Va., who was born in Stafford county, embraced the profession of law, and was a member of the Virginia convention that passed the ordinance of secession in April, 1861. This civil act he sustained by service in the field as captain of artillery. Both of his immediate ancestors bore the name of William Brooke and his father was a prominent business man of Stafford county. James V. Brooke married Mary Norris, of Fauquier county, and five of their six children now survive. William T. Brooke was reared in Fauquier county, receiving his education in private schools until he had reached the age of about seventeen years, when he entered the Confederate service as a member of a company of boys whose

average ages were about eighteen years. This group of youthful patriots were mustered in as Company D of the Forty-third Virginia battalion of cavalry, and attached to the command of Colonel Mosby. With that gallant commander young Brooke served to the end of the war, forming also a personal friendship with his commander which aided him in future life. After participating in the frequent dashing forays of Mosby's men which followed, he surrendered and was paroled at Winchester in May, 1865. After this event he found himself without means and his education yet incomplete, and with the idea of providing for further study he formed a partnership with H. T. Douglas, of Warrenton, Va., in the manufacture of agricultural implements. This continued until 1869 when he took his savings and became a student in the university of Virginia. At the end of two years he completed a full course in civil engineering and was graduated with honors in 1871. He was offered the chair of mathematics and applied philosophy by the university of West Tennessee, but desiring a more active career, he entered the engineering corps of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, then in course of construction. He was thus engaged for three years, meanwhile superintending the construction of Church Hill tunnel, about a mile in length, under the city of Richmond. Subsequently visiting the city of Washington, he met his old friend, Colonel Mosby, who gave him an introduction to President Grant, at the White House, from whom, through the kind offices of Mosby, he received an appointment in the office of the supervising architect, which he held during the remainder of Grant's administration. In 1879, Colonel Mosby having been appointed consul at Hong Kong, China, Mr. Brooke went to that place as vice and deputy consul, and remained there until the fall of 1881. On returning to Virginia he was engaged with the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company upon the construction of the Newport News & Richmond branch, after the completion of which his attention was called to a competitive examination to be held at Norfolk for the selection of a city engineer. He became the successful competitor, and has ever since held this position by biennial election, greatly to the satisfaction of the community. In this position he has been instrumental in many great improvements, such as the excellent sewerage system and the water works, and with much justice has been generally regarded as an ideal city engineer, working without fear or favor with the benefit of the community as the one end in view. Although closely devoted to this profession he maintains pleasant social relations, among which he particularly prizes his membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp of United Confederate Veterans. He was married November 10, 1886, to Mary, daughter of Hon. John Goode, member of Congress from Virginia and late solicitor general of the United States. They have four children.

Captain William Broun, of recent years a resident of Washington, D. C., is a native of Virginia, born in Northumberland county, December 20, 1842. His ancestral connections are with old and patriotic families of Virginia, his mother's father, a Johnson, having served in the war of the Revolution, and his paternal grandmother, Elizabeth Lee, being a descendant of Charles Lee, youngest son of Col. Richard Lee. Captain Broun was reared at his home in Virginia and educated at the university of Virginia. At

the time of the passage of the ordinance of secession, in April, 1861, he was one of the band of enthusiastic students who joined the State forces in the occupation of Harper's Ferry. In May, 1861, he enlisted in a company organized in his native county, as a private, and at the completion of the organization in June was made orderly-sergeant. The company was mustered in soon after as Company F of the Forty-seventh Virginia regiment of infantry, when he was commissioned second lieutenant. In the latter rank he served until the spring of 1862, when he was promoted first lieutenant of Company F. During the period in which he held the latter rank, he for a part of the time acted as adjutant of the regiment, and at another time commanded a detail of seventy or eighty sharpshooters. In February, 1863, he was promoted captain and subsequently commanded his company until after the first day's battle at Gettysburg, when he was called, as assistant inspector-general, to the staff of Col. John M. Brockenbrough, in command of the brigade. His subsequent service was on the brigade staff with Colonel Brockenbrough and his successors, Gen. H. H. Walker, Gen. James Fry and Gen. Seth Barton. His military career embraced the battles of Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Cold Harbor, Frayser's Farm and Malvern Hill, in the Peninsular campaign—after which he was disabled by sickness until October—the December battle of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, where he was slightly wounded in the leg by a piece of shell—Gettysburg, during the battle of the first and third days, participating in the charge under command of General Pettigrew; Falling Waters, at the passage of the Potomac, Mine Run, the first day of the Wilderness fight, the flank movement at Spottsylvania, May 10, 1864, and all the fighting there; the desperate fight at Cold Harbor, where he was severely wounded and disabled until the latter part of October, and the skirmishing along the line down to the Carolina boundary, until about Christmas, 1864. His last battle was Sailor's Creek, where he was captured with many others. As a prisoner of war he was held until about June 20, 1865, at Carroll prison, the Old Capitol prison and Johnson's island, Ohio. Returning to Northumberland county he remained there until February, 1890, engaged in farming and dealing in lumber and merchandise, and serving from 1879 until 1883 as superintendent of schools of the county. In 1890 he received an appointment as special officer in the census department and removed to Washington, where, since the expiration of the census service in 1893, he has been connected with the Washington national building and loan association. In 1871 Captain Broun was married to Bettie Lee Lawson, daughter of the late Octavius Lawson, of Lancaster county, Va., and they have two children, Cobrun Lee, and Bessie Fauntleroy.

Bedford Brown, M. D., was for many years prior to his death, in 1897, a distinguished physician of Alexandria, Va., and possessed a highly meritorious and honorable record of service in the line of his profession in the armies of the Confederate States. He was a native of North Carolina, born in Caswell county, January 1, 1823. In the leading institutions of that State he received his academic education and then entered upon the study of medicine at Lexington, Ky., under Dr. Benjamin Dudley, one of the most famous surgeons of that day. After four years' reading he entered the med-

ical department of the Transylvania university at Lexington, was graduated there in 1848, and was subsequently graduated also by Jefferson medical college of Philadelphia, in 1854. After an initial practice in Albemarle and Fauquier counties, Va., he returned to his native place in 1856, and there pursued the duties of his profession in civil life until June, 1861. At that date he entered the Confederate service and was commissioned regimental surgeon of the Twenty-fourth North Carolina infantry, serving subsequently with this command in the brigade of General Floyd, in western Virginia, and under General Lee until the fall of that year. Receiving a furlough by reason of ill health he was out of the service from December, 1861, until January, 1862. He was then assigned to duty as surgeon of the camp of instruction at Camp Mangum, N. C., where he remained until the following May, being then appointed surgeon of the Forty-third North Carolina regiment. When, in June, 1862, that command was assigned to Daniel's brigade of the army of Northern Virginia, Dr. Brown was senior surgeon of the brigade, and served as such until January, 1863. Then being assigned to the staff of Gen. Gustavus W. Smith as medical director in the field, he held that post until Smith's resignation, early in 1863, and was then appointed general inspector of hospitals and camps in North Carolina, as which he served until the close of the war. Removing at that period to Alexandria, he established himself in a short time in a lucrative practice, and became widely known as a successful physician and learned authority in his profession. For thirty years his many contributions to the literature of the profession, through the various association and periodical publications, aided in the advancement of medicine, and medical and civil organizations both recognized his qualifications. From 1886 until his resignation in 1896, he served as a medical examiner of the State of Virginia. He served as president of the medical society of the State, as vice-president and member of the judicial council of the Southern surgical and gynecological association, as vice-president of the section of obstetrics and diseases of women of the American medical association, and was elected president at the Louisville session in 1892, of the Southern surgical and gynecological association. Not the least important among these positions of honor was that of surgeon of Robert E. Lee camp of Confederate veterans at Alexandria, of which Dr. Brown was an active member. Dr. Brown was married in 1852, to Mary Elizabeth, daughter of Joel Simpson, a native of England, who became a resident of Montgomery county, Md. Three of their children survive: Glenn Brown, a prominent architect of Washington; Lucy L., wife of Alfred G. Euhler, of Alexandria, and Dr. William Bedford Brown. Socially Dr. Brown occupied an enviable position by reason of his personal worth and the honorable history of his family in America. Bedford Brown, the father of Dr. Brown, was the eldest of eight children, and was born in 1791. He was an attorney, and prominent in the legal and political history of North Carolina. He entered the house of commons of the State at the age of twenty-one, served a number of years on the floor and twice as speaker; also for several terms in the senate, including one term as speaker of that body; was elected to the United States Senate in 1828 and re-elected in 1836, winning distinction in that eminent position; and then retired to private life

until 1860. When he was called to be a member of the convention he steadfastly opposed secession until the call for troops to invade the South, and then he as earnestly advocated Southern independence. His wife, Mary Lumpkin Glenn, was descended from and connected with some of the wealthiest and most influential families of southern Virginia, and of direct descent from Archibald Glenn, for many years lord provost of Glasgow, Scotland.

Benjamin F. Brown, now a prominent citizen of Petersburg, Va., rendered active and faithful service throughout the war as a private in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Albemarle county in 1833, the son of William Brown, a staunch old Jacksonian Democrat and patriotic citizen and soldier, who served as a lieutenant in the war of 1812, was subsequently captain of militia, and died in 1851. B. F. Brown was among those who entered the Confederate service in 1861 and served during that year on provost duty at Petersburg. In the spring of 1862 he was transferred to the Branch artillery, a Petersburg battery which subsequently was distinguished in the campaigns of the army in the battalion of Colonel Walker, attached to A. P. Hill's division. He was first stationed at Halifax, N. C., and thence moved to the Yorktown peninsula and participated in the Seven Days' battles. He took part in the capture of Harper's Ferry, and the battle of Sharpsburg, and on December 13, 1862, fought at Fredericksburg. He was subsequently stationed on the James river below Richmond, at Deep Bottom, until late in 1863, when he participated in the operations in North Carolina, and passed the winter in that State. Early in 1864 he was on duty a short time at Drewry's Bluff, and then returned to North Carolina to take part in the campaign under General Hoke. He was actively engaged in the siege of Plymouth and took part in the three days' fighting which compelled the surrender of the Federal garrison. The battery was then recalled to Petersburg by General Beauregard, and they rendered effective service in repelling the threatening advance of Butler's and Grant's armies. They were stationed at the salient, under which the Federal mine was exploded, July 30, 1864, and on that occasion nineteen of the men of the battery were killed and three buried in the debris. Mr. Brown fortunately escaped injury, though he was a close eye-witness of the explosion. He took part in the desperate fight which resulted in the repulse of the Federal attack, and remained on duty at that point until about three days before the evacuation, when, in a fight about four miles from Petersburg, he was captured by the enemy. He was subsequently imprisoned at Hart's island, N. Y., about three months. On his return home he entered the business of a manufacturer of brick and builder and contractor, in which he has been very successful. Some of the most important buildings of Petersburg, such as the Dunlap tobacco factory, the Central colored asylum, St. John's church, the silk mills, and a number of fine buildings are his handiwork. He is held in high regard by his Confederate comrades and is a member of the A. P. Hill camp of Petersburg. In 1865 he was married to Miss Ann M. Alley, and they have three children, Hattie, Benjamin F., Jr., and Virginia.

Jesse A. Brown, of Hanover Court House, a worthy Confederate soldier, who rode in campaign and battle with Stuart, Fitz Lee and Wickham, since 1875 has held the office of clerk of the circuit

court of his county. He was born January 16, 1843, in Hanover county, of which his father, Peter W. Brown, a well-known teacher, was also a native. His mother, Sarah E., was a daughter of Capt. Jesse Winn. He was reared upon the farm in his native county, and at the outbreak of war in 1861, was a student in the Meadow Farm academy. On April 1, 1862, he enlisted in Company G, or Hanover Troop, of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, Col. Williams C. Wickham commanding. With this gallant regiment he served throughout the war, except when detailed as a courier for General Wickham, for a long time in command of the brigade which included the regiment. It would be impracticable to attempt a list of the many engagements in which he participated with his trooper comrades, but notable among those in which he played a part were the Seven Days' battles, Boonsboro, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Yellow Tavern, Five Forks and Appomattox. Cutting his way through the Federal lines at the latter place, he surrendered at Richmond ten days after the capitulation of General Lee. During the first ten years following the war Mr. Brown was engaged with his uncle, Col. William R. Winn, of Ashland, farmer, lumberman and lawyer, and for several terms a member of the Virginia legislature. As clerk of the circuit court he has been honored with re-election three times, which amply demonstrates his popularity and efficiency as a public servant. He maintains a membership in W. B. Newton camp, Confederate Veterans, and is highly regarded by his comrades as a brave soldier and unpretentious citizen. Mr. Brown was married October 23, 1879, to Bettie Deane, daughter of Nathaniel August, who died in 1895, leaving two children; Sallie Russell and Jessie Deane.

Joseph B. Brown, of Hanover county, Va., entered the service of the Confederacy as a member of the Hanover Dragoons, commanded by Capt. Williams C. Wickham. The company was assigned to the Fourth cavalry regiment, Fitzhugh Lee's brigade, and Captain Wickham became colonel, and after Fitz Lee's promotion, brigadier-general commanding the brigade. Private Brown served with this gallant command throughout the war, participating in many famous battles and daring cavalry raids, and was wounded at the battle of Kelly's Ford, losing a portion of his right hand. By his marriage to Fannie L. Taylor he had three children, one of whom, John D. G. Brown, is now prominent in the legal profession of Newport News. The latter was born in Hanover county, June 16, 1868, was graduated in law at the university of Virginia, and after teaching school for a time, embarked in the practice of his profession at Newport News in 1893. In 1896 he was elected to the office of police justice. On October 4, 1896, he was married to Nellie G. Allen, of New Jersey.

John Greener Brown, now a prominent business man of Wytheville, Va., did faithful service with the Confederate forces in east Tennessee and the Shenandoah valley during the great war. He is a native of Wythe county, born in September, 1845. When about eighteen years of age he enlisted in the cavalry company of Capt. R. H. Gleaves, and soon afterward went into east Tennessee in the command of Gen. John S. Williams. General Williams advanced through Greeneville to make a diversion in co-operation with the contemplated attack upon the Federals at Cumberland

Gap, and encountered a heavy force at Blue Springs. Here a considerable fight occurred, lasting all the day of September 10th, in which the Confederates held their own and severely repulsed an attack of the enemy. Then learning of a strong flank movement of the Federals, Williams' command marched to the rear all night, and in the morning cut their way through Foster's Federal brigade, an action in which the cavalry was distinguished for gallantry. Another fight followed at Rheatown, but the command finally escaped to Abingdon. In the fight of the 11th Mr. Brown was painfully wounded in the left knee, but he managed to return to Abingdon upon his horse. After his recovery he enlisted in the Forty-fifth Virginia infantry, McCausland's brigade, and on May 9th shared the gallant action of his command in the battle of Cloyd's Mountain. The Forty-fifth sustained the heaviest loss, 174 men, and Lieut.-Col. E. H. Harman was killed. Immediately after this battle Private Brown was promoted sergeant. His next battle was at Piedmont on June 5th, against Hunter's army, in which many gallant Confederates were killed, including Gen. William E. Jones and Col. William H. Browne, of the Forty-fifth. Most of the regiment was captured, including Sergeant Brown, and during the next eight months he was a prisoner of war at Camp Morton, Ind. Since the conclusion of the war he has been engaged in business at Wytheville, a part of the time as a druggist, and at present as cashier of the Bank of Wytheville. He was married in 1876 to Miss Minnie Noel, and they have six children: Leila, Noel, Fairfax, Walker, Elise and Virginia.

Colonel John Wilcox Brown, president of the Maryland Trust company, of Baltimore, and a resident of that city during the past three decades, is a native of Virginia, born at Petersburg in 1833. At the latter place he was reared and received his education preparatory to entering the university of Virginia, where he was graduated in 1853, receiving the degree A. M. There he also studied law, and continued the study at home, but on account of failing eyesight was compelled to relinquish his efforts and travel in Europe, where he spent two years. After his return home the State of Virginia was agitated by the "John Brown raid," and the forebodings of evil to come led to the organization of companies to meet the emergencies that might arise. At Petersburg representatives of the best families were enrolled in the Petersburg Riflemen, which Colonel Wilcox assisted in organizing and drilling, and of which he became orderly sergeant. When Virginia withdrew from the Union and allied herself with the Confederate States, he proceeded, with his company, to Norfolk, Va., where the "Richmond Grays" and the Petersburg companies were mustered in as the Twelfth Virginia infantry, in the service of the State, Colonel Brown's company being entitled Company E. With this command, the colonel of which was D. A. Weisiger, afterward brigadier-general, Colonel Brown served in the occupation of Norfolk, in the movement to Richmond, and participated in the battle of Seven Pines, the campaign against Pope, and the second battle of Manassas. When mustered in he was elected junior second lieutenant, and was promoted successively to the rank of first lieutenant, which he held when the year of enlistment expired. At the reorganization of the army in the spring of 1862 he declined to be re-elected first lieutenant, though urged to ac-

cept by the entire company, and re-enlisted in Company E as a private. As such he served until February, 1863, when his impaired health, due to an attack of camp fever and a relapse from the same, caused by his ambition for active service, led the army surgeons to advise him that he could no longer do duty in the field. Consequently, while flat on his back with fever, he fitted himself for ordnance duty, and on his recovery stood an examination, and received an appointment in that department, with the rank of first lieutenant of artillery. He was stationed at Richmond, and was soon afterward appointed to the responsible position of inspector of ordnance for the Confederate States army, and put in charge of the army work in progress at the Tredegar and other iron works in Richmond. In this capacity Colonel Brown served until the evacuation of Richmond, his efficiency and conscientious performance of duty being recognized meanwhile by rapid promotion through the grades of captain and major, to the rank of lieutenant-colonel of artillery. When the troops moved out of Richmond he started out under orders from Gen. Josiah Gorgas, chief of ordnance, to proceed to Lynchburg, but on arriving at Appomattox Court House, about two days before the surrender, he became satisfied that Lynchburg could not be held by the army, whereupon he went on to Danville, Va., and there reported to General Gorgas, who was at the latter place with President Davis and his cabinet, that he and his staff were awaiting orders. But he was unable to obtain any information except that there would be a rendezvous at Charlotte, N. C., whither he proceeded and awaited orders for several days. Finally the unattached Virginia officers at that point held a meeting and appointed a committee to wait on General Breckinridge, secretary of war, and tender their services in any capacity. Receiving the gloomy intelligence that there were no orders to be given, and advice to return home, the officers broke up their rendezvous next morning, but Colonel Brown, instead of starting homeward, waited a few days in Bedford county, Va., for intelligence regarding Gen. E. Kirby Smith, who was reported to be holding out in the Trans-Mississippi department. Then word came that Smith, also, had surrendered, and feeling that the cause was hopeless, indeed, Colonel Brown went into Lynchburg and was paroled early in June, 1865. He returned to Petersburg and made his home there until 1869, when he removed to Baltimore and engaged in banking, speedily assuming a position of prominence among the financial men of that city, where absolute integrity and loyalty to trusts imposed are peculiarly indispensable to success. Colonel Brown is enrolled among the active members of the society of the army and navy, of Maryland, and particularly treasures the indorsements of his commanding officers upon his application for membership. Captain Patterson wrote: "In any of the positions which he filled Colonel Brown had few equals and no superior;" and his old colonel, General Weisiger, made this endorsement: "It affords me pleasure to sign the certificate for our mutual friend, J. Willcox Brown, than whom as a gentleman and soldier, none stood higher in my regard."

Daniel T. Brownley, of Portsmouth, now occupying a responsible position in the government navy yard, served in the Confederate cause as a member of Company B, Third Virginia infantry,

throughout the entire war, sharing in the operations of Kemper's brigade of Pickett's division, Longstreet's corps. He was born at Portsmouth in 1841, the son of James Brownley, who held the position of quartermaster at the Gosport navy yard and died in 1861. On April 20, 1861, he was mustered into the active service as a member of the Marion Rifles, organized about 1856, which was one of the original companies of the Third regiment. Soon after its enlistment the company was reorganized as the Virginia Riflemen, and Mr. Brownley was elected fourth sergeant, a position from which he was subsequently promoted to first sergeant. He served with the company at Camp Pemberton during 1861, and in March, 1862, crossed the James with his regiment to reinforce General Magruder at Yorktown. They had their first encounter with McClellan at Dam No. 2 and subsequently fought at Williamsburg, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Cold Harbor and Frayser's Farm. Thence they moved to reinforce Jackson and participated in the defeat of Pope's army at Second Manassas, also taking part in the capture of Harper's Ferry and the battle of Sharpsburg. After the battle of Fredericksburg, in which he fought, Sergeant Brownley accompanied his command in the operations of Pickett's division in North Carolina and the vicinity of Suffolk. During the latter campaign he was severely hurt and was in the hospital at Petersburg several weeks. Rejoining his company, he took part in the Pennsylvania campaign and was in the famous assault of Pickett's division upon the Federal lines on Cemetery hill. On the return to Virginia, after participating in the fight at Bristoe Station, he accompanied Pickett's division to North Carolina and took part in the capture of Plymouth and Little Washington, returning to Petersburg in time to defeat Butler at Drewry's Bluff and join General Lee at Cold Harbor. During the remainder of the war he was with his company in almost continuous fighting on the Petersburg lines. Subsequently he followed the business of carpenter and builder at Norfolk, Portsmouth, Baltimore, Philadelphia and other cities, residing mainly at Portsmouth, where he served eight years as a member of the city council. Since his appointment by President Cleveland as quartermaster in the navy yard he has been twice elected to the council, though disqualified to serve by his government position. He has also served in charge of the construction of the magazines.

Major James W. Bruce, of Danville, Va., was born in Albemarle county, February 9, 1834. He is the son of James K. Bruce, a native of Stafford county, who was the son of Charles Bruce, of Scotch descent and a soldier of the war of 1812. James W. was reared upon his father's farm and afterward engaged in mercantile pursuits until March, 1861, when he entered the military service of the State in the quartermaster's department at Richmond. After the ordinance of secession was adopted he was ordered to report to Col. T. J. Jackson at Harper's Ferry, and he served for several months in that district under Jackson and Gen. J. E. Johnston. Subsequently he continued in the quartermaster's department of Jackson's command and in 1862 was commissioned captain and quartermaster. Later he was promoted major in that branch of the service and assigned to the staff of Gen. J. R. Jones, commanding a brigade of Jackson's old division. After the battle of Spottsylvania Court House he was transferred to the staff of Gen. Clem-

ent A. Evans and a few months later to the staff of Gen. William Terry, with whom he surrendered at Appomattox. He was present at the battles of Kernstown, Cross Keys, Port Republic, the Seven Days' campaign, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Monocacy, and the fighting about Petersburg and on the retreat from that line. Since the war he has been engaged in mercantile pursuits, at Richmond until 1880 and after that at Danville. He is a valued member of Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate veterans. By his marriage in 1865 to Susan E. Scott he has four children living: Charles S., James C., Fannie and Elizabeth L. After the death of his first wife he married Susan Rogers, of Washington, D. C.

John W. Bryan, a veteran of the Staunton Artillery, now a prosperous business man of Staunton, Va., was born in Rockingham county in 1841. During his infancy his family removed to Augusta county, and in 1850 they made their home at the county seat, where his father served as deputy sheriff for a considerable period. On August 5, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Staunton artillery, with the brave and active career of which he was associated until disabled by wounds. He was promoted corporal in the fall of 1862 and sergeant after the battle of Gettysburg. Early in the war he served with his battery at West Point, at the head of York river; subsequently participated in the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond and took part in the Manassas campaign, including the battles of Cedar Mountain and Second Manassas, his regiment being attached to Ewell's division. He fought at Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville, and with Early's division, and was actively engaged during the three days of battle at Gettysburg. In the spring of 1864 he participated in the fighting in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania, until upon the latter field he was frightfully wounded by a fragment of shell which tore away the calf of his left leg. This injury confined him to the hospital at Staunton until the close of the war, when he was paroled. As soon as he was able to engage in business he found a position as a clerk and subsequently carried on a store at Parnassus, Va., until 1873, when he returned to Staunton. Here he has been engaged in an active business career as retail grocer and later as a coal and lumber merchant. From 1885 to 1896 he served as overseer of the poor for the city. He was married in 1865 to Juliet F., daughter of the late James M. Southard, and they have six children living: Edward M., William S., Laura A., John H., Lucy F. and James A. Henry E. Bryan, father of the foregoing, was born in what is now Rappahannock county in 1815 and removed to Staunton in 1850, where he served several years as deputy sheriff of Augusta county, and died at Parnassus in 1871. Notwithstanding his age at the outbreak of the war, he entered the Confederate service in 1862, and served until the close of hostilities. He was badly wounded in the second battle of Manassas.

Captain Herbert Bryant, of Alexandria, Va., was born at Lexington, May 19, 1843. He was reared at Washington, D. C., and educated at St. Timothy's Hall, near Baltimore. At the age of seventeen years he was appointed to the West Point military academy, but did not enter that institution, because of the secession of his State, Virginia. In April, 1861, he enlisted in the Alexandria Rifles, a company which was assigned to the Seventeenth Virginia infan-

try. After serving for some time as a private he was appointed a cadet in the regular Confederate States army and assigned to the Seventeenth regiment as assistant adjutant. At the reorganization, in 1862, he was promoted to adjutant of the regiment, a position he held until the following December, when he was assigned to the staff of Brig.-Gen. M. D. Corse as assistant adjutant and inspector-general. This position he held until early in the year 1865, when he was ordered to General Terry's brigade. Among the battles in which he participated were Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm, Second Manassas, Boonsboro, Fredericksburg, New Bern, Plymouth and Roanoke, N. C., Drewry's Bluff, Front Royal, the skirmishes on the Howlett house line, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. At Seven Pines his horse was killed under him and he was slightly wounded; and at Boonsboro he was seriously wounded and fell into the hands of the enemy, but was paroled and returned to Washington, when by exchange two months later he was permitted to rejoin his command. At Sailor's Creek he was again badly wounded and captured and taken to Washington. After lying in the hospital three months he was paroled by special order of General Grant. Since the return of peace he has been a citizen of Alexandria, where he has been honored for sixteen years by the office of alderman and school trustee, and since 1895 with the office of police commissioner.

J. F. Bryant, M. D., a prominent physician of Franklin, Va., and throughout his military career closely associated with the gallant General Armistead, one of the heroes of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Southampton county, February 22, 1842. He is the son of James D. and Elizabeth S. Bryant. His father, a prosperous farmer of Southampton county, was for a long time president of the board of magistrates and was a leader in political affairs. Dr. Bryant was a student in the university of Virginia at the time of the secession of his State, and promptly left his studies in April, 1861, to become a private in Company A of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry. His company was stationed in the neighborhood of Norfolk, where he remained until after the evacuation, when he was detailed as courier and attached to the headquarters of General Armistead. He served in this capacity through several months and was then offered a staff position, but preferring to rejoin his company, he shared their campaigns under Stuart and Fitzhugh Lee until the close of the war. He was wounded at Brandy Station and at Five Forks, and was twice captured, but each time escaped. At the time of the surrender he was at his home disabled by wounds. He then began preparation for the medical profession and studied in the university of Virginia and the university of New York, receiving his degree of doctor of medicine in the spring of 1867. Since then he has been successfully engaged in practice at Franklin, Va. He is a member of the medical society of the State and enjoys a high standing in his profession. He has also been conspicuous in educational affairs as superintendent of schools of Southampton county for many years. He was the first mayor of Franklin, has taken an active part in political life as chairman of the county and congressional committees, was a member for many years of the State committee and was one of the delegates of Virginia to the national Democratic convention at Chicago in 1892. Dr. Bryant has two sons living, Richard B., purser of the steamer

Olive and first lieutenant of Company I, Fourth regiment Virginia militia, and James F. Bryant, Jr., who is now a student at the university of Virginia. Lieut. R. B. Bryant, the eldest son, enlisted with his company in the Spanish war and served as lieutenant with his regiment in Gen. Fitzhugh Lee's Seventh army corps.

Captain Francis E. Buford, a veteran of the heavy artillery service, was born in Brunswick county, Va., November 17, 1836, the son of William P. Buford, for many years sheriff of that county, and grandson of Abraham Buford, a native of Lunenburg county, who held the rank of captain during the war of 1812. He was educated at William and Mary college and studied law at the university of Virginia. In December, 1857, he was admitted to the bar and began the practice of his profession. He entered the service of the Confederate States in February, 1862, as captain of Company E, Third Virginia regiment, heavy artillery, stationed at Richmond for the defense of the Confederate capital. This company he had organized, and he continued on duty until disabled by a malady which carried off twenty-nine of his company in less than thirty days. From the effects of the disease Captain Buford never completely recovered, and being unfitted for active duty, he took charge of the enrolling work for Brunswick county and served in that capacity until the war came to an end. In 1865 he was elected commonwealth attorney for his county, and after fifteen years' service in that office he was elected judge of the county court. He discharged the duties of this honorable position with much dignity and impartiality until 1892, when he retired from the bench and from the practice of law. In the latter he has been succeeded by his son, Edward P. Buford, who was admitted to the bar in 1889, and is now commonwealth attorney and member of the State legislature. During the past few years Captain Buford has ably edited the Brunswick Gazette.

Thomas P. Buford, a Mississippian by rearing, education and military service, was born in Maury county, Tenn., in 1833, and is now a resident of Roanoke, Va., where he enjoys that esteem which is due a brave Confederate soldier, and holds the rank of past commander of William Watts camp, United Confederate Veterans. He is of an old Virginia family, long residents of Lunenburg county, where his great-grandfather, Warren Buford, was born. His grandfather, Philemon Buford, born in 1765, died about 1849. His father, Goodloe W. Buford, also a native of Lunenburg county, removed to Tennessee, where Thomas P. was born, and thence, during the latter's infancy, to La Fayette county, Miss. Here the father died in 1887 in his ninety-fourth year. In 1854 Thomas P. Buford was graduated at the university of Mississippi, at Oxford, and then engaged in planting in La Fayette county until the invasion of the South. In April, 1861, he enlisted as a private in Company G of the Eleventh Mississippi infantry regiment, with which he served until disabled by wounds near the close of the war, holding the position of corporal after his first year's service. Prominent among the battles in which he participated were the engagement at Seven Pines, the fighting about Suffolk, Va., Mine Run, the Wilderness, and the struggle about Petersburg during Grant's siege. At Seven Pines he was slightly wounded in the left knee. After the Suffolk campaign he was disabled by sickness for six months and at the Wilderness he was so seriously wounded

in the left thigh as to be incapacitated for half a year. In the trenches before Petersburg he was again wounded in the left leg, which disabled him until June, 1865. Returning to his home in Mississippi he resumed his occupation as a planter, but in 1873, on account of ill health, he removed to Roanoke, Va. There he was married, January 12, 1876, to Martha J., daughter of the late Capt. R. B. Moorman, of the Virginia cavalry. They have five children, Anna G., Loulie M., Warren B., Ernestine E. and John M. Mr. Buford had three brothers in the Confederate service: Hampden A., now residing in La Fayette county, Miss., who served throughout the entire war as a private in the Thirtieth Mississippi infantry, except during an imprisonment at Rock Island, Ill., following the battle of Chickamauga, where he was wounded and captured; John E., who was killed December 30, 1862, at the age of twenty-eight years, at the battle of Murfreesboro; Goodloe W., now living in Mississippi, who served in the Eleventh Mississippi from April, 1861, until disabled by wounds received during the siege of Petersburg, he having previously been wounded at the Wilderness.

Sergeant Alphonzo M. Bullock, United States shipping commissioner at Norfolk, Va., was born in that city March 23, 1839. He was there reared and educated and then apprenticed to the ship-builder's trade, which was his occupation at the outbreak of the war. Being thoroughly in sympathy with the Confederacy, he enlisted in 1861 as a member of the United Artillery of Norfolk, under the command of Capt. Thomas Kevill, and as a member of that celebrated organization, rendered valuable service throughout the succeeding four years of conflict. The record of the command is described in the biography of its captain. It may be said here of Sergeant Bullock that he was never a laggard in duty, but participated on many occasions with great gallantry in the actions of his battery. He took part in the capture of the magazine and the planting of batteries at Fort Norfolk, served on the Central railroad during the Peninsular campaign, and during the prolonged assignment of the battery opposite Dutch Gap was distinguished for faithful and gallant service. At the close of the war he held the rank of second sergeant in his command, his brother, John T. Bullock, being first sergeant. After he had given his parole at Appomattox he returned to Norfolk and embarked in the shipping business, in which he gained such rank and reputation as to make highly appropriate his appointment in 1876 to the position of shipping commissioner, which he has since held. Through his connection with this great industry of the city he has contributed in a considerable degree toward the splendid development of Norfolk since the war.

Joseph A. A. Bullock, born at Norfolk, Va., March 23, 1837, has since the war, been associated with his brother, Sergt. Alphonzo M. Bullock, in the shipping business of that port. Their father, Joseph Mansfield Bullock, a native of Fredericksburg, Va., was a well-known merchant of Norfolk. He was the son of John Bullock, a planter of Spottsylvania county, and descended from John Bullock, who came from England early in the seventeenth century and became the founder of the Bullock family in Virginia. Their mother was Mary Ann Martin, daughter of Alphonzo Martin, a native of Spain, and their grandmother was Henrietta La Cost,

daughter of the Count de La Cost, of Bordeaux, France. She was a graduate of Urrington college and a finely educated woman. Joseph A. A. Bullock was engaged in mercantile pursuits until the beginning of the war of the Confederacy, when he enlisted on May 2, 1861, in Company F of Burroughs' battalion, under Captain Cooper. At the time of the Confederate evacuation of Richmond he was stationed at the Rip Raps. From there he accompanied his command to Richmond and was assigned to the brigade of Gen. L. L. Lomax, under whose command he participated in the Peninsular campaign of 1862. His military service continued throughout 1862, including participation in the battle of Fredericksburg, and in 1863 until the engagement at Culpeper, when he was captured by General Meade's forces and made a prisoner of war. The imprisonment which followed was long and severe. Transported first to Washington, he remained there two months, was then confined at Point Lookout thirteen months, and from there was transferred to Elmira, N. Y., where he remained as a prisoner until after the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, when he was permitted to return to his home.

John Henry Burgess, a prominent business man of Elizabeth City, had an adventurous career in the Confederate service as a soldier and scout. Born at Elizabeth City, February 27, 1843, he enlisted among the early volunteers, in May, 1861, as a corporal of Company I, Seventeenth regiment, and was at a later date promoted to sergeant. He was among the troops stationed at Oregon inlet at the time of the first Federal invasion of the coast, and after the fall of Fort Hatteras, fell back to Roanoke island and was stationed at Fort Bartow. Here they were attacked by the fleet and army of Burnside's expedition and compelled to surrender. Soon afterward he was paroled, but was not exchanged until the fall of 1862, when he went on duty at Weldon as provost guard, and remained until the spring of 1863. Subsequently he joined the signal corps commanded by Maj. James F. Milligan, and was stationed on the lower James river, successively at Brandford, Brandon, Swan's Point and Mount Pleasant, and at Fort Clifton on the Petersburg lines. His service on this line of signalmen was of great importance to the defense of Richmond and was frequently attended by danger. With eleven comrades under the command of Sergeant Averett, he was engaged on scouting duty in the rear of Grant's army during May, 1864, obtaining valuable information for General Lee. He was finally with the army on the retreat from Petersburg and was surrendered at Appomattox. Soon after the close of hostilities, he embarked in the mercantile business in which he is still engaged. By his marriage in 1866 to Martha R. Newbold, he has seven children living: Henrietta Louise, wife of C. R. Bell, of Baltimore; John Henry, Jr., and William Frederick Martin, both in business at Norfolk; Nancy Newbold, Creighton Newbold, Joseph Warren and Arthur Earl.

John Henry Burgess, Jr., son of the foregoing, and prominent in the insurance business at Norfolk, Va., was born at Elizabeth City, N. C. He was educated in the schools of his native city until the age of seventeen years, when he removed to Norfolk and entered the employment of the firm of Childrey & Mets, with whom he remained four years. At the expiration of that period he returned to Elizabeth City and became a member of the firm of G. M. Scott

& Co., conducting a general insurance business. Two years later he formed a partnership with his brother under the title of John H. Burgess & Brother, which continued until he was compelled by poor health to retire from work for a time. In 1895 he returned to Norfolk, and after connection with the firm of R. C. M. Wingfield & Co. for one year, became a member of the firm. On February 6, 1896, he formed a partnership with W. W. Dey, under the firm name of Burgess & Dey, representing the following insurance companies: Greenwich of New York, the London Assurance, the Equitable Fire of Charlestown, the Maryland Life, the Travelers' Accident of Hartford, and the Agricultural insurance company of Watertown, N. Y. In November, 1897, the interest of Mr. Dey was purchased by Mr. Burgess, who now conducts the business as Burgess & Co. He is also a member of the firm of C. R. Bell & Co., of Elizabeth City, N. C., a director in the South Oakwood Park land company, and in all his business enterprises manifests a keen and aggressive spirit that is a guarantee of success. Socially he is popular, and is a valued member of the Merrimac club, the Masonic order, and the order of Columbus.

John W. Burgess, a farmer by occupation, enlisted in a North Carolina regiment early in 1861, and served throughout the war as a private. At the close he was with the army under Gen. J. E. Johnston and surrendered at Greensboro. He escaped serious injury during his military career, but not long after its close, in 1867, he met an untimely death by accident. By his marriage to Mary Elizabeth Powell, in 1859, he had three children, of whom two survive. The only son, William G. Burgess, now a prominent business man of Newport News, Va., was born at Morganton, N. C., November 19, 1867, and was there reared and educated. At the age of fourteen years, taking the position of drug clerk, he embarked in his career as a pharmacist, in 1887 he graduated at the Chicago college of pharmacy, and during the following eight years was employed at Manchester and Hampton, Va. His career as proprietor of a drug establishment at Newport News began in 1895, and during the subsequent period he has fully demonstrated his excellent business ability and enterprise. While a resident of Manchester he served upon the city council, and at Newport News he has taken an active part in municipal and social affairs, is a member of the business men's association and several prominent fraternal orders, and has gained a genuine popularity among the people of the city.

Captain John J. Burroughs, of Norfolk, well known, especially in legal and political circles throughout Virginia, is a native of Princess Anne county, and was born April 22, 1841. His father, who bore the same name, is well remembered as holding for nearly half a century the office of clerk of the courts for Princess Anne county. He died in 1874, two years after the death of his wife, Ann, who was a daughter of Col. William Nimmo. Both the Burroughs and Nimmo families are among the oldest in Virginia, and their histories include many admirable careers in military and civil life. Captain Burroughs, at the age of fourteen years, was sent to school in Botetourt county to a famous teacher of that day, W. R. Galt, brother of the celebrated sculptor, Alexander Galt. Subsequently he entered Lynchburg college, a military institution, where he completed a four years' course in the spring of 1861. The

momentous events of that period, culminating in the passage of an ordinance of secession by the State of Virginia, filled the minds of the Lynchburg class of 1861 to the exclusion of other topics, and on account of their anxiety to enlist in the service of the State the graduating exercises were held about two months earlier than usual. In this class of young patriots were Senator John W. Daniel and Edward S. Gregory, the poet and journalist. During his college days young Burroughs displayed a military ability that led to his being put in command of an organization, and by virtue of this rank he had the honor, before departing, of raising the Confederate flag over the college. This proceeding was objected to by two of the trustees, but Burroughs nevertheless unfurled the colors, an act for which he was subsequently thanked after the war had actually begun. After his graduation he returned to Norfolk and enlisted as a private in "Old Company F," as a member of which he served several months at Craney island in defense of Norfolk harbor. Tiring of this monotonous duty, he secured a transfer to a battery of artillery on service in east Tennessee under command of his brother, Capt. William H. Burroughs. Entering the command as a private, he gained promotion by meritorious conduct, to orderly sergeant, third, second and first lieutenant, and served throughout the war. His duty, in the commands of Generals Stevenson and Kirby Smith, called him into various campaigns in Tennessee and Kentucky, and a large number of battles and skirmishes, the most important engagements being at Bull's Gap, Cumberland Gap, Marion and Knoxville. Out of this service he came without a wound, fortunately, though on one occasion his horse, standing by his side, lost a leg by a cannon shot from the enemy. Captain Burroughs' company is the one upon which Federal General Averell vowed vengeance on account of their execution of a deserter who joined the Federals and was afterward captured by them. The execution of the young fellow upon the gallows after his commissioning a comrade to put his sweetheart's picture under his head when buried, are among the most painful memories of Captain Burroughs. But such are the dread necessities of war. A notable incident in the career of this artillery command in mountainous territory was their charge upon a blockhouse which had been captured and garrisoned by Federals. This remarkable military movement for artillery was entirely successful. It illustrates the demands made in that region upon the versatility of the Confederate officers. Captain Burroughs, after giving his parole at Lynchburg, late in the summer of 1865, returned home and began the study of law, entering upon the practice in 1866. Since 1869 he has been a resident of Norfolk and associated in the practice of his profession with his brother, Capt. W. H. Burroughs, a partnership which has not been interrupted, except by the few years' service of his brother as judge of the corporation court of Norfolk. Mr. Burroughs' official career has been limited to one term as police judge, but he has for years taken an active part in political affairs, frequently being called upon to speak throughout the State during the campaigns of the Democratic party. He is a member of the chamber of commerce of the city, and is a comrade of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans. He was married in 1867 to Eliza A. Moore, of Wythe county, who died in 1872. Five years

later he married Maria May, daughter of Richard H. Baker, a prominent Norfolk lawyer, and a granddaughter of David May, eminent in the Petersburg bar, and of Judge Richard H. Baker, a Virginian of much note in his day. By this marriage he has four sons living: William H., Richard Hansford, Hugh May and Benjamin Baker. Captain Burroughs is a typical Virginian of the noblest mold, in person a fine specimen of manhood, of commanding presence, and graceful and courtly manners. As a lawyer he is able, skillful and fearless, but always scrupulously respectful toward opposing counsel. Gentle as a woman, he has the chivalric courage of knighthood, and all who come in contact with him recognize the honorable and fairminded advocate, the courteous gentleman and the able defender of his client's rights. As a public speaker his accomplishments are equal if not superior to those of any contemporaries of the bar at which he practices. A select and varied vocabulary, an earnest and graceful delivery, a mind well-stored with literary lore, an ardent and enthusiastic temperament—these and other attractive qualities are combined in his personality. As a citizen, the fire of patriotism burns in his bosom intensely and brightly as the sun shines in the heavens, and his public spirit is only limited by his resources. Indeed, in every department of life his virtues stamp him with the impress of noble manhood, worthy of the palmy days of the grand old State of which he is so devoted a son.

Captain William H. Burroughs, a prominent attorney of Norfolk, is a native of Princess Anne county, born February 20, 1832. His family, originally of English descent, is one of the oldest in Virginia. His father, John J. Burroughs, born in Essex county in October, 1798, was the son of Capt. Elzy Burroughs, a native of Stafford county, who served on the staff of Gen. Robert E. Taylor in the war of 1812. Captain Burroughs' mother was Eliza, daughter of William Thomson, a merchant of Norfolk and collector of the port at Norfolk under the presidency of Thomas Jefferson, who migrated from Scotland to America in the latter part of the eighteenth century, crossing in the same boat which brought the Whittle family. Captain Burroughs, as a boy of thirteen, entered a school at Norfolk which was taught by William R. Galt, a celebrated teacher of that day, and he studied there from 1845 to 1848, then entering the Virginia military institute at Lexington, where he was graduated in 1851. Having received an excellent education, he became a teacher in the Norfolk military academy, holding that position for two years. Then deciding to turn his attention to the law, he entered the law department of William and Mary college, and after his graduation, which occurred July 4, 1854, he embarked in the practice at Princess Anne Court House. Thence he removed in January, 1859, to Lee Court House, and a few months later to Jacksboro, Campbell county, Tenn., where he continued in the practice until the beginning of the war, in 1861. At that time he was a staunch supporter of the old Union and opposed secession until his State took that action, when he loyally enlisted in her service. Repairing to Knoxville early in 1861, he utilized his military training by drilling a regiment mustered in under command of William M. Churchill, and then received a commission as captain of a company in this command in June, 1861. He accompanied the regiment to Cumberland Gap in September, and in

the February following the company under his command was detached, by order of the secretary of war, and organized as a battery of light artillery. As such it was subsequently attached to the brigade of Col. Tom Taylor, in Gen. Carter L. Stevenson's brigade of E. Kirby Smith's corps. On their evacuation of Cumberland Gap it was occupied by the Federals under command of General Morgan, and Captain Burroughs participated in the campaign against them, which occupied August, and resulted in the Federal evacuation. His command followed the retreating enemy into Kentucky and were about to give battle when ordered to move to Danville, Ky., where they remained until after the battle of Perryville, when they joined in Bragg's retreat to Tennessee. Captain Burroughs' battery was then assigned to duty at Cumberland Gap, during the winter of 1862-63, and in the spring following was engaged in guarding the bridges at Zollicoffer and vicinity. In the fall of 1863 they captured the Federal blockhouse at Limestone, Tenn., being led in this action by Gen. Wm. L. Jackson. They were again engaged that fall at Bluntville, and in the following winter were stationed at the salt works near Abingdon, and in May, 1864, when all troops were withdrawn from that military district, Burroughs' battery went to the protection of the lead mines in Wythe county, Va., acting with a force of home guards. In October, 1864, Gen. John C. Breckinridge was assigned to that territory, and under his command the battery moved to Wytheville, and subsequently fought in the battles of Bull's Gap and Marion, intending to join the army of Lee at Lynchburg. But at Christiansburg they learned that the army of Northern Virginia had surrendered and Captain Burroughs, with twenty-five of his men, moved toward Johnston's army, joining it at Greensboro about the time of its surrender, in which they participated, and were paroled May 4, 1865. Returning then to his home, Captain Burroughs resumed the practice of law at Norfolk in 1866, soon becoming distinguished in the profession. In 1870 his attainments were recognized by his election to the position of corporation judge, by the legislature, a post he filled with eminent ability until 1877. He is the author of two works of a legal nature, one entitled "Law of Taxation, Federal, State and Municipal," published in September, 1877, and one on "Public Securities of America," published in 1881, which have become widely accepted as authorities on those topics. He is an active member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans.

John S. Burwell, of Taylor's Store, Va., was born in Franklin county, September 15, 1845, a great-grandson of Col. Lewis Burwell, of Revolutionary fame. True to the patriotic traditions of his family, he enlisted when seventeen years of age, in the fall of 1862, as a private in Company G of the Thirty-seventh Virginia battalion of cavalry, Maj. James L. Claiborne. During Longstreet's occupation of east Tennessee in the fall and winter of 1863, he served in the cavalry brigade of W. E. Jones, Ransom's division, in that region, and was engaged in frequent skirmishes with the enemy. Returning then to the Shenandoah valley, he served in the contests in the spring and summer of 1864 in that region, and after Early took command, participated in the raid through Maryland to Washington, D. C., and the many skirmishes and severe battles which followed between Early and Sheridan, having his most

severe encounter with the enemy at Winchester. In the spring of 1865 he was on his way with his command to join General Lee when they received news of the surrender at Appomattox. An effort was made to unite with Johnston's army, but the attempt was given up and the command disbanded, after reaching Chatham, Va. During his service he was repeatedly struck by the enemy's bullets and slightly wounded, but never so severely as to disable him. Since the war he has been engaged in farming. He is a man of influence, was educated at Roanoke college, and is highly esteemed by his community.

Holt Fairfield Butt, M. D., of Portsmouth, Va., a representative of a patriotic family of southeastern Virginia, was born at Portsmouth, in March, 1835. His father, Dr. Robert Bruce Butt, who was born in Norfolk county in 1789 and served as a surgeon in the war of 1812, was the son of Robert Butt, a native of Norfolk county, who served in the Virginia legislature soon after the Revolutionary war. He married a daughter of Alexander Bruce. This latter ancestor of Dr. Butt was the second son of Robert Bruce, of Grangemyre, County of Fife, Scotland, and came to Virginia about the year 1750. The mother of Dr. Butt, Mary Margaret Wilson, was the daughter of Holt Wilson, a Portsmouth merchant, and a grand-daughter of Col. John Wilson, a Revolutionary soldier, whose wife was Margaret Bruce. It thus appears that both paternally and maternally Dr. Butt is connected with the famous Scottish family. In ante-bellum days Dr. Butt received a thorough academic and professional education in the school of W. R. Galt, Webster's institute, and the university of Virginia, and was graduated as doctor of medicine by the university of Pennsylvania in 1856. From that time until 1861 he practiced at Portsmouth. At the outbreak of the civil war he held the rank of surgeon of the Third regiment, Virginia militia, and he was subsequently attached to Ramseur's battery and the Thirty-second North Carolina infantry, army of Northern Virginia. Later he was brigade surgeon of Daniel's North Carolina brigade, Rodes' division, Second army corps. He went into service early in 1861, serving about Portsmouth and on the James river until Norfolk and that region were abandoned by the Confederate troops, and afterward was with his command at Petersburg and through the Peninsular campaign, and subsequent operations, including the battle of Gettysburg. On the return of the army from Pennsylvania he was ordered to General hospital No. 5, at Wilmington, N. C., where he remained about eight months. Thence ordered to Kittrell Springs, N. C., he established a well-organized hospital, accommodating five hundred patients, and remained on duty there until ordered to Greensboro, after General Lee's surrender, and was soon afterward paroled. Returning to Portsmouth at the close of his military experience, he resumed his practice as a physician and surgeon, and since then has continued in this professional work. He was the first president of the local medical society, was for a considerable period quarantine officer, and physician to the almshouse, and is a member of the State medical society and Medical association of eastern Virginia. In 1858 he was married to Emily Sue, daughter of Dr. William S. Riddick, of Portsmouth. Their children living are: Holt Fairfield; Virginia Riddick, wife of Harry Lee Watts; Alexander Bruce; James Wil-

liam Sumner; Mary Margaret Wilson; Nannie Louise Page and Robert Bruce.

W. J. Butt, of Norfolk, who has rendered his city valuable service during the past twelve years as street and sanitary inspector, gave his State as faithful service during the war of the Confederacy as an artillery officer in the army of Northern Virginia. He was born at Norfolk in 1831, the son of Samuel Butt, prominent for many years as a contractor, who died in 1884. His mother was Evelyn, daughter of John Brown, a captain in the merchant marine. He was educated at the military academy at Norfolk and was then engaged as a salesman in a bookstore until the spring of 1861. He then enlisted in the Norfolk Light Artillery, and at the reorganization entered the Huger battery, of which he was a member during the remainder of the war, rising, by steady promotion, from the rank of first sergeant to that of second lieutenant of artillery. He was first stationed at Boush's Bluff, then at Camp Talbot, and finally Ward's Farm, before the evacuation of Norfolk. He accompanied the battery by way of Petersburg and Richmond to the field of the Peninsular campaign of 1862; fought at Seven Pines, and then joined General Jackson's command at Warrenton Springs, where he was twice wounded. After this he was in the hospital at Richmond for three months. On his recovery he joined his command in winter quarters in Caroline county, and in the spring of 1863 took part in the movements which resulted in the battle of Chancellorsville. After this fight he took part in several skirmishes of the Pennsylvania campaign, and during the three days' battle of Gettysburg fought from the opening to the close of the contest. Subsequently he was engaged at Culpeper Court House and in the defense of Petersburg. His last fight was at Hatcher's Run, where he was captured by the enemy. He was confined for a short time at City Point and at Johnson's island, Ohio, until he was paroled at the close of the war. On his return to Norfolk, in 1865, he immediately resumed his former occupation, the book trade, in which he has continued, except during the period in which he has served the city as inspector of streets and sanitary improvements. The magnificent improvements which have been made in these departments in the city are in a considerable degree due to his faithful and devoted service. He was married in 1873 to Johanna, daughter of John Page Eley, of Nansemond county, and they have three children living: Mamie Wilson, wife of Compston Goffigan, and William Duncan and Samuel Page, both in mercantile business.

George W. Butts, M. D., a prominent physician of Nansemond county and a veteran of Stuart's cavalry, was born at Chuckatuck, Va., in 1843. His father was Dr. E. A. Butts, a native of Southampton, who practiced medicine at Chuckatuck until his death in 1845, and his grandfather was Daniel Butts, a Virginian of English ancestry. His mother was Mary M. Corbell, daughter of Col. Samuel Corbell, a Virginia farmer and soldier of the war of 1812, and a descendant of an English family which traces its ancestry back to the Earls of Godwin. Dr. Butts was graduated in chemistry and mathematics at the university of Virginia in 1860, and in the spring following abandoned his further studies at the university to enlist as a private in Company B, of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, under Col. J. R. Chambliss. With this regiment

he served in the brigade of Gen. W. H. F. Lee through the Manassas and Maryland campaigns of 1862, the Gettysburg and Bristoe campaigns of 1863, and fought from the Wilderness to the James, and in frequent battles about Richmond and Petersburg, and on the Weldon railroad, until he was taken seriously ill with erysipelas and sent to the hospital at Kittrell Springs, N. C. He was unable to return to the field during the remainder of the war, which soon came to an end, and he surrendered and was paroled at Norfolk after Appomattox. Without resources for continuing his studies, he engaged in farming two years and then entered the Richmond college of medicine, where he was graduated in 1868. He at once embarked in the practice of his profession at Chuckatuck, where he has since continued with gratifying success. In addition to his professional work he manages his estate, consisting of two large farms in Nansemond county. The prosperity which has attended his career and the esteem in which he is held are each well deserved by the patriotism and manly virtues of his character. Walter Butts, the only brother of Dr. Butts, served as a lieutenant in the Ninth Virginia infantry from the beginning of the war to the battle of Gettysburg, where he was stricken down as he reached the Federal breastworks on Cemetery ridge, and died in hospital two days later. He was a student of medicine, preparing for college, when he enlisted in the army. Dr. Butts was married in 1865 to Hattie C., daughter of Richard H. V. Denson, of Nansemond county, and they have three children living: Charlotte A., wife of Henry Powell, of Norfolk; Georgia and Ruby.

James A. Buxton, a loyal North Carolinian, who gave over two years of his youth to the Confederate service, and is now a resident of Newport News, Va., was born in Northampton county, N. C., January 10, 1845. His father, Thomas A. Buxton, who died in 1856, was a native of Norfolk, Va., of English descent, and his mother, Mildred Perry Buxton, was born in North Carolina. He was educated at the academy of Prof. Benjamin E. Peele, a patriotic and gallant man, who closed his school when the war broke out and served in the Confederate service until he fell at Malvern Hill. On account of his youth, Mr. Buxton was kept at home during the years of 1861 and 1862, but during this time he manifested his soldierly instincts by organizing and drilling a company of boys, who elected him as their captain. In January, 1863, he entered the service as a member of Company H, Second North Carolina cavalry, Col. Sol Williams, brigade of W. H. F. Lee, Stuart's cavalry division, army of Northern Virginia. He joined his regiment in camp in Essex county, Va., and his first service was in a raid toward Gloucester Point. In the famous battle of Brandy Station, June 9, 1863, he acted as a sharpshooter, and was struck by a spent ball but was not seriously hurt. Soon after this he was detailed as a courier attached to the headquarters of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, and in this capacity he served during the raid through Maryland and Pennsylvania, which ended at Gettysburg. During this campaign he participated in the capture of a Federal train of 190 wagons within sight of the capitol at Washington. Through the winter of 1863-64 he acted as a member of the regimental band, and early in 1865 he was detailed as a member of the brigade provost guard. His command was disbanded at Dan-

ville soon after the surrender of General Lee's army and he then returned to his home in North Carolina. He gave his attention soon afterward to mercantile pursuits, in which he has since been engaged, with gratifying success. As a merchant and enterprising citizen he was highly esteemed at his old home, where he was elected the first mayor of the town of Jackson and given several other official positions. Since his removal to Newport News, where he conducts a large furniture establishment, he has been elected to the city council, and later president of the council. He is a member of Magruder camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1873 he married Miss Rennie Peele, sister of his early preceptor, and she having died in 1880, he was married in 1887 to Miss Isabel Metzler. He has four children living: Ruby, a teacher in the public schools of Newport News; Ernest Perry, James Arnold and Margaret.

Richard Corbin Byrd, Sr., of Norfolk, born at Whitehall in 1837, enlisted in the military service of Virginia in April, 1861, as a private in Company E, Twenty-sixth Virginia infantry. He was soon appointed sergeant-major of the regiment, a position he held until the reorganization of the army in 1862. He was then promoted lieutenant of his company. He was identified with the service of his regiment in Wise's brigade during the early part of the war in Virginia, and subsequently at Charleston, S. C., and in the defense of Petersburg and Richmond from Butler, in the spring of 1864, after which he fought in the Petersburg trenches until the evacuation. The captain of the company being severely wounded soon after the return to Virginia, Lieutenant Byrd was promoted captain. Among his more important battles were Malvern Hill, Bermuda Hundred, the Crater, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. He commanded the remnant of his company at Appomattox. Since the return of peace he has resided at Whitehall, Gloucester county, the ancestral home of his family. His father, Samuel Powell Byrd, was the son of William Byrd, whose father bore the same name and was the son of Col. William Byrd, president of the Colonial council of Virginia, whose residence was at Westover, a plantation which was established in 1657. The wife of Captain Byrd is Ann Gordon, daughter of John Marshall, a grandson of the distinguished John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States.

Richard C. Byrd, Jr., son of the foregoing, was born at Whitehall, July 29, 1863. He was reared at the family home and educated by private tutors, until he had reached the age of seventeen years, when he began his business career at Norfolk. His early occupations were as a collector, then as a salesman for a Baltimore commission house, later as a traveling salesman for Norfolk establishments. In 1890 he embarked in the real estate business as a partner of W. M. Hannah. On April 1, 1891, he organized the new firm of Byrd, Baldwin & Co., which has since done a very successful business. He has served four years in the Light Artillery Blues, is a communicant of St. Luke's Episcopal church, and maintains memberships in the Virginia, Merrimac and Chesapeake clubs.

Colonel William Byrd, for many years a prominent lawyer of Winchester, Va., was born in 1828. He was educated at Georgetown college, the Virginia military institute, and the university of Virginia. In 1850 he went to Texas, where he became editor

of the Austin Gazette, and at the time of the breaking out of the war, was adjutant-general of the State. In that capacity he raised and equipped a number of Texas regiments, and seized a large amount of Federal stores and arms. He was afterward appointed a colonel in the Confederate army, and served under Gen. Kirby Smith in the Trans-Mississippi department. He was in command of Fort DeRussey, where he made a gallant defense against the whole Federal army, and was there captured and taken to New Orleans, where he was imprisoned for some time. He was afterward exchanged, and served until the war closed. After the war he removed to Winchester, Va., his birthplace, and enjoyed a lucrative law practice until he retired, several years before his death, which occurred in May, 1898. R. E. Byrd, son of the above, was born in Austin, Texas, August 13, 1860. His father removed to Virginia when he was five years old, and he has resided in Winchester ever since. He is a graduate of the university of Virginia and the university of Maryland. He was elected in 1884 to the office of prosecuting officer for Frederick county, and has successively been re-elected ever since. He also holds the position of special examiner of records for the city of Winchester and the counties of Frederick, Clarke, Warren, Page and Shenandoah, and is commissioner of accounts for the county court of Frederick county.

Colonel George C. Cabell, of Danville, Va., ex-congressman, and a representative of a distinguished family of Confederate soldiers, was born in the city where he now resides, January 25, 1837, the son of Gen. Benjamin W. S. and Sallie E. (Doswell) Cabell. His father, born in Montevideo, Buckingham county, about 1791, died in 1862, was educated both in medicine and law, but devoted his life to the practice of the latter profession, also giving much attention to literary work. He served for many years in both branches of the general assembly and was a member of the constitutional convention of 1829-30. He held the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the war of 1812, and afterward was major-general in the State service. One of his seven sons, Dr. Powhatan Bolling Cabell, died at Florence, Ala., in 1859. The others were all Confederate soldiers. The oldest, Dr. John R. Cabell, a graduate of the Virginia military institute, served throughout the war as captain of Company B, Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment, and died August 26, 1897. William L. Cabell, a graduate of the United States military academy, attained the rank of captain in the old army, in the Confederate service rose to the rank of brigadier-general, and now resides at Dallas, Texas. Algernon S. Cabell, who served in Carroll's brigade, McCulloch's division, throughout the war, with the rank of major, lived for many years in Arkansas, and died in August, 1898. Joseph R. Cabell, colonel of the Thirty-eighth Virginia infantry, was killed at Drewry's bluff, May 10, 1864, at the age of twenty-two years. Benjamin E. Cabell, first lieutenant of Company E, Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment, died at eighteen years of age from wounds received at the battle of Seven Pines. Col. George C. Cabell, the fourth son in this patriotic family, was graduated in law at the university of Virginia in 1858, and at once entering upon professional work had, when the war began, held for two years the office of attorney for the commonwealth. He enlisted as a private in the Eighteenth infantry, but

while the regiment was at Camp Lee he obtained a furlough and raised a company, which was added to the regiment, and he was promoted major, May 25, 1861. Subsequently he was promoted lieutenant-colonel, and just before the close of the war was commissioned colonel of cavalry. Throughout the four years' struggle he was identified with the gallant service of Hunton's brigade, Pickett's division. He was three times wounded, twice at Drewry's bluff, May 16, 1864, one of these wounds being in the head and of such severity that he was totally disabled for military duty during the remainder of the war. Subsequently he resumed the practice of law at Danville, in which he has made a very successful career. In 1874 he was elected to Congress from the Fifth district, a distinguished service in which he was continued by the people for a period of twelve years. He was married in 1860 to Mary Harrison Baird, who died in 1891, leaving five children, one of whom, George C., Jr., is his father's law partner. His second marriage, in 1892, was to Ellen Virginia Ashton, of Portsmouth. Colonel Cabell is a valued member of Cabell-Graves camp, whose name commemorates in part the gallant services of his brother, Col. Joseph R. Cabell.

Charles T. Cabler, deceased, for more than twenty years a well-known business man and worthy citizen of Norfolk, Va., was born at Richmond. At the beginning of the war he enlisted in the Confederate service, and on account of his special training and experience he was detailed in the quartermaster's department. In this line of duty he served faithfully throughout the war. At one time he was successful in the dangerous and adventurous undertaking of passing the Federal lines between Norfolk and Richmond, making his way to the latter city through the Dismal Swamp. Subsequently he conducted a bakery at Portsmouth until 1872, when he opened an establishment at Norfolk and did an extensive business up to 1893. He died March 25, 1895. He was married in 1868 to Miss Jeanie Douglas Black, daughter of John E. Black late of Norfolk. Mrs. Cabler was born at Edinburgh, Scotland, and bears the same name as her grandmother, Jeanie Douglas, a famous beauty of her time, and a descendant of the great Douglas family, so prominent in the records of Scotland. Seven children of Mr. Cabler survive: Rosie Lee, wife of Col. Walter A. Edwards; George Garnett, Charles T., Margaret M., James M. B., Jeanie D., and Kessler W. Mrs. Cabler, an intelligent and vivacious lady, has been quite successful in business, as the successor of her husband.

James Edward Coldwell, since the war a well-known citizen and municipal official of Petersburg, Va., is one of four brothers who entered the Confederate service, sons of Samuel R. Coldwell, a business man of that city who served in the war of 1812, and his wife, Elizabeth A. Williams, of Dinwiddie county. Of these brothers, H. T., who volunteered at the age of sixteen years, was killed at Chancellorsville; C. P. Coldwell served throughout the war, surrendered as captain and quartermaster, and is now living at Petersburg; and W. W. Coldwell did duty as a sharpshooter throughout the entire struggle, and since then has held the position of adjutant of the Soldiers' Home at Richmond. James E. Coldwell was born at Petersburg in 1832, and prior to the outbreak of war was a member of the Petersburg Grays. With this

command, subsequently Company B of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, of Mahone's brigade, he served during 1861 at Norfolk, and after the abandonment of that post was at Petersburg and Drewry's Bluff. He served with his brigade in the battles of Seven Pines and the Seven Days' campaign, including the desperate fighting at Malvern Hill. Subsequently he was detailed for telegraph service in South Carolina, and there he had the duty of rebuilding the lines after they were destroyed by Sherman's army. Returning to Petersburg at the close of the war, he has since been variously engaged, serving for some time on the police force, in which he rose to the rank of lieutenant. He has also been active in political matters and for over eight years has held the office of deputy commissioner of revenue. He is a charter member of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans. In December, 1856, he was married to Miss Mary M. Lee, of Petersburg, and they have one child, Porter C., wife of James M. Quicke, a prominent business man and member of the Petersburg city council.

John T. Callaghan, a citizen of Washington, who has been connected with the postoffice department of the National government since 1880, was born in that city April 13, 1842, and was there reared and educated. In April, 1861, his sympathies led him to seek service on the Confederate side of the Potomac river, and he went to Richmond, where he was for some time employed in a job printing office getting out part of the work for the Confederate war department. In February, 1862, he entered the military service for active duty and became a private in the Purcell or Pegram's battery, with which famous command he participated in many battles and skirmishes until March, 1864. In the latter month he was transferred to the Maryland line. In going to Camp Stuart, at Staunton, Va., the point of rendezvous, he took part in the Valley campaign against Sigel's Federal forces and attached himself temporarily to the Sixty-second Virginia infantry, Col. Chas. O'Ferrell, commanding, marching under General Imboden. While with this command, and deployed as a skirmisher, on the evening before the battle of New Market, he was captured in a charge of the enemy. As a prisoner of war he was taken to Harper's Ferry, on Sigel's retreat, and transported thence by way of Wheeling, W. Va., to Camp Chase, Ohio. After about ten months of prison life he was exchanged in March, 1865, leaving Richmond, where he was on parole of indulgence for thirty days, when it was evacuated. He then joined Mosby's command and surrendered with ninety of these men, under Colonel Chapman, the following month at Winchester, Va. It was his privilege to participate in many of the most famous battles of the army of Northern Virginia, including Hanover Court House, Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Cold Harbor, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Cedar Run (where he received a gunshot wound in the hip, which disabled him for three months), Fredericksburg (where he was slightly wounded), Gettysburg, Falling Waters, Amissville, Bristoe Station, Mine Run and the skirmishes during the pursuit of Stoneman, in Maryland, under Gen. Bradley T. Johnson. After peace was restored Mr. Callaghan removed to Texas and resided there until 1878, when he came to Washington to accept a position in the government printing office. Since then he has continued to reside at the capital, where he is highly esteemed as

a citizen and as a faithful and efficient official. He is a member of the Confederate Veterans association, of the District of Columbia, being chairman of the executive committee.

Captain William E. Cameron, of the Confederate States army, and since the war governor of Virginia, was born at Petersburg, November 29, 1842. He studied in the schools of that city and attended two sessions of the North Carolina military academy at Hillsboro. At seventeen years of age he manifested an independent and courageous spirit by going into the West, where he was employed, at the outbreak of the war, as a clerk on the steamers of the St. Louis & Memphis packet company. Earnestly sympathizing with the movement of the South for independence, he was with the Missouri minute men at Camp Jackson when they were captured by General Lyon, but escaped in the confusion, and speedily taking boat, soon afterward reached Virginia. He enlisted at Norfolk in the Petersburg City Guard, under Capt. John P. May, subsequently Company A of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, and soon after his arrival was elected second lieutenant of Company D of that regiment. In May, 1862, he was appointed adjutant of the regiment, in which rank he took part in the Peninsular campaign and the battle of Second Manassas, in the latter engagement receiving a wound which disabled him until the following December, when he reported for duty during the battle of Fredericksburg. He was then detailed as brigade-inspector of Mahone's brigade, in which capacity he served until June, 1863, when he returned to his regiment and with it participated in the Gettysburg campaign. In December, 1863, he was commissioned captain in the inspector-general's department and assigned to duty with Davis' brigade of Heth's division. In this capacity he participated in the campaigns of the spring and summer of 1864, and the battles from the Wilderness to the Weldon railroad. In October he was appointed assistant adjutant-general, and assigned to his old brigade, then under the command of General Weisiger, in Mahone's division, with which he remained during the siege of Petersburg and the subsequent retreat, finally surrendering at Appomattox. In the eventful years immediately following the war Captain Cameron was a conspicuous figure. He began the study of law immediately after hostilities closed, but at the same time performed the duties of local editor of the Petersburg Index. Finding that journalism gave him a ready field of influence, he continued in that work as editor of the Norfolk Virginian and editor of the Petersburg Index, and after 1870 as editor successively of the Richmond Whig and the Enquirer. From Governor Walker, in this period, he received the honor of appointment as colonel upon the gubernatorial staff. In 1876 he was elected mayor of his native city and held the office by re-election until December 31, 1881, when he resigned to become the governor of Virginia, an office to which he had been elected in November of that year. He discharged the duties of chief executive with dignity and honor during a term of four years, and then returned to Petersburg and resumed the practice of law. Since, with the exception of a brief residence in Florida, he has been an honored citizen of his native town and devoted to the work of his profession.

R. J. Camp, a prominent citizen of Franklin, Va., is a younger

son of George and Sallie Camp, of Southampton county, Va., who were honored by the devoted service of their elder sons for their State during the fiery trial through which it passed in four years of war. Since then the survivors have been conspicuous by reason of the success which has crowned their efforts in building up a great industry and utilizing the resources of the South. Three of the brothers served in the Confederate cause: John S. Camp, who was in the army of Northern Virginia throughout the war; W. N., who served during the last two years of the struggle; and Joseph, who gave his life in the defense of his State and the Confederacy. Of the surviving brothers, three are now active members of the Camp manufacturing company, of Franklin, Va., of which P. D. Camp is president; J. L. Camp, vice-president and general manager; and R. J. Camp, secretary and treasurer; John S., Wm. N. and Benjamin F. also being stockholders. The company manufactures and deals in lumber on an extensive scale, having one of the largest saw-mill and planing plants in the South, including mills at Franklin and Arringdale, in which five hundred men are employed, and producing thirty to forty million feet of lumber per year, a considerable part of which is shipped to Europe, the remainder mainly to New England and the North. P. D. Camp, Sr., president of this company and founder of the business from which the present enterprise grew, was born in Southampton county in 1848. In early manhood he left the farm of his parents and embarked in the lumber business, first on the Nottoway river and then in Hertford county, N. C., in association with his brother, J. L. Camp. In 1886 he came to Franklin, and with his brothers, purchased a small lumber plant, established before the war, which they have enlarged to its present proportions. He is married to Ella V., daughter of Madison Cobb, and they have six children: Ryland, John M., May, Ella, Willie and Ruth. J. L. Camp, vice-president and general manager of the company, was born in Southampton county in 1857. After receiving a business education at Baltimore he began in the lumber business in an humble capacity at the age of eighteen years, and having thoroughly mastered the details of the industry, is enabled to discharge with remarkable skill the duties allotted him in the conduct of the extensive business with which he is now associated. He was married in 1884 to Carrie, daughter of Rev. R. R. Savage, a minister of the Baptist church. R. J. Camp, secretary and treasurer, born in Southampton county in 1854, received an education in the local schools and the university of Virginia, and then, after three years devoted to mercantile pursuits, returned to the lumbering business with which he had been associated from childhood. In 1880-81 he went to Florida and, in conjunction with his brothers, John S. and B. F. Camp, engaged in the orange industry, owning a productive grove of seventy-five acres. In 1887 he returned to Franklin and became a member of the Camp manufacturing company. He was married in 1890 to Cora Antoinette, daughter of Cecil C. Vaughan, a Confederate veteran and prominent citizen. They have two children, Vaughan and Antoinette Gay.

Thomas P. Campbell, of Richmond, a veteran of the Stonewall brigade, was born in Washington county, Va., October 6, 1842. His family removing to Smyth county during his infancy, he was

there reared and educated. On April 18, 1861, he enlisted in Company D of the Fourth Virginia regiment of infantry, which was assigned to the brigade commanded by Gen. T. J. Jackson, and which won immortality at the first battle of Manassas. Campbell served as a private until July, 1863, when he was promoted second lieutenant, and after the capture of the captain and first lieutenant at Gettysburg, he commanded his company during the remainder of his service. He participated in the battle of First Manassas, sharing in the famous stand made by his brigade, and took part in the Valley campaign until the battle of Kernstown, where he was captured and subsequently held as a prisoner of war at Fort Delaware until August 5, 1862. Returning to his regiment he fought at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Bristoe Station, during the three days' battle at Gettysburg, the fighting at the Rapidan in December, 1863, and the battle of the Wilderness, May 5, 1864, when, in the first day's fighting he was badly wounded in the left hip and rendered incapable of further military service during the continuance of the war. After the close of the hostilities he occupied himself for a year in keeping a hotel in his native county, but in September, 1866, he removed to Richmond and embarked in business. His worth as a citizen was soon recognized at Richmond, and he was five times elected to the city council, serving in all ten years, during two terms holding the position of president of the council. He now holds the position of lumber inspector for the city. On July 2, 1866, he was commissioned by Gov. F. H. Pierpont as captain in the One Hundred and Sixteenth regiment, Twenty-fifth brigade, and Fifth division of Virginia militia, but resigned the commission in the following September. He maintains membership in both the Lee and Pickett camps of Confederate veterans at Richmond, and is a charter member of the Jefferson Davis monumental association. Captain Campbell was married July 27, 1864, to Miss Anna C. Whiting, who died in September, 1891, leaving five children. On February 22, 1893, he was married to Miss Leah Stonebreaker, of Fredericksburg. Joseph S. Campbell, brother of the foregoing, served as a private in Captain Campbell's company from June, 1862, until he was captured at the battle of Five Forks. At the time of the assassination of President Lincoln he was confined in the Old Capitol prison.

Leonard O. Capps, late of Norfolk, abandoned his youthful studies at the outbreak of the war to enter the military service as a member of the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues. This company was organized in 1828, and turned out in full ranks April 19, 1861, served faithfully throughout the war, and at the close was probably the largest company in the Confederate service, having more than 150 men ready for duty in the spring of 1865. Capt. Jacob Vickery was first in command, but Capt. Charles R. Grandy had charge of the company during the greater part of the war. The battery served at Craney island, Boush's bluff and Sewell's Point until May, 1862, and had several engagements with the enemy. It then served about Petersburg and Richmond until the fall of 1862, when it was ordered to the Rappahannock, and in December took part in the battle of Fredericksburg. The battery opened the fight at Chancellorsville, took part in the battles of Gettysburg and Bristoe Station, were at the front from the Wilderness

to Cold Harbor, and during the siege of Petersburg served partly near the Crater and partly on the Boydton plank road. Private Capps shared this honorable service from beginning to end, participating in all the battles of the company, and throughout discharged with faithfulness and intrepidity the duties assigned him. Charles R. Capps, son of the foregoing, born at Norfolk, March 4, 1871, after receiving an education in private schools and Roanoke college, entered upon his career as a railroad official in October, 1888, in the humble position of messenger boy in the local office of the Seaboard Air Line railroad. His devotion to duty and intelligence and integrity led to his rapid promotion, until in July, 1895, he became general freight agent of that extensive railroad system, a position in which he has proved himself thoroughly master of the situation. He is also interested in cotton manufacturing and has other important financial interests.

Colonel John B. Cary was born near Hampton, Va., October 18, 1819, of the ancient and well-known family of his name, which settled in the Tidewater portion of Virginia and was very prominent in that section until the beginning of the civil war. This event scattered them widely, and deprived them of home and fortune. Colonel Cary was educated at the old college of William and Mary, from which he graduated in 1839. He established, in Hampton, a school of high grade, which grew to be well known throughout the South as the Hampton military academy, whose cadets filled, throughout the war, positions of honor and service. The school was disbanded in May, 1861, and its principal was appointed major of Virginia volunteers on May 13, 1861, by the executive council of Virginia, composed of the governor, lieutenant-governor, president of the State convention, Gen. R. E. Lee and Com. M. F. Maury. He was assigned to the command of a battalion, consisting of two infantry companies, one cavalry, and one heavy artillery, then organizing at Hampton, 2 miles from Old Point, where Gen. B. F. Butler was in command of 10,000 volunteers, exclusive of the regular garrison. Two weeks thereafter General Butler landed 5,000 of his men at Newport News and Major Cary retired to Bethel, and thence by command of General (then colonel) Magruder, to Yorktown, with his battalion. This caused the evacuation of Hampton and in the following August this pretty little colonial town was burned to ashes by our own troops, Major Cary's fine academy buildings and residence, with all of their furniture and equipments, sharing the same sad fate. In June Major Cary was assigned to duty on Magruder's staff, where he served at the battle of Bethel, June 10th, the first engagement of the war, after which he was promoted for gallantry to be lieutenant-colonel of the Thirty-second Virginia. In the fall of 1861 he was put in charge of a battalion of Alabamians and Texans, and when they were transferred to the army of Northern Virginia he was again detailed by General Magruder to serve on his staff as inspector-general of the army of the Peninsula, during which time, at the siege of Yorktown, he had his horse shot under him. Just before McClellan's advance on Yorktown, at General Magruder's request, he was appointed assistant adjutant and inspector-general by the secretary of war, and as such served on his staff until after McClellan's retreat, being engaged actively in the fight at Savage's Station, where he

had another horse shot under him, and at Malvern Hill. After the battles around Richmond, Magruder was ordered to Texas, and Colonel Cary, being disabled by having his left arm broken, was transferred to the pay department, located in Richmond, and served there until the close of the war. At the evacuation of Richmond, on Sunday, April 2d, at sunrise, he left his home and family just outside of the lines, and followed Lee, reaching Appomattox Saturday evening. Having no command in the field, in company with several prominent officers on Pickett's staff, he made his escape Saturday night and reached Lynchburg the fatal Sunday of Lee's surrender. Learning of this event they crossed the river into Amherst county and, wandering through the country for a week longer, he reached home on the following Saturday and was paroled on the Grove road, near the present Soldiers' Home, on April 16, 1865. After the war, Colonel Cary began life over again at the bottom of the ladder, in Richmond, where he lived as a successful and highly trusted business man until his death, January 13, 1898, full of years and of honors. To the last he was ever an ardent supporter of every effort to preserve the true history of the Confederate cause and to clear the name of his people from the charge of "treason" and "rebellion." To this end he was one of the most active friends of the Confederate memorial literary society, which is in charge of the Confederate museum in Richmond. As a member of the board of aldermen, and chairman of the school board, he was chiefly instrumental in securing the former residence of Jefferson Davis, used by the city as a public school, for this sacred historical purpose, and was, up to the time of his death, chairman of the advisory board of this society. He was also a member of the board of trustees of the Confederate memorial association from Virginia, on the executive committee of the Jefferson Davis monument association, chairman of finance committee of soldiers' and sailors' monument, and of the finance committee of the Confederate reunion in 1896, and he was chief of staff to Gen. John B. Gordon at the ceremonies of the reinterment of President Davis' remains at Richmond in 1893. He truly belonged to the "Old Guard," and his portrait now adorns the walls of Lee camp No. 1, at Richmond, as one of their most honored veterans.

Spotswood Wellford Carmichael, M. D., of Fredericksburg, was among the professional men who served faithfully and unselfishly among the sick and wounded of the Confederate armies during the four years' war. He comes of a family who are distinguished as physicians and now occupies the office at Fredericksburg which was used by his father and grandfather before him. The latter, Dr. James Carmichael, who had been graduated in medicine at Edinburgh, Scotland, left his native land at the age of twenty and made his home at Fredericksburg about 1790, where an uncle, Dr. George French, also a Scotchman, had settled some time before. His son, Dr. George F. Carmichael, took up his father's practice, married Mary, daughter of John Spotswood Wellford, and granddaughter of Dr. Robert Wellford (a native of England), and during the war served as a surgeon in the army of Northern Virginia, having charge for some time of the Danville hospital. His three sons also were in the military service. James, who was educated at the university of Virginia

and the Episcopal seminary at Alexandria, was ordained an Episcopal clergyman, was rector of a church at Wilmington, N. C., and during the war served as a chaplain. Charles Carter, who was first lieutenant of Company C, Thirtieth Virginia regiment, now resides at Fredericksburg. Dr. Carmichael was born at Fredericksburg, November 22, 1830, and after a general education at a classical school at Princeton, N. J., and Concord academy, Virginia, he began the study of medicine with his father. He continued his professional studies at the medical department of the university of Virginia and Jefferson medical college, Philadelphia, being graduated by the latter institution in 1852, after which he pursued a course of study and practice at New York. During the period which intervened before the secession of Virginia from the old union, he engaged in practice at Fredericksburg, and during the first year of the war served as an assistant surgeon, on duty at Culpeper Court House and later at Chaffin's bluff, on the James river, attached to an artillery command. In the spring of 1862 he was promoted surgeon. He remained at Chaffin's bluff until the fall of 1862, and during the following year was on hospital duty at Danville. From the fall of 1863 to the spring of 1864, he was surgeon of the hospital at Newnan, Ga., and then until July, 1864, was on duty at Richmond. The remainder of the war he was stationed at Lynchburg. Ever since the war he has been engaged with remarkable success in professional duties at his native city. For many years he has been a fellow of the State medical society, and for four years was a member of the medical examining board of Virginia. On December 19, 1861, he was married to Fannie Tucker, daughter of John Randolph Bryan, a native of Georgia. She died August 17, 1896, leaving five children: Randolph Bryan, a physician of Washington, D. C.; Coalter Bryan, of Richmond; Elizabeth Coalter, Ellen Spotswood and Fannie Tucker.

C. H. Carper, editor of the Democrat, Marion, Va., was born in 1850 at Fincastle, Botetourt county. Though considerably below military age during the whole progress of the war, he was identified for some time with the Confederate service and won much attention by his youthful devotion to the cause. At the age of thirteen years he became a member of Philip J. Thurmond's partisan rangers, with which he served on the border on scouting duty and against the Federal raiders in West Virginia. Subsequently he was detailed for duty as telegraph operator on the line built under the direction of his uncle, John S. Francis, from Dublin Depot to Union, W. Va., and while thus engaged he was enrolled as a member of Company E, Thirty-sixth Virginia cavalry battalion, of which his uncle was first lieutenant. After the close of hostilities Mr. Carper engaged in the printing business, first at Marion and then at Lynchburg, where he was occupied on the Evening Press one year. After this he established the Montgomery Messenger at Christiansburg, which he conducted for eleven years, and then disposed of that journal to found his present enterprise, the Democrat, at Marion, one of the leading papers of that section of the State. In 1870 Mr. Carper was married to Mary Frances Seaver, who died in 1890, leaving four children: Pearl E., Charles C., Lucy L., and Grover Cleveland Carper. On January 31, 1894, he married Miss Mattie E.

Williams, by whom he has two children: Katherine E. and Edith.

Major James McDowell Carrington, a prominent attorney at the National capital, was among the earliest to enlist in the military forces of Virginia, and had a brilliant career in the army of General Lee as an artillery officer. He was born at Berry Hill, in Halifax county, September 11, 1838, which was the residence of his father, Gen. Edward C. Carrington, also a native of that county. Subsequently the family removed to Botetourt county, where General Carrington died in 1856, after which the widowed mother and her son removed to Charlottesville, Va., where the latter attended the university of Virginia. He was occupied as a student when there occurred the first premonition of the approaching conflict, the raid of John Brown at Harper's Ferry. On this occasion a military company, called the Sons of Liberty, was organized at the college, which he joined and accompanied as a private to the scene of action, and was then promoted to corporal. When quiet was restored, the company was disbanded and Carrington returned to his studies, until Virginia troops were again called out to meet the threatened invasion of the State. His first service was on the staff of Gen. John B. Floyd, to whom he was related by marriage of the general to the sister of Mrs. Carrington. General Floyd was in command in the Kanawha valley, and young Carrington participated in his campaigns as aide-de-camp until after the successful affair at Carnifax Ferry, in August, 1861, when he returned to his home at Charlottesville and organized a battery of six guns. Of this organization he was elected captain and with it took the field in the command of Gen. Stonewall Jackson, serving under that great leader until he fell at Chancellorsville. He joined Jackson at Port Republic and participated in all his subsequent battles except that of Sharpsburg. At Gettysburg he was attached to General Early's division of Ewell's corps. Captain Carrington continued to serve with the Charlottesville battery until after the battle of Spottsylvania Court House. There, at bloody angle, on May 12, 1864, in the hottest of the desperate fighting, he commanded his battery and Tanner's, of Richmond, and by his gallantry earned promotion to major. The appointment was made but the commission never reached him, as he was captured in a Federal charge and was fated never to rejoin the army of Northern Virginia. From the field of battle he was transferred to Fort Delaware and there held as a prisoner of war until September, 1864, when, in company with six hundred other Confederate officers, he was taken to Morris island, S. C., where for eight weeks they lay under fire of the batteries on Morris and Sullivan islands. Subsequently he was held at Fort Pulaski about one month and at Hilton Head, S. C., for forty-three days, after which he was sent North again, where the weary imprisonment was continued until June 12, 1865. Then long after the war had ceased, he was liberated by command of General Grant. He returned at once to Virginia and in 1870 made his home at Richmond, where he engaged in the study and practice of law. For one term he served as commonwealth attorney for Henrico county. After this he spent one winter in New York city, where he was admitted to the bar, and removed from there to Washington, D. C., which has since been

his home. At that city he has continued in the practice of law, attaining an honorable rank in the profession. Major Carrington retains an earnest affection for his comrades and maintains a membership in the camp of Confederate veterans at Washington.

Major Henry C. Carter, of Richmond, a distinguished participant in the famous career of the Richmond Howitzers in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Appomattox county, July 4, 1841, a son of Archibald W. Carter. At the age of sixteen he became a deputy in the office of the circuit court clerk of Campbell county, and in 1858 served for six months in the State auditor's office at Richmond. Remaining in Richmond he enlisted in the Richmond Howitzers, a volunteer battery commanded by Capt. George W. Randolph, later secretary of war for the Confederate States. As a private he served with this command in the suppression of the John Brown insurrection at Harper's Ferry. Upon the secession of Virginia the battery was rapidly recruited and enlarged to a battalion, composed of the first, second and third companies, and called the Richmond Howitzer battalion, all under the command of Captain Randolph, promoted to the rank of major. Carter was assigned to the third company and was mustered into the service on Capitol Square, April 18, 1861. Soon being promoted corporal, he started with the command on June 6th, to report to Col. J. B. Magruder, in command at Yorktown. At the battle of Big Bethel, on June 10th, he sighted and ordered to be fired the first gun of the engagement, which was also the first cannon shot of any regular engagement in Virginia during the war of the Confederacy. Promotion soon followed to sergeant, and to second lieutenant in the winter of 1861. He served on the peninsula until March, 1862, when he was ordered to Suffolk, where the battery remained until the evacuation of Norfolk. Then participating in the fighting against McClellan, the battery won laurels at Mechanicsville, Frayser's Farm and Gaines' Mill. In August Lieutenant Carter participated in the night attack on the Federal fleet at Harrison's landing, and then moved with the reserve artillery to Manassas, thence taking part in the Maryland campaign and the battle of Sharpsburg. On the return to Virginia he reported to Gen. J. E. B. Stuart with two guns, and was stationed on outpost duty at Charleston, where, on October 16th, he sustained a heavy attack by Hancock's troops. In the engagement he was severely wounded by a 12-pound round shot in the shoulder, this being one of the few instances in either army where such a wound was survived. He rejoined his battery near Fredericksburg near the close of the year and went into winter quarters at Bowling Green. Ordered to Fredericksburg April 21, 1863, he moved thence on the rear of Jackson's flanking column to the field of battle at Chancellorsville. During the heavy attack at Catherine Furnace by Sickles' corps he was ordered with two guns to hold the enemy in check until the Confederate column could form in position higher up the hill, a service he satisfactorily performed. During the fighting of the 3d of May his battery was placed in position by Gen. J. E. B. Stuart in person, near Chancellor's house, and rendered effective execution. During this engagement Carter's horse was shot under him. Moving from Culpeper Court House with Ewell's corps June 12th, he assisted in the capture of Milroy's forces at Winchester, and continuing to Gettysburg, participated in the second and third days'

fighting. The following winter was spent in camp at Frederickshall, in Louisa county. The opening of the campaign of 1864 found him in the Wilderness, where the artillery could not effectively take part. At Spottsylvania Court House, on May 10th, he was heavily engaged to the left of the "bloody angle," losing, in forty minutes, 18 men killed and wounded and 25 captured, and also losing 30 horses, including his own. With the remnant of his command he lay behind the line of battle all day May 12th, hoping to be able to recover the guns that had been taken by Hancock's men. On the 18th he aided in the disastrous repulse of the attack of the Sixth corps and Barlow's division, and on June 1st, fighting in the lines to the left of Cold Harbor, he rendered effective aid in the repulse of Baldy Smith's Federal corps. In August he engaged in a series of fights near New Market heights on the north side of the James. The Third Howitzers was the only artillery which participated in Gen. Tige Anderson's handsome repulse of Hancock's troops at this point, and was specially complimented by General Anderson. On September 29th, Carter's battery was on picket near Four Mile Creek church with two guns, supported by the Texas brigade and Gay's cavalry, and aided in repulsing a Federal attack. The line being broken to the right they retired to Laurel Hill church, where, supported by the cavalry, they held the enemy in check, being the only troops between the Federals and Richmond, until Confederate forces could be thrown into the fortified lines. In October his battery defended the Darbytown road against a determined attack. He served thus north of the James until the city was evacuated. At Deatonville, during the retreat, the column he accompanied was charged by Sheridan's cavalry, but the battery was quickly unlimbered and the attack repulsed. In this affair he received a slight flesh wound on the breast from a fragment of shell. Finally, at Appomattox, the guns which the Howitzers had borrowed from the enemy in 1863, were returned, and Captain Carter and his command were paroled. Since then he has made his home at Richmond. A few years after the war he reorganized the Howitzers and was elected captain, as which he served five years. He then held for two years the rank of major of the First battalion of artillery and during that time served in the suppression of illegal oyster dredging on Chesapeake bay and of a negro uprising at Danville. He is a member of G. E. Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans.

Frank Noble Carver, now prominent in the building circles of Washington, D. C., was born in Charles county, Md., December, 1843. He was reared and educated at Washington, and when in his youth the crisis arrived between the North and South, he allied himself heartily with the cause of Virginia. In April, 1861, the Washington Volunteers were organized at Alexandria for service in the Virginia army, and he enlisted in this command, afterward being transferred with a part of the battalion to the First Virginia, as Company E. With this regiment he served as a private until the reorganization at Yorktown, taking part meanwhile in the first battle of Manassas. At the reorganization he became a member of the Seventh Virginia infantry and a few days later participated in the engagement at Williamsburg, where he was seriously wounded in the left thigh and fell into the hands of the enemy. Destined to endure the privations of a prisoner of war for a time, he was sent to Fortress Monroe and two months later to Fort Delaware, whence,

fortunately, after four weeks' confinement, he was exchanged in August, 1862. On returning to the army he sought service in the infantry and became orderly sergeant of the Twenty-fifth Virginia. He remained with that command until the fall of 1863, when he joined the Richmond Fayette artillery as a private. With this famous old organization he participated in the fights with Sheridan's raiders around Richmond, in the attack on New Bern, N. C., the engagement at Chapin's Farm or New Market Heights, and in the defense of Richmond and Petersburg. He marched with his battery in the final campaign and participated in the fight at Sailor's Creek, where he was again captured. On this occasion he was taken to Manchester, Va., and thence to Libby prison, but was released a few days later upon taking the oath, the war being over. He remained in Richmond after his release and engaged in the carpenter's trade until the winter of 1867-68, when he removed to Washington, where he has since remained, and by honorable methods and devotion to duty, built up a large business as a contractor and builder. Mr. Carver is a member of the Washington Confederate association.

James A. Casey, of Berkley, Va., a private of the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade, was born in Nansemond county, in 1841, the son of Eldon Casey, a farmer of that county. Early in 1861 he enlisted in Company G of the Forty-first Virginia infantry, and during his first year's service was stationed at Sewell's Point, where he witnessed the naval battles in Hampton Roads, which revolutionized that sort of warfare all over the world. A few days before the evacuation he was ordered with his command to Smithfield, whence he moved to Petersburg and Richmond and went into the Peninsular campaign. Meanwhile he had been transferred to the "Bilisoly Blues," or Company I of the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, subsequently distinguished under Col. Virginius D. Groner and Lieut.-Col. William F. Niemeyer. With this command he participated in the battles of Seven Pines, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, where the regiment was very actively engaged, and the three days' battle at Gettysburg. After the latter campaign he was at Petersburg and in camp at Farmville until the opening of the campaign of 1864, when, with Anderson's division he took part in the bloody fighting at the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House. At the Wilderness his brother, Elwin K. Casey, lost an arm. He subsequently fought on the Charles City road, at Cold Harbor, on the Petersburg lines, participated in the Confederate charge at the battle of the Crater, was in the battle of August 19th and continual skirmishing until in the fight at Boydton plank road, October 27, 1864, he was captured by the enemy. He was held as a prisoner at Point Lookout for five months, being released in time to reach Richmond April 1, 1865, and participate in the retreat and the surrender at Appomattox, on that occasion being stationed so that he was an eye-witness of much of the negotiations. Since the war he has been occupied as a steamboat engineer, as such being licensed in 1869. In the same year he was married to Miss Nannie F. Woodhouse, daughter of Sawyer Woodhouse.

Colonel Richard H. Catlett, formerly a distinguished member of the bar of western Virginia, during the Confederate war rendered valuable service upon the staff of Governor Letcher and subsequently in similar association with Generals Echols and Kemper. He is

a native of Fauquier county, born in 1828, but passed his youth in Orange county, and in 1848 removed to Lexington, where he held the position of quartermaster of the Virginia military institute and later was treasurer of that institution until 1858. He then, having prepared himself for the legal profession, was admitted to the bar at Lexington, where he continued in the practice until the military organization of the State was put upon a war footing in 1861. In April of that year he was called to Richmond by Governor Letcher to take the position of aide-de-camp to the governor, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He was busily occupied with the duties of this office, practically acting as secretary to the governor, during the exciting days of 1861 and continued in the position until late in the summer of 1862, when he was assigned to the staff of Brigadier-General Echols as assistant adjutant-general. His military services in the field were mainly rendered in western Virginia, where he participated in the battles of Fayette Court House, Droop Mountain and New Market. After serving with General Echols until the fall of 1864, he was ordered to Richmond to assist General Kemper in the organization of the State reserves, a duty which occupied him until the evacuation of the capital. He then accompanied Kemper and his command to Danville, where the men were disbanded, and Colonel Catlett made his way to Staunton to resume the civil profession which had been interrupted for four years in obedience to the call of his State. He soon afterward formed a law partnership with General Echols and H. M. Bell, which was continued with much professional success and mutual pleasure until eighteen years later, when General Echols removed to Kentucky. Colonel Catlett continued the practice of his profession, and the law partnership with Mr. Bell, and other business interests, until his death, March 23, 1868.

Edward A. Catlin, of Richmond, now prominent in the financial circles of that city, performed honorable service in the army of Northern Virginia as a civil engineer and in active conflict upon the field. He was born at Richmond October 1, 1846, but passed his childhood and youth, until 1860, in Hanover county. Returning to the city in the latter year to attend school, he witnessed the stirring events of 1861 and longed to participate in the brave deeds and sacrifices of his Virginia brothers. The opportunity arrived in April, 1862, when, though he had not reached his sixteenth birthday, he entered the service as a member of the engineering corps. He remained in this work for one year and then, on account of his meritorious service, was tendered a commission as first lieutenant and ordered to proceed through the tidewater counties of Virginia and prepare a topographical map of the region. At this time, however, his father became prostrated with a dangerous illness and young Catlin was compelled to resign and devote himself to the care of his father during the following year. He then, in the summer of 1864, enlisted as a private in the Fourth Virginia cavalry and shared the actions and campaigns of that dashing command until the close of the struggle. During his service he participated in a number of battles which are famous in the records of the war, including the action at Drewry's Bluff, at Yellow Tavern (as a volunteer), in several of the engagements about Richmond during the siege, and was with Early in the Valley campaign of 1864, fighting at Five Forks and other places. At Appomattox he was with his regiment

when it cut its way through the Federal lines and attempted to join Johnston's army, but soon returned and was paroled at Richmond in June, 1865. He then returned to Hanover county and was busied with farming until 1872, when he removed to Danville and was in business as a merchant for ten years. Returning to Richmond in 1882, he carried on a wholesale shoe trade until 1887, when he gave his attention to the real estate business, which he still is connected with, though he has in the meantime become connected with other important interests. His financial ability and the confidence reposed in him are indicated by his positions as president of the Security bank of Richmond, and as cashier of the Home building company. He is a member of the Presbyterian church and a comrade of R. E. Lee camp of Richmond.

Captain C. H. Causey, Jr., a rising young attorney of Suffolk, Va., is a worthy member of the Causey family, of southeast Virginia, which gave some worthy soldiers to the Confederate cause. William Causey, the father, was, previous to the war, in the engineer service at Fortress Monroe, and afterward engaged in farming until his death in 1884. Three of his sons followed the gallant Stuart in the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, Capt. C. H. Causey, J. C. Causey, and William Causey. Capt. C. H. Causey was born at New Castle in 1837, his father being then stationed at that point in the United States service, and was given a thorough education at Hampton academy, Va., Union college, Pa., and the university of Virginia. At the outbreak of the war he was engaged in teaching in Georgia, but promptly returning to Virginia, he enlisted in Company B of the Third Virginia cavalry. In August, 1861, he was promoted first lieutenant, and in 1862 was detailed and promoted captain in the secret service. He served upon the staff of General Magruder during the Peninsular campaign, and remaining on duty before Richmond, was captured in 1863 and subsequently imprisoned for several months at Fort Norfolk. After his release he continued in the Confederate service until the close of hostilities, when he surrendered at Suffolk. After the war he entered the legal profession and became distinguished both as a lawyer and public man. He was clerk of the Virginia senate four years, also served in that body as a senator from his district, held the office of commonwealth attorney for a considerable period, and at the time of his death, in 1890, was attorney for the Seaboard Air Line and Atlantic & Danville railroads. James C. Causey was born at Fortress Monroe in 1841 and was educated at the Hampton military academy and Emory and Henry college, leaving the latter institution in July, 1861, to enlist in Company B of the Third Virginia cavalry, as a private. He served during the Peninsular campaign at Yorktown, in the battle at Williamsburg and through the Seven Days' fighting, in the campaign of Second Manassas and the battle of Fredericksburg, and also served as orderly for Gen. Robert Toombs. Later in the progress of the war he was in the secret service, operating between Richmond and Old Point until August, 1864, when he was captured. After two months' confinement at Point Lookout he was exchanged. He then rejoined the army and participated in the army operations from January until the surrender at Appomattox. Subsequently he engaged in farming in Elizabeth City county

until 1869, when he embarked in business at Baltimore. William N. Causey, the third brother, was born at Old Point in 1839 and was educated at Hampton academy, Union college, and Emory and Henry, and William and Mary colleges. He enlisted as first sergeant in Company B, Third Virginia regiment, and on account of ill health was discharged in 1862, after which he served in the secret service on the peninsula, obtaining valuable information for the Confederate government. He died August 27, 1890. Capt. C. H. Causey, Jr., a son of the first named of these three brothers, now resides at Suffolk, Va., engaged in the practice of law, and holding the rank of captain of the Suffolk Grays, Company F, Fourth Virginia regiment, to which honor he has risen from the ranks since his enlistment in 1888. Captain Causey, Jr., values his blood connection with the men who stood by Virginia in the severest ordeal through which the great old State ever passed.

Milton Cayce, of Henrico county, Va., formerly prominent in the tobacco business of Richmond, was born in Cumberland county, December 10, 1832. He left his native county at the age of seventeen and since then has been a resident of Petersburg or Richmond. During the first year of the war of the Confederacy he served as an attendant in a hospital at Petersburg, and in 1862 he enlisted for the war as a private in Company B of the Twelfth Virginia infantry. With the career of this gallant command he was subsequently identified, participating honorably in the battles of Seven Pines, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, and others, and finally, while taking part in the repulse of the Federal attack at the Crater falling in battle with a severe wound in the shoulder which incapacitated him for further service. After the surrender he made his home at Petersburg until 1870, when he removed to Richmond and engaged in the tobacco business, at first with Allen & Ginter. After a successful career, he has of late years been retired from business life. He was a gallant soldier and keeps in touch with his comrades of the great struggle by memberships in both the R. E. Lee and George E. Pickett camps of Confederate Veterans. Two brothers of Mr. Cayce also served with honorable records in the army of Northern Virginia. George M. Cayce, who held the rank of captain of Purcell's battery, was wounded at Spottsylvania, and died in 1886; and E. M. Cayce, who served at first in the Twelfth Virginia infantry, subsequently was transferred to Purcell's battery, and was wounded at the second battle of Manassas.

Richard Booker Chaffin, a well-known business man of Richmond, is a native of Amelia county, Va., where he was born November 29, 1844, and reared and educated preparatory to entering the Virginia military institute. While he was a youthful student at that institution, the early period of the war of the Confederacy was in progress, and he abandoned his studies in October, 1863, to enlist in the Confederate States army. He joined as a volunteer the cavalry command of Gen. W. L. Jackson, of Virginia, and participated in the operations of his brigade until, while taking part in a charge at Jackson river, he was so severely wounded as to be incapacitated for further military service. When in March, 1864, he had become competent for lighter duty, he was assigned to the department of the provost marshal with promotion to the rank of

lieutenant, and, being detailed for duty in Powhatan county, remained there until the close of the war, rendering efficiently the service assigned to him. In the spring of 1864 he embraced an opportunity to engage in the fighting for possession of the Richmond & Danville railroad. He was paroled at the surrender in April, 1865, and then returned to his home in Amelia county, where he occupied himself with farming during the succeeding five years. In 1873 he made his home at Richmond and engaged in the real estate business, which he has carried on since that date with considerable success, and has been honorably identified with the development of the city since the war. In his native county and in the city of his adoption he is highly esteemed as a citizen and business man. For four years he has served the city as a member of the board of aldermen. He is a valued member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, of Confederate Veterans.

Captain William W. Chamberlaine, of Norfolk, distinguished in the record of Mahone's brigade, and in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Norfolk, October 16, 1836. His father, Richard H. Chamberlaine, born in the same city June 7, 1807, died July 23, 1879, was a banker and influential citizen. George Chamberlaine, father of the latter, a shipbuilder and soldier of the war of 1812, was the son of George Chamberlaine, of Warrick county, a sea captain and lieutenant in the Virginia navy during the Revolution. The subject of this notice was reared at his native city and educated in the Norfolk military academy and Hampden-Sidney college, in early manhood becoming associated with his father as a partner in the banking business. Before the war he was a member, with the rank of first sergeant, of the military organization known as "Company F," which was the largest in numbers in the city and composed of a notable representation of the best families. It was mustered under arms April 19, 1861, and attached as Company G to the Sixth Virginia regiment of infantry. Sergeant Chamberlaine was then promoted first lieutenant. The company was stationed at Craney island until the evacuation, and there being in charge of a battery of heavy guns acquired a proficiency in the artillery service that influenced Lieutenant Chamberlaine's subsequent career, and made possible some important service on the field of Sharpsburg. The company served as sharpshooters at Drewry's bluff in the fight with the Monitor and its consorts, and lost heavily at Malvern Hill and Second Manassas, fighting also in the skirmishes at King's Schoolhouse and Charles City cross-roads. During the Maryland campaign the command shared in the heroic stand made at Crampton's Gap, and in the forced march from Pleasant valley to join Lee at Sharpsburg. The loss of the company had been so great that, on reaching that field, it consisted only of Lieutenants Robertson and Chamberlaine and Private C. W. Hill, and Mahone's entire brigade hardly reached the dignity of a company in numbers. The command was ordered up on the Hagerstown road to the Piper house, and meeting a heavy fire, Lieutenant Chamberlaine was sent to the rear to report the situation. En route he found a six-pounder gun on the Hagerstown road which had been abandoned, and rallying a few men about him, put the gun in position to defend a stone wall at which the retreating troops were put in line. For some time this gun played

an important part in the battle, driving back the Federal advance. Lieutenant Chamberlaine sighted the gun and served the vent, with some Georgia soldiers for a gun crew, and Privates Hill and Todd, of Company F, as infantry support. So well was the gun served that General Hancock reported that two guns had been used against his line. It may truthfully be said that Lieutenant Chamberlaine's coolness and skill at this juncture, staying by his gun in the face of a hot Federal fire, in which he was himself wounded, saved the fortunes of that part of the army and made possible the effective check that McClellan received at Sharpsburg. He subsequently fought with the Sixth regiment at Fredericksburg. On December 16, 1862, he was detailed as a member of Captain Huger's battery, and after three months' service in that capacity, he was surprised by an order to report to Colonel Crutchfield as adjutant of the artillery of the Second corps. After the battle of Chancellorsville, at the reorganization which followed the death of Jackson, he became acting adjutant of artillery of the Third corps, and on October 23, 1863, he was promoted captain and assistant adjutant-general, on the staff of General Walker, chief of artillery, Third army corps. With the artillery he participated in the battles of Gettysburg, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, the defense of Petersburg, and the retreat to Appomattox. He was paroled at Danville about June 1, 1865, and then returned to Norfolk. Since then he has been engaged principally in banking, but for the past twenty years he has been prominent in railroad management. In 1877 he became treasurer of the Seaboard & Roanoke railroad, and still holding that position at the time of the formation of the Seaboard Air Line, he was promoted controller of the new system, a position he has subsequently filled. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp and the Christ Episcopal church. April 21, 1864, he was married to Mattie Hughes Dillard, of Franklin county, Va., and they have three children, Mary Wilson, wife of Fergus Reid, of Norfolk; Ann Dillard, wife of Lieut. Frank W. Coe, U. S. A., and William Chamberlaine, a lieutenant in the United States army, of the West Point class of 1892. Capt. George Chamberlaine, brother of the foregoing, was born at Norfolk, July 30, 1834, and was educated at the Norfolk military academy and the Virginia military institute, being graduated at the latter school in 1853. After two years spent in the banking house of Samuel Harris & Sons, Baltimore, he became a partner in his father's bank at Norfolk, where he remained until on September 1, 1861, he entered the service of the Confederate States as commissary. He was assigned to duty at Craney island by the secretary of war, and subsequently served with the Ninth Virginia infantry, of Armistead's brigade, until after the battle of Gettysburg. After that time he was on post duty at Franklin and Burkeville, Va., until he surrendered and was paroled at Richmond in April, 1865. Since the war he has been engaged in banking at Norfolk.

Robert F. Chambers, of Petersburg, Va., entered the Confederate service in 1862 as a private in Capt. A. B. Goodwyn's company, organized at Petersburg. During a large part of his military career he performed guard duty at various places and served with fidelity in the duties assigned him. His last active participation in the great struggle was in the battle of Five Forks, where he fought

with the Confederate troops in their gallant stand against the overwhelming forces under Sheridan on April 1, 1865, the result of the battle determining the fate of Richmond. He was captured by the enemy in this engagement and subsequently was confined as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout until June 3, 1865. Then being released, he returned to Dinwiddie county and during the next ten years gave his attention to farming. He then engaged in mercantile pursuits, in which he has been quite successful, and in addition has for some time been interested in real estate brokerage. He maintains a membership in A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1867 he was married to Miss Ann C. Ellington, and they have four children living: Florence, wife of W. R. Roffe; Annie E., R. L., and Virginia May.

Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Chapman, distinguished alike as an artillery officer of the army of Northern Virginia, and one of the lieutenants of the famous leader, John S. Mosby, was born in Madison county, Va., April 17, 1840. His parents soon after moved to and resided in Page county, of that State, and he became a student in the university of Virginia. As a member of the company of students called the Southern Guards, he went to Harper's Ferry to take possession of that post immediately upon the secession of Virginia, but soon afterward his company and the Sons of Liberty were sent back to the university and disbanded, that they might be scattered among other commands. He at once assisted in the organization of the Dixie artillery, and was elected second lieutenant, and at the reorganization, was promoted to captain. He was under Beauregard's and Gen. Joseph E. Johnston's command during the early part of the war in Virginia, in the Seven Days' battles served in Colonel Walton's battalion of Longstreet's command, at Second Manassas was attached to Featherston's brigade and, occupying an important position, contributed very materially to the defeat of the Federal army, and at Sharpsburg took an active part in the battle. After the Maryland campaign the artillery of the army was consolidated and his battery was joined to that of Pegram, and assigned to duty in Fauquier county. Early in 1863 Colonel Mosby began the organization of his famous command, and Captain Chapman, co-operating with him, formed Company C of the Forty-third battalion, and was elected captain. He was one of the foremost of Mosby's men till the end of the struggle, and rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. During the war he was married to Miss Josephine Jeffries in Fauquier county, Va., and made his home there and engaged in farming until 1873, when, through the friendship of Colonel Mosby and General Grant, he was appointed to the railway mail service. Subsequently he was appointed a special agent of the department of internal revenue of the United States government, the duties of which he has performed with great efficiency, serving at different times in nearly every Southern and many of the Northern States. For some time he has been stationed at Greensboro, N. C., though his place of residence is in Orange county, near Gordonsville, Va.

James B. Chastain, a business man of Baltimore, is a native of Virginia, born in Halifax county, in 1843, of a family which traces its descent back to the Huguenots of France. At an early age, while at home in Halifax county, he began to take a deep interest

in the events of that period, when history was rapidly making, and when the movement began to organize companies of militia for defense against possible danger, as a result of the excitement attending the attempted insurrection under the leadership of John Brown, young Chastain became a member, at the age of seventeen, of John Grammar's infantry company of forty-two men. When Virginia decided to cast her lot with her sister States of the South, this company was the first to go into the field from that county, and was assigned to Major Montague's battalion, and subsequently to the command of Gen. John B. Magruder. Eighteen months later Mr. Chastain retired from the ranks and went to Lexington and began a course of study in the Virginia military institute, which he continued for a year and a half. He then enlisted in the Third Richmond Howitzers, and served in that command during the remainder of the war, being present at the surrender at Appomattox. During the period of his service he participated in a number of engagements, among which may be noted as the most important, the engagement at Big Bethel, June 10, 1861, it being the first battle which took place between the North and South, in which the Confederate forces were commanded by Colonel, afterward general, J. B. Magruder. Here the brave action of the Confederates in the face of large odds added greatly to the confidence of the young soldiers. At New Market he served in the successful battle with Sigel in the valley, under General Breckinridge, in the ranks of the gallant cadets. He fought in the bloody engagements in the Wilderness and down to Spottsylvania, was in the engagement at New Market heights on the north side of the James river, when Fort Harrison was captured, and finally participated in the battle of Sailor's Creek. After all was over he returned to his old home with nothing but a horse he had bought of a comrade. This he was able to sell for \$150 and with the proceeds he made his way in September, 1865, to Baltimore, to enter business life. He entered the employment of Hamilton, Easter & Co., and five years later became connected with William Devries & Co., with whom he remained three years. Then after eighteen months' experience in the dry goods commission business for himself, he was solicited to engage with Wyman, Byrd & Co. with whom he was associated until Mr. Wyman's death in 1883, when he embarked in the real estate business, which he still carries on with marked success.

William Dallas Chesterman, a well-known journalist of Richmond, was born in Hanover county, Va., July 10, 1845. He was receiving his education at Richmond when the war broke out, and on February 16, 1862, abandoned the occupations of youth to become a soldier in the service of the Confederate States. He enlisted as a private in the Richmond Light Infantry Blues and subsequently participated in many campaigns and battles, doing the duty of a gallant soldier at Yorktown, the battles before Richmond, the campaign of General Wise's brigade in South Carolina, the defense of Petersburg and elsewhere, until permanently disabled for active duty by a wound received in the trenches of Petersburg June 17, 1864. During the following winter, however, he was sufficiently recovered to serve at Richmond in the bureau for the exchange of prisoners, where he remained until paroled in April, 1865. After this event he continued to reside at Richmond and

soon became associated with the Daily Examiner as private secretary of the editor, beginning in this capacity a career of journalism in which he has been eminently successful. Subsequently he was made business manager of the Southern Opinion company, from which position he returned to the Enquirer as local editor. Since 1874 he has been connected with the Dispatch, of which he is vice-president at the present time. For twelve years Mr. Chesterman was a member of the board of directors of the State penitentiary. He maintains a membership in Lee camp of Confederate Veterans.

Aurelius Garland Chewning, a prominent business man of Roanoke, who served as a boy with the cavalry of Gen. W. H. F. Lee, was born in Caroline county, October 23, 1847, and was reared until the age of fourteen years at the home of his parents in Spottsylvania county. When he had reached the latter age the devastations of war compelled the family to take refuge in Caroline county, where he remained until July, 1864, when, being in his seventeenth year, he determined to serve with the army. He volunteered with Company E of the Ninth cavalry, and did camp duty, though not regularly enlisted, until October, 1864. After that date he participated in the operations of the regiment until the surrender. He was in the cavalry engagements at Ashland and about Petersburg and Richmond during the siege, the fighting on the retreat, including Five Forks and the final operations at Appomattox. With the cavalry he did not remain for the surrender, but subsequently was paroled at Ashland. After the conclusion of hostilities he busied himself at farming in Caroline county for two years, and then was occupied as a clerk at Fredericksburg for five years. During the next seventeen years he was in business at Washington, whence he removed in 1889 to make his home at Roanoke.

George L. Christian, one of Richmond's best known and most esteemed citizens, was born in Charles City county in 1842, where he was reared and educated at the Northwood academy. In 1859 he left his native county and soon afterward made his home at Richmond. At the beginning of the war he enlisted in the Richmond Howitzers and subsequently took part in all the engagements of that gallant command until he was disabled by wounds, receiving promotion to the rank of sergeant. With the Howitzers he took part in the siege of Yorktown and the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and Winchester, and fought through the bloody conflicts of 1864 in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania, until, at the "bloody angle," he received wounds that rendered him unfit for further military duty. In the heat of the fight with his battery, a cannon ball tore off one foot entirely and the heel of the other, maiming him for life. As soon as he was able to walk after this injury, he entered the university of Virginia for the study of law and embarked in that profession, in which he has since achieved notable success. From 1872 to 1878 he held the office of clerk of the supreme court, and from 1878 to 1883 served as judge of the Hustings court of Richmond. In civil life he again narrowly escaped death during the Capitol disaster, his life being saved on this occasion by the bodies of two others who were killed. As judge he made a fine

record for ability and impartial justice, and as president of the common council, president of the chamber of commerce, president of the National bank of Virginia, and director in many other important institutions, he has manifested a generous public spirit, and remarkable energy and physical endurance. Of the Virginia division of the army of Northern Virginia, the pioneer of the Confederate organizations of the South, he has always been an active and influential member, and served as its sixth president, succeeding Gens. Fitzhugh Lee, George E. Pickett, W. H. F. Lee, William B. Taliaferro and William H. Payne, in this honorable position.

R. L. Christian, a veteran business man of Richmond, rendered meritorious service throughout the entire war of the Confederacy in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia. He is a native of Charles City county, Va., born in 1829, and was reared and educated in that county. Coming to Richmond in 1848 to embark on a business career, he made a modest beginning, but has ever since been engaged in a prosperous trade, either in the grocery or dry goods lines, except during the period of the war. He went into the military service of the State, at the outbreak of the struggle, as a private in the Richmond Howitzers and served with the guns for six months. Then being fitted by his previous training for the important work of provisioning the troops, he was appointed to the post of quartermaster of the battalion of artillery composed of the Second and Third Howitzers, the Powhatan artillery, the Salem artillery and the Rockbridge artillery. In this important relation he served with these famous commands until the surrender at Appomattox. After that event he returned to business life, working with renewed activity to repair the losses of the war. Now among the oldest business men of the city, he enjoys the respect and esteem that follow a long and honorable career. He maintains a membership in R. E. Lee camp, in comradeship with other survivors of the great struggle, and also with the Howitzer association.

John Herbert Claiborne, M. D., an eminent physician of Petersburg, during the Confederate era rendered distinguished service, both as a member of the Virginia senate and as a surgeon in the military service with the rank of major. He is a native of Brunswick county, born March 10, 1828, and is the descendant of a family distinguished for patriotic service to the commonwealth. His father, Rev. John G. Claiborne, born in Dinwiddie county in 1798, died at Petersburg in 1887, was a practitioner of the law and later a clergyman, and married Mary E., daughter of Daniel and Polly (Frazer) Weldon, of Roanoke, who died in 1857. The grandfather of Dr. Claiborne was Herbert Claiborne, who served in the Surry troop of Lee's legion during the war of the Revolution. The latter was the son of Col. Augustine Claiborne, secretary of the county of Surry during the reign of George III, and he was a great-grandson of William Claiborne, of Maryland. Dr. Claiborne was prepared for college at the Ebenezer academy in his native county, one of the oldest educational institutions of the State, and at an academy at Leesburg, N. C. He was graduated by Randolph-Macon college with the degree of A. B. and subsequently received the degree of A. M. from the same institution. Turning his attention to the study of medicine, he was graduated in that profession

by the university of Virginia in 1849, by Jefferson medical college, of Philadelphia, in 1850, and by the Pennsylvania hospital and the Philadelphia obstetrical institute in 1851. His professional work was begun at Petersburg in 1851, and it has since been interrupted only by his public and military services. During this exceptionally long and successful career he has been the recipient of many honors from his professional brethren. He is honorary fellow and ex-president of the Virginia medical association, is a fellow of the Southern surgical and gynecological association, a fellow of the Gynecological society of Boston, a member of the American health association and a member-elect of the Victoria institute of Great Britain. In 1855 Dr. Claiborne was elected to the house of delegates of Virginia, and after one term was elected to the State senate for four years. Before the expiration of this term the ordinance of secession was passed by the convention. When the Fourth battalion of Virginia volunteers, composed of the military companies of the city of Petersburg, left the city on the afternoon of Saturday, April 20, 1861, for Norfolk, Dr. Claiborne accompanied them with the rank of captain. In May following he was promoted surgeon, with the rank of major, and assigned to duty with the Twelfth Virginia regiment, Mahone's brigade. In the same month he was re-elected to the State senate, but he remained with his regiment until December, 1861, when he was ordered by the secretary of war to take his seat in the senate. This order he obeyed, but immediately resigned the civil office, and asked further orders as a surgeon. His regimental place having been filled meantime, he was assigned to the duty of organizing and equipping general hospitals. In June, 1864, when Lee's army occupied Petersburg, Dr. Claiborne was the senior surgeon of the post and was assigned to duty as chief executive officer and chief surgeon of all the military hospitals in Petersburg and vicinity. He was wounded during the siege, but continued on duty and accompanied the army to Appomattox, where he was captured on April 9, 1865, by General Devens's command, one hour before the surrender by General Lee. Since that period he has, in addition to his practice, held the positions of health officer of Petersburg, president of the State board of health and surgeon of the Veteran corps, A. P. Hill camp, and has made many valuable contributions to medical literature, including a well-known work entitled, "Clinical Reports from Private Practice." He was married in 1863 to Sarah J. Alston, who died in 1869. In 1887 he married Miss Anna L. Watson. Seven children are living. His oldest son, John Herbert Claiborne, Jr., is a celebrated specialist in the medical profession, with his home at New York city.

William D. Clark, a native of Virginia and veteran of the Confederacy, who is now prominent in mercantile life at Washington, D. C., was born in Albemarle county in 1840, and was there reared and educated. His father was David H. Clark, a native of Virginia. In April, 1861, he went to Harper's Ferry as a member of the Monticello Guards, and became a member of the Nineteenth Virginia infantry regiment, with which he served at the first battle of Manassas, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm and Malvern Hill. After the battle of Sharpsburg he was transferred to Captain Massie's battery and shared the fighting of

that command at Fredericksburg, Kelly's Ford, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, the defeat of Wallace at Monocacy, Early's demonstration before Washington and the battles under Early in the Valley, at Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. In the latter engagement he was captured and was subsequently held at Point Lookout until June, 1865. In the following September he made his home at Washington and ten years later entered the dry goods business at that city. Besides himself, two brothers served in the Confederate army, Edmund F., as a private in the Nineteenth Virginia, and Charles D., in Massie's battery

Henry C. Cline, M. D., of Front Royal, a veteran of the "Laurel Brigade," entered the service in his boyhood as a private in Capt. Walter Bowen's company of cavalry of Colonel McDonald's regiment. He participated in the West Virginia campaign of 1861, and then, under Ashby's command in the army commanded by Stonewall Jackson, participated in the winter expedition against Bath. In May, 1862, he took part in the battle of McDowell, where fell the lamented Colonel Gibbons of the Tenth Virginia regiment, and then marched down the valley, fighting at Front Royal and Winchester and driving Banks across the Potomac. During the return march up the valley he served with the cavalry, guarding the immense wagon trains captured from the Federals, and participated in the fights at Strasburg, Fisher's Hill, Woodstock and other encounters of the rear guard with the enemy. He was in the fight when Ashby fell after capturing Sir Percy Wyndham, who had boasted that he would "bag Ashby and his band," and in the battles of Cross Keys and Port Republic which followed in quick succession. In the cavalry brigade of Gen. W. E. Jones he took part in the second Manassas campaign, the Maryland campaign, the expedition into West Virginia in April, 1863, when the command was in the saddle thirty-three days, fighting and skirmishing almost daily; the Gettysburg campaign, and the battles of Brandy Station and Cold Harbor. He fought with Rosser and Early in the valley, including the battles of Cedar Creek and Fisher's Hill; was in the fight between Custer and Mosby at Front Royal, where Custer captured and executed six of Mosby's men; and was in all the cavalry engagements under Rosser, Lee and Hampton in the Richmond and Appomattox campaign, including Five Forks, High Bridge and Appomattox Court House; after which, cutting through the Federal lines, he was paroled at Winchester. W. R. Cline, a brother of Dr. Cline, born in 1844, now living at Fulton, Mo., served in the Warren Rifles, a company of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, Corse's brigade, at First Manassas, Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, and Fredericksburg, and in the summer of 1863, was transferred to the Eighth Virginia cavalry and shared his brother's service to the close. After the war Dr. Cline studied at the Front Royal academy and Roanoke college, and after teaching school for several years, was graduated in 1876 by the Maryland medical college. Since then he has enjoyed a successful practice. He is a member of the William Richardson camp, United Confederate Veterans.

William Izard Clopton, judge of the county court of Chesterfield county, Va., rendered effective service during the war of the Confederacy as a captain of artillery. He was born in Henrico county

in 1839, and was graduated at William and Mary college at the age of eighteen years with the degree of A. M. Then embarking upon the study and practice of law, he was admitted to the bar while in the State of Georgia. Returning to Virginia before the crisis of 1861, he entered the Confederate service on April 19th as junior second lieutenant of the Richmond Fayette artillery. Not long afterward he was promoted captain, and he commanded the battery in all its engagements, except three, during the four years' war. The Fayette battery rendered distinguished service on many hard-fought fields, and the history of its service would be that of this subject in the army of Northern Virginia. Among the engagements in which he participated should be mentioned Big Bethel, where he aided in the first of the long series of Federal defeats on Virginia soil, a month's service in the defense of Yorktown, Williamsburg, where in command of his battery he opened the fight, two days at Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Savage Station, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, then attached to Pickett's division in the siege of Suffolk, where the service of the battery was complimented in general orders, the third day at Gettysburg, Bachelder's Creek, Fort Craig, New Bern, Plymouth (at Forts Gray and Wessel), N. C.; Little Washington, N. C., second attack on New Bern, N. C., three battles at Drewry's bluff under Beauregard, Bermuda Hundred, at Cold Harbor on the first and third days and the general attack at Petersburg on June 15, 16, 17 and 18, 1864. The battery was stationed, under Captain Clopton, at the left of the crater on the Petersburg lines, and participated in the battle following the explosion September 6, 1864, subsequently taking part in the actions at Hatcher's Run and Burgess' Mill, and after a forced night march of forty-two miles, took part in the defense of Fort Harrison, on the north side of the James. Returning to his position on the Petersburg lines, he participated in the action of April 2, 1865, and then being placed on the inner lines, held his position all the next day, unsupported by artillery, against the advance of Grant. After fighting at Sailor's Creek he improved an opportunity to escape from the disaster there with his battery, and re-joining the main army at Farmville, was with Gordon's corps until they reached Appomattox, when he pushed on to Lynchburg and took position on Amherst heights, where he received orders to disband from Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. He was paroled at Ashland, May 2d. After these events he made his home at Manchester, Va., and engaged in the practice of his profession. In 1874 he was elected judge of the city court of Manchester and the county court of Chesterfield, positions he held for six years. In 1886 he was elected county judge of Chesterfield county, where he has gained a wide reputation as a jurist of ability and fairness. He maintains a membership in the Pickett camp of Confederate Veterans at Richmond.

Captain George Moffett Cochran, a prominent lawyer of Staunton, Va., was born in Augusta county, February 26, 1832. His father, George M. Cochran, was an influential citizen, who rendered service to the Confederate cause as a member of the reserve forces at Staunton. His maternal great-grandfather was Col. George Moffett, a hero of the Revolutionary war. Captain Moffett

was reared in Augusta county and educated at the university of Virginia. In 1853, having prepared himself for the practice of law, he made his home at Staunton and was admitted to the bar. He continued in the practice of his profession until April 17, 1861, when he abandoned this occupation to enter the military service of Virginia. Repairing to Harper's Ferry, where the military strength of the valley had gathered under the leadership of Col. Thomas J. Jackson, he served under that commander and later under Gen. J. E. Johnston as ordnance officer, though uncommissioned, until the battle of First Manassas, when he was offered the position of quartermaster, with the rank of captain, by Col. John B. Baldwin, commanding the Fifty-second regiment, Virginia infantry. In this capacity Captain Cochran continued to serve, rendering important service to his regiment, until he was surrounded and paroled at Appomattox. He participated in the campaigns and battles of his regiment, was in the battles of Alleghany Mountain, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and the Wilderness, and after serving in the Shenandoah valley on detached service from July until October, 1864, was with his regiment on the Petersburg lines and at Appomattox. After being paroled, he again made his home at Staunton and resumed the practice of law, which he has since continued. He was elected to the legislature in 1889 and served one term, and has, during several terms, been a member of the city council.

Captain John Archer Coke, who since the war has been prominently associated with the legal profession at Richmond, was born at Williamsburg, July 14, 1842. In the years of peace preceding the great struggle he was educated at William and Mary college and received the degree of A. B. in 1860. It was his intention then to embrace the profession of law, but in anticipation of the outbreak of the war, he enlisted in March, 1861, in the Lee Artillery, an organization formed at Williamsburg, under Capt. W. R. Garrett, of which he was elected second lieutenant. The command subsequently entered the service of the Confederate States and gallantly participated in the battle of Williamsburg, where they captured four guns from the enemy, which were then presented to the battery by General Longstreet. At the reorganization of the army, in the spring of 1862, Lieutenant Coke was promoted captain, in which rank he served until after the Maryland campaign of that year, when, on account of losses of men and equipment, the artillery was reorganized and his company was consolidated with the Second and Third Richmond Howitzers. Captain Coke was then ordered to report to Gen. G. W. Smith, at Richmond, and was subsequently assigned to duty as enrolling officer for the Third congressional district of Virginia, with headquarters at Richmond, under command of Col. John C. Shields, commander of the conscript department for that State. He continued in the same service after Gen. J. L. Kemper was put in charge of the department, and while on this duty, volunteered in every expedition organized to meet the raids of the Federals about the city. In one of these, while acting as aide-de-camp for the colonel commanding Gen. Eppa Hunton's brigade, and carrying an order to the colonel of a regiment on the left of the line, he was wounded on the head by a piece of shell, but not seriously hurt. When Richmond was evac-

uated, he accompanied General Kemper, as a member of his staff, with a party of other officers, to Halifax county, where they heard of Lee's surrender, and thence proceeded to Henry county and joined a party which endeavored to reach General Johnston's army. Upon the surrender of the latter, he returned to Danville, Va., and gave his parole to the Federal authorities. Then returning home he took up the study of law, and in September, 1865, removed to Richmond and entered upon the practice, in which he has ever since been successfully engaged. He is still a comrade to the survivors of the army, and is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, Confederate Veterans.

Captain Octavius Coke, a native Virginian, who, at the time of his death, held the office of secretary of State of North Carolina, was born at Williamsburg, the son of John Coke and his wife, Eliza Hankins, both of Virginia families long resident in that vicinity. Other children of these parents who survive are ex-United States Senator Richard Coke, of Waco, Tex.; Alexander and John A. Coke, prominent lawyers at Richmond, Va., Dr. Lucius C. Coke, of North Carolina, and two daughters, residing in Virginia. Captain Coke was educated in William and Mary college, and began the practice of law at Williamsburg in 1860. Hardly had this professional career been opened when he heard the bugle call of his beloved State, and he enrolled himself among her defenders. Just at manhood he became a soldier in the Thirty-second Virginia infantry, and his army career was identified with that of Pickett's division. He served with gallantry and was twice wounded, at Sharpsburg and Five Forks. After the war he resumed the profession of law and became a citizen of Edenton, N. C. Attaining success in his legal work, he also became prominent in politics, where his impressive personality, strong will and keen judgment made him a leader from the start. In 1872 he was the Democratic candidate for presidential elector for the First district. In 1876 he was a candidate for the State senate and succeeded in spite of a regular adverse majority. He served with distinction, and on the expiration of his term, made his home at Raleigh, where he continued the practice of law for a time, but ultimately restricted his public business to politics. In 1880 he became chairman of the Democratic State central committee, rendering important service, and in 1884 was a prominent candidate for the nomination of governor. In 1891 he was appointed secretary of State to fill a vacancy, and in the following year was elected to the office, which he filled, with increasing popularity, until his death, August 30, 1895. He was a man of generous proportions, physically and mentally. In his political career he was frankly aggressive and genuinely honest. He served his party with remarkable generosity, and at the same time sought the good of the people rather than his own aggrandizement.

Colonel Edward Dorsey Cole, of Fredericksburg, Va., was born in Prince William county, Va., on October 10, 1843. His parents, Horace and Martha A. (Taylor) Cole, were natives of Prince William county. In 1862 they took refuge in Fredericksburg, where they remained several months, then returned to their former home in Prince William county and remained there until 1873, then removed to Fredericksburg, which place was their home until 1878.

The father died July 25th, and the mother August 10th, of the same year. In March, 1862, Edward enlisted in Capt. W. G. Brawner's Independent cavalry company, and three months later he was detailed for duty as scout and courier for Gen. J. E. B. Stuart. He continued in this service throughout the famous raids and battles and campaigns of the great cavalry leader, including contests at Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House and until General Stuart fell in 1864 at Yellow Tavern on the Brooke turnpike near Richmond. Mr. Cole then served in the same capacity for Gen. Robert E. Lee during the fighting around Gaines' Mill, after which he returned to his company, which had been attached to Col. John S. Mosby's command. Capt. W. H. Baylor commanded Company H and Cole remained with that command, taking part in the raid around Fairfax Court House and Charlestown and other places, until the surrender, April 9, 1865; and a few days later he surrendered at Winchester and took the oath of allegiance to the United States. He then returned to Fredericksburg, Va., where he remained in the employment of the Virginia express company for two years. On May 9, 1867, he was married to Alice Gray Cole, daughter of Counsellor Cole, then returned to his native county, Prince William, and engaged in farming for four years, when he returned to Fredericksburg and embarked in mercantile business with his brother-in-law, R. G. Swift, and since the death of the latter, he has continued in business alone. From a very slight beginning he has become one of the foremost and most prosperous merchants of the city, and his active participation in public affairs meanwhile has made him a valued and respected citizen. For nearly twenty years past he has been one of the most influential members of the city council, holding the chairmanship of important committees and laboring faithfully for the common good. In 1897 he was elected recorder of the city. He is a charter member of the Fredericksburg and Adjacent National Battlefields Memorial Park association of Virginia, was a member of the advisory board for the erection of the Mary Washington monument, and was for two years, by appointment of Mrs. Amelia C. Waite, president of the National association, in charge of the Mary Washington monument and park. He is at present a member of the staff of the governor of Virginia with the title and rank of colonel of cavalry. His spacious residence is on Washington heights in the city of Fredericksburg, fronting the Monument park. Two children of Colonel Cole are living, Sarah, wife of William L. Brannan, and Alice.

Major Holmes Conrad, who, during the latter half of the second administration of President Cleveland, held the position of solicitor-general of the United States, is a native of Virginia, and served with distinction throughout the entire war of the Confederacy. He was born at Winchester, in the Shenandoah valley, January 31, 1840, and was reared at that city, receiving his preparatory schooling at the Winchester academy and completing his education at the university of Virginia. On April 17, 1861, the day of the passage of the ordinance of secession by the convention, he enlisted as a private in Company A of the First Virginia cavalry regiment. He was appointed first sergeant of his troop and served in that capacity until January, 1862, when he was transferred to the Seventeenth battalion



HOLMES CONRAD

of cavalry, afterward enrolled as the Eleventh regiment of cavalry, with the rank of lieutenant and adjutant of the regiment. Subsequently he was promoted captain and assigned to duty as assistant inspector-general of Rosser's brigade. In October, 1864, he was again promoted, on the field, to the rank of major, and assistant inspector-general for the cavalry division under command of Maj.-Gen. Thomas L. Rosser. In this rank he served at Five Forks and during the subsequent retreat from Richmond, and surrendered after the main body of the army had capitulated at Appomattox. Returning to his home Major Conrad immediately turned his attention to the study of law, and in January, 1866, was admitted to the bar. He speedily became prominent professionally and also took an active and laudable part in the political affairs of his county and the State. In 1881-82 he served in the Virginia legislature, in 1892 was a successful candidate for elector-at-large on the National ticket, and in June, 1893, received from President Cleveland the appointment of assistant attorney-general of the United States. His efficient service in this position made highly appropriate the promotion which followed in February, 1895, to the office of solicitor-general.

Lieutenant Joseph Cooper, of Fairfax, Va., a veteran of the Eighth Virginia infantry, was born at Alexandria, September 7, 1824. In his youth his home was removed to Fairfax county, where he enlisted as a private in 1861, on the first call of the State, in Company G of the Eighth regiment. His meritorious service was rewarded in the following October by promotion to sergeant, and at the reorganization, in 1862, he was made second lieutenant. After the battle of Gettysburg, where he participated in the world-famous charge of Pickett's division, and fell, shot through the shoulder by a musket ball, he was promoted, while in hospital at Staunton, to the rank of first lieutenant. In this grade he served when he returned to the field in December, 1863, until near the close of the war, when, in March, 1865, at the engagement of Gravelly Run, he was again wounded in the mouth and jaw. On the way to hospital from this battlefield he was captured and confined at Petersburg, then at the Old Capitol prison, and subsequently at Johnson's island until June 24, 1865, when he was released. Then returning to his home in Fairfax county, he resumed the manufacture of carriages and wagons, in which he had been engaged previous to the war. In this branch of trade he has continued during the period of peace which has followed the exciting events of 1861-65, prospering in his business, and earning the good-will and respect of the community by the same admirable traits of manhood which rendered him a valuable Confederate soldier. He is an honored member of the Masonic fraternity, and is one of the most faithful comrades of Marr camp of Confederate Veterans, holding the position of adjutant. On January 1, 1867, he was married to Susanna V. Steele, of Fairfax, and they have one daughter living.

Robert Wilson, of Virginia, was a gallant soldier in the Confederate States army, serving in Captain Doyle's company of Virginia volunteers. A number of other members of the Wilson family were in the service, and proved their devotion to the South in many hotly-contested battles. Albert W. Cornick, a prominent business man

of Norfolk, Va., and a nephew of Robert Wilson, was born on a farm in Norfolk county, July 24, 1860. His father, Dr. Martin L. Cornick, who died in 1865, was a native of Princess Anne county and well known as a physician. His mother, Margaret F. (Wilson) Cornick, who is still living, is a native of Norfolk county. Mr. Cornick was educated in the county and city schools, attending for three years the school of Robert Gatewood, in Norfolk. He embarked in business life as a clerk in the grain business at Norfolk, and, at twenty-one years of age, engaged in the boot and shoe business, which he followed for about four years, with satisfactory results, but finding that his health was failing on account of the confinement, he abandoned that trade to enter the real estate business, in 1884. In this line of enterprise, for which the growing city of Norfolk offers an excellent field, he has met with conspicuous success. He has attained a worthy place in the social life of the community as well as in its business circles, and has before him a promising future. As a member of the Business Men's association he is watchful for the opportunities for advancement of the city. His fraternal associations are with the Masonic order and the Odd Fellows.

Major Ellison L. Costin, of recent years a resident of the city of Washington, served with distinction in McLaws' command and in Longstreet's corps of the army of Northern Virginia. He is a native of the Old Dominion, born in Northampton county, November 14, 1834. He was reared in his native county and received his academic education at the Concord academy in Caroline county. Having determined to enter the profession of law, he matriculated at the university of Virginia for legal study and was graduated there in 1859. He embarked in the practice at once in his native county in the peaceful days, which were soon disturbed by the threatened insurrection at Harper's Ferry and the exciting events which followed the presidential campaign of 1860. When Virginia decided to ally herself with the seceding States he was among her most earnest supporters. In September, 1861, he entered the service of the Confederacy as aide-de-camp upon the staff of Brig.-Gen. Richard Griffith, of Mississippi, with the rank of captain. In this position he participated in the operations of McLaws' command in the Peninsular campaign of 1862. At the battle of Savage Station, June 29th, General Griffith was killed and Captain Costin subsequently served upon the staff of his successor, Gen. William Barksdale, in McLaws' division, until Barksdale was killed at Gettysburg. He was then transferred to the staff of Maj.-Gen. Lafayette McLaws, with whom he served in Virginia, and in the Chickamauga, Chattanooga and Knoxville campaigns, until McLaws was superseded by Gen. Joseph B. Kershaw as division commander. Upon the staff of the latter he served until the end of the war, being promoted on September 17, 1864, to the rank of major, on account of gallant and meritorious service. Among the important battles in which Major Costin participated, were those of Williamsburg, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Cedar Run, the Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Chickamauga, Knoxville, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, the engagements from Spottsylvania to Petersburg and the defense of Petersburg. During the retreat from Richmond he participated in the battle at

Sailor's Creek and surrendered with the remnant of Kershaw's and Custis Lee's divisions. As a prisoner of war he was sent to Johnson's island and held with other officers until paroled in June, 1865. He then returned to his home and resumed the practice of law, which he continued until compelled to abandon it by failing health. In 1876 he was elected treasurer of Northampton county and continued in office until 1889, when he removed to Washington to spend in quiet retirement the remainder of his days.

Major Alfred R. Courtney, distinguished in the artillery service of the Confederate States army and since the war prominent in the legal profession at Richmond, Va., entered the Confederate service in the spring of 1861 with the rank of lieutenant in the Hampton artillery. While in camp he was elected captain of another artillery company, which was mustered in July 8, 1861, and was subsequently known as Courtney's battery. Attached to the division of Maj.-Gen. Richard S. Ewell, he commanded his battery in the engagements at Front Royal, Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic, in the Valley campaign of Jackson in 1862, and moving thence to the defense of Richmond, served with distinction in the Seven Days' fighting around Richmond. His gallantry at this time won him promotion to the rank of major of artillery, and the command of the artillery of Ewell's division. With this command he participated in the following: Manassas campaign, fighting at Slaughter Mountain and the second battle of Manassas, and subsequently at Harper's Ferry, Bristoe Station and Fredericksburg. Then being transferred to the department of East Tennessee he fought at the battles of Chickamauga and Missionary Ridge, and subsequently took part in the Atlanta campaign, commanding a battalion of the artillery of Hood's division of the army of Tennessee. At the battle of Resaca he was seriously wounded, but was able to resume his command and participate in the three days' battles about Atlanta and the encounter at Jonesboro, Ga. In the spring of 1865, at Columbus, Miss., he was put in command of a battalion of artillery, organized from the remnants of various batteries left from the Tennessee campaign, and with this force reported to General Beauregard at Augusta, Ga., where he was on duty when the armies surrendered in the east. He was paroled at Augusta by General Fry, a Confederate officer who was given that authority by General Sherman. Major Courtney returned to his home at Richmond, on the close of hostilities, and embarked in the career of a lawyer, in which he has since then become distinguished. Soon after his return he was elected commonwealth attorney for Henrico county, but was debarred from holding this office by the military authority which was then supreme. In 1870 he was elected to the State senate from Henrico county and sat in that body one term. His prominent service in the armies of Northern Virginia and Tennessee renders him a conspicuous figure among the survivors of the Confederate armies, and his career in civil life has been no less honorable and manly.

John Cowles, a gallant Confederate soldier, was a native of James City county, Va., and left his occupation as a farmer in April, 1861, in answer to the call of his State, and enlisted as a private in a company of troopers which was assigned to the Fifth Virginia regiment of cavalry, Company H, then under the command of Colonel

Rosser. Throughout the war he was identified with the record of this regiment and rendered faithful and efficient service. He was twice promoted and held the rank of orderly sergeant at the end of the struggle. After the close of hostilities he resumed his life as a farmer and continued in that occupation until his death, February 22, 1888. His wife was Harriet Virginia, daughter of William L. Spencer, a Confederate soldier, who, after the war, served twenty-five years as sheriff of James City county. She now resides in Hampton, Va. Dudley Redwood Cowles, the fourth of their nine children, was born March 26, 1872, and was reared upon the farm in James City county, graduating at William and Mary college in 1894. During his collegiate course he was out of college four years and was occupied as principal, in succession, of a school in his native county, the Bridgetown graded school and the Chesapeake academy, on the eastern shore of Virginia. After his graduation he made his home at Hampton, and engaged in business, but soon became principal of the Hampton academy. He is an excellent teacher, and has before him a career worthy of his parentage. He has served for one year as secretary of the Virginia State Agassiz association, and in 1898 was elected president of the Virginia teachers' co-operative league. He also holds an appointment from the State board of education as instructor in the Virginia summer Normal schools. He is a member of the Hampton camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans.

Lieutenant Elijah L. Cox, of Norfolk, now a prosperous business man, rendered effective service during the Confederate war in Southeastern Virginia and North Carolina. He was born in Currituck county, N. C., in 1842, the son of William C. Cox, a prominent planter, who served as a volunteer soldier in the Mexican war, and a great-nephew of Maj. John Cox, a soldier of the war of 1812. The family were residents of that county in the colonial period, and Major Cox treasured with much care a cannon that was captured on his father's farm during the war of the Revolution. Lieutenant Cox passed part of his youth with his parents in Illinois, but returning to his native State a few years before the formation of the Confederacy, he enlisted in the spring of 1861 as a private in Company A, of the Seventeenth North Carolina infantry. During that year he was stationed at Oregon inlet, north of Cape Hatteras, until the capture of the fort at the latter point, when his command was called to Roanoke island, and served under the command of Gen. Henry A. Wise until the island fell into the hands of General Burnside in February, 1862. He escaped the capture which befell a large part of the garrison, on account of being detailed to serve on a floating battery in Croatan sound, and after the naval battle off Roanoke island, he made his escape with comrades in small boats to Fort Landing on Alligator river, whence he took steamer to Hertford, and joining the troops at Elizabeth City, joined in the retreat to South Mills. During the remainder of his year's enlistment he served on picket duty in that vicinity. He then entered a military school and attended during the remainder of the year. Subsequently he organized and drilled a company of which he was elected second lieutenant, and with it carried on a partisan service in North Carolina, and served on picket duty on the Chowan river. He made one very successful expedition down the river, capturing more

prisoners than the number of his command. From March to July, 1864, he served at Weldon, and had received orders to enter the secret service between Norfolk and Richmond when he was captured by the enemy and carried to Fortress Monroe. There and at Point Lookout, and Fort Delaware he was held until June, 1865. On his return to North Carolina he busied himself with various vocations for a few years, finally becoming established as a funeral director at Norfolk, with his residence at Berkley, Va. He is thoroughly proficient in all the details of his calling, and has been very successful in life. By his marriage in 1870 to Miss Elizabeth M. Wigginton, of Currituck county, he has seven children living: Eugenia, wife of C. C. Barclay; Florence E., E. L. Cox, Jr., R. F., Mamie, W. W. and Sadie.

Major Nelson W. Crisler, of Madison, Va., was born in Madison county, September 12, 1830. His early manhood was devoted to mercantile pursuits and he became quite prominent in local affairs, at the time of the crisis of 1861 holding the office of presiding justice of the county court. In April, 1861, he enlisted as second lieutenant of a volunteer company, which was assigned as Company A to the Seventh Virginia infantry, which, under the command of General Kemper, then colonel in the brigade of General Early, participated in the battles of Blackburn's Ford and Manassas in July, 1861. After one year's service Lieutenant Crisler was promoted captain, and he was subsequently promoted major, the rank which he held when paroled at Appomattox. He was identified with the gallant service of his regiment, under Kemper, Early and Longstreet throughout the four years' war, and still maintains his comradeship with the survivors of the great army by membership in Kemper-Fry-Strother camp, United Confederate veterans. After the close of hostilities he was engaged in farming at Madison until 1882, when he was elected judge of the county courts of Green and Madison counties. After holding this office four years he was elected, in 1887, clerk of the county and circuit courts of Madison county, a position to which he was re-elected in 1893. He is a popular and able public official. On March 4, 1852, Judge Crisler was married to Miss Cordelia F. Weaver, of Madison county, and they have six children living. Two sons are residents of Meridian, Miss., and one has his home at Birmingham, Ala.

Lieutenant-Colonel John Critcher, distinguished in the service of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Westmoreland county, Va., March 11, 1820. His family for two centuries resided at Water-view, on the Potomac, not far from the Washington and the Lee estates. Here he was reared, and thence sent in his youth to the university of Virginia, where he studied for four years. Subsequently he traveled for three years in Europe, and then, returning to Virginia, entered the legal profession, whilst engaged also in agricultural pursuits. During the period before the war he rose to prominence as an attorney and to influence in political affairs. He was elected to the position of commonwealth attorney, and represented his district in the State senate. He was a Union member of the famous secession convention of 1861. Early in the spring of 1861, earnestly devoted to the cause of the State, he enlisted as a private in Company A of the Ninth Virginia cavalry. In this capacity he served until the reorganization in 1862, when he raised

four companies of cavalry that afterward formed a part of the Fifteenth regiment of Virginia cavalry, of which he was appointed, at first, major and afterward lieutenant-colonel. He served until near the close of the war, when he resigned his commission and returned to his home. He participated in many of the cavalry raids under command of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, and in the famous cavalry battle of Trevilian Station. At the battle of Chancellorsville he commanded the only cavalry regiment on the right of General Lee's army, and at Cold Harbor was in command of a brigade of cavalry. Near Leedstown, in 1863, he was betrayed into the hands of the enemy, and after a confinement at the Old Capitol prison, was sent to Johnson's island, Ohio, where he was a prisoner of war during ten months; finally securing his release through the intercession of his personal friend, Gen. John C. Fremont. At the close of the war Colonel Critcher resumed the practice of law, and was appointed by the governor of Virginia to the position of judge of the tenth judicial circuit, which he held for three years and until removed under the operation of the "thirty day resolution" of Congress, the effect of which was to vacate all official positions occupied by citizens of southern States who had held office prior to the war. He was then elected to Congress from the First Virginia district, and subsequently to the State senate. He also held for some time the office of commonwealth's attorney, in which he had served prior to 1861. At the expiration of his term as senator he established a home at Washington City, and engaged in the practice of his profession. Of recent years, his son has been associated with him. The honors conferred upon him by the people of his county and district attest the estimation in which he is held as a lawyer and a public man. His military service, both as a private and field officer, was characterized by the same devotion and energy that have marked his career in the various positions of civil life.

The Cromwell family of Maryland is one of the old families of that State, tracing its ancestry back to the family of the great protector, Oliver Cromwell. It gave a number of excellent soldiers to the Confederate armies. The sheriff of Norfolk county, Va., A. C. Cromwell, born in Maryland, the son of Randolph Smith and Elizabeth Benson (Stewart) Cromwell, is a worthy present day representative of this patriotic family. He came to Virginia in 1871, and, locating opposite the navy yard, was for twenty-one years very successfully engaged in the trucking business. In 1891, and again in 1895, he was elected sheriff of the county, and on account of this he removed his residence to the city of Norfolk. He is prominent in politics and has been a member of every Democratic State convention during the past twelve years. In 1876 he was married to Alice A. Griffith, of Norfolk county.

Thomas H. Cross, a prominent citizen of Norfolk, who has for several years held the position of deputy United States marshal for the eastern district of Virginia, was born in Nansemond county, October 11, 1841. He is a member of an old Virginia family which has made an honorable record. His father, who bore the name of Hardy Cross, one which has descended through many generations, was born September 7, 1777, and died September 12, 1858. He was colonel of a Virginia regiment in the war of 1812, was a member of the Virginia State legislature from Nansemond county

in 1819-1823, and took to wife Martha N. Peete, who was born in Southampton county, January 30, 1800, and died October 16, 1873. Her parents were of Scotch descent. Thomas H. Cross was reared in Nansemond county on a farm, and entered the university of Virginia in 1858. He remained there until the exciting events of the spring of 1861 interrupted the quiet progress of so many Virginia lives. On April 23, 1861, just four days after the passage of the ordinance of secession by Virginia, he enlisted as a private in Company A of the Sixteenth Virginia infantry, with which he served until the close of the war. In 1862 he fought at French's Farm, Malvern Hill and Second Manassas, receiving two wounds at the latter engagement, which caused him to spend six months in hospital, missing in that period the battles of Fredericksburg and the Maryland campaign. In the spring of 1863 he rejoined his command near U. S. Ford on the Rappahannock river, and remained with the regiment throughout the remainder of the war, participating in the battles of Salem Church, Chancellorsville, Brick Church, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Gurley's Farm, Davis' Farm, the "Crater," Reams' Station and Burgess' Mill. He served in the defense of Petersburg and Richmond immediately before the evacuation, was in the engagement at Cumberland Chapel two days prior to the surrender at Appomattox, and was one of the remnant of thirteen men of his company who were with Lee at the last. His military service, as has appeared from the above, was one of activity and peril. Besides the wounds received at Manassas he was subsequently wounded in the shoulder before Petersburg. Notwithstanding these serious experiences, a natural love of adventure and a desire for change of scene led him, in 1867, to travel to South America, where he enlisted in the army of Brazil. He was a soldier under Dom Pedro during twenty-three months, and then returned to his native land. Settling in Nansemond county in 1870, he devoted himself to the quiet life of a farmer and schoolteacher. In 1879 he was elected to the Virginia house of delegates from Nansemond and served two terms, acting as chairman of the committee on propositions and grievances, the same position held by his father in the legislature sixty years before. For a number of years after this he held the position of deputy collector of internal revenue, with headquarters at Suffolk, and in 1882 and 1883 he served as clerk of the commissioner of railroads of the State. He removed to Norfolk in 1887 in order to secure better educational advantages to his children, and has since resided in that city, where on April 1, 1890, he was appointed deputy United States marshal for the eastern district of Virginia, a position he has since held during all the changes of political power, a sufficient testimonial to his official ability. Mr. Cross was elected in 1884 a delegate to the national Republican convention at Chicago. He is a loyal friend of his comrades in arms and a member of Tom Smith camp of United Confederate veterans. He was married January 13, 1879, to Eleanor, daughter of Thomas S. Wright, of Smithfield, Va., and they have two sons.

Richard G. Crouch, M. D., a well-known and popular citizen of Richmond, was born at that city in 1828. He was educated at the university of Virginia and graduated in medicine at the Richmond medical college. When the war of the Confederacy broke out he

offered his services to the State in May, 1861, desiring to become a member of the Governor's Mounted Guards, but he was rejected on account of physical disability. Subsequently, in October, 1863, he enlisted as a private in Company H of the Ninth Virginia cavalry, and in this capacity served during the remainder of the war. His military record embraces honorable and devoted service in the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, on the last named field participating in two desperate charges upon the enemy; the Charles City fight with Sheridan; the engagements in August, 1864, in defense of the Petersburg lines on the Boydton plank road, and at Sappony church, Jetersville and Reams' Station; the affair on November 22, 1864, at Wyatt's Farm, ten miles south of Petersburg, where he was badly wounded in the head and disabled for two or three weeks afterward; and in the battle of Five Forks in the spring of 1865. During the famous Dahlgren raid, in February, 1864, his company, under command of Captain Pollard, was the nucleus of the small force which was organized to meet the daring raid. They overtook Dahlgren's men at Brington Female seminary, and, attacking the rear guard, one Federal was killed by a shot fired by Dr. Crouch. The chase was kept up until Dahlgren fell and his men surrendered. At the time of the surrender of the army, in April, 1865, Dr. Crouch was stationed near High Bridge, and thence he went to Richmond where he was paroled. Since the war Dr. Crouch has resided at Richmond, where he occupies an honored position among the best people of the Virginia capital. He is a warm friend of the veterans of the army of Northern Virginia and maintains a membership in Pickett camp of Confederate Veterans.

John Thomas M. Crowder, a veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, and a member of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans, of Petersburg, was born at that city in 1838. His father, James Crowder, was a business man of Petersburg, previous to the war. He was educated in the public schools of the city and when the crisis of 1860-61 arrived was engaged in mercantile pursuits, which he promptly abandoned to enter the military service of the State and the Confederacy. On May 4, 1861, he enlisted in Archer's Rifles, of Petersburg, afterward Company K of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade. His service was first rendered at Craney island, before Norfolk, until the abandonment of that region. He subsequently served at Drewry's bluff, and being transferred to the army before Richmond, participated in the battle of Seven Pines. He was disabled by illness during the remainder of the Peninsular campaign, but participated in the battle of Second Manassas, during that campaign being detailed as sergeant, and took part in the Maryland campaign, serving under Major Wingfield at Harper's Ferry. He was subsequently on special detail until December, 1864, continuing during that time with the army in all its campaigns, and then returned to the ranks of his regiment and shared its operations until taken prisoner early in 1865. He was held as a prisoner at Washington until April, 1865, subsequent to the surrender at Appomattox. Since his return to his native city he has been engaged mainly in mercantile business, up to the last eight years, during which he has served as magistrate. His life has been an industrious and honorable one, and worthy of commemoration.

Joseph S Culpeper, a well-known citizen of Norfolk, long connected with the extensive transportation interests of the Virginia seaports, is a native of Portsmouth, born March 14, 1843. He was reared and educated at his native city to the age of seventeen, when he embarked in his business career as office boy for the commission house of McPheeters & Ghiselin, of Norfolk. Presently changing to the house of Borum & McLean, he was promoted to a clerkship, which he held until the burning of the navy yard in May, 1861, when he resigned and held himself in readiness for service in the cause of Virginia. He became a member of the signal corps during that spring, and, leaving Norfolk when the city was evacuated, in May, 1862, he was with his command at Petersburg, then at Chester Station, whence he was ordered to Port Walthall on the Appomattox river, where he passed the following summer and autumn. From there he was ordered to City Point, on the James river, where he was stationed until the spring of 1863. He then made preparation, at Petersburg, for scouting duty in addition to signal work, and was stationed at Day's Neck, Va., where for fifteen months he was engaged in the important and often perilous duties of a scout and signal operator. During the summer of 1864 he was stationed successively at Petersburg, Va., Wilmington, N. C., Fort Caswell and Fort Fisher, N. C., and then in September, was transferred to the blockade service and was engaged in blockade running until the close of the war. He served upon the *Will o' the Wisp* under Captain Capper, until that vessel was disabled by a severe storm and condemned, then being transferred to the *Owl*, a blockade runner commanded by the celebrated Capt. J. N. Maffitt, who had previously done gallant service with the cruiser *Florida*. The close of the war found him with the *Owl* at Havana, whence he returned to Portsmouth to re-enter civil life. His experience in the blockade service now stood him in good stead and he soon found suitable positions in the transportation business. Beginning with the Bay line, he became subsequently the agent of the Old Dominion line at Norfolk, where he made his permanent residence in 1872, and for eleven years he served the company and the public in this capacity, being associated meanwhile with Daniel J. Turner, under the firm name of Culpeper & Turner. In 1893 his well-known business qualifications and trustworthiness led to his appointment to the office of city auditor of Norfolk, for which he was again chosen in 1895 and again in 1897. He is active in social and benevolent organizations, is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans, and associated with the management of the Jackson Orphan asylum and the Old Ladies' home. Mr. Culpeper was married June 26, 1867, to Frances S., daughter of Flavius E. N. Wills, of Isle of Wight county, of an old family dating back to Revolutionary times. Their children living are Flavius Wills, William Moore, Rowland Honeycutt and Frances Wills. Mr. Culpeper, it is interesting to note, is a descendant of Governor Culpeper, of colonial fame. His father was Joseph S. Culpeper, Sr., who in his time conducted a considerable foundry business at Portsmouth, and his mother was a daughter of Thomas Brooks, of Norfolk county, whose father, of the same name, was a very wealthy farmer and died in 1857 at the age of eighty-nine years.

James Cunningham was a state pilot of Virginia, and during the

war of the Confederacy was attached to the Confederate States navy, rendering faithful and efficient service to the cause to which he was thoroughly devoted. His son, E. H. Cunningham, commander of the Pickett-Buchanan camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans, of Norfolk, was born at Richmond, Va., March 23, 1863. He was reared in his father's line of duty, and after some years spent in study in the schools of Norfolk he entered the service of the Virginia State pilots' association at the age of sixteen. During the subsequent period he has been constantly devoted to that calling, his field of service being the piloting of vessels from the high sea into any of the Virginia ports. He holds the position of secretary of the association, and is also interested in several other enterprises, being a member of the board of directors of the Southern Land company at Pinner's Point, vice-president of the Arcade Land company at Ocean View power house, and owner of the Norfolk base ball club. He is active and alert as a business man, and will undoubtedly have a successful career. He has contributed greatly to the success of Pickett-Buchanan camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans. He also maintains memberships in the Brotherhood of Steamboat Pilots, and in the orders of Masons, Odd Fellows, Red Men, Knights of the Ancient Essenic order and the Elks. In 1887 he was married to Miss Mary E. Clark, daughter of William H. Clark, of Norfolk.

Captain Frank W. Cunningham, a prominent citizen of Richmond, Va., who served as a boy in the Confederate army, is the son of Capt. Thomas Cunningham, who was born at Hampton, Va., about 1812, and died in 1890. The latter was a Virginia pilot before the war and was the owner of a considerable number of boats, all of which, at the beginning of the conflict, he brought up the river to Richmond and turned over to the State. He was appointed to the rank of captain of engineers, and throughout the war was engaged in supplying the troops with provisions. Frank W. Cunningham was born at Hampton, January 14, 1849, and resided at that place until he had reached the age of twelve years, when his home was made at Richmond, by his father's entering the Confederate service. In August, 1863, in his fifteenth year, he became a private in Company G of the First regiment of Virginia reserves. After eight or ten months' service in this command he was transferred to the engineer department on the James river, under command of Gen. W. H. Stevens, and in this line of duty continued until the close of hostilities. He was upon the steamer that carried the last load of prisoners to Graveyard landing, on April 2, 1865. During his service he participated in some active military operations, including the repulse of Dahlgren's raid on Richmond, and in several skirmishes on the James river. He was paroled at Richmond, and soon afterward became engaged in the James river improvement work. In 1870 he began a distinguished career in the State military service as a private in the Lee Guards. He held the rank of ensign when the company was disbanded in 1876, and he then became orderly sergeant of Company G, of the First regiment, with promotion soon following to second lieutenant, and in the following year to first lieutenant of Company D. In 1881 he was promoted captain and ordnance officer on the staff of the colonel, and a year later was elected captain of Company B, the

Walker Light Guard. In 1888 he was elected collector of city taxes of the city of Richmond, the civil office which he at present occupies.

Captain John A. Curtis, of Richmond, distinguished for adventurous and valuable service to the Confederate cause, was born at Hampton, Va., in 1834. From the age of fourteen years he was a student of seamanship, with practical experience afloat on the rivers, bay and coast. In May, 1861, at twenty-seven years of age, he enlisted as a private in Company A of the Thirty-second Virginia infantry, and was engaged with that command on the peninsula, fighting at Big Bethel. In the following October he was detailed, on account of his naval skill, to navigate a schooner on the James river, and from this position he was promoted in the summer of 1862 superintendent of transportation on the James river and Kanawha canal, under command of Maj. Kensie Johns. In the spring of 1863 he received a commission as acting master in the Confederate States navy. Reporting to Major Norris, chief signal officer at Richmond, he was assigned to duty in a species of secret service, crossing the James river to Day's Point for military information, which occupied him during the winter of 1863-64. Then reporting to Capt. John H. Parker, C. S. N., at Richmond, he was assigned to duty under Lieut.-Com. Hunter Davidson, in charge of the torpedo service on the James river. He was second in command of a daring expedition against the shipping at Newport News, sailing in a steam launch sixteen feet long and carrying a torpedo containing sixty-three pounds of powder, which he successfully exploded under the U. S. frigate *Minnesota*, damaging her so much as to compel her to go into dry dock at Washington. Master Curtis and the crew escaped unhurt though surrounded by warships and fired on with small arms. In July, 1864, he was called to Wilmington, N. C., to take part in a daring enterprise, which was no less than the liberation of the Confederate prisoners at Point Lookout. Two blockade runners were fitted up for this purpose, under the command of Com. John Taylor Wood, with Captain Curtis as acting master of one of the vessels. The expedition proceeded as far as the bar at the mouth of Cape Fear river, when they were ordered to return to Wilmington and the project was abandoned. Captain Curtis was then stationed at Smithville (now Southport), N. C., but was immediately ordered to Wilmington again for another important enterprise, and was assigned by John Pembroke Jones as acting master of the new cruiser *Tallahassee*, destined to work havoc among the Federal shipping. This was a double-screw steamer, formerly a blockade runner and called the *Atlanta*, 230 feet long, with iron hull, and was armed with one 100-pound Parrott rifle amidships, a 30-pound Parrott gun aft, and a boat howitzer on the forecastle deck, and sailed with 120 men. The *Tallahassee* left Wilmington August 6, 1864, receiving the fire of two blockaders, and made northward. On the 11th she was off Sandy Hook and began her work of destruction. She reached Halifax on the 18th, having burned sixteen vessels, scuttled ten, bonded five and released two. Leaving Halifax on the night of the 19th, the *Tallahassee* returned to Wilmington, again running the blockade, fighting her way in on the night of August 26th. Captain Curtis was then ordered to Richmond, and about September 1st was

detailed for secret service near Fortress Monroe, where he was engaged in necessary work, obtaining military information, until the evacuation, when he returned to Richmond. Subsequently he resumed his business in the river freight traffic, and in the fall of 1865 was appointed captain of a steam transport on the James. This position he resigned in 1866 to enter the business of ship brokerage at Richmond, in which he has since continued. As a citizen he is influential and highly respected. He has served ten years successively in the city council, was elected to the legislature in 1883 and twice subsequently. He is a member of the R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the St. Johns Episcopal church. In 1856 he was married to Margaret Virginia, daughter of the late Robert Drummond, and they have two children living, Wade Hampton and John Taylor Wood. Another son, Robert Boyd T., died in July, 1892, leaving a widow and one daughter. Mrs. Curtis died January 11, 1894.

Robert K. Curtis, a veteran of Stuart's cavalry, who has twice been honored by election to the office of sheriff of Elizabeth City county, is a native of Gloucester county, Va., born July 27, 1844. His father, Col. Robert C. Curtis, a member of one of the oldest and most honored families of Gloucester county, was commander of a regiment of Virginia militia, and for many years was sheriff of his county. Robert K. is the only son of the second marriage of Colonel Curtis, to Elizabeth, daughter of Jacob Keith Wray, a well-known, prosperous and generous citizen of Elizabeth City county, a direct descendant of Capt. George Wray, of the Revolutionary army. While an infant Robert K. was orphaned by the death of his father, after which his mother made her home in her native county. He was educated in Cary's military academy at Hampton until his fifteenth year, when he enlisted in the military service. He was first a member of the Washington artillery, but on reaching Yorktown, soon afterward, he was assigned to the Old Dominion Dragoons, an organization which became Company B of the Third Virginia cavalry. He was subsequently identified with the career of his regiment and of the cavalry commands of Fitzhugh Lee and Stuart until the close of the war. He served through the Peninsular, the Second Manassas, Maryland, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg campaigns, and in all the battles of his regiment. In the fierce cavalry fight on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg, he received four wounds in the right arm almost simultaneously, and fainting, fell from his horse, and would have been captured had not a comrade rescued him. Notwithstanding his hurt, he remounted his horse and rode with the cavalry to Gordonsville, before he received the attention of a surgeon. Until his recovery he remained with his family in North Carolina, and then, returning to the field, was detailed as scout attached to the headquarters of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. In this capacity he continued until his surrender at Appomattox, having many dangerous experiences and four times suffering capture, but each time managing to escape. He was several times slightly wounded, in addition to his wounds at Gettysburg. He has since the close of hostilities been a prominent citizen of Elizabeth City county, and was occupied in farming until 1891, when he was elected sheriff, the first Democrat since the war to receive that honor. He was re-elected in 1895.

Mr. Curtis is lieutenant-commander of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans. He was married January 27, 1872, to Margaret M., daughter of Fayette Sinclair, a surviving veteran of the Confederacy. Mrs. Curtis died in March, 1895, leaving eight children.

Lieutenant Thomas G. H. Curtis, a gallant Confederate soldier from Warwick county, Va., who lost his life near the close of the war, entered the service of Virginia and the Confederacy early in the year 1861, as a sergeant of the Warwick Beauregards, subsequently assigned to the Thirty-second regiment, Virginia infantry, as Company H. With this command he served throughout the war, winning promotion to the rank of lieutenant, and honorably participating in many engagements, including the famous battles of Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. He was with Lee's army at Richmond and Petersburg and on the retreat in April, 1865, was killed by the explosion of a shell from the enemy's guns, two or three days before the surrender at Appomattox. Only a few weeks before this sad event he had been married. A brother of the foregoing, Humphrey H. Curtis, served as captain of the same company of the Thirty-second regiment, for a year and a half, after which, being a physician by profession, he was detailed for professional work in Caswell county, N. C. He died in 1881. Another brother, William H. Curtis, though afflicted with feeble health, which prevented active duty on the field, served in the hospital department and as a member of the reserves at Richmond during the latter part of the war, and now resides in James City county. Two first cousins of these brothers, William C. and Samuel Minor, were members of the same company and regiment until they were captured and imprisoned at Point Lookout. Samuel died soon after the close of the war from the effects of his confinement and his brother is now a resident of Warwick county, Va. The three Curtis brothers, whose military services have been briefly mentioned, were the sons of Daniel Prentiss Curtis, a farmer of Warwick county, who was born in 1803, and died in 1857. By his marriage to Elizabeth Reed Harwood, daughter of Humphreys Harwood, a planter, he had seventeen children, of whom but two survive, William H. Curtis, the oldest, and James M. Curtis, the youngest, a prominent business man of Newport News, and for twenty-four years treasurer of his county. The latter was born in Warwick county, December 20, 1850. During the war he was a refugee with his mother and the other children in North Carolina, in consequence of which he was deprived in his youth of those educational advantages in schools and colleges, so abundant in times of peace. But largely by his personal efforts he abundantly fitted himself to worthily fill a leading place in social, financial and business life. With his mother until he was of age, and subsequently for twenty years on his own account, he was industriously occupied as a farmer on the banks of the Warwick and James rivers. Meanwhile, from the age of twenty-one years, he had occupied official positions, first as a justice of the peace and later as county supervisor, and in 1875 he was elected to the office of county treasurer. He was at that time the youngest county treasurer in the State, but his duties were performed with such ability and courtesy that he has since then been continuously re-elected, and in May, 1896, he was also elected treasurer of the

city of Newport News, of which he became a citizen in 1891. He also has extensive business and manufacturing interests, as president of the Newport News building and loan association, director of the Citizens' and Marine bank, and the Newport News gas company, and president of the Newport News knitting mill. He is also president of the business men's association, treasurer of the Young Men's Christian association and a trustee of the Female seminary. His activity in these various channels of influence has made him one of the most popular and leading men of his county. In his youth he was married to Miss Mary McKennie, who died eighteen months later, leaving one child, Roberta Power, now a teacher in the Newport News schools. In October, 1877, he married Miss Blanch Power, and they have five children living: Henry, Abbie, Bessie, Frank and Lucy.

Captain John Cussons, of Glen Allen, Va., who has been honored by his comrades of the United Confederate Veterans with the rank of grand commander of the Virginia division, was born at Horn-castle, England, in 1837. Manifesting in youth the adventurous spirit which characterized his subsequent military career, he came to America in 1855, and, going to the wild Northwest, spent four years enlivened by hunting adventures and experiences among the Sioux Indians. In 1859 he made his home at Selma, Ala., and purchased a half interest in the Selma Reporter. In the conduct of this journal he was a prominent supporter of the Bell and Everett ticket in 1860. As soon as the secession of the State was decided upon he entered heartily into the movement for independence and, as a member of the Governor's Guard, took part in the occupation of Fort Morgan. The Guard became a part of the Fourth Alabama infantry, and, with the rank of lieutenant, he accompanied the command to Virginia in April, 1861. The regiment was brigaded under command of Gen. Barnard E. Bee, with whom Cussons served as a scout until that lamented officer fell at Manassas, July 21, 1861. Cussons was in physique an ideal soldier, and his dashing manner was fully sustained by his daring and cool intrepidity. Such a man was invaluable for leading desperate enterprises or for obtaining reliable information concerning the movements of the enemy, and he was in constant demand for such service during his connection with the army. General Whiting, who succeeded Bee, retained him as a scout until, at the battle of Seven Pines he was promoted captain and appointed to the staff of Gen. E. M. Law, who succeeded to the command of the brigade. Thenceforward he was frequently assigned to outpost, flank rear guard and detached service. During Longstreet's Suffolk campaign he surprised and captured Fort Stribling by a night attack, with a handful of picked men, suffering little loss. In the campaign against Pope, at the crisis when Longstreet must join Jackson through Thoroughfare Gap to effect a defeat of the enemy, the gap being held by the Federals under General Ricketts, Captain Cussons, with a hundred riflemen, climbed over the mountain and attacked Rickett's outposts so suddenly as to cause a stampede of the enemy, which resulted in the Federals abandoning their important position and beating a precipitate retreat. At 9 o'clock the next morning, August 29, 1862, Captain Cussons found Stonewall Jackson and delivered the welcome intelligence that Longstreet was through the gap and the head of

his column fast approaching on the Warrenton pike. At dawn on the third day of the struggle at Gettysburg he was captured on the slope of Round Top, and from the crest of the hill, as a prisoner, witnessed the splendid attack of Pickett's corps that afternoon. His experience as a prisoner of war was obtained at Fort McHenry, Fort Delaware, Johnson's island and Point Lookout. After eight months of this deprivation and confinement he was exchanged and returned to the army. He found his old division in the West, where he served during the remainder of the war, at the end being with Forrest's cavalry. Since the war he has devoted himself to the improvement and beautifying of his splendid estate of about a thousand acres at Glen Allen, to which he has given the name of "Forest Lodge." Here he has led an ideal rural life, amusing himself by opening roadways through the forest, making artificial lakes and stocking a spacious deer park with the animals which he used to slay. His days of adventure are over, and if he sometimes emerges from retirement it is only in defense of some principle or sentiment which dominated his earlier years. His articles and addresses on Indian life and character are full of information at first hand, and are somewhat startling to those who have regarded the red man only as a savage and a public enemy. His papers as a member of the historical committee of the Grand Camp of Virginia have always been such as to awaken interest and command respect, and his "Glance at Current History" is an indignant, yet potent, protest against the false coloring which has been so persistently cast over every phase of the Confederate struggle.

Colonel Wilfred E. Cutshaw, of Richmond, Va., a distinguished artillery commander of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Harper's Ferry, January 25, 1838. His father was a native of Loudoun county; his grandfather, who served in the war of 1812, of Maryland, and his great grandfather, of Scotland. He was graduated at the Virginia military institute with a thorough knowledge of civil and military engineering, in 1858, and in 1859 became an instructor in the Hampton military institute. That position he abandoned in the spring of 1861 to enter the service of the Confederate States. In May he received the rank of first lieutenant, and in August following was promoted second lieutenant in the regular army and assigned to the command of Gen. T. J. Jackson, in the valley district. Further promotion followed in March, 1862, when he was made captain of artillery; and in February, 1864, he was raised to the rank of major, as which he commanded Cutshaw's battalion, famous in the last year of the war. In February, 1865, he was promoted lieutenant-colonel of artillery. He participated in the operations of General Magruder on the peninsula in the summer of 1861, the affair at Hanging Rock in January, 1862, the campaign of Jackson in the valley, in which he commanded a battery in the artillery division of Colonel Crutchfield, and he took part in the battles of McDowell, Front Royal, Middletown, Edenburg and Winchester. Severely wounded in the left knee at the latter engagement and captured by the enemy, he was held a month at Fort McHenry, and, after being exchanged, was pronounced unfit for military duty and was assigned as acting commander of cadets at the Virginia military institute. In Sep-

tember, 1863, he applied for re-admission to active service, though his wound was unhealed, and he was assigned to duty as assistant inspector-general of artillery, Second corps, army of Northern Virginia. He participated in the battles of Bristoe Station, Auburn, Rappahannock Station and Mine Run, in 1863; and in 1864, in command of his battalion, was in conspicuous service in the Wilderness, at Spottsylvania, where he was again wounded, Cold Harbor, Bethesda church, the affairs with gunboats and transports on the James river between Chaffee's Bluff and Wilcox's Landing in July, in command of battalion with Kershaw's division in the Valley campaign of General Early, at the battles of Front Royal, Charleston, Berryville, Strasburg and Cedar Creek. During the retreat of the army from Richmond he fought at Deatonville and Sailor's Creek, April 6th, and in the latter engagement was terribly wounded, losing his right leg. A few days later, while lying in this condition, he gave his final parole. His record is one of the most gallant and self-sacrificing service. His name is identified with Cutshaw's battalion, one of the most serviceable and famous in the artillery arm of the Confederate forces. Its unexcelled record in nearly every battle in which the army of Virginia was engaged will be recalled with admiration as long as Confederate history shall be written and read. After he was able to resume civil occupations he was engaged, with the exception of two years as mining engineer, as assistant professor in the Virginia military institute in the departments of mathematics, physics and military and civil engineering. In 1873 he became city engineer of Richmond.

Andrew J. Dalton, ex-senator for the Norfolk (31st) district, and distinguished in the municipal service of that city, is a native of Ireland, born at Dublin in 1843. His father, Thomas A. Dalton, brought him with the family to Norfolk when he was three months old, and there engaged in business as a merchant tailor until his death in 1853. Left an orphan at the age of ten years, he was apprenticed, a year later, to the printer's craft, with T. G. Broughton, editor of the old Norfolk Herald. After the termination of his five years' apprenticeship, he continued in the trade until the outbreak of the war. Early in 1861, before Virginia seceded, he enlisted in Company C, Captains George James and Ormsby Blanding, respectively, First South Carolina artillery, and was stationed at Fort Johnson, on James island, from which the signal shell for the bombardment was fired, and was one of the crew that placed that shell in the mortar. After the surrender of Fort Sumter to the Confederates, he was on duty at that fortress until the expiration of his year's enlistment, when he returned to Norfolk, and enlisted in the United artillery, under command of Capt. Thomas Kevill, then stationed at Fort Norfolk. He was one of the volunteer artillerymen selected to man the Virginia in her famous naval encounters in Hampton Roads, during which he was twice wounded, and again volunteered and served on the Virginia's third trip, under Captain Tattnall. After the evacuation of Norfolk, he was with his command at Dunn's Hill, Petersburg, and then during the Peninsular campaign on duty in batteries No. 8 and No. 10, before Richmond, and at the two redoubts on the Central railroad. Subsequently he was stationed at Drewry's Bluff

for several months, and served in the defense of Richmond during the Stoneman and Dahlgren raids. He was transferred to the engineer corps and subsequently to Gen. John H. Morgan's command of cavalry, with which he participated in the campaign of 1864 in Southwest Virginia, East Tennessee and Kentucky. As a member of Company F of the First Kentucky cavalry, he participated in the severe engagements against Crook, Averell and Duffield, at Cloyd Mountain, and Wytheville, where Averell was wounded and the Federals lost 700 horses and men, taken prisoners. At Dublin he was wounded and captured, and after an exhausting and terrible march over the country to Ohio, was confined at Camp Chase for thirteen months. After long endurance of the privations and sufferings of the prison pen, the war ending, he was released and returned to Norfolk. Here he found employment as a printer at first, and was subsequently appointed to the office of street inspector. He served in this place four years, also four years as deputy sheriff. He was then elected to the office of sheriff; four years later he was elected to the general assembly of Virginia as senator from the Norfolk district. After serving in this body four years and declining re-election, he accepted an appointment as justice of the peace, still holding that office. He was chairman of the first electoral board of the city, is at present chairman of that body, served upon the police force soon after the war, and has been a member of the city council. In 1879 he was married to Rosa, daughter of Jacob Karcher, lately a business man of Norfolk. His family consists of Rosine, Gracie, Juanita, and Andrew J. Dalton, Jr., three girls and a boy.

Abram Venable Daniel, a prominent citizen of Roanoke, was born in Charlotte county, Va., in 1836, of parents who were of Scotch-Irish descent. His family contributed nobly to the Confederate cause, four of his brothers serving honorably in the ranks. They were Joseph M. Daniel, deceased; Henry S. Daniel, now of Charlotte county; John Daniel, of Littleton, N. C.; and Thomas W. Daniel, deceased. He entered the service of the Confederate States immediately after the battle of Manassas, of July, 1861, becoming a private in Bagby's company of heavy artillery. After serving with his command about a year, he was transferred to Wise's brigade of infantry and was attached to the color guard as a non-commissioned officer. He participated in all the fighting around Petersburg, at Seven Pines, in the campaign against Grant, where his company captured a battery and turned it on the enemy, the battle of the Crater, Chapin's Farm and Drewry's Bluff. During the retreat from Petersburg he was wounded in the leg, but he took part in the battle of Sailor's Creek and received another wound in the head. He escaped capture at this disaster, and in his wounded and suffering condition made his way to his home in Charlotte county. After farming one season he made his home at South Boston, Halifax county, and mingled the occupations of farming, conducting a grocery and dealing in leaf tobacco, with much success for a period of fifteen years. He then removed to Roanoke and there engaged in the coal and feed trade. In 1867 Mr. Daniel was married in Halifax county to Miss Owen, and they have four children: Fanny E., wife of J. J. Owen, of Green Bay, Va.; W. B. Daniel, Mabel M. and Myrtle W.

John W. Daniel, a well-known resident of the city of Washington, was reared and educated in that city, though a native of Virginia. He was born in Stafford county, that State, in 1838, and in his infancy was taken by his parents, upon their removal, to Washington, which has since been his home. Upon the passage of the ordinance of secession by Virginia, there were many citizens of Washington, especially among the young and adventurous, who decided to give their services to her support. Among these Mr. Daniel was numbered. He enlisted in April, 1861, in the Richmond Grays, one of the earlier organizations of Confederate military, whence he was transferred in the following September, to the Forty-seventh Virginia infantry. With this command he served, with the rank of orderly sergeant of his company, until the spring of 1862, when a severe attack of illness confined him for the following five or six months and incapacitated him for duty in the field. In the winter of 1863-64 he entered the naval service as secretary to Commodore Forrest and subsequently held the same position with Commodore J. K. Mitchell and Admiral Semmes. While serving in this capacity he took part in several actions and in the attack of the James river squadron. After the cessation of naval operations he joined the land forces and surrendered with the army of General Johnston at Greensboro, N. C. Soon after he was paroled Mr. Daniel returned to his old home at Washington and embarked in civil life. In his undertakings since the close of the war he has met with gratifying success and has gained the confidence and esteem of the community. Since the year 1888 he has been in the service of the government of the District of Columbia.

Captain William T. Daougherty, adjutant of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, United Confederate Veterans, Hampton, Va., was born at Hampton, December 13, 1840. His father, George P. Daougherty, born in Southampton county, 1819, died in 1896, was for many years prior to the war a foreman in the Gosport navy yard, and during the war was in the service of the Confederacy at Charlotte, N. C. In April, 1861, young Daougherty, then residing at Hampton, enlisted in the Washington artillery, organized at that place, as a private. He served with this organization through 1861 and the spring of 1862, mainly at Yorktown, and at the reorganization was elected second lieutenant of his company. On May 20, 1862, he resigned his commission and became a private in the Old Dominion Dragoons, a cavalry company, in which he remained until the close of the war, gaining promotion to orderly sergeant in July, 1864. He participated in the fighting at Yorktown and Williamsburg with the artillery, and during his subsequent career as a cavalryman took part in a great number of engagements, including practically all of those in which the cavalry under Stuart, Hampton and Lee won such distinguished honor. Among these battles were Malvern Hill, Muddy Run, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Willis' Church, Hanover Court House, Brandy Station, Kelly's Ford, Dumfries, White Post, Fairfax Court House, Chantilly, Poolesville, Boonsboro, Sharpsburg, Paris, Upperville, Philomont, Fredericksburg, Aldie, Carlisle, Hanover, Pa., Gettysburg, Cashtown, Williamsport, Raccoon Ford, Chancellorsville, Todd's Tavern, Spottsylvania, Beaver Dam, Yellow Tavern,

Meadow Bridge, Trevilian's, White House, Nance's Shop, Reams' Station, and Front Royal. During this service three horses were killed under him. On August 16, 1864, at the Front Royal fight, he was captured, and after a week's confinement in the Old Capitol prison, was held at Elmira, N. Y., until March 10, 1865. He was then paroled for three months, with other invalid prisoners, and the war closed soon afterward. Since the war he has been actively engaged in his business as a carpenter and builder, his principal work being the famous Hygeia hotel at Old Point Comfort. In 1895 he was elected commissioner of revenue of the city of Hampton. He is also a member of the board of trustees of the Hampton school. He was one of the charter members of his camp of Confederate veterans and the first commander. In 1866 he was married to Mary L. Curtis, of Hampton, and they have seven children: Minnie T., wife of Joseph B. Deistal; Rachel E., wife of A. C. Vaughan; Vernon L., William J., Silas Stuart, Marthella P., wife of Frank M. Phoebus, and Elbert Bruce.

Major James Dawley Darden, a Virginian, who was prominently connected with the provisional army of the Confederate States, after the war a resident of Washington, D. C., was born at the town of Smithfield in 1828. In infancy his home was made at Portsmouth, Va., and thence in 1838 he accompanied his family to Washington, where he received his education. In the year 1860 Major Darden was an official in the United States custom house at San Francisco, but, after the election of Mr. Lincoln to the presidency, resigned his position and returned to Virginia. Being heartily in sympathy with his State, he tendered his services for her defense after secession was decided upon, and in the summer of 1861 he was appointed to the staff of Gen. Lewis Armistead as aide-de-camp with the rank of first lieutenant. In this capacity he served until July 31, 1862, when he was promoted captain and assigned to the staff of the adjutant-general of the provisional army. His service continued until the close of the war, when he surrendered at Charlottesville, Va., and was paroled. His duties were of such a nature as to bring him prominently upon many of the famous battlefields of the war, where his conduct was characterized by the bravery and foresight of a skillful soldier. The most notable engagements in which he participated were Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Bermuda Hundred, Fredericksburg, Rappahannock Bridge and Gettysburg. His horses were killed under him at Seven Pines, Malvern Hill and Manassas, and he was twice wounded, once at Gettysburg and once, in the right leg, at Rappahannock Bridge. After the conclusion of the war he returned to Washington, and subsequently resided in Texas, Arkansas, and Memphis, Tenn., until 1881, when he made his permanent home at Washington. He acquired a membership in the Washington association of Confederate veterans.

James J. Dashiell, a brave veteran of the Sixth Virginia regiment, and now a respected citizen of Portsmouth, Va., was born in Surry county, April 6, 1837. His father, James J. Dashiell, a native of the same county, a brickmason and farmer by occupation, died in 1847. His mother, Irena E. Wyatt, a native of Suffolk, Va., died in 1894. At nine years of age Mr. Dashiell, his father having previously died, accompanied his mother to Suffolk, where

he was reared and apprenticed to the merchant tailor's trade. April 19, 1861, he was mustered into the service of the Confederate States, as a member of the Independent Grays, an excellent company which became Company H of the Sixth Virginia regiment, and was distinguished for faithful service in Mahone's brigade. The Grays were among the first troops sent to Craney island, and there had charge of a section of heavy artillery. At Chancellorsville the company was distinguished in a most gallant charge over the abatis of the enemy in the evening of May 2d, capturing a number of prisoners and the colors of an Ohio regiment. Private Dashiell was with the company from enlistment until the close, reaching home April 17, 1865, just two days short of four years from his enlistment. He participated in all the battles of his command, including Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, Burgess' Mill, Reams' Station, Wilcox Farm, Culpeper Court House and Bristoe Station, and excepting the fight at the Crater, when he was on picket duty, and Fredericksburg and the Maryland campaign of 1862, when he was sick with typhoid fever. He was paroled at Richmond March 15, 1865. Since the war he has resided at Portsmouth, engaged in his business of merchant tailor. In July, 1894, he was elected keeper of the city cemeteries, a position to which he was re-elected in 1895 for three years. He is a member of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the order of Red Men, and is affiliated with the Baptist church. On April 26, 1859, he was married to Maria J. Daughtrey, of Nansemond county, and they have ten children living.

Thomas J. Dashiell, now prominently connected with the transportation business of Portsmouth, was one of the most faithful members of the Old Dominion Guard, distinguished among the military companies which gave renown to that part of Virginia. Before the war the Guard was noted throughout the State, and for a year before 1861 Private Dashiell was associated with its renown as a well-drilled militia company and a part of the Third Virginia regiment. With the company he was called into active service April 20, 1861, and immediately went on duty in protection of the navy yard. Subsequently it was detached from the Third regiment and stationed at Pinner's Point, where it became Company K of the Ninth regiment, and remained until the evacuation. Private Dashiell then served with his company in the movement to Petersburg and Richmond and participated in the battles of Seven Pines and Malvern Hill. He subsequently fought at Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. After the latter engagement he was attacked by pneumonia, which confined him in the hospital during the following winter. Rejoining his regiment in May, 1863, he took part in skirmishes near Suffolk and then fought in the Pennsylvania campaign, participating in Pickett's charge at Gettysburg, and being one of the five men of his company who reached the stone wall uninjured. He was captured, and during the succeeding fourteen and a half months was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout. After being exchanged he rejoined his command, then in front of Bermuda Hundred, and on March 31st was in the battle of Dinwiddie Court House. In this engagement he was under such a hot fire that underclothing in

his haversack was perforated with twenty-seven holes and he was struck by a ball which fortunately his belt and haversack prevented from seriously injuring him. At Five Forks, April 1st, he was again captured and was confined at Point Lookout until the following June. At the close of the war he was third sergeant of his company. Sergeant Dashiell was born in Accomack county, March 1, 1839, son of George H. and Atalanta (Feddeman) Dashiell. The father was a native of Maryland, was a farmer by occupation, and died in Norfolk county in 1870. The son was reared in Norfolk county, and for three years before the war held a clerkship in the Portsmouth postoffice. On his return in 1865 he spent eighteen months at the farm residence, and then made his home at Berkeley. From 1867 to 1870 he was in the service of the Bay Line steamship company, during the following year was with the Atlantic, Mississippi & Ohio railroad company, and then returned to the Bay Line company, with which he has since been associated. In 1890 he removed to Portsmouth, and became the agent of the steamship company. He is a member of Stonewall camp, the Episcopal church, the Knights of Pythias and Knights of Honor. On December 31, 1868, he was married to Alexenia Nash Portlock, who died October 25, 1884, leaving one son, Thomas Edward Dashiell, and a daughter, Kate Atalanta, who died January 6, 1893.

Samuel Boyer Davis, of Alexandria, Va., whose service in the cause of the Confederate States was one of the most romantic in the history of the war, was born at Wilmington, Del., December 5, 1843. Early in life his home was made at Baltimore and, with other young Marylanders, his sympathies were earnestly with the South at the opening of the war in 1861. In his nineteenth year, July, 1862, he enlisted in the Confederate service, as a member of Latimer's battery of artillery, in time to participate in the important engagements of Cedar Run, Second Manassas and Sharpsburg. Subsequently his intelligence and efficiency caused his promotion to the position of orderly with Colonel Hoke, then in command of Trimble's brigade, and he afterward served as aide-de-camp upon the staff of General Trimble, who was promoted major-general and put in command of a division of the Second army corps. While serving in this capacity, in the support of Pickett, during the third day's fight at Gettysburg, he was shot through the lung and taken prisoner by the advance of the Federal forces. Though assured by a surgeon that he would die, he was carried to a field hospital and soon was under care at the Chester hospital, Pennsylvania. His determination to live was no sooner clearly in prospect of realization than he formed a plan to escape before being transferred to a prison. He found a sympathizing comrade in Captain Slay, of the Sixteenth Mississippi, and bribed a guard to permit them to escape on the night of August 16, 1863. After some hairbreadth escapes from detection, they reached Dover, Del., greatly fatigued, the next night, and there received aid in their effort to reach the Potomac. Crossing Maryland, they received help from friends and finally took a boat over the Potomac and reached the Confederate lines. After arriving at Richmond, both were prostrated by the forced march they had made from the Pennsylvania hospital and were for a long time sick with typhoid fever. Late in October, Lieutenant Davis reported

for duty and was assigned to Gen. John H. Winder as acting assistant inspector general, with duty at Richmond. In the following May he was ordered to Goldsboro, N. C., and thence in June to Andersonville, Ga., where he arrived about the same time as did General Winder. The condition of affairs there, 24,000 prisoners confined in an area of 28 acres, guarded by 1,200 militia, led to his being sent with dispatches to Adjutant-General Cooper, urging the establishment of another prison and that no more prisoners should be forwarded there. On July 21 he was ordered to take charge of the prison at Macon, Ga. On account of a brief parole he granted a prisoner he was relieved and returned to Andersonville, where he relieved Captain Wirz, who was seriously ill, about August 14th. On Christmas day, 1864, he was in Richmond and accepted an opportunity to be the bearer of important dispatches through the United States to Canada. These dispatches, consisting of a manifesto from President Davis that John Beall, of Virginia, had been ordered to make the attempt to capture Johnson's island, and a copy of Beall's commission in the Confederate States navy, he carried safely through Washington and thence to Toronto, without exciting suspicion; but on his return, at Sandusky, Ohio, he fell in with a party of returned Federal prisoners from Andersonville, who instantly recognized him, and he was put in jail at Newark, Ohio. There he was able to remove the dispatches for the Confederate government, which had been executed on white silk and sewed in the lining of his coat, and burn them in the stove. Accused of being a spy, he was taken to the "McLean Barracks," at Cincinnati, and confined there in a small room, wearing a ball and chain, and furnished with a block of wood for a pillow, which he was not to raise his head from until called in the morning, on pain of being shot by the sentinel. He was tried on the 17th and 18th of January and, though he made, according to the Cincinnati papers of that date, a most eloquent and forcible argument that he was a bearer of dispatches but not a spy, the case was prejudged and public sentiment clamored for his death. To his accusers he said: "I know I have only done my duty. I have done it as best I could. God knows what I intended and He knows I do not deserve death; but if I die I go without asking pity, as a soldier should die." About February 1st a gentleman called upon him and promised to advise his friends of his situation, but he soon learned that he had been condemned to death by hanging February 17, 1865. He was taken to Johnson's island and soon was advised that his friends were working for him and had secured some influential help; but beyond the mysterious assurance of a strange visitor that he would not be executed, he heard no word as to his fate. On the morning of the 17th he was aware that his gallows had been completed; he had perceived the arrangements for his execution, had given up all hope, and was in fact already dead to the world, though unmoved and undaunted, when, as the band was playing the dead march, the commanding officer announced that the sentence had been commuted to imprisonment for life. He started at once for Fort Delaware prison, passing a train load of people on an excursion to witness his execution. At Fort Delaware he was put in irons and treated with inhuman brutality by General Schoepf, the officer

in charge. Subsequently transferred to Albany, N. Y., he was for six weeks confined in a cell and finally, through the intercession of friends, was permitted to remain in the prison hospital. Meanwhile the Confederacy had ceased to be, but his imprisonment continued. In November, 1865, he wrote to Mr. Bradley, the president of the Andersonville Prison Survivors association, and asked his assistance. This was promptly promised by that gentleman, who wrote in reply: "You were the first to introduce anything like sanitary regulations in the prison at Andersonville; at Savannah, where you were in command, the prisoners were treated like men, so far as you were concerned. . . . You never used any violence and never punished anyone for trying to escape." Finally, on December 7th he was released, though Secretary Stanton declared that it was by mistake and that he ought to have been hanged. After the war he learned that the kind heart of Abraham Lincoln had been interested in his behalf and that it was to him that he owed his escape from an ignominious death on an unjust charge. Returning to Virginia, he lived upon a farm until 1868, regaining his former strength and vigor, and then took charge, as captain, of a steamer on the Potomac river. During the last administration of President Cleveland he served as assistant postmaster at Alexandria. He is an honorary member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 2, Confederate Veterans. Four of his children are living: two daughters, married, and two sons, one of whom is a leading member of the Alexandria bar and the other holding a position in the United States Fishery commission. His experiences during the war which have led to his designation as the "Andre" of the Confederacy have been well described by him in a brochure published in 1892, after the story had been partly told before the Loyal Legion by a member of his court martial.

Horace P. Deahl, of Berryville, Va., a Confederate veteran who served both in the infantry and the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at the town where he now resides, March 26, 1836. Previous to the war he was engaged in business at Berryville and was a member of a militia organization, with which he served at Harper's Ferry during the exciting period following the attempted insurrection by John Brown in 1859. He went again with his command to Harper's Ferry when it was occupied by the Virginia troops in April, 1861, and as third lieutenant of his company enlisted for a year in the Confederate service, the company being assigned as Company I to the Second Virginia infantry. With Jackson's brigade of Johnston's army he served at Harper's Ferry and vicinity, and then took part in the first battle of Manassas, where his brigade earned the title of "Stonewall." Before the end of his first year's service he was promoted first lieutenant of his company, but at the close of that period he enlisted as a private in Company D of the Sixth Virginia cavalry regiment. He served in that capacity throughout the remainder of the four years, except the final three months, which he passed in a Federal prison, and during his service participated in all the battles of his command in the Shenandoah valley, eastern Virginia, West Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania. Many accounts are given by his comrades of his personal exploits, illustrating his personal courage and daring as a trooper. He was three times

wounded, twice at Brandy Station and once at Trevilian Station. In January, 1865, he was captured and taken to Fort McHenry, Baltimore, where he experienced the horrors of prison life, being for some time confined with six others in a narrow dungeon cell. When released, after the close of hostilities, he resumed his residence and business pursuits at Berryville, where he is now prominent as a merchant and a citizen. He is a member of J. E. B. Stuart camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Clarke Cavalry association.

William Harper Dean, a well-known business man of Richmond, and a veteran of the First Virginia regiment of infantry, was born in that city in 1841 and was there reared and educated. Immediately after the passage of the ordinance of secession of the State, he enlisted, April 19th, as a private in the First Virginia infantry, with which he was subsequently identified during the remainder of the war. His soldierly qualities and gallant service soon brought about his promotion from the grade of private. In July, 1861, he was made corporal, in the fall of 1861 fourth sergeant, two or three months later third sergeant, and on the field at Williamsburg he was promoted first sergeant of his company. In 1863 he was promoted to the responsible and important position of quartermaster sergeant of the First regiment. In this capacity he served during the remaining two years of the war, continuing with his command until it was surrendered and paroled at Appomattox. During his active service in the field he participated in the battles of Manassas of 1861, Falls Church, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Manassas of 1862, Sharpsburg, Md., Fredericksburg, and Plymouth, N. C., a series of important and severe engagements which includes a goodly share of the hardest fighting of the war, throughout which he bore himself as a brave and devoted soldier. At the close of hostilities Sergeant Dean returned to business life and became identified with the tobacco trade. For two years succeeding the war he was thus engaged at New York city, and subsequently conducted a factory during four years in Nova Scotia. After another year at New York he conducted a tobacco business at Montreal, Canada, until 1887, when he again made his home at Richmond, and, giving his attention to the leaf tobacco trade, has built up a successful business. Mr. Dean is a member of both the Lee and Pickett camps, United Confederate Veterans.

D. W. Debord, of Marion, Va., a veteran of the Twenty-third Virginia battalion, was born in Smyth county, July 7, 1840. When about twenty-one years of age, in the latter part of June, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as a private in Capt. William Blessing's company, Company A, Twenty-third Virginia battalion, with which he first served in West Virginia, and then, moving through Kentucky, participated in the defense of Fort Donelson, where the Virginia troops fought gallantly in the very creditable battle which preceded the surrender. Escaping from that calamity with the main part of General Floyd's command, he shared the service of the command at Nashville, in preserving order and saving supplies, and then returned to southwest Virginia. The Twenty-third battalion, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Derrick, was part of the army of the Kanawha which operated in the valley from which it derived its title, during 1862, notably in

the September campaign against the Federal forces at Charleston. Private Debord fought with this army, and during 1864 was with his battalion in the brigade of Gen. George H. Stuart in the campaign from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, after which he went with Early to the Shenandoah valley, drove the Federals across the Potomac and marched through Maryland, fighting at Monocacy and skirmishing before the Federal forts surrounding the capital of the United States. Then returning to the valley he participated in the campaign against Sheridan until, in the battle of Winchester, September 19, 1864, he was captured by the enemy. He was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout until the following March, when the resources of the Confederacy were exhausted and there was no longer opportunity for effective service. He escaped injury during his service, with the exception of a slight wound received at Dry Creek, Monroe county, W. Va. Since the close of hostilities he has been engaged in wagon manufacturing at Marion. He was married in 1859 to Katherine Hopkins, by whom he has five children living: Daniel Wesley, Polly Ann, John William, James M., and George A. Subsequent to the death of his first wife he was married in 1894 to Levinah Shupe.

Major Julius Adolphus De Lagnel, the hero of Rich Mountain, commissioned brigadier-general in the provisional army of the Confederate States, was born in New Jersey and was appointed from Virginia to the United States army on March 8, 1847, as second lieutenant of the Second infantry. In January, 1849, he was promoted first lieutenant. Resigning his commission upon the formation of the Confederacy, he tendered his services to the new government and was commissioned captain, corps of artillery, C. S. A. Going into western Virginia with General Garnett, he became his chief of artillery and was stationed at Rich Mountain with the command of General Pegram. When the latter officer perceived that McClellan intended to flank his position by taking possession of the crest of Rich Mountain, he sent De Lagnel with several companies of infantry and one piece of artillery, to defend the mountain to the last extremity. Here he withstood the attack of a largely superior force under Rosecrans, making a desperate fight until his men were forced back by the heavy fire of musketry and artillery. With indomitable courage he fought his gun alone until the enemy were upon him and he fell severely wounded. In the confusion he managed to hide himself in a mountain thicket until the Federal troops were withdrawn and then obtained shelter with a sympathetic mountaineer. Here he was cared for until his recovery, when he attempted, disguised as a herder, to make his way through the Federal lines. He was successful until he had reached the last picket post, when an inquisitive soldier noticed that his boots were of a kind unusual among the natives, and being pulled off, they revealed his name. The latter was well known, as there had been much speculation regarding his mysterious disappearance from the battlefield, and he was promptly sent as a prisoner to Federal headquarters. Upon his return to the service he was promoted major of the Twentieth battalion, Virginia artillery, and was offered the commission of brigadier-general, which he declined. He subsequently served upon the ordnance bureau at Richmond.

Captain Owington G. Delk, of Smithfield, Va., a veteran of the Third Virginia infantry, was born in Southampton county, August 14, 1838, the son of Josiah D. M. and Emily A. (Harvey) Delk, both natives of the same county. After the father's death, in 1844, the mother with her two children removed to Isle of Wight county, where Captain Delk was reared and educated in the old field schools. At the age of twenty-one he embarked in business as proprietor of a country store, but closed this in the spring of 1861 to enter the Confederate service. He was mustered in at Smithfield, in June, 1861, as second sergeant of a company organized for the heavy artillery, with which he served a month on the Nansemond river and a few months at Fort Boykin, after which the company was transferred to infantry and became Company I of the Third Virginia. Sergeant Delk was detached for service in a signal corps, with which he was connected until a few days after the battle of Williamsburg, when he rejoined his company and was soon promoted second lieutenant, in which rank he participated in the battles of Seven Pines and Second Manassas. He was then promoted captain and, in command of his company, he took part in the subsequent operations of Pickett's division in Virginia, Maryland, Pennsylvania and North Carolina, including the famous charge at Gettysburg. On January 8, 1865, while on duty before Dutch Gap, he was taken with a severe attack of rheumatism which compelled his retirement from the army, and disabled him for a year afterward. Upon his recovery he farmed for two years, and then entered nautical life as manager of a sail packet between Smithfield and Norfolk. Since 1871 he has been connected with the Old Dominion Steamship company, passing through the grades of mate, purser and pilot to that of captain, having held the latter office fifteen years. He is now in charge of the Luray, plying between Smithfield and Norfolk, and is trusted by the company and very popular with the public. Captain Delk was married in December, 1871, to Anna M., daughter of Albert G. and Lavinia (Wheeldon) Spratley, and they have three children: Owington Gordon, Anna Cary, and Emily Wheeldon.

Lewis C. Dey, who, at the beginning of the war of the Confederacy, enlisted as a member of the Norfolk Home Guard, commanded by Captain Warren, was born in Princess Anne county, in 1824, but has resided in Norfolk since 1830. In 1861, soon after the commencement of the war, he was detailed to manufacture uniforms for the Confederate officers and soldiers, and continued this work until after the evacuation of Richmond. His wife, Lucy C., daughter of George Armistead, who was a wealthy and influential planter of Matthews county prior to the war, died in 1895. William Walter Dey, a son of this couple, was born at Norfolk February 28, 1862, and was reared in his native city, completing his education under the supervision of Professor James H. Dillard, now noted as the president of Tulane university, of New Orleans. At seventeen years of age he became connected with the great transportation business of the city as a clerk in the office of the Norfolk & Western railroad company. Subsequently he was engaged with the Old Dominion steamship company for a period of eight years, leaving that employment in 1888, on account of his

election to the office of commissioner of revenue of Norfolk. Taking this office at the age of twenty-six, he was the youngest man who had ever held this position, or in fact any of the municipal offices. He was re-elected in 1892 and again in 1896, and his service has justified the trust reposed in him by the community. He occupies a high position in social and business circles, is a member of the Business Men's association and the Merrimac club, and is a staff officer of the Fourth Virginia regiment. His fraternal connections are with the Odd Fellows, the Masonic order, Knights of Pythias, the Elks, Royal Arcanum, Red Men, Heptasophs, National Union and Modern Woodmen. He was married November 14, 1888, to Janie, daughter of Capt. Henry Whyte, of the Norfolk & Western railroad.

Captain James Woodson Dickerson, of Lynchburg, commander, during the latter part of the war, of the Lynchburg artillery, or Latham's battery, was born at Richmond, Va., in 1837. Removing with his family to Lynchburg, in 1850, he entered the Confederate service in April, 1861, as a corporal of the artillery company under Capt. H. G. Latham. Three months later he was made fourth sergeant, and in the spring of 1862 he was elected first lieutenant. His promotion to captain occurred in November, 1864, and he was in command of the company from that date until the surrender at Appomattox. His military career, which is highly deserving of honorable place among the records of the gallant artillery officers of the army of Northern Virginia, embraces faithful service in a large part of the famous campaigns and battles in which the army participated. Among the engagements in which he served with his guns were First Manassas, Williamsburg and Seven Pines, after which he was disabled for some time by a severe wound received in the latter battle, his right leg being broken by a musket ball, which he still carries. After his recovery he participated in the battles of Fredericksburg and the second and third days at Gettysburg, and was engaged against the enemy while crossing the Potomac on the retreat from Maryland. He was subsequently stationed at Petersburg from September until December, 1863, took part in a reconnoissance toward Suffolk, Norfolk and other points, and, early in 1864 participated in the campaign in North Carolina, fighting at Plymouth, Little Washington and New Bern. Then recalled to the defense of Richmond he fought against Butler's army at Drewry's Bluff and against Grant at Cold Harbor, and again, before Petersburg, was in the fight against Grant on June 15 and 16, 1864. After that date, until the evacuation, he participated in the defense of the Howlett line, during nearly all the time fighting day and night. On the retreat which followed he was actively engaged in holding the Federal army in check, and, participating in the battle of Sailor's Creek, received a flesh wound in the head from a rifle ball. His battery did effective work at Sailor's Creek and, escaping the general disaster, was again in action at Appomattox Station on the Saturday evening before the surrender. Near Oakville the gallant men were compelled to spike and leave their guns. Thence Captain Dickerson went to Lynchburg, by way of Harris' Ferry, and had made his way into North Carolina before hearing of the surrender of the armies of both Lee and Johnston. He spent

several weeks in the mountains of North Carolina and then returned to his home. He soon became engaged in the furniture business, which he carried on until 1887, since when he has managed his farming and other interests. He is an influential citizen, has served ten years on the city council, and is a member of Garland-Rodes camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1873 he was married to Miss Jemmie Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Craig, of Roanoke, and they have six children: William Woodson, Julia E., Yrmyr, James W., Robert, and Margaret V.

Marion Johnson Dimmock, a well-known architect of Richmond and a veteran of Wise's cavalry legion, was born at Portsmouth, Va., in 1842, but, being brought to Richmond in infancy by his parents, he was there reared and educated. He is the son of Gen. Charles H. Dimmock, a native of Massachusetts, who was appointed to the National military academy at West Point from that State, and after graduation served in the United States army under General Scott in the Indian Florida wars. Going to Virginia about 1840 and making his home at Portsmouth, he held the position of commandant of the Public Guard of Virginia when the war broke out. He entered heartily into the part which was enacted by Virginia during the war of the Confederacy and was appointed by Governor Letcher to the rank of brigadier-general and chief of ordnance for the department of Virginia. In this position he rendered efficient service until his death, in the year 1863, at the age of sixty-three years. His son, Marion Johnson Dimmock, entered the Confederate service in April, 1861, as a private in the cavalry of Gen. H. A. Wise's legion, afterward known as the Tenth regiment of Virginia cavalry. He was at once promoted to the rank of adjutant of the regiment, as which he served throughout the war. He participated with honor in the battles of Brandy Station, Gettysburg, Hagerstown, Md. (where his horse was killed under him), Big Sewell Mountain, W. Va., Chancellorsville, Fredericksburg, Spottsylvania Court House and Five Forks, where again his horse was shot under him. With the mass of the cavalry he evaded the surrender at Appomattox and made his way to Johnston's army in North Carolina, with which he surrendered at Greensboro and was paroled at Danville in May, 1865. At the close of his military service, which was characterized throughout by the true gallantry of a Confederate soldier, he returned to Richmond and studied for the profession of architecture, in which he has subsequently had a successful career. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, Confederate Veterans, and of the Association of the army of Northern Virginia.

Lieutenant Henry J. Dobbs, of Amherst, Va., a veteran of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, was born in Norfolk county in 1834. Upon the call to arms he enlisted, April 23, 1861, in a company which was assigned to the Eighteenth Virginia infantry, Col. R. E. Withers, as Company E. Enlisting as a private, he was promoted color sergeant June 27, 1862, and fifteen months after became lieutenant, the rank in which he served until the end of the war. In Cocke's brigade of the army, under Beauregard, he participated in the first battle of Manassas, and in George E. Pickett's brigade he took part in the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Gaines' Mill and Frayser's Farm. He shared

in the work of Pickett's division at Gettysburg, and in the fighting around Richmond and Petersburg he received three wounds, was captured a few days before the Confederate capital was abandoned and soon afterward paroled. Returning to Cumberland, he resumed farming as soon as injuries permitted, and later went to Georgia where he conducted a saw mill for two years. He then made his home at Amherst, and, after farming until 1882, he entered the mercantile business at the town of Amherst. In 1873 he was married to Miss Anna D. Quarles, and they have two children.

Captain Hugh S. Doggett, of Fredericksburg, Va., a venerable veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, is the son of Lemuel Doggett, a soldier of the war of 1812. The latter married Sarah Meredith Doggett in 1810, and three of their children survive: L. B. Doggett, of Chicago, late a private of the Thirtieth Virginia regiment; James M. Doggett, of Spottsylvania county, and Capt. Hugh S. Doggett. The latter was born at Fredericksburg, May 11, 1816, and was reared there and in that vicinity until he was sixteen years old, when he entered upon an apprenticeship. After learning his trade he was thrown out of employment during the financial crisis of 1837, and, failing to find work in Baltimore and other cities, he embarked in the grocery trade, which has been his steady occupation during the past sixty years, except when in the Confederate service. November 28, 1844, he was married to Sarah A., daughter of William Burress, of Caroline county. From his eighteenth year Captain Doggett was a member of the volunteer company at Fredericksburg, which became Company B of the Thirtieth regiment, and with it he went into service immediately upon the secession of Virginia, as first lieutenant. On the day following the one on which the State went out of the Union he was in battle at Aquia Creek with Federal gunboats, and his next battle was at the rout of McDowell's army at Manassas, July 21, 1861. His regiment was then ordered to Goldsboro, N. C., where he was on duty until the spring of 1862. At the reorganization, in May, he was elected captain of Company B, and he commanded his company throughout the Seven Days' battles and the previous fighting about Richmond, at Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, and all other battles in which his company participated. At Sharpsburg, he led twenty-five men into the fight and brought back but five, all the others being killed or wounded. He himself received three painful wounds, but, after a furlough of thirty days, resumed command. On the 4th of April, 1864, on account of his advanced age, he was detailed as post-commandant and provost-marshal at Fredericksburg, but still retained his captaincy, First Lieut. James Knox commanding the company during the remainder of its service. Since the war Captain Doggett has been honored by a magistracy and a seat in the city council for many years, and has twice held the office of mayor. His wife died January 13, 1885, and he has but one child living, Mrs. Fannie A. Scott; but through her this worthy Confederate veteran has seven grandchildren and one great-grandchild.

J. A. Dooley, of Bedford City, served during the Confederate war among the artillerymen who manned the heavy guns in the

fortifications about Richmond, and though not often called upon to face the enemy, except toward the last, and altogether without experience in those adventurous marches, raids and hand-to-hand fighting, which made other commands famous, stood guard faithfully and bravely at the Confederate capital, doing their whole duty, and playing a necessary and important part in the war for Southern independence. He was born in Bedford county, Va., in 1829, was reared there, and remained in his native county until he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Ninth battery, heavy artillery, Capt. A. G. Williams commanding. He served four years in the defense of Richmond and took an active part in the battle of Chaffin's Farm, during the aggressive operations of the Federal army north of the James river, in the fall of 1864. He went through this service without wounds, and, though sometimes ill, never was absent from his post or in hospital. At the evacuation of Richmond he was taken prisoner and afterward confined at Point Lookout until June, 1865, long after the close of the military operations in Virginia. Since the war he has been a resident of Bedford City and has mainly been engaged in mercantile business, in which he has been quite successful. In 1861 he was married to Miss Saluda E. Juter, and they have eight children: Albert, Waverley, Frederick, Will, Lulu, Lelia, Lillie and Addison.

James H. Douthat, of Pulaski City, Va., was devoted to the Confederate service during the four years' war, except when disabled by illness. He was born in Pulaski county April 3, 1838, and enlisted in April, 1861, as a private, in Captain Francis' company of the Forty-fifth regiment. After the first year's service, for which he was enlisted, he was retained by Montgomery county for the manufacture of shoes for the soldiers of that county, an occupation for which he was prepared by previous training. He continued in this work through the summer of 1862, and then going to Richmond, became a member of Captain Stinson's company of infantry, First battalion of reserves, and meanwhile engaged in the manufacture of shoes for the army until he had got out over two thousand pairs. In July, 1863, he was taken with typhoid fever and was disabled in consequence until October, 1864, when he reported for duty at Dublin and was enlisted in Swann's battalion of cavalry. He furnished his own mount and served faithfully in southwest Virginia during the winter of 1864-65, and later in West Virginia, attached to the command of Col. Vincent A. Witcher, under General Breckinridge. He continued with this command through the spring of 1865 and, at the time of the surrender, April 9th, was on his way to join General Lee's army when he was informed of its capitulation. He surrendered at Wytheville with Major McDonald. Since the close of hostilities he has been engaged in the shoe business with much success in the counties of Wythe and Pulaski. He was married in 1856 to Miss R. J. Windle, who died May 26, 1891, leaving nine children: Edward B., Clementine, William H., Cleann, Margaret, John D., Rosalie, Ann Pearl and Charles B.

Richard Devereux Doyle, a prominent member of the legal profession of Norfolk, Va., is a representative of a patriotic family of southeastern Virginia which contributed freely to the Confederate cause. His father, John Edward Doyle, born in county Wexford,

Ireland, in 1813, was the son of Thomas Doyle, a merchant of county Wexford, a namesake and cousin of Sir Richard Devereux, the Irish philanthropist, who was made a knight of St. Gregory by Pope Pius IX., and belonged to a family distinguished in English and Irish annals since the Norman conquest. He received a classical education in his native land, and coming to America at the age of eighteen years, made his home at Norfolk, engaged in business as a merchant and manufacturer, and married the daughter of Edward Fitzgerald, who held the position of purser in the United States navy. John Edward Doyle entered heartily into the movement for Southern independence and was mainly instrumental in the organization of a company of cavalry known as the Sewell's Point cavalry, and also as Doyle's cavalry, he having been elected captain of the command. With this company he was engaged in guarding the beach from Sewell's Point to Ocean View, during 1861. At the end of his year's service, he resigned on account of advanced age, and the company was assigned to the Second Virginia cavalry. He survived until 1877. His eldest son, Walter Heron, who bore the name of a great-uncle who for half a century was identified with the history of Norfolk as a business man of great wealth and a leader in social life, entered the service in April, 1861, at the age of sixteen years, as a private in the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, which was attached to Garnett's battalion in 1863. He participated in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Turkey Ridge, and the fighting on the Petersburg lines, finally being paroled at Appomattox with the rank of sergeant. Another son, John Edward, Jr., when under eighteen years of age, accompanied by his cousin, Thomas H. Doyle, made his way through the Federal lines about Norfolk, and served with the Thirtieth Virginia cavalry, until captured near Appomattox. A brother of the senior Doyle, Walter J. Doyle, served as captain and quartermaster in the Forty-first Virginia regiment, under Colonel (afterward General) Chambliss, to the end of the war. William B. Fitzgerald, a brother of Mrs. Doyle, resigned a lieutenancy in the United States navy and received the same rank in the Confederate States navy, and died in the service. Innumerable cousins and connections of the Doyle family served in the Confederate army, among them Maj. Joseph Van Holt Nash of Atlanta, Ga. Richard Devereux Doyle, sixth of the twelve children of Captain Doyle, was educated in the schools of Norfolk, at Georgetown college, and in the academic and law departments of the university of Virginia, being graduated by the latter in 1871. For the practice of his profession he removed to Indianapolis, and there attained such standing that in 1874, through the influence of the late Vice-President Thomas A. Hendricks and others he was appointed assistant attorney-general of Indiana, a position he held for two years. Returning to Norfolk in 1877 he continued the practice of law, in which he has met with marked success. Here as in Indiana he has represented some very important interests before the supreme courts, and with such ability that the result of but one of these actions has been adverse to his clients. He has served the city one term as corporation attorney. In political affairs he has been a prominent worker for the Democratic party, and has

made extensive contributions in the form of newspaper and pamphlet publications to the literature of politics and political economy. One of his latest publications was an article on the Venezuelan question in the Virginia Law Register. Upon the rostrum also he has been an indefatigable worker. In 1896 he was a delegate to the National convention at Indianapolis, and subsequently was a prominent advocate throughout the State of the ticket there nominated. In the field of general literature he has published some poems that have met with popular approval, and has for several years past made a special study of Napoleon and his times, having in preparation a historical and critical work on the campaign and battle of Waterloo. He is member of the State bar association and the Merrimac club.

John Waters Drew, of Washington, D. C., had the privilege, during the war of the Confederacy, to serve as a gallant cavalry officer in the army of Northern Virginia. He entered the service in May, 1861, joining the volunteer organization formed at Alexandria, Va., and called the Beauregard Rifles. This company was mustered in as Company F of the First Virginia regiment, and he served with this command until the reorganization of the army about a year later, when he was commissioned captain of Company F, Twenty-third Virginia cavalry, a rank he held during the remainder of his army life. Captain Drew participated in the campaign before Richmond, which included the Seven Days' battles against McClellan; and in the valley of Virginia, in the commands of Breckinridge and Imboden, he operated against Sigel in the spring of 1864, participating in the fighting at New Market, where a signal victory was won. Under the command of Early, in the following summer, he took part in the successful actions at Lynchburg and Salem, Va., at the latter engagement having his horse killed under him. After the march to Washington he again fought under General Early at the battle of Winchester, on September 19, 1864, where the army suffered defeat and he with others fell into the hands of Sheridan. With the other prisoners of that day he was conveyed to Fort Delaware and there confined as a prisoner of war until the close of the war. This long imprisonment was ended by his parole in the spring of 1865, when he immediately returned to Washington, his native city. Captain Drew was born at Washington in 1841 and, previous to the outbreak of war, was educated at the old Columbia college now known as the Columbian university. Here, taking up again the duties of civil life, he soon became proficient in the calling of a pharmacist and embarked in the business of a druggist, which has since been his occupation. He still endeavors to maintain his comradeship with the survivors of the Confederate armies and is an active member of the Washington association of Confederate veterans.

E. J. Driver, of Nansemond county, Va., a descendant of a gallant colonel of the war of the Revolution, served in the army of Northern Virginia as a soldier in the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry. He shared the service of this regiment throughout the war, fighting with Chambliss and W. H. F. Lee in many of the famous battles of 1861 to 1865. In the spirited cavalry encounter at Middleburg he was twice wounded. His son, Wilson E. Driver, M. D., prominent in the medical profession at Norfolk, was born in Nansemond coun-

ty, October 16, 1870, and was graduated as doctor of medicine in the class of 1892 at the university of Maryland, during his course of study also having the advantages of instruction from the noted specialist, Julian J. Chisholm, of Baltimore, and practice in the hospital of the university and as resident surgeon at the Presbyterian hospital of Baltimore. In 1894 he made his home at Norfolk, and devoted himself to the treatment of diseases of the eye, ear, throat and nose. In this department of medicine he has already shown a degree of skill and with such successful results that his practice has gained extensive proportions. He has contributed several papers to medical literature and during the session of 1897 of the Western Ophthalmological, Otological, Laryngological and Rhinological association at St. Louis read a paper entitled "A General Consideration of the Etiology and Treatment of Choroiditis Non-Suppurative," which was received with much favor. He is a member of Norfolk medical society, the State medical society, and honorary member of the Western medical association, and is surgeon to the Norfolk & Western and Seaboard Air Line railroads, St. Vincent hospital, and the Retreat for the Sick. In 1896 Dr. Driver was married to Lucy Waring Baylor, daughter of Robert P. Baylor, who also served in the Thirtieth Virginia cavalry from Essex county, and granddaughter of the late Dr. Robert B. Tunstall, of Norfolk.

William R. Drury, of Norfolk, who rendered valuable service with the artillery and navy of the Confederate States, was born at Portsmouth, July 27, 1838. Before he had reached the age of two years he was orphaned by the death of his father, William R. Drury, a native of Scotland, and this sad event was soon followed by the death of his mother, whose maiden name was Sarah Farant. Thus deprived of parents in infancy he was reared by his guardian, George W. Farant, his mother's brother, at that time a prominent merchant tailor for the navy. He was educated in the Norfolk military academy and at the Abbott institute of Georgetown, D. C., until the age of eighteen years, when he began an apprenticeship as a machinist and engineer. At the outbreak of the war he enlisted in the United artillery of Norfolk, under command of Capt. Thomas Kevill, and served with that command at Fort Norfolk until the evacuation, May 10, 1862. He then joined in the movement to Petersburg, whence he was sent to destroy the Zuni bridge over the Blackwater, in order to prevent the crossing of that stream by the Federals. The company was ordered to the front and given charge of batteries Nos. 1 and 2, stationed on the farm of the noted James Minor Botts. During the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond he served with the famous ironclad railroad battery, and fought in the battle of Drewry's Bluff. Subsequently he was detailed by President Davis as an engineer in the navy, and served first in that capacity on the ironclad North Carolina, at Wilmington, under Captain Poindexter. After a brief assignment to the Raleigh, under Commodore Lynch, he returned to the first named vessel, and was detailed with Captain McCarrick on the tug Equator for the rescue of the Eugenia, ashore near Fort Fisher. He was on the Raleigh when that vessel went to pieces, and next held the position of chief engineer on the flagship Cape Fear. Subsequently he was on duty as chief engineer on the gunboat Pee Dee, on the Pee Dee river, South Carolina, and as chief engineer of the

navy yard at Pee Dee bridge, where he was serving when Sherman's army reached that post. He took part in the destruction of the yard, and escaping capture, made his way to a point near Georgetown, S. C., where he and his companions, Cephas Gilbert and Junius Hanks, put themselves under the protection of Major Buck, who advised them to surrender to the Federal navy on the Blackwater, the army of Northern Virginia having already been surrendered. They accordingly gave themselves up to a Federal gunboat, and, being soon paroled, Drury and Hanks made their way to Charleston and Hilton Head, where they were given transportation to New York. Returning to Norfolk, Mr. Drury has since then given his attention to the civil occupations of merchandising, marine engineering, and the practice of law, winning an influential place in the community. He was married July 27, 1860, to Catherine Ruth Braithwaite, and they have seven children living: William T., Talbot L., Elizabeth R., Anna R., Roberta, Azula V. and Ruth.

Captain Robert R. Duncan, of Culpeper, a gallant officer of the Sixth Virginia cavalry regiment, is a native of Rappahannock county, born April 23, 1833. He is one of three brothers who served in the Confederate cause. One, James H. Duncan, of the Sixteenth Mississippi regiment, held the rank of lieutenant-colonel at the close of the war, and the other, B. F. Duncan, served in the same company with his brother Robert, until he fell in battle at Cedarville, near Front Royal, in May, 1862. Captain Duncan was mainly reared and educated in Culpeper county. He began his active career by making the journey to California during the excitement following the discovery of gold, whence, two years later, he returned to Mississippi and thence to Virginia. Soon afterward he went to Kansas and was there during the border warfare in which John Brown was distinguished; and at the outbreak of the war in 1861 he joined the Confederate forces and participated in the battle of Carthage, Mo. Then returning to his native State, he enlisted as a private in Company B of the Sixth Virginia cavalry. At the reorganization of the army he was elected second lieutenant, was soon promoted first lieutenant, and in the last year of the war was made captain of his company. He participated in nearly all the important engagements of his regiment, and was frequently entrusted with separate command of scouting expeditions, in which he discharged important duties with a skill and daring that elicited the warm commendation of his superior officers. During the Pennsylvania campaign his regiment had a spirited and successful fight with the Sixth United States regular cavalry at Fairfield. In his report Major Flournoy, commanding, wrote: "Lieutenant Duncan, Company B, was conspicuous for his daring, having sabered five Yankees, running his saber entirely through one and twisting him from his horse." He did not himself escape injury, being wounded in the hand at Second Manassas, in the breast at Trevilian's, and at Tom's Brook receiving a bullet wound in the left arm which necessitated its amputation. He was also captured at the latter fight and was subsequently held at Fort Delaware until a short time before the surrender at Appomattox. At the return of peace he disposed of his property in Kansas and made his permanent home at Culpeper, where he has ever since been engaged in farming. He maintains a membership in A. P. Hill camp at Culpeper. In 1868 he was

married to Miss Lucy C. Browning, and they have four children: Maude A., Mildred R., Jay F., and Lucy Russell. By a previous marriage he has three children: Blanche A., Ada K., and Robert L.

J. Thomas Dunn, adjutant of the Stonewall camp of Confederate Veterans at Portsmouth, and the youngest surviving Confederate soldier at that city, was born there on October 1, 1846. At fifteen years of age he left the public school to enter the Confederate service and was twice refused, on account of his youth, before he became a member, on March 4, 1862, of the Norfolk County Rifle Patriots, which was first organized in 1860 and did splendid service throughout the war. Young Dunn accompanied the company from the navy yard to Sewell's Point, in March, 1862, where it became Company F of the Forty-first Virginia regiment, and subsequently was assigned to Mahone's brigade. During his stay at Sewell's Point he witnessed the famous conflict between the Virginia and Monitor, but was not engaged until his regiment was thrown into the fight at Seven Pines, where Company F was particularly distinguished for steadiness and bravery. His military record, thus begun, subsequently included the battles of the Seven Days before Richmond, Malvern Hill, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Spottsylvania Court House and the Wilderness, Cold Harbor, the Crater and Yellow Tavern. He was twice captured, first at Strasburg, Va., but immediately paroled, and at Yellow Tavern, August 19, 1864, he was again taken by the enemy and this time held at Point Lookout until May, 1865. At the close of the war, in which he had performed the part of a veteran, he was but eighteen and a half years of age. He returned to his home without education in the schools, but with an excellent diploma from the army of Northern Virginia, and, though without money or a trade he has subsequently made a successful career. Perfecting himself as a machinist, he has been occupied in that direction with but little interruption, having been for twenty-three years connected with the shops of the Seaboard Air Line railroad at Portsmouth, for a number of years holding the position of foreman. In municipal affairs and social life he is active and influential. He has served one term in the city council, three terms on the school board and three terms as registrar of the Third ward. He is a charter member of Stonewall camp, of which he has been adjutant six years, and is treasurer and trustee; is trustee and treasurer of the I. O. O. F. lodge, and led in the organization of Seaside lodge, Knights of Pythias. He is also a member of International association of machinists. January 29, 1868, he was married to Mary E., daughter of Charles Ballentine, and they have four children living: William H., who has served seven years in company E, Second battalion; Maria E., wife of G. Hope Tonkin; Sarah C., wife of Kemper Hankins, and Ernest C. Mr. Dunn is a son of Thomas G. and Maria (Lloyd) Dunn, both natives of Baltimore. His father was a seaman and engineer of Scotch descent.

William Logan Dunn, M. D., of Glade Spring, Va., was born near that town, September 15, 1839, the son of Dr. Samuel Dunn, a prominent physician in that region of Virginia for sixty years, whose wife was a granddaughter of Maj. William Edmondson, who commanded the regiment from Washington county in the Revolutionary battle of King's Mountain. The paternal grandfather of Dr. Dunn was Lieut. William Dunn, an officer of Gen. Anthony

Wayne's brigade. Dr. Dunn was educated at Emory-Henry college, and was attending lectures at Jefferson medical college, Philadelphia, when the war opened. He was a member of the Washington Mounted Rifles, organized in 1860, and was enlisted under Capt. William E. Jones, afterward general, in April, 1861. The company became Company D of the First Virginia cavalry, Col. J. E. B. Stuart. Joining Johnston's army, he served in all the skirmishes which covered the march to Manassas, and on reaching that battle-field he was ordered to report for duty on the medical staff. But riding up to the front to observe the fight, he was ordered by General Beauregard to report the condition at Blackburn's ford, and was then sent by General Johnston to observe the situation lower down Bull run. While on this duty he witnessed the attack of Gen. Kirby Smith upon the Federal flank. Then riding to the front with Stuart he carried dispatches to Johnston that night announcing the demoralization of McDowell's army. Afterward he advanced as a scout to within sight of the Federal capital, at Falls church, Munson's hill and Bailey's Cross roads. He held his post as a picket when his company was ambuscaded at Lunensville and was one of the boys in gray from which Fitz John Porter made a narrow escape at Flint Hill. W. E. Jones at this time became colonel of the regiment, and being determined to feel the enemy in his front, captured a body of their pickets. When Johnston withdrew from Manassas to the peninsula, the cavalry halted at the Rappahannock and the First cavalry recrossed and in a dash at the enemy captured a considerable number of the Eighth Illinois cavalry, after which they left Dunn and his comrade, Charles Delaney, to scout on the enemy's side, a duty which they performed so well as to win official mention by General Stuart. Meantime Dr. Dunn had also gained some fame in treatment of camp fever, and at the expiration of his year's enlistment he was transferred to the medical department and stationed at general hospital No. 4, to study surgery under Dr. J. B. Read. He graduated in April, 1863, and after declining several requests of infantry colonels for his service, yielded to the invitation of Colonel Mosby in July, and joined his battalion with the rank of assistant surgeon. A few days later he gave surgical attention to Mosby, who was wounded at Gooden's Tavern, and brought him safely back to the Confederate lines, though several Federal troops were hunting for him. Twice afterward he rendered medical service to the gallant partisan leader. But his professional duties did not prevent his participating in nearly all the fights of the Forty-third battalion. He was with Major Richards late in the fall of 1864 when nine of Mosby's men brought out twenty-seven Michigan cavalymen, including Captain Helbner, and, as several of the captives were Masons, the doctor persuaded Major Richards to have them sent direct to Richmond and not to Mosby's headquarters, some prisoners having been sent out before Captain Helbner was captured. On September 3, 1864, he was with Mosby near Halltown, and he and Flynn were sent to capture a train of ambulances, which they left unmolested on account of the wounded men they carried. The same men, with a comrade, a mile below, created a stampede in a Federal command, captured a Federal bandwagon and band and started for the Shenandoah with it, but were pursued by a squadron of the enemy. Dr. Dunn and Flynn halted to fight

them in order to give Mohler a chance to escape. Mohler disguised himself and deceived the enemy by a report that the woods were full of Confederates in the direction they were going. In February, 1865, Dunn followed Colonel Chapman to the northern neck of Virginia, while there was promoted surgeon and, on account of his valuable service, was ordered by the war department to keep Privates Wallace, Jett, and "Commodore" Payne, and remain in that region. After receiving news of the fall of Richmond, he, in company with Lieutenant Murphy, rejoined Mosby in time to be at the disbandment at Salem, Fauquier county, April 21, 1865. Since the war Surgeon Dunn has been engaged very successfully in the medical practice at Glade Spring. He treasures a number of interesting mementoes of his service, among which are the instruments he used in extracting a ball from Colonel Mosby, those used in dressing the wounds of Colonel Turney, Colonel George and Major Buchanan, and documents bearing the signatures of Stonewall Jackson and Jefferson Davis.

William Purnell Dupuy, a prominent citizen of Roanoke, Va., ex-member of the legislature and postmaster, served gallantly in his youth as a trooper in the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Charlotte county in 1845, and, when five years of age, was taken by his parents, on their removal, to Prince Edward county, where he was reared and prepared for Hampden-Sidney college. He left that institution in March, 1863, for a career under the gallant "Jeb" Stuart. Entering the service as a private in the Third regiment of cavalry, he participated in the fights at Brandy Station, the raid around Meade's army into Pennsylvania, the third day at Gettysburg, Yellow Tavern, the engagements about Fredericksburg, in one of which, in Fauquier county, October 9, 1863, he was shot in the head, causing three months' disability; all the cavalry engagements with Grant's army in the spring of 1864, two battles at Winchester, the affair at Tom's Brook, October 9, 1864, when he was again disabled, this time for two months, by a gunshot wound in the shoulder; the fight at Port Republic, Rosser's raid to Beverly, W. Va., Five Forks, and the fighting on the retreat to Appomattox, including Sailor's Creek. At the time of the surrender he was half way between the Appomattox depot and Court House, and was paroled at Farmville, in June, 1865. This gallant career was closed in his twentieth year. He taught school during the year following the close of hostilities, and then, his father having died, he occupied the home farm and managed it until 1890, when he made his residence at Roanoke, having previously engaged in the real estate business at that city. While a resident of Prince Edward county, he was elected, in the fall of 1885, to the State legislature and was subsequently twice re-elected, serving with honor and influence. As a citizen of Roanoke he is held in like esteem, and in 1894 he was appointed postmaster of the city.

Captain H. H. Dyer, second lieutenant-commander of Cabell-Graves camp, Danville, Va., was born in Henry county, December 16, 1833, the son of Hugh N. and Ruth A. (Draper) Dyer, of that county, of which the father was a prominent official. Captain Dyer was reared upon a farm, became engaged in mercantile pursuits, and had served as captain and major in the State militia prior to the

beginning of war in 1861. He then enlisted, June 1, 1861, as a private in the Henry Guards, which became Company H, Twenty-fourth Virginia infantry, and the next fall was elected captain. Declining re-election on account of failing health, in the spring of 1862 he was succeeded by Capt. O. M. Barrow, but he returned to the company as a private not long afterward and fought at the battle of Second Manassas, where he was wounded in the left side, compelling his remaining at home until the following November. Again joining the company, he was promoted first lieutenant, and soon after the battle of Gettysburg, which he witnessed but could not take part in on account of illness, he was commissioned captain of Company B of his regiment. In these various ranks he fought in the battles of Blackburn's Ford, first and second Manassas, Williamsburg, Fredericksburg, Cold Harbor, Drewry's Bluff, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. In the latter disastrous affair he was captured, and from then until June 18th was a prisoner of war, mainly at Johnson's island. In the fall of 1865 he visited Missouri and Texas, but returned to Henry county a year later and embarked in business. Since 1869 he has been prominent in business affairs at Danville.

Charles Peter Eanes, of Petersburg, a Confederate who had an interesting career in both army and navy, was born at Petersburg in 1843, the son of German Eanes, a farmer of Chesterfield county, who died previous to 1861. In May, 1861, being then seventeen years of age, Mr. Eanes enlisted in the Archer Rifles, a volunteer company, afterward assigned as Company K to the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry. His first service was at Fort Powhatan, on the James, after which he was stationed at Craney island, near Norfolk. Early in 1862 he enlisted in the Confederate navy and was assigned to one of the vessels at Roanoke island under Commodore Lynch. Here he took part in the gallant defense made against Burnside's expedition, until his ship was sunk in the first day's engagement, when the crew was transferred to a schooner, mounting five guns, in which they sailed up the Pasquotank river to Elizabeth City and made a second stand under the guns of a Confederate battery. Here again they were crushed by superior strength, and Eanes and his comrades, after they had abandoned their vessel, made their way through the Dismal Swamp, coming out at Camden Court House, and thence making their way to South Mills, took a steamer for Norfolk. After a short visit to his home, Mr. Eanes returned to Norfolk and was one of the crew of the Virginia in her first trip down Hampton Roads, in which the Cumberland was sunk and the Congress captured. He was then sent to the naval hospital, but, returning to the Virginia, he was upon her in the last trip, under fire of Fortress Monroe and the Rip-rap batteries, when she sought to draw the Monitor into another engagement, but failed on account of the retreat of the Federal ironclad. He was one of the crew, when it was determined to lighten the Virginia so that she might steam up the James river, that worked all night for that purpose, and he finally left the famous ironclad when she was blown up by her own men. After this event Mr. Eanes returned to his old infantry command and participated in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Chancellorsville and other important engagements, though during a considerable part of the

time disabled by severe illness. In 1864, upon the requisition of the president of the Petersburg railroad, he was assigned to service upon that road, in which he remained until the close of hostilities. Since then he has been for many years in charge of the planing mill and box factory at that city and for two years in charge of the bridge force on the Weldon railroad. In 1894 he was elected commissioner of revenue for the city. He is a valued member of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans.

Gabriel Edmonston, a citizen of Washington who rendered valuable service to the Confederate States, was born in that city in the year 1839. Early in April, 1861, he entered the Confederate service, as a member of an independent command, and participated in the Peninsular campaign with this organization, taking part in the engagement with gunboats at Drewry's Bluff, the battle of Seven Pines, and skirmishing on the river with Federal gunboats. In June he enlisted in Company F of the Forty-first Virginia regiment and fought at Malvern Hill, after which he was promoted color bearer. He was with his command and participated in the battles of Second Manassas, South Mountain and Sharpsburg. At the latter engagement he was wounded, and, after lying in field hospital about ten days, was sent to Richmond, where he remained, disabled, until the spring of 1863. He was then pronounced unfit for infantry service and he made an effort to join the cavalry, but, failing to obtain a horse, entered the naval service on Chesapeake bay, under the command of Col. Edwin G. Lee and, subsequently, of John V. Bell. He continued in this service, operating in open boats in expeditions against the Federal commerce, until he was captured and sent in irons to Fort McHenry. After he had been kept there in close confinement for two weeks, he succeeded in making his escape and, crossing the Potomac at the mouth of Monocacy creek, reported to Lieutenant Parker. By the latter he was sent to Richmond for naval supplies and while there he entered the secret service of the government. While on this duty he was again captured in the fall of 1864, in Fauquier county, and taken in irons to Alexandria and thence to Old Capitol prison and later to Elmira, N. Y., where he was held until March, 1865, when he was exchanged, but, being sick at the time, did not recover until the war had ceased. He returned to Washington in September, 1865, and resumed his occupation as a carpenter. He has been very prominent in the organization of labor in the District of Columbia, was the first president of the United Brotherhood of Carpenters and Joiners, in 1881, is prominent in the Carpenters' national organization, representing it in the congresses of the American Federation of Labor during eight years, and in the federation has held every office except that of president. He is also a Royal Arch Mason and a member of the Washington Association of Confederate Veterans. In April, 1865, he was married in Fauquier county, Va., to Mary A. Follin, who died in 1869, leaving one daughter, now the wife of William A. Miller, of Washington. In 1875 he was married to Mary I. Barker, daughter of James W. Barker, of Virginia.

Oney H. Edwards, of Portsmouth, a survivor of the gallant organization known as Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, was born at Portsmouth, June 6, 1827. His ancestors were brave and energetic men, both his father, Amos Ed-

wards, and his grandfather, Oney Edwards, having served in the war of 1812. His father, a business man of Portsmouth, who survived until 1864, married Mary A., daughter of Capt. James Waughop, of the merchant marine. At the outbreak of the Confederate war Mr. Edwards held the office of lumber inspector for the city, and was a member of the Portsmouth Rifle company, with which he went into active service on April 20, 1861. He served several months at Pig Point, and took part in the artillery fight with the Federal vessel, the *Harriet Lane*. In April, 1862, he marched with his company to South Mills to reinforce three regiments of Georgia troops under Colonel Wright, and subsequently moved to Petersburg and Richmond and participated in the battle of Seven Pines. He was frequently in action during the Seven Days' campaign and shared the gallant and fatal assault upon the Federal works at Malvern Hill. Advancing northward with Longstreet's corps, he was in the battles of Warrenton Springs, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, and in December following was in the Fredericksburg fight. Remaining at Fredericksburg until the spring of 1863 he then participated in the Suffolk campaign of Longstreet's corps, marching through rain and snow. From Hanover Junction he marched with his division through Maryland and on the afternoon of July 2d, camped within two miles of the field of Gettysburg. On the afternoon of the next day he took part in the famous assault upon Cemetery hill, after lying five hours under an intense sun and exposed to the enemy's artillery fire. He was one of the six men of his company left to report for duty on the following day. On the retreat he guarded the last body of Federal prisoners brought across the Potomac. During the fall and winter he was with his command at Petersburg and at Kinston, N. C., and took part in General Pickett's expedition against New Bern. Thence called to the defense of Petersburg, Corporal Edwards fought in May, 1864, at Chester Station and Drewry's Bluff against Butler, in the latter battle receiving severe wounds. Subsequently he was on duty as quartermaster-sergeant under Major Myers at Salisbury prison, and on guard at Yadkin river bridge until his petition to return to the front was granted. He rejoined his command on the Bermuda Hundred line in November, 1864, but was soon afterward sent to the field infirmary, was examined and retired, and in February was transferred to Charlotte, N. C. He was paroled with Johnston's army, and then returned to Portsmouth, which has since been his home. Under the first administration of Mr. Cleveland he held the office of lumber inspector at the navy yard. He is highly regarded by his comrades and maintains a membership in Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1862 he was married to Elizabeth A. Brittingham and they have three children: Vara, Lizzie and Newton.

Captain Oscar Edmonds Edwards, of Norfolk, president of the Virginia Pilot association, is a son of Maj. Oscar Edmonds Edwards, seaman, soldier and merchant, who was prominent in the earlier days of that Virginia port. The latter was born in Surry county, Va., in 1807. At the age of sixteen he was appointed midshipman in the United States navy, but, not fancying the position, he resigned and took ship for New Orleans, where, on learning of the death of his father, he bound himself to the captain as an ap-

prentice. This officer took great interest in the boy and gave him rapid promotion upon the *Tiger*, so that, when he died at Liverpool, Edwards was mate of the vessel, though only twenty years of age, and stepped at once into practical command of the ship as well as succeeding by will to the worldly possessions of the captain. After some years he returned to Norfolk and was very successful as a merchant. When troops were first raised for the Mexican war, he organized a company at Norfolk, which was not accepted, as Virginia's quota (one regiment) was already filled. Nevertheless he maintained the organization one year at his personal expense. In 1847 he was appointed captain of Company B, First regiment of U.S. Voltigeurs, and with his men joined General Scott at Vera Cruz. From there to the City of Mexico he served in every battle, receiving the brevet of major at the field of Churubusco. After his return to Norfolk the gold excitement led him to sail for California by way of the straits of Magellan, but, three days after his arrival at San Francisco, death terminated his adventurous and promising career at the age of forty-two years. While Major Edwards and wife were temporarily in Massachusetts, September 16, 1836, their son Oscar was born. A few weeks later he was brought to Norfolk, which has since been his home. After serving an apprenticeship under the pilot laws of the State, he was commissioned as a pilot at twenty years of age. In this service he remained until April, 1861, when he entered the Confederate service and was assigned to the signal service as officer in charge at Sandy Point, Va. Next month he was transferred to the navy and commissioned by Governor Letcher as lieutenant of the privateer *Florida*, upon which he cruised out of Hatteras inlet and captured several prizes, but was finally chased ashore by a United States man-of-war. The boat was burned to keep her from the enemy. Edwards was then promoted master in the Confederate navy and stationed at Glass Island navy yard, on the York river, until that place was evacuated, when he was ordered to the gunboat *Teaser*, under Capt. Hunter Davidson. In July, 1863, he resigned from the navy to accept position as one of the four special messengers of General Gorgas, chief of ordnance, as which he rendered important and valuable service until he surrendered under the capitulation of Gen. R. E. Lee. Then, returning to Norfolk, he resumed his profession as pilot, becoming in 1870 president of the Virginia pilot association. His retention in that position until the present time is an evidence of the esteem in which he is held by his fellows in that profession. Captain Edwards was married in 1868 to Miss Sarah A. Baker, daughter of John Baker, formerly State pilot of Virginia, who died at the early age of twenty-eight years. Their home is blessed with four children. Captain Edwards maintains membership in several fraternal orders and is a comrade of Pickett-Buchanan camp.

Walter A. Edwards, of Norfolk, now holding a place of well-earned prominence in the journalism of southeastern Virginia, was born in Norfolk, October 27, 1842. His gallant record in the army of Northern Virginia may be in part due to an inheritance of soldierly qualities from his father, O. E. Edwards, who led a company of voltigeurs from Norfolk, under General Scott, in the Mexican war, was promoted brevet major for meritorious service at the storming of Chapultepec, and subsequently becoming one of the "argonauts

of 1849," died in California in the year 1851. His wife was Mary A. Jones, a native of Massachusetts, who died in 1860. Major Edwards was born in Surry county, Va., where his family had resided since early colonial days. He was direct descendant of William Edwards, who with his brothers, John and Henry, came from England and went into possession of a large tract of land opposite Jamestown, by grant from the London company. Walter A. Edwards, orphaned at an early age, found employment at the age of ten years in the office of the Southern Argus newspaper at Norfolk, and was there occupied as a printer until the spring of 1861, when with other patriotic youth of Norfolk he was eager to enter the service of the State. He became a private in the Independent Grays, afterward mustered in as Company H of the Sixth Virginia regiment of infantry, and becoming part of the famous brigade of Gen. William Mahone, the first colonel of the regiment. During most of his service, Edwards held the rank of orderly-sergeant of his company. He participated in all the battles of the army of Northern Virginia, excepting those of Chancellorsville, when he was disabled from duty, and the affair of the "Crater" when he was absent upon a well-deserved furlough. He took part in the battle of Drewry's Bluff, the Seven Days' fight before Richmond, and at Malvern Hill, then in the northward operations, fighting at Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Sharpsburg, Bristoe Station, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg and Falling Waters. In the campaign of 1864 he fought from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor and subsequently in the engagements about Petersburg. At the "Crater", when he was absent as has been stated, his company was almost annihilated. At Hatcher's Run and Burgess' Mill he took part, and in February, 1865, served with his division upon the Appomattox line. After the evacuation of Richmond he was in action at Jetersville, and on April 7th took part in the affair near Farmville, in Prince Edward county, where he was captured. The surrender of Lee immediately following, he was paroled at Burkeville, April 12th, but on returning to Norfolk was put under guard on account of the excitement attending the assassination of President Lincoln. He was released, and returned to civil life, April 19, the fourth anniversary of his enlistment. He then resumed his former employment, soon becoming a foreman, and so was engaged until in 1876 he formed a partnership with Col. J. Richard Lewellen (who afterward withdrew) and Joseph G. Fiveash, and established the Evening Public Ledger, which has steadily grown in circulation and influence until it now ranks as one of the best daily papers of Norfolk. He has also served the community in an official capacity as commissioner of the fire department, member of the city council, and representative in the State legislature. He is now a member of the board of visitors of William and Mary college. Mr. Edwards is prominently connected with various fraternal organizations, being past commander, with rank of colonel, of the Pickett-Buchanan camp, U. C. V., and having received many honors from the orders of Masons, Knights Templars, Knights of Pythias, Improved Order of Red Men, and the Royal Arcanum.

W. E. Edwards, D. D., a chaplain of the Confederate army, now conspicuous in the ministry of the Methodist church, was born in Prince Edward county, Va., in 1842. In his professional work he continues the career of his father, the Rev. John E. Edwards, D. D.,

who was one of the leading ministers of the Virginia conference up to the time of his decease in 1891. The wife of the latter was Elizabeth A., daughter of Col. John Clark, of Prince George county, an officer in the war of 1812, and a man of considerable wealth. W. E. Edwards was graduated at Randolph-Macon college in 1862, and soon afterward entered the Virginia conference and accepted an assignment to a nominal charge with the intention of serving as a chaplain in the Confederate army. Receiving a commission in this capacity, he was assigned in June, 1863, to the military post at Drewry's bluff, that important station on the James river between Richmond and Petersburg, which, on so many occasions during the war, proved an immovable rock in the way of the advancing Federals. Here he served with the troops during the remainder of the period of Confederate occupation of Richmond, and, after the close of the struggle, he gave his parole at Burkeville and returned to his church work as soon as the unsettled condition of the country permitted. Since then he has had charge of a number of prominent charges, being assigned in succession to Portsmouth, Manchester, Charlotte, Farmville, Lynchburg, Norfolk, Portsmouth, Lynchburg, the Centenary church, Richmond, Monumental church, Portsmouth, Danville, and the Washington street church, Petersburg, the scene of his labors at the time of this writing. His life has been one of great intellectual activity and, beside his strictly ministerial functions, he has contributed liberally to the religious press, has written and published a popular work entitled "Story of College Life," and has rendered valuable services for education as a trustee of the Randolph-Macon system of colleges. From Randolph-Macon college, in 1882, he received the well-deserved degree of doctor of divinity. Mr. Edwards is a member of the army of Northern Virginia society, and of the A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans. During the war he married Anna, daughter of Dr. William Carter. She died in 1874, leaving two children, Ida M. and Sherwood. By his second marriage, in 1876, to Anna, daughter of Joseph G. Watts, Mr. Edwards has six children: William E., John E., Annie Louise, C. Almon, Pauline and Joseph G.

Andrew Roy Ellerson, a resident of Hanover county, with important business interests at Richmond, Va., was born October 12, 1844, in Chesterfield county. His residence in Hanover county began at the age of seven years, and he was there reared and educated until the State called out her military strength, when he enlisted as a boy of seventeen for the bloody struggle which was to follow. He became a private in March, 1861, of the Hanover Troop, which was mustered in as Company G of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, and served with that gallant command through the subsequent battles and skirmishes until January, 1865, when, on account of disability, he was detailed to the medical department. On this duty he was in Richmond until the evacuation was ordered, when he went to Danville on duty, and was there paroled after the surrender at Appomattox. The more important engagements in which he shared were Rapidan Station, Williamsburg, the Seven Days' battles (in which he was guide for Generals Lee and Longstreet), Bridgewater, Port Republic, Winchester (with Early), Aldie, Kelly's Ford, Gettysburg, Cold Harbor, Chancellorsville, Fredericksburg (where, at the first battle, he performed the

dangerous feat of stopping a spent cannon ball with his hands); the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House and Yellow Tavern, where he was wounded by a piece of shell. After this gallant service as a trooper in the army of Northern Virginia, he returned to his home in Hanover county and remained occupied with local interests until 1880, when he engaged in dealing in fertilizers at Richmond, a business in which he is still engaged, and which has grown to extensive proportions under his management. He still cherishes the memories of the days of soldiering, and is a comrade of Newton camp of Confederate Veterans and a member of the Hanover Troop association.

Captain Thomas Ellett, a prominent citizen of Richmond, secretary of the Virginia mechanics' institute of that city, achieved a notable record in both the infantry and artillery commands of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born at Richmond, in 1832, and passed his youth and early manhood in that city, previous to the beginning of the war of the Confederacy. In April, 1861, among the first to volunteer for the defense of the State from aggression, he enlisted as a private in Company F of the First Virginia regiment of infantry. With this command he served until March 7, 1862, attaining the rank of third sergeant, and was then transferred to the artillery service, as orderly-sergeant of the Crenshaw battery, light artillery. A few weeks later he was elected junior second lieutenant of that command, and, in November, 1863, was promoted captain of the battery, his commission dating back to April, 1863. In this rank he served with remarkable efficiency until the close of the war. A brief list of the engagements in which he took part is sufficient to indicate, though inadequately, the long and arduous service which he rendered. After being engaged at Aquia creek and on the Chickahominy, he was deprived for a time of the privilege of field service by severe sickness, from June 22 until July 20, 1862. Recovering, he rejoined the army on the plains of Manassas, and fought at Cedar Run, August 9th, Warrenton Springs, August 24th, Manassas Junction on the 27th and the second battle of Manassas, August 28th and 29th. Then, joining in the Maryland campaign, he was engaged at Harper's Ferry, September 15th, and at Sharpsburg on the 17th. In the battle of Fredericksburg, the next winter, he served gallantly. His oldest brother, James Ellett, in command of the Crenshaw battery, was killed on this field, December 13, 1862. During the battle of Chancellorsville, in 1863, he was detailed on duty at Richmond, and was not able to add that engagement to his experience, but, soon joining his battery, he participated in the hard fighting at Gettysburg during the entire three days, and on the third day received a slight wound in the shoulder. His subsequent engagements were Bristoe Station, October 14, 1863; Rixeyville, November 9th; Mine Run, December 18th; Spottsylvania, May 10th, 11th and 18, 1864; Jericho Ford, May 23d; Turkey Ridge, June 9th; Battery No. 40, on the Petersburg lines, July 22d; Archer's Farm, August 12th, 13th, 18th and 19th; Davis House, before Petersburg, August 21st; and Jones' House before Petersburg, September 30th. He was then disabled by illness until November 1, 1864, after which he fought at Jarrett's Depot, December 10th; Crow House, February 6, 1865; Hatcher's Run, February 7th; Petersburg, March 25th; and

Five Forks, April 1st. After the retreat was under way his battalion had a spirited encounter with the enemy on April 7th, about ten miles from Appomattox, and when within six miles of that place, being close pressed by the enemy, he spiked his guns and made his escape with the intention of joining Johnston's army. He had nearly reached the crest of Blue Ridge when informed of the surrender. He then proceeded to Gordonsville and remained there until the middle of May, when he returned to Richmond and was paroled in June. Resuming his civil occupations he has ever since resided in the city, and honorably supplemented in peace his distinguished record during the years of war.

Captain Charles Grice Elliott, one of the citizens of Norfolk most prominently connected with its remarkable development since the war period, is a native of North Carolina, born at Elizabeth City, Pasquotank county, March 8, 1840. The first of his family in that State was Peter Elliott, a native of Ireland, who became clerk of Camden county, where he made his home. Peter Elliott married Tamer, daughter of Dempsey Burgess, who represented his district in Congress in 1795 and was lieutenant-colonel of the Second North Carolina regiment in 1776. Their son, Gilbert Elliott, father of Captain Elliott, was born in Camden county, N. C., and embraced the profession of law at Elizabeth City, in which he had attained distinction before his early death at the age of thirty-eight years. His wife was Sarah A. Grice, daughter of Charles Grice, a shipbuilder, who was one of the founders of Elizabeth City, N. C., and who held the offices there of clerk of the court and sheriff of the county. Her family, of Welsh descent, settled first at Philadelphia, establishing a line of shipbuilders, one of whom, Francis Grice, a nephew of Charles, built the Niagara, one of the six first-class frigates constructed by the United States government in 1856; and a number of other navy vessels. The mother of Captain Elliott survived to the age of seventy-two years and, during the progress of the war of the Confederacy, did notable work in behalf of the soldiery of North Carolina, which won for her a warm place in the hearts of the people. She was also active in the founding and maintenance of the Orphan asylum at Oxford, N. C. Captain Elliott was reared and educated until fourteen years of age at Elizabeth City, and then became a clerk in a general store, fitting himself for a mercantile life. At the age of fifteen he received, without his previous knowledge or request, but through the offices of influential friends, an appointment to the naval academy at Annapolis. But this he declined, not desiring a naval career. Two years later he was appointed deputy clerk of Pasquotank county by James W. Hinton, clerk, and for four years Captain Elliott practically had charge of the office. The coming of the momentous year of 1861 found him the orderly-sergeant of a military company at Elizabeth City called the "State Guards," under Capt. William F. Martin. This company, with which young Elliott had been connected two years, was mustered into the Confederate army in April, 1861, as a part of the Seventh regiment of North Carolina volunteers, of which Captain Martin became colonel. Elliott became lieutenant upon the promotion of Lieut. John B. Fearing to the captaincy. The regiment was assigned to coast duty, Fearing's company being stationed at Roanoke island and afterward at Boddie island to

garrison a small fort at Oregon inlet. The Hatteras inlet forces being attacked by the enemy and captured, Fearing's company and one other fell back to Roanoke island, where they were reinforced by the Third Georgia regiment under Col. A. R. Wright, and the island was fortified. The two companies of the Seventh regiment then formed the garrison of a battery on Pork Point. Colonel Wright made an expedition to Chickamicomco beach and engaged the Twentieth Indiana regiment, driving it under cover of the Federal guns at Fort Hatteras. In this expedition Lieutenant Elliott commanded a detachment of his company. In February, 1862, the island was attacked by the expedition under General Burnside and Admiral Go'sdsborough, and during this action Lieutenant Elliott commanded the only rifle gun on the island. After two days' bombardment by the fleet and an attack by the largely superior force of Burnside, the entire Confederate garrison surrendered and, after ten days' detention on board ship, were released on parole. Lieutenant Elliott did not obtain an exchange until the fall of 1862. At this time Brig.-Gen. James G. Martin offered him a commission as first lieutenant and aide-de-camp, which he promptly accepted and joined the staff of the general before Petersburg, Va. Soon afterward General Martin was assigned to command the district of North Carolina, with headquarters at Raleigh, and charged with the duty of completing the organization of the troops. Lieutenant Elliott was engaged in this service until the fall of 1863, when General Martin was assigned to duty in the field in North Carolina. Elliott was then promoted to be captain and assistant adjutant-general and served with the command on the line from Virginia to Cape Fear and, during its subsequent assignment at Wilmington, in the department of Major-General Whiting. In February, 1864, the brigade made a successful expedition to Shepherdsville, near Morehead City, destroying a railroad bridge, defeating the enemy and severing the Federal communications with New Bern. After the capture of Plymouth, N. C., by General Hoke, Martin's brigade was stationed there, but soon afterward was ordered to Petersburg to defend that city against the advance of Butler. On May 20, 1864, this brigade was part of the right wing of Beauregard's army, under command of Maj.-Gen. D. H. Hill, in the victorious assault upon the Federals, and subsequently, the brigade was made part of the division commanded by Maj.-Gen. Robert F. Hoke. As adjutant-general of the brigade, Captain Elliott participated in all its operations in the armies of Lee, Beauregard, Bragg and Joseph E. Johnston. The principal engagements of the brigade were that of Cold Harbor, June 3, 1864, the actions in the defense of Petersburg under Beauregard from June 15th to September 15th, the operations of Longstreet in front of Richmond until the close of 1864, the battles near Fort Fisher, N. C., in both attacks upon that post, the engagements under Bragg, near Kinston, N. C., and the final action at Bentonville with Johnston's army, a part of which it formed in the capitulation at Greensboro. Captain Elliott participated in every action, but, fortunately, escaped wounds, and shared in the brilliant record of Hoke's division. On returning to the pursuits of peace, Captain Elliott engaged in farming, but, in 1867, removed to Norfolk, Va., and embarked in the wholesale grocery business. In 1878 he turned from this to become a cotton factor and com-

mission merchant. In 1885 he was appointed receiver of the Norfolk & Virginia Beach railroad and two years later he retired from the cotton trade to engage in the location and construction of the Norfolk & Carolina railroad, now the Norfolk branch of the Atlantic Coast Line. Since the completion of the railroad he has held the position of treasurer of the company. Captain Elliott's public services and business abilities have received many evidences of appreciation. In 1872 he was elected a member of the common council of the city, and, during the succeeding ten years, served as its vice-president and chairman of the finance committee, this being followed by two years' service as president. For five years he was president of the State board of harbor commissioners, and, in 1881, was made president of the Norfolk & Portsmouth cotton exchange, serving two years and being a part of this time, ex-officio, vice-president of the National cotton exchange. Amid his other occupations, Captain Elliott finds time to remember his comrades of the Confederate armies, and was one of the four founders of Pickett-Buchanan camp of Norfolk.

J. Taylor Ellyson, of Richmond, a member of the Richmond Howitzers during the later years of the war, and since then conspicuous in Confederate organizations and in the due commemoration of the heroism of the men in gray, was born at Richmond, May 20, 1847. His father, Henry K. Ellyson, born at the same city in 1823, was a prominent citizen, holding the offices of register of the city, member of the legislature 1855-58, sheriff to 1865, and mayor of Richmond in 1871. He was married, in 1842, to Miss Elizabeth P. Barnes, of Philadelphia. J. Taylor Ellyson was a student in Hampden-Sidney college at the beginning of the war, but, in 1863, at the age of sixteen years, left his studies to enter the Confederate army. He enlisted as a private in the second company of Richmond Howitzers, and was identified with the record of that famous command during the remainder of the conflict. In the battalion of Lieut.-Col. Robert A. Hardaway, and attached to Ewell's corps, he fought at the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House. During the bloody struggle of May 10th, the battalion was particularly distinguished, and suffered heavy loss, Major Watson, former captain of the Second Howitzers, being among the killed. During this fight, the guns of Smith's battery were for a time in the hands of the enemy, its brave gunners serving the guns until those not killed were actually seized by the charging soldiers and carried away. A countercharge rescued the guns and the enemy was repulsed. The battery was further engaged at Spottsylvania and for four days, during the desperate struggle at Cold Harbor, was in action and under fire. During the long siege of Richmond, Private Ellyson served with his battery in the vicinity of Richmond and Petersburg. After the close of hostilities, having reached the age of eighteen years, he entered upon collegiate studies at Columbian college, Washington, which he continued at Richmond college and the university of Virginia. The latter institution he left in 1870, and embarked in business life at Richmond, in the book and stationery trade. In 1878 he became business manager of the "Religious Herald," and several other important enterprises have also claimed his business talents; of one of these, the Old Dominion building and loan associa-

tion, he holds the office of president. But it is in other than business lines that Mr. Ellyson has become most widely known. His has been a well-rounded life, devoted largely to the good of his fellowmen, to the preservation of the memory of the honorable deeds of the past, and the improvement of present conditions, that his community may be prepared for a still nobler future. His life is full of hope, courage, faith in humanity and inspiration for his fellow workers. Few men are more widely known throughout the South or more warmly cherished in the affections of their friends. In educational matters he has served his city faithfully for many years, as a member and as president of the board of education and as a trustee of Richmond and Hartshorn colleges. In all the degrees of the fraternal orders of Masonry and Oddfellowship he has demonstrated his love for his fellowmen, and in the Baptist denomination he has taken a prominent part as corresponding secretary for nineteen years of the board of education for the State, and as president of the general association of Virginia. He has served four years as president of the local Young Men's Christian association, sat in its district and State conventions, and represented Richmond in the peace conference of the world at London. His part in political affairs has not been a strife for lucrative office, but rather for opportunity to influence the community and State, for the best interests of all. He has served many years in the city council, in the State senate, and three terms, from 1888 to 1894, as mayor of Richmond, an office in which he was able to justify the confidence of his fellow-citizens and meet the sanguine hopes of his friends. He was re-elected to the second term without opposition. As chairman of the State Democratic committee for eight years, he demonstrated that political wisdom and generalship may go hand in hand with honor and integrity. Not the least, however, of his public services, has been his activity in various ways for the commemoration of the noble deeds and worthy motives of the heroes of the Confederacy. In the Howitzer association, organized in 1866, by the survivors of his own command, he has been honored by his comrades with the presidency for two terms. For years he has been a member of the R. E. Lee camp No. 1, and George E. Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans, which he has represented in all the reunions of the United Confederate veterans, since the organization of the latter. He is also a member of the Confederate Memorial Literary society, and of the Virginia division of the army of Northern Virginia, was a member of the board of directors of the association which erected the Soldiers' and Sailors' monument at Richmond, was a member of the committee of arrangements for laying the corner stone of the R. E. Lee monument, and for the unveiling of the Jackson, Lee and A. P. Hill monuments. As mayor of Richmond, he represented the Confederate capital at the funeral of Jefferson Davis at New Orleans, and a month later, being chosen president of the Davis Monument association, was in that capacity the escort of the members of the late president's family on the occasion of the transfer of the remains from New Orleans to Hollywood cemetery. He also served upon the committee of arrangements at the laying of the corner stone of the monument to the chief executive whose memory is so dear to Southern

bearts. Mr. Ellyson was married, in 1870, to Miss Lora E., daughter of Maj. Nelson H. Hotchkiss, whose womanly sympathy and encouragement have contributed in no slight measure to the beneficent success of her husband's life.

Wilfred S. Embrey, of Fredericksburg, Va., whose military service was rendered among the gallant troopers of W. H. F. Lee's brigade, Stuart's cavalry, was born in Fauquier county, January 30, 1834. He is the second born of four brothers, who were soldiers of the army of Northern Virginia, sons of Thomas and Lucinda (Smith) Embrey. He was reared in his native county and abandoned life upon the farm in the spring of 1862, to become a private in Company A of the Ninth Virginia cavalry, Col. W. H. F. Lee commanding. He served in Stuart's brigade on the peninsula, including the Seven Days' battles, and under Fitzhugh Lee's command at Boonsboro, Md., Sharpsburg, Shepherdstown, and the Chambersburg raid around McClellan. Subsequently he shared the fighting of W. H. F. Lee's brigade at Fredericksburg, Fleetwood Hill, the Pennsylvania raid, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, and a great many smaller engagements, in which he had numerous thrilling experiences, but escaped without a wound. He was promoted corporal near the close of the war. At Appomattox, on the night preceding the surrender, his command having been practically destroyed, he, with a number of comrades, made their escape to avoid surrender, and returned to their homes. He engaged in farming afterward, in Fauquier county, until about 1877, when he removed to Fredericksburg and embarked in a business career in which he has been notably successful. He has also been prominent in the city council, and in church and social life is active and highly esteemed. On January 30, 1872, he was married to Elizabeth Embrey, and they have five children.

Lieutenant Pendleton Emmett, since the war an esteemed citizen of Lynchburg, Va., was born in Amherst county in 1841. He was educated at his native place and at Richmond, and entered the Confederate service as a private in the Twentieth battalion of artillery. In the fall of 1862 he was promoted to the rank of junior second lieutenant, the capacity in which he served during the remainder of the war. After the evacuation of Richmond, he joined in the retreat of the army and became engaged with the enemy at Sailor's Creek. In this disastrous affair he was among the captured, and, subsequently, was confined at the Old Capitol prison for three weeks and at Johnson's island, Ohio, until June 18, 1865. Among the battles in which he participated were those of Drewry's Bluff and Chapin's Farm. After the war he returned to Amherst county, and soon afterward removed to Lynchburg.

Charles H. Epps, a gallant Confederate soldier, who, after the war, was prominently connected with the police force of the city of Richmond, was born at that city December 17, 1840. He was there reared and educated and has been a resident of the city all his life with the exception of the time spent in the Confederate service. He enlisted on April 19, 1861, as a private in the Richmond Light Infantry Blues. His gallant and faithful service led to his selection as color-bearer in September, 1863, and promotion subsequently to the rank of lieutenant. Among the engagements

with the enemy, in which he participated, were those at Cottage Mills, Cotton Hill, Halifax Ferry, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, James Island, S. C., and the fighting from Petersburg to Appomattox. In an engagement at Hatcher's Run, March 29, 1865, at the outset of the final struggle between the armies in Virginia, he was wounded and left for dead on the field. When wounded he was in the act of loading a gun. The ball entered his left breast, striking a silver spoon, which changed its course, thereby saving his life. Falling into the hands of the Federals, he was taken to City Point, where, on April 1st, he saw and shook hands with President Lincoln. Lieutenant Epps was paroled in June, 1865, and resumed his residence at Richmond. On December 8, 1865, he was appointed, by the council, captain of police, as which he served until 1869, when he was removed by the military authorities for refusal to take the "ironclad oath." When home rule was restored, in 1870, he was reappointed captain for meritorious conduct during the conflict for control of the city, in which he took a prominent part in the support of Mayor Ellyson, forcing the surrender of First police station by the Cahoon faction. He continued as captain of police until 1890, when he was elected city sergeant, a position he continued to hold until his death, April 16, 1897, with many manifestations of the public favor and approval. He was a member of the Odd Fellows, Masonic, Pythian and other orders, and one of the most companionable and sympathetic of men, as well as firm and undaunted in the discharge of duty.

Major William H. Etheredge, a gallant soldier, who led into the service one of the first of the volunteer companies of south-eastern Virginia, was born in Norfolk county, July 27, 1820. He is the son of Henry Etheredge, a native of the same county, as was also the grandfather, Henry Etheredge. The family is of Scotch descent, but has long been associated with the worthiest interests of this Virginia county. The junior Henry Etheredge was a farmer by occupation, served in the war of 1812 and married Martha Butt, of Norfolk county, who survived until June 20, 1870, at the age of seventy-seven years. The father, however, died when his son William was five years old, and the latter was reared by his mother. At the age of nine she took him to Norfolk, where they resided until he had reached the age of twenty-one. Meanwhile he was well educated in the private schools at Norfolk conducted by William S. Davis and Dr. David Duncan, father of Bishop W. W. Duncan, of South Carolina. He also, beginning in 1836, learned the craft of a blacksmith, and, after his apprenticeship was completed, he returned to his native neighborhood and there followed his trade until the outbreak of the war. In 1849 he made his home upon the farm, seven miles south of Norfolk, which he still occupies, and engaged in agriculture in addition to his other work. He prospered in these industries, and, becoming well known throughout the county as a man of remarkable physical strength, personal courage and intelligence, he was elected, in 1860, captain of a newly organized military company, called the Norfolk County Rifle Patriots, the members of which were gathered from the region between Berkley and Great Bridge. Upon the burning of the navy yard Captain Etheredge offered the ser-

vices of his company to Governor Letcher and the company was mustered in April 21, 1861. It was then one of the largest and best companies in the State service, composed of one hundred and eleven men, and its subsequent record was highly creditable. Captain Etheredge was first assigned to duty at the arsenal of St. Helena, of which he took possession immediately on entering the service. Thence, in the latter part of May, he was transferred to the Gosport navy yard, with his men, which he guarded during the construction of the famous ironclad Virginia from the hulk of the old Merrimac. Commodore Forrest, then in command at this point, was very anxious to have the Virginia safely completed. The United States authorities, on the other hand, fearful of the damage that the formidable warship might do, were anxious to secure its destruction, and five separate attempts were made to this end, which were thwarted by the vigilance of Captain Etheredge and his company. He was at one time informed by Commodore Forrest that a million dollars had been offered for the destruction of the vessel, but this fabulous offer only served to increase the effectual watchfulness of the guard. During his service at this point Captain Etheredge was pleasantly associated with Commodore Forrest and his secretary, James Barron Hope, the poet, and when, in March, 1862, the Rifles were relieved from guard duty by a detachment of marines from Pensacola, the commodore gave him a letter to General Huger, expressing regret at the separation and praising the careful and able service of Captain Etheredge. He then led his company to Sewell's Point, where it joined, as Company F, its regiment, the Forty-first Virginia infantry, under Colonel Chambliss, in Huger's division. In May, upon the evacuation of Norfolk, the division moved to Petersburg and thence to Richmond. At Seven Pines Captain Etheredge went through his first battle and was distinguished for bravery. The Forty-first had been assigned to Mahone's brigade and was advancing in line of battle, Company F on the extreme right, when a sudden flanking fire threw the command into confusion. Captain Etheredge, mastering the situation in an instant, sprang to the front of his men, reminded them of their promise to follow wherever he led, and they stood by him manfully, with a part of a Petersburg company, and formed a nucleus upon which the remainder of the regiment rallied. During this affair Colonel Chambliss rode up to the company, and his horse being killed under him as he did so, he remained on foot with Captain Etheredge, whose conduct he highly complimented on the next day, saying that Company F had saved the credit of the regiment. Captain Etheredge next took part in the battles of Charles City Road and Malvern Hill, after which he was promoted major. In this rank he served during the remainder of the war, one of the bravest of the brave Mahone brigade, and, though always in places of danger, fortunately escaped both wounds and capture by the enemy. Among the battles in which he participated may be mentioned Second Manassas, Crampton Gap, Sharpsburg, Chancellorsville, Salem Church, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Bailey's Farm, the Crater, Cold Harbor, Davis' Farm, Reams' Station, Burgess' Mill, Hatcher's Run, Cumberland Gap and Appomattox. At the Crater, on the Petersburg

lines, it is remembered that, charging with Mahone's men upon the Federals after the explosion, he jumped fearlessly into the pit, and, when a gun was leveled at him, escaped death by seizing two Federal soldiers, one with each hand, whom he used as a shield until the menacing enemy was made away with by his comrades. When the fighting was done Major Etheredge returned to his farm, to which he has ever since given his attention, with notable success. His virtues as a citizen and neighbor, as well as the memory of his devotion as a soldier, make him one of the most popular men of Norfolk county. He is a trustee of his church, the Methodist Episcopal. On November 30, 1893, he and his faithful wife, whose maiden name was Sarah A. Carson, reached the date of their golden wedding, in the observance of which they were joined by their eight living children, and the grandchildren.

Dennis Etheridge, of Norfolk, a veteran of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry, is a native of North Carolina, born in Currituck county, August 12, 1842. He is the son of Isaiah Etheridge, a native of Princess Anne county, Va., and his wife, Sarah Cox, of Currituck county. He was reared in his native county, and, in his nineteenth year, on July 4, 1861, enlisted as a private in the Jackson Grays, which became Company A in the Sixty-first Virginia regiment. He served with this command until the reorganization, in May, 1862, when he became a member of Company A of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry, with which he served gallantly in many engagements, the most important of which were City Point, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles, including Gaines' Mill and Malvern Hill, Manassas, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Culpeper, the Wilderness, Chancellorsville, Cold Harbor, Drewry's Bluff, the Petersburg Crater and Yellow Tavern. During his career he was three times wounded by the explosion of shells, and his clothing was pierced by five minie balls. In 1863, just before his command entered Maryland on the Pennsylvania campaign, he was captured by soldiers of Sheridan's command, but was so fortunate as to escape on the fourth night of his captivity. At the battle of Culpeper he was captured and recaptured seven times, but, finally, was left in the Confederate lines. At Luray, after the return from Gettysburg, he was again captured by Sheridan's cavalry and imprisoned for fourteen months at Elmira and Point Lookout. In the spring of 1865 he was granted a thirty days' parole and went from Point Lookout to Camp Lee at Richmond, where he was given a twenty days' furlough to visit his home. During this time the army evacuated Richmond. On his return to Richmond, he was again seized as a prisoner, but the army surrendered three days later, and he was released and permitted to return to his home, where he was finally paroled in May, 1865. For five years following these events he remained at his family home, and then removed to Virginia. For ten years he gave his attention to the lumber business in the vicinity of Norfolk, and then located at that city in the commission business, which he followed for ten years and still retains an interest in. In 1886 he took part in the organization of the Merchants' and Farmers' peanut company, and has held the position of president of the company since that date. Though successful in business he does not permit such cares to withdraw him from the social duties of a gentleman. In

the Baptist church he is a prominent factor, and was influential in securing the building of the fine Park avenue house of worship. He is active in the support of Pickett-Buchanan camp, the by-laws of which he aided in drafting at its organization. He is a director of the Young Men's Christian association, and fraternizes with the Masons and the American Legion of Honor. On February 22, 1866, Mr. Etheridge was married to Miss Louise J. Cox, of Moyock, Currituck county, N. C., and they have six children living: Sarah J., wife of William A. Jackson, Jr., of Centreville, Va.; Lily, wife of Walter M. Womble, of Norfolk, Va.; Elizabeth, Wallace, Loulie and Myron.

Dennis Etheridge, who was one of the gallant troopers of J. E. B. Stuart's command, now residing at Norfolk, is a member of a family which contributed freely and patriotically to the Confederate cause. His father, Isaiah Etheridge, a planter of Currituck county, N. C., was unable, through age and infirmities, to serve in the armies, but four brothers enlisted and did faithful duty. Josiah, who now has his home at Norfolk, served in Mahone's famous brigade; the elder, Harrison, who became a captain of a North Carolina company, survived the war, and now resides in Currituck county; Caleb Etheridge, who served in the company of the latter and died soon after the close of the war, and Dennis Etheridge, mentioned above. James E. Etheridge, a younger brother, was born in Currituck county, November 27, 1852. But a child when the war broke out, his memory of it is of those experiences at the homes of the South where for four years news was eagerly awaited from battlefield, prison camp, and hospital, with fear for the safety of their loved ones. He was reared upon the farm and at the age of eighteen years embarked in business life as the owner of a general store in Norfolk county, not far from his North Carolina home. After about six years of successful management of this business he removed to Norfolk and engaged in the wholesale and retail trade in lumber and building material, to which he has ever since given his attention, with the result of building up a large and successful business. In social, as well as in business life, he has attained the general esteem. He is a valued member of the Baptist church, of the Knights of Pythias, and of the Masonic order, in which he is a Knight Templar and of the fourteenth degree Scottish rite. He was married in March, 1884, to Fannie, daughter of Charles A. Santos, late a druggist at Norfolk, and they have four children: Herbert Rogers, Fannie Santos, Virginia Diana and Charles Antonio. A brother-in-law, Walter T. Santos, is associated with Mr. Etheridge under the firm name of James E. Etheridge & Co.

William McKendrie Evans, of Richmond, Va., was born at that city, February 1, 1847. His father was of English birth and his mother of Irish-American parentage. Being well-to-do, they gave young Evans the advantages of the best schools then attainable, both at Richmond and in the North, and he was attending an academy at Philadelphia when the trouble between the States approached a crisis in the spring of 1861. Satisfied that tremendous events were close at hand, he left school in April and arrived at home on the day before the convention voted for the ordinance of secession. Though much under the age at which volunteers

were accepted, he had a strong desire for military service, which led him to enroll himself with one of the three junior military organizations of the city, the "Junior Volunteers." His company was the first to assemble for action on the memorable Sunday when Richmond anxiously watched for the Pawnee to steam up to the wharfs and open fire on the city. In such a state of affairs study was out of the question, and, having lost both his parents, the spirit of unrest had full sway, and business was more acceptable than school. In the fall of 1861, when it was determined to form companies, battalions and regiments of men over the age of forty-five and boys above sixteen years, young Evans, though still under the required age, was elected second lieutenant of one of the companies. He served in the city of Richmond until one month after the date of his commission, March, 1862, and then, desirous of more active duty, resigned his commission and enlisted as a private in the Parker battery, then organizing with nine other batteries at Camp Lee. The history of the "Parker battery" is well worth study—a battery of boys with the records of men. Early in his service he was wounded, May 30th, by a shot through the right leg, and being sent home on sick leave, was not able to rejoin his command until after it had crossed the Potomac for the Maryland campaign. With his battery he fought at Sharpsburg, and was one of a volunteer section which returned to the battlefield as a "forlorn hope," at the request of Col. Stephen D. Lee. Subsequently he was detailed as courier at the headquarters of Colonel Lee's battalion, and after the promotion of Lee to general, he continued with his successor, Col. E. P. Alexander, until the spring of 1863, participating, meanwhile, in the battle of Fredericksburg. Again, with his battery, he fought on General Jackson's skirmish line at Chancellorsville, May 1, 1863, with the advance guard May 2d, and on the main line May 3d. In July he returned to duty at battalion headquarters and served in that capacity at the battle of Gettysburg, and with the rear guard at the subsequent crossing of the Potomac river. His next important service was with Longstreet's corps in Tennessee, where he was present at every action from Sweetwater to Knoxville, including the affairs at Bean Station and Campbell Station. During the winter of 1863-64 he was engaged in outpost duty, then participated in the campaign from the Wilderness to Howlett House, served in the defense of Richmond until the evacuation, and on the retreat fought and was captured at Sailor's Creek, April 6, 1865. This unfortunate event resulted in his imprisonment at Point Lookout until June 20th, from the effects of which he was an invalid until the following winter. Then returning to civil life, he devoted himself to business with the same fidelity which characterized his service in the field. He is now serving his twenty-third year as office manager for a large wholesale house. About fifteen years ago Mr. Evans joined the Richmond Light Infantry Blues as a private, and was promoted through the positions of corporal and sergeant to the rank of lieutenant. Then receiving appointment to the brigade staff as commissary of subsistence, he was promoted adjutant-general and chief of staff, which has been his rank during the past nine years.

William R. Ezell, M. D., of Gholsonville, was born in Bruns-

wick county, Va., the son of Buckner D. Ezell, a worthy descendant of one of the oldest families of the State. He was educated at Atlanta, Ga., and professionally at Jefferson medical college, Philadelphia, and the medical department of the university of Virginia, being graduated by the former institution in 1861. In March, 1862, he enlisted as a private in Neblett's heavy artillery, Smith's battalion, which was stationed on the Richmond and Petersburg lines during the war. Soon after his enlistment he was promoted to lieutenant. For some time he was in command of a battery at Drewry's bluff and at Howlett's bluff, and was for a long time engaged in constant artillery fighting. After the evacuation of Richmond he participated in the battle at Sailor's Creek, and was among the many who were captured at that place. For six weeks afterward he was confined in a dungeon at the Old Capitol prison, and thence was transferred to Johnson's island, where he was held until July, 1865. On his return home he resumed the practice of his profession, in which he has since continued. He is widely known as a skillful and successful physician, and is also prominent in his community by reason of his large land holdings and manufacturing interests. He was married, in 1880, to Eva, daughter of Josiah Gregg, of Texas, a kinswoman of the well-known Bishop Gregg and Gen. John Gregg, who fell at Petersburg. They have one child living, Gregg Ezell, born in 1881.

Charles Falger, of Wytheville, a veteran of the Salem artillery, is a native of Prussia, born January 28, 1828. He came to America in 1854, and was first at Salem on November 3 of that year, where he found employment with Col. A. Hupp. The latter organized the Salem "Flying Artillery," in March, 1861, and Mr. Falger became a member of the company, which was known throughout the war as the Salem artillery or Hupp's battery. The command was first on duty at Craney island, below Norfolk, where, about a year after his enlistment, he was selected as one of the guncrew of the famous ironclad Merrimac. He served, as loader of the second gun, in the fight of March 8, when the invincible Confederate ironclad destroyed the United States frigates Congress and Cumberland. Cronin, an English gunner, put the first shot into the doomed Congress, whose brave crew went down, fighting to the last. Falger was also in the fight with the Monitor next day and remained with the Merrimac until after it was destroyed. He participated in the gallant fight against the Federal fleet from Drewry's bluff and then returned to his battery, with which he served during the remainder of the war. His battery, with the Second and Third Richmond Howitzers, the Rockbridge and the Powhatan artillery, formed the battalion of Col. J. Thompson Brown, later commanded by Colonel Hardaway, and, during 1862, was in the reserve artillery commanded by General Pendleton. Afterward, in the command of Colonel Crutchfield, it was attached to the Second army corps and fought to the end under Ewell and Gordon. It rendered valuable services on many occasions, including the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and Mine Run, and was present at the surrender at Appomattox, after participating in the defense of Richmond and Petersburg, and surviving the perils of retreat.

During the years that have since intervened, Mr. Falger has been successfully engaged in business in southwest Virginia and Wytheville.

Walter W. Faulkner, a prosperous citizen of Newport News, enjoys the distinction of having been the youngest member of Colonel Mosby's cavalry and one of the youngest soldiers of the Confederacy. He was born at Winchester, Va., October 16, 1849, and was educated at the Virginia college, a military school at that place. His father was Isaac H. Faulkner, a native of Maryland, who was in successful business as a merchant at Winchester, and died in 1894, at the age of seventy-eight years. His grandfather Faulkner came to America, about the time of the Revolution, as sailing master of a British man-of-war, and, being in sympathy with the colonists, espoused their cause and was in the Continental service until the close of the war, when he settled in Maryland. The mother of Walter W. was Julia A., daughter of John Frederick, of Virginia, but a German by nativity, who was trained as a soldier in the German army, and, serving under Gen. Sam Houston in the Texan war for independence, received a wound at San Jacinto which caused his death. The maternal grandfather of Mrs. Faulkner was Conrad Kremer, a soldier of the Revolution, who marched with Morgan to Quebec and was captured in the battle before that city. Walter Faulkner, studying quietly in the institute at his native town, had no idea of being called upon to emulate the warlike valor of his ancestors until the country was aroused by the demonstration made against Harper's Ferry by John Brown in 1859. He then, though only eleven years of age, accompanied the cadets to the threatened point and shared their service. At the outbreak of more serious troubles in 1861 he was too young to be admitted to the ranks, but was compelled to remain in school through 1861, 1862 and 1863. Finally, about July 1, 1864, he became enrolled in the command of Colonel Mosby, at Upperville, and participated in the daring and romantic operations of that body of troopers until in February, 1865, he was captured at Hillsboro, Va., while acting as a scout on detached duty. After this misfortune he was carried to Fort McHenry, Md., and there confined as a prisoner of war, with many other gallant sons of the South for several long and weary months. It was not until July 4, 1865, that he was paroled and permitted to return to his home. He soon afterward went from Winchester to Lynchburg and found employment with his brother as clerk in a drug store, and, deciding to embrace the profession of medicine, studied in that line, besides acquiring a practical knowledge of pharmacy. In the fall of 1867 he entered the medical school of the university of Maryland, but, after taking one course of lectures, was compelled to abandon his professional ambition on account of a total loss of the powers of the olfactory nerve. For several years subsequently he was engaged in business with his father at Winchester, and during this period he served with the rank of captain upon the regimental staff of Col. William L. Bumgartner, of the State militia. In 1884 he embarked in the lumber and fruit business in Florida, and in 1887 entered the lumber trade at Baltimore as the partner of H. Clay Tunis, under the firm name of Tunis & Faulkner. His residence at Newport News began

in 1894, and since that date he has conducted with remarkable success one of the leading retail grocery establishments of the city. He is highly regarded as an enterprising citizen, is prominent in the Masonic order as past master, past high priest and past eminent commander, Knights Templar, and is commander of Magruder camp, United Confederate Veterans. His present wife, Anna M. (Baker) Willey, to whom he was married at Baltimore, November 8, 1893, is a member of Bethel chapter, Daughters of the Confederacy. Mr. Faulkner's first and second marriages were blighted by death, leaving him but one child, Mary Julia Rebecca, born in 1886.

Captain John Alexander Fauver, of Augusta county, Va., a gallant officer of the Fifty-second Virginia volunteer infantry, was born of German ancestry in Augusta county, Va., in 1840. He was reared and educated in his native county, and in July, 1861, entered the Confederate service as a private in Company F of the Fifty-second regiment. In May, 1862, he was elected junior second lieutenant, in 1863 was promoted first lieutenant, and, under the consolidation act of 1864, was promoted captain of his company, in which rank he served until the end of the struggle, at that time also serving as acting-adjutant of the regiment. He served with distinction under the command of Stonewall Jackson in the Valley of the Shenandoah, at Allegheny, McDowell, Winchester, Strasburg, Harrisonburg, Cross Keys, Port Republic and Front Royal. After this active participation in the immortal deeds of the Valley campaign of 1862, he followed Jackson to Richmond and fought in the defense of the capital at Gaines' Mill and Malvern Hill. Subsequently he was engaged at Cedar Mountain and the two battles at Fredericksburg, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania and the defense of Lynchburg. served with Early in the movement through Maryland against Washington, fighting at Monocacy (where he came in possession of a Federal sword), and in the demonstration against the United States capital. Then he served in the trenches at Petersburg and in the gallant sortie which resulted in the capture of Fort Steadman, and on the retreat was engaged at Deep Creek and Appomattox. Captain Fauver was wounded July 20, 1864, four miles north of Winchester, receiving a ball which lodged under the left shoulder blade and was not extracted until 1869. After the close of this notable career as a soldier, Captain Fauver returned to Augusta county and was engaged in farming for four years. Then, becoming interested in railroad construction, he followed that occupation in Virginia and West Virginia until about the year 1875, when he made his home at Staunton and embarked in the grocery trade, in which he has since been engaged, with marked success. He was married in 1873 to Margaret C., daughter of John H. Will, of Augusta county, and they have five children, Richard A., Addie J. (wife of J. Luther Henderson, of Staunton), John A., Katie W., and Harry S.

Captain John Charles Featherston, since the war an honored citizen of Lynchburg, Va., was born at Athens, Ala., in 1837. He was reared there and educated, preparatory to entering the military institute at Frankfort, Ky., where he pursued his studies for three years. Then, returning to his Alabama home, he entered the Confederate service in April, 1861, as lieutenant of Company

F of the Ninth Alabama regiment of infantry. The command was soon called to Virginia, where his regiment made the forced march from Winchester to the first battle of Manassas. He, with his regiment, was in the siege of Yorktown. Just after the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, where his regiment participated in the Fourth brigade of Longstreet's division, under the immediate command of Brig.-Gen. Richard H. Anderson, he was promoted captain of Company F. With this rank he served throughout the remainder of the war, frequently acting as field officer of his regiment, for some time as assistant adjutant-general of the brigade and for a considerable period on the staff of General Anderson as provost marshal of his division. His record was a most honorable and gallant one, embracing participation in the battles of First Manassas, Williamsburg (at that time being adjutant of his regiment), Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg (where he was severely wounded), Bristoe Station, the defense of Petersburg, including the battle of the Crater. He was a second time wounded, but fortunately only slightly, while serving before Petersburg. His military career ended with his parole at Decatur, Ala., in May, 1865, which he still has in his possession. While the war was still in progress he was married, at Lynchburg, Va., in January, 1864, to Miss Letitia Preston Floyd, daughter of the late Dr. N. W. Floyd, of that city, and, after the close of hostilities, he made his home in the Old Dominion, where he is held in high esteem. During both the administrations of President Cleveland he held the position of agricultural statistician for the State of Virginia, and is at this time a member of the Virginia legislature.

Lieutenant George B. Finch, president of the Bank of Mecklenburg, Boydton, Va., is a native of that county, and was educated at Randolph-Macon college, receiving the degree of A. M. in 1860. He entered the Confederate service as a private in Company E, Fourteenth Virginia regiment, in May, 1861, and was promoted to lieutenant early in 1862. He was first under the command of General Magruder, on the peninsula, and was for some time stationed on Jamestown island. In the fall of 1861 he was disabled by an attack of typhoid fever, but was able to rejoin his regiment, then a part of Armistead's brigade, in winter quarters at Suffolk. Subsequently he participated in the battles of Seven Pines, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, and in the spring of 1863 served with Longstreet's command in the siege of Suffolk. At the battle of Gettysburg he commanded his company, and went with them up the slope of Cemetery hill, in the famous charge of Pickett's division, and fell within a short distance of the stone wall with a severe wound in the hip. He crawled to a pile of rails for shelter and, under the screen of night, managed to regain the Confederate lines. After experiencing great suffering he reached the hospital at Richmond, only to experience another attack of typhoid fever, which prevented him from getting home for several months. His gallantry at Gettysburg received the honorable mention of his superior officers and he was offered promotion to captain, in case he could return to the active service, but this the nature of his wound prevented. He was compelled to use crutches until 1868, when the minie ball which caused his wound

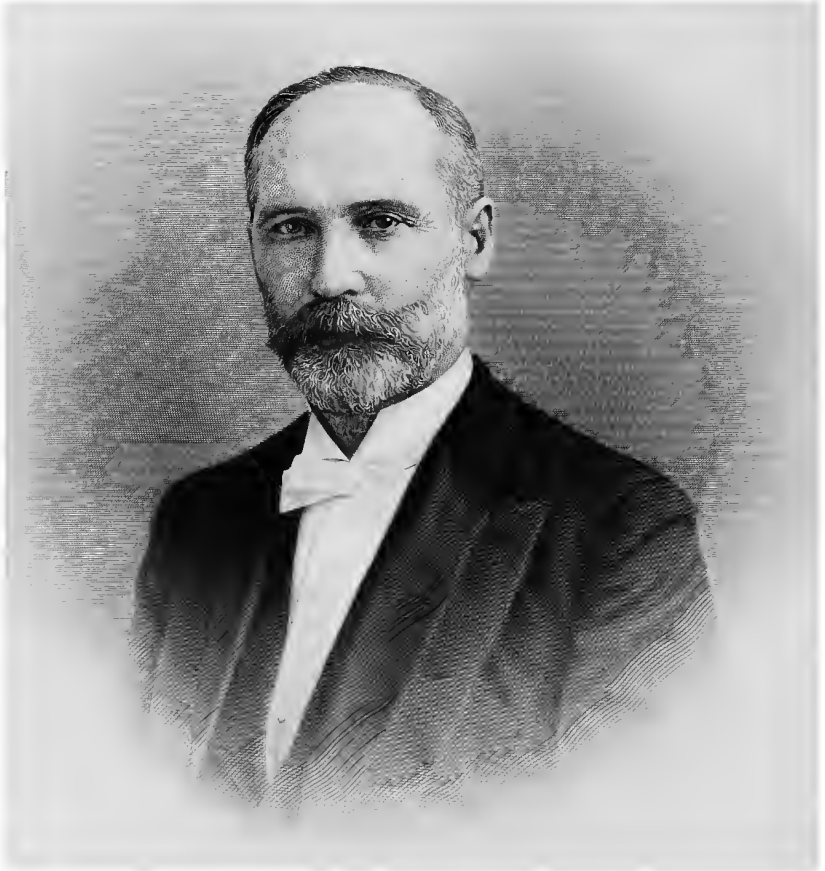
was removed. After peace was restored he studied law in the university of Virginia and embarked in the practice of his profession at Boydton. The duties of the presidency of the Bank of Mecklenburg, to which he was elected in 1872, and the care of his estate on the Roanoke river, now engage his attention. In 1887 he was married to Alice Marrow, of Mecklenburg county.

Captain Alexander N. Finks, of Criglersville, Madison county, Va., commander of Kemper-Strother-Fry camp, Confederate veterans, was born in that county, August 23, 1835. In the spring of 1861 he left the mercantile business, in which he was then engaged, to take up arms for the defense of Virginia, and was first assigned to duty at Culpeper as provost marshal. Eight months later he became first lieutenant of Company L, Tenth Virginia infantry, and, upon the reorganization of the army, he was promoted captain of the company. He was identified with the gallant record of his company in every campaign and battle from First Manassas to Spottsylvania Court House. In the latter battle, during the disastrous attack upon Johnson's division, May 12, 1864, he was captured and for nearly fourteen months afterward was a prisoner of war. He was first confined at Fort Delaware and thence, in August, 1864, was transported to Morris island, S. C., where, after being held on the prison ship *Crescent* for six weeks, he was landed on Morris island and placed in the stockade between Batteries Wagner and Gregg and guarded by negroes of the Fifty-fourth Massachusetts. He was one of the six hundred Confederate officers sent to the department of South Carolina for retaliation and, for forty-one days held in camp under fire of the opposing batteries, with ten ounces of meal per day for rations. In October he was carried to Fort Pulaski, Ga., and thence to Hilton Head, where he spent the winter. Thence being returned to Fort Delaware, he was paroled there after the capitulation of General Lee, June 27, 1865. One of his companions during the entire prison life was Lieut. Charles F. Crisp, of the same regiment, afterward the distinguished speaker of the United States House of Representatives. Since the close of hostilities Captain Finks has been engaged in the profession of teaching and surveying. He is organizer of the Farmers' alliance for Madison county and chairman of the Democratic county committee. In 1858 he was married to Miss J. F. Story, and they have five sons living.

James A. Fishburn, a well-known business man of Roanoke, Va., who rendered efficient service in the Confederate cause, is a native of Franklin county, where he was born in 1840 and reared and educated. Going to Alliance, Texas, in 1860, he entered the military service in that State at the outbreak of war, becoming a member of Company F of the Fourth Texas regiment. Shortly afterward he secured a transfer to Virginia, and the Fourth regiment also being sent to that field of war, he re-enlisted in Company F in April, 1862. He served as a private of this command during the remainder of the war, but in the early part of 1863 he was detailed to the quartermaster's department, and his services after that date were rendered in the very essential duty of caring for the army. He was stationed at Big Lick, now Roanoke, one year, and after that at Lynchburg, as headquarters, but his duties in obtaining forage, etc., made it necessary for him to travel

through all parts of the Confederate States. He was paroled at Rocky Mount in May, 1865, and he then engaged in farming in Franklin county two years. During the following nine years he was agent of the Louisville & Nashville railroad at Mitchellsburg, Ky. After spending two years at Danville, Ky., he returned to Virginia and engaged in business at Roanoke. He has since then been active in various lines of trade at that city. While a citizen of Kentucky he was assistant postmaster at Mitchellsburg two years, and served as road supervisor and school trustee in Boyle county. For six years he was overseer of the poor at Roanoke. September 13, 1864, he was married to Mary Louise Harriett, daughter of the late Fleming Boone, of Franklin county, Va., and they have eight children. Four brothers of Mr. Fishburn served in the Confederate armies. Jacob W., Ferdinand B., who died as a prisoner of war at Camp Chase, Ohio; Peter H., and Reuben H., the only survivor.

William A. Fiske, a veteran of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, now proprietor of an extensive printing establishment at Portsmouth, Va., was born in 1840 at that city. His father, David D. Fiske, who founded the business now conducted by his son, was a prominent citizen of Portsmouth, editor and proprietor of the "Daily Transcript," and mayor during the yellow fever epidemic of 1855-56. His grandfather, William Fiske, was a native of New Hampshire, and a descendant of Baron Simon Fiske, of England. William A. Fiske was educated at Webster's military institute at Portsmouth, and the institute of Albert C. Roe at Cornwall-on-the-Hudson, after which he prepared for examination for entrance to the United States naval engineer service. But at this period the war broke out and he went into the Confederate army as a private of the Marion Rifles, Company B of the Third Virginia infantry regiment. This company was disbanded in May, 1861, by Colonel Pryor, because fourteen men had exercised their right to vote against the ordinance of secession, though at the same time testifying their readiness to follow as soldiers the decision of the State. Private Fiske joined after the reorganization. Before the evacuation of Norfolk, the company joined Magruder at Yorktown and engaged in the Peninsular campaign, the battles of Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm and Cold Harbor. At Malvern Hill his brother Melzar, only sixteen years of age, was fatally wounded and died two days later at the Seabrook hospital, Richmond. Private Fiske remained with his company until captured, barefooted, in the first Maryland campaign; was confined at Fort Delaware and exchanged in time to rejoin his command in the operations near Suffolk, Va., and in the following summer marched into Pennsylvania. The company had but fifteen men when it reached the field of Gettysburg, and of these nine were killed and disabled by the intense heat and the enemy's artillery fire during the five hours they lay waiting for the order to assault Cemetery Hill. The remaining six, excepting Private Fiske, reached the stone wall from which the Federals were driven, unhurt, but all were captured. Private Fiske fell exhausted just before reaching the "stone wall" and on recovering managed to find his way back into the Confederate line. Subsequently he took part with his regiment in the



From the collection of the Hon. J. M. McKim, 1891

Robert W. Heming

campaign in North Carolina, and then, returning to Richmond, aided in the repulse of Butler's advance upon Petersburg, and took part in the battle of Cold Harbor against Grant. After fighting Butler again at Chester Station he remained on the Bermuda Hundred lines until his regiment was sent against Sheridan at Five Forks, April 1, 1865, and was almost annihilated. Private Fiske was among the wounded, and falling into the hands of the enemy was held at Point Lookout until released by order of Secretary Stanton. Since his father's death in 1870, Mr. Fiske has successfully continued the printing business established in 1840, and is a respected citizen. He is a prominent Mason, past master of Lodge No. 56, past high priest of Royal Arch chapter No. 11, past eminent commander of Knights Templar and past district deputy of the Virginia grand lodge. He represented Portsmouth in the house of delegates in 1876-77, and in 1886 was appointed postmaster by President Cleveland. During the first six months of his postmastership the office was advanced to the second grade.

William H. Fitzgerald, a native of Maryland, who has of recent years held the position of commissioner of the associated railroads at Richmond, Va., was born in 1840 and reared and educated in the State of Maryland. At the approach of the crisis between the States his sympathies were strongly with the South, and, immediately upon the secession of Virginia, he entered the Confederate service, April 19, 1861, becoming a private in Company H of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry. With this command he served in the two days' battle of Seven Pines and in the succeeding Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, then securing a transfer to the navy with the rank of master's mate. Being assigned to the fleet at Charleston, he served there in defense of the city, mainly being engaged in picket boat service, until a short time before Charleston was evacuated in February, 1865. He rendered efficient service among those gallant men who made this important point impregnable against the repeated and tremendous assaults of the Federal armies and navies. On leaving Charleston he was ordered to Battery Brooke on James river, where he was on duty in defense of Richmond during the siege and until, at the time of the evacuation, he became a member of the gallant naval brigade which distinguished itself upon the retreat and fought with great heroism at Sailor's Creek. He was paroled at Danville at the end of the struggle, then returned to Maryland and resided at Baltimore until 1893. Removing then to Richmond he became prominently associated with the railroad business of the city. He is a member of the Maryland line and of the Army and Navy society of Baltimore.

Robert I. Fleming, now a citizen of Washington, D. C., and distinguished in his profession as an architect, had the good fortune in the early years of his manhood to be permitted to participate in the heroic actions of one of the most famous of the gallant artillery commands of the army of Northern Virginia, to be spared from fatality, and in later years to cherish and honor the memory of fallen comrades and aid those who survived. Mr. Fleming was born in Goochland county, Va., January 15, 1842, the son of John Malcolm Fleming, a native of Aberdeen, Scotland, and a descendant of Sir Malcolm Fleming, one of a family

of renown in that historic land. From that family have descended all the Flemings in the United States, and no name is more common, perhaps, in the rolls of the old Continental army. In the civil service it is distinguished as well. Of this family was that Col. William Fleming, who was the hero of the battle of Point Pleasants, in September, 1774. The mother of Robert I. Fleming was Eliza A. Robertson, a descendant of an old Virginia family, which is believed on the evidence of ancient documents, recently discovered, to be lineally descended from Duncan, king of Scotland. Ancestral influences, no doubt, combined with loyalty to his State to lead young Fleming, when Virginia called her men to arms, to offer his services in the field of war. He enlisted on April 25, 1861, in the Fayette artillery, organized at Richmond May 29, 1824, and christene¹ in compliment to the Marquis de La Fayette, at that date visiting the city. In acknowledgment General Lafayette presented the company two brass cannon which he had brought to America during the war of the Revolution. In this historic command Private Fleming soon demonstrated his worthiness to serve, and he was promoted corporal, then sergeant and sergeant-major at the battle of Suffolk, and on June 3, 1864, at the field of Cold Harbor, he was promoted lieutenant for gallant and meritorious conduct. In August, 1864, he was detailed to command Bogg's battalion of four companies of artillery, but upon the death of General Gracie, of Alabama, who commanded the brigade to which that battalion was attached, he returned to the Fayette artillery, with which he served until the close of the war. A simple enumeration of the actions in which he participated will indicate the arduous and intrepid character of his service: In 1861—Action with the U. S. steamer Pawnee on James river, April 19; battle of Big Bethel, June 10. In 1862—Engagement at Harrod's Mill, April 3; Wynne's Mill, Va., April 5; under fire guarding the retreat from Yorktown to Warwick river, April 5 to May 3; battle of Williamsburg, Va., May 5; Seven Pines, May 31 and June 1; battles of Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, June and July; night attack at Harrison's Landing, July 8; Second Manassas, August 30; Crampton's Gap, Md., and Sharpsburg, Md., September 17; battles at Fredericksburg, Va., December 11, 12, 13. In 1863—Suffolk, April 12; Gettysburg, supporting Pickett's charge, July 3. In 1864—Battles of Bachelor's Creek, N. C., New Bern and Beech Grove, February; Plymouth, N. C., April 20; New Bern, N. C., April 20; Drewry's Bluff, Va., May 14; Drewry's Farm, May 16; Cold Harbor, June 1 and 3; around Petersburg, June 16, 17, 18; the Crater (Fort Elliott), Petersburg, September 6; attack on Fort Harrison, before Richmond, September 29; Burgess' Mill, October 20; and all engagements during the siege of Petersburg. In 1865 Lieutenant Fleming commanded picked detachments of artillery in the capture of Fort Stedman, in the Federal lines before Petersburg, March 25, where he turned and worked the guns upon the enemy until a retreat was ordered. Here a piece of shell tore the top of his cap from his head. In the following month he was in command of a section of artillery, of General Walker's division of Gordon's corps, composing the rear guard of the army during the retreat to Appomattox, and was

selected by General Lee to command the "forlorn hope" and bring up the rear of the army after the battle of Sailor's Creek, and retard the advance of Grant so as to permit the crossing of High bridge by Lee, a duty which he performed to the entire satisfaction of his great commander. Though his battery was cut off from the main army by Sheridan's troops, it forced its way through to Lynchburg, where the guns were spiked and carriages and caissons destroyed and the battery disbanded after the surrender of the army. Lieutenant Fleming then returned to Richmond, April 18, 1865, where he took the oath prescribed by proclamation in 1863, May 2, and the oath of allegiance July 24, 1865. Of his service it is said in the History of the Fayette Artillery, by E. H. Chamberlayne, Jr., "For the historian to undertake to do justice to this gallant, chivalric soldier would be simply preposterous. His many noble, grand exploits are too well known to his superior officers, as well as to the brave men of his battery. One of his brilliant acts was the capture of Lieut.-Col. T. F. Fellows, his adjutant and orderly of the Seventeenth Massachusetts volunteers, whilst riding at the head of an improvised picket, consisting of himself, Sergeant A. H. Jones and Bugler Nicholls. This capture was made by Lieutenant Fleming single handed, he being some distance in advance. General Pickett presented Lieutenant Fleming with Colonel Fellows' horse, saddle, bridle, pistol and sword. If there is a Confederate soldier who is justly entitled to 'the bravest of the brave,' that man is Robert I. Fleming." Another incident of his service, which deserves mention, occurred on the White Marsh road during the attack on Suffolk, Va. A company of infantry, deployed as skirmishers, fell back in disorder, whereupon Colonel Armistead, in command of the regiment, ordered Sergeant Fleming, riding near the colonel, to rally and lead them forward in attack. The intrepid manner in which he performed this duty under fire of artillery and infantry elicited complimentary notice in the orders of the gallant Armistead, who afterward commanded the brigade and fell at Gettysburg. At the close of the war Mr. Fleming became engaged at Richmond, Va., as an architect and builder, serving also at one time as assistant engineer of the city, but in 1867 he removed to Washington, D. C., where, during a residence of thirty years, he has attained a marked prominence in his profession, having designed and carried through to completion a large number of the most prominent public buildings, business structures and private residences, erected in this period. Meanwhile he has continued to take an active part in social and political movements and organizations. In 1870 he entered the District National Guard as paymaster, was afterward successively elected captain, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel of the First regiment, and for over three years was senior officer commanding the First brigade; was a member of the legislature of the district in 1874, and in 1872 a delegate to the Democratic National convention at Cincinnati. At the dedication of Luther Memorial church, Fourteenth and N streets, northwest, Washington, D. C., February 12, 1875, he purchased and dedicated a memorial pew to Gen. Robert E. Lee. He has received the degrees of Odd Fellowship, of the Knights of Pythias and of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine; and in Free Masonry has attained the thirty-second de-

gree and the rank of knight commander of the Court of Honor, and on October 22, 1897, had conferred upon him the thirty-third degree, the highest degree in Masonry. He cherishes a membership in Lee camp, U. C. V., of Richmond, Va., by whom he was presented the golden badge of honor for soldierly and knightly qualities, and is a charter member of the Confederate Veterans' association of the District, and in 1898 was its honored president. His home life is made happy by his marriage, which occurred October 27, 1886, to Miss Bell Vedder, daughter of Col. Nicholas Vedder, U. S. army, formerly chief paymaster for General Sherman. He now has two children, one a daughter, India Bell Vedder, born October 3, 1887, and a son, Robert Vedder, born November 3, 1890. Particularly worthy of note in this connection, are the comradeship and beneficence of Mr. Fleming, since the war, toward the ex-soldiers of the Confederacy. In May, 1886, he entertained R. E. Lee camp, U. C. V., of Richmond, while passing through Washington in return from the Baltimore reunion, presented each member to President Cleveland and banqueted them at the National hotel. Marching at their head, he led the first organization of Confederate veterans to move up Pennsylvania avenue after the war. When Lee camp undertook a fair at Richmond for the purchase of a soldiers' home, he made the first subscription, aided in securing others, and, afterward, finding the accommodations at the home insufficient, he generously donated an amount sufficient to remodel and to build an additional story on the main building, which has since borne his name. At the formal presentation of the Fleming Addition, July 2, 1886, Mr. Fleming was the recipient of many touching honors; salutes and cheers from the inmates of the home, and a hearty reception by his old comrades of the Fayette artillery, joined in by the U. C. V., and Kearney post, G. A. R., for a soul like Fleming's finds the whole world kin. He was thanked, also, in the eloquent address of acceptance by Gov. Fitzhugh Lee, who said: "While it has been an honored custom to strew flowers on the graves of our dead, here was a living soldier who had made a magnificent gift to his living comrades, which would never be forgotten, and when we have passed away, the deed will still be remembered." His beneficence was formally recognized at Washington by resolutions adopted by the Virginia Democratic association. In December, 1874, he participated as one of the pallbearers—the others being Gen. P. M. B. Young and P. I. Cook, of Georgia; Dr. H. W. Garnett, Dr. Young, Dr. Boyle, W. Harmon, J. W. Drew, Col. L. Q. C. Lamar, Wm. Stone, George T. Howard and Col. A. Herbert—in the pathetic ceremony of removing the Confederate dead, who fell in General Early's attack upon Washington, from their shallow trenches, to Grace church near Silver Spring, where they now sleep beneath a monument erected by the camps of Washington and Rockville. In brief the gallant record of Mr. Fleming as a soldier has been adequately crowned by the true manliness of his performance of the duties of peace.

Henry W. Flournoy, of Richmond, distinguished in the legal profession of that city, was born in Halifax county, June 6, 1846. During his youth he was educated in the vicinity of his home and in Charlotte county, but before he had reached his sixteenth birthday

he abandoned the ordinary occupations of youth to begin a varied and adventurous career in the Confederate service. His enlistment was as a private in the Sixth Virginia cavalry, with which command he participated in many famous engagements and others equally dangerous, which go to make up the career of a trooper, among which may be enumerated Bealton Station, Front Royal, Winchester, Newtown, Woodstock, Harrisonburg, Cross Keys and Port Republic, in all of which he served under the command of the invincible Stonewall Jackson. He also participated in the actions at Slaughter mountain, the second Manassas, the raid on Catlett's Station, at Brandy Station (August 19, 1862), the fight with General Prince's cavalry at Upperville, the affair at Brandy Station, on June 9, 1863, and the subsequent engagements of Stuart's cavalry up to June 23. On July 12, 1863, while participating in Stuart's movements on the return from Pennsylvania he was captured at Hagerstown, Md., by the enemy, and sent to Baltimore, and afterward to Point Lookout military prison, where he was held in all nine months. Upon his exchange, in May, 1864, he rejoined his cavalry command and, after fighting at Reams' station against Sheridan, was sent to the Shenandoah valley, and participated in the battles of Luray, Winchester, and Tom's Brook, where, on October 8, 1864, he received a severe gunshot wound in the neck which disabled him for a month. On his recovery, in the latter part of November, 1864, he went from the cavalry to the artillery and participated as a member of the Third company of Richmond Howitzers in the fighting at Deatonville, Va., and at Appomattox, where he was paroled. Returning home, he became at once as active in the pursuits of peace as he had been in the service of the Confederacy. First turning his hand to the raising of a crop of corn, he next, in the fall of 1865, found a position as clerk in a store at Lynchburg. In January, 1866, he came again to his home in Halifax county and, beginning the study of law with his father, was admitted to practice in the following year and then embarked in that profession at Danville. After practice as an attorney for three years he was elected, in 1870, to the position of corporation judge of Danville. Elected to a second term in 1877, he resigned in the following year to resume the practice, and, in the fall of 1881 removed to Washington county, where he continued successfully in the duties of his profession. His ability as a lawyer and wide influence as a public man led to his election in December, 1883, to the position of secretary of the commonwealth, a position in which he was retained for five terms by the voters of the State, serving continuously until 1893. Subsequently he has remained at Richmond and engaged in that professional work for which his long experience has admirably equipped him. He is still a comrade to the survivors of the army and maintains memberships in R. E. Lee camp and the Howitzer association, which he served as president in 1885.

Captain Nicholas Jackson Floyd, of Lynchburg, Va., at the close of the war commanding the post at Minden, La., was born in Campbell county, Va., December 11, 1828. He was educated at the private schools of Lynchburg, the Abingdon academy and Emory and Henry college, Virginia. After spending several years in travel, he engaged in planting in Texas and later in Alabama. At

the time of the John Brown attempt to inaugurate servile insurrection in the South, fearing that the time had arrived when the politicians of a certain class, who had been for years preaching and urging on the "irrepressible conflict," were about to commence a series of overt acts, he assisted in organizing a cavalry company at Athens, Ala., of which he was made first lieutenant. While the services of this company were not immediately needed, the applause which John Brown's outlawry received from certain classes at the North and the howl of anger that was raised over his execution for the murder of peaceable citizens of Virginia, determined the officers to hold the splendid organization together and in readiness for future events which were plainly foreseen. In May, 1861, the company, having dismounted and reorganized as infantry, went to Richmond, Va., and became a component part of the Ninth Alabama regiment, which was sent to Winchester to oppose General Patterson's advance. There a brigade was formed with other Alabama regiments, hastily brought together, and Gen. E. Kirby Smith put in command. On July 20th this brigade, with other troops, was hurried over the mountains to embark on cars at Piedmont Station for Manassas. A part of the brigade, by leaving the train west of Manassas and double-quicking in the direction from which the roar of battle proceeded, came in on the Federal right flank, in time to do gallant service and render much needed aid; but the Ninth, having been delayed by a collision, did not reach the field until the battle of Manassas had been fought and won. During the succeeding winter Kirby Smith, who had been severely wounded, was promoted and C. M. Wilcox, the first colonel of the Ninth, was put in command of the brigade, which, after many hard struggles with the foe, became famous as "Wilcox's brigade." After General Lee's expedition into Maryland and his return to Virginia, the subject of this sketch was promoted to the rank of captain and assigned to duty as paymaster and quartermaster of his regiment. This was a very timely promotion, as his health had become seriously impaired under the hardships and exposures which the inadequately equipped infantry had necessarily to bear. There were but few engagements of General Lee's army, or any large portion of it, in which the old Ninth and the entire brigade did not take an active part; and as battle succeeded battle the ranks became so depleted that, after the battle of the Crater, at Petersburg, in which the command suffered very severely, it became necessary to consolidate companies and regiments; as there was no longer any material at home, "between the cradle and the grave," from which to draw recruits, Captain Floyd was ordered to the trans-Mississippi department with dispatches to Gen. E. Kirby Smith, in command at Shreveport, La., and was by him assigned to duty as commandant of the post at Minden in that State, with orders to prepare for the wintering of the larger portion of the army at that point. Among the troops wintered there was the Second infantry division, Gen. C. T. Polignac commanding. General Polignac was a young French prince who had espoused the Confederate cause with the hope, perhaps, of becoming to the South what the Marquis de La Fayette had been to the rebels of 1776. The two young officers were necessarily thrown together with some degree of intimacy, and

Captain Floyd was offered the rank of major in General Polignac's command. This promotion was gladly accepted, as it restored its recipient to duty in the field. But before an officer was appointed to relieve him of his post duties, disquieting rumors came from Virginia and General Polignac, under the advice of friends high in military authority, resigned his command and sought the inhospitable environments of military headquarters at New Orleans, where General Butler held sway. Within a few weeks news came of the heart-crushing events at Appomattox, and a few days thereafter there was no general organization among the military forces west of the Mississippi river. Captain Floyd remained at his post, facilitating the distribution, among the needy, of the army supplies accumulated at the different depots in his territory, until Federal troops took actual possession. A few months later he married a daughter of Madison Morrow, a former representative of his people and a leading merchant of north Louisiana. After several business ventures in Texas and Louisiana he returned to his old home in Virginia, and now resides near Lynchburg, where he is a member of Garland-Rodes camp of Confederate Veterans, and takes great interest in public school affairs, particularly with reference to the histories and other text books that should be taught.

Major Jacob H. Franklin, now a prominent business man of Lynchburg, Va., was entrusted, during the war of the Confederacy, with important responsibilities in connection with the army of Northern Virginia. He is a native of Pittsylvania county, born in 1836, but since 1854, when he removed to Lynchburg, has had his home at that city. In the quiet days before the war he embarked on his business career as a clerk in a mercantile establishment, but after the passage of the ordinance of secession by the Virginia convention, resigned his position and was able, in June, 1861, to enter the military service as a private in Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry. In this capacity he was engaged in battle at Blackburn's ford, just before the battle of Manassas, and at the opening of the Peninsular campaign fought at Yorktown and Williamsburg. In July, 1862, without his knowledge or application, he was detailed on account of his business training and capabilities to act as commissary of subsistence under Major Chichester. Under the latter and his successor, Major Moses, he continued in this service, and in 1863 was commissioned as captain in the quartermaster's department with the duty of accompanying the army in its operations and collecting stores of subsistence. In the latter part of 1864 he was promoted commissary of the artillery of the First army corps, with the rank of major, as which he surrendered at Appomattox. Then, returning to Lynchburg, he found employment as a salesman until 1866, when he formed a partnership with a brother in the grocery trade, beginning a business career, since the war, which has been marked with unusual success. His house, which, during the past few years, he has managed alone, has, since 1882, been devoted exclusively to the wholesale trade. He is also interested in many enterprises in the city and county, has been a director in the People's national bank for twenty-six years, and for six years director of the Savings and Trust company, of Lynchburg. Public-spirited and active in many other di-

rections than those pertaining to private business, he serves as trustee of the Miller orphan asylum, has been in the city council ten or twelve years, and has served sixteen years or more upon the school board, of which he is now chairman, and is one of the board of governors of the Lynchburg public library. Fraternally he is connected with the Masonic order. Major Franklin was married, in 1861, to a daughter of Colonel Bennett, and seven children were born to them. His wife died in 1876 and he was married in 1880 to Mrs. Neal.

Captain James Franklin, Jr., of Lynchburg, Va., was born in Pittsylvania county in 1839, at the plantation home of his family, where he was reared and educated. Losing his father by death in 1855, he made his home at Lynchburg in the following year. In 1859 he became a member of the Home Guards, organized November 8th, and with that famous organization was mustered into the service of the State on April 24, 1861, as Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, and went to join the army of Beauregard upon the plains of Manassas. His gallant service was rewarded by steady promotion, on May 7, 1861, to corporal; in July, 1861, to sergeant; in April, 1862, to orderly-sergeant; and in October, 1862, to second lieutenant of Company G. He served in the latter rank until March, 1863, when he accepted the position of quartermaster of the Eleventh regiment, with the rank of captain, as which he continued until April, 1864, when he resigned from that rank and duty to take his old place with the company as second lieutenant. After participating in the heroic fighting and the glorious victory at Manassas, July 21, 1861, he was transferred with his command to Richmond, to oppose the advance of McClellan. On May 5th he was engaged in the battle of Williamsburg, and here received a severe wound in the left arm, which has disabled him for life. Notwithstanding this injury, he persisted in the struggle, afterward participated in the battles of Fredericksburg, Va., Plymouth, N. C., and Drewry's Bluff, in April, 1864, when he was again wounded, this time in the breast, increasing his disabilities to such an extent that he was forced to accept an honorable discharge and retire from the active service. Returning to Lynchburg, he surrendered there in June, 1865, and then turned his energies to the affairs of civil life. In 1866 he and his brother Jacob formed a partnership in the grocery business, under the firm name of Franklin Bros. During the years that have since elapsed he has been an honored and influential citizen of Lynchburg, sat in the city council in 1874 and 1875, and for four years, beginning in 1876, served as magistrate. Captain Franklin's family contributed nobly to the army of the Confederate States, five of his brothers enlisting. John A. Franklin, of Bogata, Tex., served in General Price's army and ranked as major at the surrender; William E. Franklin was a private in the Second Virginia cavalry, Company I, and died in service from disease; Jacob H. Franklin, now living at Lynchburg, who went out in the Eleventh Virginia infantry and ranked as major in General Longstreet's corps; Thomas C. Franklin, who served throughout the war as a private in the Second Virginia cavalry and died at Lynchburg in 1871, at the time holding the office of city sergeant; Charles C. Franklin, who enlisted in Company C, Forty-second Virginia infantry, and was first lieutenant when killed at Chancellorsville in

May, 1863. In 1866 Mr. Franklin married Miss Lucy A. Mayse, a daughter of Robert Mayse. They have had two children, William Robert, who died in 1892, and Margaret G. Mr. Franklin's wife died in 1874, and he married for his second wife, Miss Bird Anderson, by whom he had one son that died in infancy. His second wife died in 1878.

William H. Fray, of Culpeper, Va., a survivor of Pickett's Virginia division of the army under Lee, was born in Madison county, March 31, 1844. He received his education in the "old field schools," until he had reached the age of seventeen years, when he enlisted in a volunteer company, which became Company A of the Seventh Virginia infantry, Kemper's brigade, Pickett's division, First army corps. With this command he served four years, taking part in the first battle of Manassas, Williamsburg, Malvern Hill, South Mountain, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, the Suffolk and North Carolina campaigns, including the battle of Plymouth, Cold Harbor, and the many months' fighting of this division before Petersburg. He was a faithful and devoted soldier, deserving to be remembered among the brave men who assailed the Federal lines at the climax of the war on the slopes of Cemetery hill. On April 6, 1865, during the retreat of the army from the Confederate capital, he was captured by the enemy and was subsequently confined at Point Lookout until the general release of prisoners of war. Then returning to his farm home, he removed to Culpeper in 1866, where he has ever since been engaged in business. He is an influential citizen and is especially popular with his comrades of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. On February 15, 1872, he was married to Miss Emma R. Miller, of Fleetwood, and they have three children living.

Walker Burford Freeman, of Richmond, a gallant veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Bedford county, Va., August 28, 1843, where he was reared and educated. Early in the war period he became a member of the Piedmont artillery, organized at Bedford City, and four months later, August 31, 1861, he was mustered with this command into the service of the Confederate States. He served with this company of artillery during the defense of Yorktown and Gloucester Point until the evacuation, when the company was assigned to the Thirty-fourth Virginia infantry, as Company E. Freeman served as a private until September, 1863, when his gallant service led to his appointment to act as sergeant. During his service he participated, after the evacuation of Yorktown, in the two days' battle of Seven Pines, where he was wounded three times in one day and received seven bullet holes in his clothing; in the second engagement at Williamsburg; was under fire at Fort Sumter in 1863; took part in the action at Fort Walthall Junction and various engagements on the Howlett House line in May and June, 1864; in the defense of the lines at Petersburg, June 17, 1864, and various engagements on the Petersburg line, and in the engagements on the Boydton Plank Road, at Hatcher's Run and Sailor's Creek, and finally surrendered at Appomattox. After the war he returned to Lynchburg, and embarked in the wholesale grocery trade. He continued in this until 1886 and then went into the insurance business, which, after following the same six years at Lynchburg, he has continued at Richmond since 1892. While at

Lynchburg he was honored for several years by his fellow citizens with the office of alderman. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, of Richmond. Three brothers of Mr. Freeman participated in the Confederate service: Stephen M. Freeman, who served as a private in Company A of the Second Virginia cavalry, and died from a fall from a horse at the battle of Manassas, July, 1861; Gustavus A. Freeman, who served as a private in Company E of the Thirty-fourth Virginia infantry, and died of camp fever in 1862; and John R. Freeman, a private of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, who now resides at Amherst, Va.

Frederick J. Friedlin, a well-known merchant of Portsmouth, who was identified with the gallant record of the Virginia Defenders, is a native of Switzerland, born at Basel, August 10, 1841. His parents, John H. and Elizabeth (Hunzecker) Friedlin, came to Portsmouth with their family in 1854, settling at Portsmouth, where the father was a victim of the yellow fever scourge of 1855, the mother surviving until February 8, 1895. Their family consisted of seven sons and two daughters, and three of the sons, John H., Adolphus, and Frederick J., served in the armies of the Confederacy, the second named giving his life for the cause at the battle of Frayser's Farm. In 1858 Frederick J. Friedlin entered the military service of the State as a member of the Portsmouth National Grays, which was on duty during the John Brown affair, and went into active service under the governor's orders of April 20, 1861. Soon after the muster he was detailed for duty as an engineer in the railway shops at Portsmouth, in which he continued until the evacuation, when he became a private in the Virginia Defenders, a company which had been organized on the night of April 20, 1861, and subsequently attached to the Sixteenth infantry regiment as Company C. After an uneventful camp life at Norfolk, the company joined Mahone's brigade of Anderson's division, A. P. Hill's corps, of the army of Northern Virginia, and with the regiment was quartered on the Rapidan river, guarding a railroad bridge, until the battle of Seven Pines, when the command moved to Richmond and participated in the Seven Days' battles. Private Friedlin shared this fighting and was subsequently engaged at Second Manassas, at Crampton's Gap, Md. (where the company was particularly distinguished in the gallant stand made against overwhelming odds), at Sharpsburg, at Fredericksburg, and at Gettysburg. On the retreat from Gettysburg he was captured, July 5th, and was held at Fort McHenry and Fort Delaware as a prisoner of war until September, 1863, when he made a daring escape from the Federal prison, and succeeded in reaching Virginia in safety. His prison confinement had ruined his health, and it was not until the war was near its close that he was able to serve in the field, and his services were then of no avail. In October, 1863, he began a grocery business on a small scale at Portsmouth, with a capital of \$75, and, meeting with success, in later years he conducted both a retail and wholesale trade. In 1890 he turned this over to his sons, who have since conducted a wholesale grocery establishment on the foundation he had laid. He then established a general or department store at Portsmouth, and is now conducting an extensive and successful business. He is popular both in business and social circles, has served four years in the city council, is a director of the Metropolitan building and

loan association of Richmond, is a stockholder in the People's bank, treasurer of the Independent fire company, treasurer of the Portsmouth and Atlantic club, and is fraternally associated with the orders of Elks, Odd Fellows, Red Men, and Knights of Pythias. Mr. Friedlin was married March 23, 1864, to Alice Sturtevant, who died July 31, 1877. On May 20, 1880, he wedded Fannie E. Orton, who died February 16, 1895, and on August 5, 1896, he was married to Roma S. Zink. Ten children are living: Lee N., wife of W. R. Vieth, of Norfolk; Frederick A., Blanche I., May Rose, wife of George Ewell, of Portsmouth; Charles E., Grace D., wife of George Martin; Lisette H., Fannie E., Thomas H., and Samuel Zink.

Lieutenant John C. Fulford, of Portsmouth, a gallant veteran of the Third Virginia regiment of infantry, who served throughout the war and commanded his company at Appomattox, was born in Norfolk county, May 23, 1838. He is the son of John and Fannie (West) Fulford, both natives of Norfolk county, at whose country home he was reared to the age of twelve years, when the family removed to Portsmouth. After receiving an education in the public schools he was apprenticed to the carpenter's craft. At the age of twenty-one he became a member of the National Grays, a strong and well-disciplined company, which was organized at Portsmouth in May, 1856, and was on duty at Charleston, Va., during the John Brown insurrection of 1859. As a private in this company he turned out under arms on April 20, 1861, and served with the company at the Gosport navy yard until August, then being stationed at Burwell's Bay and Camp Pemberton. At the opening of McClellan's peninsular invasion, the command, as Company H of the Third regiment, was moved to the scene of action in March, and fought at Dam No. 2, in Longstreet's division. Subsequent actions, in which Lieutenant Fulford shared the gallant record of the Grays, were Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' fighting, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Culpeper Court House, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, Five Forks, besides many less important engagements. Early in his service being promoted orderly sergeant of his company, he was commissioned second lieutenant after Gettysburg and subsequently first lieutenant, in this rank having command of his company during the absence of Capt. John D. Whitehead, who was captured at the stone wall at Gettysburg on the third day, and held until the spring of 1865. In the closing days of the struggle the papers were perfected for the promotion of the gallant lieutenant to the rank of captain, but in the confusion then prevailing the commission never arrived. Returning to Portsmouth after his parole at Appomattox, Lieutenant Fulford was occupied at his trade for a time, then turned his attention to mercantile pursuits, which engaged him for several years, and since 1884 he has occupied a responsible position with the Portsmouth and Norfolk ferries, in which connection he is widely known and esteemed as a faithful and popular official. He is a comrade of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, is a deacon of South Street Baptist church, and an active member of the order of Odd Fellows. He has served the city in an official capacity as a police commissioner. February 14, 1867, Mr. Fulford was married to Virginia C. Davis, of Portsmouth, who died March 24, 1890. Four children are living: Minnie Lee, wife of Rev. John

W. Daugherty; Lulu May, wife of W. T. Edmonds; Walter A., and Ruth Virginia.

Jacob A. Fulmer, of Smithfield, Va., is a man of northern birth, education and training, who voluntarily parted from his friends and kindred who supported the Northern cause, to enlist in the Confederate army. He was born at Philadelphia, April 10, 1838, the son of Thomas and Susan (Yeager) Fulmer, Pennsylvanians by birth. His brother, William T. Fulmer, served as paymaster, with the rank of major, in the Union army. When the fight began for Southern independence he came South, in April, 1861, on the last boat from Baltimore to Norfolk before the blockade was established, and, proceeding to Nansemond county, enlisted as a private in the Old Dominion light artillery Blues, afterward Company A of the Nineteenth Virginia battalion. During his first year's service he was stationed at Town Point, and was then transferred to Richmond, where he served during the remainder of the war on the fortified lines in defense of the Confederate capital. At the end he was captured with many others in the disaster to Ewell's corps at Sailor's Creek, after which he was imprisoned for three weeks in Libby prison. On being paroled in May, 1865, he found himself without money or employment and wandered about Richmond a day or two without food or the means of obtaining it. Finally, in desperation, he applied to Colonel Slater, the Union officer in charge of commissary stores, for work of any kind to prevent starvation. The colonel was dubious in encouragement, in view of the tattered gray uniform which Fulmer wore, but the young Confederate frankly admitted his former allegiance and so stoutly stood up for the greatness of his old commander, General Lee, and the justness of his cause, that the Federal officer, won by his sincerity, gave him an order for ten days' rations, and on the next day assigned him to a responsible position. This occupation lasted over thirty days, and before Colonel Slater left he complimented Fulmer upon the fidelity and ability he had manifested and left him an envelope to open in private. This contained \$72, which, to the Confederate soldier, was a fortune, and, as he had also received free transportation to Norfolk for himself and the young lady who afterward became his wife, his future seemed bright at that moment. Proceeding to Norfolk he soon established himself as a carpenter at Smithfield, and has there ever since resided, winning a competence by his industry as a builder and contractor. He was married in 1866 to Miss Alice W. Mister, a young lady who, subsequent to their first meeting at Town Point, had taken refuge at Richmond during the war. They have two daughters, Gertrude Lee, who married Benjamin Pond, and Anna S.

Captain Alexander H. Fultz, an attorney, and prominent citizen of Staunton, Va., who held for many years the office of mayor of the city, was born in Bath county, Va., in 1837. Brought by his family to Staunton in infancy, he was there reared and educated, preparatory to the course of study he followed at Washington college. Preparing himself for the profession of law, he was admitted to the bar in 1861, but was compelled to postpone the practice he was about to undertake by the outbreak of the war. He entered the military service of the State on April 17, 1861, as a private in the Staunton artillery. His gallant record brought steady promo-

tion. After one year as private, he served two years as second lieutenant, then as first lieutenant until the winter of 1864, when he was promoted captain, the rank he held at Appomattox. He participated creditably and bravely in the battles of First Manassas, Williamsburg, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville (where he received his only wound, a slight one in the foot), the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, and the Wilderness and Spottsylvania campaign. At the time of the surrender he was with a mounted detail, ten miles south of Appomattox, and he was paroled at Staunton in June, 1865. During the two years immediately following the war he found employment in farming and then took up his career where he abandoned it at the call of the State. Since then he has prospered in the profession of law and holds a high place in the esteem of the people of Staunton. He was first elected mayor of the city in 1888, and subsequently was regularly re-elected every two years.

Joseph Addington Gale, M. D., a distinguished physician and surgeon of Roanoke, Va., was born at Norfolk in 1842. His ancestry is English and Scotch descent, and settled originally in North Carolina, removing thence to Virginia subsequent to the Revolutionary war. Both his grandfathers were soldiers in the war of 1812. Dr. Gale was a student in the Norfolk military academy at the outbreak of the war, and he left that institution in the summer of 1861 to become a private in Huger's battery. He served with this command until the spring of 1862, participating in the battles of the Peninsula and Seven Pines, and being upon the fields of Mechanicsville, Cold Harbor, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill and Drewry's Bluff. He was then appointed hospital steward at Chimborazo hospital, at Richmond, and put in charge of the dispensary for the second division, under Dr. Habersham. During his service in this department he was hospital steward in charge of medical and surgical supplies for the reserve corps of surgeons, and was busily engaged upon the field in all the battles around Richmond during the siege of 1864-65. During this period he also attended medical lectures at the Richmond medical college, and, in the spring of 1866, he was graduated in medicine at the Bellevue hospital medical college, New York. For six months subsequently he served as surgeon on a ship between New York and Liverpool, and then received the appointment of United States contract surgeon at Sandy Hook. In the summer of 1867 he made his home in Roanoke county, and in 1882 established himself at the city of Roanoke, where he has since been engaged successfully in the practice of his profession. For twelve years he served as surgeon for the Norfolk & Western railroad, and has held the position of chief surgeon for the road since September, 1895. He is a member of the State medical society of Virginia, and of the National association of railway surgeons. He is also active socially and for the best interests of the community. He is one of the trustees of the Methodist church South, of his city, and is a valued member of the Masonic order, the Knights of Pythias and Odd Fellows. He has served the county as magistrate and, during two terms, sat in the council of the city.

Captain Asher W. Garber, of Richmond, a gallant artillery officer of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, was

born at Staunton, Va., in 1834. From that city he entered the service on April 17, 1861, as second lieutenant of the Staunton artillery. In December, 1862, after he had commanded his battery at Fredericksburg, attached to Ewell's division, he was promoted captain, after which he continued in command until the close of the war. His record of service is a notable one and embraces gallant action at the memorable battles of First Manassas, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Second Manassas, the Milroy fight at Winchester, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House on the 10th, 12th and 18th of May, 1864, Second Cold Harbor, Chantilly, Deep Bottom, New Market, Berryville, Cedar Run, Sailor's Creek and Appomattox. At Chancellorsville his battery was engaged but he was absent at the time, securing horses for the command. He was wounded at the First Manassas and at Berryville and was struck by a spent ball at Sailor's Creek. After the close of hostilities Captain Garber returned to Staunton for a few months, and then made his permanent home at Richmond, where he has since that time been engaged in the transfer business. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans.

J. Powell Garland, D. D., now presiding elder of the Norfolk district of the Methodist church, whose career well illustrates the chaplaincy of the Confederate army, was born in Amherst county, Va., November 9, 1835. The Powell and Garland families, from which he is descended, are well known and have a worthy part in the history of Virginia. His father, Samuel M. Garland, was an attorney at Amherst Court House, for forty years clerk of the county, a member of the reform convention of 1854, and of the convention of 1861. The latter was the son of Hon. David S. Garland, for several years a member of Congress, whose wife was a daughter of Col. Samuel Meredith, who married a sister of Patrick Henry and assisted that patriot in raising a force to march upon Williamsburg and demand of Governor Dunbar the return of gunpowder, thus precipitating the war of the Revolution. The mother of Dr. Garland, Mildred, was the daughter of James Powell, M. D., of Amherst, a descendant of the early settlers. Dr. Garland was educated at Higginbotham academy, in his native county, and at Emory and Henry college, where he was graduated in 1857, as A. M. He then began the study of law, but, one year later, feeling an irresistible impulse in that direction, he entered the ministry, being licensed to preach and received on trial by the annual conference at Portsmouth, in 1858. He was then in charge, successively, of Appomattox circuit, where his work was blessed by the conversion of about one hundred and fifty souls; Cumberland circuit, and Fincastle. In August, 1862, he resigned his charge and entered the Confederate army as chaplain of the Forty-ninth Virginia regiment. In this capacity he was present at the battles of Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, and other scenes of warfare. Resigning the chaplaincy, in the fall of 1864, on account of failing health, he returned to the ministry of his church and was assigned to the charge of Amherst circuit, whence, after four years, he was appointed to the Ninth street church, Manchester, where he served two years, and then the same term at

Trinity church, Richmond. At Portsmouth he then was put in charge of Dinwiddie street station, where he remained four years and built the Monumental church, as a memorial to Robert Williams, the pioneer of Methodism in the South. After serving at Petersburg four years, he was made presiding elder of Randolph-Macon district, and has subsequently had charge of the Lynchburg, the Richmond and the Norfolk districts. In 1885 his distinguished services were recognized by the conferment of the degree of doctor of divinity by Emory and Henry college. In 1890 he was elected as a delegate to the general conference at St. Louis; in 1894 to the general conference at Nashville; and, in 1898, to the general conference at Baltimore. He maintains fraternal connection with the orders of Masons, Knights Templar, Knights of Pythias and Odd Fellows. Dr. Garland was married in 1858 to Lucy V. Braxton, of Fredericksburg, Va., and, after her death, wedded Cissa E. Dillard, of Lynchburg, in 1884. He has eight children living: Maria Corbin, wife of George R. Howard, of Lynchburg; Samuel M., of Lebanon, Ore., ex-superintendent of Indian instruction, and attorney; J. Powell, Jr., attorney at Jackson, Texas; David S., attorney, and editor of the English and American Law Encyclopedia, Northport, L. I.; Thomas W., of Lynchburg; John B., of Nashville; Mildred I., wife of George E. Murrell, of Bedford county, and Lucy B.

Captain Theodore S. Garnett, a distinguished attorney of Norfolk, Va., in his youth served gallantly in the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born at the city of Richmond, October 28, 1844, and in boyhood entered the Episcopal high school at Alexandria, Va., and subsequently became a student in the university of Virginia. But he abandoned his studies in May, 1861, to join the company of Hanover artillery under command of Capt. William Nelson. Thence he was transferred to the navy department of the Confederacy, but resigned to enlist in the Essex troop of cavalry, Company F of the Ninth Virginia regiment. He served in this command as a private soldier, but detailed for duty at division headquarters, from May, 1863, until January 27, 1864, when he was appointed aide-de-camp on the staff of the gallant cavalry commander, Maj.-Gen. J. E. B. Stuart. He was with that general when he was mortally wounded at Yellow Tavern, May 11, 1864, and aided in carrying him from the field. He attended the dying commander until his death the next day and then was present at his funeral at Hollywood, May 13th. After this Garnett was commissioned first lieutenant and attached to the staff of Gen. W. H. F. Lee on June 1, 1864. He served in that capacity until March, 1865, when he was commissioned captain and assistant adjutant-general of the cavalry brigade of Gen. William P. Roberts, holding that rank at Appomattox. Captain Garnett participated in many serious engagements during his military career, and had three horses shot under him, but escaped himself without wounds. After the war he returned to the university and was graduated in law in 1867. His subsequent progress in the profession was rapid, and three years later he was elected judge of Nansemond county. Though re-elected, he resigned and removed to Norfolk, where he has since been successfully engaged in the practice. He is a member of the board of trustees of the Protestant Episcopal theological seminary and high school of Virginia, and

is a past-commander of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans. Captain Garnett is a member of a distinguished Virginia family. His father, Theodore S. Garnett, Sr., was prominent as a civil engineer, and was connected with the construction of several important Southern railways. He was chief engineer and superintendent of the North Carolina, the Charlotte, Columbia & Augusta, and other railroads. His death occurred in 1885. He was the son of James Mercer Garnett, who was born in Essex county June 8, 1770, and died in May, 1843. He was a founder and the first president of the United States agricultural society, and a noted author on allied topics. For twelve years he maintained a female seminary in his own house and actively sought to introduce improved methods of education. After several years' service in the Virginia legislature, he was twice elected to Congress, where he was a friend of his colleague, John Randolph, of Roanoke, and engaged in a controversy with Matthew Carey, the protectionist. In 1820 he was a member of the Virginia constitutional convention. While in Congress he and his friend Randolph were in the habit of occasionally taking a Saturday afternoon off for hunting partridges, and it is remembered as a curious instance of the change in the notions of the responsibilities of public servants, that these two distinguished men were regularly "docked" their half-days' time spent in recreation. The founder of the American branch of the Garnett family was John Garnett, who came from England in 1674 and located in Gloucester county. The mother of Captain Garnett was Florentina, daughter of Francisco Moreno, former Spanish consul at Pensacola, Fla.

Captain William E. Garrett, of Leesburg, notable among the officers of the Eighth Virginia infantry, was born in Loudoun county, November 30, 1838. Though a son of one of the most prosperous farmers of that region, he was taught habits of industry and self-reliance. In the private schools of his county, where he received his education, he stood at the head of his classes. Becoming engaged as a farmer in early manhood, he was called from that occupation by the threatened invasion of the State, and then became a member of the Eighth regiment, under command of Col. Eppa Hunton. After serving through the campaigns of the regiment in the first year of its service, including the battle of Manassas, he was unanimously chosen captain of Company I, at the reorganization, and commissioned accordingly. In this rank he served gallantly with his command and until by reason of continued bad health and the advice of the medical board he was honorably discharged. He then returned to his home and resumed the occupations of civil life, being soon afterward happily married to the daughter of Hon. Daniel Shreve, of Loudoun county. In 1874 he was elected to the office of clerk of the circuit court of his county, Hon. James Keith, now president of the court of appeals, being then upon the bench. This office he filled for twelve years, to the entire satisfaction of the bar and the public, at the same time pursuing the study of law with the advantages that his position afforded him. On retiring from office he embarked in the profession of law, in which he has met with notable success in Loudoun and adjoining counties, being lately associated in the practice with his son, a graduate of the university of Virginia. Captain Garrett is a prominent member of the order of Knights of Pythias, for

many years representing his lodge in the grand lodge, and serving in 1895-96 as grand chancellor of the order for the State of Virginia. He is also a prominent member of the Baptist church, having been, for a number of years, and is now, clerk of the Potomac Baptist association.

William M. Gary, Jr., an honored resident of King William county, cherishes the honorable distinction of being one of a family of Confederate patriots, and an ancestry long identified, both in peace and war, with the interests of Virginia. The first of his family in America was Thomas Gary, a native of Wales, who settled in Charles City county in colonial times. His son, Benjamin Gary, was a patriot soldier of the Continental army. The son of the latter, William M. Gary, a farmer and merchant of King William county, born in 1807, died in 1885, gave two sons to the Confederate army: William M., Jr., and James H. William M., Jr., the eldest, entered the service as a member of the Lee Rangers, or Company H, Ninth Virginia cavalry. He served throughout the war, mainly in the adventurous and perilous duties of a scout, and after parting with his comrades at Appomattox, returned to his home in King William county, where he now resides. He was born February 21, 1838, and in early manhood married Annie Page, daughter of Samuel Clarke Roper, of Chesterfield county. Their son, Dr. Benjamin R. Gary, prominent in the medical profession of Newport News, was born December 18, 1868, and reared in King William county. He studied at Aberdeen academy after he had reached his seventeenth year, and in the fall of 1889 entered the medical department of the university of Maryland. In the spring of 1891, having also for a year been a resident student in the university hospital, Baltimore, he was graduated, and soon after passed the examination of the Virginia State board. Beginning his professional work at Newport News in June, 1891, he has since met with flattering success. He is a member of the American and the Virginia medical associations, and for five years has been secretary and treasurer of the Newport News medical society. He also holds the office of coroner of the city. December 16, 1896, he was married to Miss Willie A. Barham, daughter of Lieut. William R. Barham, of the Confederate cavalry service.

William Kemp Gatewood, M. D., a prominent physician of West Point, Va., who devoted his professional ability to the service of the army during the Confederate period, is a native of Middlesex county, born March 5, 1836. His father, William L. Gatewood, M. D., born in Essex county, February 22, 1812, was graduated in medicine at the university of Pennsylvania, and for a period of thirty years, until his death, in 1869, was a leading physician of Middlesex county. He married Lucy, daughter of Thomas Street, a wealthy farmer of Middlesex. The parents of the senior Dr. Gatewood were Col. Kemp Gatewood, a soldier of the war of 1812 and a prosperous planter, and his wife, Barbara, daughter of General Minor, of Fredericksburg, and aunt of the eminent legal authority and professor of the university of Virginia law school, John B. Minor; also aunt of the famous scientist and loyal Confederate, Commodore Matthew F. Maury. Dr. William Kemp Gatewood was educated at Ridgeway academy in Albemarle county and William and Mary college, and prepared for the medical profession at the university of Virginia and the medical college of

Virginia, with graduation by the latter institution in 1858. He practiced medicine in Middlesex county and Bertie county, N. C., until the spring of 1861. He then enlisted as a private in Company C of the Fifth Virginia regiment of infantry, and was soon afterward detailed as assistant surgeon. In this capacity he served throughout the war, mainly in the hospital at Richmond. His was a service essential to the army. There were none too many skilled and faithful surgeons and those who labored in this field are entitled to grateful remembrance and a due share of the honors that fall to duty well done. In the years that have since elapsed Surgeon Gatewood has devoted himself entirely to his profession, until 1886 in Middlesex county and since then at West Point, where, during the palmy days of that seaport, he had a remarkably large practice, and is yet a successful and prosperous physician. He is the local surgeon for the Southern railroad, and quarantine officer at West Point, and has memberships in the State medical society, the American medical association, and the association of Southern railway surgeons. He was married in 1860 to Martha J. Bowden, who died in October, 1875, and in 1879 he married Mary McCandlish, daughter of Col. Robert McCandlish, of Williamsburg, Va.

Lieutenant L. A. Gay, of Company D, Third Virginia regiment of infantry, now clerk of the circuit court of Southampton county, was born in Isle of Wight county, Va., in 1840. His father, William E. Gay, a native of that county, was an influential citizen and active in politics, at one time holding the office of county commissioner of revenue. He died in 1865. Lieutenant Gay was educated in the schools of his vicinity and at Buckhorn academy, leaving school in April, 1861, to serve in the cause of the Confederacy. He enlisted as third sergeant in Company D, Third Virginia regiment of infantry, was soon promoted orderly-sergeant, then third lieutenant in June, 1862, and finally first lieutenant, in which rank he commanded his company during a large part of the war. Early in the spring of 1862 he left Rock's wharf on the James river, where his company had been stationed during 1861, and, reaching Yorktown, was assigned to Longstreet's division, with which he participated in the battles at Dam No. 2, Williamsburg, Seven Pines and the Seven Days' battles, his regiment suffering particularly heavy losses at Frayser's Farm. He was with his regiment in its conspicuous service on the field of Second Manassas, after which he was disabled by illness until after the Maryland campaign. He was in the battle of Fredericksburg, and then participated in the North Carolina and Suffolk campaigns of Longstreet's corps. At the battle of Gettysburg he took part in the famous assault of Pickett's division on the third day, and, after the return of the army to Virginia, was assigned with his command to duty in the defenses of Richmond. After being at Richmond a short time he was detached with his company and sent to Danville, Va., for provost duty, guarding prisoners, for about fourteen months. He was frequently engaged in battle, receiving severe wounds in the engagement near Dinwiddie Court House. On account of these injuries he was lying in the hospital at Danville at the time of the surrender. Then, being paroled, he returned to his home in Southampton county and, as soon as his health permitted, engaged in farming, his occupation since that time until appointed to his present official position. He has also held for four years the office

of assessor and collector of taxes and for about sixteen years the office of commissioner of revenue. He is a valued comrade of the Urquhart-Gillette camp, United Confederate Veterans. On March 29, 1866, he was married to Elizabeth Rosa Bryant, who died April 18, 1891, leaving five children, Ann E., Josiah B., Antoinette A., Rosa M. and Lee A.

R. R. Gee, of Petersburg, Va., now prominent in the business of life insurance in that State, is one of three brothers who served in the army of Northern Virginia. Their father, Henry Gee, a wealthy farmer of Prince George county, served with the Virginia troops in the war of 1812 and died prior to the Confederate era. One of these brothers, Lieut. John Gee, was a member of the Petersburg cavalry company, under Captain Goodwin, and, surviving the struggle, was subsequently engaged in mercantile pursuits until his death. Another, Lieut. Winfield S. Gee, served in the Forty-first Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade, until he fell while commanding his company in the terrible fight at the Crater on the Petersburg lines. R. R. Gee, the survivor, who cherishes the memory of these gallant brothers, was born in Prince George county in 1831. He was engaged in farming, in charge of the family homestead, until 1864, when he enlisted in Company E of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, Mahone's division, and shared the arduous service of the command in the trenches before Petersburg, and its various severe battles, until the surrender at Appomattox. He returned then to his vocation as a farmer, and continued to be thus engaged until 1885, when he removed to Petersburg and became connected with the life insurance company of Virginia. For about ten years past he has held the position of superintendent of that company. He has also extensive property interests, which have largely increased in value under his skillful business management. He maintains a membership in A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans.

William Pate Gibbs, a prominent wholesale merchant of Lynchburg, is a native of Bedford county, where he was born in 1843 and reared and educated. Early in 1861 he became a member of the Bedford light artillery, which was made Company A of Stephen D. Lee's battalion just before the opening of the Seven Days' battles before Richmond. Mr. Gibbs entered the service as a private and was promoted corporal. He participated in the many battles and campaigns in which the battalion was engaged from the beginning until the close of the war, his first actions being at York town, and the battles around Richmond. After fighting through the Peninsular campaign, and the second battle of Manassas, he was engaged at Sharpsburg, Md., in the great combat of September 17, 1862, and subsequently did effective service at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg on the second and third days. Going west with Longstreet's command, he fought at Chickamauga, and, after his return to Virginia, was actively engaged in the Wilderness and fought fourteen days at Spottsylvania, serving on the left of the "bloody angle." In the defense of Petersburg he served for several months on the Howlett house line. In March, 1865, he was detailed with others to procure forage for the army, and was engaged on that special service in the last dark days of defeat and surrender. After the fall of the Southern cause he returned to his home and resided in Bedford county until 1872, when he

removed to Lynchburg. There he engaged in business and has met with notable success, now being identified with the wholesale grocery trade, and is reckoned among the useful and enterprising citizens of the town.

Colonel J. Catlett Gibson, of Culpeper, was born in that county in 1835, and was educated at the university of Virginia. In the spring of 1861 he enlisted at Harper's Ferry in the Culpeper Minute Men, later a company of the Thirteenth regiment. After serving as a private six weeks, he organized a new company, of which he was elected captain, and which was assigned to the Forty-ninth infantry. He commanded his company at the first battle of Manassas, upon the reorganization in 1862 was elected lieutenant-colonel, and not long after was promoted colonel, the rank in which he served throughout the remainder of the war. Colonel Gibson was wounded twice at Seven Pines, one of the wounds being quite serious; again by a fragment of shell at White Oak swamp, and slightly at both Second Manassas and Chantilly. At Sharpsburg he was slightly wounded on the night of the 16th, and on the 17th was wounded by a canister shot so seriously that he was unfit for duty for several months. He was slightly wounded at Fredericksburg, and at Bethesda church, in 1864, his right leg was so mangled that he was compelled to retire from active service. During the fight of May 12, 1864, at the "bloody angle," near Spottsylvania, Colonel Gibson was particularly distinguished for gallantry. His brigade went into action, after Johnson's division had been overwhelmed, under command of Col. John S. Huffman, in Gen. John B. Gordon's division. Gen. R. E. Lee, riding up, undertook to lead the charge with uncovered head, but was dissuaded by General Gordon, his horse being led back to a space between the Forty-ninth regiment and Gordon's brigade. As Lee rode with Gordon to the rear, Colonel Gibson cried out: "General, shall we give them the bayonet?" and, receiving the answer "Yes," gave the command to charge. In this movement Colonel Huffman was wounded, and, when the brigade reached the redoubts on the left of the angle, the center was exposed to a rear fire. The command was then divided, Colonel Gibson taking charge of three regiments on the right and Col. James B. Terrill of two on the left. A bloody fight followed, in the midst of which Colonel Gibson moved part of his command to the right to support a portion of Gordon's brigade, which was commanded in this fight by Gen. Clement A. Evans. Presently his ammunition gave out and he rode to General Ewell to report his necessities. On his return he ran into a Yankee line, but they laughed at his mistake and cheered him. A moment later, in the terrible confusion, he encountered another line of Federals, who fired upon him and wounded his horse so that the animal fell just as Colonel Gibson reached his command. Subsequently, at Morton's ford, he remembered the consideration of his enemies at Spottsylvania and prevented his men from firing upon a gallant Federal officer who was trying to force his skirmish line upon the Confederate breastworks. In 1866-67 Colonel Gibson represented Fauquier and Rappahannock counties in the Virginia constitutional convention. In the meantime he engaged in the practice of law, and, a few years after the war, removed to Culpeper and married the daughter of Judge Henry Shackelford. They have one son living, Edwin H. Gibson, commonwealth attorney for

Madison county. Colonel Gibson was elected to the Virginia legislature in 1879 and several times subsequently, and, during the first administration of President Cleveland, he was United States attorney for the eastern district of Virginia. Several brothers of Colonel Gibson were in the Confederate service. Pierre Gibson was an officer of the Sixth Virginia cavalry and was killed at Westminster, Md., previous to the battle of Gettysburg; John S. Gibson, an ordnance officer of the Forty-ninth regiment, died after the war, in Alabama; Eustace Gibson, first lieutenant in the Seventh cavalry, until disabled by wounds, afterward captain quartermaster, has, since the war, represented a West Virginia district in Congress; Edwin Gibson, who enlisted before he was fourteen years old, was elected lieutenant and captain, but, on account of his youth, was sent to the Virginia military institute. He died in 1869.

John St. P. Gibson, M. D., of Staunton, Va., was born in Culpeper, now Rappahannock county, Va., in 1832. Removing with his parents to Maryland, in 1842, he studied medicine in the university of Maryland and was graduated in 1858. He practiced his profession in Preston county, Va., until July, 1862, when he entered the Confederate service as surgeon in the rear hospitals at Aldie and Winchester. In November he was commissioned assistant surgeon of the Fifty-second Virginia infantry, was soon promoted surgeon, and at Gettysburg, and thence until the close of the war, held the rank of brigade surgeon. After his parole at Appomattox he practiced at Waynesboro until 1877, when he made his home at Staunton, where his professional career has been eminently successful. It is interesting to note that Dr. Gibson and Stonewall Jackson descended from the same great-grandfather, Minor Winn.

Robertson Gilbert, a heroic soldier of Mahone's brigade, army of Northern Virginia, left his farm home in Norfolk county, in April, 1861, as a private in the Norfolk County Rifle Patriots, for the military service of Virginia. His company was organized in 1860. After the 21st of April it served at the arsenal of St. Helena and the Gosport navy yard, until March, 1862, when it joined the Forty-first regiment, Virginia infantry, under Colonel (afterward General) Chambliss, at Sewell's point, as Company F. His first battle was at Seven Pines, where his company was distinguished for steady valor, and he subsequently fought on the peninsula, at the Charles City road and Malvern hill. Throughout the remainder of the career of Mahone's brigade he was a faithful and devoted soldier, shared all the famous battles of his command, including Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Turkey Ridge, Frayser's Farm, Cold Harbor, the many months in the trenches, including the famous battle of the Crater, Davis' Farm, Reams' Station, Burgess' Mill, Hatcher's Run and Cumberland Church. Surviving all this arduous and dangerous service, he removed to Tennessee after the close of hostilities and died there in 1882. Lafayette Gilbert, a son of the above, who cherishes the memory of the patriotic deeds of his father, and is an active member of the Junior Neimeyer-Shaw camp, Confederate Veterans, was born in North Carolina and was brought by his parents to Norfolk county in his childhood. Here, during his early manhood, he was engaged in farming, but left that to embark in the lumber trade, which he followed until

1889. Since then he has been quite successful in the management of a grocery house at Berkley. In 1871 he was married to Joanna, daughter of Jonathan Bateman, of Norfolk county.

James D. Godsey, an artilleryman of the Twenty-second Virginia battalion, now residing at Newport News, was born in Chesterfield county, Va., June 19, 1842, the son of Francis and Parmelia (Hatcher) Godsey. The father dying before the birth of his son James, the latter was cared for by his mother, upon the farm of her father, Abner Hatcher, in Chesterfield county, and given a common school education. He entered the Confederate service in January, 1862, as a private in a company first designated as the Second Virginia heavy artillery, and subsequently known as Company A of the Twenty-second Virginia battalion. His first service was in the Peninsular campaign which was begun by McClellan's invasion soon after his enlistment, and at the battle of Gaines' Mill, June 27, 1862, he fell with a wound in the right side that totally disabled him for further active service. He was confined to bed for three months, but, as soon as he was able to render any duty, he accepted a position in the commissary department at Richmond, where he remained on duty until the close of the war. He has made his home in Virginia since then, with the exception of eight years spent in the State of Missouri. In June, 1881, he located at Newport News and was given a responsible position in the service of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, which he still holds. He was one of the early victims of the war and his service at the front was consequently brief, but it was distinguished by the bravery and devotion of a true Confederate soldier. Hiram W. Godsey, a brother of the foregoing, born in Chesterfield county, entered the service in April, 1861, as a member of a company organized eight years previous, which was mustered in as Company D of the Fourteenth Virginia infantry, and served in Armistead's brigade of Pickett's division, Longstreet's corps. He shared in the operations of his command up to and including the Pennsylvania campaign. In the fatal assault of his division upon the Federal lines at Gettysburg he did the duty of a devoted soldier. Only eight of his company returned alive to the Confederate lines, and his body, left on the battlefield, now reposes in an unknown grave somewhere on the green hillsides about the little Pennsylvania village.

Garrett G. Gooch, a prominent citizen of Staunton, Va., was born in Orange county in 1837. He was reared and educated in Louisa county, and, during the administration of President Buchanan, was appointed a mail agent on the old Virginia Central railroad. He held this position at the outbreak of the war, but abandoned it to share the perils and the honor of the military defense of the State. He enlisted as a private in the Thirteenth Virginia regiment of infantry at Winchester, in June, 1861, and served with that command about one year, participating creditably in the first battle of Manassas. He was then detailed to the mail service of the Confederate States, the government being in need of experienced men in that important duty. He remained in the mail service until the close of the war when he was paroled by Federal authority. At the close of hostilities he embarked in the mercantile business on an extensive scale, conducting ten stores in Virginia and West Virginia, and conducted this business with

much success from 1868 until 1882, when he made his home at Staunton, and for five years conducted a wholesale grocery business. Since retiring from that activity he has been engaged as a railroad contractor. In 1872 Mr. Gooch was married in Alleghany county to Mary W., daughter of the late Dr. George H. Payne.

John Goode, a Virginian, whose name is prominently associated with public events before, during and since the war of the Confederacy, was born in Bedford county, May 27, 1829. His father, John Goode, was a prosperous planter and a soldier in the war of 1812. His paternal grandfather, Edmund Goode, removed, in colonial days, from Caroline to Bedford county and served in the war of the Revolution. His mother, Ann M. Leftwich, was a daughter of John Leftwich and Sally (Walton) Leftwich, and granddaughter of Joel Leftwich, who served as an officer of the Continental army at Germantown, Brandywine, Camden and Guilford Court House (being severely wounded in the latter battle), and in the war of 1812 commanded a brigade under Gen. William Henry Harrison at Fort Meigs, afterward was promoted major-general, and, during several sessions, sat in the Virginia legislature. Mr. Goode was educated at the New London academy in Bedford county and at Emory and Henry college, where he was graduated in June, 1848. During the two succeeding winters he studied law with Hon. John W. Brockenbrough, at Lexington, was admitted to the bar in April, 1851, and began the practice of his profession at Liberty, the seat of his native county. At the age of twenty-two he was elected to the house of delegates; in 1852 and 1856 was a presidential elector on the Democratic ticket and in 1861 was a member of the Virginia convention, where he earnestly advocated the secession of Virginia, after Northern troops had been called out to coerce the previously seceding States. On May 1, in earnest of his views regarding the duty of the State, he enlisted as a private in the first company that left Bedford county for active service; mustered in as Company A of the Second Virginia cavalry, and as such participated in the first battle of Manassas. He was subsequently assigned to duty, on the staff of Gen. Jubal A. Early, as volunteer aide-de-camp with the rank of captain. In the fall of 1861 he was elected to the congress of the Confederate States, and on February 22, 1862, took his seat in that body, which he continued to hold, by re-election, until the close of the war. During the recess of 1862 he rejoined General Early, as volunteer aide, and in that capacity served in the battle of Malvern Hill, also during the campaign against General Hunter in 1864. In September, 1865, he removed to Norfolk for the practice of his profession and was there elected to the Virginia legislature of 1866-67. In 1874 he was elected representative in Congress from the Norfolk district and served in the Forty-fourth and, by re-election, in the Forty-fifth and Forty-sixth Congresses. In his candidacy for the Forty-seventh Congress he was defeated on account of his opposition to the proposed "readjustment" of the State debt. As a member of the Forty-sixth Congress he was the author of the bill providing for the erection of a monument at Yorktown in commemoration of the surrender of Lord Cornwallis to the allied armies of Washington and Lafayette. He was also president of the Yorktown centennial association. During the Forty-fifth and Forty-sixth Congresses he was chairman of the committee on education. He has

served as a member of the national committee of his political party, and in 1884 was an elector at large for Virginia and president of the electoral college. In May, 1885, he was appointed by President Cleveland solicitor-general of the United States, an office which he held until August, 1886. During his term of service he was sent by the department of justice to British Columbia to represent the United States in an important case of extradition. At the termination of his official career he established a law office at Washington and resumed the practice, in which he has attained great prominence. During his professional career he has been connected with several notable criminal trials and has held the position of lecturer on criminal law at the National law school at Washington. Mr. Goode is a member of the board of visitors to William and Mary college, Virginia agricultural and mechanical college, and the university of Virginia. He is also a member of the commission established by the United States and Chili to decide upon the validity of claims. In July, 1855, he married Sally Urquhart, daughter of Richard A. Urquhart and Mary (Norfleet) Urquhart, of "Strawberry Plains," Isle of Wight county, and they have four children living: Mary, wife of William T. Brooke, city engineer of Norfolk; Richard U., a topographical engineer in the geological survey; John B., a practicing attorney at Bedford City, Va., where Mr. Goode maintains his residence, and James U., a graduate of the Washington and Lee university, now practicing law at Norfolk, Va.

John Richard Goode, of Richmond, Va., a veteran of Stuart's cavalry, was born in Chesterfield county, Va., in the year 1836. His family had long been residents of the State, and the grandfather, Benjamin Goode, a native of Chesterfield county, served in the war of 1812 with the rank of captain. At the age of fifteen years he removed with his parents to Powhatan county, where he received his education, and at the outbreak of war abandoned his occupations to become a soldier in the Confederate service. He enlisted, May 28, 1861, as orderly-sergeant in a company of the Twentieth Virginia infantry, and subsequently served with this command in the West Virginia campaign until after the battle of Rich Mountain. The command met with such losses in that engagement that it was disbanded in the fall of 1861, and he then became a private in the Powhatan troop of cavalry, afterward enrolled as Company E of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. Soon after the battle of Chancellorsville he was promoted sergeant, in which rank he served until the close of the war, when he was paroled at Richmond. His service included participation in the battle of Rich Mountain, and then, after joining the cavalry, the skirmish at Malvern Hill, soon after the Seven Days' battles, the raid around Pope's army and the capture of his headquarters at Catlett's Station, the raid through Pennsylvania from Carlisle to Gettysburg, the battles of Trevilian's Station and Yellow Tavern, and an engagement near Front Royal, where he was shot through the lungs, a severe and dangerous wound which caused his disability from August, 1864, to February, 1865. Subsequently he participated in the movement from Richmond to Appomattox and joined in the surrender of the army. Then he made his home in Powhatan county for five years, after which he removed to Richmond, where he has subsequently resided. In 1885 he engaged in business on

his own account and has met with flattering success. Still alive to the memories of the army, he maintains memberships in Lee and Pickett camps of Confederate Veterans and in the Powhatan troop association, of which he has served as treasurer. In 1866 he was married to Sarah E., daughter of the late Marlowe W. Atkinson, of Powhatan county, who died, leaving two children, Wyatt L. and Richard N. In 1874 he was married to Ann E., daughter of the late John Keese, of Charlotte county, and they have two children, John K. and Mary L.

Colonel J. Thomas Goode, a prominent artillery officer and commander of the Wise brigade at the close of the war, and who was directly in line for immediate promotion to the rank of brigadier-general, was born in Mecklenburg county, Va., July 21, 1835, and was educated at the Virginia military institute at Lexington, Va. In 1855 he was commissioned second lieutenant of artillery in the United States army and assigned to Company F, Fourth regiment, with the following company officers: Capt. John C. Pemberton, subsequently lieutenant-general C. S. A.; First Lieut. Stephen D. Lee, subsequently lieutenant-general C. S. A.; First Lieut. Gustavus A. DeRussy, subsequently colonel U. S. A., and Second Lieut. J. Thomas Goode, subsequently colonel C. S. A. With this company Lieutenant Goode served one year at Fort Hamilton, N. Y. harbor, and commanded the post for months during a scourge of yellow fever, suffering severely with the malady himself. From there his regiment was ordered to Florida, where he performed arduous service in the Seminole war of 1856-57. With Stephen D. Lee, then first lieutenant, he waded the everglades, swam rivers, and was five days without food, excepting horse and alligators on the fifth day, fought Indians and suffered much from chills and fever, having several congestive chills. From Florida his regiment went to Kansas to suppress the John Brown rebellion. He was then promoted first lieutenant of Company A, same regiment, and went to Utah in command of Companies A and E, Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston's command. From Camp Floyd, Utah, he escorted several companies of emigrants to California, having repeated encounters with Indians. In 1861 he resigned his commission in the United States army to offer his services to his mother State, Virginia, and, in order to reach his home, ran the gauntlet of hostile Indians and dareknights, traveling thirteen hundred miles by private conveyance, bringing his wife and two little girls through the Indian country with no escort save one hired man, a California horse thief who boasted that he was coming east to steal horses from the Federal army for the Confederates, and vice versa. He was Hobson's choice, but proved faithful in this emergency. On reaching St. Joseph, Mo., Lieutenant Goode was offered the colonelcy of a Confederate regiment just formed, but, wishing to bring his family to Virginia, had to decline. Reporting for duty in Richmond, he was assigned to duty as chief of artillery at Yorktown with rank of major, was afterward promoted lieutenant-colonel and later full colonel. After the evacuation of Yorktown Colonel Goode was directed by Gen. R. E. Lee to take charge of the batteries around Richmond, but, finding only one small fort with four smooth bore 32-pounders mounted, he applied to have his regiment temporarily armed with rifles that it might aid in the defenses of the city. His command was in the battle of Seven

Pines, and two companies manned the heavy guns at Drewry's Bluff which repulsed the attack of the Federal gunboats Monitor and Galena. The regiment was then assigned to Wise's brigade and served with that command to the end of the war. After the battle of Malvern Hill, Wise's brigade held the Southern line of defenses to the Confederate capital until 1863, when it was assigned to the command of Gen. G. T. Beauregard in South Carolina and served in defense of Charleston and the sea coast until 1864, when General Beauregard and his command were summoned to the defense of Petersburg, Va. Wise's brigade fought and routed the enemy at Stony Creek on the Weldon railroad whilst en route to Petersburg. It fought and won the battles of Port Walthall Junction and Clay's Farm in Chesterfield county, and a series of battles in front of Petersburg (in which Colonel Goode commanded the brigade on and after the 16th of June, General Wise having been placed on detached service), notably the 15th, 16th, 17th and 18th of June, and the battle of the Crater, July 30, 1864. The last named was one of the bloodiest battles of the civil war, lasting from 5 o'clock in the morning to 2 o'clock p. m. Wise's brigade was the first command in line immediately on the right of the crater, and, the object of the enemy being to widen the breach so as to march his army in, he concentrated all the fire that could possibly be brought to bear on this command, both infantry and artillery, and the loss was appalling. One-third of the left regiment perished. The brigade commander who remained with that regiment during the day had to have the dead lifted out of the trenches to give room for the living to fight. About 2 o'clock Gen. Bushrod Johnson, the division commander, appeared and directed Colonel Goode to visit the crater and report its condition. He can never forget the sickening scene he witnessed, dead and wounded Confederates and Federals, both white and colored, lying together at the bottom of the pit. General Wise having returned to the brigade, Colonel Goode commanded his regiment in the hotly contested battles of Hatcher's Run and Boydton Plank Road on the 29th and 31st of March, 1865. On the retreat he was engaged in continued fighting, bringing up the rear most of the time. He fought faithfully in the great battle of Sailor's Creek, which lasted from dawn until dark. General Wise was promoted major-general from that battle and Colonel Goode succeeded him as brigadier-general, but, the Confederate authorities being then en route South and the war closing in a few days, they never received their commissions, which they had faithfully won. Their last battle was at Appomattox Court House, when the flags of truce were passing between Generals Grant and Lee. Goode made many hairbreadth escapes and was struck three times, but was never seriously wounded. Since the close of the war he has taken some part in public affairs, representing his county in the legislature of Virginia in 1891-92. He has been twice nominated for Congress since, but declined to run. He is a son of the Hon. William O. Goode, who represented the Fourth Virginia district in Congress for many terms and had just been re-elected at the time of his death.

Colonel Thomas F. Goode, of the Third Virginia cavalry, was born in Roanoke county, Va., in 1827, the son of Thomas Goode, M. D., a prominent physician of that region. He was educated in

the old field schools and the Episcopal high school at Alexandria, and then studied law with Judge Edward R. Chambers, of Boydton, gaining admission to the bar in 1848. He engaged in the practice of his profession at Boydton and speedily became prominent at the bar as well as in public affairs generally. In 1856 he was elected commonwealth attorney, an office which he held until the outbreak of war, and for a short time after the close of the same. He was a member of the famous State convention of 1861 which adopted the ordinance of secession, and with true loyalty to his State, though in delicate health, entered thoroughly into the work of preparing for military defense. He organized and was given the rank of captain of the Mecklenburg troop of cavalry, which subsequently became Company A of the Third Virginia cavalry regiment. During the first year of the war he commanded his company, unattached, in General Magruder's department, the peninsula, and upon the organization of the regiment was promoted major, and soon rose through lieutenant-colonel to colonel. In May, 1862, commanding the Third regiment, he served under Stuart in guarding the withdrawal of the forces from Yorktown, and during the fighting on the Telegraph road was sent by Stuart with a hundred men to pursue a body of the enemy. Stuart reported that when Colonel Goode came upon the enemy "a spirited conflict ensued, in which the enemy's cavalry, after repeated charges, was entirely routed and betook themselves to the shelter of artillery and infantry." Stuart added: "Colonel Goode's gallant conduct and the bravery of his men deserve the highest praise. He captured the enemy's flag and withdrew, bringing his wounded in a very orderly manner." In his report of the battle of Williamsburg, which soon followed, General Stuart alluded again to the "unflinching intrepidity" and patient endurance of the regiment under Colonel Goode's command. But it soon became apparent that, while Colonel Goode's gallantry and efficient soldiery were such as to attract the admiring mention of the famous Stuart, his health would not permit him to follow his regiment through its glorious career. After the battle of Seven Pines, and when he had been recommended for promotion to brigadier-general, he was compelled to retire from the active service. He served in the legislature a portion of the term of 1863-64, but resigned on account of ill health. After the close of hostilities he resumed the practice of law, but gave this up because of his health in 1875. Soon afterward, at Buffalo Springs, he discovered the famous lithia water there, in the development of which he took a leading part. He is now a resident of Boydton, Va. In 1861 he was married to Rosa C., daughter of Edward R. Chambers, and they have five children: Edward C., commonwealth attorney for Mecklenburg county; Thomas F., banker at Boydton; John C.; Marian K., wife of T. J. Briscoe, Knoxville, Tenn., and Kate.

A. J. Goodrich, a well-known business man of Norfolk, who served throughout the war as a private in the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, was born in Southampton county, Va., in 1839. He is the son of E. L. Goodrich, who before the Confederate period was an inspector of grain at Norfolk, and during the war was connected with the navy yard at Charlotte, N. C. At the secession of Virginia A. J. Goodrich went into active service as a member of the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, a company organized thirty-

three years before. He was on duty when the powder was removed from Fort Norfolk April 19, 1861. Not long afterward the company turned over its four brass howitzers to the Huger battery, and served with the Sixteenth regiment, also in artillery service, mainly at Sewell's point, until the abandonment of Norfolk. During this time Private Goodrich witnessed the naval duel between the Virginia and Monitor. On reaching Petersburg the company was furnished six guns, and assigned to the defenses of Richmond. In the fall of 1862 Mr. Goodrich was with the company at Brandy Station ford on the Rappahannock, and later he took part in the battle of Fredericksburg. In 1863 he fought at Chancellorsville and Gettysburg, attached to Colonel Garnett's battalion of artillery, and in 1864 he was at the front and in the heat of the fight, in the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction and Cold Harbor. During the siege of Petersburg he served on the lines to the right of the scene of the Crater mine explosion and battle. At Hatcher's Run, April 2, 1865, he was captured by the enemy, and being sent to Point Lookout, was held there as a prisoner of war until June 14, 1865. Then returning to Norfolk he resumed the mercantile pursuits he had entered upon before the war, and after several years' service as a clerk, opened a grocery establishment in 1873, which he conducted with much success for about twenty years, then retiring from trade. He was a director of the City gas company, and is now a member of the street sewerage and drainage board.

John T. Goolrick, a prominent attorney of Fredericksburg, Va., was born at that city, September 10, 1845. His father, Hon. Peter Goolrick, a native of Sligo, Ireland, and son of Bartholomew Goolrick, was born in 1801, served as a midshipman in the British navy until compelled by ill health to resign, came to America in 1820 and made his home at Fredericksburg, where he was prosperous as a merchant, served seven years as mayor, and died in 1868. His wife was Jane V., daughter of Charles Tackett, a distinguished Virginia educator of the former period. When John T. Goolrick had reached the age of nineteen years he enlisted in the Fredericksburg artillery, while the fighting was in progress at Spottsylvania Court House, and participated in the remainder of the campaign from the Wilderness to Richmond, including the battle of Cold Harbor, and then served on the lines in defense of the Confederate capital, taking part in the battle of the Crater, and the battle of Fort Harrison on October 10, 1864. In the latter fight he was wounded in the left leg, and, in consequence, was disabled until the latter part of March, 1865. After the close of hostilities he completed his legal studies at the Valley law school under Judge Richard Parker, brother of the late Capt. W. H. Parker, and began the practice as a lawyer at Fredericksburg in 1870. In 1871 he was elected judge of the city court and judge of the county court, and in this dual judicial capacity he served for a period of twelve years. In 1883 he resumed the practice as an attorney and has continued the same since then, except during two years, 1886-88, when he held the office of chief of divisions of the postoffice department at Washington, D. C., under appointment of President Cleveland. He has also held for four years the office of commonwealth attorney for the city of Fredericksburg. He was the first commander and is an active member of Maury

camp, Confederate Veterans. On June 5, 1872, Judge Goolrick was married to Frances Bernard White, daughter of Capt. Chester B. White, U. S. A., who died in 1857 at Benicia barracks, California. Her mother was Frances Hooe, of King George county, a granddaughter of George Mason, of Gunston, the author of the Virginia bill of rights and the intimate friend of General Washington. Mrs. Goolrick succeeded her mother as president of the Confederate memorial society of Fredericksburg and served several years as vice-president for Virginia, of the National Martha Washington monument association.

Lieutenant John Wotton Gordon, of Richmond, was born March 25, 1847, at Hertford, Perquimans county, N. C. His grandfather was John Copeland Gordon, a wealthy planter at Woodlawn, N. C., and the grandfather of the latter, coming from Loch Lomond, Scotland, founded the family in America. His father, George Bradford Gordon, a graduate of the State university and a lawyer by profession, maintained a plantation near Gatesville, N. C., where young Gordon was reared and prepared for college. At the age of fourteen, the State having seceded from the Union, he sought permission to enter one of the volunteer military companies, but was instead sent to the Hillsboro military academy. Returning, in the fall of 1862, to his home, then within the Federal lines, he determined to join the Confederate forces, and, in January, 1863, mounted upon a pet mare of his own rearing, he passed the picket line at Franklin, Va., and rode alone toward the lines of the army of Northern Virginia. Near Drewry's bluff he fell in with a squadron of cavalry, with whom he began his military career at the age of fifteen years. On January 20, 1863, he enlisted as a private in Company C, Second North Carolina cavalry, which, with the Ninth, Tenth, Thirteenth and Fifteenth Virginia regiments, composed the brigade of Gen. W. H. F. Lee. Soon afterward he engaged in Longstreet's siege of Suffolk and had the pleasure of doing his first fighting against regiments of Federal cavalry which had pillaged his father's home. In this campaign, during a fight on the Nansemond river, while acting as courier for General McLaws, bearing a dispatch across a newly plowed field, under fire of the enemy's sharpshooters, Gordon and his horse were nearly buried in the mud thrown by a shell which exploded upon the ground a few feet before them. His gallantry and daring resulted in his clothing being several times pierced by minie balls which sought closer touch, and, at Brandy Station, June 9, 1863, he was disabled by two wounds and fell into the hands of the enemy. After four weeks in hospital at Alexandria, he was confined as a prisoner of war at the Old Capitol prison and at Point Lookout until his exchange in February, 1864. On his return to the ranks he was promoted corporal, and sergeant, and finally aide-de-camp, with rank of first lieutenant, on the staff of Gen. W. P. Roberts, a gallant soldier who had rapidly risen from the rank of orderly in Gordon's company to the command of a brigade. Except when wounded and in prison Lieutenant Gordon never missed a day's duty nor any of the engagements of his regiment, among which, besides those mentioned, were the battles of Beaver Dam, Ashland, Yellow Tavern, North Anna, White Oak Swamp, Hanover, Hawe's Shop, Salem Church, Samaria, Malvern Hill, Reams' Station and other affairs on the Weldon railroad,

Poplar Springs Church, Stony Creek, Cabin Point, Blacks and Whites, and other fights on Wilson's and Kautz' raids, Hatcher's Run, etc. He was several times detailed on important duty. In the early part of 1865 he was sent in charge of a detail to eastern North Carolina on a reconnoissance on the Chowan river, and with orders to break up a marauding band of deserters from both armies who had their headquarters on Flax island. At the close of the war Lieutenant Gordon found that his father, annoyed by Federal raiders and the loss of his slaves, had sold his plantation and invested all his wealth in Confederate bonds. Thus, at the age of eighteen, being the oldest son of a penniless family, he heroically devoted himself to their support by farming rented land. His labors were effective, and, at the age of twenty-one, he was able to leave the family in some comfort and accept an instructorship in St. John's school, Wilmington. Here and at Frederick college, Maryland, he taught until, in 1871, he returned to Wilmington, and engaged in the business of fire insurance, in which he has since been notably successful, being now general agent for several states of the Hamburg-Bremen and United States fire insurance companies, with headquarters at Richmond, Va. In 1876 he enlisted as a private in the Wilmington light infantry and subsequently became captain of the Whiting Rifles, from which he was promoted lieutenant-colonel of the Second regiment North Carolina State guard. Since 1879 he has resided at Richmond, Va., and has become identified with the city's best interests. In 1877 he was married to Miss Annie Pender, of Tarboro, N. C., a niece of Gen. W. D. Pender.

Lieutenant Mason Gordon, of Charlottesville, Va., was born in Albemarle county in 1840 and, at the beginning of hostilities between the North and South, left home as a private in the Albemarle Light Horse, a gallant cavalry organization which was afterward known as Company K of the Second Virginia cavalry, General Munford's old regiment. He served with his troop at the first battle of Manassas, with Ashby and Jackson through the Shenandoah valley campaign of 1862, and Second Manassas, the frequent skirmishes through Maryland and the battle of Sharpsburg. After the latter battle he was detached from his regiment and ordered to report to General Robertson in the department of Virginia and North Carolina, with whom he served as second lieutenant. At a later date he was attached to the command of General Whiting, at Wilmington, where he remained until that city was evacuated early in 1865. Then, joining the army under J. E. Johnston, he participated in the battle of Bentonville in March. He was a gallant soldier and an intelligent and faithful officer.

William A. Gordon, of Washington, D. C., who rendered effective service to the Confederacy in the engineer department of the army of Northern Virginia, and since the war has been a prominent attorney and financier of the National capital, was born in the District of Columbia in 1841. His father, William A. Gordon, was a native of Baltimore, was educated at the United States military academy at West Point, and from about 1824 to 1874 held the position of chief clerk of the quartermaster-general's office at Washington. His maternal grandfather, Dr. James H. Blake, was elected mayor of Washington in 1812, and was the intimate friend of President Madison. He was educated at the Columbian col-

lege at Washington, receiving the degree of master of arts in 1861. For a time he remained in the university as assistant professor of mathematics and then began the study of law under the preceptorship of Judge Robert Ould, then United States attorney for the District of Columbia. In the meantime the war of the Confederacy was under way and his sympathy with the South, which he neither sought to conceal nor make obtrusive, became known to the Federal authorities. In August, 1862, while on a visit to Baltimore, he was arrested upon a steamer, and, upon his refusal to take the oath, was conveyed to Fort McHenry and held as a prisoner for several days. Then released through the influence of his family he was ordered to return to Washington and report to the officer in command. These reports were required to be made weekly, and were kept up until in October following he was allowed to accompany a party of prisoners for exchange to Richmond. There he at once tendered his services to the Confederate authorities and was appointed assistant engineer with the rank of first lieutenant. His first assignment of duty was to make reconnoissances in Fauquier, Culpeper and adjoining counties, with a party under the protection of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. In the spring of 1863 he was called to Richmond to accept a commission as lieutenant of engineers, and reported to General Pickett, with whose division he joined in the march to Gettysburg and was under fire in that battle. On the return to Virginia he was ordered to Richmond to take charge under Colonel Talcott of the regimental headquarters of the First regiment of engineer troops, then being organized under a special act of congress. Of this command he was appointed acting adjutant and served in that capacity until the organization was completed, when he declined the appointment of adjutant and returned to his company of engineers. In this capacity he took part in the subsequent campaigns of the Wilderness, Cold Harbor, the operations on James river and in the defense of Petersburg, where, after the explosion of the Crater, he was put in charge of Cook's salient, immediately to the right of the Crater, where he protected that portion of the line by countermining, the only work of the kind, so far as known, in the Confederate lines. About five weeks before Petersburg was evacuated he was ordered to Chesterfield county to construct bridges over the Appomattox. By the time this work was concluded the evacuation occurred and Lieutenant Gordon was assigned to the rear guard of the retreating army, with orders to assist in directing the destruction of the bridges. He was probably the last man of the Confederate army to cross High Bridge, having applied the torch to that and another bridge near it, under the fire of the enemy. Two days later he surrendered at Appomattox. Returning to Washington he resumed the study of law, and, though he could not be admitted to the bar for several years on account of the test oath, has been engaged in the practice since 1866. In this he has been quite successful, and at the same time he has formed many important business connections. He is president of the Washington safe deposit company and of the Linthicum institute, vice-president of the Traders' national bank and of the Columbia Title insurance company. He maintains a membership in the Washington camp of Confederate Veterans. In 1875 Mr. Gordon was married to Harriette, daughter of Hon. Allen T. C. Caperton, senator from

Virginia in the Confederate States senate and senator from West Virginia, subsequently, in the United States senate. They have four sons and a daughter.

Patrick F. Gorman, of Alexandria, a veteran of Kemper's battery, was born in Kilkenny county, Ireland, February 14, 1842. When five years of age he was brought by his parents to America, the family first making its home in Massachusetts. After two years' residence in that State they removed to Baltimore and a year later to Alexandria, where Mr. Gorman was reared and educated. At the organization of the Alexandria Light Artillery, more widely known as Kemper's battery, in February, 1861, he enlisted as a private, and, in this command, served throughout the war, earning promotion to the rank of sergeant. His military career was identical with that of the battery, of which he furnishes the following brief but comprehensive account: The organization was mustered into the service April 17, 1861, and on June 17th following was engaged in the affair at Vienna Station. On July 18th the battery was in the action of Bull Run, and on July 21st took an important part in the battle of Manassas. At the close of that day No. 1 gun fired solid shot at a wagon on Stone bridge, upsetting the wagon and causing a stampede of the Federal troops at that place. Credit has been erroneously given for this action to another battery, but Kemper's was the only artillery there at that time. During the movement from Manassas to Richmond, the battery served as rear guard upon one of the roads used by the army, with several engagements en route, and in the vicinity of Richmond was engaged in most of the actions on the Chickahominy river and fought under General Magruder through the Peninsular campaign. At Meadow bridge they were engaged and during the Seven Days' battles did splendid service, including several successful engagements on the line of the York River railroad before reaching Savage Station, where the battery was charged under heavy fire and attempted to be captured, but by heroic action repulsed the attack. At Frayser's Farm, White Oak Swamp and Malvern Hill they were also engaged with distinction. Subsequently the battery served on the Pamunkey river near White House and on the Nansemond river, including a fight with the gunboat Stepping Stones and other vessels. Other service was done at Franklin Station on the Seaboard & Roanoke railroad, and on the Blackwater river. During the investment of Richmond the company was assigned to the Eighteenth Virginia battalion, heavy artillery, and, serving as infantry, did creditable service in all the fights about Richmond during the raids of Stoneman, Dahlgren and Kilpatrick. It took part in the engagements at Fort Gilmer, Darbytown Road and Charles City Court House, and continued to serve in the lines of defense until the evacuation of the capital. During the retreat the company was several times engaged with the enemy, and finally surrendered at Sailor's Creek, on April 6, 1865, after a gallant defense, in which the enemy was three times repulsed. At sundown of that day the command was surrounded by the Federal forces and compelled to capitulate. In this battle Sergeant Gorman was seriously wounded in the leg, and, after being captured, lay upon the battlefield several days, after which he was taken to Port Walthall, thence to City Point, Baltimore and Fort McHenry. At the

solicitation of his father he was soon released, and then for two years was at home, incapacitated for work by his wound. Since then he has been engaged as a boiler maker. He is highly regarded by the community, and, since 1889 has continuously held the position of city tax collector. He was married October 24, 1867, to Anna M. Germand, and they have eight children.

Abner W. Grandy, of Norfolk, who rendered brave and devoted service as a private in the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, is a native of North Carolina, born in Camden county, January 26, 1842. His father, Evan Grandy, was a member of the Light Horse Dragoons, organized for the Mexican war but never called out, and was the son of Ammon Grandy, the latter the son of Absalom Grandy who came from England early in the eighteenth century and occupied a grant of land in Camden county bestowed upon him by Lord Granville. Evan Grandy married Mary Williamson, whose father was a native of England. She died when her son Abner was two years old, and, four years later, in 1848, the father died at the age of thirty-five years, leaving young Abner Grandy to the care of his aunt, Mrs. Lydia Gregory. The latter, whose husband was a grandson of General Gregory of the Continental army, gave the boy a good primary education and had entered him at the Reynoldson institute in Gates county when the war of the Confederacy drew him from his studies to the field of battle. Leaving school in May, 1861, he volunteered at Norfolk in Company C of the Sixty-first regiment. With this regiment, subsequently being transferred to Company B, he served as a private throughout the war, sharing the fortunes of Mahone's brigade and participating in all the battles of the army of Northern Virginia from Seven Pines to Appomattox, except when disabled by wounds. He fought at Seven Pines, through the Seven Days' battles, at Manassas, Sharpsburg, both battles at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Salem Church, Gettysburg, Brandy Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, the Crater, Wilcox's Farm, Reams' Station, Burgess' Mill and Hatcher's Run. In the fight of May 12th, at Spottsylvania, he was severely wounded, causing him to miss the fighting at Cold Harbor, and at Hatcher's Run, on February 6, 1865, he received a wound through the right lung which ended his service a few weeks before the close of the war. During the subsequent years of peace he has made his home at Norfolk, where for nearly thirty years he was occupied as a drygoods salesman. During the past year he has held the office of scaler of weights and measures of the city, to which he was elected in the spring of 1896, by the largest majority ever given a municipal candidate, 3,615 votes, an eloquent testimonial of the esteem in which he is held by the people. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, the Baptist church and the Masonic order. On August 15, 1869, he was married to Amelia Trafton, and they have four children living: Lily L. Grandy, Mary Grandy, Herbert L. Grandy and Bruce Grandy.

Captain Charles Grattan, of Staunton, Va., who served with distinction in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Albemarle county, December 8, 1833. He was reared in Rockingham county and was there elected to the legislature in 1859. Subsequently he entered the university of Virginia for the study of law, and while there entered the military service of the

State at the time of the passage of the ordinance of secession joining the forces which assembled at Harper's Ferry and seized that post. Then, being detailed to the quartermaster's department under Major-General Harper, he served there until the meeting of the State legislature in December, 1861, he having been re-elected from Rockingham county. At the close of the session he passed the ordnance examination and was assigned to Cabell's battalion of artillery with the rank of first lieutenant. Soon after the battle of Chancellorsville he was promoted captain and placed in charge of the reserve ordnance of Longstreet's corps. Subsequently he was transferred to the Second corps and put in charge of the field park of the corps. After the battle of Gettysburg he was promoted chief of ordnance with rank of captain in the corps of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, with whom he served, and his successor, Gen. Wade Hampton, until the close of the war. Captain Grattan remained in Virginia when Hampton went South and at the time of the surrender was at Staunton, having been engaged in gathering up the artillery abandoned at Waynesboro, at Early's defeat, and was on his way to rejoin the army. During his service he participated in the battles of First Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the three days at Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Yellow Tavern, Waynesboro, Mine Run, Trevilian's, Jack's Shop, and all the cavalry fights of Stuart and Hampton after his association with them. He was paroled in June, 1865, and after farming in Augusta county until 1871 he made his home at Staunton, and resumed the profession of law, upon which he had embarked at the beginning of the war. For two years he has served as commissioner of immigration for Virginia. In 1888 he was elected to fill the unexpired term of Judge Smith, of the hustings court of Augusta county, was re-elected and in 1894 again re-elected for a term of six years.

Captain Peyton B. Gravely, of Danville, Va., was born in Henry county, May 15, 1835. His father, Willis Gravely, also a native of Henry county and the son of a Revolutionary soldier, Joseph Gravely, married Ann Marshall Barrow, who was related to the distinguished Marshall family of Virginia. Five of their sons were in the Confederate army, Peyton B., William A., Marshall F., Joseph H. H., and Chester B. Two of these, William and Marshall, were killed in battle. Peyton B. received a liberal education at various prominent academies of that day and at Emory and Henry college, and in 1857 became a partner of his father in the manufacture of tobacco. This occupation he abandoned on April 9, 1861, to enlist in the Danville artillery, with which he served one year as sergeant, participating in the battles of Laurel Hill and Carrick's Ford, and the engagements of Stonewall Jackson's campaign in the Shenandoah valley. At the reorganization he was elected captain of Company F, Forty-second regiment, Virginia infantry, Jones' brigade, Jackson's division, with which he served throughout the greater part of the war, participating in the battles of Seven Pines, the Seven Days' campaign, Second Manassas, Frederick City, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House (where he escaped the general disaster at the "bloody angle"), Cold Harbor, Hatcher's Run, Sailor's Creek, and other fights. He served for some time as adjutant of

his regiment, and was later assigned to the staff of Gen. Bradley T. Johnson. He was wounded four times, most severely at the Wilderness, where he was shot through the shoulder. At Cedar Creek he was captured, but managed to escape. At Appomattox he was on the skirmish line April 9, 1865. Subsequently Captain Gravely resided in Henry county until 1870, when he removed to Danville and continued in his manufacturing business. He is a member of Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1871 he was married to Mary F. Walters, and they have five children: Kate W., now Mrs. George C. Cabell, Jr.; Peyton, James G., Nancy D., and Mary V.

Captain David Coffman Grayson, a native of Virginia, who is engaged in business at Washington, D. C., was born at Luray in 1838, the son of Benjamin F. Grayson, who held the office of sheriff of Page county, Va., for twenty-three years. From the age of fourteen he acted as deputy sheriff, and in 1859 was graduated at the Baltimore business college. On June 2, 1861, he entered the service of the Confederate States, and, going to Harper's Ferry, was assigned to the Tenth Virginia regiment of infantry, as third lieutenant of Company K, formerly known as the Page Guards. He served in this rank until May, 1862, when he began to command the company, and in October, 1863, he was promoted captain. He participated in the battles of First Manassas, McDowell, Winchester, Port Republic, Gaines' Mill, Frayer's Farm, Malvern Hill, Cedar Mountain, Chancellorsville, the Milroy fight at Winchester, the second and third days at Gettysburg, Mine Run, Bristoe Station and Spottsylvania Court House. At Cedar Mountain, August 9, 1862, he was shot through the lungs and pronounced fatally wounded, but recovered so as to be able for duty in the following February. At the battle of Chancellorsville he was captured and exchanged after six weeks' confinement at the Old Capitol prison. He was again captured at Spottsylvania Court House and held three months at Fort Delaware, then sent to Morris island and kept under fire for forty-three days. After this latter severe experience he was confined at Fort Pulaski, with rations of ten ounces of cornmeal a day and no meat, from October, 1864, until March, 1865. He was held further at Fort Delaware, until released June 15, 1865. After the war he engaged in business at Luray and Alexandria, and in 1870 at Baltimore in the wholesale grocery trade. Since 1873 he has been in the lumber trade at Washington.

Bernard P. Green, a citizen of Warrenton, Va., who is connected with the engineering department of the government of the District of Columbia, was born at Richmond, Va., in 1842. His family has been identified with the history of the Old Dominion since 1712, when the founder of the family in America, Robert Green, emigrated from England. Since then the family has been distinguished in the military service of the State. John Green, a son of the founder, served as colonel of the Culpeper Minute Men, or the Sixth Virginia regiment, during the war of the Revolution. Gen. Moses Green, a son of the latter, was distinguished in the war of 1812, and his son, Thomas Green, who died in 1882 at the age of eighty-four years, held the rank of colonel in the Virginia militia. The profession of the latter was that of attorney at law. His son, Bernard P. Green, was brought to Washington

by his father in 1849, and was there reared and educated. When the war broke out he was a student at the Georgetown university, but, feeling the claims of his native State to his services, he left school to enter the Confederate army. In June, 1861, he went through the Federal lines to Fauquier county and enlisted in the Black Horse cavalry as a private, and remained with this famous command of troopers during the war, receiving promotion to sergeant and to orderly. He participated in the skirmish of Pohick church, the battle of Williamsburg, and the subsequent skirmishing of the Peninsular campaign, the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Cedar Mountain, the Second Manassas, the capture of Harper's Ferry and the battles of Sharpsburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Williamsport, the Wilderness and every day at Spottsylvania, Yellow Tavern, Hawe's Shop, Trevilian's, Reams' Station, Winchester and Fisher's Hill. He was severely wounded at Williamsburg in the shoulder, and disabled in consequence about six weeks. He was again badly wounded at Yellow Tavern, which incapacitated him for a fortnight. After the close of the Peninsular campaign he served for some time as a scout for General Jackson's corps. At the battle of Five Forks, one of the last struggles of the war, he fell with a severe wound in the hip, and, though captured by the enemy, was not held as a prisoner. He was paroled at Winchester in June, 1865. On the 6th of the following month he returned to Washington, and since then has made his business headquarters at that city, though he maintains his residence at Warrenton, as a citizen of Virginia. Becoming engaged in civil engineering he was appointed, in 1883, to the position of government engineer on the Potomac river flats, and was engaged in that work until 1887. In 1894 he received the appointment to his present position in the engineer department of the District.

William W. Green, of West Point, Va., a veteran of that famous artillery organization, the Richmond Howitzers, was born at Norfolk, Va., October 1, 1831. He is the son of Capt. William Green, who was born in Culpeper county, March 3, 1800, entered the United States navy in 1818, and resigned in 1861, upon the secession of his State, after serving as commander fourteen years. He died in 1888. His wife was Mary Saunders, a native of Norfolk, and a daughter of Maj. John Saunders, who commanded the United States Fort Nelson, on the site of the present naval hospital at Norfolk, at the time of her birth. William W. Green was their only son. One of his two sisters became the wife of Col. Henry W. Williamson, of Norfolk, who was lieutenant-colonel of the Sixth Virginia infantry during the last three years of the war, and lost an arm at the battle of the Crater. The subject of this sketch was educated at the Norfolk military academy and Rappahannock academy, and, on June 3, 1861, entered the Confederate service as a private in the Third company of Richmond Howitzers. With this command he served at Big Bethel, the Seven Days' battles, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, Spottsylvania, the Wilderness and Cold Harbor, the defense of Richmond and the retreat to Appomattox, where he was surrendered. He was never wounded and never captured, though he had a narrow escape from the latter fate at Spottsylvania. During the subsequent years he has been

mainly engaged in the great transportation business of southeast Virginia, except during a period, 1869 to 1874, when he resided in Arkansas. He was in the service of the Old Dominion steamship company at Norfolk from 1866 to 1869, of the Clyde steamship company from 1874 to 1880, and since then has held a responsible position with the Southern railroad at West Point. He is past commander and present adjutant of John R. Cook camp, Confederate Veterans, and a member of the Richmond Howitzer association. He was married February 6, 1868, to Pocahontas Baytop, daughter of Lieut. William J. Baytop, who was killed at Seven Pines. They have three children: Ashby B., Pattie Saunders and Carrie P.

Major W. F. C. Gregory, a gallant officer in the Confederate States army, was a native of Amelia county, Va. Subsequent to the war he became prominent in public affairs, was a leading member of the Petersburg bar and at one time was much talked of in connection with the governorship of Virginia. Judith A., a sister of Major Gregory, married the Rev. James A. Riddick, also a native of Virginia, and a well-known minister of the Methodist church. J. G. Riddick, M. D., notable among the younger physicians of Norfolk, is a son of this union and was born at Stony Creek, in Sussex county, June 10, 1861. Dr. Riddick received his collegiate education at Randolph-Macon, where he was graduated in liberal arts, and subsequently matriculated at the college of physicians and surgeons at Baltimore, Md. At the latter institution, after three years' study, he received the degree of doctor of medicine in 1883. He selected Norfolk as the theater of his professional career, and has resided in that city since his graduation, maintaining a growing and successful practice. For nine years he served the city as health officer, and when compelled by his other professional duties to resign that position, he was at once appointed to the board of public health, and ever since retained in that position. He is a member of the city and State medical societies, and maintains an association with the Masonic order and the Knights of Pythias. His religious connection is with the Epworth Methodist church. He was married to Miss Sallie Yates Council, daughter of Rev. James G. Council, of the Baptist ministry.

William S. Gregory, of Lynchburg, Va., was born at that city in 1845. He entered the Confederate service as a private in Company G of the Eleventh Virginia regiment of infantry just after the battle of Seven Pines, and participated in the battles of Frayser's Farm, Gaines' Mill, Gettysburg, Plymouth, N. C. (where he was wounded), Chickamauga, the battles around Petersburg, Five Forks, Dinwiddie Court House and Sailor's Creek. During a portion of the war he also served in the signal corps. At Sailor's Creek he was among the captured and, being sent to Newport News, was held as a prisoner of war until July, 1865, having refused to obtain an earlier release by taking the oath of allegiance. He was a brave and devoted soldier, and was identified with the splendid record of Pickett's division of the army of Northern Virginia. After the close of the war he went into business at Lynchburg, in which he has since continued.

Kenneth Raynor Griffin, a prominent attorney of Portsmouth, was born in Southampton county, Va., January 27, 1844. His father, William Griffin, also a native of that county, served as an

officer in what is known as the Nat Turner insurrection, followed the occupations of farming and dealing in lumber, and died in 1867. His wife, Virginia Holmes, daughter of John Holmes, survived until 1879. Mr. Griffin was reared in Southampton county, and during his boyhood assisted his father and obtained an elementary education. He was still a youth when on August 18, 1861, he was mustered into the service of the Confederate States as a sergeant in the Southampton heavy artillery. With this command he was stationed at Sewell's Point until the evacuation, going then to Petersburg, and from there to Richmond, where he was assigned to duty in the defenses of the city, and remained until the abandonment of the capital in 1865, winning promotion to a lieutenantancy. His military career was ended at Appomattox, where he surrendered with the army and was paroled. Then returning to his home, he entered the law school of the university of Virginia in the fall of 1865, and was graduated two years later. He practiced his profession in Southampton, Isle of Wight, Nansemond and Sussex counties from 1868 until 1883, when he removed to Portsmouth, where he has subsequently resided, gaining a worthy and honorable position in the bar of that city. In 1888 he was first elected and has since been five times re-elected commonwealth attorney for the city. During his residence in Southampton county he served one term in the State senate, then declining re-election, and held the office of mayor of Franklin. He is an active member of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, serving as chairman of the finance and relief committees. His religious membership is with Court Street Baptist church. Colonel Griffin was married November 18, 1868, at Portsmouth, to Alice A., daughter of Joseph Bourke, a merchant of that city, and they have five children: Kenneth J., Samuel Hunter, Virginia, William Sully and Rosalie.

Samuel Griffin, a prominent attorney at Roanoke, Va., and a veteran of the Second Virginia cavalry, was born in Salem county in 1840. At the outbreak of the war he was teaching in Shelby college, Kentucky, having just graduated at Kenyon college, Ohio, and before the close of the session at Shelby college he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Salem light artillery. With this command he was on duty at Craney island, until the evacuation of Norfolk, when he was transferred as a private to the Second Virginia cavalry regiment. Of this gallant regiment he was soon promoted sergeant-major, and subsequently adjutant, the capacity in which he served until the close of the war. His record of service, honorably performed, includes the operations of the Craney island battery, the cavalry skirmish in which Ashby fell, Sharpsburg, and the fights in the valley, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Brandy Station, Second Manassas, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Trevilian's, Yellow Tavern, the fight with Sheridan at Winchester and many minor engagements. In 1864 he was recommended for promotion to second lieutenant by Colonel Munford and General Wickham, with the approval of Gen. R. E. Lee, on account of conspicuous gallantry. In this connection Colonel Munford wrote: "At Gooch's farm I saw him ride out alone and discharge his pistol six times into the Yankee column at a distance of sixty yards. The same day he led an attack with two men, supported by a detachment from

my regiment, and by his dash and gallantry made some thirty men of Battery M, Second U. S. artillery, surrender to him, with their arms and four caissons, before the support arrived. In the attack on Wilson's raiders, near Reams' Station, on June 28th, he led two others in a charge on a party of eleven of the enemy, headed by Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis of the Third New Jersey cavalry, and two other officers, pressing them so hotly as to cause them to abandon their horses and equipment and seek safety in the bushes. The horses, equipment, etc., of the party were secured by him and brought safely off. During the battles around Richmond, in 1862, he captured the colonel of the Fourth New York infantry and three other officers, all armed cap-à-pie. He was wounded at Shepherdstown and was particularly distinguished at Todd's Tavern, Trevilian's and Nance's Shop." This gallant trooper was also wounded at Warrenton and at Todd's Tavern, and while at home on a brief furlough in 1863, was captured near Salem by General Averell, but, fortunately, made his escape the same night. After Appomattox he was paroled at Lynchburg, where his regiment was disbanded. He then took up the study of law at Salem, was admitted to the bar in 1867, and since then has held a prominent place in the legal profession. He maintains his office at Roanoke and also an office and his residence at Bedford City. In 1880-81 he served in the legislature as a representative of Bedford county, and in 1886 was nominated by the Democratic party to succeed John W. Daniel as representative in Congress after the latter had been elected to the United States Senate.

Colonel George K. Griggs, of Danville, a gallant veteran, who has for nearly twenty years been prominently associated with the management of the Danville & Western railroad, was born in Henry county, Va., September 12, 1839. He is the son of Wesley Griggs, of English descent, and his wife, Susan King, whose mother was Susan Martin, daughter of Gen. Joseph Martin, a famous pioneer and Indian fighter of colonial times. He was educated at the Virginia military institute and was engaged in business when, in April, 1861, Virginia called out her loyal sons to do battle. He entered the service as captain of Company K, Thirty-eighth Virginia infantry, was promoted major July 3, 1863, lieutenant-colonel November 15, 1863, and colonel May 16, 1864. He participated in numerous engagements, among them Williamsburg, Seven Pines (where he was painfully wounded by a ball grazing his forehead), the Seven Days' campaign, including Malvern Hill, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg (where he was again slightly wounded), Fredericksburg, the operations about Suffolk, and Gettysburg (where he was shot through the right thigh and disabled for three months). His next battle was at Drewry's Bluff, where he was severely wounded. Major Griggs had taken command on Col. Joseph R. Cabell having been mortally wounded. With his regiment he maintained an advanced position on the Bermuda Hundred line during the greater part of the siege. Here he received a fourth wound, a severe one in the left thigh, which disabled him for several weeks. Subsequently he fought with Pickett at Five Forks and Sailor's Creek, and was surrendered at Appomattox. After the close of hostilities he was variously engaged until 1881, when he became secretary and treasurer of the

Danville & New River railroad. In 1886 he became superintendent of the road, now known as the Danville & Western. He is a member of Cabell-Graves camp and prominent in the Masonic order. About the time of his enlistment in the army he was married to Sallie Boyd, who died in 1891, leaving seven children: William Edgar, Albert B., J. Henry, Archie W., Anna B., Ernest Lee and Lizzie. In 1894 he married Alice, daughter of Dr. John Boatwright, a surgeon of the Confederate army, and they have one child, Mary Lee.

Major Daniel A. Grimsley, of Culpeper, a gallant officer of the Sixth Virginia cavalry, was born in Rappahannock county, April 3, 1840, the son of Rev. Barnett Grimsley, of the Baptist ministry, one of the most effective pulpit orators of his day. He was educated in his native county and was preparing himself for the profession of law when Virginia made her alliance with the Confederate States. He promptly enlisted, April 17, 1861, as a private in the Rappahannock troop, which became Company B of the Sixth Virginia cavalry, brigade of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart. He was soon promoted orderly-sergeant, was elected first lieutenant in the spring of 1862, promoted captain a week or two later and major in 1863, after which he was in command of his regiment during the remainder of the war, his superior officers being disabled by wounds. He participated in the Valley campaign of 1862, under Jackson, and was particularly distinguished in the cavalry fight at Cedarville on the day of the battle of Front Royal. Four companies of the Sixth regiment, under Colonel Flournoy, in pursuit of the enemy, came up with the First Maryland infantry, U. S. A., Colonel Kenly commanding, supported by artillery and infantry. "Dashing into the midst of them," says General Jackson's report, "Captain Grimsley, of Company B, in the advance, these four companies drove the Federals from their position, who soon, however, reformed in an orchard on the right of the turnpike, when a second gallant and decisive charge being made upon them, the enemy's cavalry was put to flight, the artillery abandoned, and the infantry, now thrown into great confusion, surrendered themselves prisoners of war." In this fight the Rappahannock troop lost eleven killed, thirteen wounded, and seventeen horses. Major Grimsley also participated in the cavalry fighting during the Cedar Mountain and Second Manassas campaign, the raid of Stuart around McClellan's army in Maryland, was with Gen. W. E. Jones' brigade in the Valley campaign and the West Virginia expedition in 1862-63, the battle of Brandy Station, and the Gettysburg campaign, and, during the latter campaigns, shared the fighting of the brigades of Payne and Lomax in Fitzhugh Lee's division. Throughout his career as a soldier Major Grimsley was spared from both wounds and sickness, and there were few therefore more closely identified with the record of his regiment. After the close of hostilities he studied law and began the practice at Culpeper in 1867. He served in the State senate from 1870 to 1879, and in 1880 he was appointed judge of the Sixth Virginia judicial circuit to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Judge Shackelford. With the exception of three years, during the "readjuster" régime, he has ever since remained upon the bench, a position in which he is distinguished for learning and impartiality. He is a comrade of A. P. Hill

camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1866 he was married to Bettie, daughter of William L. Browning, a kinsman of William J. Bryan of Nebraska, and they have six children.

Albert C. Griswold, of Norfolk, who, during the Confederate war, had the distinction of serving in the action of the Virginia with the Monitor, was born in Wales, December 25, 1837. He worked in his youth with his father, a tailor, and, at the age of fifteen years, immigrated to America, landing at New York, where he finished his trade and remained until 1857, when he entered the United States navy as a ship tailor on the sloop of war *Macedonia*. After three years' service in the Mediterranean, he spent six months on the Cumberland in the Gulf of Mexico. He was with the latter vessel at the Norfolk navy yard when Virginia seceded, and, desiring to join the Confederacy, he escaped from the ship and scaled the wall of the navy yard, as many as twenty shots being fired at him as he did so. The Confederates arrested him as a Yankee, but on being convinced of his friendship, he was enrolled in the United artillery, with which he served throughout the war. He was stationed at Fort Norfolk and was one of the detail which served on the Virginia when she sunk the Cumberland, the ship he had recently abandoned, and, on the next day, fought on the Virginia in battle with the Monitor. Then, rejoining his command at Fort Norfolk, he remained there until the evacuation, May 10, 1862. He then went with his command to Petersburg and subsequently to Richmond, where he served in guarding the railroad to Manassas, and fought at the battle of Seven Pines. His duty during the remainder of the war was in the vicinity of Richmond. He served with Howlett's battery at Bermuda Hundred at the time of the landing of Butler, and participated in the fight at Dutch Gap with the Federal fleet of five monitors. Here he was taken prisoner by sailors who had landed, and was imprisoned, first at Point Lookout and then at Elmira for seven months. Finally he was permitted to return to Richmond as a nurse with exchanged prisoners, ten days before the evacuation. He attempted to rejoin his command, but was advised not to do so, because he had not been exchanged. Subsequently he was again captured at Drewry's Bluff, and sent to City Point, where he was held until after Appomattox and paroled at Norfolk. Then, returning to business life, he founded a merchant tailoring establishment, which has been very successful. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, is a vestryman of St. Peter's church and is connected with the orders of Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, Royal Arcanum, and Home Circle. He was married, March 28, 1865, to Miss Susan M. Thompson, at that time a refugee from Norfolk at Chesterfield, Va.

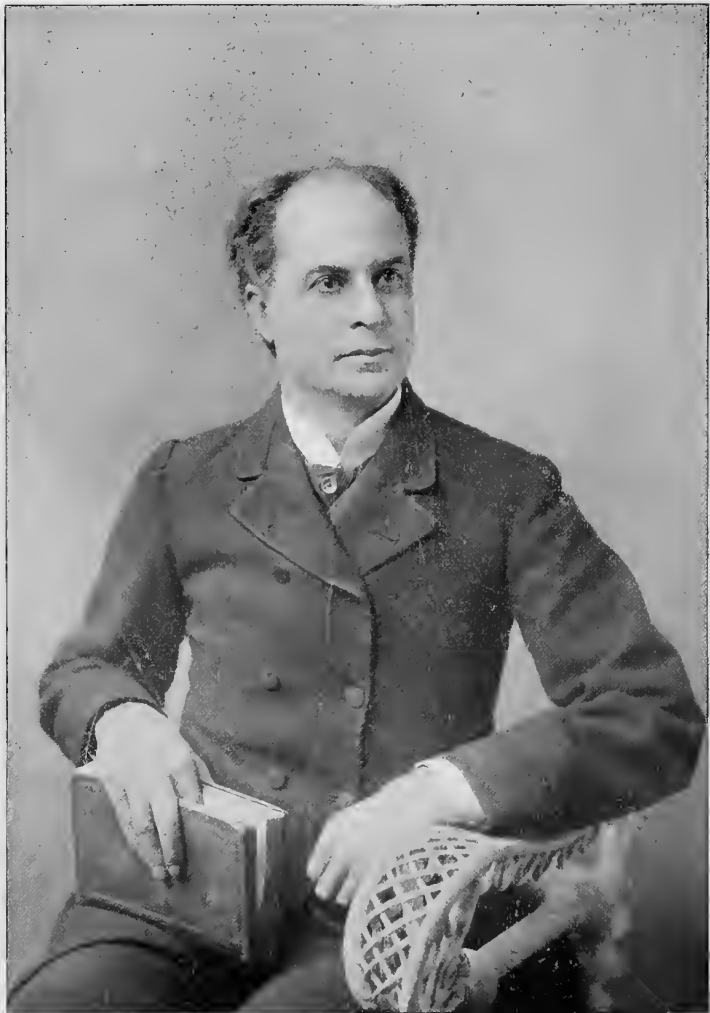
Virginus Despeaux Groner, of Norfolk, Va., was born in that city September 7, 1836. His father, George Groner, came to the United States from Germany in 1827, settled first at New York and later at Norfolk, where he wedded Eliza Newell, a daughter of an old Virginia family, whose father served as a member of Captain Emerson's company, at Craney's island, in the repulse of the British from Norfolk in the war of 1812, and whose grandfather, Capt. Robert Newell, commanded a privateer in the Continental service. He was educated at the Norfolk military academy, graduating with honors in 1853, and was admitted

to the bar at the age of twenty-one. Soon afterward he journeyed to Texas, intending to purchase a ranch, and bearing letters of introduction to Gov. Sam Houston, by whom he was received with much courtesy. Abandoning his purpose of ranch life, he accepted from the governor an appointment to Colonel Bailey's command of Texas Rangers, and served five months in the service of the State. After the election of President Lincoln he returned to Virginia, and en route visited the Louisiana military institute, desiring to meet his friend, Maj. Frank Smith, an assistant professor. As he entered the grounds he observed a white man with sleeves rolled up, trousers in boots, digging a posthole, with four or five negroes standing about in absorbed attention. Addressing this peculiarly industrious individual, Mr. Groner inquired as to where he could find his friend. "Well," replied the man with the spade, "I am Major Sherman, president of the school. Come along with me and I will show you the way, just as soon as I show these — niggers how to dig postholes." As they walked he discussed with the future Federal commander the recent presidential election and its probable results. When the likelihood of war was mentioned, Sherman remarked with great emphasis that in such a case he would "resign, join the Union army and come down here and kill every rebel I can." The discussion was quite animated, and Groner retorted that if Sherman were found in the ranks of an invading army he would exhaust all the methods of civilized warfare to accomplish his capture. In after years these two belligerent debaters became the best of friends. At Jackson, Miss., Mr. Groner visited Governor Pettus, who commissioned him to go to New York and supervise the shipment of rifles to the State from Springfield, Mass. This service performed he returned to Norfolk, to prepare for the approaching conflict, and receiving several communications from Governor Pickens of South Carolina, he engaged in organizing a regiment of volunteers for the purpose of aiding in taking Fortress Monroe. For advice in regard to this enterprise he visited Governor Letcher, during the session of the convention, accompanied by Adjutant-General Richardson and bearing a letter from ex-Governor Wise. Governor Letcher proposed to submit their views to the convention, but fearing that such a course would inform the Federal authorities, he declined to pursue the enterprise, and immediately proceeded to Jackson, Miss., and reported to Governor Pettus. Through the kindly offices of the latter he visited President Davis and was commissioned and confirmed by the provisional congress of the Confederate States, as assistant adjutant-general, with rank of captain in the regular army. Assigned to duty at Montgomery, under Leroy Polk Walker, the first secretary of war, he had among his early duties the arrest and imprisonment of Captain Worden, U. S. N., afterward famous as the commander of the Monitor, who had been allowed to visit the Federal defenses at Pensacola on his promise to give no information and report to the Confederate authorities on his return, but had instead attempted to proceed directly to Washington. Captain Groner also had the distinction of transmitting the telegram from the secretary of war to General Beauregard, ordering the opening of the attack on Fort Sumter. The call of President Lincoln for 75,000 troops was

made, and there then followed a mass meeting in front of the old Exchange hotel at Montgomery, at which speeches were made by Judah P. Benjamin, then attorney-general, and John H. Reagan, postmaster-general, and the sentiment enthusiastically expressed that as Lincoln had declared war, the Southern forces should march to Bunker Hill monument and demand peace. The reason why this view failed—a view that now seems sadly extravagant—is that another sentiment was widespread which was expressed to Mr. Groner by President Davis himself at their first meeting, at which Hon. Lawrence Keitt, ex-Federal congressman, and later Confederate congressman from South Carolina, was present. Having stated in response to a question, that he believed Northern sentiment to favor any compromise that the Southern States would accept and remain in the Union, but that the North was practically unanimous upon the point that if the States seceded and formed a separate government, any measures would be justifiable to bring them back into the Union, Mr. Davis replied to him, "This cannot be so. The people of the North should not take such action, in view of the unmistakable constitutional right of each State to secede and separate whenever it deems the cause justifies such action." Because of this general but mistaken confidence, the possible use of the South's cotton in the purchase of an adequate supply of munitions of war was neglected and a very large number of regiments were not sent to the front for lack of arms. Upon the removal of the Confederate government to Richmond, Captain Groner was assigned to duty in the war department as assistant adjutant-general and discharged important duties in connection with the organization of the troops. In the fall of 1862 he entered upon active service in command of a North Carolina regiment of cavalry, and was stationed on the Blackwater river, Virginia, where he had several skirmishes with the Eleventh Pennsylvania cavalry. During the first campaign in Maryland he commanded the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, at Warrenton, Va., and upon the return of the army to Culpeper Court House, he held Warrenton, in command of his regiment, a regiment of Virginia cavalry, a Mississippi infantry battalion, and two batteries, until the advance of McClellan compelled his withdrawal, when in obedience to orders he moved to the Rappahannock, opposite Falmouth, where he observed the arrival of the Federal army. Informing General Lee of the situation he was ordered, if he could not hold the ford, to rejoin the army on the line of the North Anna. But the Rappahannock was very high, the Federal army was consequently greatly delayed, Lee concentrated at Fredericksburg, held that line many months, and fought there two of the most successful battles of the war. Here Colonel Groner's regiment became part of Mahone's brigade, and upon the promotion of the latter to major-general, he on many occasions commanded the brigade. After surrendering at Appomattox, he rode into Richmond, and was the recipient of kind attentions from General Ord and General Patrick, provost marshal-general. At Norfolk, however, the general in command treated the Confederate officers with such indignity that Colonel Groner reported his conduct to General Grant, who promptly relieved the offender from command. At this time began his friendship for Grant, which continued with unabated warmth until the

death of the Federal commander. At Norfolk Colonel Groner has had a very successful business career, becoming interested in various enterprises. Since 1890, when the Consolidated Compress company was organized, he has served as its president. During the organization and session of the World's Columbian exposition at Chicago, he served as one of the two Virginia commissioners. His strength of character and extensive experience for forty years with public men and measures, have given him a wide influence, and made him a notable factor, since the war, in the history of Virginia. He is happily married to a daughter of the late Justice John A. Campbell, of the United States supreme court, and they have three sons.

Max Guggenheimer, of Lynchburg, one of the original members of the Lynchburg Home Guard, and since the war famous as a business man and for the valuable services he has rendered his adopted city, was born in Bavaria, May 19, 1842. Members of his family had settled in Virginia, in 1838, and in the year 1856, for the purpose of visiting these relatives and studying the English language, he came to Lynchburg, of which he has been a citizen since that date. He was a charter member of the Home Guard, organized in 1859, and at the age of nineteen years entered the service of Virginia in Company G of the Eleventh regiment. He served with this command during 1861 and the spring of 1862, participating in the battles of Blackburn's Ford, Manassas, Dranesville, Williamsburg and the Seven Days before Richmond. At the end of this arduous service he was suffering from a permanent physical disability which rendered him entirely unfit for duty on the field, and, not being a naturalized citizen, he was granted an honorable discharge. Returning to Lynchburg, he resumed his association with the business of his brother-in-law, Nathaniel Guggenheimer, and upon the death of the latter, in 1866, assumed control of the business, which, in a few years, assumed vast proportions. Gradually extending his interests into the wholesale trade, he had erected in 1881 the building his firm now occupies, and in 1885 closed out the largest retail dry goods house in the State that he might give his time entirely to the wholesale business. Prior to 1877 his firm jobbed shoes and boots exclusively. He then formed the firm of Watt & Watkins and after withdrawing from that firm in 1887 formed the firm of Craddock, Terry & Co., today the largest shoe jobbers of the South. In both of these firms he was a special partner. He is also interested in a large number of other enterprises, was a director of the Lynchburg national bank for twenty-five years, and is the president of the Lynchburg cotton mills. He has found time amid these engrossing activities to render substantial service in the improvement of the city, aiding materially in the building of the opera house, and in 1879 accepting election to the city council that he might aid more effectively in redeeming the city from an unfortunate financial condition, and in securing paved streets and a better school system. As head of the finance committee, he succeeded in floating the city improvement bonds at five per cent at par, the lowest rate at that time secured in the South since the war, and also aided in inaugurating a great improvement in the streets and schools. Six months ere he accepted the office of chairman of the finance committee, the city floated her six per



ISAAC C. HAAS

cent bonds at 96. The city paid also eight per cent on \$75,000 loans to the banks, which was immediately reduced to six per cent. He has been president of the Jewish congregation, is a leading member of the Masonic order and popular with all on account of his devotion to his family, loyalty to his friends and generous public services. He was married in 1877 to Bertha V. Rosenbaum, of Richmond, and they have one daughter, Cecile Isabelle. A younger brother of Mr. Guggenheimer served in a Lynchburg battery, and a cousin, Maurice Guggenheimer, was with the Second Virginia artillery throughout the war.

Isaac Crawford Haas, of recent years prominently connected with the government printing office at Washington, D. C., was born at Woodstock, Va., April 25, 1843. The founders of his family in America were natives of the island of Corsica, bearing the name of De Haas, but the prefix was dropped several generations since. His great-great-grandfather, General DeHaas, won the confidence and friendship of Gen. George Washington during the war of the Revolution, and his memory is preserved by a portrait hanging in the Washington home at Mount Vernon. In the early settlement of the west, his grandfather, John Haas, emigrated from Virginia to Indiana, and, while discharging his duty as sheriff of Scott county, he was killed in an attempt to arrest a desperado. Isaac Haas, father of the subject of this sketch, was postmaster of Woodstock, Va., many years preceding the civil war, also during the period of 1861-65. I. C. Haas' mother (née Elizabeth Hoffman) was the only daughter of Abraham Hoffman, a well-known merchant in the Shenandoah valley in the early part of the nineteenth century. He also owned a plantation in Alabama. His mother's uncle, Col. Joseph Hoffman, commanded a regiment under Gen "Hickory" Jackson and bore a conspicuous part in the battle of New Orleans. Mr. I. C. Haas' first public service was as a page in the National house of representatives, receiving his appointment through Hon. John Letcher. Subsequently he served as a page in the United States Senate, where he became familiar with the ablest men of the ante-bellum days, giants of statesmanship, in the most momentous period of political history, and heard the stormy debates immediately preceding the civil war. With true allegiance to his State, Virginia, he enlisted, in April, 1861, as a private in the Tenth Virginia infantry and served with that command for one year, participating in the battles of McDowell, Winchester, and other engagements of Stonewall Jackson's famous Shenandoah valley campaign. In 1862 he re-enlisted for the war as a member of Chew's battery, Stuart's Horse Artillery, and was at his post of duty with this celebrated command in nearly all its principal engagements, during the latter part of the war being practically in continuous battle. Chew's battery was favorably known in the army of Northern Virginia. In the winter of 1864 he was captured at Woodstock by a squad of Union "Jessie scouts," who were able to approach him on account of being disguised in Southern gray. The "Jessie Scouts" were in advance of a regiment of General Sheridan's cavalry. Before this, however, Mr. Haas had experienced prison life at Camp Chase, Ohio, and he now resolved to risk his life rather than remain a prisoner of war. As the Federal command with seventeen prisoners approached General Sheri-

dan's headquarters at Newtown, Va., in the dark, he leaped from his horse, dashed through a house, and, with random shots flying about, gained the woods and made his escape. Another daring escape he made near Culpeper Court House, Va., soon afterward. While acting as No. 1, with a gun that was pouring canister into Custer's advancing cavalry, a shell exploded near him, a fragment knocking the rammer out of his hand and the concussion rendering him unconscious for some time. When he regained consciousness, General Custer's brigade was about him and the cannon was captured. But he mounted a fleet horse, stuck spurs, and escaped the bullets singing about him as he bade them adieu. This loss of a gun, the only one that Chew's battery ever yielded, was redeemed soon afterward at New Creek, W. Va., by the capture of three brass howitzers. Fort Kelley, at that point, an important military post on the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, was well supplied with troops and arms, and was attacked by General Rosser's command of two cavalry brigades. Lieut. Tuck Carter, with seven select mounted men of Chew's battery, including Mr. Haas, was put in the advance to make prompt use of any captured guns. As they reached the fort at dawn they saw the howitzers being loaded by the enemy, and they charged, fighting with pistols and sabers, and seized the guns, accomplishing what General Rosser pronounced one of the most daring feats he had witnessed during the war. When the great conflict was finally over, this intrepid soldier found employment at Richmond as a printer. A year later he had a position with the famous Democrat, published at La Crosse, Wis., by "Brick" Pomeroy, and two years later, when Pomeroy established a daily paper at New York, Mr. Haas became day foreman of the New York Democrat. In 1873 he established, with a partner, the "Baltimorean," the first illustrated journal published at Baltimore, which became the leading weekly in Maryland, and possessed a powerful influence for State and National reforms. He, as co-editor and proprietor, conducted this paper for eighteen years. Subsequently he entered the government printing office, where, by rapid promotion, he became manager of the navy department printing division, and, later, the interior department printing division. In December, 1869, he was raised to the sublime degree of a master Mason in Astor lodge, No. 603, A. F. & A. M., New York city. He is chaplain of the G. P. O. council, No. 211, National Union, Washington, D. C. He is one of the pioneer members of Alpha council, No. 192, Royal Arcanum, Baltimore, Md., and a member of the St. Andrews' Brotherhood. He is devoted to his home, and indulges but one recreation—hunting. Being an expert wing shot, he probably killed more game when a young man than any other hunter in Shenandoah county, Va. In November, 1870, I. C. Haas married Miss Rose Daniels, an accomplished daughter of William B. Daniels, of Duffield's, W. Va. Four children were born to this union: Lizzie Hoffman, Carlton Daniels, Rose Lucretia and Edwin Booth Haas. The eldest son, Dr. Carlton D. Haas, is a surgeon in the U. S. army. The younger, Edwin B., is preparing himself for the legal profession. The family are members of St. Stephen's Protestant Episcopal church at Washington, D. C. Mr. Haas' varied career, briefly noted, and upright character have rendered him a wide and lasting acquaintance with many notable people.

He regards duty as the most sublime word in the English language, and his record practically illustrates its definition.

Frederick Hinzy Habliston, for over half a century a prominent business man of Richmond, was born in York county, Pa., in 1822. His father, Rev. Henry Habliston, a minister who was held in high esteem in his day and generation, was a native of Baltimore, and returned to make his home again at that city when his son was about fourteen years of age. Thence, in 1842, the subject of this notice removed to Richmond, where he continued to reside, except during his participation in the war of the Confederacy. He entered the service of the Confederate States in 1864 as a private in the Lee Rangers, an organization enrolled in the Ninth Virginia cavalry regiment, and served with that command until the close of the war, finding occasion in this last year of the conflict to render efficient service on many hotly contested fields. He participated in the engagements at Reams' Station, Nance's Shop, Hatcher's Run, a cattle raid in the rear of Grant's army, getting 2,486 head of cattle from the enemy near the field of the latter engagement, and the skirmish at Belfield. At the close of the war he was paroled at Richmond, where he resumed his residence and civil pursuits. In 1842 he had embarked in the furniture trade at Richmond, and this he continued, meeting with much well-deserved success during the many years which have elapsed since the close of the war. He is one of the oldest business men of the city and is held in high esteem for his long and honorable career and his worth as a citizen. With loyalty to his former comrades he maintains a membership in Pickett camp of the Confederate Veterans.

William Hagy, a worthy citizen of Abingdon, Va., born at that place in July, 1836, entered the service of Virginia August 1, 1861, as a private in the Glade Spring Rifles, which organization became Company F of the Thirty-seventh regiment Virginia infantry, Colonel Faulkson, and after his promotion, Colonel Carson, commanding, and was a part of the brigade of Stonewall Jackson's division. He was among those brave soldiers who participated in the early campaign of 1861 in West Virginia, and endured terrible hardships in the face of an enemy in overwhelming numbers. He was in the battles of Laurel Hill and Cheat Mountain, and in the spring of 1862 fought at Kernstown, Winchester, and many skirmishes up and down the Shenandoah valley. Then going with his regiment to eastern Virginia with Stonewall Jackson, he took part in the battles of his corps, including the Seven Days' campaign, Cedar Run, and Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, and Seven Days' fighting before Richmond. In the latter part of the war he served in the trenches before Richmond, took part in the bloody repulse of the Federals at the Crater, and fought with Hill's corps below Petersburg. On the retreat from Petersburg he was also engaged in almost constant fighting, and at Appomattox took part in the last encounter with the army of Grant. After his parole he returned to Abingdon, where he has since made his home, engaged in the manufacture of harness and saddles. September 20, 1866, he was married to Miss Gray. They have had three children, of which only one survives. Mr. and Mrs. Hagy are members of the Presbyterian church.

Colonel Peter Hairston, of Martinsville, Henry county, Va., a

gallant officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Henry county, June 20, 1835, where he resided until the secession of the State, when he entered the active service as captain of a volunteer company organized in Henry county, which was assigned to the Twenty-fourth Virginia infantry regiment, Col. Jubal Early commanding. He had previously held rank in the Virginia militia, and he was commissioned major of the new regiment, and soon afterward promoted lieutenant-colonel. Colonel Early being assigned to brigade command after the regiment had joined Beauregard's army at Manassas, Lieutenant-Colonel Hairston took command of the regiment and served in that capacity in the fight at Blackburn's Ford and the Manassas battle of July 21st. General Beauregard reported that Hairston "handled his command with satisfactory coolness and skill." He remained with his command at Manassas until February, 1862, when they were transferred to Yorktown to meet the advance of McClellan against Richmond. In the bloody fight at Williamsburg his regiment was distinguished. The brigade was under the immediate command of D. H. Hill and Early, and made an attack near Fort Magruder while Longstreet was engaged in another part of the field. The Twenty-fourth hurried through a woods and charged across open ground against a Federal battery, supported by infantry under General Hancock, under a murderous fire. They drove back the enemy to their fortifications, and held their ground with heavy loss, until called off by General Hill. Col. William R. Terry and Lieutenant-Colonel Hairston were severely wounded in this fight, in which they earned the commendation of their brigade and division commanders. Colonel Hairston was wounded in both the head and groin, but he was again ready for service during the Seven Days' battles. Under the brigade command of General Kemper he commanded the regiment in another impetuous charge upon the enemy at Frayser's Farm, and he was again commended in general orders for fidelity and bravery. At the second battle of Manassas he fought with his regiment in Corse's brigade, Kemper's division, and shared the gallant action of his command in the successful charge near the Chinn house. Here he was again painfully wounded and incapacitated for service during the Maryland campaign. Returning to his regiment, then in Kemper's brigade, Pickett's division, just before the battle of Fredericksburg, he joined in the campaign of Longstreet's corps in southeastern Virginia and North Carolina. He was subsequently with his command at Petersburg, and fought under Early in 1864 at the battle of Winchester. Subsequently he resigned from the service and returned to his home, where, since the close of the war he has been engaged in farming. He is active and influential in public affairs, served four years, 1875-1879, in the Virginia senate, and has also filled the position of deputy United States internal revenue collector. He is a member of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute, and, in 1895, was a member of the board of visitors of the National military academy at West Point. He was married in 1858 to Miss Jones, of Appomattox.

William J. Hall, of Alexandria, was born in Anne Arundel county, Md., April 15, 1840. He came to Virginia in 1852, and entered the drug business at Alexandria. In the autumn of 1860

he became a member of the Old Dominion Rifles, afterward Company H of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, at its organization. With this command he went into the field and participated in every battle in which the regiment was engaged until after the bloody contest of Sharpsburg, on September 17, 1862. On May 30, 1862, at the battle of Seven Pines, he received a wound in the head, but speedily recovered from this injury and rejoined the regiment. At Sharpsburg his career as a soldier was ended by four severe wounds, all received within the space of a very few minutes. One bullet entered his right shoulder, another pierced his right arm near the elbow, a third was buried in his hip, and the fourth went entirely through the body, piercing the left lung in its course. It seemed that these wounds would necessarily prove fatal, but his comrades conveyed him to Shepherdstown, Va., where, with the aid of skillful nursing his wonderful vitality triumphed over death, and he recovered, though his wounds left him a helpless cripple so far as the active life of a soldier was concerned. The body wound had caused paralysis of the left arm so that it was almost useless, the right arm had been shattered so that that injury alone would have incapacitated him for service. Nevertheless, he remained subject to the call of the Confederacy and accepted a detail to the postoffice department at Richmond, where he remained until the evacuation of the city. At the close of the war he returned to Alexandria, where he formed a partnership with an old comrade, Edgar Warfield, in the retail drug trade, in which he is still engaged. Mr. Hall is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 2, Confederate Veterans, of Alexandria. A modest, unassuming gentleman, his ambitions have never been in the direction of public or official position. The fearless soldier in the days of war has become a model citizen in the time of peace. The fortunes of war were decided against the cause for which he fought, and he accepts the result, with the knowledge that he gave all but life to have it otherwise. We could appropriately paraphrase the inscription upon the Alexandria Confederate monument, and of him say: "He lives in the consciousness of duty faithfully performed."

Captain Frederick M. Halstead, a prominent and wealthy planter of Norfolk county, who made an honorable record as a soldier of the Confederate States army, was born in the house which he now occupies upon the ancestral farm two miles east of Norfolk, June 30, 1846. His plantation, known as Indian Grove, on account of its location on Indian river, has been in the possession of his family for six generations, and is now one of the most valuable farm properties in southeastern Virginia. His father, Joshua M. Halstead, was born here, and hither brought his bride, Frances Old, who for many years was his trusted and faithful wife. Here, also, their son Frederick was reared and prepared for the continuance of his youthful studies at the Virginia military institute. That famous academy he entered in the year 1860, at the age of fourteen years, and, during his first year's work, learned from the instruction of Prof. Thomas J. Jackson, soon to be famous as "Stonewall," the elements of military tactics. On account of his youth he did not enter the regular service of the Confederacy until 1863, but meanwhile, during Jackson's Valley campaign of 1862, he fought with the entire corps of cadets, in

the battle of McDowell. In July, 1863, he enlisted in Company B of the Sixty-eighth North Carolina regiment of infantry. On January 1, 1864, he was elected first lieutenant, and, on August 7th following, was elected captain, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. With his command he participated in the engagements at Greasy Cove, Tenn., Wise's Forks, Butler's Bridge, Williamston, Hamilton, Plymouth, Kinston, N. C., and the final battle at Bentonville, where he was wounded in the right foot, an injury which disabled him for two months. He acted as assistant adjutant-general for over two months of his service. Since the close of hostilities he has resided upon his farm, "Indian Grove," and has devoted himself entirely to its culture and improvement. He is widely known as a successful planter, and a hospitable and public-spirited gentleman. As a director of the Indian river and Campostella turnpike companies he has materially aided in the success of those desirable enterprises.

George N. Halstead, M. D., of Norfolk county, Va., gave the Confederate States army his service, in professional and other capacities, during the entire war of 1861-65. He was born in Norfolk county, April 17, 1840, the son of William N. and Elizabeth (Murray) Halstead. The father was a native of Norfolk county, the mother, of Princess Anne. He was reared upon the home farm, which had long been in the hands of his ancestors, and was given an academic education and some knowledge of military affairs at the Virginia collegiate institute at Portsmouth. In 1859 and 1860 he continued his studies at the university of Pennsylvania, devoting the latter year to the study of medicine, which he subsequently completed in the Richmond medical college. April 17, 1861, signalized by the passage of the ordinance of secession by the Virginia convention, was his twenty-first birthday, and his first vote was cast to approve of that action. On April 19th, he entered the Confederate service as a member of Company I of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, but was almost immediately afterward detached from that command and appointed medical officer of the Third Georgia regiment of infantry. A few months later he was assigned to duty as medical officer with the naval battery at Fort Boykin, on the James river, where he remained until the evacuation of Norfolk. He then rejoined the Fifteenth cavalry and served with it during the campaign of 1862. While the army was in winter quarters, he returned to college at Richmond, and, completing his studies, was graduated in medicine in the spring of 1863. He then entered the regular service in the Confederate States navy, with the rank of assistant surgeon, and was ordered to Charleston, S. C., as examining and recruiting surgeon. In the fall of 1863, upon the completion of the ironclad Charleston, he was assigned to her as assistant surgeon. This vessel was the strongest and swiftest of the Confederate squadron in South Carolina waters, and was famous as "The Ladies' Ironclad Gunboat," on account of the large contributions made by the women of Charleston to the expense of its construction, in money, jewelry, silverware and the proceeds of fairs and entertainments. Upon this boat, the flagship of Commodore Tucker, Assistant Surgeon Halstead served until September 17, 1864, when he was detached from the flagship Charleston and ordered as senior medical officer of C. S. ironclad Richmond of the James river squad-

ron, Flag-officer J. R. Mitchell commanding. Here Assistant Surgeon Halstead served upon the gunboat Richmond until the evacuation, when he was ordered to the naval brigade, and was with Tucker and his men in the division of General Custis Lee at Sailor's creek, where, after a heroic resistance, the entire command was compelled to surrender, with the exception of Assistant Surgeon Halstead and Lieutenants King and Cenas. Escaping this calamitous field, he joined the remainder of the army, and surrendered with it at Appomattox three days later. His faithful and devoted service in the Confederate cause was now ended and he returned to civil life. On December 14, 1865, he was married to Margaret Wilson of eastern North Carolina, and he made his home there, meanwhile practicing his profession with much success, until 1874, when he returned to the old Halstead homestead in Norfolk county, with his family. Here he has, since that time, given his attention entirely to the management of his agricultural interests and extensive estates. In 1883 he removed to his present residence, in the neighborhood of the ancestral home. He is one of the leading landholders and prosperous men of the county, and is highly regarded by all. He is a member of the Methodist church, and, among his comrades of the Confederate survivors, is popular and influential, holding at present the position of commander of Neimeyer-Shaw camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Berkley.

James P. Hambleton, M. D., who was engaged in the practice of medicine at the National capital during the latter part of his life, was born in 1828 in Pittsylvania county, Va., where his ancestors had resided during the past two centuries. His grandfather, David Hambleton, held the rank of captain during the war of 1812, and his great-grandfather, David Hambleton, served in the same rank in the war of the Revolution. He received a thorough education in his youth, completing his study of the liberal arts at the university of Virginia, and then took up the study of medicine in preparation for his life work. His professional study was begun at the Richmond medical college and continued at the university of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated in 1850. He then removed to Atlanta, Ga., in 1851, and entered upon the practice, which he continued with much success until the outbreak of the war. On the organization of the Thirty-fifth Georgia regiment he entered the command as surgeon, and remained with the regiment from 1861 until the surrender at Appomattox, sharing its fatigues and privations, its perils in battle and its sufferings in camp, and throughout all rendering such aid as only a true and faithful surgeon can to the men of his command. When the war was over Dr. Hambleton returned to Atlanta and resumed his medical practice, but in 1869 removed to Washington, D. C., where he continued to reside until his death in March, 1897. Long before this sad event he had attained a high station among the medical men of the District, and a warm place in the hearts of his clientele. Dr. Hambleton was married in 1851, in Dade county, Ga., to Martha L., daughter of the late Col. Benjamin Easely, who organized the Twenty-first Georgia regiment. She died in April, 1893, leaving three sons: Benjamin E., engaged in government service in Florida; Oliver E., and Poindexter, of Texas.

Jesse A. Hamilton, of Norfolk, a gallant veteran of Mahone's

brigade, was born near Somerton, Nansemond county, October 23, 1842. His parents, Jethro and Susan (Phelps) Hamilton, were natives of the same county, his father of the same plantation. His grandfather, John Hamilton, was one of three brothers who came to Virginia from Scotland before the war of the Revolution and fought through that struggle in the Continental army, one of them falling a martyr in the sacred cause of liberty. Early in April, 1861, before the passage of the ordinance of secession by the Virginia legislature, Mr. Hamilton, at the age of eighteen years became a private in the Marion Rangers, an organization at Suffolk, which subsequently was assigned to the Sixteenth Virginia regiment of infantry as Company A under the command of Capt. Richard O. Whitehead. With this regiment Private Hamilton served throughout the war, sharing the campaigns and battles of Mahone's brigade, and Anderson's division. His experience was rich with adventure and danger, through which he bore himself as a manly and intrepid soldier. He participated in the battles of Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Crampton Gap, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Salem Church, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Anderson's Farm near Hanover Junction, the Crater, and Hatcher's Run. He went through these battles without injury until the last year of the war, when he received three serious wounds: First at Hanover Junction May 27, 1864, by a minie ball in the right shoulder joint; second at the Crater on July 30, 1864, where he was struck by a piece of rifled shell in the left hip, which disabled him until January 18, 1865; third, a wound in the right hand and wrist, by a ten-pound rifled shell, received at Hatcher's Run, February 7, 1865. On account of the last injury he was given a furlough for sixty days, from February 22, 1865, and saw no more service, the few remaining weeks of the continuance of the war being spent by him with friends in the country, as he was unable to reach his home. He was paroled at Portsmouth, in July, and resumed his civil occupations. In 1869 he removed from Nansemond to Norfolk county, where he has since been engaged in market gardening. He is a member of Tom Smith camp of Confederate Veterans of Suffolk, and of the fraternities of Knights of Pythias and the Royal Arcanum. On December 31, 1874, he was married to Anna H. Lovv, and they have five children.

James W. Hammond, of Alexandria, a survivor of Mosby's command, was born in St. Mary's county, Md., June 16, 1843, but since 1855 has resided at Alexandria, where he was reared and educated after the age of twelve years. At twenty years of age he entered the service of the Confederate States, making his way through the Federal lines for the purpose, and enlisted as a private, in June, 1863, in Company B of the Forty-third Virginia cavalry, under command of Colonel Mosby. Previous to this time he had been a member of Kemper's battery, but, on account of physical disability, was rejected when that command was mustered into the Confederate service. His service with Mosby's command was brief but active. He participated, in the space of two months, in twenty-five or thirty skirmishes, and in the important raid at Fairfax Court House, where 29 of Mosby's men captured nearly 400 Federal soldiers and a large supply train. On the 17th of August, following his enlistment, he was wounded and captured, and, after

he had sufficiently recovered to leave the hospital, was sent to the prison camp at Point Lookout, where he was confined until May, 1865. The deprivations and discomforts of this long and wearisome imprisonment made a vivid impression upon him and he will never forget what it meant to be a prisoner of war at Point Lookout. After his release, May 27, 1865, he returned to Alexandria and soon afterward went to sea on a merchant vessel bound for Texas. On returning home in the following autumn, he became engaged as an iron moulder, an occupation in which he continued until compelled to desist by failing health. During the past seventeen years he has been quite successfully engaged in the ice business, for three years as manufacturer, and supplying both the wholesale and retail trade. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp No. 2, of Alexandria, and of John S. Mosby camp, Confederate Veterans. On December 5, 1866, he was married to Sarah Virginia Kirk, of Alexandria, and they have three children living.

James Stuart Hanckel was a brave son of South Carolina and served as corporal in the First South Carolina volunteer regiment until he lost his life at Sharpsburg. Allan R. Hanckel, judge of the corporation court at Norfolk, and brother of the above, was born at Camden, S. C., December 14, 1861, a younger member of a family which contributed in due measure to the maintenance of the Confederate government, two having served in the field—one, James S., mentioned above, the other Louis T., surviving and now a prominent lawyer and ex-mayor of Charlottesville, Va. Judge Hanckel is the son of Rev. James Stuart Hanckel, D. D., for several years rector of St. Michael's church at Charleston, S. C., and of the Episcopal church at Charlottesville, Va., from 1869 until his death, August 23, 1892. He wedded Fannie Trapmann, who was educated in Scotland during the consulate of her father at Liverpool. The grandfather of Judge Hanckel was Rev. Christian Hanckel, a native of South Carolina and descended, according to the traditions of the family, from a member of the bodyguard of Frederick the Great of Prussia, served many years as rector of the leading church at Charleston, S. C. Judge Hanckel received his academic education at Charlottesville and was graduated in law by the university of Virginia in 1883. He came to Norfolk to embark in the practice in August, 1884, and speedily took a high rank among the younger members of the bar at that city. In 1886 he was appointed United States commissioner by Judge Hughes, and held that position until 1895, when he received from Governor O'Ferrall the appointment of judge of the corporation court of Norfolk. During the session of 1895-96 he was elected to the same position by the legislature for a term ending January 1, 1901. This elevation to the bench at the age of thirty-five years is a high compliment to his legal ability, but is considered by his friends as a fully deserved honor. On December 11, 1890, he was married to Alice, daughter of Judge W. J. Robertson, formerly a judge of the supreme court of appeals of Virginia, one of the most distinguished lawyers of the State, who was counsel for the Lee heirs in the famous Arlington estate case and argued as such before the United States supreme court, and is now a prominent corporation attorney representing the Chesapeake & Ohio and Shenandoah & Norfolk railroads.

Louis T. Hanckel, of Charlottesville, Va., served gallantly with

the South Carolina troops during the great war. He was born at Charleston, S. C., June 3, 1847, and, in 1864, at the age of seventeen years, enlisted at Spartanburg in Company B of Major Ballinger's First battalion South Carolina reserves. He was engaged in active service along the coast, guarding the Charleston & Savannah railroad, and had his first experience in battle at Honey Hill. He participated in the battle of Tulifinny Bridge, where the arsenal cadets fought behind the railroad embankment as breastworks, was wounded in the leg at the Combahee river and was in several skirmishes on the Coosawhatchie and Pocotaligo rivers. J. Stuart Hanckel, brother of the foregoing, enlisted in 1861 in the Palmetto Guards of Charleston, S. C., first stationed at Morris island and, after the fall of Fort Sumter, permitted by the governor, as a mark of special distinction, to occupy the fort. Subsequently the company was divided and Hanckel served with the part which entered the army of Northern Virginia, fighting at First Manassas, and giving up his life at Sharpsburg.

John T. Hargrove, a well-known business man of Norfolk, was born in Princess Anne county, Va., September 29, 1842. He is the son of James Hargrove, a native of the same county, born in 1803, who died in 1880, and was the son of Daniel Hargrove, a soldier of the war of 1812. His father and grandfather were both farmers in Princess Anne county. His mother, Martha Fentress, daughter of Slope Fentress, of the same county, was born about 1821 and died in 1887. He entered the Confederate service in the spring of 1862 as a private in Company C of the Fifteenth Virginia regiment, subsequently incorporated in the Fifth regiment. He served in the campaigns and engagements of his command until he was captured at the battle of Luray in September, 1864, after which he was confined at Point Lookout until a considerable time after the close of the war. He participated in the battles of the Peninsular campaign against McClellan, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, Brandy Station, the Wilderness, Cold Harbor, Yellow Tavern, Luray and other minor engagements. He was twice wounded—once in the leg on the day that Gen. J. E. B. Stuart was fatally wounded at Yellow Tavern, and again in the side at Brandy Station. He reached home from the military prison camp, June 27, 1865, and during the next few years found occupation upon the farm. Then he was employed for a time in a grocery store at Princess Anne Court House, after which he removed to Norfolk and embarked in the grocery trade independently in 1873. Since then he has devoted himself entirely to this business, with, it is pleasing to note, gratifying success. Mr. Hargrove maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp. He was married March 27, 1879, to Miss Mollie E. Frost, of Norfolk, and they have six children.

Isaac R. Harkrader, of Wytheville, was in the Confederate service throughout the war, associated with the Twenty-third Virginia battalion and the brigade of Gen. John Echols. He was born near Wytheville, May 29, 1834, and, at the secession of Virginia, enlisted as a private in Company B, Twenty-third battalion, Virginia infantry. He was assigned to duty as wagonmaster for the battalion and he served faithfully and efficiently in this capacity until the final disbandment of his command. His point of view of the military operations was somewhat different from that of the boys in

the front, but he had his dangers to apprehend and fatigues to endure. The wagon train was a vital point against which the enemy directed frequent attacks, and while it was the wagonmaster's duty rather to escape than fight, provided he escaped with his stores, the ingenuity and coolness in circumstances of danger, which his position required, developed in him excellent qualities of soldier-ship. Mr. Harkrader, in the course of his service, participated in the Maryland campaign in 1862 and then, returning to Virginia, went under General Echols' command down the Kanawha valley to Charleston, W. Va., returning to the narrows of the New river for the winter. After the Gettysburg campaign he accompanied his battalion to Richmond, where he was on duty during the severe fighting of the spring and summer of 1864. He shared the perils and hardships of the army in the valley during Early's campaign against Sheridan, and passed the winter of 1864 at Fisher's hill. On March 2, 1865, he was in the fight at Waynesboro, where the brave remnant of Early's army made a gallant stand and was almost entirely destroyed. Then, returning to Lynchburg from that place, he accompanied General Echols in his attempt to unite with General Johnston's army. But it was impossible to make the junction and the command was disbanded at Mount Airy, N. C. After the war he returned to his home, near Wytheville, and engaged in farming. On November 23, 1855, he married a daughter of Henry Copenhaver and they have one child, Frances B., the wife of Walter S. White. Mr. Harkrader has served twelve years as sheriff of his county. He and his wife are members of the Lutheran church and honored and well respected citizens of the community.

Lieutenant William F. Harrison, of Madison, Va., a veteran of Kemper's brigade, Pickett's division, was born at the town where he now resides, September 12, 1840. He completed his education at Richmond college and, in his twenty-first year, entered the service of Virginia and the Confederacy, enlisting as a private in the volunteer organization, formed in April, 1861, which was assigned as Company A to the Seventh Virginia infantry, commanded by Colonel Kemper. In the brigade of General Early, in Beauregard's army, he took part in the action at Blackburn's Ford and the first famous battle of the war, the route of the Federal army at Manassas, July 21, 1861. His brigade was subsequently commanded by General Kemper and, with it, he shared the record of Pickett's division until the close of the war. He took part in the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines and Frayser's Farm, on the peninsula, and received a slight wound at Williamsburg. He also participated in the battles of Fredericksburg, the Suffolk and North Carolina campaigns, including the capture of Plymouth, the immortal action of his division at Gettysburg, aided in the repulse of Butler at Drewry's Bluff and fought many months in the trenches before Petersburg. His last battles were at Milford Station (where he received a severe wound in the left breast), Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. Being captured with many others in the latter disastrous encounter, he was held as a prisoner at the Old Capitol prison and Johnson's island until some time after the close of hostilities. During the last three years of the war he held the rank of second lieutenant. Since his return to Madison he has given considerable of his time to mercantile pursuits, but has also had a prominent career as a county official. He was first elected

sheriff in 1874, an office he held four years. At a later date he was deputy county treasurer four years, deputy county clerk two years and, for a time, held the office of county clerk by appointment. Since January, 1891, he has conducted a successful mercantile establishment at Madison. He is a member of Kemper-Strother-Fry camp of Confederate Veterans. On June 30, 1867, he was married to Miss Gussie Gordon, of Greene county, and they have eight children.

Ephraim E. Hathaway, of Norfolk, who enlisted in youth in the Confederate cause, was born at Norfolk, Va., in 1844. His father, Ephraim E. Hathaway, Sr., a farmer of Norfolk county, served with Virginia troops in the Seminole war in Florida, and fell mortally wounded in one of the conflicts with the Indians. He was educated in the Norfolk schools until he had reached the age of twelve years, when he entered the printing office of his uncle, John R. Hathaway, owner and editor of the Norfolk Day Book. In April, 1861, he joined at Lambert's Point, the St. Bride's light artillery, under Capt. George A. Martin, but was soon required to forego his dream of military service. On account of his youth his uncle secured his release, much to young Hathaway's chagrin. When Norfolk was abandoned by the Confederate forces, and occupied by the Federals, he attempted to pass through the lines and join the Confederate army, but was captured and imprisoned at Fort Norfolk about three months, after which he was released on the hard condition that if he again attempted to leave the city he would meet the fate of a spy. For several years after the war he was occupied in various ways, mainly as a printer and publisher in southeastern Virginia and New York, and during this period established the Norfolk News and the Berkley Daily News, and was associated with the Suffolk Herald and the Observer. He then purchased a good printing and publishing plant at Norfolk, where he and his associates have since conducted a successful business, in connection with other work publishing a travelers' guide, which is quite popular. He has taken an active part in political affairs, and among the veterans of the Confederacy is valued as a friend and active comrade. He holds the rank of adjutant in Neimeyer-Shaw camp, at Norfolk. He was married, in 1869, to Miss Virginia Butt, who died in 1888; and in 1890 to Miss Emma C. Butt.

Lieutenant George Pitman Haw, a prominent attorney of Richmond, Va., was born in Hanover county, Va., in 1838. He enlisted in the military service of Virginia, April 23, 1861, as a private in the Hanover Grays, an organization which was mustered into the service as Company I of the Fifteenth Virginia regiment. A month later he was promoted corporal and at the end of the year he was called to the rank of first lieutenant by (with but one exception) the unanimous vote of his company. He participated in the early engagements at Young's Mill and Dam No. 1, and in the first day's fight at Williamsburg. Subsequently, at Fair Oaks or Seven Pines, he did honorable duty, participating in the two days' battle and a night attack on the enemy. At Malvern Hill he was also engaged. Then, participating in the Maryland campaign, he went into the battle of Sharpsburg with a furlough in his pocket, of which he had decided not to avail himself while a battle was impending. This decision was almost fatal, for, in this desperate fight he lost his left arm and was, in consequence, for some time disabled for any

active duty and crippled for life. Here, also, he became a prisoner of war, but was exchanged a month later. Subsequently he was detailed for duty in the enrolling service and in this work rendered efficient service for one year in Hanover county and, during the remainder of the war period, in King William county. At the close of hostilities he took up the study of law and, in 1867, received a professional diploma from Washington and Lee university, which he particularly prizes on account of its bearing the signature of his loved commander, Robert E. Lee. Lieutenant Haw has been engaged in the practice in Hanover county since 1867, and is now serving his fifth term as commonwealth attorney of that county. He has also, since 1874, maintained an office at Richmond, and holds an honorable position at the distinguished bar of that city. He still keeps in touch with the veterans of the army of Northern Virginia and maintains membership with Pickett camp of the Confederate veterans.

Lieutenant S. H. Hawes, a prominent citizen of Richmond, who served with distinction in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, entered the State service on April 19, 1861, as a private in the Richmond Howitzers. After thirteen months' service with that command, as private and corporal, he was elected second lieutenant in the Williamsburg artillery. With the latter organization he remained until the reorganization in the valley of Virginia, when he was assigned to Fry's, or the Orange county, battery, with the rank of lieutenant. He served with this command until the historic 12th of May, 1864, when he was captured during the successful assault of Hancock's corps upon the "Bloody Angle," at Spottsylvania Court House. During the period of service, thus briefly outlined, he participated with gallantry in the engagements of his commands. Subsequent to his capture he endured the deprivations and suffering of prison life until June 1, 1865.

Surgeon William Hay, a patriotic Virginian, who entered the Confederate service in the Stonewall brigade, was born January 19, 1833, in Clarke county. He was the grandson of William Hay, a native of Scotland, who came to Virginia in 1777 and married a daughter of Miles Cary, a brother of Col. Archibald Cary, a famous Virginia patriot, known as "Old Ironsides," who took a prominent part in the convention of 1776, which framed the constitution of Virginia. His son, the father of Surgeon Hay, married a daughter of Col. Nathaniel Burwell, the proprietor of the celebrated "Carter Hall," in Clarke county, and a member of the Virginia house of burgesses. William Hay enlisted in 1861 as first lieutenant of Company C, Second Virginia infantry, and commanded his company in the famous battle of Manassas, July 21, 1861. In the fall of the same year, having had a medical education, he was assigned as surgeon to the Thirty-third Virginia infantry, of the same brigade. About the first of June, 1862, in the midst of the Valley campaign, he was detailed by Gen. Edward Johnson to take charge of the general hospital at Staunton. Upon the opening of operations about Richmond and Petersburg in 1864, he was ordered to field duty there, and, in the performance of duty, contracted pneumonia, from which he died, June 1, 1864, in the thirty-first year of his age. During his hospital service he performed many difficult operations and was regarded as one of

the most expert surgeons on duty in the department. By his marriage, December 25, 1854, to Miss Emily Lewis, of Philadelphia, he had four sons, all of whom are deceased save the eldest, James Hay. James Hay was born January 9, 1856, in Clarke county, and was educated in private schools of Maryland and Virginia, at the university of Pennsylvania and the Washington and Lee university, being graduated in law by the latter institution in June, 1877. In the same year he began the practice of law, also engaging in teaching school at Harrisonburg. Thence he removed, in 1879, to Madison, his present home, where he has met with marked success in his profession, and in participation in the political affairs of his county and State. Speedily attaining prominence as a lawyer and winning the confidence of the people, he was elected attorney for the commonwealth in 1883, and re-elected in 1887, 1891 and 1895. He was chosen by his county for the Virginia house of delegates in 1885, and again in 1887 and 1889, and elected to the State senate in 1893. He was a member of the Democratic State committee four years, and, in 1888, was a delegate to the national convention of his party. In 1896 he was elected to Congress to represent the Seventh congressional district of Virginia, and was re-elected in 1898.

William H. Haycock, now a prominent citizen of Georgetown, D. C., is a native of Virginia, born in Fairfax county, in 1843, and has an honorable record, as becomes a loyal son of the old commonwealth, of participation in several of the brilliant campaigns and in many of the hard-fought battles of the army of Northern Virginia. He was reared and educated in Fairfax county, and left home in his seventeenth year to enter the Confederate service, enlisting August 25, 1861, in Company H of the Second Virginia cavalry, as a private, and serving in that capacity until his parole at Appomattox, April 9, 1865. As a member of Gen. Charles S. Winder's brigade, in Jackson's division, he served in Stonewall Jackson's famous Valley campaign of 1862, sharing in the fatigues of the rapid marching and the perils of the battles of Front Royal, Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic, then marched with the army to reinforce Lee before Richmond, fought during the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, and, after the defeat of McClellan participated in the successful campaign against Pope, and the battles of Cedar or Slaughter's Mountain and the Second Manassas. At the latter engagement he received a saber cut in the arm in an encounter with the major of the Fourth New York cavalry. He took part also in the Maryland campaign of that year, fighting at Sharpsburg, and, after the return to Virginia, participated in the desperate battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. At Fredericksburg, Culpeper Court House and Orange Court House, in 1863, he was entrusted with the duties of courier for Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. In October, 1863, in a cavalry engagement at Stevensburg, Va., he was badly wounded and his horse was killed under him. This misfortune compelled him to remain on the sick list for a month, after which he took part in the expedition of the winter of 1863 against the Federals in West Virginia under Averell. Subsequently he was detailed for duty in the army postoffice at Richmond, where he remained until a week before the evacuation, when he went to Appomattox on a furlough. There he joined his regiment and took part in the final

transaction of the army. After the dispersal of the troops he went to Washington, not quite penniless, as he had ten cents as a reserve fund with which to embark in a civil career, but with a brave heart, which was quite as effectual as capital. He made his home at once at Georgetown, and has remained there, with the exception of a year at Baltimore, and has prospered in his affairs. His home happiness was insured by his marriage, March 13, 1866, to Margaret W., daughter of the late Archer A. LeGrand, of Appomattox county, Va., and they have eight children: W. Hunter; Caroline M., wife of J. W. Marshall, of Charlottesville, Va.; Mahlon L. Marshall, Robert L., Louisa V., Susan B. and Ira C.

William Dade Hempstone, clerk of the courts of Loudoun county, is a native of Leesburg, born December 18, 1847. At the outbreak of the war, in 1861, he was but a childish observer of the thrilling events which opened the long and bitter struggle of which Virginia was the battle ground, but, before he had completed his sixteenth year, his eagerness to participate in the war was rewarded by appointment as special courier to the inspector-general of the army of Northern Virginia. He enlisted for this service on September 12, 1864, and served in that capacity during the remainder of the war, surrendering with the army at Appomattox Court House in April, 1865. He then returned to Leesburg, and, after some time spent in agricultural pursuits, turned his attention to the law, in which he perfected himself and then practiced the profession for a number of years. On February 18, 1894, he was appointed clerk of the courts of Loudoun county, a position he has subsequently filled with much ability and to the satisfaction of the bar and the public. His youthful but gallant service qualifies him for membership in the Clinton Hatcher camp of United Confederate Veterans, where he is a valued comrade. In 1893 Mr. Hempstone was married to Elsie Chichester Harrison, a daughter of William B. Harrison, of Leesburg, who was the constructor of Fort Harrison in the line of Richmond defenses north of the river James, considered the strongest fortification in that long line, which for so many months defied the attacks of the Federal army. Mr. Hempstone and wife have two children, a boy and a girl.

Captain Edward M. Henry, a citizen of Norfolk, Va., where he occupies a leading position in the community, achieved a gallant record as a cavalry officer in the army of Northern Virginia, and has since the close of the war period been active in the cause of the Confederate soldier. He entered the service in the spring of 1861, being then about twenty-nine years of age, as a private in the Stafford rangers, a cavalry company which was organized in 1860, under Capt. James Ashby, a brother of the lamented Turner Ashby. The first duty of this command was intended to be guard service at the execution of John Brown, the raider at Harper's Ferry, but at that event it was detailed by Governor Wise on other service. Subsequently, on account of the threatening condition of affairs, the company was maintained, and was called out by the State on April 21, 1861. It was then under command of Capt. Thomas Waller, and was mustered into the Confederate army as Company A of the Ninth Virginia cavalry. In this command Private Henry served gallantly throughout the war, being promoted for bravery and meritorious conduct through the lieu-

tenancies to the command of the company as captain, serving in the latter rank from the fall of 1863 until the surrender at Appomattox. He participated in the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond in 1862, and during the winter of 1862-63 was on the picket line on the Rappahannock river. In the spring of 1863, with Stuart's command, he encountered Stoneman's cavalry at Culpeper Court House, and on June 9th he participated in the battle between Stuart's and Pleasanton's cavalry corps at Brandy station, one of the greatest and most spirited cavalry fights of the war. Here Capt. Thomas Towson, of his company, was killed and Lieutenant Henry was slightly wounded. Soon afterward he rode with Stuart on the great raid around the Federal army through Westminster, Md., and Hanover and Carlisle barracks, Pa., to Gettysburg, and after the return to Virginia of the army he served with his command on picket duty for some time. During the year 1864 he participated in many engagements, including Spottsylvania Court House, and took part in the pursuit of the Wilson-Kautz raiders and fights at Sappony church and Reams' station. In action near Petersburg he was seriously wounded and disabled for duty for two months. At Five Forks he participated in that last important battle of the war in Virginia, but with the main part of the cavalry he did not surrender at Appomattox, and was subsequently paroled at Ashland, Va. In 1870 Captain Henry became a citizen of Norfolk, where he has since held a notable position among its people, serving at one time as mayor of the city, and for several years as president of the Business men's association, of which he was one of the organizers. Since 1894 he has held the office of assistant postmaster at Norfolk. At the organization of the order of United Confederate Veterans, he took a prominent part, being one of the charter members of Pickett-Buchanan camp, and its commander for two years, with title of colonel. He also assisted in the formation of the grand camp of Virginia, and during the first year of the existence of the order held the position of aide-de-camp, with the rank of brigadier-general, United Confederate Veterans, upon the staff of the general commanding, John B. Gordon. This title of general is now usually accorded to him in civil life, and is honorably borne. Mr. Henry was married in 1864 to Indiana V. Kilby, of Suffolk, a sister of the late Dr. John T. Kilby, who was a captain in the Confederate army.

William Wirt Henry, of Richmond, was born February 14, 1831, at Red Hill, Charlotte county, Va. His father, John Henry, was the youngest son of the illustrious patriot, Patrick Henry, whose wife was Dorothea Spottswood Dandridge, granddaughter of Gov. Alexander Spottswood. His mother was a granddaughter of Col. William Cabell, prominent as a Revolutionary soldier and statesman. William Wirt Henry, named in honor of the biographer of his grandfather, was educated at the university of Virginia in letters, and in law as a student with Judge Hunter H. Marshall, and was admitted to practice in 1853, settling at Charlotte Court House, Va. In 1854 he was married to Lucy Gray, daughter of Col. James Pulliam Marshall, a soldier of the war of 1812. He was not an advocate of secession in 1860-61, but when Virginia allied herself with the Confederacy he gave the highest proof of loyalty to her interests and those of the entire South by volunteering as a private soldier in an artillery company

commanded by Capt. Charles Bruce. He served with this battery on the coast of Georgia and North Carolina until the reorganization of the army, when he was honorably discharged, being attorney for the commonwealth of his county. Subsequently he contributed in various ways to the cause of the Confederate government until the close of the struggle for Southern independence. Then continuing his law practice, he removed to Richmond in 1873, and speedily gained prominence at the bar of the supreme court. He was tendered, but declined, the appointment of chancellor of the city at the death of Judge Fitzhugh. He represented the city two terms in the house of delegates, and two in the State senate, with prominence as a debater and a wise political leader. Since that service he has not held office, preferring to devote his leisure to literary work. His contributions to historical literature, principally on colonial subjects, are numerous and valuable, the most famous being that monumental work, "The Life, Letters and Correspondence of Patrick Henry." He has served as president of the Virginia historical society and of the American historical association; as a member of the Peabody board, as a commissioner from Virginia to the centennial celebration of the national government, was one of the orators at the centennial celebration of 1876, and delivered the oration at the centennial of the laying of the cornerstone of the Capitol. He is also prominent in the local work and national councils of the Presbyterian church.

Richard L. Herbert, an active and enterprising citizen of Portsmouth, who served from 1894 as postmaster of the city, was born there July 12, 1846, the son of Francis C. and Mary E. Herbert, both natives of the city. He was educated at the Webster institute until he had reached the age of fifteen years, when, in the latter part of 1862, he determined to join the Confederate forces. With two companions, W. C. Nash and W. H. Morris, he made his way through the lines of the Federals, who then held the city, and started for Wilmington, where they hoped to get aboard a blockade runner. But meeting, at Murphy's station, Capt. John R. White, provost marshal, who advised them to go to Richmond and join the Light Artillery Blues or Grimes' battery, they changed their course, and at Richmond fell into the friendly hands of Capt. John H. Thompson. The latter did not favor the wish of the runaway boys to go to the front, but, on account of their youth, secured them positions in the shops at Richmond, where their work would be as important to the success of the cause. Young Herbert was enlisted in Company A of the naval battalion, but throughout the war he continued in the machine department at Richmond, devoted to the production of war material. During this service he became a thorough machinist and engineer, and when he returned to Portsmouth, after his parole in 1865, he readily found employment. He was connected with the Seaboard & Roanoke railroad until 1868 as machinist, and then until 1870 as locomotive engineer. In the latter year he became an engineer in the fire department of the city of Portsmouth, a position he resigned in 1883 to accept that of general superintendent of the electric light and gas company. This post he held for ten years, during which period the first electric light plant in that region was installed and other important improvements made. During all this time he had taken an active part in municipal and political

affairs, serving as chairman of the Democratic city committee from 1873 to 1893, holding a seat in the city council two terms, and representing Portsmouth in the legislature in 1887-88. On March 1, 1894, having retired from his previous position on account of failing eyesight, he received from President Cleveland the appointment as postmaster of Portsmouth. In this important station he has been zealous in the interests of the public, and has succeeded in putting the office in the front rank of its class in character of administration and improved conveniences. Mr. Herbert was made a Mason in 1869, is a past master and Knight Templar, and is also a member of the Odd Fellows, Royal Arcanum and Heptasophs. He was married, May 25, 1870, to Mary E. Brown, daughter of Benjamin W. Brown, of Portsmouth, and they have four children: Caldor H., J. Pendleton, Richard Ainsworth and Ethel Brown.

Captain James E. Herrell, a gallant veteran of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, was born in Fauquier county, Va., March 24, 1843. He was educated in the public schools of Marshall, Va., and in 1857 removed to Prince William county, where the remainder of his youth was spent until the spring of 1861. Then, at the age of eighteen years, he enlisted in the Prince William Rifles, which was mustered into the Confederate service as Company F of the Seventeenth regiment. Enlisting as a private, he was made a first lieutenant at the reorganization and in 1864 was promoted captain, the rank he held at the close of the war. His service in the field embraced the entire war, except a period when he was detailed upon conscript duty, from just subsequent to the Seven Days' battles until after the Maryland campaign. Among the noted engagements in which he participated with his command were Blackburn's Ford, Williamsburg, Manassas Gap, Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm, Fredericksburg, Suffolk, Flat Creek Bridge, Drewry's Bluff, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. After the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia he returned to his home in Prince William county and was engaged in mercantile pursuits until 1888, during several years also acting as magistrate. In 1891 he was appointed to the office of deputy sheriff and discharged the duties of that position with ability until 1893, and was then appointed deputy clerk, an office he has since filled. He is an active member of Ewell camp, United Confederate Veterans, and is its present commander. He is also prominent in the Masonic order. In 1867 he was married to Miss Jane S. Hatton, of Richmond, and they have eight children.

James Christian Hill, who rendered distinguished service, with promotion to the rank of major, in the army of Northern Virginia, and since the war has been prominent in public affairs, was born in Charles City county, Va., in 1831. At the age of six years he was taken by his parents to their new home in New Kent county, where he received his education. Removing to Richmond about 1849 he resided there until 1860, when he came to Albemarle county, which has subsequently been his home. On May 9, 1861, he entered the service in Company E of the Forty-sixth Virginia infantry. Joining the ranks as a private, he was soon afterward promoted captain, and in the latter part of 1863 was promoted major, the rank he held during the remainder of his service. His military record was a gallant one, embracing participation in the

Seven Days' battles before Richmond, the operations about Charleston, S. C., and the engagements around Richmond and Petersburg in 1864. While fighting in the defense of Petersburg, June 17, 1864, he received a wound which caused the loss of his right arm, and disabled him for further duty with the army. He was paroled at Palmyra, Va., in June, 1865, and then returned to home life in Albemarle county. Becoming prominent in public affairs and in political councils, he was elected to the legislature from Albemarle county, and served with efficiency from 1869 to 1873. Subsequently, in 1877, he was elected to the position of sergeant of arms of the house of delegates, and by re-election held this position during the following ten years. He was then, in March, 1877, elected railroad commissioner of Virginia, and continued in that office until the present time by five successive re-elections. He is one of the prominent men of the State and possesses wide influence. His membership in the Confederate veterans' association is in Henry Gantt camp, of Albemarle county, of which he is commander. Major Hill's maternal grandfather, Joseph Christian, a native of Charles City county, served as a captain in the war of the Revolution, and with such gallantry as to win the soubriquet of "Fighting Joe Christian." His brother, Allen Hill, served in the Confederate cause, as orderly sergeant of Major Hill's company, and suffered the loss of his left arm at Petersburg in 1865. He now resides at Roanoke, Va.

Captain Thomas M. Hodges, a prominent civil engineer of Portsmouth, Va., was a gallant soldier of the army of Northern Virginia, and identified in his military career with the altogether worthy record of Company A of the Third regiment of Virginia infantry. Of this company, which was organized under the title of the Dismal Swamp Rangers, at Deep Creek, Norfolk county, in 1856, he held the rank of first sergeant at the outbreak of the war, and, in addition to this military experience, he had had the advantage of training at the Webster military academy at Portsmouth. On April 19, 1861, Capt. James C. Choate then in command, apprehending trouble at the Gosport navy yard, mustered his command under arms and marched to Portsmouth, where the governor's orders the next day found the men ready for action. In the fall of 1861 Captain Choate resigned and Lieut. John R. White became captain. The latter soon afterward taking the position of commissary of the regiment, Hodges, who had been promoted through the lieutenantancies, was elected captain, the rank he held during the remainder of the war. At the battle of Five Forks he had command of the regiment and surrendered it at Appomattox. On June 7, 1861, his company left Hospital battery, with the Third regiment, for Burwell's bay, where it remained until ordered to the reinforcement of Magruder on the lines at Yorktown, in March, 1862. It took part in the repulse of McClellan at Dam No. 2, and fought at Williamsburg until withdrawn on the retreat toward Richmond. The company took part in the two days' fighting at Seven Pines and all the Seven Days' battles except Malvern Hill, when it was held in reserve, suffering severe loss at Frayser's Farm, losing, out of sixty-eight men, five killed, including two lieutenants, and seventeen wounded. It fought at Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, terminating the campaign of 1862 by honorable action at Fredericksburg. At the battle of Gettysburg

Company A was deployed as skirmishers, and, under command of Captain Hodges, led the charge of Kemper's brigade of Pickett's division up Cemetery hill. Captain Hodges and Lieutenant White were wounded, and Lieutenant Gary was captured. On recovering from his wounds, Captain Hodges returned to his command and served during the campaigns of 1864 and 1865, at the last leading the remnant of the Third regiment. It is an interesting fact regarding the service of Company A at Gettysburg, that, though it was in the skirmish line and received the fire of the enemy before the main line of battle, by which many of its men were wounded, none were killed. After the close of the war, Captain Hodges engaged in farming until 1876, then removed to Portsmouth, where he served eight years as city engineer, having practiced that profession for several years before the war. Subsequently he was superintendent of the Norfolk County & Portsmouth ferry two years, served from 1885 to 1889 in the Virginia State senate, representing Portsmouth city and Norfolk county; was chief engineer and superintendent of construction of the Atlanta & Danville railroad from 1887 to 1890, for two years remained with that railroad as superintendent of maintenance of way, and, since 1892, has followed his profession at Portsmouth. He was married, November 4, 1858, to Margaret Taylor, of Norfolk county. Captain Hodges was born in Norfolk county, August 13, 1834, the son of James G. and Tamar (Hall) Hodges, whose ancestors have been residents of the county since 1665. His great-grandfather, Mason Hodges, served as a major in the Revolutionary war, in which his great-grandfather, William Hall, also served with the rank of captain, and his grandfather, Thomas Hodges, was a lieutenant in the war of 1812.

Horatio Cornick Hoggard, a prominent real estate broker of Norfolk, Va., was born February 11, 1846, in Princess Anne county, Va., at Poplar Hall, the ancestral home of his family. This plantation, which has been in the possession of the Hoggards for seven generations, was first granted to Thurmer Hoggard, about two hundred and fifty years ago, by Francis Bacon, Lord Verulam, to whom it had been patented with other lands by the crown of England. A brick house, built two hundred years ago, still stands, in a good state of preservation, upon the farm and is occupied now by the father, Thurmer Hoggard, who bears the name which has descended with but one exception in unbroken succession from the original settler. An older brother of Horatio, who bears the name, and served in the same command with him in the war of 1861-65, now resides on the plantation. The grandfather served in the war of 1812, and the great-grandfather in the Revolutionary war. At the beginning of the war of the Confederacy young Hoggard was a student at the Norfolk academy, but, despite his youth, was impatient to enlist for the defense of the rights of his State and the South. Two months before he had reached the age of sixteen years he entered the service at Norfolk and was engaged on picket duty in that vicinity until the evacuation, the order for which he carried from headquarters to General Mahone. When the troops retired from Norfolk he marched with them to Petersburg and then took part in the battles of the Peninsular campaign against McClellan. At the battle of Seven Pines eighty-five Federal prisoners were placed in the charge of himself and a comrade.

William I. Herrick, to escort to Libby prison, a duty which they performed without difficulty. Subsequently he participated in the battles about Fredericksburg, serving in the command of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, did picket duty on the Rappahannock and fought at Brandy Station, Culpeper and Orange Court House. At Culpeper he received a bullet in the right shoulder, which he still carries. Subsequently he was in battle at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, and all the way toward Richmond. At the brisk engagement at Yellow Tavern, on May 11, 1864, when General Stuart was mortally wounded, Mr. Hoggard fell into the hands of the Federals, and was held as a prisoner of war at Hampton and subsequently at Point Lookout for ten weary months. His brother, Thurmer H. Hoggard, in the same company, was severely wounded at the same time, but recovered; was shot through his stomach, and the enemy considering his recovery impossible, left him on the battlefield in a ditch of water, where he remained for about forty-eight hours, until the field was retaken by our soldiers. In February, 1865, he managed to make his escape from the prison camp and soon afterward reached Richmond, and returned to duty. When the city was evacuated he secured a leave of absence in order to visit his parents, and was on his way to his home at Poplar Hall when the army of Northern Virginia was surrendered. He then gave his parole at Norfolk to the Federal authorities and returned to the farm, where he gave his attention for the following fifteen years exclusively to agricultural pursuits. He still devotes some time to that occupation and maintains a home on the farm, but during the past twelve years has given his chief attention to the real estate and renting business, conducting handsome offices in Norfolk, and occupies a high rank in that vocation. In this business his brother, Thomas J., is associated with him. Mr. Hoggard maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans, and is a warm friend of the survivors of the Virginia forces. He was happily married, on December 19, 1871, to Mary Nash Herbert, daughter of Edward H. Herbert, formerly of Princess Anne county, and one of the wealthiest planters of that region. Eight children of this marriage are living. The mother of Mr. Hoggard, who died on Good Friday, in 1892, was also a native of Princess Anne county, and a daughter of Lemuel Cornick, a prominent citizen. His father, Thurmer Hoggard, at this date is in fair health, having passed his seventy-ninth birthday on the 14th of June, 1898.

A. G. Holland, of Washington, D. C., was one of the residents of that city who entered heartily into the cause of Virginia in 1861 and served faithfully until the end of the struggle. He was born in Washington in 1842. On April 23, 1861, he crossed to Virginia soil and joined the Beauregard rifles, at Alexandria, as a private, and began at once his service for Virginia and the Confederate States. His company became a part of the First Virginia cavalry, of which he was a member until September, 1861, when he was mustered out, and in the following month re-enlisted in the artillery, becoming a member of the Purcell battery, of Pegram's battalion, with which he served as a non-commissioned officer until April, 1864, when he was transferred to the Baltimore light artillery and participated in the campaigns of Early and McCaus-

land of that year. His record embraces participation in the early action at the Great Falls of the Potomac, the first battle of Manassas, picket fights at Mason's and Munson's hills before Washington, an engagement with gunboats at Aquia creek, skirmish at Fredericksburg in 1862, the battles of Mechanicsville (where he was wounded in the leg and disabled for the rest of the Peninsular campaign), Cedar Mountain, Warrenton Springs, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry (where he was again wounded), Sharpsburg, Snicker's Gap, Fredericksburg, Va., Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Hanover Junction, Yellow Tavern (where he was a third time wounded), the campaign against Hunter in the valley, in 1864, Monocacy, Newtown, Gunpowder Bridge, Beltsville, Md., Fort Stevens (before Washington), Rockville, Md., the raid upon and burning of Chambersburg, Pa., demonstration against Cumberland, Md., capture of ironclad train and blockhouse at St. John's Run, and the disastrous surprise by Averell's cavalry at Moorefield, W. Va., in August, 1864. Here he was captured and thence taken to Camp Chase, Ohio, where he was imprisoned until March, 1865. Upon being exchanged he attempted to join Johnston's army, but this being impossible he surrendered at Appomattox. On returning to Washington, he was arrested and confined at Alexandria for three weeks, though he had a parole in his pocket. Since the restoration of peace he has continued to reside at Washington.

Colonel F. W. M. Holliday was before the war one of the most prominent lawyers of Winchester, Va. When Virginia gallantly took her stand against the coercion of sovereign States he promptly laid aside the robes of peace and girded on the sword for the defense of the rights and honor of Virginia. He entered the Thirty-third Virginia as captain of one of the companies. At the First Manassas began his military career, which was peculiarly heroic. In the Valley campaign of 1862 he was among the most valiant of the officers of that little army which, led by the peerless Stonewall Jackson, shed such luster over the Southern cause. During that time he was promoted to the rank of major, in which capacity he served during the Seven Days of battle at Richmond. General Winder, in his report of Gaines' Mill and Malvern Hill, speaks as follows: "Colonel Neff and Maj. F. W. M. Holliday, Thirty-third regiment, and Lieutenants Howard and Garnett of my staff, particularly attracted my admiration by their coolness and untiring efforts to keep the men in their position. Their escape from injury is truly providential." At Cedar mountain, in the front of the battle, he was severely wounded in the arm and amputation was necessary. At the Second Manassas the gallant Colonel Neff lost his life. Major Holliday was then appointed colonel of the regiment and, as soon as his wound was sufficiently healed, he was again at the post of duty. With the same courage that had always distinguished him, he led his men through the great battles in Virginia and Pennsylvania and, in the spring of 1864, was still ready to risk life in defense of the Southern cause. Through the campaign of that year he passed unscathed and was in the service until the death of the young Confederacy at Appomattox. After the war he resumed the practice of law and took a prominent part in the political affairs of his State until he reached the proud position of governor of Virginia.

Jesse P. Hope, M. D., born at Hampton, Va., in 1828, died at the same city, June 29, 1883; previous to the Confederate era received a literary education at the university of Virginia and studied medicine at the Jefferson medical college, Philadelphia, with graduation as doctor of medicine in 1857. He established himself at Hampton in the practice of medicine, but abandoned his professional work at the call of his State early in 1861, enlisting as a lieutenant in the Washington artillery. He held this rank until after the battle of Bethel, when he was transferred to the medical department as field and hospital surgeon. He continued on duty in this capacity until the close of the war, during the greater part of his service being in charge of a hospital at Richmond. His professional skill and patriotic devotion were recognized by all with whom he came in contact. After the close of hostilities he returned to Hampton and there continued in professional work until his death. Dr. Hope was a cousin of the poet, James Barron Hope, and son of Dr. William Hope, who practiced medicine many years at Hampton and held the office of sheriff when that was the principal official honor of the county. The latter was the grandson of George Hope, Sr., the founder of the family in Virginia, who was sent from England upon the mission of inquiring into the feasibility of establishing a colonial navy, subsequently served in the Continental army, and, locating at Hampton, became the founder of the first Masonic lodge at that city. Surgeon Hope was married in January, 1857, to Mary Letitia, daughter of Colonel Taylor, of James City county, and seven children were born to them. The four sons are: George W., captain of Company D, Virginia volunteers, with Fitzhugh Lee's brigade in the Spanish war; Dr. Joseph W. Hope, of York county, born September, 1865, graduated from medical college of Virginia, November, 1888; Dr. Thomas P. Hope and James Barron Hope, Jr. Dr. Thomas P. Hope, a prominent young physician at Hampton, was born at that city December 15, 1867. He was educated at the Hampton academy, became a drug clerk at seventeen years, and continued in that occupation, with the exception of two and a half years in the railway postal service, until 1890, when he embarked in business as a pharmacist. Disposing of the business a year later, he entered the medical college of Virginia and was graduated in April, 1893, standing second in his class. For about three years he practiced in York county and then removed to Hampton. He is a member of the clinical society of the staff of Dixie hospital, is highly regarded by his professional brethren and popular with the community. He is also a member of the Seaboard medical society of Virginia and North Carolina. James Barron Hope, Jr., another of the sons of Surgeon Hope, was born at Hampton, May 3, 1872. He left Hampton academy at the age of sixteen to enter business life, and, seven years later, became a student of law at Washington and Lee university. Completing his course, he was admitted to practice in 1896, at Hampton. A year later he was elected mayor of the city, being the youngest man upon whom that honor was ever bestowed. He is a member of the camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans and a member of Company D, Fourth regiment Virginia infantry.

Major Jedediah Hotchkiss was a descendant of a family which settled in New Haven, Conn., in 1642, where its members were prominent in church and civil affairs, and served in the Indian,

French and Revolutionary wars. Of Scotch-Irish, English and Welsh descent, they intermarried with the Baldwin, Beecher, Bridgman, Stiles, Sperry and the "Black" Douglas families. In 1789 David Hotchkiss founded Windsor, N. Y., where his great-grandson, Jedediah Hotchkiss, was born November 28, 1828, the son of Stiles and Lydia (Beecher) Hotchkiss. A graduate of the Windsor academy, he completed his classical studies with his pastor; in 1846 taught his first school at Lykens Valley, Pa., and in 1847 made a pedestrian tour through Virginia. He was so pleased that he returned to engage as a tutor at Mossy Creek, Augusta county, where he built the well-known Mossy Creek academy. He was teaching the Loch Willow school when war began in 1861. He then offered his services to General Garnett as topographical engineer, and was assigned to duty under Colonel Heck on July 2d, on Rich mountain. He at once made a survey for a map, but the position was soon evacuated, Hotchkiss serving as adjutant on the retreat. When General Lee reorganized the army in August, 1861, at Valley mountain, Hotchkiss joined him, and when his map of Tygart's valley was completed, General Lee's campaign opened. From exposure and overwork he contracted typhoid fever, that scourge of the West Virginia camps, and was sent home, to Churchville, to suffer for many weeks. General Lee went to South Carolina, but Hotchkiss prepared the maps of this campaign upon his recovery. In March, 1862, previous to the battle of Kernstown, he joined the staff of Gen. Stonewall Jackson, and was assigned to duty, with the rank of captain, as topographical engineer of the Valley district, department of Virginia. Most comprehensive were General Jackson's first instructions: "Prepare a map showing all points of offense and defense in the Shenandoah valley from the Potomac to Lexington." This work being under way, Captain Hotchkiss was sent to choose a line of defense. He selected Stony Creek, where Jackson fell back. Then encamping near Swift Run gap, he sent his engineer to burn some bridges, in doing which he narrowly escaped capture. In constant motion, the captain ascended the peak of Massanutton, communicating with Jackson by signals of his own devising, thus using for the first time in the valley a method common in later campaigns. His return was greeted by, "Good; very good," from his leader. The unwearied engineer placed artillery, led skirmishes, made maps, and one night rode sixty miles to block Dry and North River gaps. He rode forty-six miles to Front Royal to report Banks' operations, led Ashby's attack at Middletown, and was on duty in the pursuit to Winchester. On May 25th he rode with Jackson at the head of his troops through Winchester, and rallied the citizens to extinguish the fires the foe had kindled. After pushing on to Harper's Ferry, Loudoun Heights and Winchester, by hard rides, he brought the Stonewall brigade back from picket duty at Charlestown to Kernstown, and helped save the captured stores in wagons, while Jackson opposed the pursuing forces. From Massanutton he again signaled the movements of Shields and McDowell. Captain Hotchkiss led General Taylor's brigade in a flank movement at Port Republic around the Federal left through the woods, also in the attack that decided the battle, and when the fight was over selected a camp beyond Fremont's battery fire. Serving in the battle of Cross Keys he prepared a map of the field. While Jackson went to Rich-

mond he was sent to Staunton "to make a map," then joining the army at Gordonsville, and mapping the Piedmont region for the Pope campaign. He was at Cedar mountain, the Rappahannock operations, and Chantilly or Ox Hill. He blew up the Monocacy bridge by a novel plan, was with Jackson in the Maryland campaign, guided Gen. J. E. B. Stuart by blind roads from Sharpsburg to Shepherdstown, and was strongly recommended by Jackson to the secretary of war for promotion. Incessant note-taking and map-drawing filled the days until he aided in placing troops in line of battle at Fredericksburg, serving on the staff at that time. The winter was spent at Moss Neck, making reports and maps to accompany them. In the spring of 1863 he made, in secrecy for General Jackson, a map "from the Rappahannock to Philadelphia," which was used in the Gettysburg campaign. General Jackson slept under his rubber blanket at the "Bivouac Angle," and when he had approved his engineer's route for the flank movement against Hooker, at Chancellorsville, he conferred with Lee and rode to his last battle. Taking Jackson to the rear after he was wounded, Captain Hotchkiss rode that night to report to General Lee and point out on the map the position of Jackson's corps. The next day he conducted the ambulance of his wounded commander to a safe place. On the field, for General Lee, Captain Hotchkiss prepared the complete maps of the Chancellorsville campaign, which are the basis of all maps of the battle to this time. Serving on General Ewell's staff, Captain Hotchkiss went to Gettysburg, was in the attack the first day, and was then ordered to Seminary ridge to watch and report. General Lee was requiring his maps, too, as "he always had confidence in them." He prepared elaborate maps of the Mine Run campaign and Meade's operations, and also did staff duty. In the spring of 1864 General Lee sent Captain Hotchkiss to select a line of defense, and he rode hundreds of miles, preparing a report which was largely adopted and specially complimented by General Lee. One of his most successful feats was to map, in one day, under heavy skirmish fire, the line held by General Lee, some ten miles long, from the Chickahominy to the Totopotomoy, delivering the map that evening. When General Early took command of the Second corps, Captain Hotchkiss remained on his staff, and so served in the Lynchburg campaign against Hunter, in the Monocacy and Washington campaign; and in the Valley campaign against Sheridan, Captain Hotchkiss and General Gordon reconnoitered from Three-top mountain, and the map then made was used in the famous battle of Cedar Creek. The following winter (1864-65) he prepared beautifully illustrated reports of the operations of the Second corps, having made over one hundred maps for army officers, from General Lee down. When Sheridan attacked Early at Waynesboro, Major Hotchkiss was on staff duty (having previously sent his maps to Richmond), and was chased over the Blue Ridge, barely escaping capture. He joined General Rosser at Lynchburg and when General Lee surrendered at once came home and was paroled on May 1, 1865, at Staunton, where he soon removed his family. An informer caused his arrest that fall, but he accompanied his cherished maps to Washington, and General Grant ordered their return, and paid for copying all he desired to use in his own reports.

These same maps were also used in the war records of the United States. For two years Major Hotchkiss taught a select school for boys, mostly sons of his war comrades. He then opened an office as a civil, mining and consulting engineer, the profession of his remaining years. He used his vast knowledge of the mineral, forestal and other resources of the Virginias in securing the investment of millions by foreign and northern capitalists within their borders. At General Lee's request he was made topographer of "The Physical Survey of the South," but this work ceased within a year, upon General Lee's death. In 1872 and again in 1874 he visited England and Scotland to induce emigration to Virginia, and lectured, by invitation, before the Royal Society of Arts, London, on "The Virginias," and a large edition of the paper was printed and distributed. In 1875 he prepared "A Summary of Virginia" for the State, a work teeming with facts and illustrated by fine maps. He also lectured with Dr. Barnas Sears, to popularize the public school system through the entire South. In 1879 he was the special census agent on the mineral resources of Virginia; in 1894 he served as United States expert topographer on the battlefield of Antietam; and from 1880 to 1886 he published "The Virginias," a monthly paper, still an authority on the resources of the two States. He was a commissioner to the New Orleans and Louisville expositions, a judge of mines and mining at the Columbian exposition in 1893, and a member of the American philosophical society, the Mining Engineers, the Geographical society, the Geological society, the American association for the advancement of science, and numerous other bodies. He was the first to lecture on Stonewall Jackson, and this address, "The Valley Campaign of 1862," was unique and unapproachable in style and matter, illustrated by maps drawn on the blackboard in colored crayons, which grew as the lecture progressed, and was completed with the final words. It was delivered all over the land, from Boston to Chicago and New Orleans. Major Hotchkiss was an ardent Confederate, the founder of Stonewall Jackson camp in Staunton, Va., and major-general of engineers on the staff of Gen. J. B. Gordon of the United Confederate Veterans. He was a generous donor to the Young Men's Christian association, a member of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and a born teacher, his mind being stored with the classic and modern tongues, the natural sciences, history, poetry and art, ever generously bestowed on others. He was a zealous Presbyterian, a Sabbath-school teacher, superintendent and elder; a well-rounded Christian character, of beautiful purity and cheerfulness. Major Hotchkiss died at his residence, "The Oaks," at Staunton, Va., January 17, 1899.

Captain Benjamin F. Howard, of Richmond, distinguished in the annals of the old First Virginia regiment, and prominently associated with the public service of the city of Richmond since the war, was born at Washington, D. C., in 1835. At that city he received his education and remained there until June, 1860, when he became a citizen of Richmond and found employment as a stone cutter. On April 21, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as second sergeant of Company I of the First Virginia infantry. On April 26, 1862, at the reorganization of his command at Yorktown, he was promoted lieutenant, and with this rank he participated in

the battle of Seven Pines, where, in the first day's fight, he was dangerously wounded, a musket ball piercing the lung. He returned to his command in February, 1863, but was paralyzed in the right arm for eighteen months. He was promoted captain of his company at Manassas, Capt. J. A. Tabb having been killed August 30th. At Gettysburg he took charge of the regiment after Major Langley was wounded, and at the Howlett House, on May 18, 1864, he was wounded by a shell passing over his head about six or eight inches, shocking him until he was unconscious for four or five days. He continued to serve as captain of his gallant company, with unflinching courage and devotion to the cause, until the surrender at Appomattox. Receiving his parole, he returned to Richmond, and, on December 19, 1865, was appointed to the police force of the city by David J. Saunders, then mayor under the military government. In July, 1866, he was appointed roundsman, and in July, 1868, was made acting sergeant, serving in that capacity until the military commander superseded all such officers by his own appointments. When, under the enabling act of 1870, Maj. John Poe, as chief of police, organized the force, Captain Howard was appointed sergeant and assigned to duty with eight men to guard the capitol and governor's mansion. Subsequently assigned to the First district, he was promoted captain, and finally elected chief of police of the city, to succeed Major Poe. As the guardian of the peace of the city, his conduct is marked by the same manly courage which characterized his service as a Confederate soldier. As he obeyed orders without question, he now enforces the laws as he finds them.

John Q. Hozier, now residing at Lambert's Point, near Norfolk, did faithful service in the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Norfolk county, August 27, 1843. His grandfather, Sampson Hozier, a native of Scotland, was a soldier in the Revolutionary army of the colonies. His father, Joseph Hozier, born at Norfolk, September 21, 1805, died September 21, 1856, was for thirty years captain of the watch at the Norfolk navy yard. His mother, Harriet, daughter of James Godfrey, a farmer, was born in Camden county, N. C., February 14, 1809, and died October 2, 1873. At the age of sixteen Mr. Hozier was apprenticed to the carpenter's trade, and had been thus engaged but a little over two years when he enlisted in the Confederate service, July 15, 1861, as a private in the St. Bride's artillery, commanded by Capt. George A. Martin. With this command he served until the reorganization in March, 1862, when he was transferred to the Floyd Guards, afterward Company K of the Sixty-first Virginia regiment of infantry. In the campaigns and engagements participated in by this regiment, he took part until November 3, 1863, when he was discharged on account of sickness. His disability was such that he was unable to re-enter the military service. As soon as sufficiently recovered he resumed his trade, to which he has since given his principal attention, with notable success. He was a good soldier and is an upright citizen. March 11, 1864, he was married to Roberta M. Cutler, and they have four children living, Leon, Hattie R., Ethel and Hazel. Two sons deceased were John C., killed by lightning at the age of twelve years, and Joseph E. Johnston. The eldest son, a soldierly youth, is a member of the Fourth Virginia regiment.

Edmund Wilcox Hubbard, rector of St. Paul's church, at Salem, Va., achieved an honorable record during the war of the Confederacy as a private in the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Buckingham county in 1841, and there reared and educated. In the fall of 1863 he entered the military service, becoming a member of Company K of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. With this command he served during the remainder of the war, his record embracing participation in the cavalry engagements at Spottsylvania, from Spottsylvania to Yellow Tavern, Todd's Tavern, skirmishes with Sheridan's cavalry from Spottsylvania to Richmond, Hawe's Shop, Meadow Bridge, near Pole Green Church, Opequan Creek, near Winchester, the fight at Winchester under Early, Front Royal, Millwood, Weir's Cave and Waynesboro. At the engagement near Pole Green church he was struck on the head by a musket ball and disabled in consequence about three months. At the disastrous affair of Waynesboro he was again badly wounded, in the left hip, and disabled from the last of September until the spring of 1865. He was able to return to his command before the evacuation of Petersburg, and he served faithfully at Five Forks and during the retreat, at High Bridge and Amelia Springs. After the latter encounter he went to his home to procure a fresh horse, and, before his return was possible, the war came to an end. In September, 1865, he entered the theological seminary at Alexandria, Va., where he was graduated in 1868. In the same year he was ordained deacon in the Protestant Episcopal church, and priest in June, 1869. His service for the church, which immediately began, was rendered from the fall of 1868 until July, 1872, at Boteourt parish; at Owensboro, Ky., during the following year, and at Brandon, Va., from 1873 to 1875. Subsequently he was in charge at Lynchburg a year, in Rappahannock county from 1877 to 1880, in Bedford county to 1890, and, since the latter date, at Salem, Va. In 1875 Mr. Hubbard was married in Louisa county to Julia L. Taylor and their home is blessed with three children. His career in the army of peace has been no less true and devoted than the performance of his duty in the army led by Lee in defense of the homes and the rights of the South.

George W. Hubble, M. D., now a prominent physician at Chilhowie, in southwest Virginia, made a gallant record as a private of the Third Tennessee infantry. He was born in Cass county, Mo., April 24, 1844, and was left an orphan at the age of four years by the death of his father. His mother then removed with her family to the home of her father in Giles county, Tenn., where he was reared to the age of seventeen years. He then, on May 22, 1861, entered the Confederate service, and was mustered in as fifth sergeant of Company D of the Third Tennessee infantry regiment, at Nashville. While in camp at Camp Cheatham he was taken sick and compelled to go home for six weeks, but he rejoined his command at Bowling Green, Ky., a short time before it was ordered to Fort Donelson. In the battle of February 15, he was with his regiment in Col. John C. Brown's brigade of General Buckner's division, in the gallant attack upon Grant's army, driving back the Federals and gaining possession of the road desired for the withdrawal of the garrison. Unfortunately there were delay and errors in the disposition of the forces and Grant received reinforcements which made further attack hopeless. After the capitulation he was

held as a prisoner at Chicago for seven months, and then exchanged at Vicksburg, Miss. His command was reorganized at Jackson, Miss., with Capt. Calvin H. Walker, colonel; Capt. C. C. Clark, lieutenant-colonel, and Lieut. T. M. Tucker, major. They were then ordered to support the army of Van Dorn and Price, which they joined near Holly Springs about October 10, 1862. The regiment marched with this army to Grenada, en route participating in a skirmish at Springdale, driving away a Federal force which was about to destroy the railroad. They had been then assigned to the brigade of General Tilghman and consolidated with the Thirtieth Tennessee regiment, which had also just returned from prison camp. On Christmas day, 1862, they reached Vicksburg, and, under the command of Col. C. H. Walker in the brigade of Gen. S. D. Lee, took a conspicuous part in the defeat of Sherman's army at Chickasaw Bluff. As General Pemberton reported, "The Third, Thirtieth and Eightieth Tennessee regiments occupied the rifle pits in front and behaved with distinguished coolness and courage" Walker's command killed and captured about one thousand Federals, five flags out of the seven brought on the field, and fifteen hundred stand of small arms; also killing all the horses that appeared in their front. Their main loss, aside from the killing of Major Tucker and Lieutenant Bass, was caused by the explosion of a caisson, which did not injure any of the Third Tennessee, but killed a staff officer of Gen. S. D. Lee. Dr. Hubble, on January 7, accompanied his regiment to Port Hudson, where Gregg's brigade was formed, and his regiment now being recruited was detached from the Thirtieth, and, under Colonel Walker, continued on active duty throughout the Vicksburg campaign. While at Port Hudson, then under the command of Gen. Frank Gardner, they witnessed the bombardment of the post and the destruction of a Federal vessel by the water batteries. Moving toward Jackson, May 2, Dr. Hubble took part in the gallant fight of Gregg's brigade at Raymond, against the corps of Sherman and Logan, his regiment losing two hundred out of six hundred engaged. At Mississippi Springs they met General Gist, of South Carolina, who covered the retreat to Jackson. This city they evacuated after forty-eight hours and then moved to Yazoo City, and returned to Big Black river, where they were encamped for a few days. On Sunday, July 4, they drew and cooked three days' rations, expecting to attack Grant's rear on the morning of the 5th, but, hearing of the surrender of Vicksburg, they marched at an early hour for Jackson, where they stood a siege of ten days, thence falling back slowly to Enterprise, and thence to Chickamauga. At Pea Vine creek they were ordered into line of battle, which they did not leave until the battle of Chickamauga had been fought. In this conflict they were part of Bushrod Johnson's division, Buckner's corps. It was here that Colonel Walker made his famous address to the regiment. On Sunday evening, September 20th, on Snodgrass Hill, the Confederate lines had been pushed back twice. Steedman had arrived with his division of Granger's reserve corps. There were no reinforcements at hand and the day seemed lost, as the lines were shattered. It was at this supreme moment that Col. C. H. Walker took off his cap, exposing his bald head which glistened in the sun, and exclaimed: "Boys, are you going to leave this old bald head? I'm going to

die right here." His words were magical and, calling to his aid Lieutenant Seymore of the Tenth Tennessee, both regiments were quickly reformed and moved up to the crest of the ridge to stay. Lieutenant Seymore was one of the Light brigade and was wounded twice at the charge of Balaklava. The regiment called Colonel Walker "Old Ballie." Dr. Hubble was severely wounded in this battle, his right leg being crushed by two pieces of shell, and he was no longer able to serve on the field. Removing to Virginia after the war, he studied medicine at Bellevue and Long Island college hospitals and established himself in the practice at Chilhowie.

Captain John M. Hudgin, Bowling Green, Va., was born in Caroline county in 1839. His father was Robert Hudgin, who held the office of clerk of Caroline county about sixty years and died at the age of ninety. His mother was Sarah Graham, daughter of Walter Graham of Prince William, and Sarah Richards of Stafford county, and closely related to the Grahams, of Prince William county, Va., who were descended from John Graham of Hilern, in the shire of Sterling, Scotland. John Graham was the grandfather of Col. Thomas Montrose Graham of the Eleventh United States infantry, who was killed at the city of Mexico; also James D. Graham, of topographical engineers, an officer of mark who graduated with distinction in 1817; and Gen. Lawrence Pike Graham, who distinguished himself in the Florida wars and fought in the Federal army in the civil war between the States. These three officers were descended from Dr. William Graham, of Prince William county, Va., who also served gallantly as an officer in the Revolutionary struggle. By both ancestral lines Captain Hudgin is connected with worthy colonial families. He was educated in the private schools of his native county and at Lynchburg college, and, in 1861, entered the law department of the university of Virginia, intending to prepare himself for the profession of law. Almost simultaneously, however, the State allied itself with the Confederacy, and, upon the call for troops, young Hudgin entered the Confederate service as a member of the Thirtieth regiment of infantry. In 1861 his command was stationed at Aquia creek under General Holmes, guarding the Potomac river, thence reinforced the army at Manassas, and subsequently did duty in North Carolina and east Tennessee. In the campaign of 1862 he commanded his company, and with his regiment occupied Loudoun Heights during the investment of Harper's Ferry by General Jackson's command. At this time the regiment was part of the brigade of Gen. John G. Walker, who had command of the division in which it was placed. The company was actively engaged in the battle of September 17th, at Sharpsburg, from beginning to end. As sharpshooters they held position, at the opening, on the extreme right of the army, but about 10 a. m., Walker's command was hurried to the support of the extreme left (Hudgin's battalion of sharpshooters following promptly), where the Confederates were being pressed back. The regiment was falling back when Hudgin went into battle. General Walker, in his official report, said, "The division advanced in splendid style, firing and cheering as they went, and, in a few minutes, cleared the woods, strewing it with the enemy's wounded and dead. Colonel Manning, with the Forty-sixth and Forty-eighth North Carolina and Thirtieth Virginia, not content with the possession of the woods, dashed forward in gallant style,

crossed the open fields beyond, driving the enemy before him like sheep." Subsequently, in the report, Captain Hudgin's company is mentioned as having remained on the field and fought handsomely throughout the day, after the remainder of the Thirtieth had been disorganized under the severe fire of the enemy. Subsequently, in 1862, near Fredericksburg, Va., his regiment was assigned to Corse's brigade of Pickett's division, in which it served during the remainder of the war. From his participation in the campaign against New Bern, N. C., in 1864, he was called to the defense of Richmond. The Thirtieth, with the Seventeenth Virginia, had a successful encounter with a Federal raiding party at Mattoax Station, thereby saving an iron bridge of vital importance to the Confederate capital, and he then with his command joined Beauregard at Drewry's bluff, where the enemy was repulsed and driven back to Bermuda Hundred. During the siege he participated in the defense of Richmond and in many engagements about the city, fought conspicuously at Five Forks, and finally at Sailor's Creek, where he was distinguished in a charge which resulted in the recapture of a piece of artillery from the enemy. After the surrender at Appomattox he returned to Bowling Green and soon embarked in the practice of law, in which he has been notably successful. He has been influential in public affairs, and has occupied several positions of prominence in civil life. He has served as county chairman of the political organization of his county, and attended as alternate delegate the National convention at Chicago which nominated Mr. Cleveland in 1884. For four terms he represented his county in the State assembly, and has twice been strongly supported for the nomination to Congress. In 1894 he was appointed to the important position of United States marshal for the eastern district of Virginia. His membership with the Confederate Veterans' association is in Pickett camp of Richmond, Va. Captain Hudgin still maintains his historic home at "Shepherd's Hill" in Caroline county, noted as being at one time the headquarters of General Hancock.

Captain Benjamin F. Hudgins, a native of Elizabeth City county, Va., entered the service of Virginia and the Confederacy in command of the Hampton Grays, a gallant company of volunteers, with whom he served as captain during the first two years of the war. He then was detailed for duty on the staff of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, and during the remainder of the struggle he served in this capacity, with gallantry and efficiency, on the staffs of General Stuart and other commanders. Upon the close of hostilities he engaged in farming for a time, and then embarked in business as a dealer in coal and wood. From 1882 he conducted this business with much success, at Hampton, until his death, March 21, 1894. His wife, Rebecca Bland Worsham, a native of Dinwiddie county, died February 22, 1884. Their son, Astley Cooper, was reared upon the farm in Elizabeth City county, where he was born March 24, 1871, to the age of twelve years. Since then he has been a resident of Hampton. He was educated at the Virginia military institute and William and Mary college, leaving the latter institution in 1889 to assist his father in business. From October, 1889, to 1896 he was connected with the bank of Hampton in various important and responsible positions, and resigned this employment to

form a partnership with his brother, K. W. Hudgins, as the successors in business of their father. These two worthy sons of a gallant Confederate officer are very successful in business and socially popular, and have before them a useful career. Mr. Hudgins is a member of Hampton camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans, and is a communicant of St. John's Episcopal church.

Lieutenant Henry C. Hudgins, a veteran of Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, now residing at Portsmouth, was born in Matthews county, Va., September 19, 1841. His father, Capt. Robert K. Hudgins, married Sarah J. White, granddaughter of Major Davenport of the Continental army of the Revolutionary war. When Virginia seceded, Captain Hudgins resigned his commission as captain in the U. S. revenue marine service, and entered the service of the Confederacy, and was assigned to duty in the heavy ordnance department, in which capacity he served throughout the war. He now resides at Norfolk. The outbreak of the war found Lieut. H. C. Hudgins, a youth of nineteen years, at New Orleans, where he accepted in January, 1861, the position of secretary to Commodore Rousseau of the Confederate States navy, which he resigned when his State seceded and promptly returned to Virginia and entered the service as a private in the Old Dominion Guard, one of the finest companies of the Virginia volunteers. He served with this company at Pinner's point until the evacuation of Norfolk, after which the company was assigned to the Ninth Virginia infantry as Company K. With his regiment he participated in the battles of Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. Having previously been promoted to first sergeant, he was unanimously elected by his company as first lieutenant in 1862. He took part in the Suffolk and New Bern expedition of Longstreet's corps and Pickett's division, and participated in the battle of Gettysburg in the historic assault of Pickett's division upon Cemetery hill, where he was wounded, but escaped capture. Captain Allen, commanding Company K, having been captured at the "stone wall," on the same field, Lieutenant Hudgins, after he was able to return to duty, assumed command and acted as captain during the remainder of his active service until the end of the war. After the Pennsylvania campaign, Lieutenant Hudgins was sent with his company to "Camp Lee" Richmond, to recruit, and while stationed there as senior officer in command of "Camp Lee" battalion, co-operated with the local defense in protecting the city against the raid of Kilpatrick's cavalry. Having rejoined his regiment he participated in several engagements around Richmond and at Bermuda Hundred finally surrendering to General Wright's army corps near Danville; was paroled and returned home. Since the war he has been engaged in the transportation business at Norfolk; first with steamship companies, and since 1881 as general freight and passenger agent of the Norfolk & Southern railroad. At the reorganization of his old company in 1875, he was elected captain, and upon the organization of the Fourth Virginia regiment, he was chosen its first colonel. He has served as commander of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, of Portsmouth. In public affairs he has been active as a member of the city council, Portsmouth; and is a director in the board of trade and business men's association of Norfolk. In 1867 Colonel

Hudgins was married to Miss Lulie Langhorne, and they have seven children living.

Robert S. Hudgins, first commander of R. E. Lee camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Hampton, was born in Elizabeth City county, May 28, 1842. His ancestors, originally of Scotch origin, were for many years identified with the history of the colony and State, and several members of the family participated in the war of the Revolution. His father, Robert Hudgins, born in 1799, in Matthews county, died in 1860, was a wealthy planter and slave owner. He married Harriet Jones, daughter of Col. Thomas Jones, a prominent planter of King William county, whose wife was a daughter of Colonel McDowell, of the British army, and of an ancestry running back to the Howards of England. Mrs. Robert Hudgins had two brothers and one sister—Anderson; Franklin, who married Alice Monroe, sister of President Monroe, and Susan, who married Dr. Dew. Robert S. Hudgins was the youngest of five children: Benjamin F., who served during the Confederate war as captain of the Hampton Grays and died in 1894; Ella, who married James W. Downey, and now resides at Houston, Texas; Salina, who married Sidney S., son of Judge Philip Norbon Nichols, of Richmond, and now resides at New York city; and Annie, wife of Robert W. Drewry, of Richmond, now deceased. He was reared upon the farm and educated at John B. Cary's military academy at Hampton. He rendered his first service to Virginia and the Confederacy as a member of a volunteer company, on picket duty at Old Point Comfort as early as February, 1861. After the secession of the State he became a member of the Old Dominion Dragoons, organized at Hampton, and subsequently attached to the Third Virginia cavalry, Fitz Lee's brigade of Stuart's cavalry. His battles, begun at Big Bethel, were numerous, and the minor encounters with the enemy still greater in number. There was not a battle of the army of Northern Virginia in which the Third Virginia did not have some important part, either in the actual encounter or in the collisions which preceded or followed the main fight. He rode and fought with Fitzhugh Lee and Stuart to the end, and was within sight of the lamented Stuart when he fell at Yellow Tavern. He was finally paroled at Appomattox, having escaped without serious wounds, though he was struck several times by the enemy's missiles, and had his clothing frequently pierced. Since the return of peace he has given his attention to agricultural pursuits at the old home in Elizabeth City county, residing upon one of his farms until 1893, when he made his home at Hampton. He was one of the principal organizers of the Confederate camp at Hampton, and served as its first commander, previously having been a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, at Richmond. On December 12, 1876, he married Mrs. Frances Ann Causey, widow of William Norris Causey, and daughter of Francis Schmelz, late of Hampton. They have a son, Robert S. Hudgins, Jr. Francis F. Causey, son of Mrs. Hudgins by her former marriage, is a promising young attorney of Hampton.

Colonel Frank Huger, born at Fortress Monroe, September 29, 1837, died at Roanoke, Va., June 11, 1897, was one of the most distinguished artillery officers of the First corps of the army of Northern Virginia. He was a son of Gen. Benjamin Huger, of the United States and Confederate States armies, and a member of the noted South Carolina family of that name. Colonel Huger was graduated at West Point in 1860, in a class which included

Gens. Horace Poiter, Wesley Merritt, James H. Wilson and Pennington of the Union army and Ramseur of the Confederate army. In 1861 he resigned his Federal commission and entered the Confederate service, becoming captain of a company of artillery known as "Huger's Battery." He served at Norfolk, and subsequently was attached to the division of his father under Longstreet's command during the Seven Days' battles. Promoted major of Alexander's battalion of artillery of Longstreet's corps, he rose to the rank of colonel and command of the battalion when Alexander was made brigadier-general and chief of artillery under Longstreet. Under his command the battalion maintained the high reputation it had achieved under Stephen D. Lee and E. P. Alexander. His war service embraced all the campaigns of the First corps of the army of Northern Virginia, including Chickamauga and east Tennessee. At the disastrous battle of Sailor's Creek, a few days before Appomattox, he was captured by General Custer, a former comrade at West Point. After the close of the war he was employed as secretary of the Norfolk & Petersburg railroad, was subsequently superintendent of the Atlantic, Mississippi & Ohio railroad, and at the time of his death he was superintendent of transportation of the Norfolk & Western railroad. He was married to Miss Julia Tribble, of Lynchburg, who with four children, survive him.

John T. Hughes, sheriff of the city of Richmond, is a native of Gloucester county, where his ancestors have resided for several generations. His father, John W. Hughes, was born there in 1817, the son of John Hughes, whose father served with the rank of major in the war of the Revolution. Sheriff Hughes was born in March, 1847, and when four years of age went with his family to Richmond, where he received his education. At the outbreak of the war he was still too young for service, but, in the last year of the struggle, when approaching his seventeenth birthday, he enlisted as a private in Company C of the Twenty-fourth Virginia cavalry, in February, 1865, and was engaged in hard fighting on the Charles City road below Richmond and on the retreat from Richmond to Appomattox, where he surrendered and was paroled with the army. Having done what he could for the Confederate cause, he returned home and began business life as a wagon driver in Richmond. In 1866 he secured employment with the Mutual building fund and dollar savings bank, and was subsequently promoted to assistant cashier, serving in that capacity for three years. He then embarked in the commission business, meeting with success and at the same time became prominent in municipal affairs and in political life. For four years he served in the lower branch of the city council, and, in 1890, was elected alderman for a term of four years. The latter office he resigned in 1892 to accept the position of sheriff, to which he was re-elected for a term of four years in 1894. He maintains his comradeship with the survivors of the army by membership in both the R. E. Lee and George E. Pickett camps of Confederate Veterans, and is connected with the civil orders of the Mystic Shrine, the Red Men, the Elks, the Ancient Essenic order and the Good Fellows and Heptasophs. He is a member of the Methodist church South. He was married in 1871 to Julia S., daughter of the late William Stoakes of Matthews county, and they have five children: William McCaw, Harriet C., John T. Jr., Lucy C. A., and Walter C.

Robert W. Hughes, judge of the United States court for the eastern district of Virginia, was born June 6, 1821, upon an estate known as Hughes' Creek, in Powhatan county, Va. This plantation, upon the south side of the James river, was established in the closing years of the seventeenth century, by Jesse Hughes and his wife, Huguenot immigrants. Here David, the grandfather of Judge Hughes, was born and passed his life, taking to wife Judith Daniel, a member of a well-known and distinguished Virginia family. Their son, Jesse, the father of Judge Hughes, was educated at William and Mary and Hampden-Sidney colleges, and in addition to managing the plantation engaged in the practice of law. He married a beautiful woman, the belle of her college, known among her affectionate friends as "Pretty Betty Morton," the daughter of Capt. Hezekiah Morton, who was one of the six sons that joined the company of their father, John Morton, which marched from Prince Edward Court House to join the army of George Washington in the North. She and her husband were carried away by a malignant fever, at nearly the same date, when Judge Hughes, the youngest of five children, was but one year old. On being advised of the sad circumstances, Gen. Edward C. Carrington of Halifax county, an intimate college friend of Jesse Hughes, came with his carriage to Hughes' Creek, and prevailed upon Captain Morton to allow him to take Robert to rear and educate. At the home of this generous friend of his father he passed his childhood and youth, and at eighteen years of age was placed in Caldwell college, at Greensboro, N. C. Here only two years had elapsed when General Carrington had the misfortune to lose his property, and young Hughes, thrown upon his own resources, became a tutor at the Bingham classical school at Hillsboro, N. C. After two years of this occupation, during which he also studied law, he went to Richmond and embarked in the profession. During these early years of his practice, from 1846 to 1853, he became intimately associated with the distinguished John M. Daniel, editor of the Richmond Examiner, whom he assisted by editorial contributions during all this period. When Mr. Daniel became minister to Italy by appointment of President Pierce, Judge Hughes succeeded to the editorship, and was in sole charge until November, 1857, when the editorial direction went into the hands of B. M. Dewitt, who was succeeded by William Old, Jr. While editor of the Examiner, Judge Hughes was married June 4, 1850, at the governor's mansion at Richmond, to Miss Eliza M. Johnston, the adopted daughter of Gov. John B. Floyd. She was the niece of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston and daughter of Hon. Charles C. Johnston, who was accidentally drowned at Alexandria while a member of the national House of Representatives. Her mother was Eliza Mary Preston, daughter of Gen. John Preston of Boteourt county and cousin of both Governor Floyd and his wife. When Judge Hughes retired from the Examiner it was to accompany Governor Floyd to Washington, the latter having been called to the secretaryship of war by President Buchanan. There, on account of the illness of Mrs. Floyd, Mrs. Hughes performed the gracious duties of hostess, for which nature had eminently endowed her, at the home of the secretary of war, and Judge Hughes became the principal editor of the Washington Union, then the organ of the administration. In the winter of 1859-60, on account of failing

health, he removed to Washington county, Va., became occupied as a farmer, entered into a railroad enterprise, and attended in 1860 the Charleston convention as a supporter of Stephen A. Douglas. Mr. Daniel returned from Europe in February, 1861, and again assumed editorial charge in May following, of the *Richmond Examiner*, Judge Hughes at the same time becoming joint editor, and continuing in this position until April, 1865. In this capacity he entered most heartily into the cause for which the South, without regard to former political affiliations, was so remarkably unified. The *Examiner* became a great power, and read in the homes of the South, as well as in the camp, alike cheered the hearts of the non-combatants and inspired the soldiers to renewed sacrifices. In its files the history of the great struggle is truthfully recorded, and a complete record of the period could not be written without a consideration of the influence of the *Examiner* upon the actors in political and military affairs. After the war Judge Hughes became very prominent in the political affairs of the State. Joining the Republican party in 1869 he edited the *Richmond Republic* in 1869 and 1870. In 1871 he was appointed United States attorney, and subsequently became the candidate of his party for governor, against James L. Kemper. In 1872 he contributed to give the electoral vote of Virginia to General Grant by making a canvass of his district as candidate for Congress. In appreciation of this service the re-elected president tendered Judge Hughes, unsought, the office of district attorney for the western district of Virginia. In January, 1874, he visited the president to urge the appointment of Gen. W. C. Wickham as United States judge of the eastern circuit, but Grant replied after hearing him patiently, "Colonel, when that vacancy occurred you were the first man I had thought of for the place." In the following week, at his home, Judge Hughes read the news of his elevation to the bench. This honored position he has continued to occupy, performing its duties with unflagging industry and distinguished ability, though now past the age of seventy years, at which it is permissible for United States judges to retire from active work. During his twenty-three years upon the bench many causes of great importance have been passed upon, and he has made many and enduring contributions to the fabric of American law. One of the most noted matters brought before him was the suit of G. W. P. Custis Lee, devisee and grandson of G. W. Parke Custis, against the United States government for possession of the Arlington estate. The government held under a tax title, having got possession of the whole property for \$92, and had a tenant in possession. The defense was that the government could not be sued, and that there was no judicial remedy for the plaintiff. But Judge Hughes held that such an action as this could be maintained, and gave judgment for the plaintiff. The case was appealed to the United States supreme court, and that court affirmed the judgment of the court below, returning Arlington to the possession of the Lees. Presiding in the admiralty court of Norfolk, perhaps next in importance to that of New York, Judge Hughes has been called upon to render judgment in many cases of importance, the most celebrated of which was that which grew out of the wreck of the British steamer *Sandringham*, off the coast below Cape Fear. Property valued at \$200,000 was involved in the suits brought for salvage, and the

intricate questions arising were discussed by Judge Hughes in an opinion, recorded in the tenth volume of the Federal Reporter, which has become a classic authority in admiralty law. Amid his absorbing duties Judge Hughes has found opportunity to produce several works of great value from both literary and legal point of view. He is the author of the biographies of Gen. John B. Floyd and Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in the volume styled, "Lee and His Lieutenants;" of a volume entitled "The Currency Question," published in 1879; of "The American Dollar," 1885; and five volumes of law reports entitled Hughes' Reports, in 1879 to 1885, being reports of cases in the United States district and circuit courts, of the circuit embracing the two Carolinas, the two Virginias and Maryland. Robert M. Hughes, eldest son of the foregoing, was born at Abingdon, Va., September 10, 1855. At the age of fifteen years he was sent to William and Mary college, where he became a member of the Phi Beta Kappa fraternity, won the debaters' medal in the Phoenix literary society, and was graduated as A. B. in 1873. He then entered the university of Virginia, and there remained four years, receiving the degree of master of arts and completing a course of law. In November, 1877, he began the practice of his profession at Norfolk, and has since then become one of the most distinguished lawyers of the city. In 1878 he became a member of the legal firm of Sharp & Hughes, a partnership which still exists. He is a prominent member of the Virginia bar association, of which he was elected president in 1895, being the youngest lawyer, it is believed, upon whom that honor has been bestowed. Literature has also been with him a favorite occupation, since college days, when he was chosen as one of the editors of the university magazine. Among the articles which he has published upon legal subjects, the best known are the reports of the committee on library and legal literature of the State bar association. In 1891 he accepted a commission from Gen. Joseph E. Johnston to prepare his biography for Appleton & Co.'s series of "Great Commanders." The book was issued in 1893, and has been highly commended both North and South. On February 19, 1879, Mr. Hughes was married to Mattie L., daughter of Hon. Sydney Smith, of Williamsburg, and they have two sons, Robert M. and Sydney Smith. Floyd Hughes, a son of Judge Robert W. Hughes, was born at Abingdon, Va., August 19, 1861. He was reared in his native town and educated at William and Mary college, where he studied for two years, and at the university of Virginia, where he remained five years, completing a full classical course and a course in law, and was graduated in 1883. He then located at Norfolk for the practice of his profession and in 1884 entered the partnership of Whitehurst & Hughes. This legal firm is still maintained, and occupies a high rank at the bar. Mr. Hughes is a member of the Virginia bar association, and is well known throughout the State. Since leaving college he has retained interest in his fraternity, the Phi Kappa Alpha, and now holds the position of grand high councilor of that organization in the United States. On April 8, 1885, he was married to Anna M., daughter of James R. Ricks, of Southampton, an officer in the late war. She died in 1891. On November 15, 1893, he was married to Virginia A., daughter of Dr. C. W. P. Brock, of Richmond, general

surgeon of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, and local surgeon of the Southern system and the Richmond, Fredericksburg & Potomac railroad, and the city police force. Three children are living: Floyd, Charles Brock and Virginia Floyd.

Captain Walter Q. Hullihen, rector of Trinity church, Staunton, Va., did conspicuous duty in the army of Northern Virginia during the war of the Confederacy. He was born at Wheeling, W. Va., in 1841, and at the outbreak of hostilities was a student at the university of Virginia. As a substitute for his room-mate he went with the Southern Guards from the university for the occupation of Harper's Ferry, in April, 1861. Returning to Richmond he joined the Second Richmond Howitzers as a private. Soon after the battle of Seven Pines he was commissioned a cadet in the regular army and assigned to the staff of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, with rank of second lieutenant. By subsequent promotions he became second lieutenant and captain, Confederate States army, and was assigned to duty by Gen. R. E. Lee, as inspector-general with Lomax's brigade, and afterward to the staff of Gen. W. H. Payne. Among the prominent battles in which he took part were Big Bethel, Chancellorsville, Tom's Brook, Sharpsburg, Gettysburg, Yellow Tavern, Brandy Station, Fredericksburg, Petersburg, Five Forks, Appomattox. At Chancellorsville and Tom's Brook he was severely wounded. Just before the battle of Fredericksburg he went through the Federal lines to escort Miss Mary, daughter of General Lee, a service which is mentioned in several historical works. At Sharpsburg his gallant conduct received special mention from General Stuart, and at Yellow Tavern his participation has received historical mention. He was paroled at Appomattox and on his return home entered upon study for the ministry. He was ordained priest in the Protestant Episcopal church in 1868 and after a temporary service at Old Christ church, Baltimore, in 1872, was called to Staunton, where he has since resided.

Frank Hume, a wholesale merchant of Washington, and a veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, is a native of Virginia, born July 21, 1843, at Culpeper, where his family has resided for many generations. The family of Humes in America was established by George Hume, second son of Sir George Hume, the laird of Wedderburn, Scotland, who was a direct descendant of the fourth earl of Dunbar and March. George Hume came to Culpeper in 1721, engaged in land surveying, being the principal surveyor of the great Lord Fairfax grant, and died in 1760, leaving six sons. His great-grandson, Charles, born in 1814, married Frances Virginia Rawlins, of Culpeper county, a first cousin of Gen. John A. Rawlins, chief of staff of Gen. U. S. Grant. Charles Hume was employed in the second auditor's department of the United States treasury department at Washington for nearly forty years, and died June 25, 1883. Thirteen children were born to him, the fourth of whom, Charles Connor Hume, born February 2, 1842, was distinguished for important and daring service in the Confederate States army, earned promotion from the ranks to major in the regular army, and enjoyed the friendship of Generals Lee and Stuart. He was killed in Charles county, Md., May 20, 1863, by a squad of Federal soldiers who had broken their parole. The next elder son was Frank Hume, who, at five years of age, was taken by the family to Washington, where he was reared, and educated at the Bladensburg academy. At the outbreak of the

war he was clerking in a store at Washington, and abandoned this position in August, 1861, to enter the Confederate service. He left Washington on the stage bound for Port Tobacco, and made his way to Manassas, where, in September, he became a private in the Twenty-first Mississippi regiment of infantry, of Barksdale's brigade. He served with this command until March 3, 1864, when he was transferred to Company A of the First Maryland cavalry regiment, with which he served about six months as a private and was then detailed by Gen. J. E. B. Stuart on scouting duty. At the time of Stuart's death at Yellow Tavern, Hume was on special service for him and, returning through the lines at Spottsylvania Court House, reported to Gen. R. E. Lee in person. He was paroled at Washington, D. C., in June, 1865. His record embraces the battles of Seven Pines, Savage Station, Malvern Hill, Maryland Heights, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg (December 11 and 13, 1862), Marye's Heights and Fredericksburg (May, 1863), Gettysburg, July 2d and 3d, Falling Waters, Chester Gap, and in the western campaigns under Longstreet, in 1863, he fought at Chickamauga, September 20th, Chattanooga, October 23d, Campbell's Station, November 11th, and in the siege of Knoxville, November 25th. Subsequently he served as a scout for Stuart's cavalry. At Gettysburg, he received a wound in the right hip which disabled him for three weeks. After his parole he farmed for a time in Orange county, and then secured a position in the business house of Hall & Hume, of which his brother was a partner in Washington. In April, 1870, he formed a partnership with Richard Poole, in the wholesale grocery trade, and since 1873 has conducted the business alone. This enterprise has been eminently successful, as have others with which he has been connected. Though a business man of Washington, he maintains his home in Alexandria county, Va., upon a beautiful estate, and, as a citizen of this county, was honored, in 1889, by election to the legislature of the State. In June, 1870, he was married to Emma P., daughter of the late John E. Norris, a native of Virginia, and for forty years a prominent member of the Washington bar. Warwick, the home of Mr. Hume, is situated on the south bank of the Potomac river and in full view of the cities of Washington and Alexandria, and commanding a view of the Potomac valley from Georgetown to Fort Washington, where his friends will always meet a hearty welcome, and the humblest a patient and respectful hearing.

Major David Humphreys, a prominent citizen, since 1869, of Norfolk, fought in the army of Northern Virginia from Manassas to the Wilderness, adding lustre by his soldierly qualities to a family record adorned by chivalrous service of various ancestors in the wars of the past. His father, John Humphreys, born in Jefferson county, Va., in 1797, though only a boy during the war of 1812, served upon hospital duty in that conflict. The latter's father, Col. David Humphreys, a native of Pennsylvania who migrated to Virginia in his youth and amassed a fortune in trade, served as captain in the war of 1812, in the regiment of which his brother was colonel, and was severely wounded in the defense of Washington. The next ancestor, John Humphreys, was a Continental soldier, and his brother, David, served as aide-de-camp to General Washington. The mother of Major Humphreys was Mary, daughter of Dr. Joseph Davis, an eminent physician of Jefferson

county, and granddaughter of Robert Rutherford, a member of Congress. She is a distant relative of the late Judge L. Q. C. Lamar. Major Humphreys was born in Jefferson county, now a part of West Virginia, May 2, 1832, received his education from tutors, and on account of delicate health traveled much in youth, spending one winter on the island of Cuba. In 1850 he accompanied a brother-in-law on the overland journey to California, driving a herd of a thousand horses, mules and cattle. Six months after starting and after many encounters with hostile Indians they safely reached the coast, and thence returned by way of Nicaragua and Cuba, arriving home in 1853. He then engaged in the development of some land in his native county until the first call to arms, when he enlisted as a private in Company G of the Second Virginia infantry, under Col. Thomas J. Jackson. The one hundred and ten men of his company were mainly spirited young Southerners who were unaccustomed to hardships, but Jackson soon made veterans of them, and under such training of chivalrous natures it is not surprising that sixty-nine of the company afterward rose to considerable station in the rank of the army. First stationed at Harper's Ferry, the regiment moved with Jackson's brigade to Manassas, and there formed part of the "stone wall" which stood so firmly that McDowell could neither batter it down with artillery nor run over it with infantry. It is conceded that the great Confederate victory of July 21, 1861, was made possible by the stand which Jackson's men made at a critical hour. After this affair and while camped at Centreville, Major Humphreys was severely injured during drill, and disabled several months, and meanwhile General Jackson received orders to move to Winchester and in presence of his brigade was christened "Stonewall," and the men were complimented for their bravery by the war department. During this disability he received his discharge, and returned home until the spring of 1862, when he enlisted as a private in Company B, Captain Wingfield, of the Seventh Virginia cavalry, under General Ashby. He was immediately appointed orderly-sergeant and soon afterward third lieutenant, and at the battle of Jack's Shop, when the captain was killed, he was promoted captain over his ranking lieutenants. At one of the battles at Brandy Station his saber-plate intercepted a bullet and saved his life, though he was disabled some time by the wound that was received. Again, on the Rappahannock, receiving permission to cross the river on a cold, dark night, to capture some of the enemy's horses, he and his detail waded the river and advanced on hands and knees, when a sentry was aroused and a bullet struck Humphreys and apparently killed him. Carried back by his men the cold water of the river revived him, and it was found that a button and a knot in his belt had diverted the deadly force of the missile. On recovering from this injury he was attached to General Stuart's cavalry command, and participated in the subsequent movements of that body during the campaigns of Second Manassas and Gettysburg, and in all their actions up to the battles of the Wilderness. There, in command of the first squadron of the Seventh regiment, of Rosser's or the "Laurel" brigade, Captain Humphreys charged the Veedersville road and drove the enemy steadily until about 4 p. m., when they encountered a regiment and battery intrenched which suddenly delivered a volley which cut his command to

pieces. He was in the act of firing his revolver when a bullet struck his bridle arm and another plowed a furrow across his breast and pierced his other arm. He was carried back by his men to Veedersville and thence conveyed to Culpeper, where he passed a weary night amid the cries of about three thousand fellow sufferers. The rank of major was secured and tendered him at the request of the officers of the Laurel brigade, with the wish that he be assigned to the position of quartermaster in that brigade, but the promotion was declined on account of his wounds. Afterward removed to Lexington, he remained there, upon post service, until the close of the war, witnessing at that place the visit of the remnant of Jackson's brigade, 239 out of 3,300 enlisted, to the grave of their great commander. Since the war he has taken great interest in preserving and honoring the memory of his fallen comrades. He was one of five who removed the remains of General Ashby from Charlottesville to Winchester, and assisted in burying the Confederate dead at Charlestown, W. Va. He maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp. His occupation in the years of peace was as a merchant until 1869, when he removed to Norfolk and entered the insurance business, his present calling. At Norfolk he has taken a creditable part in the development of the city, has served as a member of the city council, is a member of the Masonic order and active in the Presbyterian church, of which he has been an elder for forty years. He was married in 1850 to Mary, daughter of Samuel Cameron, prominent in railroad circles and a member of the Virginia legislature.

Lieutenant William F. Hunter, prior to his death a resident of Princess Anne county, was in the Virginia cavalry in the command of Major Burrows, but on account of poor health, was but a short time in the service. He afterward located in Princess Anne county and died after the close of the war, about 1878. Hillary M. Hunter, a brother, was also in the Virginia cavalry in the same command, which he followed throughout the struggle, afterward locating in Princess Anne county, and died about 1880. H. T. Hunter, M. D., a surviving brother of those above mentioned, and for many years identified with the medical profession of the State, was born in Princess Anne county, Va., in 1840, the son of William Hunter, a well-known and influential planter of that county. His mother was Mary Ann Thompson, daughter of Henry Thompson, a native of Virginia, whose life was devoted to a seafaring career. He received his academic education in private schools, and in the institution conducted by Prof. N. B. Webster at Portsmouth, and during one year attended the medical department of the university of Virginia. Then, in preparation for the medical profession, he entered the university of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated as doctor of medicine in 1861. He embarked in the practice in Princess Anne county, and remained there until 1882, when he removed to Norfolk, where he has since resided and has gained a large practice and a wide reputation as a skillful physician and honorable gentleman. He is a member of the city and State medical societies, is fraternally connected with the orders of Masons, Heptasophs, Knights of Pythias, Knights of Honor, and Legion of Honor; and is a communicant of the Freemason street Baptist church. By his marriage in 1871, to Miss Fanny G. C. Dozier, he has two children, Edmond Dozier, and a daughter, Mary T.

James W. Huntington, of Alexandria, was born in Fairfax county, Va., January 2, 1842, and resided at Alexandria at the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy. In the spring of 1861 he enlisted in Kemper's battery as a private, and subsequently served with this artillery command in all its engagements until the latter part of the year 1863, when he joined the cavalry command of Major Davis. During the remainder of the war he participated in many brisk fights as a member of this troop, and at Forrestville, Va., a short time before the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, he received, while engaged with the enemy, a gunshot wound just above the right eye, which caused a severe injury. In April, 1865, he surrendered with his command at Moorefield, W. Va., and, after his parole, returned to Alexandria, where he has since continued to reside. On coming back to civil life from the army he found himself without means or occupation, and was compelled for a time to peddle upon the streets to obtain a livelihood. With bravery equal to that displayed on the field of battle, he worked on, and was soon able to open a grocery store, which he conducted for fifteen years. Subsequently he conducted a restaurant, and of recent years has been in the wholesale and retail fish trade at Alexandria. He is an active member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 2, of United Confederate Veterans.

Westwood Hutchison, of Manassas, Va., was born in Loudoun county, Va., October 7, 1846. A boy of fourteen at the beginning of hostilities, he was educated at home and grew up to enter service as a soldier. He enlisted in the Confederate States army in September, 1864, in the eighteenth year of his age, at Petersburg, as a private in the Thirty-ninth Virginia battalion. After a brief service with this command he was detached for duty as a picket on the Rappahannock river, where he performed soldierly service during the following winter and until the time of Appomattox. At the battle of Gordonsville he served as courier for General Lomax, discharged this important duty in a satisfactory style, and also participated in a soldierly manner in several skirmishes. At the end of the war he returned to his home and engaged in farming in Prince William county until 1896, meeting with success and holding an influential position among the people of the county. He served as magistrate and as deputy county treasurer, and, in 1891 and 1895, was elected to the office of county treasurer. In 1896 he removed to Manassas and took the position of cashier of the National bank of that city, to which he had been elected by the stockholders. Mr. Hutchison is proud of his service in the army of Northern Virginia and maintains his comradeship with the survivors by membership in Ewell camp of Confederate Veterans. He is a communicant of the Baptist church, of which he has officiated as deacon for the past twenty-five years. He was married in 1871 to Miss Susan Ish, of Loudoun county, and they have ten children living.

Lieutenant Samuel John Hutton, of Glade Spring, Washington county, after rendering three years' efficient service in the field for the cause of the Confederacy, suffered imprisonment over a year and was one of the Confederate officers held under fire on Morris island. He was born in Washington county, Va., July 19, 1839, and in that county entered the military service of his State in May, 1861, as a member of Company F, Thirty-seventh Virginia infantry,

Colonel Fulkerson commanding. With this regiment he served in the disastrous Laurel Hill campaign in West Virginia, in the summer of 1861, and after the retreat to Monterey joined General Jackson's command in December at Winchester. In 1862 he was promoted third lieutenant of his company in recognition of his faithful and gallant service. He participated in the campaign of 1862 in the valley of the Shenandoah under Gen. Stonewall Jackson, and subsequently shared the battles and marches of the corps of that general in the Maryland and Virginia campaigns, including the battles of Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. Subsequently, in Edward Johnson's division, he fought at Gettysburg and Mine Run, and was a participant in the bloody fighting in the Wilderness, May, 1864, until captured by the enemy. He was then carried as a prisoner of war to Point Lookout, moved from there to Fort Delaware, and in August transferred to Morris island, South Carolina, where with six hundred other Confederate officers he was held under the fire of Confederate batteries, this being the Federal retaliation for the holding of some Federal prisoners in the city of Charleston. In October he was taken to Fort Pulaski, and thence, in March, 1865, was returned to Fort Delaware, where he was detained until June, 1865. At the end of his imprisonment the hardships and short rations with which he had been afflicted had reduced his weight from 160 to 96 pounds. The war being now past, he engaged in farming at Glade Spring and continued to be thus employed until October, 1897, when he embarked in the livery business in the town.

Vernon I'Anson, a well-known minister of the Baptist church, now stationed at Emporia, Va., is a member of a family long conspicuous for patriotism and valiant service, both in their native land beyond the sea and in America. The ancestry of his family is traced to Sir James I'Anson, who commanded the navy built by Henry VIII. The line in America was established by Dr. John I'Anson, a son of Sir Thomas I'Anson, lord keeper of the Tower, at London, who after being disowned by his father on account of his sympathy with the American colonists, crossed the Atlantic and gave his fortune and services to their cause during the Revolution. His son, M. D. I'Anson, was a manufacturer and prominent citizen of Petersburg, served as an officer in the war of 1812, and held the office of mayor of his city. He married Jane, daughter of Dr. William I. Thornton, a soldier of the war of 1812, whose father, Sterling C. Thornton, a wealthy and prominent planter, was an officer in the Revolutionary army; and whose grandfather served in the French and Indian wars under Washington. Springing from such parentage it was natural that the I'Anson brothers should embrace with chivalrous devotion the cause of the South in her struggle for independence. Five sons of M. D. and Jane I'Anson were connected with the Confederate service. Maj. William Harrison I'Anson, who had served as surgeon with the rank of major in the Mexican war, and was a messmate of Maj. Jubal A. Early, had charge of the quartermaster-general's department of Florida, with headquarters at Tallahassee, throughout the war, and survived until 1875. Richard W. I'Anson, M. D., held the rank of surgeon in Stuart's cavalry division of the army of Northern Virginia, and was wounded at the

battle of Yellow Tavern, where Stuart received his fatal injuries. He was disabled during the remainder of the war, and died in 1888. Henry P'Anson, M. D., served in Young's howitzer company throughout the war up to the disastrous battle of Sailor's Creek, where he received three severe wounds, from which he never fully recovered, though he was subsequently engaged in the practice of medicine until his death in 1884. James Thornton P'Anson served in the reserve corps and was with the army on the retreat to Appomattox, where he surrendered. Rev. Vernon P'Anson, the youngest of these brothers, born in Chesterfield county, July 6, 1850, was too young for much participation in the war, but, toward the close of the struggle, he became a member of the reserve corps under General Kemper, and throughout he manifested such sympathy with the cause that he was five times captured and once condemned to be shot by the Federals, but his life was saved through the fidelity of a negro boy. He was educated at Hampden-Sidney and Richmond colleges and, while yet a student, was ordained in the Baptist ministry, and given charge of a church. He was for seven years in charge of the Third Baptist church at Norfolk, which prospered greatly under his care, and is now known as the Grace Baptist church; was then four years at Marion, Va., and in 1894 took charge of the county high school and church at Emporia, his present field of labor. He is not only devoted as a pastor, but also frequently appears as a public speaker on various topics, and contributes liberally to the religious as well as the local press. He is of the rank of Knight Templar in the Masonic order, is an active Odd Fellow, and serves as chaplain of Chambliss-Barham camp, United Confederate Veterans. January 14, 1880, he was married to Mattie J., daughter of Benjamin Donaldson Tillar, an extensive land-owner of Greenville county, and they have three children: Tillar Dunlop, Mary E., and Annie J. Mrs. P'Anson's father was a man of great prominence and her brother, Hon. B. D. Tillar, served in the Virginia legislature, and at the time of his death, in 1887, was president of the Atlantic & Danville railroad. Two of her brothers were in the Confederate army as members of the Greenville Guards. One, Henry, served throughout the war, but the other, John, who held the rank of captain of the Guards, died from exposure and fever in 1862.

Captain Richard Irby, commander of W. B. Newton camp, United Confederate Veterans, Ashland, Va., was born in Nottoway county, September 28, 1825. He is the descendant of an old and worthy family in Virginia. His father, Edmund Irby, born in Nottoway county in 1781, married Frances Briggs Lucas, of Greenville county, became a prosperous planter, and died in 1829. William Irby, father of the latter, and the first of his family to settle in Nottoway county, was born in 1752, married first, Jane Edmunds, of Sussex county, and, second, Elizabeth Williams, of Nottoway, and died in 1811. William Irby was the son of John Irby, of Sussex, born 1715, died 1761, and John was the son of Edmund Irby, of Prince George, born 1675, died 1733. Capt. Richard Irby was educated at Randolph-Macon college, an institution to which his life has been largely devoted, and graduated in the class of 1844, which included such brilliant men as Bishop McTyeire, Gen. Lucius J. Gartrell, Col. James N. Ramsey, John

Howard and Gen. Charles E. Hooker He then engaged in farming and the manufacture of plows, in his native county, until the spring of 1861. He enlisted, April 21, 1861, as first lieutenant of Company G, Eighteenth Virginia infantry, Col. R. E. Withers commanding, which was assigned to the brigade of General Cocke. In this rank he commanded his company in the first battle of Manassas. In November following he withdrew from the army on account of his election to the legislature from Nottoway and Amelia counties. After serving in this capacity in the session of 1861-62, he returned to his company and was elected captain, April, 1862. He then participated in the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines and Second Manassas, in the latter engagement receiving wounds which disabled him for further duty on the field. When sufficiently recovered for other service he was assigned to the commissary department, with charge of the work in several counties. After the close of hostilities he resumed his former occupations until 1868, when for ten years he was engaged in iron manufacturing at Richmond. Then for eight years he was in charge of the bureau of immigration of Virginia. In 1886 he became secretary and treasurer of Randolph-Macon college, with which he has been connected as student, trustee or official for nearly sixty years. He took a leading part in the endowment of the college and its removal to Ashland, has filled every office on the board but that of president, and altogether has done a work in this direction worthy of lasting remembrance. He has contributed to history an account of his Confederate company, and a record of the career of the college. He was married, October 1, 1846, to Frances Virginia, daughter of Rev. Freeman Fitzgerald, a Methodist clergyman, and they have nine children living, and fourteen grandchildren. Two brothers of Captain Irby were in the Confederate service: Edmund, now living at Como, Miss., and Benjamin, who was killed in battle at Selma, Ala., in April, 1865.

John W. Ivey, for many years a popular bank official at Lynchburg, Va., was born in Chesterfield county in 1840, and was there reared and educated. At the time of the secession of Virginia he was thoroughly in sympathy with the patriotic devotion which brought all young Virginians shoulder to shoulder for the defense of their native State from invasion, and he enlisted as a private in Company G of the Eleventh Virginia regiment of infantry, commanded by the gallant Col. Samuel Garland. His regiment was at the first battle of Manassas in the brigade of General Longstreet, and fought at Williamsburg, on the peninsula, in the brigade of A. P. Hill of Longstreet's division. Private Ivey participated in all the operations of his regiment until May 2, 1862, just before the battle of Williamsburg, when, in a skirmish preceding that action he received wounds of such severity that he was no longer able to serve with his command. Reluctantly retiring from military service after one year's experience, he resumed his duties as a bank clerk, which he had entered upon in 1860, and since that time has been constantly employed in that capacity at Lynchburg. He was at first with the State bank, but since 1873 has held the responsible position of cashier of the People's national bank.

Thomas Branch Jackson, adjutant of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Norfolk, Va., was born in Brunswick county, Va., April 20, 1843. His family has lived in Virginia

for many years, his grandfather having served as a soldier in the Revolutionary war. His father, Tyree B. Jackson, also a native of Brunswick county, born in 1805, passed his life as a merchant in Petersburg, with farming interests in his native county. On this country place his five sons, of whom Adjutant Jackson was the youngest, were reared, receiving their education in the local schools. As the crisis approached in 1861 the father viewed with much solicitude the prospect of an armed conflict that must almost necessarily involve in danger his family of boys, but when he received the news of the call of President Lincoln for 75,000 men, evidently for the invasion of Virginia, all other emotions were submerged in stern and patriotic resolution. Going at once to his farm home he called his sons about him, and said, "Boys, you have to go to war." The five obeyed the summons, but only two returned in 1865. On April 19, 1861, Adjutant Jackson entered the service as a private in the volunteer organization called the Dinwiddie Grays, beginning a career in the ranks that is highly typical of the soldiery of the Virginia troops, and winning promotion by meritorious conduct to the rank of first lieutenant. During the first year he served on the James river, where the swamps, proved as deadly a foe as the enemy in field of battle. In 1862, fighting in defense of Richmond, he participated in the Seven Days' battles until the action at Frayser's farm, when he was so seriously wounded as to be confined in hospital for six weeks. Recovering in time to fight at the battle of Second Manassas, he was again wounded, and one of his brothers was killed. Another brother having already lost his life at Gaines' Mill, the tragedy of war was fully impressed upon the heroic family, but they were in nowise daunted. Lieutenant Jackson was in the field again at Fredericksburg, in December, 1862, and in 1863 he participated in the Pennsylvania campaign and the battle of Gettysburg, being one of the heroes of the intrepid charge of Pickett's division on July 3d. In this engagement he was twice wounded, and unable to retire, fell into the hands of the Federals. Then followed over seventeen dreary months of imprisonment, partly at the hospital on David's island, but mainly at Johnson's island in Lake Erie. When he was released the war was over, and with maimed body and broken health he returned to Virginia to enter upon the duties of manhood. After a year spent upon a farm in Dinwiddie county, for recuperation, he went to Petersburg. Then becoming connected with the railway service, he removed next year to Norfolk, where he has since resided, and with the exception of less than six years' management of an agricultural implement business, has been connected with the Norfolk & Western railway. In this service he has been promoted to the rank of chief clerk of the agents' department, a position of much importance and responsibility, requiring the assistance of forty-two sub-clerks for the transaction of the business. He is a man of many friends, and desirable social and fraternal connections. Since the formation of Pickett-Buchanan camp in 1883 he has served as its adjutant. He is also a member of the Royal Arcanum and in Masonry is a Knight Templar.

Richard Thomas Jacobs, a distinguished veteran of the Tenth Virginia infantry regiment, was born in Madison county, Va., October 29, 1843. His father, William P. Jacobs, son of Nathan

Jacobs, a Virginian, was born in Orange county in 1815 and died in Madison county in 1890. His mother, Emily Catherine, daughter of James Haney, was born in Spottsylvania county in 1825 and died in 1895. On August 12, 1861, before he had reached his eighteenth birthday, Mr. Jacobs enlisted as a corporal in Company L of the Tenth Virginia regiment. At the end of one year he re-enlisted and was promoted orderly-sergeant, in which rank he served throughout the remainder of the war. His regiment was in the Third brigade of Stonewall Jackson's division until Jackson fell at Chancellorsville, was then in the division of Gen. Edward Johnson until it was shattered at Spottsylvania, and subsequently was assigned to Gordon's division, commanded by Gen. C. A. Evans. Sergeant Jacobs participated in all the engagements of his regiment from McDowell to Appomattox, and on three occasions was slightly wounded. In the official report of the action of the Tenth regiment at Chancellorsville, he is included in a list of fourteen officers and men, nine of whom were killed, who were particularly conspicuous for gallantry and good conduct. For this service he was recommended for the gold medal to be awarded by the Confederate congress, and was chosen for the honor by the unanimous vote of his company. After the surrender at Appomattox, in which he participated, Mr. Jacobs made his home at Norfolk, and found employment with the Virginia railroad, beginning a career in the railroad service which has continued to the present time. For twenty years he was in the service of the Norfolk & Western railroad in various responsible capacities. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, and holds the office of sergeant-major. He was married September 4, 1872, to Miss Ida Virginia Stevens, of Norfolk, and they have five children living.

Captain Charles F. James, of Danville, Va., was born in Loudoun county, Va., November 13, 1844, son of Robert and Winifred (Simpson) James, natives of the same county. They gave two sons to the Confederate service, the other being Rev. John T. James, of the Methodist church South, now stationed at Staunton, Va. Charles F. was reared on the home farm, and with the preparation obtained in the old field schools entered the Alexandria high school in January, 1861. But this institution was soon closed at the approach of war, and young James returned home and taught school until the following June, when, though under seventeen years of age, he enlisted in a company called the Blue Mountain Boys, afterward known as Company F, Eighth Virginia infantry. He had previously had military experience as member of a company of cavalry called out in 1859 as a guard at the execution of John Brown, and his merits as a soldier soon won him promotion to second lieutenant. After the battle of Gettysburg he was promoted captain of his company, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. He participated in the battles of First Manassas, Ball's Bluff, where his regiment earned the title of "The bloody Eighth," Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Drewry's Bluff, Gravelly Run, Sailor's Creek, and numerous minor engagements. He was twice wounded, slightly, at Second Manassas and Gravelly Run. After the close of hostilities he returned home, taught school for a time, studied at Columbian college, Washington, in 1866, and then

entered Richmond college, where he was graduated in 1870. In 1873 he was graduated by the Southern Baptist theological seminary, of Greenville, S. C., and in the same year was ordained as a minister in the Baptist church. In 1886 he received the degree of doctor of divinity from Richmond college. Dr. James has been in the active ministry since 1873, but has also given much of his time to the work of education. Having preached at Buchanan and Culpeper, he was appointed principal of the Alleghany institute at Roanoke in 1889, and in 1892 was elected president of the Roanoke female college, at Danville, a position he still occupies. He is also a trustee of Richmond college. In 1873 he was married to Miss Alice Chamblin, of Loudoun county, and they have seven children.

Lieutenant William Andrew Jamieson, of Boydton, Va., clerk of Mecklenburg county, was born in North Carolina in 1841, the son of Rev. James Jamieson, a minister of the Methodist church. He was educated at Randolph-Macon college, which he left for Richmond on the day of the secession of Virginia. He immediately entered the military service as a private in the Danville Blues, a volunteer company which had been organized some thirty years, and was then under command of Capt. W. P. Graves. Later in the war the organization was known as Company A, Eighteenth Virginia infantry, Pickett's brigade. With this command he served at First Manassas, Yorktown and Williamsburg, and was then transferred to Company I, Fifth Virginia cavalry, Col. T. L. Rosser. After this he was with Rosser, Fitz Lee and Stuart, to the end of the war, earning warm commendation by his gallant and fearless conduct. He was with the cavalry at Seven Pines, through the Seven Days' fight ending at Malvern Hill, in the Second Manassas campaign, the Maryland campaign, including Crampton's Gap and Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the raid into Pennsylvania and the cavalry fight at Gettysburg; in the cavalry fighting of the fall of 1863 and the spring of 1864, at Yellow Tavern, where Stuart fell, at Reams' Station, and at Winchester and Cedar Creek with Early in the valley. At Chancellorsville, under orders of General Fitzhugh Lee, he gave the signal for the opening of the battle. By recommendation of Gen. R. E. Lee he was commissioned, by special act of Congress, second lieutenant in the regular army, for distinguished skill and gallantry on the field of battle. On November 1, 1864, he was captured, while in command of his cavalry company, near Luray, in the valley, and was held as a prisoner at Fort Delaware until July, 1865. Upon his return to Virginia he gave his attention to farming. In 1887 he was elected to the office of county clerk, which he still holds. He was married in 1867 to Helen Yancey, a kinswoman of the famous Confederate statesman of Alabama. Three of her brothers served in the army of Northern Virginia, Armenius as a private and Hilary and Joseph as lieutenants, and all were killed in the charge of Pickett's division at Gettysburg.

Joseph R. Janney, of Purcellville, Va., was one of the gallant young Virginians who enlisted early in 1861 in the Eighth Virginia regiment of infantry under the command of Colonel Hutton. He was born in Loudoun county October 10, 1842, and was reared and educated in his native county. When his State called for his services he enlisted promptly in Company A of the Eighth regi-

ment, and a few weeks later was with Beauregard's army on the plains of Manassas, preparing to meet the invasion of the Federal troops. The struggle came on the 21st of July, when the Northern army, after a gallant fight, was sent flying in disorder back to Washington. In this famous combat young Janney did a soldier's duty, but had the misfortune to fall with a severe wound by a minie ball which caused the amputation of his left leg. Thus sadly mutilated, he returned to his home and did not re-enter the service until eighteen months later, when, in the summer of 1863, he reported for duty and was assigned to the quartermaster's department, where he rendered efficient service, notwithstanding his disability, until the end of the war. Then going to his home he was engaged for a time in teaching school, after which he became occupied in the jewelry trade, which he still follows. For a portion of the period since the war he resided at Conway, Ark., where he was elected to the office of mayor of the city. During both of the administrations of President Cleveland he served as postmaster at Purcellville, discharging the duties of that position with entire satisfaction. He is a member of Clinton-Hatcher camp at Leesburg, and is a communicant of the Baptist church.

Captain George W. Jarvis, of Richmond, a gallant veteran of the Richmond Blues, was born in Hanover county, Va., in 1832. About 1842 his parents removed to Richmond, which has since been his home. He entered the service with the Richmond Blues early in 1861, and was assigned with the company to the Forty-sixth Virginia regiment, the Blues being then known as Company A. Mr. Jarvis entered the service of the Confederate States as corporal, was promoted for gallantry to first lieutenant, and commanded his company during the closing months, though he did not receive his commission as captain until it was given him by Gen. W. A. Wise, at Appomattox. Among the engagements in which he participated were the affairs at Aquia Creek, Charleston, W. Va., Carnifex Ferry; the operations at Roanoke island (where he was badly wounded and fell into the hands of the enemy). He was held as a prisoner six months and was disabled three months by his wounds. Subsequently he served several months at Charleston, S. C., and during the siege of Petersburg he fought in the trenches until the evacuation. During the two months previous to the evacuation he was confined in the hospital at Richmond, but on the retreat joined his command at Amelia Court House. At the explosion of the Crater he was slightly wounded by a piece of shell. After the end of the war he returned to Richmond and resumed his occupation as a carpenter, which he has since been engaged in. In 1865, when the Richmond Blues were reorganized, Captain Jarvis was made second lieutenant of the organization, and he served in this capacity until the company was disbanded by act of Congress. On the subsequent reorganization he was elected lieutenant, and afterward promoted captain, a rank he held for two years. He is also one of the charter members of the Blues' association and a member of R. E. Lec camp, Confederate Veterans.

Captain Thomas D. Jeffress, of Boynton, Va., lieutenant-commander of Louis A. Armistead camp, United Confederate Veterans, entered the Confederate service early in 1861 as captain of Company G, Fifty-sixth Virginia infantry, brigade of Gen. John B.

Floyd. He served with his command in the Kanawha Valley campaign of 1861, and then joining the western army of Albert Sidney Johnston, participated in the four days' fight at Fort Donelson. Returning to Virginia in the spring of 1862 he was attached to Pickett's brigade and participated in the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond under General Lee. Subsequently he was detached for recruiting duty in Mecklenburg county and vicinity for some time, and on his return to Richmond, was assigned to duty by General Winder as commandant of Libby prison. After three months' service in this capacity he was appointed provost-marshal at Lynchburg, under the command of Maj.-Gen. G. W. Smith. Six months later he resigned his commission and took up the occupation of farming, until after the close of hostilities. Captain Jeffress was born in Charlotte county, in 1840, the son of Jennings M. Jeffress, and was educated at Columbian university, Washington, D. C., where he received the degree of Ph. D. in 1858. After the close of the Confederate struggle he engaged for a few years in mercantile pursuits, and then for some time edited the Clarksville "Virginian." Finally taking up the study of law, he was admitted to the bar in 1876, a profession which has since claimed his energies, and in which he has been quite successful. He has also been a liberal contributor to the periodical press. He was married in 1862 to Alice, daughter of Robert J. Overby, and they have five children living, Fleming J., principal of Blacksburg institute, S. C.; Robert O., Clarence A., Alice F., wife of Henry F. Boswell, of Chicago, and Corinne.

Tipton Davis Jennings, cashier of the National Exchange Bank of Lynchburg, was born at that city in 1841, and was there reared and educated. He was one of the members of the Lynchburg Home Guard which left Lynchburg April 23, 1861, by order of the governor of Virginia, and were mustered into the service of the State April 24, 1861, becoming Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry. He served as a private until the last year of the war, when he was made sergeant major. At the time of the surrender he was at Lynchburg, acting as adjutant under Col. Kirkwood Otey, in command of the home troops. In the gallant record of his command he participated throughout with honor, and was twice wounded, on August 31, 1862, at the second battle of Manassas, and on September 14, 1862, at the battle of Boonsboro, or South Mountain, Md. He surrendered and was paroled at Greensboro, N. C., and subsequently resided at Richmond for a year. Moving from there to Memphis, Tenn., he finally returned to Lynchburg, where he has since made his home. During the first administration of President Cleveland he held the office of post-master at Lynchburg.

William B. Johnson, of Portsmouth, a worthy soldier of the Sixth Virginia regiment of infantry, was born at Richmond, Va., in 1841, the son of Mosby and Frances (Chiles) Johnson. His father, a business man of Richmond, was the son of Shadrach Johnson, of Virginia birth and English descent. His mother, daughter of Elliott Chiles, of Chesterfield county, was the granddaughter of Rev. Andrew Broadus, noted in the earlier annals of the State as a pioneer minister of the Baptist church. At the time of the secession of Virginia, Mr. Johnson, who had been

reared and educated at Richmond, was employed at Norfolk, and had become a member of the Independent Grays, a well-drilled company which was mustered into the service April 19, 1861. He served with his company at Craney island during the Confederate occupation of Norfolk, and witnessed the famous naval battles of the Virginia in March, 1862. Subsequently, with his company he joined the Sixth regiment (as Company H), whose first colonel, William Mahone, was now commander of the brigade to which the Sixth regiment was attached throughout the war. He was with his regiment in the fight against the Federal fleet at Drewry's bluff, thence the command moved to Chaffin's bluff, and going into the battle of Malvern Hill, lost heavily in the desperate assault upon the enemy's works. His health was badly broken by the arduous Peninsular campaign, and he was detailed on special duty and afterward honorably discharged. But subsequently recovering he re-enlisted, becoming a member of a Richmond company, with which he served in the fighting against Dahlgren's raiders in 1864, and fought in the trenches before Petersburg until the evacuation, taking part in the fierce battle of the Crater and other engagements. During the retreat to Appomattox he was captured by the enemy and sent to Manchester, where he was employed in attending the sick and wounded prisoners. On being paroled he returned to Norfolk and Portsmouth, and presently made his home at the latter city, where he has for many years been engaged in business with notable success. He is highly regarded by the people of his city and holds high rank among his professional associates, having been honored by the presidency of the Virginia State board of embalming, and the same office in the State association of funeral directors. In 1866 Mr. Johnson was married to Mary E., daughter of Robert A. J. Thompson, and she having died in 1888, he married in 1890 her surviving sister, Anna R. Thompson.

William Otis Johnson, of Lynchburg, a veteran of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Nelson county, Va., October 18, 1841. He entered the service June 7, 1861, with the New Market volunteers, which was assigned to Shafer's battalion up to the battle of First Manassas, and subsequently was Company C and later Company H of the Forty-ninth Virginia regiment of infantry. Private Johnson was promoted corporal at Bull Run, and at the close of his service was first sergeant of his company. His regiment was commanded in the first battle of Manassas by Col. (formerly Gov.) William Smith, in Cocke's brigade. Subsequently it served under the command of Early and Ewell on most of the great battlefields of the army. Among the engagements in which Mr. Johnson participated were First Manassas, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles, Second Manassas, Bristoe Station, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, the skirmish near Harrisburg, Pa., and the battle of Gettysburg. At Sharpsburg he was slightly wounded in the eye by a spent ball, but his most serious injuries were received while participating in the hard fighting at Culp's Hill on the morning of the third day at Gettysburg. There he was shot in both hands and the breast, and while in this condition fell into the hands of the enemy, at the foot of South mountain, the second day after the battle. He was sent to the Federal hospital at Frederick City, and subse-

quently to Fort McHenry, and thence to Fort Delaware, where he was held until October, 1863. Then being transferred to Point Lookout he was held there until March, 1865, and was never able to rejoin the army. Nearly two years were thus passed by him amid the hardships of the military prisons of the North. On his restoration to liberty he returned to Nelson county, Va., and was there engaged in farming, teaching school and as deputy sheriff, until 1870, when he engaged in mercantile pursuits in Amherst county. Since 1881 he has been a resident of Lynchburg, and has successfully conducted a grocery business. He is a popular business man, an enterprising citizen, and socially is highly esteemed. He is a member of the Masonic order with the rank of Knight Templar.

Captain Andrew J. Jones, of Newport News, commander, during a large part of the war, of the Pamunkey artillery, was born in Warwick county March 20, 1838, the son of John and Maria D. (Hughes) Jones. He was reared upon his father's farm in Warwick county, receiving an "old field school" education, until he was seventeen years of age, when he was apprenticed to the machinist's craft at Richmond. Subsequently he was in charge of an engine in the Gosport navy yard for a year, after which he was employed as a mercantile clerk at Richmond until the outbreak of the war. In April, 1861, he joined a company of infantry organized at Richmond, but soon afterward disbanded, after which he went to West Point, on the Pamunkey river, and enlisted in the company of heavy artillery, organized and commanded by Capt. Robert Elliott. This was known as the Pamunkey artillery, the members being chiefly drawn from the counties of New Kent, Hanover, Henrico, James City and Charles City. Entering the service as a private he was promoted first lieutenant in the spring of 1862, and captain in 1863. He was on duty with the command throughout the war, principally being stationed at Chaffin's bluff, commanding the James river approach to Richmond. Here he was several times engaged with the enemy's fleet and artillery, and participated in the battle of Chaffin's Bluff. During the retreat to Appomattox he took part in the battle of Sailor's Creek, where he was twice wounded, and surrendered with his entire command at the time of Ewell's capitulation. He was carried to Petersburg and held in hospital there for a few weeks and then paroled. This faithful officer then found himself compelled to accept any honorable employment for a livelihood. Finally, in 1866, he embraced a good business opening in partnership with his brother-in-law, Thomas Curtis, and was for several years engaged in buying and shipping wood. Having prospered in this employment he secured a tract of land in 1871, near the present site of Newport News, and established a mercantile business, which he has since conducted, also having a lease of a profitable oyster farm in the James river. Now comfortably situated in life, this worthy Confederate veteran has the satisfaction of knowing that he is enjoying the reward of industry and duty honorably performed. His genial heart and sturdy manliness are appreciated by a host of warm friends.

Caius J. Jones, of Norfolk, was born in Nottoway county, Va., May 22, 1842. He is the son of Capt. F. J. E. Jones, who was

born in Nottoway county February 5, 1812, was a farmer by occupation, a captain of militia, and died in 1865. His ancestors are from the Greenhill family of England and the Jones family of Wales. In 1834 Captain Jones married Elizabeth, daughter of Archer Dunavant, of Nottoway county, who was born in 1814 and died in 1890. Of their eight children, two sons and a daughter survive. One son, Frank Jones, served throughout the war in the Confederate army, and now resides in Dinwiddie county. The other son, Caius J. Jones, was about six years old when his parents removed to Dinwiddie county, where he was reared and given his academic education. At sixteen years of age he entered Randolph-Macon college, whence he received the degree of M. A. in June, 1861. Soon afterward he enlisted in the Dinwiddie cavalry as a private, and was subsequently promoted sergeant. In 1862, after the evacuation of Williamsburg, he served for a short time as courier for Gen. A. P. Hill. Among the battles in which this gallant cavalryman was engaged were the Seven Days' fight, including Seven Pines, Fredericksburg, Antietam, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Cold Harbor, Yellow Tavern, and all the campaigns and engagements of J. E. B. Stuart's cavalry. He used up nine horses during his service, and was twice wounded, but was never captured. During the siege of Richmond he was in the saddle for sixty days in succession. After the battle of Reams' Station he was the only surviving officer of his company and commanded it until the command was recruited. Illustrating the strange fortunes of war Sergeant Jones recalls that on one occasion in 1864 he was called on to name a detail to guard at night the tent of General Wickham. He selected Corporal Frazier, but the latter having an excuse, he acted in his stead. Next day another detail was called for—a non-commissioned officer with ten men to join a detachment sent against a negro garrison. Again he detailed Frazier, and again was asked to take the duty on himself. But this time, he and Frazier being the only non-commissioned officers, he insisted that the corporal should serve, which he did and was killed, and the sergeant doubtless would have been had he not taken upon himself the service of the previous night. He was on detached duty at the time of the surrender at Appomattox and started to join the army in North Carolina, when hearing of its capitulation, he returned to Dinwiddie Court House and gave his parole. He became occupied with agricultural pursuits, and from 1869 was for ten years engaged in teaching in Norfolk county. He then engaged in tobacco manufacturing and afterward as a salesman, removed to Norfolk in 1883, and in 1888 embarked in the grocery business which he has since successfully conducted. He is a vestryman of St. Peter's P. E. church and a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp. He was married October 8, 1873, to Fannie H., daughter of the late Thomas H. Browne, of Norfolk, and descendant of Lord Willoughby, of England. They have three sons living: Junius H., Thomas A., and Reverdy H. The eldest son was appointed to the United States naval academy in 1892, but was compelled to resign his cadetship on account of ill health and then entered the Colorado school of mines. The second son graduated from the Virginia military institute, June 23, 1898, at the head of his class and received the first Jackson-Hope medal

given to the most distinguished graduate. The third son is pursuing his studies under Rev. Robert Gatewood.

Callum B. Jones, of Ashland, Va., late of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry, army of Northern Virginia, was born in Hanover county, near Ashland, May 15, 1842. His father, Dr. Callum B. Jones, Sr., a descendant of Gen. Callum B. Jones, of the British army, was born in Hanover county in 1812, and in 1838 married Mary M. Wingfield, daughter of Capt. William Wingfield, who died in 1848, leaving one son, the subject of this sketch, and three daughters: Columbia W., wife of John Newton Gary, deceased; Mollie Kidd, wife of Nathaniel M. Taylor, of Bristol, Tenn.; and Ida Burton, wife of Richard Ruffus Griffin, of Richmond. Dr. Jones in his youth received an old-field schooling, his principal instructor being St. George Tucker, subsequently captain of Company E, Fifteenth Virginia infantry regiment, in which Dr. Jones enlisted as a youth of nineteen on April 23, 1861. He was identified with the career of his company and his regiment throughout the entire war. During 1861 he was in Gen. Lafayette McLaws' division of the troops under Magruder on the peninsula, and subsequently he shared the record of Corse's brigade of Pickett's division in Virginia, Maryland, North Carolina, and Tennessee. Among the principal battles were: South Mountain, Sewell's Point, Sharpsburg, Union, Tenn., Drewry's Bluff, Five Forks and Chester Gap. At Drewry's Bluff, May 15, 1864, he was seriously wounded in the left leg. The year after the surrender at Appomattox, in which he was a participant, he began the study of medicine, which he continued in the medical college of Virginia, graduating in March, 1869. He was surgeon of the Quantico railroad in 1870-71-72, practiced his profession at Richmond until 1882, and in December of the latter year began his professional career at Ashland, Va., which he has continued with much success to the present time. He is a member of the alumni association of the Virginia medical college, is physician to the Hanover county infirmary, and among his comrades of the army holds the rank of surgeon of W. B. Newton camp, Confederate Veterans. Dr. Jones was married January 29, 1885, to Sallie P., daughter of Capt. Walter N. Newman, of Richmond, and they have six children: Mary Newman, Callum B. Jr., Joseph Moore, Walter Kidd, Willie Carpenter and Sallie Cabell.

Lieutenant Henley T. Jones, of Williamsburg, a veteran of the Thirty-second regiment, Virginia infantry, was born in James City county, April 10, 1842. He is the descendant of a York county family of which several generations have been worthy citizens of Virginia. His father, Henley T. Jones, a wealthy planter, was born in York in 1814, married Mary Ann Henrietta Jones in 1835, and died in 1872, his widow surviving until 1881. Of their thirteen children the subject of this mention is the eldest son, and two beside himself, William L. and Daniel S., served in the Confederate army. He received his academic education in a classical school at Williamsburg in which there was a class of eighteen boys of nearly the same age, all of whom bore arms for the Confederacy, and most of whom are yet living. In 1859 he entered William and Mary college, with the ultimate purpose of pursuing the study of medicine at Paris, but the movement for Southern

independence changed all plans of young men at that period. In April, 1861, he entered the Confederate army as a private in the Williamsburg Junior Guard, and gave his first year's service with that command, in the vicinity of Williamsburg, and under the command of General Magruder in the Peninsular campaign. For the first seven months he served in the engineering department under Col. Alexander Rives. At the reorganization of the Confederate army in May, 1862, he was elected third sergeant of Company C, Thirty-second Virginia infantry, and after the first battle of Fredericksburg he was promoted second lieutenant of this command. He was in all the battles of his regiment, in Corse's brigade of Pickett's division, except the fight at Fort Harrison, in 1864, when he was disabled by illness. The important actions in which he took part were, Seven Pines, Savage Station, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Brook Turnpike, north of Richmond, Second Cold Harbor, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. He was severely hurt in the latter battle, and escaped the general disaster to surrender at Appomattox. After the close of hostilities he was engaged in farming until 1872, when he embarked in the drug trade, which has since been his occupation. He is prominent in social life, influential in public affairs, and honored by his old comrades, who have retained him as adjutant of Magruder-Ewell camp, Confederate Veterans, since its organization in 1892. On June 10, 1867, he was married to Mary Fiske Scuthall Fisher, who died in 1894. Their two children are living: Marian Ambler and Hugh Williamson, the latter a student in the university college of medicine at Richmond.

Lieutenant-Colonel Hilary P. Jones was, before the war, a prominent educator of Virginia, having been for several years engaged in the business of teaching, and standing high in his profession. He entered the army as an officer of artillery and soon was major of a battalion. He participated in the battles of Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill and White Oak Swamp Bridge during the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, June 26th to July 1, 1862. During these operations his battalion was attached to Gen. D. H. Hill's division. He shared also in the marches and battles of the Maryland campaign. Just before the battle of Chancellorsville he was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel of artillery, and with his battalion took an active part in that most wonderful of all Lee's long series of brilliant victories. Colonel Jones was also in the Pennsylvania campaign and shared in the hardships and dangers that culminated in the great conflict of Gettysburg. During Ewell's march through the valley, while on the way to Gettysburg, Jones' artillery of twenty pieces, by a sudden attack upon the enemy's works near Winchester, prepared the way for the gallant advance of the brigade of General Hays, which swept away all opposition. The excellence of his work on this occasion is testified to by Lieutenant-General Ewell and Brigadier-General Pendleton in their reports of the Gettysburg campaign. General Early, in his report of this same affair says: "All the arrangements of Colonel Jones and the conduct of himself and his artillery, were admirable and have not been surpassed during the war." Again speaking of Gettysburg, General Early says: "The conduct of Lieutenant-Colonel Jones and his artillery battalion at Winchester was ad-

mirable." At the opening of the campaign of 1864, Colonel Jones was with his battalion under the command of General Beauregard and participated in the battles near Drewry's Bluff, winning again honorable mention from Generals Beauregard and Whiting. In the fall of 1864 he was in command of all the artillery of Anderson's corps, four battalions, and had been promoted to the rank of colonel. He participated also in the campaign which closed at Appomattox. After the war Colonel Jones went back to his old profession of teaching.

Rev. John William Jones, D. D., a Virginian distinguished for his contributions to the history of the Confederate era, was born at Louisa, and is an alumnus of the State university. Devoting himself in youth to the ministry of the Baptist church, he pursued a theological course at the Southern Baptist theological seminary, was ordained in June, 1860, and soon afterward was appointed a missionary to Canton, China. There his life might have been spent, and doubtless his unbounded energies would have accomplished great good in that distant field, but the rapidly hastening crisis in national affairs delayed and finally prevented his departure. When Virginia called for the military service of her sons he promptly enlisted as a private in Company D of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, under Col. A. P. Hill. After serving in the ranks one year he was made chaplain of his regiment, and in November, 1863, he became missionary chaplain to A. P. Hill's corps. He was present on every battlefield of the army of Northern Virginia from the occupation of Harper's Ferry in 1861 to Appomattox Court House in 1865, shared the sufferings and privations and the risk of battle with the soldiers, ministered to them in hospital, encouraged them in the performance of arduous duty, and was particularly effective in those famous religious revivals which resulted in the religious profession of over fifteen thousand of Lee's veterans. He himself baptized over four hundred soldiers, and under his preaching thousands declared their acceptance of the gospel of the "Prince of Peace." After the close of the war he was for several years pastor at Lexington, Va., and one of the chaplains of Washington college, under the presidency of General Lee. Also laboring in the Virginia military institute, he did effective work in both those famous educational institutions. Since then he has acted as agent of the Southern Baptist theological seminary, general superintendent of the Virginia Baptist Sunday-school work, and assistant secretary of the home board of the Southern Baptist convention, and has traveled extensively throughout the South. In September, 1893, he became chaplain of the university of Virginia. In the midst of his work in behalf of the church, he maintained a literary activity which has saved to history many important contributions relating to the Confederate war. For ten years, from 1876, he was secretary of the Southern historical society, editing fourteen volumes of "Southern Historical Papers." By authority of the family of Gen. R. E. Lee, of whom he was an intimate friend, he wrote after the general's death, "Personal Reminiscences and Letters of R. E. Lee." Other works of his production are "The Army of Northern Virginia Memorial Volume," an "Appendix to Cooke's Life of Stonewall Jackson," "Christ in the Camp, or Religion in Lee's Army," "The Memorial

of Jefferson Davis," and a school history of the United States. His miscellaneous contributions to newspapers and magazines would make a series of volumes still more extensive.

Walter N. Jones, of Petersburg, a boy soldier of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Manchester, Va., in the year 1850, the son of Rev. Thomas H. Jones. He is a member of one of the oldest Virginia families, distinguished alike in war and peace, and is connected with the Taliaferro, Nelson and other families of historic importance. The founder of the Virginia line was Thomas Jones, son of Capt. Roger Jones, of the British army, who came from England. Thomas married the daughter of Dr. William Cocke, who was secretary of the colony and subsequently judge, during the administration of Governor Spottswood. One of the sons of Thomas Jones was Dr. Walter Jones, who served in the United States Congress. Another, William, was the father of Thomas Jones, a wealthy planter of Gloucester county, two of whose brothers served in the war of 1812. Thomas married a Miss Roy, a direct descendant of the McGregors of Scotland, and connected with famous French families. Their son, Rev. Thomas H. Jones, married Rosa, daughter of Walter and Frances T. (Nelson) Day. Walter N. Jones was a student in Smith & Cone's classical school at Richmond during the early part of the war, being far below military age, but on June 16, 1864, being about fourteen years of age, he had his first experience as a soldier of the Confederacy, serving with the heroic little command of General Beauregard which manfully confronted Grant's army and saved Petersburg from immediate capture. He remained with the army at Petersburg until winter, which he spent with his cousin, Dr. Francis Jones, in Dinwiddie county. Returning to Petersburg in the spring of 1865, narrowly escaping capture en route, he was assigned to the commissary department, and served in charge of wagons during the retreat as far as Sailor's Creek, where his train was burned by the Yankees. He surrendered at Appomattox, being perhaps the youngest soldier on that field. After the war he resided with his cousin, Dr. Jones, his parents having died before he reached the age of twelve years, and at the age of nineteen years he went into business at Richmond and subsequently moved to Petersburg. He is now connected with two prominent firms of the latter city and is an influential and enterprising citizen. He was married in 1875 to Miss Ada Virginia, daughter of Benjamin Boisseau Vaughan, of Petersburg, and five children are living: Walter N. Jr., Benjamin Vaughan, Thomas Catesby, Lemuel Roy, and Robert Francis Jones. Mr. Jones is active in church and fraternal work, and has served on the city school board.

William Atkinson Jones, of Warsaw, representative in Congress from the First Virginia district, was born in Warsaw, Richmond county, Va., March 21, 1849. In the winter of 1864-65 he entered the Virginia military institute, where he remained until the evacuation of Richmond, serving, as occasion required, with the cadets in the defense of that city. After the close of the war he studied at Coleman's school in Fredericksburg until October, 1868, when he entered the academic department of the university of Virginia, from which institution he graduated with the degree of B. L., in 1870. He was admitted to the bar in July, 1870, and has continued

to practice law ever since, although also engaged in farming operations. He was for several years commonwealth attorney for his county and was a delegate in 1880 to the national Democratic convention in Cincinnati. He was elected to the Fifty-second, Fifty-third, Fifty-fourth and Fifty-fifth congresses, and was re-elected to the Fifty-sixth Congress as a Democrat, receiving 8,844 votes, against 4,270 votes for Bristow, Republican, and 230 votes for Crockett, Prohibitionist. Mr. Jones is a representative of a family long distinguished in the history of Virginia. His great-grandfather, Gen. Joseph Jones, of Dinwiddie county, born August 23, 1749, was prominent in the Revolutionary period, and, at the time of his death, February 9, 1824, held the office of collector of the port at Petersburg. It was said in his memory, by a leading Virginia newspaper of that day: "During the Revolutionary war General Jones was amongst the firmest asserters of his country's independence, and, in every vicissitude of that eventful and glorious struggle, he never wavered in his course, but steadily maintained the high character of an American patriot. In subsequent life, amidst all the trials of political warfare, General Jones has pursued but one course. A Republican in the strictest acceptation of the word, he has ever been on the side of the people, maintaining their just rights and ready at all times to oppose the encroachments of power, whether of foreign or domestic origin." This worthy patriot married Jane, daughter of Roger Atkinson (born February 18, 1764, died February 15, 1814), and one of their children was Thomas Jones (born August 18, 1781, died at Bellevue, November 9, 1866), who wedded, on December 11, 1804, Mary Lee, daughter of Richard and Sally Lee, of Lee Hall, county of Westmoreland. She was born February 12, 1790. Her father was the uncle of Gov. Henry Lee, known as "Light Horse Harry" Lee. Of Capt. Thomas Jones, son of Thomas and Mary Lee Jones and father of Hon. W. A. Jones, it is appropriate in this connection to give an account, in illustration of the career of a brave and modest Confederate soldier. Capt. Thomas Jones was born at Bellevue, on the Appomattox river, in Chesterfield county, September 8, 1811, and was educated in the famous school of Gov. William B. Giles and at the university of North Carolina. After his graduation, he took charge of the large landed estate of his mother in Westmoreland county and took up the study of law with his mother's half-brother, Hon. Willoughby Newton, with whom he was subsequently associated in practice for a short time after admission to the bar. October 21, 1843, he was married to Ann Seymour Trowbridge, daughter of James and Cornelia Trowbridge, of Plattsburg, N. Y., and shortly afterward he made his home in the adjoining county of Richmond. There he held for a number of years, and until the outbreak of the war, the position of commonwealth's attorney. In 1859, soon after the disturbance at Harper's Ferry, he became a member and first sergeant of the Totuskey Grays, a volunteer company of light infantry, organized at Warsaw, under command of Capt. A. Judson Sydnor. This company, including about ninety-five men, was mustered into the service of Virginia, May 23, 1861, and Sergeant Jones, though then in his fiftieth year, was among the most vigorous and devoted of the patriotic band. On the 7th of June the company was ordered to Mathias Point, on the Potomac, where, on June 27th, they

participated in an engagement with the forces landed from the U. S. steamers Pawnee and Freeborn, in which Captain Ward, of the Freeborn, commanding the Potomac flotilla, was killed. In the following August the Grays became Company B of the Fortieth Virginia regiment, Col. John M. Brockenbrough, and subsequently Sergeant Jones was advanced to the rank of third lieutenant. The first general engagement in which he participated was in the campaign before Richmond. In the battle of Gaines' Mill, in command of his company, all his superior officers having been either killed or wounded, he received a severe and dangerous gunshot wound in the head, which necessitated his removal to a hospital at Richmond. Subsequently he was taken to the home of his brother, Richard Lee Jones, at Bellevue, and later was under the care of his wife at Warsaw. He was not able to rejoin his command until shortly before Lee's army crossed into Maryland, and then participated in all the engagements of the Sharpsburg campaign in which Field's brigade took part, the brigade being then under the command of Colonel Brockenbrough. He also fought in the December battle at Fredericksburg and in the Chancellorsville engagement of May, 1863, after which he was made quartermaster of the Fortieth regiment and in that capacity accompanied his command to Gettysburg. In December, 1863, the brigade, now under the command of Gen. H. H. Walker, moved to the valley of Virginia to reinforce Early, and, while in winter quarters, Captain Jones wrote and caused to be read to his regiment a series of patriotic and inspiring addresses, which had the happy effect of causing the enthusiastic re-enlistment of the entire command for the full period of the war. In March, 1864, the regiment returned to Lee's main army, and in May was engaged in the bloody fights of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania. Thence it moved to a point below Petersburg and suffered great losses in the engagements at Fort Archer and Fort MacRae. From the middle of December until the evacuation, the regiment served at Chaffin's Farm, under command of Gen. G. W. C. Lee, and it moved thence to Appomattox. Captain Jones did not share in the surrender, but made his way into North Carolina and joined Johnston's army, returning to his home only after all hope had died. Though the oldest man of his regiment, Captain Jones shared to the last the privations and perils of his comrades. He was inspired by a deep faith in the righteousness of his cause. Reverses did not discourage his dauntless spirit, and to the very end he confidently believed in the ultimate triumph of the Confederacy. These qualities, joined to his heroic bearing, conspicuous unselfishness and indomitable courage, were of great influence in the encouragement of his comrades, with whom he was ever popular. When he returned to his family at the close of the struggle, he found his fields wasted and his home in ashes, but he patiently began the cultivation of a crop, and, when civil government was restored and courts opened, he resumed the practice of law. With the exception of some eight or ten years, when he was judge of the counties of Richmond and Westmoreland, he continued in the practice, with that great industry and vigor which marked the whole course of his life, up to the time of his death, which occurred from typhoid fever, December 27, 1893.

William T. Jones, a gallant soldier of the Nineteenth Virginia regiment, Pickett's old brigade, was born at Charlottesville, Va., October 27, 1839. He enlisted in Company A, Nineteenth Virginia infantry, about July 18, 1861, and on the 21st was under fire at the first battle of Manassas. The succeeding fall and winter he passed with his regiment mainly at Centreville and Fairfax Court House, and, early in 1862, was transferred to the peninsula, where he did picket duty about Yorktown. After the evacuation of that post he took part in the battle of Williamsburg, May 5, 1862, and received a terrible wound in the head, a ball entering the left side of his face and passing out to the right of his right eye, shattering all the bones of the face in its course. He was left on the field, and cared for in the Federal hospital until he could be removed to Washington, where he lay in hospital for some time, afterward being held as a prisoner of war at the Old Capitol prison and Fort Delaware. He was one of the first prisoners exchanged under the cartel, when about five thousand prisoners were brought to Richmond. He then returned to his home, with an honorable discharge. In October, 1876, he had the additional misfortune of a fall from a scaffolding which broke both his legs and caused the amputation of one of them. He is an influential and highly respected citizen; held the office of collector for the town, and after its incorporation as a city was made treasurer, an office he yet holds. In John Bowie Strange camp, Confederate Veterans, he holds the rank of paymaster.

James Dawley Jordan, of Smithfield, who rendered devoted service in his youth to the Confederate cause, was born in Isle of Wight county, October 30, 1845, the son of Col. Josiah W. Jordan, and Fanny Dawley, his wife. Colonel Jordan, born September 1, 1801, died January 8, 1852, was the son of William and Martha Jordan, and the grandson of John Jordan, who was born December 17, 1776, and died January 6, 1814. Colonel Jordan had six sons and four daughters. One of the sons was too young during the war to enter the service in any capacity, but the other five were given cheerfully to the cause of Southern independence. Alonzo B., the oldest, served as captain of the Newtown Rifles, a company of the Third Virginia infantry; Walter B. was in the Petersburg cavalry, Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment; Opie D. was a member of the Old Dominion Guard, Third Virginia infantry, and later of the signal corps; and Josiah W. served in the Portsmouth light artillery and the Petersburg cavalry of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment. James Dawley Jordan, next younger, made his home at Petersburg in 1861, and was employed as a drug clerk until 1863, when, being seventeen years of age, he became a member of the Petersburg Juniors, a boy company, organized as a home guard. Soon afterward he enlisted in the signal corps, and served in that capacity until the close of the war, being stationed on the Appomattox river and with the army about Petersburg, and finally surrendering at Appomattox. After the conclusion of hostilities he engaged in farming in his native county. In 1891 he was elected secretary and business manager of the Smithfield alliance company, a stock organization formed by the farmers of Isle of Wight county, and since then he has managed their business at Smithfield. In 1893 he was elected mayor of Smith-

field, and in May, 1897, was re-elected. Josiah W. Jordan, another of these patriotic brothers, was born in Isle of Wight county, June 24, 1843. In 1860 he entered mercantile pursuits as a clerk at Portsmouth, where, at the breaking out of war, he was among the first to respond to the call to arms. He enlisted in the Portsmouth light artillery April 17, 1861, and served with that command until August 9, 1862, when he was transferred to the Petersburg cavalry, a company of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, whose operations he shared in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania until the close of the war. He was wounded at Kelley's Ford, May 2, 1863, and at Mattaponi river, May 17, 1864. Since the war he has engaged in agriculture and mercantile business in his native county, and since 1878 has held the office of postmaster at Carrollton. He was married in 1877 to Miss Martha A. Blackwell.

Robert L. Judkins, of Petersburg, Va., a Confederate soldier, had the good fortune to be associated during his military career with the immortal cavalry leader, J. E. B. Stuart, and his famous successor, Wade Hampton. He was born in Surry county in 1832, a native of Virginia, and when fourteen years of age he came to Petersburg to reside. There he enlisted in 1861 in the Petersburg Rifles, subsequently assigned to the Twelfth Virginia infantry as Company E, and with this command served for some time at Norfolk and vicinity. He was then transferred to the Thirteenth Virginia regiment of cavalry, and soon afterward was detailed as courier to Gen. J. E. B. Stuart. He continued to be attached to the headquarters of the brilliant cavalry general until he received his mortal wounds at Yellow Tavern, and participated in all the famous raids and campaigns of the cavalry division of the army of Northern Virginia in the Old Dominion, Maryland and Pennsylvania. After the death of Stuart he was for a time attached to the headquarters of General Lee, and then ordered to report to Gen Wade Hampton, with whom he served in the campaign against Sherman, and finally surrendered at Greensboro, N. C. During his service with General Hampton's command he was detailed for a few weeks as assistant quartermaster of the cavalry. During the period since the close of hostilities Mr. Judkins has been a portion of the time in mercantile business, and since 1886 has held the position of secretary of the South Side manufacturing company of Petersburg. He is an influential and popular citizen, and is a member of the A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans, and highly regarded by his comrades. In 1867 he was married to Miss Rebecca Spratley, of Surry county, and they have two daughters living: Viola and Rebecca.

William Kail, of Petersburg, Va., an artillery soldier of the Confederacy, and now a valued member of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans, was born at Petersburg in 1844. Orphaned during infancy by the death of his father, W. M. Kail, he was serving out the years of an apprenticeship when the war broke out, and he continued in this employment until 1863. He then enlisted in Bradford's Mississippi battery, and after service in the vicinity of Petersburg and at Drewry's Bluff, was ordered into North Carolina. There, in April, 1864, he participated in the movement under General Hoke, which resulted in the capture of the entire Federal

garrison at Plymouth, and continued to be successful until the forces were recalled from New Bern, where they had gained possession of the outer works, to reinforce the army in Virginia. Subsequently he served at Weldon and Hick's Ford, in defense of the Weldon railroad, until after the evacuation of Richmond, when his command fell back to Warrenton. In the latter part of April he came to Petersburg and was paroled. He then embarked in business, in which he has subsequently continued, meeting with much success as the result of his commendable energy. In 1873 Mr. Kail was married to Miss Alice O. Mingee, of Petersburg, and they have five children: Katie Eva, Herbert Stanley, Lulu Cora, Willie C. and Frank L.

Colonel Robert G. H. Kean, of Lynchburg, Va., chief of the bureau of war of the Confederate States during a large part of the existence of that government, was born in Caroline county, Va., October 7, 1828. His grandfather, Andrew Kean, was a distinguished physician in his day and was offered by Mr. Jefferson the first chair in the medical department of the university of Virginia. The subject of this sketch was prepared for college at the Episcopal high school, under the charge of Rev. (afterward General) William N. Pendleton, and at the famous Concord academy, under the charge of Frederick Coleman. His reputation as a scholar dates from his early boyhood. In 1848 he entered the university of Virginia and there took successively the degrees of bachelor of arts, master of arts and bachelor of law. No student ever left the university more distinguished for scholarship than he. In the autumn of 1853 he settled at Lynchburg and began the practice of law, which he pursued with a success commensurate with his abilities and attainments until 1861, when he enlisted in the Confederate army as a private in the Lynchburg company, Eleventh Virginia infantry. General Ewell thrice offered him a staff appointment, but Mr. Kean refused, saying: "If some men of our position do not remain in the ranks, how can we expect men who have less at stake to stand by us." It was while thus serving in the ranks that he was sent for by General Beauregard on the night preceding the day of the battle of Manassas, to take part in a council of war. Finally, in 1862, at the urgent insistence of his friend and connection, Gen. George W. Randolph, he accepted a position on his staff with the rank of captain, and on General Randolph's appointment as secretary of war, he was commissioned by President Davis, "Chief of the Bureau of War." This position he held until the close of the war. Upon the fall of the Confederacy he left Richmond with President Davis and his cabinet, and, stopping at Danville, opened the war office there for a few days, proceeding thence to Greensboro and Charlotte, N. C., where he, with other officials, was discharged from further duty. It is important to note here that the heads of the different departments were preparing to destroy their official records when Mr. Kean protested vigorously against it, taking the ground that they contained matter of history which would be invaluable in vindicating the South against any malignant or untruthful charge which might be made against her. His earnest protest prevailed, and thus, through his instrumentality, the truth of the history of the great struggle of the Confederacy is preserved in the "War

of the Rebellion Official Records," since published by our National government. Mr. Kean's position in Richmond threw him in close and constant touch with many of the leaders of the lost cause, and gave him rare insight into much of the inside history of the war. In a diary which he kept during the time much of this is recorded. All the correspondence between the two governments regarding the Federal prisoners at Andersonville passed through his hands and his account of the matter can be found in Vol. I of the Southern Historical Society Papers, page 199. Returning to Lynchburg in the autumn of 1865, he resumed the practice of law and pursued it steadily until death closed his useful and honorable career. He was long recognized as one of the leaders of the Virginia bar, at a period in its history prolific in able lawyers, and was chosen second president of the Virginia state bar association, his only predecessor in that office being the venerable Judge William J. Robertson. As a scholar Mr. Kean's reputation was considerable. One of his letters to Prof. John Tyndall on a scientific subject was embodied in its entirety in an address by that distinguished scientist before the royal society of London. His public addresses and contributions to the press embrace a great variety of subjects and exerted a wide influence. A distinguished member of the faculty of the university of Virginia has said that his address before the Educational society of Virginia on the subject of the "Economy of Higher Education," induced the legislature to raise the annual appropriation to the university from \$15,000 to \$40,000. Nor was this his only service to his alma mater. For many years he served on her board of visitors and for two full terms as rector, and throughout his whole life he never missed an opportunity of advancing her interests. In 1854 Mr. Kean was married to Jane Nicholas Randolph, daughter of Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, and great-granddaughter of Thomas Jefferson. By this marriage he had six children, three of whom survive, one, Capt. Jefferson Randolph Kean, being a surgeon in the U. S. army. In 1874 he was again married, his second wife being Adelaide Navarro Prescott, a member of a distinguished Louisiana family, who with her four children survives him. Mr. Kean died at his residence in Lynchburg, on Monday morning, June 13, 1898, in the seventieth year of his age. At the time of his death he was, with the exception of Postmaster-General Reagan, of Texas, the highest civil officer of the Confederacy living.

James Milnor Keeling, a prominent attorney of Norfolk, was born in Princess Anne county, Va., August 31, 1844. His family is one of the oldest in Virginia, the first settler being Thomas Keeling, who came from England to Princess Anne county in 1635. The family homestead, which passed into other hands in 1881, had been continuously in the hands of the Keelings since 1693. The father of the judge was Solomon S. Keeling, born in 1805, died in 1881, who was the son of Adam Keeling, born in 1745, who served through the Revolutionary war as a lieutenant in the light horse cavalry, and died in 1805. Solomon S. Keeling took to wife Martha, daughter of Milnor Peters, a business man of Norfolk. She, a noble wife and mother, passed away in September, 1887. Judge Keeling was reared at the homestead, and at the age of fifteen years entered the military academy of Prof.

N. B. Webster at Portsmouth, and subsequently the academy of W. R. Galt, where he remained over two years. But it was difficult for Virginia youth at that period to confine their attention to text books, and, on the 8th of March, 1862, the day of the memorable encounter between the Virginia and Monitor, he left school to enter the Confederate service. Joining the Chesapeake cavalry on April 1, 1862, he led the adventurous life of a trooper throughout the remainder of the war, being promoted to sergeant and on occasions commanding his company. He was in the battles of Gaines' Mill, the Seven Days' before Richmond, Culpeper Court House, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Brandy Station, where he was wounded by a saber cut on the right hand, Beaver Dam Station, Luray, Winchester and Cedar Creek, Dumfries, Reams' Station, Raccoon Ford, Stevensburg, Trevilian's, Lacy's Spring, participated in Stuart's celebrated raid around the army of Burnside, and was with Stuart at Yellow Tavern, and bore a message from him, shortly before he was killed, to Col. Henry Clay Pate. For a short time Sergeant Keeling served as courier for Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. At the Blackwater river he had a curious experience, being nearly buried alive in a little engagement with Federal gunboats. Stationed on the river bank with five comrades, to observe the Federal movements, they saw three gunboats coming up the river, and with youthful ardor resolved to intrench and open fire on the craft with double barreled shotguns. Unfortunately they made their trench cave-like at one end, and when driven to this bomb-proof by the active fire of the enemy, their shelter collapsed under the cannonade, and it was with difficulty that Keeling and one of his comrades were extricated. They had the satisfaction of learning later, however, that their action had resulted seriously to the Federal forces, five being killed and several wounded. The war over, Mr. Keeling studied law for three years under Alexander Cook of Princess Anne county, and being admitted to the bar in 1868, actively engaged in the practice of his profession in 1872. On June 18, 1875, his success had been so marked that he was appointed judge of the county court of Princess Anne by Gov. James L. Kemper. In this position he was continued by legislative election in the fall of 1875, and again in 1879, 1885 and 1891. After continuous service upon the bench for twenty-one years he resigned in 1896, and removed to Norfolk, to resume the practice of the profession as a member of the bar. His reputation as a judge and wealth of legal acquirements have given him immediate success in this field of work. Judge Keeling is a past district deputy grand master in the Masonic order and maintains a membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp, of United Confederate Veterans, besides other fraternal connections. He was married very happily in November, 1876, to Miss Annie Whiddon Shepherd, of Princess Anne county.

Captain Kosciusko Kemper, a prominent citizen and ex-mayor of Alexandria, was born at Warrenton, Va., June 18, 1835. He was reared and educated in Virginia, and married in 1859. Having qualified himself for the profession of teaching, he went to Beaufort, S. C., in 1861, to take charge of a female seminary, but soon entered the service of the Confederate States. He was appointed by Governor Pickens first lieutenant of the First South Carolina

artillery, stationed at Fort Sumter, and until the close of the war he served with this command, gaining promotion to the rank of captain of artillery. His service was almost entirely at Charleston harbor and vicinity, where the repeated and long-continued attacks of Federal fleets and armies afforded opportunity for arduous and gallant service on the part of the Confederate forces. He served during the attack of the Federal ironclad fleet on April 7, 1863, in defense of Morris island July 10, 1863, at Battery Wagner and Battery Pringle, for several months commanded the lines around Fort Johnson, participating in several engagements, also at Fort Ripley for a considerable period. He commanded the expedition that removed one of the eleven-inch Dahlgren guns from the wreck of the Federal boat, Keokuk. He frequently served as adjutant for the officers commanding detachments from the regiment at points without Fort Sumter. During 1864 he served in the detachments that occupied in turn the ruins of Fort Sumter and prevented its seizure by the enemy. After the evacuation of Charleston he went with his regiment to Fayetteville and Smithfield, and surrendered with the army of General Johnston near Greensboro. After these events he returned to Virginia and, making his home at Alexandria, established a female seminary, which he conducted for four years, in the meantime preparing himself for the practice of law, in which he subsequently engaged and has ever since continued, with notable professional success. For five years succeeding his election, in 1874, he served acceptably as mayor of Alexandria, and at the expiration of that official service was chosen corporation attorney, and acted as such until 1887. At the latter date he accepted the position of confidential secretary of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, then United States commissioner of railroads. After the retirement from office of the general, Captain Kemper resumed the practice of law at Alexandria. Captain Kemper is prominent in the Masonic order, is past master of Alexandria Washington lodge, past eminent commander of Old Dominion commandery, K. T., and past district deputy grand master of District No. 1, of Virginia. He also maintains a membership in R. E. Lee camp, No. 2, Confederate Veterans.

David C. Kent, a citizen of Pulaski county, who was faithful to the Confederate cause during the years of trial from 1861 to 1865, was born in that county May 3, 1833. He was married in 1854, to Elizabeth Ligon, of Petersburg, by whom he had thirteen children. When volunteers were called for in defense of the State from invasion he offered his services, and enlisted, but, upon examination was found to be incapacitated for service on account of inflammatory rheumatism. On this account he was discharged. He then engaged actively in the production of lumber and other supplies for the Confederate government, and thus continued during the entire period of the war. His work in this line was so extensive that at the close the government was indebted to him in the sum of fifteen thousand dollars. This large sum, mainly on account of advancements that he had made for labor, was of course, an entire loss, so that he can truly be said to have adequately shared in the suffering and deprivation which the unhappy result of the struggle brought to the people of the South. One of his sons, James Ligon Kent, born August 27, 1867, is now a promising

young physician of Pulaski City. He attended the sessions of 1887 to 1889 at the university of Virginia and graduated at Bellevue hospital medical college, New York, in 1890, and took a post-graduate course at the New York Polyclinic, in 1897. He is meeting with marked success in the treatment of the special diseases of the nose and throat, to which he mainly devotes his attention.

Henry D. Kerfoot, M. D., of Berryville, Va., who rendered service both in the infantry and cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Clarke county, January 10, 1846. Immediately following the passage of the ordinance of secession by the convention, he participated in the occupation of Harper's Ferry with his company, the Clarke Rifles, which subsequently was assigned to the Second Virginia infantry regiment as Company I. He served as a private in this command during the year of enlistment, and fought with the Stonewall brigade at the first battle of Manassas, receiving wounds in this historic victory which disabled him for some time. On account of them he was transferred to the cavalry, and became a private in Company D of the Sixth Virginia regiment, a command which was distinguished throughout the war in the brigades of Robertson, Munford, W. E. Jones and Payne, of the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia. He participated in the Valley battles of Kernstown and Front Royal and the various skirmishes of Ashby's cavalry in 1862, and subsequently in the campaigns and raids and frequent battles of the cavalry under Stuart, was constantly identified with his regiment except when disabled by wounds. On various occasions he served in the advance of cavalry charges, in a small party detailed for that purpose under the command of Capt. James Thompson, and in such circumstances experienced the most dangerous fighting of his career. Captain Thompson, their fearless leader, went through the four years of war without a scratch, only to fall among the killed in the last charge at Appomattox. Private Kerfoot was twice wounded after his first injury at Manassas, receiving a wound in the arm near Milford Station, Va., and being shot twice and carried off the field for dead at the battle of Five Forks. He was carried to the hospital at Lynchburg, where he lay until three months after the surrender. On his return home he began the study of medicine with his father, a well-known physician, at the same time doing farm work to earn money for a professional course at the university of Virginia, where he was graduated in 1868. He subsequently studied and was graduated at Bellevue college, New York, and served eighteen months in the hospital attached to that institution. He afterward practiced his profession about twelve years in Fauquier county, removing then to his old home in Clarke county, where he has since resided and continued with marked success in his professional work. In 1874 he was married to Miss Minnie Hunton Moss, daughter of Alfred Moss, for several years clerk of Fairfax county, and they have seven sons living.

John P. Kevill, of Norfolk, who has the distinction of having served the State of Virginia, during and since the war of the Confederacy, twenty-eight years in the artillery organizations, was born at Charlestown, Mass., October 5, 1844. Going to Norfolk when a boy, in the company of his uncle, he was employed as a clerk

in the store of the latter until he entered the Confederate service in the spring of 1861. As a private in the United Artillery, organized at Norfolk several days before the burning of the navy yard, he assisted in the capture of the powder magazine at Fort Norfolk, April 19th, and was subsequently stationed at that place with his company, which was furnished muskets, also given charge of four light guns, and later supplied with a battery of heavy guns, becoming thoroughly drilled as infantry as well as light and heavy artillery. When the old man-of-war Merrimac had been refitted as the Virginia and was ready for action, she lacked thirty-one men of her fighting complement, and the United Artillery was called on for volunteers. The entire hundred men stepped forward for duty, but, on account of his youth, he was among the rejected. Subsequently, however, on April 11th, he was on board the Virginia with two gun crews from his company, when the ironclad went down to the Federal position to capture the Monitor. But though they cut out two brigs and a schooner loaded with provisions from the Federal fleet, they were unable to provoke the Monitor to come out and give battle, and returned disappointed. During the evacuation of Norfolk his company was ordered to take charge of a heavy battery at the intrenched camp, and thence proceeded to Petersburg, where they were on duty ten days at Dunn's Hill. Being ordered to Richmond, they reported to Colonel Rhett, commanding the defenses of the city. Being assigned to two redoubts, one on each side of the Virginia Central railroad, they soon had their position ready for defense, and held it until after the Seven Days' battles. During the interval between the battle of Seven Pines and the Chickahominy campaign, a portion of the company operated a heavy gun on a flat car, protected by railroad iron, and advanced with the line of battle. After this they occupied Battery Eight, in front of Richmond, under the command of Major Atkinson, in accordance with the wishes of Gen. R. E. Lee, who considered the company one of the best artillery organizations in the army. They were ordered to report to Capt. S. S. Lee and were assigned to Maj. Frank Smith's battalion, Nineteenth Virginia artillery, as Company A, stationed at Drewry's bluff. They remained at the latter important post until the summer of 1864, frequently being called on for volunteer service in various expeditions. There they took part in the battle of May 16, 1864, against Butler, and when that Federal general was bottled up at Bermuda Hundred, the United Artillery was given charge of Battery Dantzer, on the Howlett House line, and later was moved to Battery Wood, in front of Dutch Gap, where they were engaged in a continuous shelling of Butler's canal enterprise, and were themselves under heavy fire. Upon the evacuation of Richmond the United Artillery was attached to General Ewell's corps and participated in the battle of Sailor's Creek. With the surrender at Appomattox Court House, Private Kevill ended a faithful and gallant service of nearly four years, during which he had been promoted to the rank of acting quartermaster-sergeant. Since the war he has served many years in the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, Battery B, First battalion, Virginia artillery, of which he is now first lieutenant, and has maintained his touch with old Confederate comrades by membership, since its organiza-

tion, in the Virginia division of the army of Northern Virginia society. He is also a comrade of Pickett-Buchanan camp, Confederate Veterans. For twenty-seven years he has been connected with the Norfolk office of the Old Dominion steamship company. He has served the city as president of the board of fire commissioners. Mr. Kevill was married October 3, 1883, to Hatton Shields, daughter of Henry G. Thomas, who was connected with the United States and Confederate navies, and they have three children: John Thomas, William Clifford, and George Folsom.

Captain Thomas Kevill, of Norfolk, distinguished in the artillery service in Virginia, is a native of Sligo, Ireland, born April 5, 1826. He emigrated to Canada when a lad, was educated at Lowell, Mass., received his business training at Boston, and in 1848 became a citizen of Norfolk, where he soon became proprietor of the clothing establishment which he first entered as a clerk, and conducted this enterprise successfully until the outbreak of the war. During his residence at Norfolk he had been prominent in the fire department, attaining the rank of captain, and when the Virginia troops were called out, he closed his business and organized the United Artillery, mainly composed of the brave Norfolk firemen. The command was recognized as one of the finest in the service, and its members were in frequent demand for hazardous service, for which it is due them to say they volunteered with great readiness. In command of this battery Captain Kevill was first assigned to duty in capturing the government magazine at Fort Norfolk, where he erected a battery, of which he was in command when the Virginia was ready for action. The crew of the ironclad being short thirty-one men, Captain Kevill was applied to for volunteers. His entire company tendered their services as soon as they were assured that he would command them, and he selected the requisite number from the ranks. During the famous battle of the Virginia with the Cumberland and Congress on March 8, 1862, and with the Monitor on the following day, he commanded one of the nine-inch broadside guns of the Virginia, and served in the same capacity in the next trip of the ironclad to Hampton Roads, when the Monitor declined to risk another encounter. Upon the evacuation of Norfolk in May, 1862, Captain Kevill and his company were ordered to Dunn's Hill and thence reported to Colonel Rhett, at Richmond. General Lee, stating that he understood Kevill's was one of the best artillery companies in the service, recommended that it be stationed at the important post of Drewry's Bluff. The company was assigned to two two-gun batteries on the Virginia Central railroad during the Seven Days' battles, and a detachment under Lieut. James E. Barry operated a gun upon an ironclad flat-car, which was an interesting feature of the campaign. Captain Kevill was subsequently assigned to the battalion of Maj. Frank Smith, at Drewry's bluff, and remained there in command of his company until May 16, 1864, when he and his men fought as infantry in the battle of that day. He subsequently served in command of Battery Dantzler, near the Howlett House, and at Battery Wood, where he was for a long time constantly engaged in shelling Butler's Dutch Gap canal. Upon the evacuation of Richmond he marched with General Ewell's corps, and took part in the battle of Sailor's Creek, and finally was sur-

rendered and paroled with the remnant of his company at Appomattox. Then returning to his Norfolk home, he resumed his former business, continuing in trade until 1892, when he retired from business life. Soon after his return he was appointed chief of the fire department, and held that position during a quarter of a century. He will be long remembered at Norfolk for his able administration of this department of the public service. Captain Kevill is a member of the Pickett-Buchanan camp, Confederate Veterans. On July 4, 1850, he was happily married to Augustine Lavina Shield.

Charles E. Kirkham, of Petersburg, a veteran of Mahone's brigade of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Petersburg in 1843. His father, George W. Kirkham, was the proprietor of the rope walk at that city prior to 1861, and, subsequently selling the works to the Confederate government, was retained as superintendent in the government service until his death in 1864. Mr. Kirkham, in July, 1861, being about eighteen years of age, enlisted in Company A of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry, and with his company served at Norfolk until the evacuation of that point in the spring of 1862. Then being transferred to the peninsula, he participated in the battles of Seven Pines and the subsequent engagements with McClellan's army until the battle of Frayser's Farm, when he received a severe wound, which disabled him from active service for many months. During a part of this time he was employed in the rope factory under his father. He rejoined his command on the morning before the fight at Bristoe Station in the fall of 1863, in which he participated, as well as in the battle of Mine Run. During the bloody campaign of 1864 he was identified with the record of Mahone's brigade in the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House. During the fight at the "bloody angle," he was again severely wounded and was subsequently for some time in hospital at Richmond. He rejoined his command in October, 1864, and participated in the battles of Burgess' Mill and Hatcher's Run, served with the brigade on the Bermuda Hundred lines before Petersburg, and finally joined in the retreat to Appomattox, where he was surrendered with the army. Since that memorable April day of 1865 he has been actively engaged in the pursuits of business life at Petersburg, and since 1882 has conducted a prosperous business as a florist. He is a faithful comrade to the veterans of the army, and maintains a membership in the A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1882 he was married to Martha, daughter of Edward Fenn, a prominent contractor of Petersburg.

Major Thomas Jellis Kirkpatrick, of Lynchburg, Va., a distinguished artillery officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Cumberland county, July 31, 1829. At the age of seventeen he made his home at Lynchburg, and subsequently attended the Washington-Lee college, obtaining as a part of his education, a military training and proficiency in the artillery service. In 1861 he organized a company of artillery, thereafter known as Kirkpatrick's battery, or the Amherst Artillery, and was commissioned captain in September, 1861. This rank he held until January, 1865, when he was promoted major, and assigned to the command of Nelson's battalion, of which his battery was the senior com-

pany. With his battery he had his first experience in battle during the Peninsular campaign, participating in the fighting on the retreat from Yorktown, and in the Seven Days' battles which followed the accession of Lee to the command of the army. Subsequently he took part in all the battles of the Maryland campaign doing effective work at Sharpsburg, and also being engaged with the enemy on the following day at Harper's Ferry, where he was detailed to organize the artillery captured by General Jackson. Four battle names follow in his record that will be forever famous as gigantic and desperate struggles—Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and Spottsylvania Court House, in all of which he was a gallant participant. Then the struggle was renewed before Richmond, and he fought with the victorious Confederates at Cold Harbor. Immediately thereafter he went with his battalion, attached to the Second corps, under command of General Early, to the Shenandoah valley, where they drove out Hunter, and then, crossing the Potomac, marched through Maryland participating in the battle of Monocacy, where the battery was hotly engaged and lost two of its lieutenants, and moving on the outworks of Washington and joining in the demonstration against the Federal capital, which included some brisk fighting. Then returning to the valley, he was engaged at Stevenson's depot, July 19, 1864, where the battery suffered severely, losing its four guns, and two lieutenants. Here Captain Kirkpatrick's horse was killed under him. Given another battery of guns, he rendered important service in the action of August 17th, near Winchester, when Early overwhelmed Torbert's division, and drove it from Winchester. In this fight, which Gen. R. E. Lee pronounced one of the most brilliant small battles of the war, Kirkpatrick's battery was hotly engaged all day long, and the captain was wounded, but not seriously. He continued in the campaign in the valley, fighting at Strasburg, and at Waynesboro, and in the spring of 1865, after the surrender of General Lee, started with a force to join General Johnston, but disbanded at Pittsylvania when assured that further action was in vain. From this long and dangerous service he escaped without injury except the wound at Winchester and another, not serious, received at Spottsylvania. Returning to Lynchburg, he resumed the practice of law, in which he had been engaged from his admission to the bar in 1849, to 1861, and though the oath of allegiance was then required, concluded not to take it. During the following years he again became prominent in civil affairs. During four years he sat in the State senate for his district, and was an influential member of that body.

Lieutenant Robert T. Knox, of Fredericksburg, Va., was born in that city July 24, 1837, and was one of six brothers who participated in the military operations of the Confederacy. The father of this patriotic family was Thomas Fitzhugh Knox, a native of Culpeper county, who conducted a large flouring mill and mercantile business at Fredericksburg before the war. He was married in 1832 to Virginia Soutter, daughter of Robert Soutter, a native of Dundee, Scotland, who was prominent as a merchant at Norfolk. She died June 19, 1886, her husband June 24, 1890. Of their fourteen children, seven are yet living. Six of the eleven sons served in the Confederate army—Robert T., James S.,

Thomas S., Samuel G., Alexander B., and Douglas H. All went through the war without injury except Alexander, who was wounded at Dinwiddie Court House, and died from the effects of the injury soon after the close of the war. Robert T. Knox was educated at Hanson's academy at Fredericksburg, and the Episcopal high school at Alexandria, and then found employment as a bookkeeper. He was a member of the company organized at Fredericksburg, under Capt. William S. Barton, at the time of the John Brown affair in 1859, and he still treasures among his relics a piece of the scaffold upon which Brown expiated his attempt at insurrection, and recalls the singular circumstance that the first victim of the foolhardy scheme in behalf of the colored people was the shooting by Brown's men of a negro servant of Colonel Beckham, who ran to warn his master of the invasion. With his company, Mr. Knox was mustered into active service April 19, 1861, and was sent to Aquia creek, where the company was assigned to the Thirtieth Virginia infantry, of which he was appointed sergeant-major. At the reorganization, in 1862, he was elected second lieutenant of Company C, and during the last fourteen months of the war he commanded the company in the absence on detail of Capt. C. Wister Wallace. He was identified throughout the war with the record of Corse's brigade of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, and was on duty in the battles of First Manassas, Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Frayser's Farm, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, First and Second Cold Harbor, Gaines' Mill, Drewry's Bluff, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. In the latter disaster he was captured and subsequently was imprisoned at Johnson's island until June, 1865. He is now the senior member of the firm of Robert T. Knox & Brother, of Fredericksburg, one of the leading business houses of the city. He has also held the office of city treasurer since 1890. On November 10, 1868, he was married to Miss Mary G. Brockenbrough, daughter of Col. Moore F. Brockenbrough, of the war of 1812, and sister of Col. John M. Brockenbrough, who commanded a brigade in the opening fight of the battle of Gettysburg. Three children of Lieutenant Knox are living: Robert S., Austina B. and William U. Capt. James S. Knox, another son of Thomas Fitzhugh Knox, who was in the Confederate service, was born at Fredericksburg, February 2, 1842. He was educated at Hanson's academy and the Episcopal high school at Alexandria, and two days before the passage of the ordinance of secession of Virginia, enlisted in the volunteer company which was subsequently assigned as Company B to the Thirtieth regiment Virginia infantry. He served in the rank of orderly-sergeant until the reorganization, when he was elected first lieutenant of Company B, and when Capt. Hugh S. Doggett was disabled by wounds received at Sharpsburg, he took command of the company. He received the commission of captain early in 1865. Captain Knox was one of the first to leave Fredericksburg for the Confederate service, and one of the last to return home. He was in all the battles of the Thirtieth regiment from the beginning of the war, and his service was closed at the disaster to Ewell's corps at Sailor's Creek. After his capture in this battle he was imprisoned at Johnson's island, Ohio, until June, 1865.

Since the war he has been active in the comradeship of Maury camp, Confederate Veterans, at Fredericksburg, in which he has held the rank of lieutenant-commander. He has served twenty years in the city council, and is prominent in business as a member of the firm of Robert T. Knox & Brother, managing several important enterprises. He is the owner of one of the most interesting relics of the war, which has been frequently illustrated, a disc of lead formed by the impact in midair of a Confederate and a Federal bullet.

Gottfried Krieg, of Washington, D. C., was born in Germany in 1832, and at the age of twenty years immigrated to America, making his home at first in the State of New York. Subsequently he removed to Alexandria, Va., and during his residence there before the war, became thoroughly identified with the State and in sympathy with the sentiments of its citizens. When the State determined to cast its lot with the Confederacy he promptly enlisted for its defense, becoming a private of infantry in Company E of the Seventeenth regiment of volunteers. With this command he served in the hard fought battle and decisive victory at Manassas, in 1861, and subsequently in the Peninsular campaign of 1862, at Williamsburg and Seven Pines, besides a number of skirmishes at various dates. At the battle of Seven Pines he received two wounds of such severity that he was incapacitated for further service, and was honorably discharged. Being removed to the hospital at Richmond he lay there for six months, and on leaving there in a convalescent condition he attempted to return to duty in the guard service at the capital, but after two weeks' effort was compelled by his physical condition to abandon the hope of further service in the army. At the close of the war he returned to his old home at Alexandria, and subsequently removed to Washington, where he has been quite successfully engaged as an upholsterer and as proprietor of Krieg's express. He is a member of the camp of Confederate Veterans, and is highly esteemed by his comrades.

William Sterling Lacy, D. D., a well-known minister of the Presbyterian church, during the past decade stationed at Norfolk, Va., is a member of a family distinguished in the divine calling. His grandfather, Rev. Drury Lacy, of whom there are twenty descendants in the Presbyterian ministry, was a son of William Lacy, a Virginia planter, and a descendant of Normans who settled in the north of Ireland in the service of William the Conqueror. Drury Lacy, born in Chesterfield county, October 5, 1758, was an instructor for many years in Hampden-Sidney college, subsequently vice-president and, after the resignation of President Smith, in 1788, acting president until 1796, when he retired to his plantation known as Mt. Ararat; was the clerk for many years of Hanover Presbytery and repeatedly a delegate to the general assembly of the Presbyterian church, and moderator of that body in 1809. An accident in youth, due to the explosion of a gun, destroyed his left hand and required the protection of his wrist by a silver cup, on account of which, and because he possessed a voice singularly sweet and sonorous, he was frequently referred to as "Lacy, with the silver hand and silver voice." He died in 1815, and was interred in the grounds of the Second Presbyterian church

of Philadelphia. His son, Rev. Drury Lacy, A. M., D. D., was born in Prince Edward county, August 3, 1802, was a graduate of Hampden-Sidney college, pastor of the Presbyterian church at New Bern, N. C., 1833-1837, pastor of the First Presbyterian church of Raleigh, N. C., 1837-1855; president of Davidson college, 1855-1861; served as chaplain in the Confederate service, 1862-1865; and died at the residence of his son, William Sterling, at Jonesboro, N. C., in 1884. One of his sisters married Rev. Samuel Davies Hoge, son of Rev. Moses Hoge, D. D., president of Hampden-Sidney college, and the father of Rev. Moses Drury Hoge, D. D., LL.D., of Richmond, Va. The mother of Dr. Wm. Sterling Lacy was Williana, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Smith) Wilkinson, was related to the Hawes family of Richmond and to the Rev. B. M. Smith, D. D., professor in the Union theological seminary at Hampden-Sidney. William Sterling Lacy was born at Raleigh, N. C., March 25, 1842. At thirteen years of age, when his father became president of Davidson college, he entered that institution as a student and was graduated in 1859, after which he studied in preparation for the ministry at the Union theological seminary, Virginia. When the Virginia troops were called out in 1861 he was anxious to enlist, but his father opposed such a step until after the fall of Fort Donelson, when he gave his assent, and young Lacy became a member of the Rockbridge artillery, in February, 1862. Early in April he and a comrade, George H. Gilmer, a son of Governor Gilmer, of Virginia who had been a fellow student, were summoned to Gen. Stonewall Jackson's headquarters and were granted by him a sixteen days' furlough to obtain their ministerial licenses, after which they rejoined the command just before the battle of McDowell. Here he was transferred to the Danville battery, under Captain Wooding, and with this command he participated in all the actions of the memorable Valley campaign of Gen. Stonewall Jackson from McDowell to Port Republic. During the Seven Days' fight before Richmond he was on duty at Ashland in the signal service, but later in the summer was again with the Rockbridge artillery, and participated in the engagements of Cedar Run, Second Manassas, Ox Hill, Chantilly, and afterward took part in the Maryland campaign of 1862, fighting at Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg. During the latter memorable battle his command was ordered to draw the fire of the enemy during an important infantry movement, and was soon the object of a storm of shot and shell, and here he was in extreme peril, the horse on which he was leaning during a pause in firing being killed by a solid shot. His exposure and hard service in this campaign brought on an attack of rheumatism and lumbago, and he was sent back to the hospital. Thence he was subsequently detailed as assistant chaplain to Rev. Dr. Hoge at Camp Lee, and, after other service of this nature, was commissioned chaplain of the Forty-seventh North Carolina regiment, in August, 1863, with which he served throughout the remainder of the war. Then, returning to North Carolina, he taught at Raleigh until 1868, and, being ordained in 1869, served as pastor of Anchor-of-Hope and Cove churches, Wythe county, Va., 1869-1873; of Bufalo and Euphronia churches, Moore county, N. C., 1873-1888; was assistant editor of Davidson college semi-centennial catalogue, and,

since 1888, has been pastor of the Second Presbyterian church of Norfolk. He is a trustee of the Assembly's home and school at Fredericksburg, director of the Union theological seminary; was trustee of Davidson college 1876-1888; stated clerk of the North Carolina synod 1878-1886; clerk of the presbytery of Abingdon 1869-1873 and of the presbytery of Norfolk 1893-1898. With loyalty to his former comrades he maintains a membership in Pickett-Buchanan camp U. C. V. In the field of general literature he has been a frequent contributor to periodicals, in prose and verse, has composed a number of pieces of sacred music, and has delivered several lectures on literary and philosophical subjects. Dr. Lacy was married October 10, 1888, to Mary C. Shepherd, of Gulf, N. C., daughter of a Confederate soldier who died in service.

Captain John Lamb, of Richmond, was born June 12, 1840, in Sussex county, where his father, Lycurgus A. Lamb, a man of broad culture, was at that time engaged in teaching. The family returned to their home in Charles county five years later, and there the father died in 1855, leaving the children dependent upon their mother, a woman of high intellectual attainments, who had assisted her husband in his school work, and continued the educational work after his death. She was Ann Elizabeth Christian, daughter of Rev. James H. Christian, and was descended from a prominent family which includes among its ancestors Capt. Joseph Christian, a soldier of the revolution who greatly distinguished himself in the assault on Stony Point, under Gen. Anthony Wayne, in 1776. An orphan at an early age, young Lamb abandoned his academical studies and worked manfully for the support of the family, devoting his nights to the study of the science of civil engineering. This work was terminated in 1861 by the call of the State for troops, when he went to the front, in May, in the Charles City Troop, which had been organized in 1858, and of which he had been a member since 1859. The command was mustered in as Company D of the Third Virginia cavalry, with Mr. Lamb as first sergeant. Within the following year he was promoted second lieutenant and captain, serving in the latter rank throughout the remainder of the struggle. His service was distinguished by gallantry and a devotion to duty which is one of the most conspicuous points of his character. The list of engagements in which he participated includes the names of Big Bethel, the Seven Days' battles, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Chancellorsville, General Stuart's raid through Maryland and Pennsylvania, with numerous skirmishes, in one of which he was wounded in the head, the last day's fight at Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, where he received another gunshot wound in the head; Hawe's Shop, where he was seriously wounded in the thigh; Yellow Tavern, Mechanicsville, Cedar Creek, Sailor's Creek, and Appomattox. During an action at Harper's Ferry in 1863 he was captured, but was exchanged a week later. After laying down his arms at Appomattox Captain Lamb returned to his home in Charles City county, and became engaged as a farmer. But his distinguished military services and the ability he at once displayed in civil life, soon led to his being called to serve in an official capacity. He was first elected sheriff of the county, and subsequently treasurer and surveyor. He also acted for some time as chairman of the Democratic central com-

mittee. During the past decade he has been a resident of Henrico county, where he has also been a prominent and influential citizen, and as a public speaker has taken an active part in political affairs. In August, 1896, he was nominated by his party as their candidate for representative in Congress for the Third district, and was elected after an exciting campaign. He was re-elected in 1898. The wife of Captain Lamb is a daughter of the late Rev. Anderson Wade, of Charles City county, who was the rector of Westover and Napsieco parishes for twenty-five years.

Colonel William Lamb, of Norfolk, the "hero of Fort Fisher," was born at that city, September 7, 1835. In youth he was under the instruction of General Mahone at the Rappahannock military academy, in mathematics and tactics, and in 1855 he was graduated in law at William and Mary college, delivering the valedictory address. In the following January he became editor of the Daily Southern Argus, of Norfolk, an influential democratic journal, and began an active career in politics as alternate delegate to the national convention which nominated Mr. Buchanan and as assistant elector. He was a candidate for mayor in the same year and, though defeated, caused the election of councils which introduced the modern public school system. In 1860 he was the only presidential elector successful on the Breckinridge ticket, but, on account of his illness the electors at their meeting cast the State's full vote for Bell and Everett. In 1858 he became captain of the Woodis Riflemen, one of the crack companies of Norfolk, which served at Harper's Ferry in 1859, and was first on duty in 1861 on March 7th, guarding the streets of Norfolk that night. He was called out with his company, April 18th, and was soon afterward sent to Ocean View, part of the company serving under Captain Lamb in the defense of Sewell's Point in May, when his conduct was highly complimented by Captain Colquitt. He was authorized to organize a battalion, of which his company should be part, and he raised two companies accordingly in Princess Anne and Norfolk counties, but his organizations were assigned to the Sixth regiment. Colonel Lamb thereupon resigned and accepted from the governor of North Carolina a commission as colonel of State troops. He was first assigned to the staff of Gen. Joseph R. Anderson and, when the Thirty-sixth North Carolina regiment of Second artillery was organized he became its commander. On July 4, 1862, he assumed command of Fort Fisher, then an inconsiderable earthwork, which he developed into a large and powerful fort, the key to the Cape Fear river defenses and Wilmington, the great importing depot of the South. Here he was in command for two years and a half, maintaining a gateway between the Confederate States and the outside world, until all other channels had been closed. In December, 1864, he and his North Carolinians in garrison were assailed by the most powerful fleet ever assembled in the western world. A ship containing two hundred and fifty tons of powder was exploded near the fort, December 23, and, during the next two days Porter's fleet kept up a terrific bombardment, notwithstanding all which, the gallant defenders repulsed the attack of the land forces under Butler. On January 12, 1865, another attack was begun in which the six hundred guns afloat were aided by Terry's division of eight or ten thousand infantry. Lamb had less than

two thousand men and forty-four guns. After three days and nights of incessant bombardment the assault was made, in which the enemy lost almost as many as the garrison numbered. The columns of Federal marines were driven back with heavy loss, but meanwhile other columns of the enemy gained a foothold in the fort, and after a bloody and desperate struggle, the remnant of the garrison, driven out upon the peninsula, surrendered at 10 o'clock at night. As General Whiting reported, the gallant resistance of Fort Fisher was entirely due to the "untiring energy, dauntless resolution and brilliant courage of Colonel Lamb, devotedly supported by his men." He was desperately wounded, so that he was upon crutches for seven years afterward. While he was a prisoner, his promotion to brigadier-general of artillery was approved by General Lee. After the war he became a merchant and devoted a fortune to the founding of the present importance of Norfolk as an exporting point for cotton. He was a delegate to the Democratic national convention of 1876, in 1877 was at the head of the Conservative State campaign, in 1880 was an elector on the Hancock ticket, in 1881 supported Governor Cameron, and subsequently has been a prominent leader of the Republican party, becoming the head of the organization, and leading the electoral ticket in 1888. He has declined all official honors save that of mayor of Norfolk, to which he was elected in 1880, 1882 and 1884.

Joseph Benjamin Lambert, of Richmond, who has a gallant record as a member of the First Richmond Howitzers in the service of the Confederate States, is a native of that city, born in 1836. In his sixteenth year, in the month of October, 1861, he enlisted in the Howitzers and served faithfully and efficiently until he received severe wounds in the right arm in the battle of Cold Harbor, in 1864, which put an end to his participation in the war. In the list of encounters with the enemy, in which he took part, are the famous names of Leesburg, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm, Savage Station, Malvern Hill, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and the Wilderness. After receiving the injuries in battle which have been mentioned, he returned to Richmond, and, when recovered went to New Orleans, where he was engaged until 1874 in the office of the New Orleans Crescent newspaper. Then returning to Richmond, he embarked in the cigar and tobacco retail trade, in which he is yet occupied.

Captain Levin Winder Lane, of Williamsburg, a veteran of Rosser's cavalry, was born in Matthews county, Va., January 6, 1839, the son of John H. and Ann (Ransom) Lane. He was reared upon the home farm, on the shore of Chesapeake bay, and educated at Matthews academy. In 1859 he began farming for himself in James City county, and in 1860, married Miss Mattie Spenser. He became a member of the James City cavalry in April, 1861, first as a private, and the command was assigned as Company H to the Fifth Virginia cavalry regiment, Col. Thomas H. Rosser commanding. Upon the reorganization he was elected a lieutenant, and, in 1863, he was promoted captain. He participated in all the many engagements and campaigns of his regiment and commanded his company in the important battles of the Wilderness, Yellow Tavern, Trevilian's, Winchester and Cedar Creek, besides many cavalry affairs of less note. He was captured at Hanover Court House in May,

1863, but was immediately paroled; was wounded in the fight at Kelly's Ford, and at Cedar Creek received a severe wound which put an effectual stop to his military career and crippled him for the remainder of life. He retained his rank as captain until the close of the war, no successor being elected. When sufficiently recovered to do business, he acted two years as deputy sheriff of his county and, being elected sheriff in 1869, served one term in that office. In 1871 he was elected treasurer of James City and of the city of Williamsburg, and such was his ability and the esteem of the community for the gallant Confederate, that he was retained in office by successive re-elections until 1886, when he declined further election. Since then he has conducted a mercantile establishment in the city of Williamsburg, on the site of the old Raleigh Tavern, where the house of burgesses met after the body had been dissolved by Governor Dunmore at the old capitol in Williamsburg. He has also been engaged in farming since the war and is the owner of several profitable farms in the county. He is a member of Magruder-Ewell camp, United Confederate Veterans. Captain Lane has seven children living: Levin W. Jr., his business partner; Lucy, wife of Edwin T. Lamb, of Norfolk; Carrie D., wife of H. D. Cole, of Williamsburg; Mary Garnett, wife of B. D. Peachy; Oscar; Spenser, a cadet at the Virginia military institute, and Walter Gardner.

Maurice D. Langhorne, of Pulaski county, a member of a patriotic Virginia family, was born in Roanoke county in August, 1847. He removed to Montgomery county in 1858, and thence entered the Virginia military institute in 1863. During his seventeenth year he participated in the famous campaign of the cadet corps at New Market, where they played an important part in winning a victory over the Federal troops and fought side by side and with equal distinction with veterans. He was subsequently in the reserve forces at Richmond during the fighting on the Cold Harbor line, and then, being sent back to the institute, reached there on the day before the college buildings were burned by Hunter's raiders. He served in the Confederate lines before Lynchburg when that town was threatened by Hunter, and afterward was a member of the cadet corps at Richmond when their time was divided between study and service on the lines. After the evacuation of Petersburg he, with other of his cadet comrades, formed a battery for the protection of Lynchburg, and, after the surrender at Appomattox, he attempted to join Johnston's army. Since the war he has been engaged in farming and in real estate agency. His brother, James H. Langhorne, adjutant of the Fourth Virginia regiment, Stonewall brigade, was wounded at First Manassas, and before completely recovered went into the fight at Kernstown, where he was again wounded and captured. After imprisonment at Fort Delaware and exchange, he died from the effect of his wounds. Another brother, J. Kent Langhorne, of the Second Virginia cavalry, was killed at Raccoon Ford, near Brandy Station.

Colonel Maurice Scaresbrook Langhorne, of Lynchburg, distinguished as an officer of the army of Northern Virginia during its earlier campaigns, is a member of an old and honorable Virginia family. His father, Maurice Langhorne, served as a lieutenant of the Cumberland troop in the war of 1812, and his grandfather,

William Langhorne, was a member of the house of burgesses. He was born in Cumberland county, March 27, 1823. Brought by his parents to Lynchburg, in December, 1827, he was reared and educated at that city, and, in 1840, entered business life as a clerk there in a dry goods establishment. Four years later he embarked on an independent business career as a manufacturer of tobacco, which he continued until the passage of the ordinance of secession. He was then a well-informed militia soldier and held the rank of captain of the Lynchburg Rifle Greys. With his command he immediately answered the call of the State, and the company was mustered in as Company A of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, on April 23, 1861. As captain of his company he participated in the action at Blackburn's Ford, July 18th, and in the battle of Manassas, July 21st. In September he was promoted major, and, as a compliment deserved by gallant service, was placed by Gen. J. E. B. Stuart in command of ten companies, including his own and details from other regiments, at Munson's Hill, overlooking Washington. In this position, on September 29, 1861, he sustained an attack by a three-fold preponderating force of Federals, and by fearless action and an effective use of the two pieces of artillery at hand, repulsed three assaults of the enemy. In November following he fought at Dranesville, and on May 5, 1862, participated in the battle of Williamsburg, in the Peninsular campaign. Promoted lieutenant-colonel, May 31st, he did gallant service at Seven Pines in command of his regiment, but fell severely wounded. Promotion to colonel promptly followed, but his injuries were of such a nature that it was impossible for him to return to the field and his career as a commander, with its promise of rapid and high advancement, was brought to a close. Determined, however, to do all that he could for the cause, he accepted as soon as he was partially recovered, in the winter of 1862-63, the command of the military post at Lynchburg and held this position until the following summer. Subsequently, being retired from active service by the medical board at Lynchburg, he was assigned to the department of reserves, under command of General Kemper, and remained upon that duty until toward the close of 1864. He was then transferred to the engineering department at Richmond, under General Gilmer, and served in that capacity in the defense of the city until its evacuation. Then returning to Lynchburg, by order of General Gilmer, he was paroled there in April, 1865, terminating a highly creditable and meritorious career in the service of the Confederate States. On returning to civil life at the close of the war, he was engaged, until 1867, as an insurance agent, and then returned to his original occupation, the manufacture of tobacco, which he carried on for six years, then retiring from business. Now, past the allotted three-score and ten, he watches with great interest the rehabilitation of his loved Virginia, and the promising efforts of the generation which has taken the burden from the shoulders of those who fought in the war of the Confederacy.

John W. Lash, of Portsmouth, a native of that city, was one of those patriots who enrolled themselves on the night of April 20, 1861, immediately following Governor Letcher's call for volunteers, and were organized in a company called the "Virginia Defenders," under Capt. E. T. Blamire. As Company C it was assigned to the

Sixteenth infantry regiment and, in June, 1862, after being started to the support of Jackson in the valley, was called back to Richmond to participate in the Seven Days' fighting against McClellan. At the battle of Malvern Hill he had in his pocket a picture of his boy baby, which his young wife had sent him, and this checked the course of a bullet so that he was not seriously hurt. Writing home, he asked that the child's name be changed to Malvern Hill, which was done. Mr. Lash continued to serve with his regiment, in Mahone's brigade, sharing the honors it gained at Crampton's Gap and many other fields throughout the war. He was for a great part of the time detached with the sharpshooters of the command. His son, Malvern Hill, above mentioned, now a prominent citizen of Newport News, was born at Cherry Grove, Nansemond county, June 13, 1862. He entered mercantile life at an early age, became a partner in a furniture house at Hampton, in 1886, and, since 1890, has been doing a very successful business in the same line at Newport News. On November 7, 1887, he was married to Flora C. Rauschert, and they have three children, Edward, Annie and Flora.

Major John W. Lawson, of Smithfield, Va., a soldier and surgeon of the army of Northern Virginia, and since the war a member of Congress from the Second district, was born in James City county, September 13, 1837, the son of James S. and Sallie (Hankins) Lawson. Dr. Lawson was reared at Williamsburg and educated at William and Mary college, after which he pursued medical studies in the university of Virginia and the university of New York, with graduation in March, 1861. Returning home, he immediately enlisted in the Confederate service as a private in the Williamsburg light artillery, under Capt. W. R. Garrett, and served in this capacity under General Magruder in the early operations on the peninsula, including the battle of Big Bethel. Later, in the army of General Johnston, he took part in the battles of Lee's Mill, Williamsburg and Seven Pines. After the latter battle he was transferred to the medical department as assistant surgeon and promotion to surgeon followed a few months later, with the rank of major. He was assigned to the Twelfth North Carolina regiment, commanded by Col. Henry Eaton Coleman, and was with this command throughout its many engagements, including the Seven Days' battles, Boonsboro, Sharpsburg, Falling Waters, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Hanover Junction, Cold Harbor, the Maryland campaign under Early, including the battle of Monocacy and the demonstration before Washington, and continued with his regiment during the long siege of Petersburg and the retreat to Appomattox, where he surrendered. His entire service was in the field, except when he was detailed by General Early to remain upon the battlefield of Winchester to care for the wounded, a work which occupied him three months. After the conclusion of hostilities he practiced medicine for sixteen years in the county of Isle of Wight and then retired from professional life to reside on his farm, "The Rocks," upon the James river. Since 1893 he has made his home at Smithfield. He has rendered distinguished service in public capacities, though not desirous of political honors and invariably declining re-election. Thus he served his county in the house of delegates

four continuous sessions and one term as senator from his district by election in 1873, and in 1883, was re-elected to the house of delegates. In 1890 he received the honor of election to Congress from the Second district and served one term in this capacity. He has twice served on the board of visitors of the agricultural and mechanical college of Virginia, and for many years occupied the same relation to the Virginia military institute and William and Mary college, of which institution he is now president of the board of visitors, also as the president of the Smithfield alliance company. January 30, 1877, he was married to Miss Margaret Norfleet Urquhart, of Southampton county, and they have six children.

Lieutenant James I. Lee, of Lynchburg, Va., a gallant cavalryman of the Second Virginia regiment, is a native of Tennessee, born in 1843. When he was two years old his parents removed to Lexington, Mo., where the father died in 1846, after which his mother brought him to Bedford county, Va., where he was reared and educated. Upon the first call to arms, in April, 1861, he enlisted in the service of the State as a private in Company F of the Second Virginia cavalry. His soldierly qualities were soon manifested and he received promotion in a few months to the grade of corporal, subsequently to orderly sergeant and finally to second lieutenant of Company F, which was his rank at the close of the war. As a daring and devoted cavalryman he participated in a host of encounters with the enemy, from Manassas to Appomattox. Most prominent among the engagements in which he served are the first and second battles at Manassas, Sharpsburg, all the fights on the Rappahannock river, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Brandy Station, the cavalry raids of General Stuart in Maryland and Pennsylvania, the Cold Harbor engagement of 1864, where he was wounded and two horses were killed under him successively; the actions about Richmond and Petersburg and the retreat to Appomattox, where he did not surrender, having escaped with the cavalry. He was paroled at Bedford City, Va., and then returned to civil life. In October, 1865, he removed to Lynchburg, where he has since resided and attained business distinction in the wholesale grocery trade. He is one of the popular and useful citizens, the estimation in which he is held by his fellow-citizens being evidenced by his election on four occasions to the city council.

John Lee, of Danville, a veteran artilleryman of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Maryland, September 12, 1832, the son of John and Ann (West) Lee. Coming to Virginia in boyhood, he followed the carpenter's trade in Fredericksburg and Richmond and was employed in planing mills at Georgetown and Culpeper until he enlisted at the latter place, April 17, 1861, as a private in the Culpeper Minute Men, an organization which was assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia regiment as Company B. With this command he took part in the battle of First Manassas, and, upon its disbandment in February, 1862, joined Sturdivant's battery, with which he served as a gunner until the close of the war. Among the principal battles in which he participated were those of the Seven Days' campaign, Cold Harbor, Stony Creek, the Crater and Sailor's Creek. He also took part in the siege of Suffolk and the long-continued fighting on the Petersburg lines. In 1864, on Pagan Creek, near Smithfield, he took part in the capture of a

Federal gunboat, with two pieces of artillery, and, on the previous day he was engaged in a lively fight four miles from there, in which he fired the first gun. During his experience in the Petersburg batteries there were many interesting incidents illustrating the life of an artilleryman. On one occasion he dropped a very successful shot upon a wood-pile, behind which were a number of sharpshooters intent on picking him off; on the same day with one gun he put out of action a four-gun Federal battery, blowing up its caisson; at another time he caused great havoc in a Federal line which permitted him to enfilade it at a distance of 200 yards. Since the war Mr. Lee has been engaged in the management of a planing mill at Danville, has served repeatedly as councilman, and is a valued member of Cabell-Graves camp. He was married in 1869 to Florence M. Jeffries, and they have six children.

Robert E. Lee, youngest son of Gen. R. E. Lee, was, at the time of the secession of Virginia and the appointment of his father as commander of the military forces of the State, a student in the university of Virginia. He at once asked permission to enter the army, but, in a letter of April, 1861, to his wife, General Lee said: "I wrote to Robert that I could not consent to take boys from their schools and young men from their colleges and put them in the ranks at the beginning of the war, when they are not needed. The war may last ten years. Where are our ranks to be filled from then?" From the same correspondence it appears that, in July, "Rob" was made captain of Company A of the university, and the general had sent him one of his own swords. Early in 1862 the young man, then eighteen years of age, made up his mind to leave the university and enter the army. The general did not encourage him in this. "I told him," he wrote, "of the exemption granted by the secretary of war to the professors and students of the university, but he expressed no desire to take advantage of it. As I have done all in the matter that seems proper, I must now leave the rest in the hands of our merciful God. I hope our son will make a good soldier." He enlisted as a private in the Rockbridge artillery after the battle of Kernstown and was soon in the thickest of the fight. Just after the battle of Sharpsburg the general wrote to Mrs. Lee: "I have not set eyes on 'Rob' since I saw him in the battle of Sharpsburg, going in with a single gun of his battery, for the second time, after his company had been withdrawn in consequence of three of its guns having been disabled." In December, 1862, he was appointed aide-de-camp on the staff of his elder brother, Gen. W. H. F. Lee, and about the same time was appointed a cadet in the Confederate States army by President Davis. He continued in the service until the close of the war and participated in all the battles of the army of Northern Virginia under General Lee, except Gettysburg and Appomattox. He was wounded in the body at Spottsylvania Court House, and again in a fight with Hancock on the north side of the James river. After the close of hostilities he was engaged in farming at White House from May to December, 1865, and in the following year took possession of his farm in King William county, where he remained until 1892, when he made his residence at Washington, D. C., and engaged in business.

Willis J. Lee, a citizen of Nansemond, who gave four years of his youth to the service of the Confederate States as a soldier of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in the county where he now resides, January 12, 1846. His father, P. H. Lee, a native of Virginia, was engaged in dealing in naval stores in Georgia before the war, and, at the outbreak of the conflict between the North and South, entered the Confederate service as captain of Company I of the Thirteenth Virginia regiment. He continued to hold this rank until he was compelled to retire on account of a severe injury to his foot, which disabled him for further service. Since then he has given his attention to farming and the commission business at Norfolk. Though Willis J. Lee was but fifteen years of age when his State united with the Confederacy and was invaded by the Federal forces, he enlisted, in 1861, and, during the four years which followed proved himself a thorough soldier, enduring great fatigues and hardships and manifesting the courage of a hero on many bloody fields. He became a private in the company commanded by his father, and served in the ranks until the close of the war, participating in all the engagements of his regiment from the Peninsula to Gettysburg, and from the Wilderness to Appomattox. Finally being paroled when the army of Northern Virginia laid down its arms, he returned to his home to begin the duties of civil life, having achieved the honors of a veteran at the age of nineteen years. For two years he was engaged in the production of turpentine and naval stores in Georgia, after which he returned to Nansemond county, and, purchasing land, began his career as a farmer, in which he has been notably successful. It is pleasing to note that he has now one of the handsomest residences in his region, delightfully located upon a farm of three hundred and fifty acres on Hampton Roads, at the mouth of the Nansemond river, with conveniences for shipping his products to the great markets. He is also a director of the Farmer's bank of Nansemond, is a member of the Christian church, and is a comrade of Tom Smith camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Suffolk. Soon after the war he was happily married to Mary J., daughter of William H. Jones.

Hezekiah Gilbert Leigh, M. D., since 1857 a prominent physician of Petersburg, Va., except during the period in which he served as a surgeon in the Confederate army, was born in Mecklenburg county, March 12, 1833. His family, of English descent, has long been resident in the South, first settling in eastern Virginia and thence removing to North Carolina. In the latter State his great-grandparents, Gilbert and Elizabeth Leigh, were born. Their son, Richard Leigh, born in Perquimans county, 1773, died in 1833, married Charlotte Spruill. Their oldest son, Rev. Hezekiah G. Leigh, D. D., father of Dr. Leigh, was born in 1795. He gave his life to the service of the Methodist church, and being a man of splendid physique and high scholarly attainments, and gifted with a remarkable power of eloquence, he became one of the most distinguished and widely known ministers of his period. He also is entitled to honorable fame as the founder of the celebrated Randolph-Macon college. He died in 1853, leaving surviving him his wife, Mary Jane, the daughter of Col. Richard Crump, of Northampton, N. C., and six children: Richard Watson, a gallant Confederate

soldier, who served as lieutenant-colonel of the Forty-third Mississippi regiment, until he fell while gallantly leading his wing of the regiment in the charge upon the Federal lines at Corinth, October 22, 1862; Hezekiah Gilbert; Louise C., who married Judge J. B. Sale, of Mississippi, in 1859, and died in 1864; Joseph Edward, who became a prominent attorney of Columbus, Miss., and died November 7, 1891; Mary Alice, who married James Craddock, of Columbus, Miss.; and Frank M., now a commission merchant at Columbus, Miss. Dr. Leigh was educated at Randolph-Macon college, and after his graduation, devoted two years to the duties of assistant professor of languages at his alma mater, subsequently holding a professorship for a short time in a female college at Aberdeen, Miss. He then began preparation for the medical profession, and, after graduation by the New York medical college, in 1856, and a period of service as assistant physician at Randall's island hospital, he made his home at Petersburg. During about three years of the war of the Confederacy he held the rank of surgeon in the Confederate service. He was assigned to the Sixth Louisiana regiment, Hay's brigade, Jackson's division, in June, 1862, and he continued in active duty in the field until January, 1864, when, after being disabled by an attack of fever, he was detailed in charge of the principal hospital at Raleigh, N. C., where he remained until the close of hostilities. Since then he has devoted himself, without interruption, to his professional work at Petersburg. In 1870 he was appointed coroner at that city by Governor Walker, a position he has held for twenty-seven years. He is a member of the American, State and local medical associations, and has made valuable contributions to medical literature. In surgery particularly he has attracted attention by his skill and success. In 1859 Dr. Leigh was married to Martha Alice, daughter of Colonel Moody, of Northampton, N. C. Her father was prominent as a member of the North Carolina legislature and the secession convention of 1861, and belongs to one of the oldest families in the State, the land-grants made to her ancestors, by George II., being now in the possession of Mrs. Leigh. Four children of Dr. Leigh are living: Mary E., wife of John Willis Hayes, of the United States geological survey; John H. P., of Weldon, N. C., whose wife is a granddaughter of the late Hon. Nathaniel Macon, United States senator from North Carolina; Martha W., wife of James D. Mason, son of Joseph T. Mason, former consul at Dresden; and Hezekiah G. Jr., a graduate of the medical department of the university of Virginia and the Bellevue medical college of New York, and now a practicing physician at Petersburg.

John H. Lewis, a prominent attorney of Lynchburg, Va., and a native of that city, born in 1841, abandoned his law studies in the university of Virginia, in April, 1861, to enter the active military service of the State as a member of the Southern Guards. This organization, formed of students at the university, was soon afterward disbanded on account of the draft made upon it, by General Lee, of men to promote to rank in the army, and he enlisted as a private in Company G of the Eleventh Virginia regiment of infantry. He served with this regiment from May, 1861, to May, 1862, when he was transferred to the artillery and was commissioned lieutenant of Company D of the Twentieth battalion of artillery, where

the remainder of his service was rendered. He participated in the battles of First Manassas and Dranesville, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, the action at Drewry's Bluff, in 1862, where he was wounded, the fight with Dahlgren's raiders when their commander was killed, and the disastrous action at Sailor's Creek, where he was wounded in the right leg and captured by the enemy. After this misfortune he endured life as a prisoner of war at Johnson's island until June 20, 1865. Soon after his release he returned to the university of Virginia and completed his course of study in law. In 1866 he embarked in the practice at Lynchburg, where he has since resided and successfully practiced his profession.

Lieutenant John Henry Lewis, a well-known citizen of Washington, D. C., was born at Portsmouth, Va., in 1834, the son of Samuel Morgan Lewis, also a native of the Old Dominion, who served as a private in the war of 1812 and died in 1862, at the age of seventy-seven years. Lieutenant Lewis was reared and educated at Portsmouth, and embarked in the business of a contractor and builder, which took him, in the spring of 1860, to Savannah, Ga., where he perceived the growth of the apprehension of evil to result from the political campaign of that year. He hoped that the evil might be averted, but when, after a rapid succession of exciting events, Virginia adopted the ordinance of secession, he was among the first, as a citizen of Portsmouth and a private in the Third Virginia regiment of militia, to answer the call of April 20. On the night of the same day he witnessed some of the terrors of war in the destruction of the Gosport navy yard. While with the militia regiment he participated in the affair at Pig's Point and in the occupation of Norfolk, and, on the disbandment of the regiment, was assigned to Company G of the Ninth Virginia infantry. With this command he served, receiving promotion to lieutenant in the spring of 1863, in the divisions of Generals Huger, R. H. Anderson and Pickett, until captured while participating in the charge made by Pickett's division at Gettysburg, on July 3, 1863. A long and wearisome life as a prisoner of war followed this misfortune. He was transported from the battlefield to Fort Delaware, and thence with other officers to Johnson's island, Ohio, where he was held until June, 1865. At that date he was started for Richmond for exchange, but was detained at the prison at Point Lookout until after the surrender at Appomattox. Among the battles in which he participated were Seven Pines, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, the Second Manassas, White Sulphur Springs, Sharpsburg, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, Suffolk and Gettysburg. On being paroled at Norfolk, in July, 1865, he returned to his family at Portsmouth, and with a courageous spirit, manifested at this juncture no less than in the heat of battle, endeavored to start in life anew. After two years in Portsmouth he removed to Washington, where he has since resided, and has met with gratifying success in his business projects. Lieutenant Lewis was married July 18, 1854, at Portsmouth, to Mary F., daughter of the late Thomas Emerson, of Virginia, and they have five sons and one daughter, Mrs. G. W. Talbert, of Washington. Lieutenant Lewis has published the story of his military life in an interesting brochure, entitled, "Recollections from 1860 to 1865," embracing, in mingled prose and verse, a graphic account of the experiences of a private

with Lee and Jackson, Longstreet, Pickett and Armistead, and the miseries of life as a prisoner of war. No one is better qualified to tell the story from the standpoint of a private, and these "Recollections" are intensely interesting and of real historical value. A few lines may well be quoted here to illustrate one phase of the Confederate soldier's life, quite as important to him as the clash of arms, but not so often treated of: "I arrived home on the 15th of June, to find my wife on the verge of the grave. My little children did not know me and wondered what right I had there, but, as their mother made no objection, I remained and I have been there ever since. Those little boys and that little girl are now married, and I have numerous grandchildren. My wife suffered all that it was possible for a woman to suffer and live. I found her health broken, with eyes impaired from constant sewing to obtain bread for her children. We are now growing old, and, looking back and remembering all our trials, the friends that are gone, we can say that both of us were honest in our opinions. That we believed then that we were right, and that we believe now that we were right then."

Lieutenant R. Byrd Lewis, a distinguished cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, now residing at Washington, D. C., is a native of Virginia, born in Westmoreland county in 1842. He was reared in his native county and attended William and Mary college in the years 1859 and 1860. Among the spirited youth who sprang to arms at the call of the State, in April, 1861, he tendered his services for the defense of the commonwealth and became a member of Braxton's artillery. At first enrolled as a corporal, he was promoted second sergeant in July, 1861, and served with this command until April, 1862, meanwhile participating in artillery actions on Potomac Creek, at the time the Pawnee came down the river, and at Fredericksburg, early in 1862. In April he re-enlisted as a private in Company C of the Ninth Virginia cavalry, was promoted sergeant a week later, and in January, 1864, was commissioned lieutenant, in which rank he served during the remainder of the war. With the cavalry command he participated in numerous battles of importance and many affairs of less fame, but of no less daring and adventurous character. He took part in the battle of Cold Harbor of 1862, and in the subsequent Manassas campaign, was one of the daring troopers who raided General Pope's headquarters at Catlett's Station and refreshed themselves from the table set for the general's supper. In the Maryland campaign he was in action at Boonsboro and Sharpsburg, and, on the return to Virginia, fought near Shepherdstown, where he was wounded in the right ankle. Disabled for a time, he rejoined his command in November, 1862, and was soon engaged in a skirmish near Leedstown, where, while leading a cavalry charge at night, he found himself between two fires and in a storm of bullets. Fourteen balls passed through his coat and six pierced his body. Four of these balls were removed by the surgeons, in whose hands he remained for some time. However, in the spring of 1863, he was on duty again, not missing much campaigning, and on June 9th was in the fight at Brandy Station and subsequently at Middleburg (where his horse was killed under him), at Upperville, at Hagerstown, Md., during Stuart's raid, at Barbour house, near Brandy station, on the

plains of Manassas, in the cavalry fight at Buckland, Va., at Spottsylvania Court House, in a skirmish at Guinea's bridge, a skirmish on the Telegraph road in Caroline county, at Old Church, Va., June 10, 1864, at Hawe's shop, near Nance's shop, June 24, 1864, Saponey church, June 28th, Stony Creek station, and on July 29th, in command of his troop in a reconnoissance in force at Malvern Hill, where he was struck by a spent ball over the heart and badly hurt. After this he fought at White House, White Tavern, August 16th, and was slightly wounded in the fight at White Oak causeway, where General Chambers was killed. October 27th he fought at Hatcher's Run, and, in the following spring, was in the battle of Five Forks and at Sailor's Creek, where he commanded the skirmish line on the left of the army. Subsequently he, with other cavalrymen, started southward to join Johnston's army, but did not reach that command before its surrender, and was paroled in Westmoreland county in May. Turning at once to a civil career, he studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1866. After practicing in his native county until 1881, he removed to Washington, where he has had a prominent and successful career. He is a member of the Washington association of Confederate veterans and served as commander in 1896.

Major Thomas Lewis, of Roanoke, a gallant soldier of the war of 1861-65, and since then prominent in the Confederate organizations, is a member of an old and worthy Virginia family of Scotch-Irish origin. His grandfather, Gen. Andrew Lewis, of the Continental army, is remembered as particularly distinguished at the battle of Point Pleasant. Mr. Lewis was born in that portion of Botetourt county which is now included in the limits of Roanoke, in the year 1833. He completed his education at the Virginia military institute and took an active part in the militia organization of the State before the war, holding the rank of lieutenant-colonel of the One Hundred and Thirty-eighth regiment. Upon the secession of the State, he promptly engaged in those duties for which his training had particularly qualified him, and, in April, 1861, organized and tendered to the State a company composed of young men of Roanoke county, of which he was elected captain. But, on account of the belief of Governor Letcher, that sufficient troops had already been put in the field, the company was declined and disbanded. He then enlisted as a private in a company, organized and commanded by his former brother militia officer in the One Hundred and Thirty-eighth regiment, Col. Robert S. Allen, which became Company I of the Twenty-eighth Virginia regiment of infantry. Of this command he was appointed sergeant-major, and, six months later, adjutant of the regiment. At the reorganization, in May, 1862, the colonel, Robert T. Preston, having failed of reelection, went to the department of Southwest Virginia to become lieutenant-colonel of a division organized by Gen. John B. Floyd, and Adjutant Lewis accompanied him, receiving the rank of major. In this rank he was detailed for six months on recruiting service for the regiment, and then resigned. Returning to the army of Northern Virginia, he was appointed adjutant of the Thirty-eighth Virginia artillery by Mr. Seddon, secretary of war, and, in that capacity he served during the remainder of the war. Major Lewis participated with gallantry in the battles of Bull Run, First Manas-

sas, Fredericksburg, New Bern, N. C., Little Washington, N. C., Plymouth, N. C. (at the latter place suffering the breaking of his right arm, an injury which disabled him for thirty days), Suffolk, Va., three days of battle at Gettysburg, Second Cold Harbor (where his leg was broken by a ball, causing a six months' sojourn in hospital, the engagements about Petersburg, and on the retreat to Appomattox. On the night before the surrender his regiment of artillery was cut off by the Federal cavalry and left Appomattox for Lynchburg and he was paroled there in May, 1865. Returning to Roanoke, he resumed the agricultural pursuits he abandoned in the spring of 1861, and, several years later, entered the business of insurance agency, in which he has since then been occupied with much success. He is a member and past commander of William Watts camp, U. C. V., and is past commander of the grand camp of Virginia. Two brothers of Major Lewis served in the Confederate cause: Andrew Lewis, now a resident of Florida, who was a sergeant in Company I of the Twenty-eighth Virginia regiment, served throughout the war and was twice wounded; and Charles Lewis, who was a private in the Fourth Texas regiment and died in 1862 at Dumfries on the Potomac river.

William E. Lipscomb, of Manassas, was born in Prince William county, April 4, 1833. He was educated at home, and at the age of fifteen years was appointed to the position of deputy clerk of the county. He continued in this official occupation, in the meantime studying and gaining a practical knowledge of the law, until the time of the beginning of the war of 1861, at which time he was in charge of both the clerks' offices. In the spring of 1861 he enlisted in the Confederate service as a private in Company F of the Forty-ninth Virginia infantry, and was promoted to the grade of first lieutenant. In January, 1862, he resigned from the service and reassumed his official duties in Prince William county, and so continued until, in 1863, he re-enlisted, as a private, in Company H of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry. In this command he served with the army of Northern Virginia until he was captured in 1864. His life as a prisoner of war was passed at Fort Delaware, where he suffered many hardships and deprivations and subsisted upon provisions that were too scant for full relief from hunger and too coarse not to excite disgust. After this wearisome experience, the war being over, he returned to his home and, until 1870, busied himself in agricultural pursuits. He then took charge of the clerk's offices of the county, as a deputy, and served until 1876, when he removed to Manassas and engaged in the practice of law, also conducting a mercantile business. In 1884 he was elected judge, a position he still holds through successive elections. As a lawyer and judge he is held in high esteem by the bar and the public. He maintains a comradeship in Ewell camp, Confederate Veterans, and is a member of the Masonic order. In September, 1859, he was married to Miss Henrietta Holland, of English parentage, and they have five children.

Captain Connally Trigg Litchfield, of Abingdon, Va., was born at that city, June 5, 1829, and resided there until he entered the military service of Virginia, early in 1861. He became a member of Company L, First Virginia cavalry, as sergeant, and, going from Richmond to Winchester, during the occupation of the lower

valley by the forces under Gen. J. E. Johnston, served under Col. J. E. B. Stuart in the engagements which took place after the advance of Patterson from Pennsylvania. Going thence to Manassas, he participated in the famous battle of July 21, 1861. He served on picket duty on the Confederate line in northeast Virginia during the remainder of that season and, at the reorganization in the following spring, was elected captain of his company. From that time till Appomattox he was in all the cavalry fights and campaigns under Stuart, Hampton and Fitz Lee. He was wounded at Shepherdstown, in the arm, again in the eye at Brandy Station, was hit in the face by a 42-caliber pistol ball, which he carried in his head until July, 1897, and was again wounded at Jack's shop, in the hip. At Appomattox he succeeded in saving his regiment from capture, and rode away from the field with Rosser. After remaining at home for some time following the surrender, he went to Lynchburg, in 1866, and embarked in business there in 1867. Three years later he returned to Abingdon, where he has since resided. During the administration of President Cleveland he held the office of postmaster.

Captain Hardin Beverly Littlepage, who has for the past decade been engaged officially at Washington in the collection of the naval records of the war of the Confederacy, was born, March 8, 1841, in King William county, Va. He was reared in that county and educated at the Rumford academy, preparatory to his entering the United States naval academy at Annapolis, where he was enrolled in 1858. He would have been graduated at this institution in June, 1861, but resigned on April 19th, immediately after the secession of Virginia, and tendered his services to the State. He was appointed to the rank of midshipman, by Governor Letcher, and assigned to duty at Fort Norfolk, and ten days later to command of the battery at Town Point, opposite Newport News. This command continued for eight months, when he was assigned to the Virginia, or Merrimac, with the rank of midshipman. He was identified with the entire career of this famous naval battery and participated in the encounters in Hampton Roads, receiving promotion, after the fight with the Monitor, to the rank of master. After the destruction of the Virginia by her own crew, he served at Drewry's bluff in the repulse of the attempted landing from the Federal fleet, one of the most important Confederate victories of that period. In the fall of 1862 he was promoted second lieutenant, and, with ten of the Virginia's crew, served on the gunboat Chattahoochee, in Florida waters until the following December. He was then with the ironclad Atlanta at Port Jackson, in the Savannah river, until May, 1863, when he was ordered to report to Capt. M. F. Maury, at London. He remained abroad until September, 1864, attached, first to one of the rams intended for Confederate service and later to the Texas, but his cruise with that vessel was prevented by her capture as she was about to sail. Returning, he ran the blockade from Halifax to Wilmington, N. C., and joined the new Virginia, a powerful ironclad, modeled after the first of that name, as first lieutenant. This vessel served as the flagship of the James river squadron, but there was no opportunity for effective service, and, when the naval forces were subsequently organized for land duty, he was appointed captain

of Company A, naval brigade. With this command, after the evacuation of Richmond, he joined the army in North Carolina, at Greensboro, and surrendered with Johnston and was paroled at Danville, Va. Subsequently Captain Littlepage was engaged in farming in his native county and later in the commission business at New York and Baltimore, until 1880, when he went to Washington as private secretary for Senator Johnson of Virginia. He afterward served in the same capacity with Senator Call, and, in 1889, was appointed to his present position, that of agent for the collection of naval records in the war department, in which his prominent service during the war of the Confederacy has peculiarly fitted him for efficient and valuable activity. He maintains a membership in the Washington camp of Confederate Veterans.

Charles T. Loehr, of Richmond, Va., a gallant veteran of the Old Dominion Guards, and very prominent since the war in the organizations of surviving Confederate soldiers, is a native of Germany, born in Westphalia, August 8, 1842. His residence in Richmond began in 1853 and, early in 1861, he signalized his patriotic devotion to his adopted State by rendering valuable aid in the organization of the Old Dominion Guards, one of the gallant volunteer organizations at Richmond. The Guards was assigned to the First Virginia regiment as Company D, and with its record as such he was identified during the entire war, with an efficiency that was recognized by promotion to corporal, in February, 1863, and to sergeant in the winter of 1864. Mr. Loehr participated in twenty well-known battles, besides many skirmishes and minor engagements. The list includes Bull Run, Manassas, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Second Manassas, South Mountain, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Suffolk, Gettysburg, Plymouth, Drewry's Bluff, Howlett House, Milford, Cold Harbor, Clay House, Dinwiddie Court House and Five Forks. At Gettysburg, on the third day, while in charge of the skirmish line of his command, he was slightly wounded; at Howlett House and Cold Harbor was wounded a second and third time; and at Five Forks became a prisoner of war. He was imprisoned at Point Lookout until June 27th, many weeks after the surrender. On his release he returned to Richmond, and, in the years that have since intervened, has lived the life of a useful and respected citizen. For twenty-eight years he has held the important position of actuary of the Virginia fire and marine insurance company. He is also secretary and treasurer of the Virginia building and loan company. He was one of the organizers of George E. Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans, and was its first commander. He was active also in the reorganization of the Old Dominion Guard, which was effected, August 6, 1896, and was elected secretary and treasurer.

Colonel Robert H. Logan, a prominent attorney of Salem, Va., where he has for twenty years served as city attorney, was born at that city in 1839. In 1857 he was appointed to the United States military academy and continued his studies there until April, 1861, when he resigned his cadetship and returned home to offer his services to Virginia, in the crisis then at hand. He was commissioned second lieutenant and assigned to duty at Lynchburg as drill-master, for a few months, then being appointed adjutant of

the Forty-second Virginia infantry. In December, 1861, he was promoted first lieutenant and assigned to the staff of Gen. John B. Floyd, with whom he served through West Virginia and Kentucky, and in the defense of Fort Donelson, where he was in command of the artillery. Here he had his horse shot under him and was slightly wounded, and, after the capitulation, was taken with pneumonia, a disease by which he was so prostrated as to be unfit for duty until the fall of 1862. He was then assigned to the command of a battery of horse artillery, with which he participated in the Kentucky campaign, under Bragg, and with the cavalry commands of Gen. Joseph Wheeler and General Forrest, taking part in the raid around Rosecrans' army. He was recommended for promotion by Generals Wheeler, Hardee and Forrest, and received the rank of captain. Being transferred to the field of struggle in Virginia, he served on the staff of Gen. G. C. Wharton during the campaign through Maryland against Washington, and the fighting against Sheridan in the valley. Being promoted lieutenant-colonel for gallantry in battle, he received command of the Forty-fifth Virginia infantry regiment, which he led until the end of the war, disbanding his regiment at Christiansburg just after the surrender of Lee. In addition to numerous skirmishes and cavalry affairs, he took part in the fighting at Fort Donelson, Perryville, Ky., Charleston, Tenn., Chickamauga, New Market, Va., Second Cold Harbor, Lynchburg, Va., Monocacy, Winchester, Fisher's Hill, Blue Ridge and Waynesboro. He was wounded slightly in three engagements, the last time at Waynesboro, where he was also captured but managed to escape. In another valley battle he received a slight wound, and at Winchester two horses were shot under him. The war over, he returned to Salem, and, taking up the study of law, was admitted to the bar in 1867, beginning a professional career which has since been continued with much success and honor. In addition to his long service as city attorney, he has twice held the office of mayor of the city, and, in 1893-94, represented the county in the legislature. The two brothers of Colonel Logan were in the Confederate service: James Logan, lieutenant in the Fourth regiment, Stonewall brigade, who was killed at First Manassas; and Addison Logan, who served from 1863 to the close of the war as lieutenant on the staff of General Wharton, and died in 1877.

Lieutenant Lorenzo D. Lorentz, now a citizen of Washington, D. C., where he has achieved distinction as a business man, was born in Upshur county, near the town of Buckhannon, in 1834. In this locality, then a part of Virginia, but since included in the new State of West Virginia, he resided until he had reached the age of seventeen years, when he sought his fortune in Baltimore, Md., where he entered mercantile life as a salesman for the house of Lanier Bros. & Co. While thus engaged, in the ante-bellum days, he was happily married, in 1854, to Libbie Burr, daughter of John J. Burr. A few years later she died, leaving a daughter, Libbie, now the wife of A. A. Simpson, of Buckhannon, W. Va. After the war broke out, Mr. Lorentz returned to his old home, where, his sentiments being known to favor the South, he had the misfortune to be seized by Federal authority and held as a prisoner of war about nine months, on suspicion of obtaining

information for the Confederate cause. When released from this tedious detention, he went to Staunton, Va., late in 1862, and, in co-operation with others, formed an artillery company, of which he was elected first lieutenant. This was known as Lurty's battery and was assigned to the brigade of Gen. William L. Jackson. With this command he served two years, participating in the campaigns in the valley, mainly, and rendering effective aid to the movements which kept the valley for so long a time from the hands of the Federals. Among other fights in which he took part, may be mentioned Warm Spring Mountain, Winchester (1863), Lynchburg, Droop Mountain, near Charleston, after the campaign against Washington in 1864. During the action at Beverly, Randolph county, in the fall of 1864, he fell wounded by three bullets, which struck him almost simultaneously, and after that saw no more active service in the field, though he was destined to represent the Confederate cause in a less welcome capacity for a long time after the surrender of Lee. He was taken prisoner at Beverly, and, after lying in hospital at Grafton until he was able to be moved, was taken to Camp Chase, Ohio, and there held in the prison camp for six months. The remainder of his detention, until June, 1865, was spent at Fort Delaware. After his release Lieutenant Lorentz spent a few weeks at Baltimore and then removed to Allegheny Springs, Va., and engaged in the lumber business for three years. He subsequently resided at Christiansburg, Va., until 1889, following the mercantile trade and railroad contracting, after which he made his home at Washington. There he has met with a gratifying degree of success as a real estate broker and promoter of various business enterprises. In 1866 Mr. Lorentz was married to Emma L. Wade, daughter of the late John Wade, of Montgomery county, Va.

John F. Lotzia, now an influential citizen of Suffolk, achieved before he had reached the age of twenty-one years the record of a gallant veteran in the ranks of the Sixteenth Virginia regiment. He was born at Suffolk, December 16, 1844, and was orphaned during infancy by the death of his father, John F. Lotzia. In the spring of 1862 he enlisted as a private in Company A of the Sixteenth regiment, just before the abandonment of Norfolk, after which he accompanied the regiment to Gordonsville and Charlottesville, and then returned to Richmond in time to take part in the Seven Days' campaign and fight at Malvern Hill, as a part of Mahone's brigade. After being stationed for a short time at Drewry's bluff, he joined in the northward movement of Longstreet's corps and went into the battle of Second Manassas, where his regiment lost heavily, Colonel Crump being killed and the first lieutenant of Company A mortally wounded, and all the staff officers wounded. During the Maryland campaign it was the duty of his regiment and brigade to check Franklin's corps of the Federal army at Crampton's Gap until Jackson could capture Harper's Ferry. History records with what great fortitude and sublime courage they performed this duty, inflicting tremendous loss upon the enemy, said to be equal to the numbers of the regiment in the fight. At last overpowered and surrounded, nearly all of his regiment were taken prisoners, himself among them. After a confinement at Fort Delaware, he was exchanged in time

to participate in the battle of Fredericksburg. In the following spring he fought at Chancellorsville, where his brigade opened the battle; and in June and July he participated in the Pennsylvania campaign and the battle of Gettysburg. On the second day of the fighting in the Wilderness he was in the gallant attack of Mahone's command which rolled up the Federal flank and would doubtless have resulted in disaster to the Federal army had not General Longstreet fallen at the critical moment from the fire of his own men. At Spottsylvania he was in severe battle for two days, on the second day participating in a gallant charge, in the face of a destructive fire, which wrested from the enemy several lines of breastworks. In this action two men were detailed from each company to form an attacking party, and Mr. Lotzia was one of these volunteers who faced death in a reckless assault upon the enemy's fortifications. He went through the bloody battle of Cold Harbor and subsequently participated in the almost incessant fighting about Petersburg until the evacuation. In the battle of Wilcox's Farm he was severely hurt by a bullet striking his belt, but he remained on the field, though he was afterward for thirty days unfit for duty, but remained with the command. He fought in the trenches, took part in the battle of the Crater, where thirteen of his company fell out of twenty-four, and was in the engagements at Reams' Station, Burgess' Mill and Hatcher's Run. As the war drew to a close his division took the place of Pickett's division at Bermuda Hundred, and thence withdrew to Appomattox, where he surrendered with his regiment. Returning at once to the livelihood he had abandoned to enter the army, he soon afterward established himself at Suffolk as a merchant tailor, in which he has since been quite successful. He has served as member of the city council, as overseer of the poor for three years, as chief of the fire department six years, and now holds the office of city treasurer. He is also a prominent worker in the Masonic and Pythian orders, and is adjutant of Tom Smith camp, U. C. V. In 1868 he was married to Miss Eudora C. Jones, of Suffolk, and they have three children living: Mabel J., wife of C. B. Leet, of New York; Lottie B., wife of Joseph Crocker, of Suffolk, and John F. Jr.

James M. Love, a distinguished attorney of Fairfax, Va., was born in Fairfax county in December, 1843. He was still in his youth when the exciting events of 1860 and 1861 absorbed the attention of the country, and was attending the Virginia military institute at the outbreak of hostilities. In the spring of 1862 he enlisted in the Black Horse troop, which became Company H of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. With this gallant command he served as a private and participated in the celebrated raid, made under command of J. E. B. Stuart, around McClellan's army in 1862, and subsequently in all the campaigns and battles of Fitzhugh Lee's cavalry, until, in the spring of 1864, he was wounded severely, causing the loss of an arm. Notwithstanding his injury, he reported to duty at as early a date as possible, and was assigned to the commissary department in Gen. Fitzhugh Lee's brigade. In this capacity he served faithfully and efficiently until the close of the war. Near the time of the surrender he was captured, in Fauquier county, and brought to Fairfax Court House, where he

was paroled. When peace was restored he began the study of law with his father, Hon. Thomas R. Love, who was for many years a prominent lawyer at Fairfax and at one time represented the county in the State legislature. A few years later he was admitted to the bar, and in 1870 was appointed commonwealth's attorney, an office which he held, through successive re-elections, during the subsequent twenty-seven years, only relinquishing it, in May, 1897, to accept appointment as judge of Alexander and Fairfax counties. He is a member of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute and in various other ways is associated with deserving public interests. Of Marr camp of Confederate Veterans he is a past commander, having succeeded in that rank its first commander, Gen. W. H. F. Lee. In 1873 he was married to Miss Weaver, of Washington, a grand-niece of President Buchanan, who died in 1880, leaving four children. Two brothers of Judge Love served in the Confederate cause, one of whom, Robert T., was killed in the battle of Seven Pines; and the other, Thomas R. Jr., survived the war, but was, at the close, a prisoner at Fort Warren.

Thomas Lowery, of Ocean View, Va., a veteran of the Norfolk Light Infantry, entered the service in 1861, being then about fourteen years of age, as drummer boy of his company, which was organized promptly upon the secession of Virginia, under Capt. John R. Ludlow. The organization was assigned to the Sixth regiment, Mahone's brigade, as Company D, and served faithfully throughout the four years' struggle. This service was shared from beginning to close by Musician Lowery. He was stationed with his command in the vicinity of Norfolk during 1861, and at Great Bridge early in 1862, and later was transferred to Chaffin's bluff. The first considerable battle was Oak Grove, opening the Seven Days' fighting, on the last day of which, at Malvern Hill, the regiment suffered severely. Then followed the battles of Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, and the bloody engagement at Sharpsburg, where the regiment, reduced almost to the dimensions of a company, fought with distinction in repelling the last Federal attack on the left. There were few of the company left after that battle, but a season of recruiting followed, and other great battles were added to their roll, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor. Mr. Lowery was with his command on the Petersburg lines, took part in the gallant fight which followed the famous and fiery blow-up at Elliott's salient, was in several minor skirmishes during 1864, in the spring of 1865 fought at Hatcher's Run, and during the withdrawal from Petersburg up to Appomattox, where he surrendered with the remnants of his company. On his return home he served an apprenticeship as a ship's smith, and was so employed until he was appointed custom house inspector, a position he held eight years under the administration of Grant. He has since held the office of boarding officer four years in the customs service, and was high constable of Norfolk in 1882-84. In 1896 he removed to Ocean View to accept an important position in the management of that resort. Mr. Lowery was born at Norfolk in 1846, the son of Thomas Lowery, who was engaged in business as a contractor until 1855, when he was a victim of the yellow fever epidemic.

Lieutenant Arthur L. Lumsden, a well-known and responsible business man of Richmond, was born at Petersburg, Va., in 1842, where he was reared and educated. In 1860 he made his home at Richmond and there entered the Confederate service. The Virginia Life Guards were organized in January, 1861, under Capt. John Stewart Walker, and the commission was issued by Governor Letcher, February 9th. Of this company Lumsden became a member, with the rank of sergeant, on May 14, 1861. On May 21, 1861, he went with his command to Camp Lee and was assigned to the Third Virginia regiment of infantry, under command of Col. Thomas P. August. On the 24th of May he left, with his regiment, for the peninsula, and from that time until Appomattox fought gallantly through all the campaigns, his bravery and coolness in action leading to continual promotion. After July 10, 1863, he held the rank of second lieutenant, and soon afterward was promoted adjutant of the regiment. At Sailor's Creek he commanded the regiment. He participated in the initial battle at Big Bethel, and, subsequently, at Lee's Mill, Dam No. 2, Williamsburg, Cold Harbor, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Cedar Mountain, Bachelors' Creek, N. C., Fort Craig, N. C., New Bern, N. C., Drewry's Bluff, Fort Harrison, Ashland, Chester Gap, the recapture of Howlett House, Five Forks, Sailor's Creek, and Appomattox, and was in Tennessee with Ransom's division. After being paroled at Appomattox, he returned to Richmond and embarked in the jewelry trade, which he abandoned in 1872 to conduct a grocery and commission business at Petersburg. In 1881 he returned to Richmond and soon afterward again engaged in the jewelry business, in which he has continued with much success, being now associated with his brother as successors to his father. Since the war he has served conspicuously in the State military forces as aide-de-camp on the staff of Gen. A. L. Phillips. He is a member of the George E. Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans.

Captain Warren Seymour Lurty, now a prominent attorney at Harrisonburg, Va., is a native of Clarksburg and a cousin of Gen. Stonewall Jackson. He entered the Confederate service in the spring of 1861, at Harper's Ferry, as a private in the Staunton artillery. Subsequently he became adjutant of the Nineteenth Virginia cavalry regiment and was promoted adjutant-general on the staff of Gen. William L. Jackson. He held for some time the rank of captain of Lurty's battery and served as such on the Petersburg lines. Upon the fall of Major Jackson, of Tennessee, he was promoted, as senior captain, to the command of the artillery battalion, and two hours later was captured by Custer's division. From that time until June 17, 1865, he was confined as a prisoner of war at Fort Delaware. Resuming the practice of law, he was appointed by President Grant United States attorney, the duties of which office he performed with ability for a period of ten years. He also served for a time as the first United States marshal for Oklahoma, resigning that position to return to his Virginia home.

William L. Lushbaugh, of Staunton, Va., is a native of that city, born September 29, 1829. His grandfather was a native of Germany. His father, Adam Lushbaugh, was born in Staunton in 1799 and died there in 1879. Mr. Lushbaugh was reared and

educated at Staunton and had reached his thirty-second year when the war broke out. He entered the service as a private in the Staunton artillery, on the night before the battle of Manassas, July 21, 1861, which he witnessed under fire, though not yet mustered into the service. He served with this artillery command for one year, participating in the actions at Little West Point, on the York river, and at Piedmont, and was subsequently put upon detailed service and sent to Staunton, Va., where he was engaged in the employment of the Confederate States government, in the manufacture of shoe pegs, until the government ceased to be through the arbitrament of war. At the end he was paroled at Staunton and resumed the civil occupations which he had abandoned four years before at the call of his State. He engaged in contracting and building, and continued in this occupation until 1890, meeting with notable success, financially, in his enterprises, and taking rank with the substantial and influential men of the city.

Richard D. Luttrell, of Culpeper, who returned from Appomattox a veteran of Stuart's cavalry at the age of eighteen years, was born in Culpeper county, January 13, 1847. He came of patriotic ancestry, his grandfather having been a soldier of the Revolution and his father a participant in the war of 1812. His half-brother, John M. Monroe, was a member of Company C, Forty-ninth Virginia infantry, and died from a wound received at Seven Pines. Mr. Luttrell left his studies at the Jeffersonton academy to enlist, March 9, 1862, in Company D of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. He was then but fifteen years of age, but, in the three years' fighting which followed, he did the full duty of a soldier, such as rode with Fitzhugh Lee, Stuart and Hampton through the contested territory of Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania. On May 9, 1862, he was wounded while fighting in the rear guard, on the retreat from Yorktown, and was disabled until the following September. After that he participated in all the engagements of Fitzhugh Lee's brigade until the end. He did not participate in the surrender at Appomattox, but left camp the night before and returned to his home, where he subsequently took the usual oath of allegiance. After teaching school for a time, he engaged in commercial, clerical and farming pursuits, to which his energies have been principally devoted since then. In 1893 he was appointed deputy clerk of Culpeper county. He is a member of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans, at Culpeper, and has held the office of adjutant. On January 16, 1873, he was married to Miss Annie E. Newman, of Fauquier county.

Frank Lynch, of Montgomery, Ala., served with honor upon the staff of Gen. Joseph Wheeler during the war of the Confederacy, his father, Commodore William F. Lynch, serving illustriously in that cause at sea. His grandfather, John Shaw, at one time held the rank of commodore in the United States navy, and the family is one of the oldest in Alabama. His wife, Mary Knox Buford, was the daughter of William K. Buford, a prominent lawyer of that State. Dr. Junius F. Lynch, son of Frank Lynch, was born December 2, 1865, in Alabama, and was educated at Richmond, Va., being graduated from the medical college of Virginia in 1888. Going at once to Chattanooga, to embark in the

practice, he was appointed quarantine commissioner of the State of Tennessee during the epidemic of that year. In 1889 he accepted the position of assistant chief surgeon of the Plant system of railroads, having charge of the Plant system hospital, which position he held until his removal to Norfolk, Va., in 1896. He is a member of the Norfolk medical society, of the State professional societies of Virginia and Florida, and is president of the Seaboard medical association of Virginia and North Carolina. He was married in December, 1891, to Miss Lucy Kemper, daughter of James L. Kemper, ex-governor of Virginia.

Captain William B. Lynch, a well-known journalist of Leesburg, and a veteran of Pickett's division, was born in Frederick county, Md., December 23, 1827. He was reared in his native State, and in 1850 removed to Virginia and made his home at Leesburg, where, in the following year, he took charge of "The Washingtonian" newspaper. This journal he conducted successfully until the beginning of the war of the Confederacy. He then abandoned his business and enlisted in the Virginia forces with the rank of lieutenant. In this rank he served until the reorganization of the army in the spring of 1862, when he was promoted captain of his company, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. As a member of Corse's brigade of Pickett's division of the army of Northern Virginia, he participated, with very few exceptions, in all the engagements of that command, whose record embraced much arduous service, and gallant action on many famous fields. While on the skirmish line, when Lee was following Grant's army on to James river, he received a gunshot wound in the shoulder. After the end of the war he returned to his home at Leesburg and resumed the publication of "The Washingtonian," which he has conducted throughout all the subsequent period, exerting through this paper a potent and beneficial influence, and aiding greatly in the development of the city and county. During the period of the war he also represented his county in the State legislature. He is a member of Clinton-Hatcher camp, and is a true comrade of all Confederate veterans.

Captain William F. Lynch, of Virginia, a gallant officer of the Confederate States navy, was born in Virginia in 1801 and entered the United States service as a midshipman, January 26, 1819. He was promoted lieutenant in May, 1828, and subsequently originated the famous United States expedition to the Dead Sea and River Jordan. He sailed on this enterprise, with the naval storeship Supply, in the latter part of 1847, and, after visiting Constantinople to obtain the necessary passports, made an overland journey on camels to the valley of Jordan, during the year 1848. A thorough exploration of the famous region was made and the depression of the Dead Sea below the Mediterranean was determined with accuracy. The narrative of the expedition, published by Lieutenant Lynch, became very popular and is regarded as a standard work. On his return he was promoted commander. He prepared for an expedition of exploration into Africa, which was abandoned. In 1856 he was promoted captain, a commission he resigned in April, 1861, to enter the service of Virginia. He was first assigned to duty on the Potomac river and coast defenses, in May he erected the battery at Aquia creek, and in June, 1861,

he was commissioned captain in the Confederate States navy. He succeeded Commodore Barron in command of the coast defenses of North Carolina and hoisted his flag on a small passenger steamer. The six remaining vessels of his force were of the same flimsy character, but with them he made a heroic stand against the great Federal fleet accompanying Burnside's expedition, and fought gallantly against inevitable defeat. In May, 1862, he was assigned to the command of all the naval forces in western waters. In the winter of 1864-65 he was assigned the duty of preparing an account of the service of the Confederate States navy. His death occurred at Baltimore, October 17, 1865.

Lieutenant Bushrod W. Lynn, a survivor of the First Virginia cavalry regiment, was born in Loudoun county, Va., in the year 1842. His father was a teacher by profession and was occupied at various points in Virginia, West Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, in which latter State the son received his education principally. In 1857 his home was again established in Loudoun county, and he there enlisted in a company which became part of the First Virginia cavalry, subsequently distinguished for gallant service under the command of the famous leader, J. E. B. Stuart, then colonel in rank. His service with this regiment began July 9, 1861, and he soon afterward participated with his regiment, as a part of the army of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, in the battle of Manassas of July 21, 1861. Here he took part in the spirited charge which was afterward wrongly credited to the Black Horse cavalry. In this action his horse was shot and fell upon him, causing severe injuries, which disabled him for service during the succeeding two months. On his recovery he rejoined his company, but, there being only a few men remaining in it, they were detailed as couriers, his detail being as courier to Gen. Gustavus W. Smith, who commanded the Second division of the army under Johnston, and the left wing at the battle of Seven Pines. In this important engagement Lynn participated, also in the affair at Neuse River Bridge, N. C., and continued as courier until General Smith's resignation, in February, 1863, when he was appointed ordnance-sergeant and assigned to duty at Richmond. In July, 1863, he was made assistant inspector in the laboratory at Richmond, with the rank of lieutenant, a position which he held until the close of the war. Though entitled to a commission as captain, he failed to receive the commission during the confusion of the final period. After his parole at Winchester, he returned to Loudoun county and engaged in farming until 1891, when, having attained prominence and a wide influence in political affairs, he was elected to the position of superintendent of the State penitentiary. Since then he has discharged the duties of that office with his residence at Richmond. He is a member of both the Clinton-Hatcher camp at Leesburg and the R. E. Lee camp, of Confederate Veterans, at Richmond. In 1863 he was married to Frances H., daughter of the late Russell W. Allen, of Richmond, and they now have five sons and two daughters living.

Captain William McAnge, a native of South Carolina, was distinguished in the service of that State during the Confederate war. Previous to 1861 he had been extensively engaged in the turpentine trade, had laid the foundation for amassing considerable wealth

and was esteemed as a prominent and enterprising citizen, but, at the call of his State, he abandoned his material interests, and, as the captain of a company in the Tenth South Carolina regiment, went into the war for Southern independence. His career was a gallant and heroic one until it was terminated by death near Holly Springs, Miss., where he fell in battle. William N. McAnge, the only son of the above, was born in South Carolina in 1858, and was educated in the schools of that State. In 1880 he moved to Suffolk, Va., and, inheriting the remarkable business abilities of his father, embarked in the lumber business, at the age of nineteen years, and from that went into the culture and sale of oysters, in which his success is widely known throughout the United States. The business which he now controls was established before the war. He took possession in 1880, and has been gradually extending the business and the scope of shipments, until he now has oyster beds covering from 275 to 300 acres in Nansemond river and Chesapeake bay, Va., Maurice river, N. J., and the sounds of North Carolina, and he ships more fresh oysters to the South and West, through the great territory between Chicago and New Orleans, than any other man in the States. His headquarters are at Suffolk, and he keeps constantly engaged a fleet of his own oyster boats, operating with such system and regularity that it is very seldom an oyster remains in his packing house over a day. He is also one of the extensive oyster planters on the coast. But this business, notwithstanding the vastness of its development, does not absorb his entire attention. He is also interested in the Nansemond truck package company, and is heavily interested in the manufacture of fertilizers for peanuts, selling about two thousand tons annually. Another very important enterprise, into which he ventured in 1894, is the telephone business. He is the founder of the Independent telephone system in southeastern Virginia, first establishing a local exchange at Suffolk, and thence connecting with Norfolk, Portsmouth, Berkley, Ocean View, Old Point, Hampton, Newport News, Franklin, Courtland, and many minor points. Of this independent system he is general manager and represents a controlling interest in the company's stock. Mr. McAnge is also a half owner of the Marine railway, recently completed at Suffolk, where light crafts are constructed and repaired. His varied interests and progressive spirit make him a worthy scion of a Confederate veteran, one among the active business men of tidewater Virginia. Declining all positions of official trust, save to serve as city councilman for a number of years, he has given his talent and energy toward the furtherance of the interests with which he is now identified. He was married, in 1879, to Cora A., daughter of Thomas Riddick, a prominent North Carolinian, to which marriage there were born two children, Louise Kipling and William N., now fifteen and seventeen years of age, respectively.

James W. McCarrick, a prominent citizen of Norfolk and general Southern agent of the Clyde steamship company, was born in Norfolk, June 22, 1843. His father, Patrick McCarrick, who came to America from Ireland when a boy, had a notable record in the service of the Confederate States. He served as lieutenant in the North Carolina navy and was subsequently commissioned lieu-

tenant in the Confederate navy. He commanded the steamer *Sea Bird*, flagship of Commodore Lynch, when that vessel was sunk at Elizabeth City, N. J., and, with the entire crew, was captured by Federal Admiral Rowan. After being exchanged he was detailed as one of the officers of the Canadian expedition for the relief of the prisoners at Johnson's island, and, upon the failure of that enterprise through betrayal he ran the blockade with the celebrated Capt. John Wilkinson. Upon the request of the latter, Lieutenant McCarrick was detailed for several trips, after which he served at Wilmington and other points until the close of the war. Subsequently he served with the Old Dominion steamship company, in command of several of its vessels, until his death. James W. McCarrick was educated at Mount St. Mary's college and Georgetown college, leaving the latter institution early in 1861 to enlist with the Norfolk Juniors of the Twelfth Virginia regiment, commanded by Gen. William Mahone. He was one of twenty-five volunteers from that company who manned one of the guns which repelled the attack of the Federal steamer *Monticello* upon the Confederate batteries at Sewell's Point. At this fight he recalls that it was with difficulty that they prevented some men of Colquitt's Georgia command, in their anxiety for trophies of the war, from gathering unexploded shells as they fell. Soon afterward receiving an appointment as master's mate in the North Carolina navy, he was assigned to the steamer *Winslow* at Hatteras inlet, and participated in the capture of merchant vessels along the coast of North Carolina. After being transferred to the Confederate navy his first action was upon the *Sea Bird* under Commodore Lynch, in cutting out a Federal schooner from under the guns of the Federal fleet in Hampton Roads, and successfully bringing her into Norfolk, though pursued by four Federal gunboats. Still with the *Sea Bird*, he participated in the actions at Roanoke island, where a few improvised gunboats held Burnside's fleet in check all day. He had charge here of a small Parrott gun taken from the Federal gunboat *Fanny*. In the subsequent engagement at Elizabeth City, he was wounded and captured on the sunken steamer *Sea Bird*, by Captain Flusser, of the Federal fleet, and while being hospitably entertained by the Federal officers, was shown the base of a rifled shell from his Parrott gun, which had disabled one gunboat and afterward done damage on the boat on which he was held as a prisoner. This fragment he was permitted to carry away, and still has in his possession. Subsequently, when with the *Tuscaloosa*, he met the English captain who commanded the Federal vessel from which the Parrott gun was captured, but that versatile sailor was then engaged in running the Federal blockades. Being paroled under the "Wool cartel," he returned to Norfolk, and from the naval hospital witnessed the *Virginia* or *Merrimac*, going down to the attack upon the Cumberland and Congress, attended by a number of small gunboats. Upon one of these was his friend, Midshipman Charles Mallory, whom McCarrick hailed and begged that he bring back a Federal officer for whom he might be exchanged. It happened that Mr. Mallory was one of the officers detailed to remove the prisoners from the Congress, and he did bring back an officer in safety, for whom McCarrick was exchanged later. He was then pro-

moted master, and assigned to the navy yard at Selma, Ala., and subsequently attached to the ironclad *Tuscaloosa*, in Mobile bay. Thence he was sent by Admiral Buchanan to Jackson, Miss., to receive some guns which had been captured by Gen. Wirt Adams on the Big Black river. Though cut off by the first Mississippi raid of Sherman's troops, he managed later to bring the guns in safety. He was then sent with orders from the secretary of war to select men for the Mobile fleet from the commands of Generals Loring and Pope, at Demopolis, Ala. During his visit a Texas and a Mississippi command engaged in a mock battle with pine burrs, in emulation of their Virginia comrades who fought with snowballs, and some of his best men were selected from the scarred heroes of this novel encounter. During the naval operations in Mobile bay he was on the steamer *Baltic* in charge of the forward division, at the outset of Admiral Buchanan's movement, and was subsequently ordered to the flagship *Tennessee*, but being taken sick, was sent on shore to hospital just in time to escape the capture of the *Tennessee* by Farragut. After his recovery he served upon the gunboat *Macon*, guarding the ferries of the Savannah river against Sherman's advance. In this service he participated in several encounters with troops and light batteries. The *Macon* finally attempted to run down to Savannah, to support the right of General Hardee's army, but was driven back by Federal batteries at Oak Grove, the *Resolute*, one of the tenders, being disabled and left behind. To rescue this vessel McCarrick with a small party started back in an open boat but were compelled by firing from the Georgia side to land on the Carolina shore, driving off a number of foragers of "bummers." McCarrick's party found it necessary to seek shelter behind the dykes of a rice field, when they were astounded to see one of the *Resolute's* boats coming up the river manned by Federals. To prevent their being cut off, McCarrick's little party bravely opened fire on the boat, with success, and when nightfall arrived the Confederates made their way back in safety, taking with them three "bummer" prisoners they had captured. About this time an unprecedented freshet filled the river, and the news arriving of the fall of Savannah, the *Macon* was run up the river to Augusta, where it was then possible to navigate the streets in boats. Here the ship remained until the end of war. Mr. McCarrick was detailed to command of a battery at Shell bluff, forty miles below Augusta, where he remained until the close of hostilities. Then, on receiving advices of the general surrender he and Lieutenant Comstock, chief engineer George W. City, and Major Brewer, of the quartermaster's department, with two of the crew, went down the river in a boat, reaching Savannah after an adventurous trip, whence they proceeded to Macon for parole. He then returned to Norfolk, and soon became agent of the Old Dominion steamship company at Portsmouth, and afterward general claim agent of the Atlantic coast line and Seaboard air line and their water connections, which positions he resigned in 1875 to assume the position he now occupies. He is a member of the Pickett-Buchanan camp, and a faithful friend of the survivors of the Confederate armies and navy.

Lieutenant Daniel S. McCarthy, of Richmond, one of the gallant veterans of the Richmond Howitzers, was born in that city in

the year 1842. When a youth of nineteen years, he enlisted in April, 1861, with one of the companies of Richmond Howitzers and served faithfully and gallantly with that command until the last shot was fired. Soon after the battle of Cold Harbor his efficiency and intrepid conduct won for him promotion to the rank of junior first lieutenant. After being paroled at Richmond, after the surrender, he returned to the duties of private life. He is held in high esteem by his former comrades of the army of Northern Virginia.

William H. McCarthy, a citizen of Richmond, highly esteemed for his worth as a man and his honorable service in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in that city in the year 1842. He was there reared and educated and, in April, 1861, as soon as the State called her loyal sons to her defense, he enlisted as a private in the Second Richmond Howitzers. With this famous artillery command he served throughout the entire war, winning promotion to the rank of corporal. He took part in the first repulse of the Federal invaders at Big Bethel, on the peninsula, and subsequently participated in all the important actions of his command, which won its laurels upon some of the most famous and desperately contested battlefields of the war. He fought with honor at Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Petersburg, Sailor's Creek, and finally at Appomattox, where he was surrendered and paroled with the army whose glory and hardships he had so long shared. At the close of this devoted and highly meritorious service, he returned to the duties of civil life, and since then has rounded out a life so honorably begun by a successful business career. He still cherishes the old army, and the cause for which it fought, and is a valued member of the R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Howitzer association.

Lieutenant Robert McChesney, a member of a prominent family of Rockbridge county, was one of the first martyrs of the war and perhaps the first Virginia soldier killed in combat. He was a native of Brownsburg, and, previous to secession, was a lieutenant of the cavalry company of Capt. J. R. McNutt, attached to the One Hundredth and Forty-fourth Virginia militia regiment. His company was one of the first called into service, in 1861, and was sent across the mountains to operate with General Garnett's command in Barbour and Tucker counties. He was ordered, on June 29th, with a scouting party of ten men, into Tucker county, to break up an election to be held under Federal protection, but, when near his destination, received such advices of the strength of the enemy as to persuade him to turn back. At this moment the Yankees developed from an ambush in his rear and opened fire. Lieutenant McChesney gallantly determined to cut his way out and all of his party but two escaped. He was, unfortunately, killed upon the spot. His body was tenderly cared for by the friends of the Confederacy in that region, and, after the close of hostilities, Colonel Irvine, who commanded the Federal party, sent the dead hero's sword and personal effects to his brother, J. Z. McChesney, with a letter expressing his admiration of the bravery of his former enemy. He was twenty-nine years old when he fell and had already manifested soldierly qualities which promised a brilliant

career. James Z. McChesney, a brother of the foregoing, was born in Rockbridge county, in 1843. After attending one session of Washington college he entered the Virginia military institute in January, 1862, and, in May following, accompanied the corps of cadets to the battlefield of McDowell, where they participated in the fight, attached to the Stonewall brigade. Returning to the institute, he left there in July and, just before the second battle of Manassas, enlisted as a private in the Seventeenth battalion of Virginia cavalry, afterward the Eleventh cavalry regiment, Rosser's brigade. In August, 1863, he was transferred to the Fourteenth Virginia cavalry, in the brigade of Gen. A. G. Jenkins. Among the battles in which he participated in the course of his military career were, Second Manassas, Gettysburg, Monocacy, the skirmish before Washington, D. C., Hagerstown, Brandy Station, Moorefield, Fairmount, Petersburg, North Mountain Station, and the operations against the Lynchburg raid of Hunter. With the latter engagements was begun a period of constant fighting, which lasted until October, 1864, when, in an exhausted condition, he was seized with typhoid fever, which put an end to his service. In the summer of 1865 he was paroled at Staunton, and then returned to his home in Rockbridge county and was engaged in farming until his removal to Charleston, W. Va., in 1869.

Tazewell M. McCorkle, since 1891 pastor of the Third Presbyterian church at Lynchburg, served with credit as third lieutenant in Hampden-Sidney Boys, and afterward as private in First Rockbridge artillery, Confederate army. He was born at Lynchburg, June 5, 1837, and was reared at that city and educated at the Washington-Lee and Hampden-Sidney colleges. In May, 1861, he left college with the students to enter the Confederate service, their company being assigned to the Twentieth Virginia infantry regiment, as Company G. With this command he served in the West Virginia campaign of 1861, under General Garnett and Colonel Pegram, until he was captured at Rich Mountain, early in July. He was held as a prisoner in the barracks at that post two or three weeks and then paroled. During the period of his parole he entered the Union theological seminary in Prince Edward county and studied in preparation for the ministry until the spring of 1863, when, having been regularly exchanged, he re-entered the Confederate ranks as a private in the First Rockbridge artillery, the old company of Gen. Stonewall Jackson. In this command he served until the close of the war, participating in the fighting of his battery, including the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Second Cold Harbor, Tilghman's Gate (where their guns were captured), and Fort Harrison. He was subsequently sent to Farmville with a detail of sick soldiers, and, when the army was surrendered, was on duty at Rough Creek, Charlotte county. Upon the close of hostilities he made his home at Lynchburg, and, after farming for a time in Roanoke county, he entered the Presbyterian ministry. In this work his ability and zealous devotion are widely recognized and he enjoys the love and esteem of his people.

Captain William N. McDonald, during life a distinguished educator, was born in Hampshire county, now within the limits of West Virginia, February 3, 1834. He is a son of Col. Angus Mc-

Donald, distinguished in the early organization of Confederate forces in the lower Shenandoah valley, who raised the regiment which was the nucleus of Ashby's cavalry command. Five other sons of Colonel McDonald, as well as two sons-in-law, entered the Confederate service. Few families were more distinguished and none more thoroughly devoted to the cause of Southern independence. In the quiet years preceding the great war, Captain McDonald was educated at the university of Virginia, taking the master's degree, after which he accepted the position of professor of rhetoric and principal of the high school at Louisville, Ky. That position he subsequently resigned to enter upon the practice of law at Charlestown, Jefferson county, which was his occupation when the swift current of events in 1861 swept the Old Dominion into the great Confederacy of the South. He enlisted on April 19, 1861, as a private in a company which became Company G of the Second Virginia infantry, and was assigned to the brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson, soon to become famous as "Stonewall" through the firm stand made by his men under his command at the battle of Manassas. Private McDonald took part in that engagement and continued with the Second regiment a year, after which he was transferred to the engineer corps, with the rank of second lieutenant. Soon afterward resigning that position, he joined Company D of the Eleventh Virginia cavalry, a command with which he served one year, participating in the cavalry operations under Gen. Turner Ashby in the valley and the battles of Slaughter Mountain and Sharpsburg. He was then promoted captain of artillery and assigned to ordnance duty, in which he continued until the end of the struggle. Subsequent battles in which he participated were Gettysburg and the second day's fight in the Wilderness, May 6, 1864, when he received a severe wound in the side. He returned to his profession of teaching after the close of hostilities, and, after conducting a boarding school in Clarke county three years, was recalled to his former position of superintendent of the Louisville high school, which he held for four years. This position he resigned to establish the Rugby school at Louisville, which he conducted with much success for seventeen years. After that he was in charge of the Shenandoah university school, established by him at Berryville, one of the best preparatory schools of the State. In conjunction with John S. Blackburn, of Alexandria, in 1867, Captain McDonald prepared and subsequently published a school history of the United States. For two years he edited the "Southern Bivouac," at Louisville, and at the time of his death, was engaged in writing a history of Ashby's cavalry. He was a member of J. E. B. Stuart camp, No. 24, at Berryville. In 1867 he was married to Miss Catherine S. Gray, of Leesburg, and they had eight children. The eldest son, William N. McDonald, Jr., is a civil engineer of the Nashville, Chattanooga & St. Louis railroad. Captain McDonald died at his home in Berryville in 1897.

George W. R. McDonell, of Portsmouth, Va., a veteran of the Portsmouth light artillery, is a native of that city, born in 1844. On April 17, 1861, he enlisted in the Light Artillery, then the oldest artillery company in Virginia, with a record of gallant service at the battle of Crane Island in 1812. Under Capt. Cary F.

Grimes, it went into active service April 20, 1861, and during that night witnessed the burning of the Gosport navy yard. The company was stationed at Hoffer's creek, protecting the shore from Craney island to the Nansemond river, until the spring of 1862, when on the 2d of May, having been ordered against the Federal forces operating from Roanoke island, one section of the battery defeated two United States gunboats on the Pasquotank river. Soon afterward Norfolk was abandoned and the battery joined the army of Northern Virginia and was attached to Anderson's division. Grimes and his men were engaged in the opening fight of the Seven Days, and at Malvern Hill were conspicuous for gallantry, holding their position at close range, losing heavily in men and horses, fighting about forty Federal guns behind breastworks. They took part in the fight at Warrenton Springs in August, at Second Manassas charged in line with Mahone's brigade in the final assault which broke the left wing of Pope's army, and one section of the battery, in which Private McDonell served, fought with Colonel Parham at Crampton's Gap against great odds until driven over the mountain. At Sharpsburg, Captain Grimes was in command of a battalion consisting of his battery, Huger's and Moorman's and the Norfolk light artillery, and at a critical moment rendered effective assistance in the defeat of Sumner's corps. In this fight Captain Grimes was struck from his horse by a rifle ball, wounded through the bowels and while cared for by his men, one of them was killed, and Grimes received another ball through the thigh and died in about one hour. He was a splendid officer and under his daring leadership his brave men gained the praise of their division commander. Lieut. John H. Thompson succeeded him, but soon afterward, on account of the lack of horses, this battery and a number of others, were disbanded and the members assigned to other commands. Private McDonell was with the detachment assigned to Moorman's battery, Lynchburg artillery, of the horse artillery of Fitzhugh Lee's command, and soon afterward, as gunner of a rifle gun, he was distinguished in the defeat of Federal gunboats on the Rappahannock river, December 4th. After fighting at Fredericksburg he was detailed for a time as mail carrier, while the army was in winter quarters at Culpeper Court House. At such times the army received mail with some regularity, and many letters from home cheered the hearts of the soldiers. The postage stamps bearing the face of President Davis, made his appearance familiar to the whole army. In 1863 Private McDonell fought through the campaigns including Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and Brandy Station; from May, 1864, was in the desperate struggle from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, then was with Fitzhugh Lee's cavalry in Early's Valley campaign against Sheridan, and in the spring of 1865 was engaged in continuous fighting on the retreat until the surrender at Appomattox. He escaped with the cavalry, and with his comrades, leaving their guns at Lynchburg, attempted to unite with Johnston's army, but was delayed at the Catawba river by Stoneman's cavalry until after the surrender at Greensboro. Throughout the war he was valiant in duty and received honorable wounds at Malvern Hill, Brandy Station, the Wilderness, and Petersburg. Since the war Captain McDonell has been for twenty-



Eng^d by H & C Koovvoets, NY

Henry McQuinn

five years in the service of the Seaboard air line railroad, and since 1893 he has been superintendent of the Portsmouth street railway.

Hunter Holmes McGuire, M. D., LL. D., one of the most distinguished surgeons of the South, and prominent in the medical service of the Confederate States army as chief surgeon of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Winchester, October 11, 1835. He was the son of the late Hugh H. McGuire, M. D., in his time one of the most noted physicians of Virginia. His family has resided in the valley of Virginia since the coming of his ancestor, Edward McGuire, from Ireland, in the latter half of the last century. On the maternal side his ancestry is also of Irish origin, and in this line was Hunter Holmes, whose name he bears, who fell in battle at Mackinaw, in 1814, his gallantry eliciting the presentation of a sword to his family by the legislature of Virginia. Dr. McGuire devoted himself to the study of medicine from an early age and was graduated by the Winchester medical college in 1855. He continued his studies at the university of Pennsylvania and Jefferson medical college at Philadelphia, and became professor of anatomy at Winchester medical college in 1856. Returning to Philadelphia, in 1858, he met with success as an instructor in surgery until at the time of the John Brown raid at Harper's Ferry, becoming justly offended by the comments regarding that affair, he organized a movement which resulted in all the Southern medical students at Philadelphia, over three hundred in number, leaving that city and entering the medical college of Virginia. The expenses of this transfer were met by the city of Richmond, whose people welcomed the students with a great popular demonstration. On completing his studies at Richmond, Dr. McGuire returned to Winchester, in 1860, and, in the following year he volunteered as a private in Company F of the Second Virginia regiment, with which he marched to Harper's Ferry. In May he was commissioned surgeon and assigned to duty as medical director of the department at Harper's Ferry, then under command of Gen. T. J. Jackson. Upon the organization of the Stonewall brigade, Dr. McGuire was assigned to that command, at Jackson's request, as brigade surgeon, and he continued on the staff of that famous leader, next as medical director of the army of the Valley, and finally as chief surgeon of the Second corps of the army of the Virginia, until Jackson fell at Chancellorsville. He ministered to the beloved general in his mortal illness, and was at his bedside when his heroic spirit passed away. During this service under Jackson, Dr. McGuire took part in the arduous but glorious Valley campaign of 1862, the battles before Richmond, the Manassas and Maryland campaigns of 1862 and the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. Early in this career, at the battle of Winchester, he was presented with a sword by Jackson, as a token of his appreciation, and his service throughout was such as to justify his selection for important position by the great leader. Dr. McGuire continued as chief surgeon of the Second corps under General Ewell, serving in the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, the battle of Gettysburg and the campaign against Grant, from the Wilderness and Spottsylvania to Cold Harbor. Subsequently he acted as medical director of the army of the Valley under General Early, participating in the movement through

Maryland against Washington, and in the battles at Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Waynesboro. In the latter affair he was captured, but was immediately paroled for fifteen days and then released. He then rejoined the Second corps, under General Gordon, and served as medical director until Appomattox. His activity and genius were manifested in various ways for the betterment of the service during the course of the war. As early as the time of the battle of Winchester, May, 1862, he released eight Federal surgeons on the simple pledge that they would use their influence to secure the release of Confederate surgeons, and, a few weeks later, all the medical officers held as prisoners, North and South, were released. As late as February, 1865, he released the medical director of Sheridan's army, and, in consideration of his action, he was himself released by Sheridan immediately after the disaster at Waynesboro. He was the first to organize reserve corps hospitals, and about the same time perfected the ambulance corps, which rendered efficient service. In the reports of his generals commanding, his zeal and ability are frequently commended. At the close of the war Dr. McGuire made his home at Richmond, having been appointed to the chair of surgery in the medical college of Virginia. This professorship he resigned in 1878, but, in 1880, accepted the emeritus professorship of surgery, which he still holds. His practice became extensive and he was honored with official positions in many professional organizations, State and National. In 1877 the degree of LL. D. was conferred upon him by the university of North Carolina and, in the following year, the honor was repeated by Jefferson medical college of Philadelphia. In 1883 he established St. Luke's home for the sick at Richmond, which has since continued under his management with great success.

Lieutenant John P. McGuire, of Richmond, a well-known educator, was born in Essex county, Va., in 1836. He resided in that county until he had reached the age of fourteen years, and then accompanied his parents to Fairfax county, Va., where his father, Rev. John P. McGuire, a prominent minister and teacher, took charge of the Episcopal high school of Virginia. He studied for two years at the university of Virginia, and, returning in 1856, assisted his father in the work of the school until the outbreak of the war. After Virginia had united with the Confederacy, he was appointed to a position in the war department at Richmond, which he filled with ability during a period of two and a half years, at the same time being enrolled among the volunteer local troops for the defense of the city. In the spring or summer of 1864 he entered the navy with the commission of first lieutenant and instructor, and was assigned to the schoolship Patrick Henry, under command of Capt. W. H. Parker. In this capacity he served until the evacuation of Richmond. Then, with the officers and crew of the Patrick Henry, and the C. S. midshipmen, armed as infantry, he acted as special guard of the treasure of the government, variously estimated between three and five hundred thousand dollars in specie. This money, several times threatened with capture and plunder, was safely conveyed from Richmond to Washington, Ga., and thence back to Abbeville, S. C., because of certain movements of the enemy. At Abbeville, President Davis

and certain members of his cabinet passing through, it was surrendered to General Reagan, acting secretary of the treasury, and by him again taken under guard to Washington, Ga. At that point the silver coin, by order of President Davis, was paid out to the remnant of the army which was escorting the president and cabinet, and the gold was left to be distributed for specified purposes by the acting treasurer of the Confederate States. The safe guard, safe delivery and honorable distribution of this treasure have been subjects of gratifying reflection to the officers and men who had it in charge and to all Confederates. Captain Parker and his company soon found it necessary to surrender; and, subsequently, Lieutenant McGuire returned to Richmond and resumed the profession of teaching, in which he has since continued. His school at Richmond ranges from 140 to 160 boys, and is well known. He ranks among the best academic instructors of the State.

H. M. McIlhany, of Staunton, Va., formerly an efficient member of the staff of General Longstreet, was born in Loudoun county, Va., in 1840. In April, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Warrenton Rifles, a volunteer organization which was enrolled as Company K of the Seventeenth regiment of Virginia infantry. In July, 1861, he participated in the battles of Bull Run and Manassas, and, in the same month, was appointed ordnance quartermaster-sergeant, attached to General Longstreet's headquarters. He continued to serve in this capacity until February, 1864, when he was promoted captain and assistant chief quartermaster of Longstreet's, the First army corps, of the army of Northern Virginia. In August, 1864, he yielded this position to become first sergeant in Company F of the Forty-third Virginia battalion of cavalry under command of Colonel Mosby. While with Mosby he participated in many exciting and spirited affairs until December 21, 1864, when he was captured in Fauquier county and sent to the Old Capitol prison. In the following February, after a long regime of condemned beef and pork, he, and eighty-six others of Mosby's men were handcuffed, and, guarded by twenty-eight armed soldiers, were transferred to Fort Warren, in Boston harbor, where they were held until June 15, 1865. Since his return to civil life he has been engaged in mercantile pursuits at various places, including Staunton, where he has resided since 1873.

Captain Robert Dunn McIlwaine, late of Petersburg, Va., is deserving of mention among the gallant soldiers contributed by Petersburg to the Confederate armies. He was born at that city in 1828, the son of A. G. McIlwaine, a native of Ireland, who immigrated to America and became a business man of Petersburg, and married Lucy Atkinson Pryor, daughter of Theodric Pryor, D. D., a Presbyterian minister of considerable repute. She was a sister of Judge Roger Pryor, of New York. Captain McIlwaine entered the Confederate service as a private in the Petersburg cavalry. In 1863 he was elected captain of his company, and he served in this rank until, toward the latter part of the war, his health failed and he was compelled to retire from active service. The exposure and arduous service he had undergone wrecked his health, and he died in 1876. His son, Robert Dunn McIlwaine, M. D., prominent

among the younger physicians of Petersburg, was born in Dinwiddie county, in 1864, and received his early education at McCabe's school at Petersburg. Subsequently he pursued professional studies at the university of Virginia and was graduated in 1885. He passed the examinations of the State board in 1886, and, having also pursued a course of study in New York, he entered upon the practice at Petersburg. He is a member of the State and local medical associations, has made interesting contributions to the medical press, and is physician to the city almshouse and the State colored school. In 1887 he was married to Miss Mary Plummer, daughter of William T. Plummer.

Major William Cranch McIntire, who has been professionally engaged as a patent attorney at Washington since the war, has an honorable record of prominent service, both in the army of Northern Virginia and the Trans-Mississippi department. He was born at Washington, in the year 1841, and was reared and educated at that city. In April, 1861, he made his way to Richmond and enlisted as a private in the Thirtieth regiment of Virginia infantry. In that command he served for nine months and was then promoted lieutenant and assigned to duty as aide-de-camp on the staff of Brig.-Gen. John G. Walker, who commanded a brigade during the Peninsular campaign. In this capacity he participated in the Seven Days' battles and the engagement at Cedar Run, and then, moving to join the main army in the Maryland campaign on the staff of the division which General Walker then commanded, he was promoted captain just before the battle of Sharpsburg. In this battle he participated and was wounded. Soon afterward he was ordered to the Trans-Mississippi department, where he reported to Lieut.-Gen. Theophilus H. Holmes, commander of that department. In a few weeks he resigned, but soon re-entered the service with the rank of captain and quartermaster, as which he served at Little Rock until the evacuation of that place, in September, 1863. He was then on duty at Fulton, Ark., establishing an army repair shop, a few months after which he received orders to organize the quartermaster-general's bureau for the department, at Shreveport, La., and was commissioned major by Gen. E. Kirby Smith, then in command of the department. He served in the signal defeat of Banks' expedition against Shreveport, at Mansfield, in the spring of 1864, and was wounded in that engagement. He was then assigned to the duty of gathering the captured and abandoned river and land transportation. In discharge of this order Major McIntire took a boat and followed the Federal fleet down the river and seized all the hospital stores from a boat just below the wing dam, constructed by the Federals for the passage of their fleet over the rapids. Returning, his boat was the first to make the passage of the famous dam up the current. Subsequently he was sent from Shreveport, by General Smith, to convey to Richmond more than forty battleflags which had been captured by the Confederate army, also bearing a recommendation for his promotion on account of gallant and valuable services. On this journey, when about eight miles from St. Joseph, La., he was captured by a Federal scouting party, with all his flags and messages, and sent to New Orleans. He was held at that city as a prisoner of war until October, when he was sent by sea to Fort Lafayette and

imprisoned there until in December, 1864, he was released by order of President Lincoln. After his parole he remained at Washington and subsequently became engaged in practice before the patent office, in which he has continued to the present time with pleasing success.

W. D. McKemy, now a distinguished jurist of Dayton, Ohio, is a native of Virginia and served that State and its cause with unswerving fidelity, in field and camp and prison pen, during the long war of the Confederacy. Born in Rockbridge county, Va., in 1843, he passed there his childhood and youth until, at the age of eighteen years, he enlisted, in August, 1861, in the military service. He became a private in the Twenty-fifth Virginia infantry regiment and served in that command until he fell into the hands of the enemy in 1864. He participated first in the operations in West Virginia, fighting at Cheat Mountain, Allegheny Mountain and McDowell, after which he was overcome with sickness and was not capacitated for service until after six or eight months, spent in hospital. On his recovery he immediately rejoined his command at Gordonsville, Va., in time to take part in the battle of Cedar Mountain, and share in the Maryland campaign, fighting at Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg. During the Pennsylvania campaign he took part in the encounter at Chambersburg and the famous three days' struggle at Gettysburg, and, in the desperate fighting of 1864, did his duty in the bloody struggles at the Wilderness and Spottsylvania. During the fighting on the latter field, in May, 1864, he was captured by Hancock, with a large part of the division of Gen. Edward Johnson, in which he served. Then began a long and wearisome imprisonment, which was not terminated until June 30, 1865, long after all hostilities had ceased. He was held at Point Lookout, Md., until December, 1864, and the remainder of his confinement was at Elmira, N. Y. Upon his release he returned to his Virginia home, whence, in October, 1866, he removed to Darke county, Ohio. There he attended school and was graduated at the high school, and after supporting himself for some time by teaching school, he removed to Dayton and entered the clerical force at the court house. In this service he remained for several years, two in the office of the probate judge, two in the recorder's office, three as deputy sheriff and three as deputy treasurer of the county of Montgomery, winning the popular favor in each position, and all this time being also engaged in reading law and fitting himself for the profession which he ultimately intended to adopt. In 1878 he was admitted to the bar, and, in the fall of the same year, was nominated for the office of probate judge. Defeated by a small majority at that time, he continued in the law practice and, in 1881, was the successful candidate for the probate judgeship. Subsequently he was twice re-elected, serving upon the bench in all nine years. Since leaving that position he has resumed the practice, in which he has attained high rank. As a gentleman and an influential citizen, he does honor to his martial alma mater, the army of Northern Virginia, which he represents, with others, in that handsome Ohio city.

John McLees, of Williamsburg, a veteran of the Charles City Guard, a gallant organization, which shared the historic career of Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, enjoys the distinction of having been the only officer of the company, either com-

missioned or non-commissioned, who was permitted by the fortunes of war to serve with the company from enlistment to the end. He was born in Ireland, June 5, 1833, the son of Dennis and Sarah Jane (Patton) McLees, with whom he came to America in 1837, and settling first at Brooklyn, removed to Charles City county, Va., in 1852. There his father died in 1872 and his mother in 1878. He assisted in the organization of the Charles City Southern Guard, in May, 1860, and entered the active service on May 9, 1861, as corporal of this command, which was assigned as Company K to the Fifty-third Virginia regiment of infantry, of Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division. His first service was at Jamestown, until August, 1861, then at Mulberry Point until the evacuation of the peninsula, when his company was called to Richmond and participated in the battle of Seven Pines and the Seven Days' battles. Subsequently he fought at Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Chester Station and Five Forks, and every other engagement of Pickett's division, except at Drewry's Bluff, when he was in hospital at Richmond on account of wounds received at Gettysburg and Chester Station. After being wounded at Gettysburg he was captured on the retreat and was held as a prisoner of war for seven weeks. He was again captured at Five Forks and was imprisoned at Point Lookout until June 15, 1865. At the time of capture he held the rank of orderly-sergeant of his company. The killing of the color-sergeant of Mr. McLees' company, in the charge at Gettysburg, with the colors in his hand, has been a subject of historical mention, and the name of this hero, according to Mr. McLees' recollection, is Blackburn. Since the close of hostilities Mr. McLees has resided in James City county and, since 1882, at Williamsburg. He is a member of Magruder-Ewell camp, United Confederate Veterans.

B. F. McLemore, of Courtland, Va., since 1883 clerk of the county court of Southampton county, rendered efficient service during the Confederate war as an officer of Company G, Third Virginia regiment. He was born in Southampton county in 1843, the son of James and Mattie M. (Barclay) McLemore. His father, James McLemore, a farmer and native of Virginia, was the son of James McLemore, a native of Scotland, who served with the American troops in the war of 1812. His mother was the daughter of John Barclay, of North Carolina, a man of much prominence in his county and a member of the State senate. Mr. McLemore received an education in the schools of his county, but abandoned his studies, in the spring of 1861, and enlisted as third sergeant in Company G of the Third Virginia regiment. During 1861 he was stationed with his company in the vicinity of Smithfield and left there in March, 1862, to reinforce General Magruder at Yorktown. He participated in the fighting with McClellan's army, including the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Savage Station and Frayser's Farm, and then took part in the Second Manassas campaign, the capture of Harper's Ferry and the battle of Sharpsburg. At Fredericksburg, in December, 1862, he participated in the final repulse of Burnside's troops and, in February following, accompanied Longstreet's corps to southeastern Virginia and North Carolina. In the charge of Pickett's division, on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg, he, having been previously

promoted first sergeant, was left the ranking officer of his company by the killing or wounding of all his superior officers. Among the heroic band which entered the Federal lines on Cemetery ridge, he was taken prisoner and afterward confined at Fort McHenry and Point Lookout until May, 1864. He was soon afterward exchanged, and he then rejoined his command at Dutch Gap and continued to serve in the defense of Richmond and Lynchburg until the evacuation, also during the winter of 1864 holding the position of chief clerk of an official examining board. He took part in the battle of Hatcher's Run and, after fighting at Dinwiddie Court House and Five Forks, marched with his company to Appomattox and at the time of the surrender was its ranking officer. Though participating in many fierce engagements, he escaped with but two slight wounds. After the war he engaged in farming in Southampton county, until 1887, when he was elected clerk of the county court. He has also served as deputy treasurer and deputy sheriff. He is a member of the camp of Confederate Veterans and of several fraternal orders. In 1865 he was married to Rosa, daughter of James D. Westbrook. She died in 1894, leaving six children: J. L., an attorney at Suffolk; William T., a student of medicine; H. B., Mattie, wife of Thomas H. Birdsong; Josephine, wife of H. W. Bowen; and Pearl.

James Macgill, since the war a resident of Pulaski City, Va., is a native of Maryland, born at Hagerstown, December 24, 1844. He was one of those spirited sons of Maryland who, with his three brothers, C. G. W., William D. and David G. E., enlisted in arms for the defense of their sister State, Virginia, when their own commonwealth was overrun by the Federal armies. The two latter enlisted in Company C, First Maryland cavalry, and Dr. C. G. W. was surgeon of the Second Virginia infantry, Stonewall brigade. Dr. Charles Macgill, the father of the four boys, was arrested, with the Maryland legislature, in 1861, as he was major-general of the Maryland militia at the time and was looked upon as a dangerous man by the secretary of war of the United States. He was kept in prison at Fort Warren, Boston harbor, until early in 1863, when he came South and served as full surgeon in the C. S. A. until the surrender. In June, 1861, James Macgill became a private in Company C, First Maryland cavalry, under Capt. Robert Carter Smith, who later succeeded Col. Ridgely Brown in command of the regiment. Private Macgill was identified with the record of that chivalrous band of troopers throughout the war, serving in many battles and skirmishes. He was with Jackson in the famous Valley campaign of 1862, rode under the leadership of the gallant J. E. B. Stuart in many raids and heroic charges, participated in the Gettysburg campaign, and shared the service of the Maryland Line in 1864, with Early in the valley and through Maryland, and with Hampton at Trevilian's. While the army was lying in the Petersburg lines, during the latter part of 1864 and until the evacuation of the Confederate capital, he was detailed for duty with the topographical engineers, and rendered important service in that capacity in Henrico, Chesterfield, Hanover, Amelia and Dinwiddie counties. After the evacuation of Petersburg, he returned to Baltimore and was there imprisoned during the excitement which followed the assassination of President Lincoln, from April 18th

until the 1st of May, when he was released and furnished a pass to Richmond, by way of Fortress Monroe. Since then he has been a citizen of Virginia. Mr. Macgill is a direct descendant of Rev. James Macgill, who was sent to Queen Caroline parish, Anne Arundel county, Md., by the bishop of London, in 1728. This founder of the American branch of the family was the son of Sir David Macgill, of Rankeillour, Scotland, Viscount of Oxford, and his wife, Elizabeth Ruthven, great-granddaughter of William, second Lord Ruthven. Sir David was a direct descendant of Sir James McGill, provost of Edinborough in the reign of James V., who received a charter to lands in 1538, and was among the first to embrace the reformed religion. His wife was Helen Wardlow, of Fife. The famous Maj. James Breathed, of Maryland, was a descendant of Rev. James MacGill, through his mother, Ann MacGill Williams. The original parchment, showing the lineage, was brought over by Rev. James MacGill, and is still in the possession of the American family. Through their neglect, though rightful heirs, the estates and titles of the family are now in the possession of the heirs of Sir John Dalrymple, descendant of Elizabeth MacGill Hamilton. Thomas Gennings, the last attorney-general of Maryland, under George III., was the great-grandfather of the subject of this notice. James Macgill married, February 12, 1868, Miss Mary Belle Prince, a niece of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, and settled in Pulaski county, Va., in January, 1870. He has been prominently identified with the politics of his State since the war, and has done all he could to uphold Democratic doctrine as laid down by Thomas Jefferson.

J. B. Mack, D. D., a well-known Presbyterian evangelist, of Georgia, and his father, William Mack, both served as chaplains in the army of the Confederate States. A son of the former, Rev. Edward Mack, pastor of the First Presbyterian church of Norfolk, Va., is a worthy example of the young life of the South since the war, the sons of those who endured the storm and stress of that memorable period. He was born at Charleston, S. C., July 16, 1868, and was educated at Davidson college, where he received the degree of A. B. in 1886 and A. M. in 1887. Then determining to follow the sacred calling he entered the Princeton seminary, New Jersey, for theological studies, which he pursued for two years. As a Fellow of the Princeton institution he continued his studies at Berlin, Germany, for a year and a half, and after his return in 1891, had charge for two years of the First Presbyterian church at Charlotte, N. C. He was then called to the Central Presbyterian church at St. Louis, where he served very acceptably for four years, and until he was called to the pastorate of the First Presbyterian church of Norfolk. His advancement in the sacred profession has been notably rapid, and is justified by the depth of his learning and the devotion he daily manifests to the cause of the church and of humanity. In addition to his pulpit duties he has contributed from time to time to the religious press. In 1892 Mr. Mack was married to Miss Mary A. Kirby, of Goldsboro, N. C., a daughter of Dr. George L. Kirby, late a surgeon in the army of the Confederate States.

John H. Maclin, since the war a prominent manufacturer and exporter of Petersburg, during the Confederate period served in

various commands of the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Brunswick county, the son of John F. Maclin, a well-known farmer of that county, whose life ended before 1861. His great-grandfather was a native of Scotland. After receiving his education, at Randolph-Macon college, Mr. Maclin gave his attention to farming at the family homestead in Brunswick county, his occupation at the time of the secession of Virginia. At the first call he enlisted in the Brunswick Guards and went to the front, and, during the first year of the war was stationed at Hardy's bluff on the James river. He was subsequently transferred to the Petersburg Rifles, but, on account of ill health, soon afterward received an honorable discharge. About a year later he was sufficiently recovered to again endure the service, and he became a member of the Petersburg cavalry troop, in whose service he participated for about eighteen months. In 1868 he became a citizen of Petersburg and entered the tobacco trade, in which he is now conspicuous as the senior member of the well-known firm of John H. Maclin & Son. Their manufacturing concern produces about three hundred and twenty-five thousand pounds of plug and twist tobacco and four or five hundred thousand pounds of leaf tobacco annually, large quantities of which they export to foreign lands. His son, Thomas B. Maclin, is the junior member of this firm. Mr. Maclin is an enterprising and valuable citizen, and is highly regarded by his fellow-citizens. He is active in political affairs and took a prominent part in the local campaign of 1896.

Lieutenant Allen Washington Magee, a prominent business man of Clarksville, Va., was mustered into the service of Virginia early in 1861, as a volunteer in the "Petersburg Grays," under Capt. T. H. Bond. His company was stationed at Norfolk during the first year of the war, and was assigned to the Twelfth Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade, as Company C. With this gallant command he fought at Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, on the Petersburg lines, including the battle of the Crater, and at Reams' Station and other fights about Petersburg. After the battle of Spottsylvania he was promoted from private to ensign with the rank of first lieutenant. He was wounded at Spottsylvania and was once captured, but managed to turn the tables on his guard and take them in tow as his prisoners. On the retreat from Petersburg he was again captured but escaped and rejoined the army and was paroled at Appomattox. Mr. Magee is a native of Prince George county, and son of Joseph Magee, a lumber merchant. He was educated at Petersburg, and, after the close of hostilities, entered the mercantile business and the tobacco trade, first at Petersburg and, since 1872, at Clarksville, where he is now the owner of a large warehouse, and is also proprietor of Magee's chlorinated lithia springs. He was married in 1873 to Jeannette C., daughter of William Taylor, of Petersburg, and they have four children: William Allen, Stewart L., Emmett F. and Archibald Preston.

Daniel W. Mahone, of Hampton, Va., a veteran of the Nottoway Light artillery, was born at Hampton, October 3, 1837. His father, Daniel Mahone, born in 1797, in James City county, died in 1844, and was survived by his widow, Judith Robinson Armistead, until

1864, her life passing away on the same day that her son fell wounded on a Georgia battlefield. Young Mahone was educated at Hampton military academy, under Col. John B. Cary, until the age of fifteen, when he entered mercantile life. When the war broke out he had been, for three years or more, engaged at Richmond as a clerk in a drug store, an employment which he abandoned in July, 1861, to enlist as a private in the Nottoway artillery, commanded by Capt. W. C. Jeffress. With this command he served throughout the war, with promotion to the ranks of sergeant and corporal. During 1861 and 1862 his battery was connected with the command of Gen. Humphrey Marshall in Kentucky, eastern Tennessee and southwest Virginia. After serving under circumstances of peculiar hardship in the Cumberland mountains, during the winter of 1861, he participated in the battle of Middle Creek, Ky., in which the Confederates repulsed the attacks of the Federals under Col. James A. Garfield. Subsequently Mr. Mahone served under General Marshall in southwest Virginia, fighting at Princeton in May, 1862. In the following summer he marched with his command into Kentucky again, co-operating with Bragg, and then returned to southwest Virginia. During 1863 he was attached to the forces under General Buckner, operating in Tennessee and Georgia, and participated in the battle of Chickamauga and the many battles of the Atlanta campaign, in one of which he was wounded, August 9, 1864. A month later he rejoined his command, near Macon, Ga., and continued in the service until the battery surrendered its guns at Hamburg. Subsequently he resumed his occupation as a drug clerk, in Macon, Ga., Hampton, Va., and Baltimore, Md., until 1883, when he embarked in the same business at Hampton, a business venture which has been quite successful. He is loyal to his comrades and is past lieutenant-commander and treasurer of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3. In 1882 he was married to Mary Theresa Reardon, who died September 1, 1884.

James A. Maloney, M. D., late of Washington, D. C., was a native of Baltimore, Md., born in 1846, the son of Daniel Maloney, also a native of that State, who served as a private in the Maryland Line during the war with Mexico. The mother of Dr. Maloney was the daughter of Anthony Grady, who was born in Ireland and participated in the Revolution of 1798 in that country, and, on immigrating, became a member of the Second company, Fifty-first regiment of infantry, Maryland Line, and fought at North Point and Fort McHenry in the war of 1812. When the Northern troops were brought to Baltimore, on April 19, 1861, young Grady, though but a youth at the time, and receiving his education at St. Joseph's academy, shared in the popular demonstration against the invasion of the city, and, during the mêlée, received a gunshot wound in the leg. This was not so serious, however, as to prevent his leaving two days later for Richmond, where he eagerly sought service in the Confederate ranks. He was enlisted in the company of Capt. Joseph Forrest, in the Virginia military, at Mathias Point, in June, 1861, and he remained with that command until it was disbanded in the following September. In October he became a member of the Baltimore light artillery, with which he served until, in February, 1862, he was stricken with typho-pneumonia and sent to hospital at Front Royal. He was transferred to the hospital at Rich-

mond at the evacuation of Manassas, and, as a convalescent, in June, 1862, he took part in the battles of Seven Pines and Gaines' Mill, receiving a wound in the left arm at the former battle. His physical condition, however, would not permit of continued service in the field and he was assigned to duty in the laboratory at Richmond, where he remained until August following, when he received an honorable discharge on account of physical disability. In the following October, however, he re-enlisted, and entered the ordnance department under Colonel Dimmock, with whom he remained at Richmond until the fall of 1863, when Dr. Maloney received severe injuries in the explosion of the laboratory, which unfitted him for further service. Still anxious to be of some utility in the cause, he refused a discharge and asked for some detailed duty. As a result of this application he made his way to Washington and served during the remainder of the war in collecting information for the Confederate government. It was dangerous employment, but his tact and shrewdness availed to preserve him from arrest until the night following the assassination of President Lincoln, when he was seized as a suspect but released on the next day. After the establishment of peace he took up the study of law at Washington, and, being admitted to practice in 1876, followed that profession with success until 1883. Then feeling a greater natural inclination toward the pursuit of scientific studies, he devoted himself to the study of applied physics, and, after taking a course of chemistry at Georgetown university, entered the medical department of the university in 1886. He continued his professional studies, in 1888, at the university of Maryland, and, in 1890, in Columbia university, where he was graduated in 1891. After that date he continued in the practice of medicine at Washington and attained distinction as a well-grounded and skillful practitioner. Dr. Maloney was an active member of the Washington camp of United Confederate Veterans, of which he was surgeon in 1894 and commander in the year 1895.

Michael Maloney, who has been a resident of the national capital during the past ten years, and, during the war was a gallant soldier of the army of Northern Virginia, serving during the entire war, was born in Ireland in 1832. When a boy of thirteen years he came to America and made his home in Allegheny county, Va., where he found employment in agricultural pursuits during the subsequent fifteen years. When the State, of which he had become a loyal and devoted citizen, determined to sever her connection with the Federal government, he promptly enlisted for her military defense and was enrolled as a private in the Twenty-seventh Virginia infantry. His valor and meritorious conduct were rewarded by promotion to the rank of orderly-sergeant during his subsequent career in the campaigns and battles of the army. He took part in the battles of Harper's Ferry, First Manassas, Kernstown, Port Republic, Cedar Creek and the Wilderness, among others of less importance. After the battles of the Wilderness, he was detailed for special duty and ordered to Babb county, Va., where he was employed in the manufacture of saltpeter for the army, until the close of the military operations. During his service he escaped without further injury than a slight wound received at Kernstown. Owing to this occupation at the time of the surrender of the army he was not paroled

at the close of the war. When assured that the Confederacy was dissolved, he returned to his home and soon afterward was able to purchase a farm in Augusta county, where he was engaged for several years in farming. In 1887 he removed to the city of Washington, where he has since been quite successfully occupied in the business of a contractor.

W. P. Manning, M. D., of Washington, D. C., a veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Jefferson county, now a part of the State of West Virginia, December 8, 1844. He was educated at Charlestown until, when a little past sixteen years of age, he enlisted, in April, 1861, in Company G of the Second Virginia regiment of infantry. This regiment was assigned to the brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson and soon became famous at the first battle of Manassas, where Private Manning did his duty and received two wounds. At the end of his year's enlistment he became a member of Company B of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of cavalry and served in this command, in all its engagements, until the close of the war. He then undertook the study of medicine and matriculated at the university of Maryland, where he received the degree of doctor of medicine in 1869. After practicing at Shepherdstown, W. Va., until 1882, he made his home at Washington, where he has established a large practice and enjoys the well justified confidence of the public. He is a member of the Washington association of Confederate veterans, with the rank of surgeon.

Lieutenant Richard A. Mapp, during the war a member of the signal corps, was the son of John D. Mapp, a native of Northampton county, Va. He made his home at Norfolk in the decade preceding the war, and, engaging in the hardware business, became a prominent business man and a valuable citizen. For a considerable period he served upon the city council. He was a member of one of the first companies organized at Norfolk for the Confederate service, Company F, Sixth Virginia regiment and he subsequently was attached as an officer to the signal corps, organized at Norfolk in March, 1862, under the command of Maj. James F. Milligan. It was a service requiring special intelligence, and membership in the command was considered much of an honor. The corps rendered services of great value throughout the war, on the James river, and was relied upon by the Confederate government for information regarding the movements of the Federal fleet and of troops near Fortress Monroe. Lieutenant Mapp survived the war and continued his business career until his death in 1884. His wife was Mary V., daughter of Jacob Ashby.

Robert Thomas Marable, a veteran of the Forty-first Virginia infantry, was born at Walnut Hill, his father's farm home in Sussex county, and now, with his wife, whose maiden name was Alice H. Dillard, resides at Newport News. He enlisted in 1862 in Company A, Forty-first Virginia infantry, Col. J. R. Chambliss, at Norfolk, and served under the command of General Huger and later of General Mahone. With the famous career of Mahone's brigade he was identified part of the time as a non-commissioned officer, until he was captured at Burgess' Mill. He then suffered the hardships of prison life until a short time before the surrender, when he was paroled. Subsequently he was engaged in farming at his old home, until he entered the service of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad. His

brother, John H. Marable, was a member of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry, Col. J. R. Chambliss, throughout the war, and at the time of the death of General Stuart was acting as his courier. Another brother, David Marable, was color-sergeant of Company A, Forty-first regiment, until he was killed at Malvern Hill. Three of his uncles and many others of his family were in the service, and his wife's father, Thaddeus Edward Dillard, was also a brave soldier. Robert Edward Marable, son of the foregoing, was born at Oakleigh, Sussex county, September 25, 1870, and was reared in that county and in Surry, where in youth he was employed in the office of the county clerk. Removing to Newport News in 1892 he became a deputy in the office of the clerk of the corporation court, and pursued the study of law, being admitted to the bar May 11, 1893. His duties as deputy clerk, however, debar him from active practice. He was married November 14, 1893, to Miss Helen Branch, of Isle of Wight county, daughter of James Branch, a Confederate veteran, and they have two children: James Edward and Helen Inez.

Henry Clay Marchant, a prominent manufacturer of military goods, at Charlottesville, Va., was born at that city, April 1, 1838. At the time of the secession of Virginia he was a resident of Petersburg, and, a few months later, he entered the Confederate service as a private in Company A, Twelfth Virginia infantry, then a part of Mahone's brigade of Huger's division. He was with his regiment in the occupation of Norfolk and the adjacent region, and, after the evacuation, he took part in the fighting that followed before Richmond, first being in battle at Drewry's Bluff. Later he took part in the battle of Seven Pines. At the opening of the Seven Days' campaign under General Lee he received a severe wound in the left leg, from a minie ball, and was so disabled that he was unable to return to the service and the close of the war found him yet on crutches. During the period of peace and industrial progress, which has followed, he has taken an active and influential part in business and manufacturing affairs, having been, since its organization in 1869, thoroughly identified with the building up of that important and progressive industry, the Charlottesville woolen mills, which to-day stands at the head of the list for producing goods of the highest quality and finish.

Colonel George Alexander Martin, of Norfolk, a gallant Confederate officer who, in the spring of 1861, led to duty one of the companies of brave men contributed to the cause by Norfolk county, was born in that county, September 3, 1833. His family is one of the oldest in America. The ancestor in England married a sister of Lord Fairfax, and their sons, Thomas, Denny and John, emigrating to America, established in the new world a lineage which has included many who were conspicuous for patriotism, statesmanship and good citizenship. The colonel's great-grandfather, Gen. Joseph Martin, after rendering illustrious service in the war which established the independence of the colonies, spent his latter days in an equally brave and heroic struggle against the untamed forces of nature and the savagery of the red men, being no less conspicuous than Daniel Boone in winning Kentucky for civilization. This worthy ancestor had four sons, one of whom settled in Kentucky, two in Virginia, and one in Elizabeth City, N. C. One of these

sons was George Martin, whose son, James Green Martin, of Norfolk county, was a soldier in the war of 1812, a prominent citizen and extensive planter, and for many years chief of the justice court. He married Maacah, daughter of Alexander Foreman, who was one of the first settlers of Norfolk county; served, it is believed, in the Revolutionary war and became wealthy and influential. The Foreman family is of pure English descent and is one of the oldest in Virginia. Capt. Nehemiah Foreman, brother of Mrs. Martin, served as a captain of cavalry in the war of 1812 and afterward was distinguished for wealth and influence. George Alexander, son of James Green and Maacah Martin, was educated at the university of Virginia, where he was one of the foremost of his class, and after finishing his course, he turned his attention to preparation for the profession of law. He began the practice in Norfolk county in 1857, but was hardly well launched in this career when the crisis of 1860-61 arrived, and he responded to the call of his mother State with his best efforts for her preservation from armed invasion. He took an active part in the organization of a company for the artillery service in St. Bride's parish, of which he was elected captain. This company, called the St. Bride's light artillery, was mustered into the Confederate service, June 26, 1861, but, on account of lack of ordnance, did not find the desired service and was assigned to heavy artillery duty at Lambert's Point until early in 1862, when it was in charge of a battery on the Nansemond river, at Suffolk, until May 10th. Captain Martin and his men were then transferred to Richmond, where the heavy guns were also taken, and there being no field battery for them, they were armed with some old muskets and temporarily attached to the Fourteenth Virginia regiment of Armistead's brigade, with which they took part, poorly equipped as they were, in the battle of Seven Pines. In June they participated in the Seven Days' battles, including Malvern Hill. The company was then detached from the infantry and assigned to the Twentieth battalion, heavy artillery, under Major DeLagniel, for duty in the defense of Richmond. Captain Martin during this service had command in defense of Brook's Pike, where he had some severe skirmishes with Dahlgren's raiders in February, 1864. April 25, 1864, the company was relieved from artillery duty and attached as Company I to the Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment, Stuart's brigade, Pickett's division. In this command Captain Martin led his company in the two important battles of May 10th and 16th, near Drewry's bluff, and, in the battle of Chester's Station, on June 16th, between Pickett's division and the Federal forces, when the latter were foiled in their advance toward the Richmond & Petersburg railroad and driven back to their entrenchments. In the latter fight, the colonel of the Thirty-eighth was killed, and, on March 28, 1865, Captain Martin was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, a well-deserved promotion, to date from December 2, 1864. In these ranks he participated in all the battles of his command. When the army was surrendered at Appomattox he was in the hospital at Lynchburg, and, notwithstanding his feeble condition, he was placed in command of regular infantry by General Colston. After the surrender he made his way South, and, being prevented from reaching Danville by the Federal advance, rode through to Charlotte, N. C., where he joined the forces accompanying President Davis. At

Charlotte a council was held by the officers present to determine their future course, and it was decided to surrender with General Johnston. But Colonel Martin, not approving this course, left the council, followed by several other officers, and they tendered their services to the president as a bodyguard. They were accepted, Colonel Martin to be in command, and accordingly armed themselves with the firearms available, Martin receiving from an aide of the president a sixteen-shooter arm, since presented by him to the museum at Richmond. Soon afterward the president reconsidered his plans and, to avoid the effusion of blood, continued his journey without the "Old Guard," which would have defended their chief to the death. Colonel Martin, with Generals Gilmer and Lawton, followed the president to Washington, Ga., where the cabinet was finally disbanded, after which he rode to Augusta, intending to make his way to Mexico, but, being prevented by the Federal troops, he surrendered and was paroled under the terms of Johnston's capitulation. He then returned to Norfolk and resumed the practice of his profession. Subsequently he resided in New York city four years, while there being a member of the Seventh New York regiment. He successfully practiced his profession there, winning a suit that involved a new application of the law and which was a matter of comment by the press and bar. But failing health compelled him to return to his native State and to outdoor life in the country. In 1881 he was elected to the State senate by the city of Norfolk and the county of Princess Anne, and three years later he resigned to accept the position of railroad commissioner for Virginia to which he was elected by the legislature. After two years' tenure of this office he removed to Norfolk and resumed his legal practice, in which he has achieved prominence and success. At this city he has held the office of police commissioner, and has twice been elected to the Virginia house of delegates from Norfolk county. He is a member of the Catholic church, one of the charter members of Owen's lodge, F. & A. M., and is distinguished alike as a public speaker, lecturer and historical writer of rare ability. In 1857 he was married to Georgia A. Wickens, and they have one son, a lawyer by profession, who bears his father's name, and is married to a daughter of Capt. William E. Peery, a brave Confederate who lost an arm at Gettysburg, and two daughters living: Theresa and Marina. Another daughter, deceased, was May, wife of Samuel C. Peery, of Tazewell county, who left a son, Samuel Cecil Peery. She was distinguished in painting, music and poetry.

Hugh McD. Martin, M. D., of Fredericksburg, a native of Scotland, who enlisted in 1861, with all the ardor of a native Southerner, in the ranks of the Confederacy, was born March 15, 1828. After receiving an education at Glasgow and Edinburgh, he sailed to Louisiana, in 1853, for the benefit of his health and to visit an uncle who had become the owner of a plantation in that State. He was persuaded to remain and finish his medical education in the university of Louisiana, and, after his graduation, in 1855, he practiced his profession in Ouachita parish until 1859, when he returned to Edinburgh to pursue a post-graduate course of study. Early in 1861, hearing of the prospect of war in the United States, he determined to participate in the effort of the South for independence, and reached New York on the first day of March, 1861,

Proceeding directly to New Orleans, he tendered his professional services and was made assistant surgeon of the Fifth Louisiana regiment, a few months later being promoted surgeon. His regiment became a part of the army of Northern Virginia, being assigned to Hays' brigade of Ewell's division, and he shared its service on the field, participating in the discharge of his duties upon the battlefields of Yorktown, Lee's Mill, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles, Cedar Run, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, the "bloody angle" at Spottsylvania, Hanover Court House, and other minor engagements. At Gettysburg he was thrown from his horse and suffered a dislocation of the shoulder, which disabled him for field service for several months. He was given leave of absence, and while yet carrying his arm in a sling, went to Fredericksburg, and was married on July 22, 1863, to Miss Ella McCarty, a beautiful Virginia girl, of Scotch descent, whom he had met at Jackson's headquarters at church in the preceding April. Then, accompanied by his bride, he went to Richmond, where he was detailed for hospital duty for five months. When able to perform field duty, he rejoined his command at Raccoon Ford, and served with it during the remainder of the war, except when absent on furloughs, occasioned by the illness of his wife and himself. After the close of hostilities he established himself in the medical practice at Fredericksburg, where he has since continued, with a well-deserved allotment of the prosperity and happiness that have fallen to Virginia in the latter days. He is a member of the State medical society and holds the office of marine hospital surgeon at the port of Fredericksburg. Dr. Martin has three children living: Catherine, wife of W. L. Seddon; Rev. Hugh McD., Jr., an Episcopal clergyman at Richmond, Va.; and Anne Gilmer, wife of R. E. Stoffregen.

Colonel Rawley White Martin, of the Fifty-third Virginia infantry, was born in Pittsylvania county in 1835. He was educated at the university of Virginia, and was graduated as doctor of medicine in 1858, at the university of New York. He then engaged in the practice of his profession at Chatham, Va., but was hardly well launched in this career before he turned from it for the patriotic service of his State. He enlisted, April 22, 1861, in the Chatham Grays, a company of which he very soon became first lieutenant. His company was assigned as Company I to the Fifty-third Virginia regiment, and participated in the early engagement at Big Bethel. At the reorganization, in the spring of 1862, he was elected captain. In this rank he was identified with the service of Armistead's brigade in the battles of Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' campaign, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, and the Suffolk campaign. In the spring of 1863 he was promoted major and soon afterward advanced to lieutenant-colonel. He was slightly wounded in the battle of Seven Pines and during the Seven Days' battles. At Malvern Hill the regiment was greatly reduced by casualties and sickness. His company was thrown forward as skirmishers and becoming immediately engaged was supported by the remainder of the regiment, driving back the enemy, but meeting a deadly fire. Fletcher Harwood, color-bearer of Company K, was cut down by a shell, and, as recorded in the

War Records, "instantly Captain Martin seized the flag, and with words of encouragement called on all to follow. The noble, manly conduct of Captain Martin was such as to challenge the admiration of all." In the final charge in the evening, Colonel Tomlin reported, "The different members of our regiment were formed into one company, under command of Captain Martin, whose gallantry was not exceeded by any one in that memorable battle." The regiment lost 30 killed and wounded out of 128 in action. For a time thereafter Captain Martin was in command of the regiment. He had also been in command at the battle of Gaines' Mill. In the memorable charge of Pickett's division at Gettysburg he led the advance of his regiment. Fitzhugh Lee, in his life of Gen. R. E. Lee, has written: "It is said that when the head of what had been so grand an attack got within a few yards of the second defensive line it consisted of Armistead, his lieutenant, Colonel Martin, and five men. With the destruction of the head the body perished, and one-half of those who crossed the road and followed Armistead were killed." At this forefront of the tide of Confederate valor Colonel Martin fell, dangerously wounded, within the Federal lines. He lay in the field hospital there three months, and was afterward at the Baltimore hospital until his partial recovery, when he was held as a prisoner of war at Fort McHenry and Point Lookout until May, 1864. Upon being exchanged two months later he was assigned, on account of his wounds, to detached duty, and was sent to South Carolina by the secretary of war to select a site for a military prison. Returning to Virginia in December, in January, 1865, he was put in command of a body of reserves near Rappahannock. After his parole at Bowling Green in June, 1865, he resumed his professional career at Chatham, and remained there until April, 1895, when he removed to Lynchburg. Dr. Martin has been a member of the board of visitors of the university of Virginia, has served since 1893 as president of the State board of health, and as president of the board of medical examiners for Virginia. He was married in 1867 to Ellen, daughter of James Johnson, and they have four sons and two daughters. The ancestry of Dr. Martin has figured in every military struggle in which the State has been intimately interested. His father, Dr. Chesley Martin, born in 1808, was not regularly enlisted in the Confederate service, but he took part in the battles of Big Bethel and Malvern Hill, and being assigned to detail duty with the rank of captain, by Governor Smith, served throughout the war. His grandfather, William Martin, served in the war of 1812, with the rank of sergeant; and his great-grandfather Martin was a soldier of the Revolution. He was president of State medical society in 1886-87.

Thomas Staples Martin, United States senator from Virginia, was born in Albemarle county, July 29, 1847, at the town of Scottsville. In 1853 his parents removed to the country, near that town, where Mr. Martin has resided since that date. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, where he was a cadet from March 1, 1864, to April 9, 1865, and at the university of Virginia, where he was a student during two sessions. Being less than fourteen years of age he did not enlist in the Confederate army during the period of the war, but, while a cadet at the Virginia mili-

tary institute, he was a member of the cadet battalion and a considerable part of his time was spent in the Confederate service. Soon after leaving the university of Virginia he began the reading of law at his home, and qualified himself for the practice of the profession. He was licensed in the fall of 1869, and since that time has devoted himself to the profession closely and with marked success, attaining a prominent position among the lawyers of the State. For a number of years he served as a member of the board of visitors of the Miller manual labor school, of Albemarle county, and as a member of the board of visitors of the university of Virginia, but had never held nor had been a candidate for any political office, State or national, until on December 19, 1893, he was elected United States senator for the term commencing March 4, 1895, to succeed Hon. Eppa Hunton. His term of service will expire March 3, 1901.

Matthew Fontaine Maury, a Virginian, one of the most distinguished of American philosophers, whose discoveries and genius made clear the feasibility of the Atlantic cables, and who was hailed by Humboldt as the founder of a new science, faithfully adhered to his native State during the Confederate era, and rendered important services to the Confederate government. He was born January 16, 1806, in Spottsylvania county, son of Richard and Diana (Minor) Maury. His descent is from a Huguenot refugee, Matthew Maury, who married a great-granddaughter of John de la Fontaine, of the French court, who suffered death because of his religion, in the reign of Charles IX. He was reared in Tennessee, entered the United States navy in his sixteenth year, and made his first cruise in the ship which returned General Lafayette to France. He subsequently made a voyage around the world, and, after various service, published "Maury's Navigation," which was adopted as a naval text-book. He was promoted lieutenant in 1837, and, soon after, met with a painful accident which disabled him for several years and caused lameness for life. During his period of disability he maintained great literary activity, was the cause of reforms in the navy, directed the gauging of the Mississippi, and advocated the connection of the great lakes with the Mississippi by canal. Beginning in 1842, he created the naval observatory at Washington, of which he became the head, and instituted the tabulation of material for charts of the sea. His first chart was received with doubt, but was soon proved to be accurate and invaluable, and his system has since been applied to all seas. He established the system of deep-sea sounding and unfolded the mechanism of the oceans in his immortal work, "The Physical Geography of the Sea." Recognition came to him rapidly. He received orders of knighthood from many nations, and foreign academies of science hastened to bestow their honors. When Virginia seceded he promptly resigned his rank in the Federal navy, and offered his services to his native State. He served as one of the council of three, chosen by the governor at this crisis, and, after the State forces were incorporated in the Confederate army, he was commissioned captain, C. S. N., and later was sent to Europe as a naval agent of the Confederacy, in which capacity he purchased and fitted out Confederate cruisers. At the close of the war he went to Mexico and was appointed to the cabinet of Em-

peror Maximilian and was subsequently sent on a mission to Europe. Later he resumed his scientific work, prepared his manual of geography, received from the university of Cambridge the degree of LL. D., and declined, at Napoleon's hands, the superintendency of the Imperial observatory at Paris, preferring to accept the chair of physics in the Virginia military institute. He died at Lexington, February 1, 1873. By his marriage to Anne, daughter of Dabney Herndon, he had five daughters and three sons. Colonel Richard Launcelot Maury, a son of the foregoing, was born at Fredericksburg, Va., in 1840. He was reared at Washington, D. C., and was graduated at the university of Virginia, in several departments, in 1857 to 1860. He studied law at Washington and was admitted to the bar in 1860, but had hardly launched upon his professional career, when the war of the Confederacy was begun and he was impelled by loyalty to his native State to tender her his services. He became a private, on April 28, 1861, in the famous Company F, organized at Richmond, and originally assigned to the First Virginia regiment. Before this company left Richmond, Maury was promoted lieutenant and detached under orders from the secretary of the navy. In July he reported to Commodore Hollins, and participated in the capture of the steamer *St. Nicholas*, in the Potomac river, and the seizure of three other merchantmen as prizes in Chesapeake bay. After this adventurous and successful enterprise he was promoted major of Virginia volunteers and assigned to the Twenty-fourth Virginia regiment, subsequently a part of Pickett's division, with which he served gallantly from Second Manassas to Appomattox, receiving promotion to lieutenant-colonel and colonel. He took part in the defense of Yorktown, was one of the few surviving field officers, at Williamsburg; fought at Seven Pines; commanded his regiment in the attack on Casey's camp, and was badly wounded and honorably mentioned in the official reports; participated in the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville; in 1864 was in the campaign against New Bern, Plymouth and Fort Caswell, N. C., and, returning to Virginia upon Butler's advance at Bermuda Hundred, fought under Beauregard at Drewry's Bluff, where he was desperately wounded and disabled. Nevertheless, upon the evacuation of Richmond he rejoined the army on crutches and shared in the surrender at Appomattox. After this event he went to Mexico, and was honored by appointment as assistant commissioner of immigration by Emperor Maximilian. At the fall of the empire he proceeded to Nicaragua, where he became superintendent of the Javali silver and gold mine. In 1868 he returned to Virginia and embarked in the practice of law at Lexington, as a partner of the late Gov. John Letcher. Since 1873 he has resided at Richmond, and has been very successfully engaged in the legal profession.

Colonel Morton Marye is among the many prominent Virginians who, at the call of their State, took up arms in 1861. He entered the service as lieutenant-colonel of the Seventeenth Virginia regiment. The spring of 1862 found this regiment in the brigade of Gen. A. P. Hill of the grand army that was collected in the peninsula for the defense of Richmond. As Gen. Joe Johnston retired before the advance of McClellan, his rear guard was constantly engaged in skirmishing with the advance of the enemy. At Wil-

liamsburg was fought a considerable battle in which both sides claimed the victory, though whatever there was of real advantage lay on the side of the Confederates. In this affair General Hill's troops fought with the determination always exhibited when under the leadership of that gallant officer. Hill, in his report, speaks in high terms of the splendid conduct of his men and of the soldierly bearing of all his regimental commanders, saying of Marye and the rest that "they were brave, active and energetic in the discharge of their duties." When Gen. Robert E. Lee, upon the wounding of Johnston, took command of the army that was gathering from every quarter for the defense of the Confederate capital, with the bold aggressiveness so characteristic of him, he made ready to assail the army of General McClellan in a gallant effort to raise the siege of Richmond. Bringing Jackson from the scene of his triumphs in the Shenandoah valley, he defeated the grand army, that had so confidently marched for the conquest of Virginia and the South, in the series of battles known as the "Seven Days." In all these brilliant battles and movements Colonel Marye so led his regiment as to be mentioned by his division commander, Longstreet, as "distinguished for gallantry and skill." When Longstreet went to the aid of Jackson, at Second Manassas, Colonel Marye was again in the thickest of the fight and received so severe a wound that his leg had to be amputated. This incapacitated him for further active service in the field, though he continued to aid in every way the cause so dear to his heart. Colonel Marye was a prominent lawyer before the war, and after its close resumed the practice of his profession. He has been for several years auditor of the State of Virginia.

Wyndham Robertson Mayo, mayor of Norfolk in 1896, was born in that city, April 4, 1844. He is a descendant of one of the early families of Virginia, the Mayos having emigrated in the last century from southern England to the Barbadoes islands and thence to Virginia, where they became influential professional men and planters. Col. William Mayo, the first of the line in the Old Dominion, was associated with Col. Richard Byrd in locating the boundary of Virginia and North Carolina. The father of the mayor, Peter Poythress Mayo, born in Powhatan county in 1797, died in 1857, was one of the leading attorneys of Norfolk and served as State's attorney. His wife, Ann Elizabeth Upshur, was a daughter of Littleton Upshur, a planter of Northampton county, and a niece of Judge Abel P. Upshur, who was secretary of war and navy under President Tyler, and one of the distinguished people killed on board the Princeton, by the explosion of a gun, during that administration. Mayor Mayo, as a youth, attended school at the Norfolk military academy, at a private institution in Powhatan county, and at William Dinwiddie's school in Albemarle county, until 1859, when he received the honor of appointment to the United States naval academy at Annapolis. He was enrolled there until the spring of 1861, when upon the secession of Virginia he resigned from the academy, and entered the Confederate service, being assigned to the navy. At first detailed for battery duty he served at Pig's Point, opposite Newport News, and subsequently at Drewry's bluff in repelling the advance of the Federal fleet up the James river. At a later date he served upon the Confederate



W. R. MAYO

ironclads Savannah, Charleston, and Wilmington, took part in the defense of Fort Fisher, N. C., during both of the Federal bombardments, and the assault, and afterward served in the batteries below Wilmington until the evacuation of that post. He then joined the army of Northern Virginia, and participating in the battle at Sailor's Creek, was captured April 6, 1865, and taken to Johnson's island, Ohio. Upon his release at the close of hostilities, he promptly returned to civil life and shipped before the mast in the merchant service, where his abilities were soon recognized by promotion to mate and subsequently to master. In 1874 he was happily married to a daughter of Commodore Stephen Decatur, of the United States navy, at Boston, Mass., and in the following year he left the sea, and in 1877 settled at Norfolk, his native city. Establishing at that time steam brick works on the James river he has since continued in that business with much success. He has taken a prominent part in social, business and political life, has frequently participated in various conventions of the Democratic party, has served as collector of customs for the ports of Norfolk and Portsmouth under the first administration of Mr. Cleveland, and was elected mayor of the city in May, 1896. Mr. Mayo has three children: Stephen Decatur, Wyndham Robertson Jr. and Maria Ten Eyck Decatur.

John Gaw Meem, Jr., of Shenandoah, Va., was born at Lynchburg in 1833. Becoming a student at the Virginia military institute, he was graduated in 1852, and subsequently for four years was engaged with his father in the dry goods business. He then went to Brazil as assistant engineer to Charles Fentor Mercer Garnett, in the building of the Dom Pedro Segunda railroad. After three years' stay in South America he returned to his native State and for some time acted as surveyor of streets and alleys at Lynchburg. In April, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as second lieutenant of the Lynchburg Home Guard, which became Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry regiment. With this command he participated in the affair at Blackburn's Ford, the battle of Bull Run, and the fight at Dranesville. In the fall of 1861 he was appointed aide-de-camp upon the staff of Gen. E. Kirby Smith, with whom he served in the actions at Richmond, Ky., and Jenkins' Ferry, Ark., and continued with the commander of the Trans-Mississippi department until the close of the war, surrendering at Galveston, Tex. Then returning to Virginia, he was engaged in farming in Shenandoah county until 1884, at the same time taking an active part in public affairs, and in 1869 received the honor of election as brigadier-general of militia. During the following two years he served as State statistician in the agricultural department of Virginia, and, from 1886 to 1889, held the office of chief computer in the supervising architect's office at Washington, D. C. In 1895 he was appointed, by the secretary of the treasury, superintendent of public buildings, and in this capacity he supervised the building of the bureau of engraving and printing.

Fleming Meredith, of Richmond, a gallant Confederate veteran, who in 1892 was appointed to the office of deputy sheriff at Richmond, was born in King William county, October 10, 1836. He was reared and educated there and at Richmond college. In April, 1861, with the first to enlist in the defense of the State, he entered

the military service and continued in the field until Appomattox. The command of which he became a member was known as Lee's Rangers, and afterward as Company H of the Ninth Virginia cavalry. He enlisted as a private and was soon afterward promoted first sergeant, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. He has the remarkable record of honorable participation in fifty-three battles, in all of which the gallant trooper did his whole duty with heroic devotion to the cause of the Confederacy. After the war he was honored by the people of his native county by election to the office of sheriff, which he held from 1875 to 1887. At the close of his official term he removed to Richmond, where, in 1892, he was appointed to the position of deputy sheriff.

M. Erskine Miller, deceased, a native of Alabama and later a resident of Virginia, was reared in the State of Texas, where he enlisted in the military service of the Confederate States. He was born at Huntsville, Ala., February 10, 1843, and, in 1850, accompanied his parents to Texas, where they made their home near Seguin. In the fall of 1861 he enlisted in the service as a private in Terry's Rangers, a cavalry command which was subsequently employed almost entirely in scouting duty in Tennessee, Kentucky, Alabama and Georgia. In this arduous and adventurous career he was engaged until February, 1862, when he was compelled to accept a discharge on account of ill health. In the following April, determined still to serve the Confederacy, he became a private in Hood's famous brigade of Texans, in the army of Northern Virginia, with which he served during the remainder of the war. At the battle of Seven Pines, he was twice severely wounded, receiving injuries which disabled him for service in the field until his brigade went with Longstreet to reinforce the army of Tennessee. During this period of disability he was able, however, to render valuable service as a recruiting officer at Wytheville, Va. In the western campaigns he participated in the battles of Chattanooga, Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge. Returning to the theater of war in Virginia, he served with his brigade until the surrender at Appomattox. Subsequently he returned to Texas and was in business there four years. On December 15, 1870, he was married to Miss Harriette, daughter of Gen. John Echols, and, in 1871, he made his home at Staunton, embarking in the wholesale grocery trade. In 1875 he became interested in coal mining in West Virginia, and at the time of his death controlled five mines in the New River district. He was also a director in the National Valley bank of Staunton. In January, 1897, attacked by disease, he sought health in California, but died there June 6th, following. He was a man of remarkable business ability and strict integrity. Mr. Miller's father, James Mason Miller, Sr., is a native of Edenton, N. C. His mother, Margaret, daughter of Michael Erskine, was born at Lewisburg, W. Va. J. Mason Miller, brother of the foregoing, was born in Huntsville, Ala., in 1846, but his parents removing to Texas a few years later, he was reared and educated in the Lone Star State. Early in the war he enlisted in the Sibley brigade, but three weeks later was discharged at San Antonio on account of his youth. Still anxious to render service to the Confederate government, he enlisted a second time as a volunteer, in February, 1863, becoming a private in Company K of the Thirty-third Texas cav-

alry. In this command he served during the remainder of the war in the Trans-Mississippi department. His command, though faithful in duty, was not called upon to participate in any notable engagements, and was paroled at San Antonio in August, 1865. After the war he remained upon his father's farm in Guadalupe county, Tex., for six or eight months, and then went to Belmont, where after attending school for a time, he entered his brother's employment. After the latter's removal he purchased the store and was engaged in its management and subsequently in stock raising also, until 1885, when he gave his attention to the stock business exclusively until July, 1887, when he removed to Staunton, Va. There he has since been a partner of his brother. Mr. Miller was married in January, 1872, at Seguin, Tex., to Betty K., daughter of Robb Miller. She died in March, 1884, leaving four children: Mary P., Agnes E., Alexander E., and Betty K. Subsequently Mr. Miller married Miss Fanny Braxton Young, daughter of the late Col. John B. Young, of Richmond, Va., and they have two children: Fanny Braxton and Margaret Erskine.

Polk Miller, of Richmond, was born in Prince Edward county in 1844, and was there reared and educated until he had reached the age of sixteen years, when he came to Richmond and found employment as a drug clerk. In 1863 he participated in the military duties of the local defense troops and took part in the defeat of Dahlgren's raiders. In the spring of 1864, being about nineteen years of age, he enlisted as a private in the Second company of Richmond Howitzers, with which he served during the remainder of the war. He was on duty on the north side of the James river until August, 1864, after which he took part in the operations of General Early in the valley of Virginia, joining him at Winchester and continuing in that field until the following winter. He was then stationed on the Appomattox in the Petersburg lines and remained there until the evacuation. He piloted the medical department from Petersburg to Appomattox. Among the engagements in which he participated were those at Fussell's Mill, Front Royal, Charleston, Berryville, Sailor's Creek and Appomattox. After the close of hostilities he returned to Richmond, and, in the following October, embarked in the drug business, in which he has remained since that time. During recent years he has gained a remarkable reputation as a lecturer, during two years appearing no less than four hundred and fifty times. He is a member of the R. E. Lee camp and the Howitzer association.

Thomas Cecil Miller, of Lynchburg, who was a gallant participant in the service of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, until disabled by wounds, was born in Pittsylvania county, in 1842, a son of Samuel T. Miller. The ancestors of Mr. Miller have been American citizens for nearly two centuries, and have been prominent and influential citizens of their various localities. His father, a teacher and farmer, and soldier of the war of 1812, died in 1870, at the age of eighty years; his grandfather, Thomas Miller, a native of Cecil county, Md., was an ensign in the war of the Revolution, with the Virginia troops, and served under Light Horse Harry Lee and Nathaniel Greene, subsequently followed the profession of teaching, and died at Chillicothe, Ohio, in 1820; his great-grandfather, Samuel Miller, born in Cecil county, Md., in 1735, was a

prosperous farmer and a very influential citizen; and the first of the line in America was his great-great-grandfather, Thomas Miller, born near Londonderry, Ireland, about 1693, who came to America and made his home in Maryland. Thomas Cecil Miller was reared and educated in his native county, and in his nineteenth year responded heartily to the call of his State in 1861. He came to Lynchburg in April to join the Home Guards, and, finding the company had gone to Richmond, followed to that city and enlisted as a private. He served in the battles of Blackburn's Ford, First Manassas, Dranesville, Williamsburg, Seven Pines and Frayser's Farm, in the latter action receiving a serious wound in the right shoulder. He was captured by the enemy, but left in a field hospital, and a few days later he was sent to Richmond, and thence to Lynchburg, where he remained in hospital for two or three months. The injury was of such a serious nature as to permanently deprive him of the use of his right arm, and he could not return to duty on the field. He served on hospital duty at Charlottesville several months, and then attended the university of Virginia. At the close of the war he was paroled at Lynchburg, and since then he has been engaged in the profession of teaching, since 1871 having been thus occupied at Lynchburg. He was married, October 23, 1873, at Chatham, Va., to Mary Hunt Coleman, who died, leaving four children: Roberta Cecil, Claude Hamilton, Sallie Hunt and George Coleman Cecil. His second marriage occurred in 1890, to Helen Gregory.

Major William Henry Miller, since 1880 officially connected with the United States pension office, at Washington, is a native of Virginia, and a veteran of the Confederate States provisional army. He was born in Botetourt county in 1833, but his family removed during his infancy to Madison county and subsequently to Shenandoah county, where he spent his youth mainly and was educated until he was prepared to enter Hampden-Sidney college. While he was a student there the war of the Confederacy broke out and he entered a company organized among the students, under the command of Dr. J. N. Atkinson, president of the institution. He held the rank of second sergeant of this company of chivalrous young Virginians, and with it was mustered into the service in the Twentieth Virginia regiment of infantry. He served with this regiment during the early days of 1861, and participated in the campaign in West Virginia where McClellan and Lee were first pitted against each other. At the battle of Rich Mountain, in the summer of that year, he was captured, and paroled on the field by General McClellan. Subsequently he observed his parole until exchanged in August, 1862, when he returned to the service. The Twentieth regiment had meanwhile been disbanded, and he re-enlisted as second sergeant of the Twenty-fifth Virginia cavalry. In this capacity he remained with the regiment until January, 1863, when he was appointed regimental quartermaster, with the rank of captain. In the following July, he was promoted brigade quartermaster, with the rank of major, and in this capacity served during the remainder of the war. He participated in the battles of Rich Mountain, W. Va., Perryville, Lexington, Frankfort and Maysville, Ky., Blackwater, Va., Chickamauga, McMinnville and Franklin, Tenn., and at Petersburg served in the trenches until the surrender.

On the retreat he fought at the battle of Sailor's Creek, and escaped from that disaster to surrender at Appomattox. He returned to his home with a capital of twenty dollars with which to make a start in life. He found employment in farming, teaching school for several years, and meanwhile became influential socially and politically, and generally respected by the people. In 1880 he was appointed to the position of chief of the miscellaneous section of the eastern division of the pension office, which he has since held. He is regarded as a faithful and trustworthy official. In 1869 Major Miller was married in Shenandoah county, to Mattie Miller, daughter of the late Philip Miller, and they have four sons and two daughters to brighten their home.

Captain Tuley Joseph Mitchell, a worthy business man of Roanoke, Va., had a varied experience in the Confederate army, and, throughout, was faithful and devoted to the cause. He was born in Augusta county, and, at the time of the crisis of 1861, was pursuing collegiate studies in the university at Princeton, N. J. With true loyalty to his State, he promptly returned to Virginia when her action was decided upon, and, in June, 1861, became a private in the Fifty-second Virginia infantry regiment. Soon afterward, however, he was released from service, as being under age. In 1862 he again enlisted, as a private in the Fifth Virginia infantry regiment, Stonewall brigade, and soon afterward was appointed to the commissary department, under Major Ballard, with rank as captain. After about one year's service in this capacity, he became a member of the Eighteenth Virginia cavalry, with which he served actively in the field until captured by the enemy in June, 1864. He was engaged in the battles of Moorefield, Grass Lick, Williamsport, Sharpsburg, Strasburg, New Market, and New Hope, mostly in West Virginia and the valley, in all of which he was distinguished for soldierly conduct. During the affair at New Hope, Augusta county, in June, 1864, he was slightly wounded in the head and captured by the Federals. His life as a prisoner of war was a long and tedious one, including three weeks at Camp Morton, Ind., nine months at Johnson's island, Ohio, and then at Fort McHenry, Point Lookout and Fort Delaware, until his parole, by the assistance of his uncle, Hon. J. T. Thomas, and Hon. John W. Forney, in May, 1865. After the close of hostilities he engaged in farming in Fauquier county, until 1893, when he removed to Roanoke and engaged in real estate brokerage, his present occupation, in which it is gratifying to note that he has met with much success.

James M. Moelick, of Pulaski City, rendered his four years' service in the Confederate cause throughout a wide field, extending from Manassas to Vicksburg. He is a native of Botetourt county, where he entered the service, May 15, 1861, as a private in Company I, Twenty-eighth Virginia infantry, which he joined at Lynchburg, Va., and accompanied in the movement to Manassas, where the regiment shared the glorious deeds of Cocke's brigade. On December 15, 1861, he re-enlisted with his company, the first in Virginia to re-enlist for the war, whereupon the company was transferred to the artillery service and was thenceforward known as the Botetourt light artillery, Capt. Joseph W. Anderson commanding. After receiving instruction in that line of service, the company

joined the command of Gen. E. Kirby Smith in east Tennessee, and was attached to the brigade of Gen. Seth M. Barton. He accompanied Smith's command in the Kentucky campaign. After the return to Tennessee, Barton's brigade was transferred, under the division command of General Stevenson, to the army of Lieutenant-General Pemberton, in Mississippi, and his light artillery accompanied them. On May 1, 1863, he and his comrades met Grant's army at Port Gibson, after the Federals had landed below their post at Grand Gulf, and General Pemberton in reporting this fight to President Davis, said: "A furious battle has been going on since daylight, just below Port Gibson. The Virginia battery was taken by enemy, but retaken." Mr. Moelick was among the captured of the artillery, and was subsequently confined as a prisoner of war at Alton, Ill., until June, 1863. Then being exchanged he subsequently rejoined his battery at Atlanta. He was then transferred with the artillery, under the command of Capt. Henry C. Douthat, to southwest Virginia and West Virginia, where he was with General Echols at Lewisburg, took part in the battle of Cloyd's Mountain, and participated in the defense of Lynchburg against Hunter's raid. In the spring of 1865, after the surrender at Appomattox, he and his comrades abandoned their guns, at Christiansburg, and returned to their homes. Since the war, Mr. Moelick has been engaged in general merchandising. He was married, December 7, 1887, to Miss Alberta Davidson, and they have one son, James Albert.

James D. Moncure, M. D., commander of Magruder-Ewell camp at Williamsburg, was born at Richmond, Va., August 2, 1842. His father, Henry W. Moncure, a wholesale coffee and sugar merchant of Richmond, was a descendant of the grandfather of George Washington; and his mother was a daughter of John Ambler, who served as aide-de-camp to General Lafayette, in the war of the Revolution, was colonel of the Nineteenth Virginia regiment in the war of 1812, and in 1785 organized the James City Troop, which he commanded for twenty-five years. In his youth Dr. Moncure spent eleven years in Europe, pursuing his studies in the university of Heidelberg and the college of France, where he received the degree of Bachelier es lettres et science. In 1860, warned by the increasing tension between the North and South, he returned to Virginia, and in December entered the military institute at Lexington. After the passage of the ordinance of secession, he was ordered with the cadets to Richmond, where he served until July 19th, in the camp of instruction, drilling the volunteer troops. He then enlisted as a private in the Ninth Virginia cavalry, with which he served in all its campaigns, raids, battles and frequent encounters, until the close of the war, under the gallant leadership of the Lees, Stuart and Hampton. He was captured at Chester's Gap, on the retreat from Gettysburg, but managed to escape soon afterward. In the charge of his regiment at Aldie, in 1863, his horse fell, and Dr. Moncure sustained a fracture of the skull (which rendered him unconscious for some time), and the fracture of a collar bone, but this mishap kept him from his command but six weeks. After the close of hostilities, he attended the medical departments of the university of Virginia and of the university of Maryland, being graduated by the latter in 1867, and then continued

his studies at the medical college of Paris, in 1868, after which he returned to America and embarked in the practice at Baltimore. He subsequently practiced in Fauquier county, Richmond, and Huntington, W. Va., until 1873, when he returned to Richmond and became superintendent of the college infirmary. He founded the Pinnell hospital at that city in 1876 and conducted it until 1884, when he laid down that work to accept the position of superintendent of the Eastern lunatic asylum, at Williamsburg, founded in 1768, and the oldest institution of the kind in America. For this position his profound acquirements as an alienist render him peculiarly adapted, and he has very successfully administered the affairs of the asylum. Dr. Moncure was married, in October, 1871, to Ann Patteson McCaw, great-granddaughter of Surgeon McCaw, who served on the staff of Lord Dunmore, the last colonial governor. She died in 1882, and in 1889 he married Blanche Elbert Trevilian, great-granddaughter of Col. John Trevilian, of the Continental army.

Colonel E. B. Montague was among the many gallant Virginians who rallied to the call of their State in the spring of 1861. He entered the service as major of a Virginia battalion that was assigned to duty in the peninsula under General Magruder, and in May of that year was in command of the troops at Yorktown and Gloucester Point. He was engaged in the first battle of any note fought on Virginia soil, that of Big Bethel, which at the time was regarded a considerable affair and caused great rejoicing throughout the South. Magruder's report of this battle complimented Major Montague by saying that he, "with every officer and every man under his command, did good service in the forefront of the fight." In the campaign of 1862 he served in the peninsula and around Richmond. As colonel of the Thirty-second Virginia, he led his regiment at Crampton's Gap and at Sharpsburg. After the return from Maryland he was with Longstreet's corps in its march to Fredericksburg and shared in that important battle. At the time of the Chancellorsville campaign, he was with the troops of the First corps that were in southeast Virginia under General Longstreet. When Lee marched into Pennsylvania, for the campaign which culminated at Gettysburg, Colonel Montague was in charge of the defenses of Petersburg. In the campaign of 1864 he was in the lines at Petersburg under General Beauregard, who conducted one of the most wonderful defenses known to military annals, from the time that Butler landed at Bermuda Hundred until Lee came to his relief, when pressed by the superior numbers of Grant. Colonel Montague continued to perform the duties of his position with gallantry and skill to the close of the long four years' conflict.

Aristides Montiero, of Richmond, a distinguished physician, who served as a surgeon in the Confederate armies, was born in Goochland county, Va., January 12, 1829. He is the seventh son of Francis Xavier Montiero de Barros, a Castilian of great learning, who, after taking an active part in an unsuccessful attempt to establish a republic in Portugal, was compelled to remove to America. Dr. Montiero studied in the university of Virginia and the Jefferson medical college of Philadelphia, being graduated in medicine in 1851. He at once embarked in an extensive practice in Virginia,

and, in 1857, having married the daughter of John S. Cocke, of Albemarle, made his home in that county. He cast the one vote of his precinct for Douglas in 1860 and earnestly opposed secession, but was second to none in the recognition of duty when war came. Though selected by the county court as the official physician for home duty, he resigned that commission and served as surgeon with the Tenth Virginia cavalry in West Virginia. He was next with Jones' battalion of artillery through the Seven Days' battles and into Maryland, and with Nelson's battalion of artillery until after Sharpsburg. After a short service with Richardson's battalion, he served with Colonel Alexander's battalion of artillery from January, 1863, through Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and the Chickamauga and Knoxville campaigns, until the spring of 1864. Subsequently he spent two months as one of the officers of the general receiving hospital of the army of Northern Virginia, and then was surgeon of the Twenty-sixth Virginia regiment, of Wise's brigade, until he was asked for by Colonel Mosby. With that daring and wonderful command he remained until it was disbanded, April 21, 1865. He then resumed his practice as a physician, removing to Chesterfield in 1866, and to Manchester in 1870, where he was not only prominent as a physician, but also busied himself as editor, orator, banker, druggist and public official. In 1882 he removed to North Carolina, and while there was elected to the medical staff of the Eastern lunatic asylum of Virginia, where he remained in charge of the male department until 1887. In the latter year he served six months in the United States quarantine in the Gulf of Mexico. The doctor has a remarkable reputation as a specialist in mental diseases. As an author, he has contributed to war literature that very interesting work, "War Reminiscences by a Surgeon of Mosby's Command."

Ellis M. Moon, a business man, prominently identified with the tobacco trade of Richmond, was born in Halifax county in 1849, where he was reared and given his primary education, which was continued at the Hillsboro military academy in North Carolina. After two years' study at that institution, he left the academy to enter the Confederate service, though at the time but fifteen years of age. He enlisted, in the winter of 1864, as a private in the Sixth Virginia cavalry, becoming a member of Company G, of which his brother, Thomas A. Moon, was captain. With this command he participated in a considerable number of important, famous and hard-fought battles before the close of the war, doing a soldier's duty through the desperate encounters in the Wilderness, and at Spottsylvania Court House, at Yellow Tavern, where he was captured and thence carried around Richmond, until he made his escape five days later at White House and rejoined his command at Mechanicsville; at the second battle of Cold Harbor and at Trevilian Station. Going into the Valley campaign with Early, he fought at Winchester (where he had a horse killed under him), at Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek, Waynesboro, Berryville, and the raid with Rosser to Romney and New Creek, on the Baltimore & Ohio railroad. Subsequently he fought at Fort Kennon, on the James river, and, after the evacuation, went to Greensboro, N. C., to unite with the army under Johnston. Returning to Danville, he was paroled there in April, 1865, closing an arduous military

career at the age of sixteen years. Then returning to his home in Halifax county, he went from there to Baltimore to attend school. In 1877 he made his home at Richmond and engaged in the tobacco business, in which he has since been successfully occupied. His brother, Capt. Thomas A. Moon, above referred to, served throughout the war with bravery and distinction, until captured at Yellow Tavern. He passed away in 1869.

David Evans Moore, a gallant and representative veteran of the Rockbridge artillery, and since the war a prominent attorney at Lexington, was born at the latter city, August 5, 1840. He was there reared and educated, being graduated in 1860 by Washington college after a regular course of study. Going then to Alabama, he engaged in teaching school there until the crisis of 1861 arrived and Virginia decided to unite her interests with those of the seceding States. At this juncture he returned to Lexington and, in April, 1861, became a private in the Rockbridge artillery. At Falling Waters, on July 2d, he had the distinction of firing the first gun in the valley of Virginia. Just after Manassas he was made No. 4 at his gun, and after Kernstown he was promoted sergeant. The gallant Stonewall Jackson, under whom he served in the valley and on many other famous fields, recommended him for promotion to the rank of lieutenant, and, though the commission never issued, the letter of recommendation, now in Mr. Moore's possession, is as highly valued. During his career, Sergeant Moore participated with his command in a long list of important engagements, prominent among which were Falling Waters, First Manassas, Dam No. 5 on the Potomac, Kernstown, Jackson's fight at Winchester, Cross Keys, Port Republic, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Chantilly, a fight with gunboats on the Rappahannock, Fredericksburg, second Fredericksburg, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, the second and third days at Gettysburg, Rappahannock Bridge, Mine Run, Spottsylvania Court House, Second Cold Harbor, Deep Bottom, below Richmond, New Market Heights, fight with gunboats on the James river, engagement at Farnville with Sheridan, Cumberland Church and Appomattox, where he was paroled. He was slightly wounded in the first battle at Winchester and at Malvern Hill. At the close of this long and faithful career with the army of Northern Virginia, Mr. Moore returned to his old home at Lexington and began the study of law under Judge John W. Brockenbrough, being admitted to the bar in April, 1866. Since then he has been continuously engaged in the practice of his profession at Lexington, rounding out an honorable and successful career. In 1875 he was appointed prosecuting attorney of Rockbridge county, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of his father, who had held that office for nearly thirty years, and, subsequently, he was elected and re-elected to the office until he had served in all twenty years and six months. Mr. Moore, in his military and civil career, has most worthily supplemented the previous history of the Virginia families from which he is descended. His grandfather, Moore, and his maternal grandfather, Matthew Harvey, both served in the war of the Revolution, the first as a captain in Morgan's rifle corps, and the second as a soldier under Light Horse Harry Lee.

Edward Alexander Moore, now a business man of Lexington,

Va., was among the students whose studies at the old Washington college were interrupted by the martial call of their State. Fortunately, he was among those who were again permitted to see their home and friends. He was born at Lexington in 1842, and, in March, 1862, left the college to become a private in the Rock-bridge artillery, with which he served throughout the war. He fought at Kernstown on the outposts with Ashby, at Winchester in the defeat of Banks, at Port Republic, and then, moving with Jackson to the support of Lee, was engaged at Cold Harbor and Malvern Hill. He participated in the fighting of Jackson's army at Slaughter Mountain, Chantilly and Second Manassas, and, at Sharpsburg received a wound in the right leg that disabled him for three months. His subsequent career included the battles of Fredericksburg, three days at Gettysburg, Mine Run, Cold Harbor, where he was twice wounded, the action at Fort Gilmer and the battle of Sailor's Creek. He was paroled at Appomattox, and then, returning to Lexington, resumed his college studies. From 1867 to 1877 he was engaged in teaching school in Maryland and Kentucky. Since then he has been a resident of Lexington, occupied first in farming and of late in the coal trade.

Lieutenant Henry V. Moore, late of Norfolk, Va., served throughout the Confederate war as a member of the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, a company which was organized under Capt. Miles King, February 22, 1828. The Blues turned out in full strength as soon as it was determined that Virginia would participate in the struggle for Southern autonomy, and were on duty April 19, 1861, when the powder was removed from Fort Norfolk, and, on the next day, they intercepted the Baltimore boat, supposed to carry Federal reinforcements. After this, until March, 1862, the company served as infantry, attached to the Sixteenth regiment, but mainly on battery duty, at Sewell's Point, where they participated in actions with the Federal fleet. After the abandonment of Norfolk, the Blues were on duty about Richmond and Petersburg for several months, during which period Sergeant Moore was promoted fourth lieutenant, the rank he held during the remainder of the war. In the fall of 1862 he was with his company on the Rappahannock, guarding the fords, and, during the battle of Fredericksburg, the company did effective service with its guns on the Confederate left. They were on guard at United States Ford in April, and, then retiring toward Chancellorsville, took part in the opening of the three days' battle of that name. Attached to Garnett's battalion and Heth's division, the Blues took part in the famous artillery duels at Gettysburg and the Bristoe campaign, and, in the spring of 1864, served constantly in the front from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor. During the siege of Petersburg they were stationed near the scene of the Crater fight and on the Boyd-town plank road, and, during the Federal assault on April 1, 1865, part of the company fought at the latter station without supports until surrounded. Lieutenant Moore was engaged in almost constant artillery fighting on the Petersburg lines from June 16, 1864, to April 1, 1865. After the close of the war he was engaged in the lumber business at Norfolk, where he died, March 3, 1886. He was married, in 1860, to Miss Julia Fatherly. Their only son, W. L. Moore, now a prominent business man of Berkley, was born at

Norfolk in 1866. In his youth he was with his father in the lumber business, subsequently was in the service of the Norfolk & Southern railroad, and then returned to the lumber trade. He embarked in business on his own account in 1895 and is meeting with creditable success. He is loyal to the heroic memories of Virginia and is the efficient commander of Neimeyer-Shaw camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans. In 1895 he was married to Cassandra D., daughter of W. H. H. Cory, a Confederate veteran.

John H. Moore, of Lexington, Va., a veteran of the Rockbridge artillery, was born at Lexington in 1836. He was educated at the Washington college, being graduated by that famous institution in 1856. In April, 1861, he entered the Confederate service with the Rockbridge Rifles, but was soon afterward transferred to the Rockbridge artillery. His service was interrupted, in 1863, by exemption under the law as a court commissioner, but, in 1864, he rejoined the artillery, and, with this exception, participated in its operations throughout the war. His record includes gallant service at the battles of Falling Waters, First Manassas, Port Republic, Winchester, Cross Keys, Cumberland Church, Cold Harbor, Malvern Hill and Appomattox. He was wounded at Winchester, again at Malvern Hill and a third time at Cumberland hill. After the close of hostilities he returned to Lexington, and, with the exception of a period in which he taught school in Bath and Montgomery counties, has resided in his native city.

Captain John Preston Moore, a prominent citizen of Lexington, Va., was born in Rockbridge county, Va., February 26, 1841, and there reared and educated. He entered the military service of the Confederate States, in August, 1861, as second lieutenant of Company G, Fifty-eighth Virginia infantry. At the reorganization of the army, in May, 1862, he was elected and commissioned captain of his company, but had served but a short time with this rank, when, in the following month, he fell with severe and dangerous wounds, in the battle of Port Republic, at the close of Jackson's campaign of the valley. He was incapacitated for any service whatever, for one year afterward, when he became able to accept an assignment to duty, as enrolling officer of Bath county, Va. After a few months of service as enrolling officer, Captain Moore sought and obtained permission to return to his company, mounted, and participated in the second campaign of the Wilderness, in the spring of 1864; but, finding it impracticable to command an infantry company on horseback, and, being unable for field service, he was retired under an act of the Congress of the Confederate States, with his rank and pay as captain, and assigned to duty as commandant of the military post, at Lexington, Va., where he remained in charge, until the close of the war. During his service in the valley of Virginia, he was engaged in the battle near Harrisonburg, in which occurred the untimely death of the gallant Ashby, and, in the spring of 1864, participated in two of the battles of the Wilderness. After the close of hostilities, he engaged in farming for a time, in Rockbridge county, until he was appointed deputy sheriff of the county. He performed the duties of this office, until May, 1870, when he was made clerk of the county court. Such was his efficiency in this office that he was continued as clerk until July, 1893, a period of over twenty-three years. He was then admitted to the bar and

has subsequently been engaged in the practice of the law at Lexington, Va.

Colonel Lewis Tilghman Moore, late of Winchester, Va., was born in Loudoun county, Va., February 25, 1816, the son of John Moore, Sr., who served in the Maryland Line during the war of the Revolution, and his wife, Mary Mann, the daughter of John and Mary Mann, of Loudoun county. Colonel Moore completed his education at Georgetown, Ky., under the tutelage of Lieut. Jacob Ammon, graduate of the National military academy at West Point, and subsequently studied law with the legal firm of Burton & Williams, at Winchester. At that city he began the practice of law, in 1842, and subsequently devoted his life to the profession, except such time as he gave to the State. Having become prominent in the militia service, he was ordered, in the fall of 1859, to proceed to Harper's Ferry with four volunteer companies under his command, to assist in the suppression of the movement inaugurated by John Brown. Reaching there the night following the receipt of the order, he marched his troops near Brown's fort and witnessed the arrest of the raider. After this the militia forces were left in quiet until April, 1861, when, at the time of the secession of Virginia, Colonel Moore was ordered by Governor Letcher to march all available forces to Harper's Ferry, to take possession of the military stores. He reached there with his men, just after the town had been evacuated and the armory burned and remained there until the evacuation by the Confederate troops. In the meantime the State convention, in session at Richmond, appointed him to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and he was assigned to the Fourth regiment Virginia volunteer infantry, commanded by Col. James F. Preston. From Harper's Ferry he went with his regiment to Camp Stephens, and, for some time, no military action occurred except an affair under Col. T. J. Jackson against Patterson's command. Then, receiving orders to march to Manassas, the regiment participated with great gallantry in the battle of July 21, 1861, as a part of Jackson's "Stonewall" brigade, taking 778 men into action and losing about 280 in killed and wounded. The regiment captured Rickett's Federal battery after 1 o'clock in the afternoon, and in the charge, Colonel Moore received a wound in the right knee which greatly disabled him throughout the remainder of his life. Colonel Preston, a gallant and capable officer, of high character and loved by all his associates, died in 1861, and Moore was then promoted colonel, but on account of the severity of his wound he was unable to accompany the command in its future movements. Afterward he saw, at Edenburg, Va., in 1864, the remnant that then remained of the gallant Fourth, but twelve men, under the command of Captain Wade, acting as colonel. There could have been no better or more devoted regiment in the Confederate service. At the close of the war, Colonel Moore returned to Winchester and resumed the practice of law. During his residence of more than half a century at that famous valley city, he was admired and revered as a citizen and a patriot. His death occurred in December, 1897.

Major Samuel J. C. Moore, of Berryville, Va., in 1864 adjutant-general of the army of the Valley, was born at Charlestown, Jefferson county, June 29, 1826. He was educated at Charlestown acad-

emy, and, adopting the law as his profession, was engaged in the practice at his native town until 1857, when he removed to Berryville, where he remained until the presage of war led to the memorable ordinance of secession in 1861. He had become a member of a military company, organized at Berryville, in 1859, upon the occasion of the first invasion of the State, and, as first lieutenant of this command, he went into service immediately after the ordinance was passed, taking part in the occupation of Harper's Ferry. His company was subsequently assigned, as Company I, to the Second regiment of Virginia infantry, brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson, and, at the first battle of Manassas, shared in winning for men and commander the glorious title of "Stonewall." Then being promoted captain, he led his company through the campaign of 1862 in the Shenandoah valley, receiving two slight wounds at Kernstown and taking part in the battles of McDowell, Winchester and Port Republic; and then, in northeastern Virginia, at the engagements of Cedar Mountain and Second Manassas. At the latter battle he was seriously wounded by a shot through the thigh, and on his recovery, was assigned to duty as assistant adjutant-general of the Second brigade of Jackson's old division. In this capacity he participated in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Mine Run, and entered the Wilderness campaign of 1864, but was again severely wounded in the first day's fighting. When he was able to return to duty he was appointed assistant inspector-general of the army of the Valley of Virginia, commanded by General Early, and served on the staff of that general in the battle at Winchester, September 19, 1864, and in October, 1864, he was promoted adjutant-general and chief of staff of Early's command. While upon General Early's staff he took part in the battles of Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek and Waynesboro. Since 1865 he has been engaged in the practice of law at Berryville, and occupies a prominent position at the bar. He was made judge of the county court of Clarke county, Va., January 1, 1894. He had the honor of being the first commander of J. E. B. Stuart camp, Confederate Veterans, at Berryville, and is now commander of the camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans at the same place. He was first married, December 12, 1850, to Miss Ellen G. Scollay, and by this union had one son, S. Scollay Moore, D. D., a clergyman of the Episcopal church, at Parkersburg, W. Va. By his subsequent marriage, February 16, 1858, to Miss Ellen Kownslar, he has one son, Lawson B. Moore, M. D., a physician of Frederick county, and five daughters.

Samuel R. Moore, of Lexington, Va., a gallant veteran of the Stonewall brigade, who has for several years efficiently served as treasurer of Rockbridge county, was born in that county in 1844. He was a student in Washington college at the outbreak of the war, and laid aside his books in June, 1861, to become a member of the Liberty Hall Volunteers, an organization which was mustered in as Company I of the Fourth Virginia infantry regiment. He served with the Fourth regiment at the Manassas battle of 1861, Kernstown, Port Republic and Winchester, of the Valley campaign of 1862, at Slaughter Mountain and Chantilly in the Second Manassas campaign, and at Sharpsburg, where he was shot in the head, and disabled in consequence until May, 1863.

He then joined the First Virginia cavalry, and, with that command, participated in the fighting at Chancellorsville, the third day at Gettysburg, Yellow Tavern, the Wilderness, Trevilian's, the fight with Wilson's cavalry at Reams' Station, and the affair at Front Royal in August, 1864, when he was again seriously wounded, receiving a gunshot wound through the lungs that terminated his active service. After the war he returned to Rockbridge county and was occupied in farming and other business until, in 1889, he was appointed treasurer of Rockbridge county to fill an unexpired term. Since then he has twice been re-elected to the office.

William Francis Moore, of Norfolk, rendered his Confederate service with the gallant Sixth Virginia regiment of infantry, Mahone's brigade. He was a member and fourth sergeant of the Norfolk Light infantry, an organization formed immediately upon the beginning of war, which was subsequently known as Company D of its regiment. Mr. Moore was born in Norfolk county in 1835, the son of William Moore, a farmer of that county. In youth he was apprenticed to the brickmason trade, in which he was occupied at Richmond when Virginia withdrew from the Union. During 1861 he served in the entrenched camp at Norfolk, with his regiment, and after leaving home to confront the Federal forces he served in all the famous encounters of the army of Northern Virginia and the army of the Potomac, including Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor. After reaching Petersburg again with the army he was taken sick, and was confined to hospital for six months. Then rejoining his command at Wilcox's Farm, he was taken prisoner in the winter of 1864-65, and subsequently held as a prisoner at Washington until the conclusion of hostilities. The years which have since elapsed have been devoted by him to persistent industry, and his success has been gratifying and fully deserved. Since 1870 he has been busily engaged as a contractor and builder. During one term he served as street inspector for the city. In 1856 Sergeant Moore was married to Miss Martha E. Hodges, who died in September, 1894.

Major Marcellus Newton Moonman, of Lynchburg, Va., who served with distinction as an artillery officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Campbell county, Va., in 1835. He studied in the schools of his native county and then entered the Virginia military institute, where he was graduated in 1856. Attracted then by the opportunities for success in the new State of Texas, he engaged in the stock business there and in Mexico, but, after three or four years of this life, returned to Virginia. Locating at Lynchburg and engaging in the tobacco business, he became second lieutenant of the Lynchburg Home Guard, upon its organization in November, 1859. Subsequently organizing an artillery company, the Beauregard battery, of which he was elected captain, he entered the service of the State with his command in April, 1861, and proceeding to Richmond, was supplied with four Parrott guns and ordered to Norfolk. He served there until the evacuation by the Confederate forces, on the retreat covering, at Indian Pole bridge, the passage of Mahone's command over Tanner's creek. While at Norfolk, Moonman's battery participated in the actions with the Federal navy, and, after the concentration of the

forces at Richmond, took part in the Seven Days' battles and was assigned to Stuart's horse artillery, with the brigade of Gen. W. H. F. Lee. With his battery he fought at the Manassas battle of 1862, many cavalry engagements, and Fredericksburg. In 1863 he participated in the celebrated flank movement of General Jackson at Chancellorsville, his men sharing the work of Breathed's battery. He was riding beside the general when he was wounded, and assisted in his removal from the field. Subsequently he fought at Gettysburg, and, in 1864, as major of Braxton's battalion, Second corps, was engaged in the battles of the Wilderness, and at Spottsylvania was among the heroes who fought at the bloody angle, and, thereafter fighting all day, received a severe wound in the shoulder. He was at Fisher's Hill, in Early's campaign in the valley, and subsequently participated in the battle of Hatcher's Run, and in the defense of Petersburg and Richmond, fighting finally at Sailor's Creek and surrendering at Appomattox. During the latter part of February, 1864, he met the Federal forces under the command of General Custer, on the occasion of their raid on Charlottesville, and, by a gallant charge at the head of his men, repulsed the Federal forces. After peace was restored, he returned to Lynchburg and engaged in the tobacco business, which has since been his principal occupation. In 1863 he was married to Ellen G., daughter of the late John C. Moorman, and they have three children: Marcellus N., Jr., who was graduated at the Virginia military institute in 1886; John Pelham, who was graduated at the same institution in 1890; and Littleton Leftwich. Edward H. Moorman, a brother of Major Moorman, served in the latter's battery as a lieutenant and now resides in Campbell county, Va.

Lieutenant John A. Morgan, a distinguished veteran of the First North Carolina regiment of infantry, now residing at Norfolk, Va., was born in Perquimans county, N. C., January 9, 1841. His father, Hon. Timothy Morgan, was born in Pasquotank county, N. C., February 15, 1815, served one term in each branch of the legislature, and died June 11, 1871. During the two years prior to the war, Mr. Morgan was a member of the John Harvey Guards, a volunteer military company in Perquimans county, with the rank of sergeant. On June 11, 1861, he entered the service of the State as a private in the Albemarle Guards, at Edenton, Chowan county, which was mustered in as Company A of the First regiment. During the first year of his service he rose, by successive promotions, to third sergeant, and, after fighting through the Seven Days' battles and Malvern Hill, where he was seriously wounded, was promoted for gallant conduct to the rank of junior second lieutenant. He received this commission, October 8, 1862, and, in that rank, participated in the battle of Fredericksburg. In March, 1863, he was promoted first lieutenant, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war, during eighteen months of this period also acting as adjutant of his regiment. During his remaining service he fought at the battle of Chancellorsville, where he was wounded, took part in the engagement with Milroy at Winchester, where his conduct received particular mention, as appears from the official records and the Southern historical society papers; fought in the three days' battle at Gettysburg, receiving another wound; after the return to Virginia aided in repelling Meade across

the Rappahannock, and fought at Mine Run. In the campaign of 1864 he took part in the Wilderness fight of May 5th, and, on the following day, received his fourth wound, a serious one, in the left leg, which confined him to bed for forty-five days in private quarters. Before recovering he was ordered to join his corps, rendezvoused at Plymouth, and there was captured by the enemy, fighting on crutches, October 31, 1864. Lieutenant Morgan then experienced life in the prison pens at Hatteras inlet, Camp Hamilton, Point Lookout, from which he made an abortive attempt to escape, Old Capitol prison, and Fort Delaware, until June 11, 1865, when he was released, exactly four years from the date of his enlistment. Returning to his home in Perquimans county, he was elected three months later to the office of clerk of the superior court of his county. In this position he served until February, 1868, meanwhile engaging in the lumber-business with his father, in which he continued until 1873. He was then occupied as a carpenter and millwright, until 1881, when he removed to Norfolk and secured a responsible position with the firm of S. R. White & Brother. He has remained in this position to the present time, with the exception of a year as general superintendent and manager of the Wayne agricultural company, of Goldsboro, N. C., and a year with the Tunis lumber company. His residence is at Berkeley, opposite Norfolk, where he is a member and now commander of the Neimeyer-Shaw camp of Confederate Veterans, and has taken a prominent part in local affairs as president of the town council. He was married May 3, 1866, to Pattie Carter, of Murfreesboro, N. C., who died April 26, 1867. On December 10th, of the following year, he married Maggie Tucker Butt, of Perquimans, and they have four children living: Mary Johnson, wife of John Harker, a wholesale lumber merchant of New York; Grace Gordon, wife of Clayton R. Caskey, also a wholesale lumber dealer at New York; Arthur Butt, in the lumber trade at Norfolk, Va., who married Agnes Mildred Chewning, niece of Col. John Bouie Strange, of Albemarle county, and John Carl, in the ship brokerage business at Norfolk, Va.

O. B. Morgan, of Petersburg, commander of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans, entered the military service of the Confederacy in June, 1862, being then about seventeen years of age and a student at Randolph-Macon college. He became a member of a company of artillery, organized in Lunenburg county, and, serving at first as private was promoted to sergeant-major and finally to adjutant of his battalion. He was stationed with his command at Chaffin's bluff, Va., and finally, during the retreat, he took part in the disastrous battle of Sailor's Creek and was wounded and captured. A week later he managed to escape from his captors, and, then going to Hancock's corps and representing that he was surrendered with Lee's army, he received a parole. As soon after the war as conditions permitted, he engaged in mercantile pursuits at Petersburg, and, from 1874 to 1888, was a general commission merchant. At the latter date he turned his attention to manufacturing, becoming the proprietor of the Virginia bag factory and secretary and treasurer of the Magnolia manufacturing company. Mr. Morgan was born in 1844, the son of George B. Morgan, a former merchant of Petersburg. In 1869 he was mar-

ried to Hope Alice, daughter of William T. Davis, president of the Southern female college. Their children living are Olive Leigh, wife of Rev. E. T. Dadmun; Capt. R. B., professor in the Virginia military institute; Hope Alice; Robert M., principal of the military school at Martinsville; Richard D., George W.

William T. Morgan, a well-known business man of Baltimore, is a native of Virginia, and served during the war of the Confederacy in the army of Northern Virginia. He was born at Petersburg in 1840, and was there reared and educated, and in that city passed the first years of his manhood. In the spring of 1862 when it appeared that in spite of the great victory at Manassas the preceding summer the war was not yet over, and some hard fighting was in prospect, he enlisted in the gallant Twelfth Virginia infantry, then stationed at Norfolk, becoming a private in Company E, known before the war as the "Petersburg Rifles." Upon the evacuation of Norfolk by the Confederate troops he served in the rear guard on the march to join the army in front of Richmond. At Drewry's Bluff he served as a sharpshooter and in the two days' battle of Seven Pines he participated in the action of his regiment as a part of Mahone's brigade of General Huger's division. Here he was wounded in the foot by a bayonet thrust accidentally given by a comrade, which disabled him for six weeks. McClellan having been driven back, the army marched against Pope at Manassas, and in the campaign in that region in the summer of 1862 Mr. Morgan participated with his regiment in Mahone's brigade of Anderson's division of Longstreet's corps. Thence the army moved into Maryland, and he took part in the battle at South Mountain, or Boonsboro, where he was badly wounded in the right hand and right leg, the leg being broken near the hip by a minie ball. He fell into the hands of the enemy, but was immediately paroled at the request of Maryland friends, and tenderly cared for until sufficiently recovered to return South, when he surrendered his parole to the Federal authorities at Baltimore and was exchanged. Though disabled for duty until December, 1863, he was able to be at the battle of Gettysburg, and under fire, though not actively participating. In December, 1863, he was detailed for duty in the medical department, and attached to the headquarters of Gen. Robert E. Lee, as custodian of the official papers of that department, and lay assistant to the medical director, A. N. V. He served in this capacity until the close of the war. During the siege of Petersburg he made application for a commission in the regular army of the Confederate States, and was accepted and appointed lieutenant, but in the turmoil of succeeding events the commission never reached him. He was with the army in the retreat, was under fire at Sailor's Creek and Appomattox, and surrendered and was paroled with the remnant of the army of Northern Virginia. Returning then to Petersburg he soon became engaged in the commission business, rising to the position of cashier in the house by which he was employed. Then he served three years as assistant cashier of the Planters' and Mechanics' bank, of Petersburg, resigning that position in 1874 to remove to Baltimore, where he entered the grain and commission business, which he conducted until 1883, then turning his attention to mining investments. The ancestry of Lieutenant Morgan, on the maternal side, included patriots who

served in battle for their State in years past, his great-grandfather Whitworth, having been a lieutenant in the war of the Revolution, his grandfather, Allen Archer, a captain in the war of 1812, and his uncle, F. H. Archer, a captain in the Mexican war and a colonel in the war between the United and Confederate States.

Colonel Emmett M. Morrison, of Smithfield, Va., who made a gallant record in the army of Northern Virginia, as commander of the Fifteenth Virginia regiment, Semmes' brigade, McLaws' division, Longstreet's corps, was born at the historic town where he now resides, August 21, 1841. His father was Edwin Morrison, a native of the county of Isle of Wight, and descendant of a long line of Virginia ancestors; his mother was Catherine Joyner, of the same county. He entered the Virginia military institute in 1860, and, upon the military organization of the State, entered the Virginia service as second lieutenant and was assigned to the work of drilling volunteers at Camp Lee. After six months of this duty he was sent to Jamestown island, where he served as adjutant of the post until the reorganization of the army, when he was elected captain of Company C of the Fifteenth infantry. Immediately joining his command at Yorktown, he participated in the battle of Williamsburg, and, during the following spring, was engaged in the fighting at Seven Pines, Savage Station, Frayser's Farm and Malvern Hill. In the latter engagement his regiment suffered the loss of its colonel, lieutenant-colonel, major and senior captain, either killed or wounded, and he was promoted major. In command of his regiment, at Sharpsburg, he bore himself with great bravery in the gallant charge made by his command on the extreme left of the army, driving a superior force of the enemy from their entrenchments and a mile beyond, putting an end to the Federal operations in that quarter. In this action half the officers and more than half the men were killed or wounded, and Captain Morrison, falling with a severe wound in the right shoulder, was captured by the enemy. He was held, as a prisoner, eight months at Baltimore, and, then being exchanged, returned to his command to take the rank of lieutenant-colonel, to which he had been promoted, to date from the battle of Sharpsburg. He served in this rank until about three months before the surrender, when he was promoted colonel. In the disaster at Sailor's Creek, early in April, 1865, he was again captured, and, being sent to Johnson's island, was held as a prisoner until August following, long after the close of hostilities. His life since then has been mainly devoted to educational work at Smithfield, where he has served a quarter of a century as principal of the Smithfield academy. During the same period he held the office of county surveyor and for twelve years served as county superintendent of schools. In 1894 he was appointed postmaster by President Cleveland. He was married, March 25, 1872, to Sarah A., daughter of the late Willis Wilson, a prominent citizen of the county, and has three sons, grown to manhood.

James W. Morton, of Orange Court House, Va., rendered his Confederate service as a member of the Fitzhugh Lee brigade of Stuart's cavalry. He was born in Orange county, November 8, 1844. When eighteen years of age, in the fall of 1862, when the line of battle between the great armies of Northern Virginia and the Potomac had been drawn along the Rapidan and Rappahannock,

and his home county lay as it were upon the verge of the battlefield. he enlisted as a private in the "Albemarle Light Horse," then enrolled as Company K of the Second Virginia cavalry, the regiment of Col. T. T. Munford. With this gallant command he was a faithful soldier during the remainder of the struggle, taking part in the fights at Chancellorsville, Brandy Station, Aldie, Bristoe, Mine Run, and the Wilderness campaigns, and many minor encounters of cavalry. At Spottsylvania Court House, in May, 1864, he received a wound in the left arm which disabled him for further active service. After the close of hostilities he returned to his farm home and soon afterward began the study of medicine, which he continued at the university of Virginia. He then turned his attention to the study of law, and, beginning the practice at Culpeper, in 1870, has ever since been prominent in that profession. He served as commonwealth attorney in Culpeper county for several years, before his removal to Orange. Since 1891 he has held the office of judge of the county court of Orange, and has given remarkable satisfaction by the ability and impartiality of his service in this honorable position. Judge Morton has also served as a legislator, as a member of the house of delegates from Orange county, in 1887-88. He was married November 29, 1876, at Atlanta, Ga., to Miss Emily D. Harper, of that city, and they have five children.

Colonel John Singleton Mosby, son of Alfred D. Mosby, of Amherst county, was born December 6, 1833, at Edgemont, Powhatan county, the residence of his maternal grandfather, Rev. McLaurin. At the age of sixteen years he entered the university of Virginia, where his course of study was terminated by an unfortunate difficulty with a fellow student, in which the latter was wounded. Mosby was punished for this affair by imprisonment, but the attorney who had vigorously prosecuted him aided him during this confinement in the study of law, the profession which he subsequently followed at Bristol, Va., until the secession of Virginia. During his residence at Bristol he married Pauline, daughter of Beverly J. Clarke, of Kentucky, prominent in the United States Congress and the diplomatic service. He was first advised of the action of the Virginia convention, at Abingdon, and immediately enlisted in the Washington Mounted Rifles, under Capt. William E. Jones. He joined Stuart's cavalry at Bunker Hill, and made his first scout at Bull Run. When Jones became colonel of the First Virginia cavalry he was appointed adjutant of the regiment, with the rank of lieutenant. He captured his first prisoners in a scout from Warrenton in the spring of 1862. When Jones was transferred to another regiment, Mosby was invited by Stuart to remain with him as a scout, and, in this capacity, he made a reconnoissance preparatory to Stuart's famous Chickahominy raid, and as guide led that expedition. After the Seven Days' campaign, being sent in the direction of Fredericksburg, he saw the opportunity for independent service in Fauquier county, and asked for such orders, but instead was sent to General Jackson. En route he was captured, but was exchanged in time to give Lee the information of Burnside's movement toward Fredericksburg, and serve with Stuart in the Second Manassas and Maryland campaigns. He made an important scouting expedition before the battle of Fredericksburg, and soon afterward was granted independent command. General

Lee, in his report of Confederate successes during the winter, noticed that Lieutenant Mosby had done much to harass the enemy, attacking him boldly on many occasions and capturing many prisoners. Thus began his famous operations, which continued throughout the war, and contributed in no slight degree to the success of the army. While in a sense independent, his command was always a part of the cavalry of the army, and he made reports regularly to General Stuart or Lee. During this period he was still of youthful appearance—was not of imposing frame, scarcely of medium height. In manner he was undemonstrative, but his brilliant gray eye revealed the gallant and indomitable spirit of the man. In friendship he was warm and tenacious. His mode of warfare, the object of which was to cut off the enemy's supplies and disturb his communications, was the same that made Platoff the hero of Russia during the French invasion, and was commended by Jomini. His men had no superiors in the saddle and were expert pistol shots. They used neither sabers nor carbines. They were never very numerous, but what they lacked in numbers was compensated for by high intelligence, inspired by reckless daring. Among them were some who deserve to rank with the heroes of romance. His rank in March, 1863, was captain, but he was soon promoted major, and toward the close of the war had the rank of colonel. Often large forces were sent against him, but he always evaded and frequently defeated them, capturing many prisoners. In March, 1863, he captured the Federal General Stoughton, in camp near Fairfax, and a number of his men. During the battle of Chancellorsville he attacked a Federal cavalry brigade, capturing several hundred prisoners. Near Chantilly, again, he defeated a large body of Federal cavalry, leading General Lee to exclaim: "Hurrah for Mosby! I wish I had a hundred like him." Near Dranesville, with 65 men, he defeated 200 of the enemy and captured 83 prisoners. One of his most daring adventures was a reconnoissance in the Federal lines, by order of General Lee, after the battle of Chancellorsville, in which he and one companion captured six men, and with two of them, rode undetected past a column of Federal cavalry. On another occasion he rode in sight of the Washington capitol, and by a countryman, sent President Lincoln a lock of his hair, a token which Lincoln's keen sense of humor fully appreciated. In addition to the numberless encounters along the border, he was of valuable service to Stuart in all his famous raids, including the movement into Pennsylvania, preceding the battle of Gettysburg. Another very important service was his defeat of Sheridan's plan to join Grant, in the fall of 1864, by rendering it impossible for the Federals to rebuild the Manassas Gap railroad, necessary to furnish Sheridan supplies and transportation. After the surrender at Appomattox, it was understood that he was not to be included in the terms granted to Lee, and on April 18th he made a truce with General Hancock at Winchester, pending negotiations. General Grant secured proper treatment of the brave officer and he surrendered at Salem, April 21, 1865, having then 600 men in line. His subsequent life was influenced greatly by the strong friendship between him and the great general who had ordered his honorable parole. He supported the candidacy of Grant for the presidency as the best way to restore amity in the Union, but declined office. Finally accepting

the consulship at Hong Kong, under the administration of President Hayes, he won distinction by the efficiency and integrity of his official life. Subsequently he returned to the practice of law and made his residence at San Francisco.

William H. Mosby, since the war a prominent citizen of Bedford county, was born in Albemarle county, Va., within a mile of the State university, and was reared there until he had reached the age of eight years, when he accompanied his family to Amherst county. He was earnestly in sympathy with the struggle of Virginia, against the invasion of the Northern armies, but was too young during the early period of the war to go to the front. But in October, 1863, he enlisted in the famous Forty-third Virginia cavalry battalion, commanded by his brother, Colonel Mosby, and was identified with the services of the battalion during the remainder of the war. He was on duty mainly along the Potomac, in Loudoun and Fairfax counties, and in the Shenandoah valley, regions in which Mosby's handful of troopers neutralized as many as thirty thousand Federal troops, and prevented the contemplated movement of Sheridan from Front Royal against Richmond. Private Mosby became adjutant of this famous battalion at the age of seventeen years and bore secret dispatches from the Confederate leader to General Lee, which he had not yet delivered when the army of Northern Virginia was compelled to lay down its arms. Subsequently he was associated with Lieutenant-Colonel Chapman in a visit, under a flag of truce, to General Hancock at Winchester, to ascertain the terms on which Mosby's command could surrender, a trust which indicates the estimation in which his abilities were held by his comrades and their intrepid colonel. He was once slightly wounded in a night attack on Harper's Ferry, and, at Front Royal, in the fall of 1864, his horse was shot and he narrowly escaped capture. After his parole he returned to his father's farm and was occupied there until the death of his father, when he removed to Bedford City and entered the retail grocery trade. In March, 1883, through the personal friendship of Gen. U. S. Grant, he was appointed postmaster at that city, and in 1892 he was again appointed for a term of four years. He is still engaged in mercantile pursuits and is prosperous in his enterprises. In December, 1872, he was married to Miss Lucy Booth, of Baltimore, and they have five children: Alfred D., Henry B., Virginia, Annie and Robert O.

J. Edward Moyler, a prominent citizen of Petersburg, Va., who was connected with the Confederate service, both as a cavalry soldier and as a naval surgeon, is a native of Sussex county, born August 26, 1841, the son of John Q. and Mary T. (Vaughn) Moyler. Mr. Moyler was a student in the university of Virginia in 1861 and was one of the "Sons of Liberty," the university company which went to Harper's Ferry, April 18th. This company, commanded by Capt. James T. Tosh, later aide-de-camp for General Colston, was thoroughly drilled and, while at Harper's Ferry was armed from the arsenal seized by the Virginia forces. On returning to the university the company was disbanded, and Mr. Moyler then joined the Sussex Light Dragoons, a cavalry company which was subsequently assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment. In this command he became assistant adjutant, but while the regiment was at Brandy Station, in March, 1862, he was detailed for duty in

the hospitals at Richmond, having been a medical student before his enlistment. He was graduated in medicine, in 1863, and was then commissioned assistant surgeon, Confederate States navy. He was assigned to the James river squadron and served upon the Virginia, the ironclad which was built to replace the famous floating battery which first bore that name and which served as the flagship of Captain Pegram and his successors, Commodores Mitchell and Dunnington and Admiral Semmes. He was stationed at Chaffin's bluff until the abandonment of Richmond, after which he joined the army of Johnston and surrendered at Greensboro. Throughout his naval service he was in the midst of almost continual fighting and demonstrated, by his coolness, the fitness of his professional association with the brave men of the James river squadron. After the war he practiced medicine in his native county until 1872, when he removed to Petersburg and engaged in the business of real estate and insurance agency. As State agent for one year in North Carolina he represented a large number of leading insurance companies and did a successful business. He has rendered valuable service to the community for many years as member of the school board, and is a prominent church worker and a trustee of Bishop Payne's divinity school. In 1866 he was married to Miss Mutie A. Owen, of Sussex county. Their five children living are J. Edward, Jr., John, Mary Vaughn, Mutie A., and Harry Lee, having lost one, Owen, by death, August 5, 1894, at the age of twenty-five. He was engaged in business with his father and was also reading law.

Joseph A. Mudd, of recent years a resident of the city of Washington, a physician and journalist, was born at Millwood, Mo., in 1842. He was reared and educated in that State, and from 1857 until 1860 attended St. Mary's college in Perry county, where Abram J. Ryan, subsequently known to fame as the "Poet Priest" of the South, was his professor of English and history. He was among those Missourians who were heartily in accord with the Confederacy, and enlisted in June, 1861, as a private in Company B of the First regiment, Third division, Missouri State Guards. After a time in a Federal prison he entered the company of Captain Penny, in independent service, acting in conjunction with the command of Col. Joseph Porter. He took part in the engagements at Carthage, July 5, 1861; Wilson's Creek or Oak Hills, August 10, 1861; Oak Ridge, July 17, 1862; Florida, July 22, 1862; Botts' Bluff, July 24, 1862, and Moore's Mills, July 28, 1862, all in the State of Missouri. After the latter engagement Dr. Mudd retired from the service until March, 1864, when he entered the medical service of the army of Northern Virginia as assistant surgeon and was assigned to duty at the Howard Grove hospital, at Richmond, Va., where he remained on duty until the close of the war. He subsequently resided one year in the District of Columbia, engaged in the practice of medicine, after which he removed to Mexico and resided for ten months at Cordova. Returning to his native State he was there engaged alternately in the practice of medicine and in conducting a newspaper, until 1883, when he went to Gatesville, Tex., and conducted a newspaper at that place during the succeeding three years. In January, 1889, he made his home at Washington, D. C., and with others established "The National Economist,"

with which he was connected as cashier and assistant business manager during the following four years. Disposing of his stock in the paper, he served as physician to the poor for a term of three years. He is now editing the official organ of a prominent fraternal organization. He maintains a membership in the Washington camp of Confederate Veterans.

James M. Mullen, judge of the hustings court at Petersburg, Va., is a native of Pasquotank, N. C., born September 10, 1845. He was educated in the Hertford male academy in the county of Perquimans, but when a few months past his sixteenth year he left his studies and enlisted, in February, 1862, in the Confederate cause. He became a private in the Virginia battery of Capt. S. Taylor Martin, of Maj. Francis S. Boggs' battalion of light artillery. In October, 1863, he was transferred to the North Carolina battery of Capt. L. H. Webb, in the same battalion, in which he served until the close of the war. In his address upon the "Last Days of Johnston's Army," which has attracted much attention on account of its faithful portraiture of the final days of the Confederacy, he has described his service as one in which "the lines were cast in pleasant places." "The running away," he says, "was not of our own choosing, for the boys of our battery would have had it otherwise, and we did not relish the paternal regard of the powers that were in our behalf. It did seem, however, that the authorities studiously avoided exposing us to danger and kept the battery continuously on the move, so as to shield it from the enemy's bullets." In 1866 Mr. Mullen was appointed register of deeds for Perquimans county, and during the two years he held this office he prepared himself for the practice of law, to which he was admitted in January, 1869. From that date until July, 1886, he was engaged in professional work in Halifax county and, in 1885-86, he represented his county in the State senate and held the honorable position of trustee of the State university. Removing to Petersburg in 1886 he speedily was recognized as a lawyer of deep learning and forceful as a pleader at the bar. He was elected attorney for the commonwealth for the city of Petersburg, and, taking office, July, 1888, was retained in that position by popular vote until, in September, 1894, he was appointed by Governor O'Ferrall judge of the hustings court of the city, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Judge D. M. Bennett. Subsequently the legislature confirmed this action by electing him for the term which will expire January 1, 1901.

Robert Beverly Munford, a well-known municipal official of Richmond, was born and reared in Hanover county, Va., a descendant of a family which has long resided in the State and has been honorably represented in its civil and military service. His grandfather, William Munford, author of a translation of Homer's Iliad, born August 15, 1775, died June 21, 1825, was clerk of the house of delegates at the time of his death, and was succeeded by his son, George Wythe Munford, who held that place for a considerable period and then became secretary of the commonwealth until the evacuation of Richmond. His great-grandfather, Robert Munford, served in the war of the Revolution with the rank of colonel. In 1843 young Munford was orphaned by the death of his father, Dr. Robert Munford, who lost his life by yellow fever in Cuba, at the age of twenty-eight years. When he had reached the age of fifteen years his home

was made at Richmond, where he found employment as a clerk until the outbreak of the war. In April, 1861, he enlisted with the Richmond Grays, as a private, and became, with this command, part of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment, of Mahone's brigade, with which he served during the year's enlistment. At the reorganization he was elected corporal in his company and continued with the regiment until after the Manassas campaign of 1862, when he was transferred to Letcher's battery, with the rank of sergeant. In the spring of 1863 he was appointed quartermaster of Pegram's battalion of artillery, the capacity in which he served during the remainder of the war. His military record includes honorable participation in such battles as Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, Mine Run, Spottsylvania, Second Cold Harbor, and the long and desperate defense of the Petersburg lines. A few weeks after Appomattox he was paroled at Richmond, where he resumed his occupation as a clerk. Soon becoming prominent in municipal affairs, he was elected to the office of city treasurer in 1870, but a new election being ordered by the authorities, five months later, he declined to be a candidate a second time. In 1872 the esteem in which he was held was manifested by his election as commissioner of revenue of the State and city, a position which he has continued to hold since that date, now a period of twenty-five years. Mr. Munford is a member of the Lee and Pickett camps of Confederate veterans, the Richmond Grays association, Pegram's battalion association and the army of Northern Virginia association. John H. Munford, elder brother of the foregoing, entered the Confederate service as a private in the famous Company F of the First Virginia regiment, with which he served until the organization of Letcher's battery, of which he became orderly-sergeant and was promoted to first lieutenant. At Malvern Hill he was seriously wounded and left on the field for dead. Though he recovered sufficiently to return to the battery, his condition was such that the exertion at the battle of Gettysburg brought on a fever which caused his death at Richmond a few weeks later, at the age of twenty-four years. R. B. Munford is a member of the Virginia historical society and the Southern historical society, and a life member of Holly memorial society.

Henry Frederick Munt, a prominent manufacturer of Petersburg, Va., entered the Confederate service from Prince George county, in 1862, being then about eighteen years of age, as a private of the Richmond Grays, was made corporal of Company F of the Twenty-first Virginia infantry regiment. He served at Richmond for several months after his enlistment. His first fight was at Williamsport, following the Gettysburg campaign, and, during the following winter, he was in camp at Orange Court House. He went into the campaign of 1864 in Jones' brigade of the division of Gen. Edward Johnson, and, after participating in the fighting during the early days of May in the Wilderness, was captured with the greater part of his division at the "bloody angle" on the field of Spottsylvania Court House. From that time he was held for a period of over eleven months in the Northern prisons, at Point Lookout two months, and Elmira, N. Y., one year. Finally being released after the war was over, he reached home on the last day of June,

1865, and applied himself to the duties of civil life. He was busied with farm work until the latter part of 1868, when he embarked on mercantile business, in which he continued to be engaged until 1886. Since then he has given his entire attention to the management of the Eagle Mills, in which he has met with notable success, though suffering severe loss on two occasions by fire. Mr. Munt was born in Prince George county in 1844, the son of John H. Munt, a farmer and prominent citizen of that county, who died in 1866. H. F. Munt was married in 1870 to Miss Rosa, daughter of Joseph R. Seward. He takes an active interest in the welfare of his city and has served with efficiency four years on the city council.

Captain C. W. Murdaugh, a prominent attorney of Portsmouth, was associated with the Confederate States, both in a military and a civil official capacity, holding a seat in the Virginia legislature through the struggle and also serving as a distinguished officer of the Sixty-first regiment. He was born at Portsmouth, December 28, 1828, the son of James and Mary (Riddick) Murdaugh. He was educated at William and Mary college, where he was graduated, July 4, 1848, after which he entered the university of Virginia for the study of law. After completing his professional studies he began the practice at Portsmouth, in 1852, and continued laying the foundation for a successful professional career until his work was interrupted by the threatening events of 1861. On April 19th of that momentous year, he entered the service of Virginia as commissary of the Third regiment, but resigned that position and, on June 16th, re-enlisted as lieutenant of Company I of the gallant Sixty-first infantry. The fortunes of this command and its operations in Mahone's brigade and Anderson's division, he shared until the close of the war, receiving promotion, in recognition of his faithful and meritorious services, to the rank of captain in 1864. Prominent among the engagements in which he participated were the battles before Richmond, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Salem Church. In the latter fight, May 3, 1863, he was severely wounded. Throughout the war he also served as a member of the legislature, an official station which would have exempted him from military service if he had cared to avail himself of the legal exemption. After the close of the war he resumed his practice with notable success and, in addition to his work as a lawyer in general practice, he has served acceptably two years as commonwealth attorney and six years as judge of the Hustings court of Portsmouth. He is a past commander of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, and is a Scottish rite Mason, Knight Templar and member of the Elks. Captain Murdaugh was married, August 13, 1856, to Eugenia Dickson, and of their fourteen children seven survive.

John Murphy, a well-known citizen of Richmond, Va., who rendered gallant service as a private in several noted commands during the war of the Confederacy, came to America, in 1850, from his native city of Cork, Ireland. He made his home at Lynchburg until 1852, when he removed to Richmond and, in the succeeding years, becoming a great admirer of the old commonwealth and thoroughly devoted to the cause of his adopted State, was among the first to enlist in her defense in April, 1861. He became a member of that spirited body of Irish soldiers, known as "The Emmett Guards," which was assigned to the Fifteenth Virginia regiment of infantry.

With this command he fought in 1861 and, upon the reorganization, the following year, joined Letcher's battery of Pegram's battalion of artillery and served the guns one year as a private, after which he was transferred to the Second Kentucky regiment, enabling him to follow the gallant trooper, John A. Morgan, under whose command he served until the close of the war, with the exception of his absence as a prisoner of war. He participated in the battle of Big Bethel in June, 1861, and in stampeding the Federal trenchers and burning the village of Hampton in July, and subsequently fought at Mechanicsville, Malvern Hill, Cedar Mountain and Warrenton Springs, where he was badly wounded. Among the later actions in which he took part were Saltville and Tazewell Court House, with Morgan's command. At Cloyd's Mountain, Va., May 9, 1864, when the Confederate forces were attacked by superior numbers under Crook, and Gen. A. G. Jenkins was mortally wounded, Mr. Murphy was slightly wounded and fell into the hands of the enemy. He was then sent to Camp Chase, near Columbus, Ohio, and held there until the close of the war. After being paroled he spent about one year in the Western States, and then returned to Virginia and made his home at Richmond, where he is now engaged in hotel management. He is an active member of R. E. Lee camp No. 1, Confederate Veterans, of which he was commander in 1886-87. He is prominent in the work of the Catholic church and of the organization of Catholic Knights of America, of which he served as president in 1886-87.

Henry H. Myers, a prominent merchant of Lexington, Va., was a student at Washington college at the beginning of the war of the Confederacy and began his gallant career as a soldier with the Liberty Hall Volunteers. He was born at Lewisburg, in what is now West Virginia, in 1843, and at the age of six years was brought with his family to Lexington, where he has since that time made his home. He left college in April, 1861, as a private in the Liberty Hall Volunteers, an organization of seventy-one high spirited students, which was incorporated in the Fourth regiment of infantry and assigned to the brigade soon afterward famous under the title of Stonewall, won at Manassas. With this brigade, at first under the command of Thomas J. Jackson and later attached to this division and corps, he fought in a skirmish near Winchester, then at the Manassas fight of 1861, through the Valley campaign of 1862, including the battles of Kernstown, McDowell, Cross Keys, Port Republic and Front Royal, and the defeat of Banks at Winchester, through the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, and Gettysburg. In the fall of 1863 he was transferred to the First regiment of Virginia cavalry, with which he served during the remainder of the war, taking part in many actions, prominent among which were Kelly's Ford, Brandy Station, Yellow Tavern, Trevilian and the Wilderness. At Fredericksburg he was captured by the enemy and was held as a prisoner three weeks near Washington. During his cavalry service five horses were shot under him, an indication of the activity and perilous character of his duty. After the surrender his command was disbanded at Lynchburg and he returned to his home at Lexington. Soon afterward he embarked in the hardware trade at that city, and, continuing in this business ever since, has met with notable success.



Engraved by J.K. Campbell, New York.

Herbert C. C. C.

Lieutenant L. C. Myers, of Harrisonburg, Va., was one of the first of the sons of Virginia to rally at the posts of danger at the time of the passage of the ordinance of secession. He was then a member of Company H of the Tenth Virginia infantry, which had been in training about twelve months as a volunteer militia organization, and was prepared to answer promptly when called into the service at Harper's Ferry, on April 17, 1861, under the gallant Stonewall Jackson. Under the same commander he participated in the battle of Manassas, in July, 1861, and in the campaign in the Shenandoah valley in the spring of 1862, until the battle of McDowell, May 8th, when he received a wound in the thigh which incapacitated him for further service in the field. During his connection with his regiment he held the rank of second lieutenant, to which he was commissioned about the time of the organization of the command. In 1863 Lieutenant Myers was appointed enrolling officer for his native county of Rockingham, and in this capacity he served until the close of the war. He then engaged in mercantile pursuits until 1872, when he became connected with the First National bank of Harrisonburg. Elected cashier of this institution in 1888, he has since held that place and discharged its duties with credit to himself and to the advantage of the bank. He is a comrade of the local camp of the United Confederate Veterans, and prominent in the Masonic order as a member of the Knight Templars and Rockingham chapter and lodge. Lieutenant Myers was born January 30, 1840, the son of Christian Myers, of German descent, and his wife Melinda Gaines, a descendant of an old Virginia family. He was married, first, to Miss Sallie Mauck, who died, leaving one child, and subsequently to Mrs. Margaret L. (Newman) Yancey, by whom he has a daughter living.

Herbert M. Nash, a distinguished physician and surgeon of Norfolk, Va., who served in the army of Northern Virginia through the war of the Confederacy, is a native of Norfolk, in the immediate vicinity of which his family have resided for more than two centuries. Among the first houses erected upon the original plat of the city, about 1680, were one by Thomas Nash and another by Thomas Walke. It is an interesting coincidence that, at the present time, the only surviving surgeons of the Confederate army residing in the city are Dr. Nash and Dr. Frank A. Walke. It was a Thomas Nash, a native of Wales, who was the first of this family in Virginia; and, with his wife Anne, he settled in Lower Norfolk in 1665. The name was transmitted with filial respect, and his grandson, Thomas Nash, was for many years a vestryman of St. Bride's parish, Norfolk county, a position in the colony of Virginia, held by gentlemen only, and, including as it did the functions of a magistrate, was one of responsibility. The grandfather of Herbert Nash, the fourth Thomas in descent, took part in the battle of the Great Bridge (ten miles from Norfolk), December 9, 1775, and was severely wounded. This battle, in which the troops of North Carolina and Virginia, under Colonel Woodford, repulsed the British troops of Lord Dunmore, slaying their commander, Captain Fordyce, and killing and wounding between 100 and 200 men, was the first decisive battle of the war, compared to which the affairs at Concord and Lexington were insignificant. Continuing in service, Capt. Thomas Nash was captured in a hazardous en-

terprise toward the end of the war, and was confined in a prison ship until the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, when he was released. During the last war with Great Britain—1812-14—he constructed the gunboats that, with the U. S. S. Constellation and the State troops on Craney island near the mouth of the Elizabeth river, signally defeated Admiral Cockburn's combined land and water attack upon that post, June 22, 1813. One of his sons, Abner Nash, served with the artillery in that action. The father of our subject, Dr. Thomas Nash, was noted for his suave manners, his guileless disposition and his unaffected Christian character. He honored the loftiest ideal of his calling, by devoting himself fearlessly, though when in broken health, to the care of the afflicted during the terrible yellow fever scourge of 1855, and met death calmly and honorably in the discharge of duty. His wife, the mother of the subject of this sketch, was Lydia Adela Herbert. The Herberts settled in Lower Norfolk about 1650 and were generally men of affairs and large land holders. Her father was sent to England in his youth, where he studied the higher mathematics and scientific shipbuilding. This industry he subsequently successfully conducted for some years near Norfolk, converting the timber from his own lands into the shipping, for which the port was celebrated in the busy earlier years of this century. Dr. Herbert M. Nash, whose lineage has thus been briefly mentioned, was born in 1831. After obtaining an academic education in the schools of the city, particularly the classical school of James D. Johnson and the Norfolk military academy, he repaired to the university of Virginia, from which he received the degree of doctor of medicine, June 29, 1852. After some time spent in the study of clinical medicine and surgery in New York city, he began the practice of his profession in Norfolk in the fall of 1853. Two years later he was called upon to face the appalling epidemic of yellow fever that destroyed a third of the people who remained in the city, including those nearest and dearest to him. He did his duty, fighting the unseen deadly foe with a steadiness which was subsequently again manifested in his ministrations to the wounded on the battlefield. He is now the only survivor of the medical men who were on duty in Norfolk in 1855. In 1861, immediately after the secession of Virginia and its adherence to the Confederate States, he was commissioned an assistant surgeon in the State forces and subsequently transferred to the provisional army, Confederate States. He was stationed at Craney island until that post was evacuated in May, 1862. Here he witnessed the naval battle of March 9, 1862—in which the Confederate States ironclad steamer Virginia destroyed the U. S. S. Cumberland and Congress—and the scattering of the remaining U. S. naval ships from Hampton Roads; and also the battle of the next day between the Virginia and the Monitor, the latter withdrawing into shallow water, out of the reach of the Virginia, which ship, being of heavier draught, could not again force the Monitor into close quarters. Nor did she ever subsequently accept the challenges of the Virginia for another combat. In the evening of the day of this battle he attended to the wounded of the Confederate States gunboat Raleigh, Capt. W. H. Parker, which was engaged in the fight. Dr. Nash was with his command at the battle of Seven Pines and later in the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, ending at Mal-

vern Hill and the retreat of McClellan's army to the protection of his ships at Harrison's landing on James river; was detailed to care for the wounded in the skirmishes on the Rappahannock after the battle of Cedar Mountain, and only rejoined Lee's army after the battle of Sharpsburg or Antietam. Promoted surgeon, he was now ordered to the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, and was with it at the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Salem Church and Gettysburg. Now ordered to the artillery of Hill's corps, he was present with it at the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction, Second Cold Harbor, and, after Grant's change of base, at Petersburg. During the siege of Petersburg he was placed in charge of the medical department of the artillery of Hill's (Third) army corps, as its chief surgeon, and reorganized some of its field hospitals, and was with his command when the army retired from Petersburg after its lines were broken, and was captured after being disabled in a cavalry dash near Appomattox Court House, but was paroled with the army of Northern Virginia the next day after its surrender, May 9, 1865. Dr. Nash's brother, Thomas Nash, was an officer of artillery and ordnance in the Confederate States army. Resuming the practice of his profession, in Norfolk, after the close of the war between the States, his indefatigable devotion to professional work, regardless of fatigue or exposure, soon secured for him a reputation of merited distinction. He was for some years the quarantine medical officer of the district of the Elizabeth river, an appointment unsolicited, made by the governor in view of his familiarity with the subject of infectious fevers. This position he was forced to resign by the demands of his practice. He was for some time the president of the Norfolk board of health, and systematized its operations. He was for several terms the president of the City medical society, of which he was one of the original members. He has for many years been a member of the American medical association, the American public association, Southern surgical and gynecological association, a member and vice-president of the medical examining board of Virginia, and ex-president and honorary member of the State medical society. He was the pioneer in his city in gynecological work, a branch of surgery that has occupied no little of his time. His contributions to medical literature have been made principally in the city and State societies. He is visiting physician to St. Vincent's hospital and consulting surgeon to the Retreat for the Sick in Norfolk. In 1867, Dr. Nash was married to Mary A., daughter of Nicholas Wilson Parker, Esq., who, under the "ancient regime" in Virginia, had long been a member of the old corporation court, the justices of which served without remuneration, and whose decisions were seldom reversed. Her grandfather, Copeland Parker, held a position in the customs department of the first union of the States, and, subsequently, surveyor of the ports of Smithfield and of Norfolk. Her great-grandfather, Nicholas Parker, inherited and resided at his seat, Macclesfield, Isle of Wight county, Va., which subsequently became the property of his eldest son, Col. Josiah Parker, who was a distinguished officer of the Virginia line in the Revolution, and the first member of Congress from his district, under the present Constitution of the United States. Another brother of her grandfather, Nicholas, was a lieutenant in the Vir-

ginia line and died at Leesburg while en route to join Washington's army at the North. The Parker family held a prominent position in England before the settlement of some of its members in Virginia. Dr. and Mrs. Nash have two daughters, Elizabeth Parker and Mary Louisa. Dr. Nash is both by hereditary proclivity and conviction an adherent of the Protestant Episcopal church and has been for years a vestryman of old St. Paul's church, erected in 1739.

John L. Nash, of Norfolk, a veteran of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry, was born in Norfolk county, March 4, 1840. Early in 1861 he abandoned his studies for the legal profession to become a member of a company known as the Chesapeake light cavalry, under command of Capt. Edgar Burroughs, who was subsequently promoted major of the battalion to which his company was assigned. During the occupation of Norfolk this battalion did picket duty on the Virginia coast, and Mr. Nash was in charge of the posts from Lynnhaven to Cape Henry, though not a commissioned officer. A few days previous to the evacuation, he was called to headquarters at Sewell's Point, and on the day of evacuation, acting as courier to General Mahone, he was probably the last man to leave Norfolk, overtaking his company at Suffolk. The battalion served throughout the Seven Days' campaign attached to the North Carolina brigade of General Daniel, and at a later date, after serving in the vicinity of Richmond, was merged in the Fifteenth regiment Virginia cavalry, Col. William B. Ball. On the evening previous to the battle of Fredericksburg, Colonel Ball delayed the enemy's advance for some time by driving the caissons of a battery to and fro at full speed upon a plank road, creating the impression of heavy reinforcements arriving. After Chancellorsville Mr. Nash served with his regiment on guard along the Rappahannock, and participated in a number of minor engagements. He took part in the campaigns from the Rapidan to the James, in 1864, was near General Stuart when he fell at Yellow Tavern, and fought with Rosser in the Shenandoah valley. Three brothers of Mr. Nash, C. A., Cincinnatus and Henry E., were members of the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade. Since the war Mr. Nash has been a prominent citizen of Norfolk, serving as magistrate about sixteen years, and as a member of the general assembly two terms. He has two sons and two daughters living. One son, Frank Fitzhugh, is associated in business with his uncle, C. A. The other, LeRoy T. Nash, M. D., born in Kempville, Princess Anne county, June 15, 1868, is a prominent physician at Norfolk. He was professionally educated in the college of physicians and surgeons at Baltimore, and was graduated with honorable mention, by that institution, in 1889, after two years' attendance. During the following month he passed the examination of the Virginia State board and immediately embarked in the practice at Norfolk, where he has already attained a high standing in the profession, and in the estimation of the community. He holds membership in the State medical society, the Seaboard medical association of eastern Virginia and North Carolina, and the Norfolk medical society, which he has served as secretary and treasurer; also is a member of the Norfolk military association. In the State militia service he has received the honor of appointment as assistant surgeon, with rank of captain, in Battery B (Norfolk Light Artillery Blues), First battalion of artillery.

William C. Nash, a well-known merchant of Portsmouth, Va., was born at that city, January 24, 1846, the son of John and Ann L. Nash. He was reared and educated at Portsmouth. At the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy his youth and the disinclination of his parents to permit him to attempt the fatigues and dangers of a soldier's life at that age, prevented his enlistment in the Virginia forces, although he was very anxious to go to the front. He finally was able, in the spring of 1864, to make his way through the Federal lines about Portsmouth, and, in company with R. L. Herbert and William Morris, he went to Chuckatuck, across the Nansemond river, and thence to the Blackwater, where he separated from his companions, and proceeded to Rock Wharf on the James river. At this point his half-brother, Lieut. Joseph R. Woodley, was stationed, in command of the signal corps, in which Mr. Nash enlisted and served there during the remainder of the war, engaged in the collection of information regarding the movement of the Federal forces in that vicinity, which was regularly transmitted to General Lee. In this important and valuable service he frequently encountered dangers, and had many interesting experiences, as may well be imagined. The faithfulness and activity of these scouts on the Potomac were of great service to the Confederate cause at that period. After the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, he accompanied Lieutenant Woodley and the rest of their party to Suffolk, where they surrendered and were paroled at Norfolk, not considering it of any avail to attempt to join the army under Johnston. Since the war Mr. Nash has resided at Portsmouth, where after many years' experience in the mercantile establishment conducted by his father and elder brother, both now deceased, he embarked in business under the firm name of Phillips & Nash. This partnership lasted for a period of eight years, after which Mr. Nash bought out his partner's interest. During the past fifteen years he has successfully conducted one of the leading dry goods establishments at Portsmouth, and as a business man and enterprising citizen enjoys the highest esteem. For five years after the war he served in the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, and was a member of the detachment that won a flag in competitive drill at Old Point Comfort. He is a member of the city fire department, and is prominent in politics as a member of the local executive committee of the Democratic party, twice being elected treasurer of the committee. Fraternally he is connected with the Knights of Honor, the Royal Arcanum and the Home Circle. On January 24, 1876, he was married at Buffalo, N. Y., to Blanche C. Place, a native of Virginia, and daughter of Lieut. Charles Place, of the United States navy, who lost his life by accidental injury in a foreign land prior to the Confederate war. They have two children living: Adelia and Mary. A daughter Jennie is deceased.

James M. Neal, of Danville, in his youth a gallant soldier and courier to Gen. George E. Pickett, was born at Danville, January 3, 1845. He is the son of Thomas D. Neal, born in 1812, a prominent citizen of Danville and the pioneer of the tobacco trade at that city, who married Louisiana Franklin, daughter of Col. Samuel Carter, a soldier of the war of 1812 and high-sheriff of Halifax county. Ten of the fourteen children of these parents are yet

living. Mr. Neal was reared at Danville and educated at Cedar Grove academy until the beginning of 1861. On April 23d, of that year, at the age of sixteen years, he enlisted as a private in Company B, Eighteenth Virginia infantry, with which he served in the battles of First Manassas, Williamsburg, Seven Pines and the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond. He was then detailed as a courier, attached to the headquarters of General Pickett, and he was with that gallant officer throughout the remainder of the war, except a few months, in 1863, when, on account of injuries received by the fall of his horse, he was ordered in attendance at the Virginia military institute. At the battle of Sailor's Creek, April 6, 1865, he was captured by General Custer's men, and was then imprisoned at Point Lookout until June 12, 1865. On November 1, 1866, he was married to Rose P. Allen, of Danville, and making his home at that city, he engaged in the tobacco business, building the well-known planters' warehouse in 1869. He has been very active in the upbuilding of the city, has held a seat in the council many years, four years as vice-president, was for several years president of the chamber of commerce, and is a director of the Piedmont railroad. In 1894 he was appointed postmaster for the city by President Cleveland. Mr. Neal has one son, Orin Allen.

J. Stanley Neale, of Alexandria, is a native Virginian, born in King William county, November 16, 1845. He was reared and educated in his native county, and before he had attained his sixteenth birthday, enlisted, with youthful devotion to the cause of his State, as a private in the King William artillery under command of Capt. Thomas H. Carter. His service began on July 1, 1861. In the Peninsular campaign of 1862, he fought with his battery at the battle of Williamsburg, and subsequently in the severe struggle at Seven Pines, where he was seriously wounded by a shell. This injury incapacitated him for further service and he was honorably discharged. Then returning to King William county, he engaged in school teaching and farming, and continued in those occupations until 1888. In 1892 he removed to Alexandria and assumed the position of manager of the "Alexandria Times," where he has displayed notable ability as a business man and journalist. Though his service in the army of Northern Virginia was not long, it was as complete and devoted as any could be, and he cherishes with much pride his memories of the war, and as a member of Robert E. Lee camp, of Confederate Veterans, at Alexandria, maintains his comradeship with the survivors of the mighty struggle. He possesses two valuable and interesting relics of the Confederacy, in a copy of the "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," presented to him by President Davis, and a picture of Mr. Davis, also presented by him. Mr. Neale was married, in 1873, to Bettie C. Taliaferro, a relative of Gen. William B. Taliaferro, of Gloucester, and they have one child, Clayton Ashford Neale, now occupying a position in a bank at Washington City.

George W. Nelms, of Newport News, a gallant private in the Confederate army and first commander of Magruder camp, United Confederate Veterans, was born at Petersburg, Va., February 25, 1843, the son of James and Ann Eliza (Lane) Nelms, both natives of Virginia. He was reared at Petersburg and in Prince George

county, with a common school education, and prepared himself in the art of telegraphy. At the outbreak of the war he was a private in the Petersburg Riflemen, and he entered the Confederate service with this organization, which became Company E of the Twelfth Virginia regiment, Mahone's brigade. He was stationed at Norfolk during the first year of the war, and with his company was among the last to leave that place when it was evacuated in May, 1862. Subsequently he was at Petersburg and Drewry's bluff, reaching Richmond in time to participate in the battle of Seven Pines. In this famous battle he was severely wounded and compelled to return to his home, where he spent five months in bed, and after that found it necessary to use crutches for a year. Disabled as he was, he rejoined the army after the battle of Chancellorsville and sought to be enrolled for duty, but this was not permitted, and he was again sent to his home. After the army had returned to Virginia from the desperate struggle upon the hills of Pennsylvania, he was permitted to re-enter the ranks at Orange Court House, and he was again in battle at Bristoe Station. After this he was detailed by the secretary of war for the telegraph service, and in the latter part of 1864 was transferred by the same authority to the service of the Southern express company. In this duty he had an office at Petersburg, which he surrendered at the time of Federal occupation. For some time after this he continued in the express service, with the Adams company at City Point, as agent of the Harnden company at the same place, and with the National company at Wilmington and Greensboro, N. C. Subsequently, he farmed three years near Petersburg, and then was engaged in mercantile pursuits in that city until 1872. After this he held responsible positions with the Old Dominion steamship company at Richmond, the Piedmont Air Line at West Point, and the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad at Richmond, until 1884, when he made his home at Newport News, and continued there in the latter employment for eight years. From 1892 till 1896 he was the agent at Newport News of the Adams express company. Since then he has held an important position with the United States shipping company. He is a valued citizen, is a member of the Masonic order and St. Paul Episcopal church, and is particularly prominent among Confederate veterans, as the chief organizer and first commander of Magruder camp, over which he presided for three years. His wife, Maria Louise Mayer, of Norfolk, Va., to whom he was married, September 13, 1864, is also deserving of note as a devoted friend of the Confederate soldiers during the war and a warm supporter of their organizations at the present time. As a refugee at Petersburg, after the evacuation of Norfolk, she did noble work in ministering to the sick and wounded. In May, 1895, she organized Bethel chapter, Daughters of the Confederacy, at Newport News, that being the second chapter formed in the State, and since then has served as its president, also as assistant inspector of the State division of the order. Mr. and Mrs. Nelms have one child, a daughter, Ann Louise, wife of Thomas M. Benson, of Richmond.

J. C. Nelms, Sr., of Suffolk, Va., a veteran of Company A, Sixteenth Virginia regiment of infantry, is a native of Nansemond county, born March 11, 1837. His father, James Nelms, a farmer

of that county, was a son of David Nelms, a soldier of the war of 1812. His mother was Martha, daughter of John Butler, of the same county. Previous to the outbreak of the war, having received an education in the schools of his native county, he was employed as a clerk in the mercantile business. On April 17, 1861, he enlisted in Company A of the Sixteenth Virginia infantry, and during the subsequent year he was with his company on duty near Norfolk, until he was transferred to Company A of Cahoon's battalion, with which he served in fortifying the Appomattox river, from the rifle-pits to Petersburg. Of this battalion he had attained the rank of sergeant-major, when it was ordered to Camp Lee at Richmond and disbanded. He then returned to his former company, in the Sixteenth regiment, and served with them in the second battle of Manassas and the famous fight which they made in defense of Crampton's Gap, on South Mountain, Md. Escaping the capture which befell most of the regiment at that point, he took part in the battle of Sharpsburg, and subsequently returned to Virginia with his command and went into camp at Winchester. He was then detailed in the commissary department, and in this capacity accompanied his brigade through the Gettysburg campaign, the campaign from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, the defense of Richmond and Petersburg, and the retreat to Appomattox, where he surrendered and was paroled. Subsequently he was engaged in mercantile pursuits at various places, either as clerk or partner, or traveling salesman, until he became employed as lumber inspector in the Suffolk & Carolina railroad shops. From this position he rose to the superintendency of the Southern lumber company, a position he held until the company retired from business in 1895. Since then he has been bookkeeper for the R. G. Dennis lumber company at Suffolk. He is a member of Tom Smith camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1867 he was married to Anna Mary, daughter of Solomon Hodges, of Suffolk, and they have four children: J. C. Nelms, Jr., and S. C. Nelms, both holding responsible positions with the Norfolk & Western railroad company; R. E. Nelms, and Martha Eliza Nelms.

Lieutenant Edwin Nelson, of Manassas, Va., was born in Prince William county, July 5, 1831. He was reared and educated in his native county, and at an early age gaining attention by his ability in public business, was appointed deputy sheriff. At the time of the beginning of the war of the Confederacy he was acting deputy sheriff of the county. He was enrolled among the members of the Prince William cavalry in the early days of the war, but, as his duties demanded his presence at home, he furnished a substitute during the first year of the conflict. In August, 1862, relieved of the responsibilities that had kept him from the front, he rendered important service by organizing a company of cavalry, which was mustered in as Company H of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry. With this company he held the rank of second lieutenant and did faithful duty in that capacity during the succeeding campaigns and engagements, participating in the December battles at Fredericksburg, and many skirmishes, until June, 1863, when he was captured while on a scouting expedition. A long imprisonment followed, at Johnson's island, Ohio, where he suffered the hardships and deprivations of the prison camp until he was released,

February 24, 1865. On March 3d, he was exchanged and ordered to report west of the Mississippi in thirty days, but before the expiration of that time, Richmond had fallen, and he never rejoined his command, as it was soon afterward disbanded. He then resumed work as a farmer in his native county, and presently took up again the duties of deputy sheriff, which he discharged until 1868. In 1870 he was appointed deputy clerk of the county, and after serving as such until 1887, he was chosen clerk, an office he still holds by successive re-elections. He has also represented the county in the State assembly by election, in 1877, and is a communicant of the Primitive Baptist church. On March 26, 1861, he was married to Elizabeth, daughter of Judge John C. Weedan, of Prince William county, and they have five children: Lizzie, born January 15, 1862; Joseph H., born 1866; James E., born 1868; Effie, born 1870; Paul, born 1873.

Hugh Thomas Nelson, M. D., now a distinguished physician of Virginia, was privileged as a youth to be prominently associated with the great war for Southern independence. He was born at Cloverfield, Albemarle county, Va., in 1845, the son of Dr. Robert W. and Virginia L. Nelson, and entered the military service in July, 1862, just after the successful campaign before Richmond. He was at first a private in the Morris artillery of Hanover county, but subsequently was on detached duty at the headquarters of the chief of artillery through the campaigns in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, until the capture of his battery at the "bloody angle," near Spottsylvania Court House. He was then transferred to Troop E, Fourth regiment of cavalry, Fitzhugh Lee's brigade. During his cavalry service he had two horses shot under him, one at Cold Harbor and one at Rude's hill, in the valley. After an illness in hospital he was detailed as a courier for General Breckinridge, and went with him to South Carolina. While serving as a courier it became his duty to carry to President Davis at Danville, the first tidings of the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia. He was present without the building where the last cabinet meeting of the Confederate States government was held. Returning to Virginia in June, 1865, he was paroled at Richmond, and after teaching school for several years, he was graduated in medicine at the university of Virginia, in 1875. He practiced his profession in Halifax county, and then removed to Charlottesville, where he has resided since 1881, enjoying a large practice. For four years he was secretary of the medical examining board of the State, and then president of that body, an honor which he resigned to become instructor in clinical surgery at the university of Virginia.

Colonel William Nelson was a noted artillery officer in the army of Northern Virginia, and among the many splendid organizations none were more noted than Nelson's battalion. The officer from whom it received its name entered the war as captain of a Virginia battery and had so proved his worth that, in his report of the battle of Seven Pines, D. H. Hill mentions him as worthy to stand among the best of his artillery officers. During the Seven Days he commanded an artillery battalion with the rank of major. Throughout that trying ordeal and the campaigns that followed in Virginia and Maryland, he continued to serve with distinction.

In February, 1863, Brig.-Gen. W. N. Pendleton, chief of artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, spoke of him in the following complimentary terms: "Maj. William Nelson, long in command of this battalion, is as gallant and efficient an officer as we have in his grade. He has served from the beginning of the war as captain and major, has exhibited courage of the highest order and a fidelity undeviating, and well deserves the rank of lieutenant-colonel." After Chancellorsville he received this promotion. At the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, and the other battles that closed with Grant's disastrous repulse at Cold Harbor, Nelson's battalion was still conspicuous in the fore-front of the fight. When Early moved against Lynchburg, Nelson was with him and, through the subsequent advance down the valley and into Maryland, maintained his high reputation for courage and efficiency. In Early's reports of Monocacy, Winchester and Cedar Creek, Nelson's battalion has frequent and honorable mention, and down to the closing scenes of the illustrious army of Virginia, Nelson's artillery did its full duty on every field on which it had an opportunity to serve the cause of the South.

Virginius Newton, of a prominent Virginia family, and since the close of the Confederate war a distinguished citizen of Richmond, in his youth served in the great conflict as an officer of the Confederate States navy. He was appointed from North Carolina as acting midshipman September 30, 1861, and was promoted to midshipman, provisional navy, June 2, 1864. He was on duty at the Norfolk navy yard in 1861, after it came into the possession of the Confederate States, and being assigned to the steamer Beaufort, participated in the naval battle off Roanoke island in February, 1862, under Commodore Lynch. In the same gunboat, under command of Lieutenant Parker, he participated in the battle of Hampton Roads, March 8th and 9th, in which the principal Confederate participant was the ironclad ram Virginia, and the young midshipman was mentioned for gallantry by Lieutenant Parker and Admiral Buchanan. He was next on duty on the Confederate States gunboat Gaines, in Mobile bay, in 1862-63. He then went abroad for service in the Confederate cruisers purchased in Europe by Maury and Bulloch. He was one of the officers of the Rappahannock, which it was necessary to send to sea before completion, and entering the port of Calais was detained there, and then upon the ironclad cruiser Stonewall, purchased of Denmark. He was with the Stonewall when she offered battle to two Federal battleships off the coast of Spain, and in the voyage to Havana. Arriving at the latter port in May, 1865, the crew was disbanded, and Midshipman Newton subsequently returned to Virginia.

Joseph L. Norris, a prominent citizen of Leesburg, is a native of that city, born May 11, 1834. In the period before the war he completed his education and became engaged in business as a contractor and builder. From this occupation he was called, in 1861, by the invasion of the State, its secession, and the consequent war which was waged upon the soil of Virginia. With patriotic devotion he entered the service of the Confederacy in the fall of 1861 as a private in the Loudoun artillery, and served during the greater part of the war in the artillery arm of the Confederate forces, being

transferred later to Striffling's battery, in which he was promoted to sergeant. He participated in all the engagements of these artillery commands while connected with them. In the spring of 1864 he was transferred to the cavalry, becoming a member of the Forty-sixth battalion, and shared in the operations of this command during the remainder of the war. Once during his service he was captured by the enemy, being at the time stationed with his battery on the Nansemond river, but was soon afterward exchanged. After Appomattox he returned to Leesburg and quietly resumed his business relations, and by industry and skillful management has made a success of his career. He is popular and influential as a citizen, and has served the city twice in the office of mayor. He is a member of Clinton Hatcher camp, of Confederate Veterans, and is still a comrade with the survivors of the gallant army of Northern Virginia. Mr. Norris is happily married and is the father of twelve children, nine of whom are living.

Captain John S. Northington, of Petersburg, at the close of the war an officer upon the staff of Brig.-Gen. R. D. Johnson, of Rodes' division, Second corps, army of Northern Virginia, is a native of the Old Dominion and a descendant of an old and honorable family. He was born in Mecklenburg county in 1835, the son of J. W. S. Northington, who had served in the war of 1812, and had taken to wife Mary H., daughter of Capt. Thomas C. Reeks, another soldier of the last war with the mother country. John S. Northington was educated mainly by his father, who was an accomplished teacher, and then went into business at Halifax, N. C., where, at the outbreak of the war, he was mayor and magistrate. Though this office exempted him from service, he enlisted, on April 9, 1862, in the military service of North Carolina and the Confederacy, and was sent to a camp of instruction at Raleigh, where he was elected junior second lieutenant of his company. Soon afterward he was sent to Norfolk, Va., where his company and others were formed into the Twelfth North Carolina infantry regiment. At the reorganization, in the spring of 1862, he was elected first lieutenant of his company. After the abandonment of Norfolk he served with his regiment in the defense of Richmond, and participated in the battle of Hanover Court House, May 27, 1862, and a few days later was detailed as acting quartermaster, in which capacity he served until December, 1862. Then returning to the line, he participated with his company in the battle of Fredericksburg, in D. H. Hill's division of Jackson's corps. After this fight he was transferred to the staff of his brigade commander, Gen. Alfred Iverson, as acting assistant adjutant and inspector-general, as which he served until the office was abolished in the following spring. He then returned to his duties as lieutenant of his company and took part in the battle of Chancellorsville and the Pennsylvania campaign, including the three days' conflict at Gettysburg. In the winter of 1863-64 he was appointed captain and assistant quartermaster of the Twelfth regiment, and he continued in that duty until the consolidation in the quartermaster's department, when he was assigned to the staff of Gen. R. D. Johnson, with whom he participated in the Valley campaign of 1864, and finally surrendered at Appomattox. He then returned to his civil pursuits at Halifax, N. C., and thence, in 1869, removed to

Petersburg, where, since 1890, he has been a partner in the extensive dry goods house of George J. Morrison & Co. He is influential in the community, has served upon the city council, and among his old comrades is highly esteemed. He has held the rank of commander of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans.

Thomas J. Nottingham, a loyal Southern man, was born in Northampton county, Va., May 28, 1834, was a ship carpenter by trade, and during the period of the war of the Confederacy, engaged in blockade running in the vicinity of Norfolk and served in a naval battalion, doing effective service for the cause. After peace was restored he removed to Tarr Farm, Pa., but returned to Norfolk in 1869 and died there, September 19, 1891, being at that time and for many years previous, a member of the firm of Nottingham & Wrenn, in which his son is now interested. His wife, whose maiden name was Mary B. Tarrell, died in 1886. Thomas J. Nottingham, son of the above, was born in Richmond in September, 1864. He came to Norfolk with his parents in 1869, and in 1882, entered the Virginia military institute, where he was graduated in 1886. He then became employed with the mercantile house in which his father was a partner, and after the death of the latter, on November 14, 1891, he joined in the incorporation of a stock company to carry on the business under the name of the Nottingham & Wrenn company. Of this company he was made vice-president, a position he has since held, contributing in no small degree to the success of the firm, which ranks among the largest dealers in coal, ice, lumber, etc. He is also a director of the Tidewater ice company and of the Hygeia ice company, and secretary of the Southeastern building and loan company. For six years he has served on the local board of improvement of his ward. Of Grice commandery, Knight Templars, he holds the rank of eminent commander. For three years he served in the Light Artillery Blues of Norfolk, for two years was commissary sergeant of the Fourth Virginia regiment, and in October, 1895, was appointed captain and ordnance officer on the staff of Col. C. A. Nash. In February, 1897, he was elected captain of the Jackson light infantry, Company E of the Fourth regiment, and in the war with Spain was in the Third brigade, Second division, Seventh army corps, Major-General Lee in command. Captain Nottingham was married December 12, 1888, to Miss Minnie V. Mapp, of Baltimore.

Judge Adam Wade Nowlin, a prominent attorney of Lynchburg, Va., was born in Missouri in 1841, but was reared and educated in Virginia until he had reached his twentieth year, when he entered the military service of the Confederate States. Before the secession of Virginia he had become a member, in 1860, of the Lynchburg Home Guard, and with this command he was mustered in in April, 1861, as Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, and with this regiment became part of the First Virginia brigade of Beauregard's army, under command of James Longstreet, then brigadier-general. He was introduced to the realities of war on the plains of Manassas, participating in the action at Bull Run and the main battle, called the First Manassas. Transferred then to the peninsula, he fought at Williamsburg, early in May, 1862, and received a severe wound in the left leg. Upon the advance of

the enemy he was captured and sent to the Old Capitol prison, at Washington, where he was held until paroled in the following August, when he returned to his home. On being exchanged in November, he at once reported to his regimental officers for duty, and although unable to walk without the aid of crutches—which in fact was his condition for four years after the injury was received—he pleaded for permission to follow the flag, but was discharged on account of disability in December. Thus ended his service with the Eleventh regiment, but he was able, in the summer of 1864, when Federal General Hunter was threatening Lynchburg, to serve as second in command of the volunteer force of one hundred and sixty men who annoyed Hunter no little during his advance. At the end of the struggle, in April, 1865, he was paroled at Rustburg, Campbell county, Va., and then quietly accepted the verdict of war and devoted himself to the study of law. Two years later he was admitted to the practice at Rustburg, Va., and earnestly turned his whole energy into the professional channel in which he has in the succeeding thirty years become so distinguished. In 1872, removing to Dallas, Tex., he was engaged there in professional duties for twelve years, within this period filling the position of city attorney from 1872 to 1875, and the office of district judge, by appointment of Gov. O. M. Roberts, from 1875 until his resignation in 1876. He returned to his old home and his life-long friends at Lynchburg, in 1884, and has successfully continued his professional practice. He held the position of general counsel for the Lynchburg & Durham railroad, from 1886 until its consolidation with the Norfolk & Western, in 1892, since which date he has acted as local attorney of the Durham division of that system. For several years he has served as city attorney of Lynchburg. Judge Nowlin is the son of Peyton W. Nowlin, a highly respected planter, who died in 1860, at the age of fifty-six years. The latter was a native Virginian and a son of James Nowlin, who served in the war of 1812 with the rank of major. The wife of Judge Nowlin is Lutie M., daughter of the late Rev. Joseph Spriggs, of the Virginia conference. They were married in 1868, and have three children: Percy C., Elmo P., and Viva M.

S. Walker Nowlin, a leading business man of Lynchburg, Va., was born at Oakville, Appomattox county, in 1843, where he passed his childhood and youth until he had reached his eighteenth year, when he entered the military service of the Confederacy. He became a member, in February, 1861, of the Appomattox Invincibles, a militia company formed for such service as the State might be in need of, and with this command was mustered in as a private in the Forty-fourth Virginia volunteers, the Invincibles being known as Company A. His early service was in the West Virginia campaign of 1861, in which he acquitted himself with credit and fought at Rich Mountain, July 11th. After the latter engagement he was taken sick with typhoid fever and confined two months at the hospital in Staunton. Then being sent home during convalescence, he was unable to rejoin his command until March, 1862, when he and his company re-enlisted for the war, and being transferred to Richmond, were ordered to Norfolk and there assigned, as an independent company, to garrison duty at Craney island. After the evacuation of the Norfolk district he went with his com-

Va 68

pany to Richmond and was assigned to the artillery, forming part of the Twentieth battalion, with which he served until, in 1864, he was promoted ordnance-sergeant and assigned to duty on the Brook road in Henrico county with the care of about 325 pieces of artillery and large military stores. Here he remained until January, 1865, having occasion meanwhile to be actively engaged in defending the depot from an attack by Kilpatrick. In 1865 he served at Fort Harrison, near Drewry's bluff, in defense of Richmond, until the fort was evacuated, April 2d, when he joined in the retreat as far as Sailor's Creek. In the battle at that place he was captured, and subsequently suffered detention at Point Lookout until June 19, 1865. After his release he returned to his home in Appomattox county, and in the succeeding October, removed to Lynchburg, where, with the exception of another brief stay at his former home and at Baltimore, he has continued to reside. In 1870 he went to Baltimore and was engaged in the wholesale grocery business there until 1873, after which he established a branch store in the same trade at Lynchburg. In January, 1874, he joined in establishing the house of Nowlin Brothers & Bigbee, wholesale grocery, liquor and commission merchants, establishing a business which has been continued to the present day, and in which he has been actively engaged from the beginning, though changes have occurred in the membership of the firm associated with him, which is now entitled Nowlin & Gibbs. Mr. Nowlin is an enterprising and valuable citizen of Lynchburg and socially popular. He is a member of the Masonic order and of St. Paul's church.

Addison N. Nuckols, M. D., of Danville, Va., was born in Hanover county, June 20, 1844, the son of Rev. Harden D. Nuckols, a Baptist clergyman. He is the youngest of five brothers who served in the Confederate army. His brothers, Samuel R. and Pettus H., were privates in the Hanover troop, General Wickham's old cavalry company, and though wounded in the service, are still living. This company was also known as the "Nuckols' command," thirty-four of the family being members. James M. was a quartermaster-major, and Alpheus B. served in the Ashland artillery, Longstreet's corps. Addison N. was educated at the Huguenot Springs and the Green academies, but left school in the spring of 1862 to enlist in the Hanover artillery under Captain Nelson. He fought with this command at Malvern Hill, but later in the year, upon the consolidation of several batteries, he was transferred to the Amherst artillery, Captain Kirkpatrick, with which he served in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Bristoe Station, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, Monocacy and all the fights of Early's expedition against Washington, and the Shenandoah valley battles of Winchester, Middletown, Cedar Creek and Fisher's Hill. At the latter battle he was one of three men, his comrades being Frank Kinkle and Logan Lackey, who rescued one of the guns from the Federals in the midst of a destructive fire. After the fall of 1864 he served as courier, attached to the staff of General Long. He was twice slightly wounded and several times narrowly escaped capture. In 1869 Dr. Nuckols was graduated in medicine at Richmond medical college, and during the next two years he served as surgeon with the construction force of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad. Since 1879 he has been a prominent

physician of Danville. He is a member of Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1873 he was married to Sallie Adams, of Pittsylvania county, and they have seven children.

William A. O'Brien, of Lynchburg, now conspicuous in the business and financial affairs of his city, had a gallant career in the Confederate army as a member of the Latham battery. He was born at Lynchburg in 1842, and on April 23, 1861, left his home as a member of the Lynchburg artillery, under Capt. H. G. Latham, to participate in the Confederate war. His service continued until the close of hostilities and was marked by fidelity and intrepid performance of duty. He participated in the first battle of Manassas with his battery, which was distinguished in the fighting against the flank movement of the Federals, and after taking part in the battle of Williamsburg, in the spring of 1862, was disabled by illness until just after the battle of Sharpsburg. He served with the battery at Fredericksburg, then commanded by Captain (afterward General) Dearing, and subsequently was on duty with the First corps of the army in the department of North Carolina and Southeast Virginia, taking part in the actions at Plymouth, Little Washington and New Bern. During the fight at Plymouth, N. C., he and a comrade, Bryant Kelly, were distinguished for volunteering to cut away an embrasure in the face of a heavy fire from the enemy, a deed performed with coolness and intrepidity, and fortunately without injury to themselves. Private O'Brien took part in the fighting at Bermuda Hundred and Cold Harbor, in 1864, and at the latter battle received a wound in the right hand which disabled him for further service with his battery. He was on detail with the quartermaster's department at Lynchburg for a time, and subsequently acted as independent scout in that vicinity, under General Colston, until the close of the war. Then returning to civil life, he soon became interested in business enterprises, in which he had notable success, and is now one of the most influential men of the city. He is connected with the Lynchburg cotton mill company as a member of the executive committee, is vice-president of the First National bank; was chairman of the finance committee of the Commercial bank, now merged in the former; and is a director of the Industrial society of Lynchburg.

James O'Connor, of West Point, Va., a veteran of Longstreet's old brigade, army of Northern Virginia, was born in Ireland, April 8, 1839, the son of John and Margaret (Vandelieu) O'Connor. Coming to America with his parents in 1851, they settled at Richmond, where the parents passed the remainder of their lives. During the war the father was frequently on duty with the home guard at the Confederate capital. In April, 1861, James O'Connor enlisted as a private in Company C of the First Virginia regiment of infantry, Col. P. T. Moore commanding. This regiment was assigned to the Fourth brigade, Gen. James Longstreet commanding, of Beauregard's army at Manassas Junction, and Private O'Connor participated in the battle of Blackburn's Ford and shared the duties of his brigade during the succeeding battle of Manassas, July 21st. With this brigade, subsequently known by the name of its later commander, General Kemper, he served until near the close of the war, his prominent battles being Williamsburg, the Seven Days' battles, Second Manassas, Fredericksburg.

Spottsylvania, Culpeper and Chapin's Farm. After the latter fight before Richmond, in September, 1864, he was put upon detailed duty, and during the remainder of the Confederate occupation of Richmond, was connected with wharf construction on the James river. After the end of the conflict, until 1869, he had employment upon a steamer running to Philadelphia, but since then he has been in business for himself, since 1881 at West Point. He is a member of John R. Cook camp. In 1862 Mr. O'Connor was married to Catherine Murphy, and they have a son and two daughters living.

Colonel Charles Triplett O'Ferrall, thirty-ninth governor of Virginia, was distinguished in the Confederate service as an officer of cavalry, as well in the more important encounters with the enemy as in many daring forays and expeditions. He was born on a farm in Frederick county, Va., October 21, 1840. His father, John O'Ferrall, of Irish descent, was a soldier in the war of 1812, a prominent business man and native of Berkeley county, and took an active part in political affairs, representing his county several terms in the house of delegates, and at the time of his death, holding the office of clerk of the county and circuit courts. His mother, who was a woman of great force of character, was of Scotch-Irish descent and a daughter of John C. Green, a distinguished physician, who married Eliza Campbell, of the well-known Scotch-Irish family of that name, of the Shenandoah valley. In his childhood Governor O'Ferrall manifested the active habits of mind and body that have characterized his career, and in early manhood he was distinguished for manly bearing and superb horsemanship, as well as a remarkable aptitude for business and public affairs. In 1856, at the age of fifteen, he was appointed clerk pro tempore upon the death of his father, and two years later was elected by the people for a term of six years. Long before this official trust had expired, Virginia summoned her brave sons to arms for the defense of the commonwealth, and young O'Ferrall, in the face of a strong Union sentiment in his county, and though exempted from military duty, promptly abandoned his official position and enlisted as a private in the cavalry service. He was soon promoted sergeant, and then lieutenant and then captain of Company I of the Twelfth Virginia cavalry, Ashby's famous brigade. He participated in the operations of this command during a considerable part of the war, and was in the battles or engagements of Kernstown, McDowell, Middletown, Mount Jackson, Harrisonburg, Cross Keys, Port Republic, Cedar Mountain, Catlett Station, Groveton, Second Bull Run, Poolesville, Brandy Station and Upperville, as well as innumerable fierce skirmishes. At Poolesville he was wounded in the right arm and shoulder in a saber fight, and at Upperville he was shot through the left lung, while rallying his squadron under a heavy fire of the enemy, and left for some time on the field for dead, and his death was announced in the papers of the State. In the fall of 1863 he was made a major and soon a lieutenant-colonel in the Twenty-third Virginia cavalry and took part in the operations in the Shenandoah valley during 1864 and the spring of 1865, participating in the battles of Charlestown, New Market, Piedmont, Lynchburg, Monocacy, the attack on Forts Stedman and Reno, Opequon Creek and Fisher's Hill, in which last named battle he was seriously wounded in the right knee. In April, 1865, he was

in command of his regiment and all the Confederate cavalry in the lower valley, and just at dawn on the morning after the surrender of Lee, with forty-eight men, he attacked a Federal camp of over three hundred cavalry near Woodstock, completely routing them and capturing many horses and some prisoners. His regiment with him in command held the last line, fought the last fight and captured the last prisoner on Virginia soil; and when he received, under a flag of truce from General Hancock, commanding the Federal forces at Winchester, news of the surrender of Lee, with volunteers from his regiment, he started to join Johnston's army, but before he could reach it Johnston surrendered. During his adventurous career he was eight times wounded. After the close of hostilities he prepared himself for the practice of law, graduated at Washington college, of which Robert E. Lee was president, and began his professional labors at Harrisonburg. At the same time he gave much of his time and energy to those political duties which the commonwealth in her distress required from her sons, who could effectively assist in the solution of the difficult problems of that period. In this field his abilities were promptly recognized and he was called to positions of the highest importance. He was elected to the legislature from Rockingham county in 1871, subsequently was chosen judge of the county court for six years, and at a later date was six times nominated for Congress, virtually by acclamation, and returned each time by a large majority. During the Forty-eighth Congress he was assigned to the committee on commerce; in the Forty-ninth he was chairman of the committee on mines and mining, and through four congresses was on the elections committee, of which he was chairman for two terms and when he resigned to become governor. Speaker Crisp was his associate on the commerce and elections committees for six years, and a warm friendship existed between these two distinguished representatives of the South. On August 17, 1893, he was nominated by the Democrats for governor of Virginia, was elected by an overwhelming vote and took his seat January 1, 1894. Four years later he retired from the office, after a successful administration, and resumed the practice of law at Richmond.

Captain William W. Old, a prominent attorney of Norfolk, rendered conspicuous service throughout the entire war in the armies of the Confederacy. He is a notable example of the sons of the old families of Virginia, thoroughly American and devotedly Virginian, whose intelligence and bravery adorn the record of the great struggle. He was born in Princess Anne county, November 17, 1840, the son of Jonathan Whitehead Old, and a lineal descendant of Edward Old, who settled in Lower Norfolk county, Va., early in the seventeenth century. During the Indian wars previous to the Revolution, and in that struggle itself, members of his family gallantly served the commonwealth. Thomas Old, of that period, and his kinsman, James Tooley, were members of the committee of safety in Princess Anne county during the war of independence. His mother, Elizabeth Anne Whitehurst, connects him with another old and honorable Virginia family. Her father, Col. William Whitehurst, was for many years the presiding justice of Princess Anne by commission from the governor. Captain Old studied in his youth at the Norfolk academy, then under the superintendence

of John B. Strange, who afterward lost his life, as a colonel in the Confederate service at Sharpsburg. In 1855, on account of a yellow fever epidemic, Colonel Strange left Norfolk and established the Albemarle military institute, where young Old studied three years. In October, 1858, after a few months at the Broun & Tebbs school in Albemarle county, he entered the university of Virginia, where he was graduated as M. A., July 4, 1861. Already the war had begun and the university volunteers had been organized at the university, in which he held the rank of junior second lieutenant. On the day of graduation they were mustered into the Confederate service, and assigned to Wise's brigade, then operating in West Virginia, where the company was on duty until disbanded in the following December by order of the secretary of war. Captain Old, determined to remain in the service, acted a short time as volunteer aide upon the staff of General Wise, and then enlisted as a private in the Fourteenth Virginia regiment, commanded by Colonel Hodges. He was wounded in the second day's fight at Seven Pines, June 1st, and in August was commissioned captain and assistant quartermaster and assigned to Battery No. 9, of the Richmond defenses, under command of Col. James Howard. He served there until May, 1863, when he was ordered to Jackson's old division, then commanded by Maj.-Gen. Edward Johnson, and placed in charge of the commissary train during the Pennsylvania campaign. In December, 1863, he resigned that position to become aide-de-camp upon the staff of General Johnson. On May 12, 1864, during the fighting at Spottsylvania Court House, he was engaged in carrying a message to Gen. C. A. Evans, when General Johnson and many of his troops were captured. He was subsequently assigned to the staff of Lieut.-Gen. Richard S. Ewell, and on June 12, 1864, to the staff of Gen. Jubal A. Early, with whom he served through the Maryland campaign and the movement on Washington in that year. In August, his old commander, General Johnson, having been exchanged and ordered to the western army then under General Hood, and assigned to command the division of Patton Anderson, Captain Old rejoined his staff, and served in the west until October 31st, when he was severely wounded at Florence, Ala., incapacitating him during the remainder of the war. On being paroled after the capitulation of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, he returned home and went to teaching school and farming until civil affairs were well settled. In February, 1868, he was admitted to the bar, and began the practice of law at Norfolk, where he has since resided and has been successful in his profession as a member of the firm of Walke & Old. He is a member of the Protestant Episcopal church, is vestryman of Christ church, Norfolk, has for several years been delegate to the council of his diocese and chancellor of the diocese of southern Virginia, and was a delegate to the general convention at New York in 1889, Baltimore in 1892, and Minneapolis in 1895. In 1870 he was married to Alice, daughter of Edward H. Herbert, one of the most influential men of Princess Anne county.

A. W. Oliver, now a prosperous farmer of Nansemond county, shared throughout the war the noted service of Mahone's brigade. He was born in Nansemond county in 1843, the son of Sylvester Oliver, a farmer of that county, descendant of an old Virginian

family, and former deputy sheriff, who was born in 1807 and was yet in good health in 1897. The wife of the latter was Mary E., daughter of William Flenhart, a seaman. In 1861 Mr. Oliver enlisted as a private in the Marion Rangers, or Company A of the Sixteenth regiment, Virginia infantry. He was with his command below Norfolk until the evacuation of that post, when they moved to Rapidan Station and thence to Richmond and joined Lee's army, participating in the Seven Days' campaign and the battle of Malvern Hill. Subsequently he took part in the battle of Second Manassas and the Maryland campaign, his regiment being particularly distinguished in the gallant action at Crampton's Gap. At Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, the Crater, Reams' Station, Hatcher's Run, and many other engagements he took part in making the brilliant record of his regiment and brigade, and finally surrendered with the army at Appomattox. He took part in the determined charge that cleared the lines of the enemy after the explosion of the mine under the Petersburg fortifications, took part in several fights on the Weldon railroad, and in the action at Davis Farm, August 19, 1864, he was wounded. On June 22, 1864, he participated in the fight at Wilcox's Farm, in which his brigade attacked the Federals outside the Petersburg lines and captured a number of prisoners. After the close of the war Private Oliver returned to Suffolk and took up the duties of a civil career without a particle of capital, but richly endowed with energy and a capacity for hard work which had been developed during his service as a soldier. He found employment on his father's farm until 1867, and then embarked in farming on his own account. His success has been remarkable and he now owns a splendidly equipped farm on the banks of the Nansemond, in direct communication with the markets by water, where he lives in comfort. He maintains his comradeship with his old companions by membership in Tom Smith camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1866 he was married to Lucy, daughter of James Oliver, of Nansemond county, and they have ten children.

William J. Oliver, of Nansemond county, a private of Company G, Ninth Virginia regiment, and during a large part of his service connected with the headquarters of Lieut.-Gen. James Longstreet, was born April 13, 1838, in the county where he now resides. His father was Armistead Oliver, a son of Capt. Jack Oliver, and descended from a worthy line of Virginia planters, for many years associated with the development of the State. His mother was Priscilla, daughter of Jesse Saunders, of Nansemond county. At the time when the crisis was reached between the North and South. Mr. Oliver, a young man of twenty-three years, was preparing himself at Portsmouth for a career as a manufacturer of carriages and harness. He promptly entered the service as a member of the Portsmouth Rifles, on April 18, 1861, a company which was subsequently assigned to the Ninth Virginia infantry as Company G. He served with the company at Pig's point in the repulse of the Harriet Lane, and afterward near Elizabeth City until the abandonment of Norfolk. He was with his regiment through the campaign against McClellan before Richmond, including the battle

of Malvern Hill, where his company suffered severe loss, and in the engagements at Warrenton Springs and Manassas in 1862. During the Maryland campaign, including the capture of Harper's Ferry and the battle of Sharpsburg, Private Oliver was detailed as courier on the staff of his brigade commander, General Armistead, and he continued in this duty until after the battle of Fredericksburg, when he was transferred as courier to the headquarters of the corps commander, General Longstreet. In this line of duty he participated in the Gettysburg campaign, the battle of Chickamauga, and the siege of Knoxville, Tenn., and after camping through the winter on the Sweetwater river, returned to Virginia and took part in the fighting at the Wilderness until General Longstreet was wounded. He was then granted a furlough for ninety days, but had passed but a third of this at Petersburg, when he reported to General Pickett's headquarters, and began a service with that general which continued until the surrender. For a time he was stationed at the headquarters of Colonel Carter, chief of transportation for the army. After he was paroled at Appomattox he returned to his occupation as a manufacturer at Portsmouth, and remained there until 1867, when he returned to Nansemond county and engaged in farming. He now has a valuable farm near Suffolk, is a valued citizen, maintains a membership in Tom Smith camp, Confederate Veterans, and is the present incumbent of the office of commissioner of revenue. In 1871 he was married to Martha, daughter of Jonathan Rodgers, and they have six children: Cora Lee, wife of John F. Lawrence, of Petersburg; Bertha May, instructor in an academy of North Carolina; Kemper J., Emory J., Floyd J., and Willie J.

Major John M. Orr, a prominent attorney of Leesburg, Va., was born in Loudoun county, February 8, 1820. He was educated at the university of Pennsylvania, and was graduated in 1838, with the degree of A. M., after which he devoted himself for several years to the profession of civil engineering. In this work he was engaged until 1842 with the New York & Erie railroad company. He then decided to turn his attention to the profession of law, and returning to Virginia, entered upon the study and prepared himself for admission to practice in 1846. He embarked in this profession at Leesburg and continued in the practice there until the beginning of his military service. In 1850 he was elected mayor of Leesburg, and was retained in that position by successive re-elections until he was removed by military authority after the war. During this ante-war period, also, he was happily married to Orra, daughter of George Lee, of Leesburg. Two of the children of this union are now living. In the spring of 1861 he enlisted in the Loudoun Guards as a private, but had served but a short time in that capacity when he was commissioned a captain in the Eighth regiment and assigned to duty in the commissary department. After the first battle of Manassas he was promoted brigade commissary upon the staff of Gen. N. G. Evans. Subsequently he was assigned to duty as post commissary at Millboro, and after some time spent at that place, was ordered to report to General Heth in Kentucky, as division commissary. He failed to reach General Heth, but joined General Leadbetter in that State, and was afterward made post commander at Greeneville, Tenn., and at

a later date district commissary in that territory. After the fall of Richmond he was paroled and then returned to Leesburg, where he resumed his former occupation. His wife having died, he was again married to Orra V., daughter of George W. Preston, of Loudoun. In the years that have elapsed since the turbulent war period he has succeeded notably in the practice of his profession, and holds worthy rank as a jurist. He maintains a membership in Clinton Hatcher camp of Confederate Veterans at Leesburg, and holds in warm comradeship the veterans of the Confederate army.

Colonel Kirkwood Otey, of Lynchburg, a distinguished officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Lynchburg, October 19, 1829, the son of Capt. John M. Otey, cashier of the bank of Virginia, who died in 1859, and grandson of Maj. Isaac Otey, of Bedford county, who served thirty years in the Virginia senate. He was graduated in 1849 at the Virginia military institute, where his soldierly qualities had won for him the positions of sergeant-major and adjutant, continued in the military service of the State from that date, and at the organization of the Lynchburg Home Guard in November, 1859, was elected first lieutenant. The company was mustered in April 24, 1861, at Richmond, as Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry regiment, of which Capt. Samuel Garland, of the Home Guard, was elected colonel. Lieutenant Otey thereupon became captain, May 10th, and serving with gallantry and efficiency throughout the succeeding battles and campaigns was promoted major in the summer of 1862, lieutenant-colonel soon afterward, and colonel in July, 1863. He commanded his regiment at Gettysburg, participating in the assault by Pickett's division and was severely wounded in the shoulder by the explosion of a shell, and again at Drewry's Bluff, in May, 1864, he was so seriously wounded as to incapacitate him for duty in the field. Among the other important battles in which he took part were Blackburn's Ford, Williamsburg, the Seven Days' battles, Seven Pines, Fredericksburg, New Bern, N. C., and Plymouth, N. C. In the fall of 1864 he was ordered on disabled court-martial duty, to which he gave his attention until March, 1865, when he took command of the local forces at Lynchburg. This honorable career being ended by the surrender he returned to the duties of civil life, and attained creditable success in business. In 1881 he was elected city auditor, a position in which he was retained by successive re-elections until his death. He participated in the reorganization of the Home Guard in April, 1871, accepting the office of secretary and treasurer. Subsequently he served as captain from June, 1876, until his resignation in 1888. He was the moving spirit in the organization of Garland-Rodes camp, United Confederate Veterans, of which he was commander at the time of his decease, June 1, 1897. He was also a valued member of the Masonic order, and these three organizations, the Home Guard bearing the tattered flag of his old regiment, and the Daughters of the Confederacy, followed his body to the grave and participated in the final honors paid the memory of a noble man and gallant soldier. On this sad occasion his widow, Mrs. Lucy (Norvell) Otey, received a telegram of condolence from Lieutenant-General Longstreet, her husband's warm personal friend. In the resolutions adopted by Garland-Rodes camp occur these sentences, a fitting tribute to the memory of the

departed soldier: "No more devoted spirit than his enlisted in the defense of our beloved South, and none has given more incontestable proof that he lovingly and loyally bore in his heart of hearts the memories of the cause that went down in defeat but not dishonor. An intrepid soldier, a courteous gentleman, a faithful friend, an upright and honored citizen, has met the enemy before whose relentless shaft all must sooner or later succumb." Colonel Otey's six brothers all served in the Confederate army: Lieut. Dexter Otey, who died in 1863; Lieut. Van R. Otey, Second Virginia cavalry, died in 1864; Capt. Gaston Otey, of the Otey battery, wounded and died in 1863; Capt. W. H. Otey, adjutant Fifty-sixth regiment, subsequently captain of ordnance; Col. John M. Otey, who served on the staffs of Generals Beauregard, Bragg and Johnston throughout the entire war; and Maj. Peter J. Otey, of whom mention is elsewhere made. A brother-in-law, Maj. John Stewart Walker, organized and equipped the Richmond Life Guards, and in command of the Fifteenth infantry was killed at Malvern Hill. The mother of these seven heroic sons, Mrs. Lucy (Norvell) Otey, organized and managed the Ladies' Confederate hospital at Lynchburg, which reported directly to the surgeon-general and was famous throughout the Confederacy.

Major Peter J. Otey, of Lynchburg, representative in the United States Congress of the Sixth Virginia district, and formerly a distinguished soldier of the army of the Confederate States, was born at Lynchburg, December 22, 1840. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, and during the operations of John Brown at Harper's Ferry in 1859, served with a company of cadets in defense of the State from the attempted insurrection. He was graduated July 1, 1860, and entered upon a career as a civil engineer, finding employment at first under the distinguished Claudius Crozet, upon the Virginia & Kentucky railroad. He was thus engaged when, in April, 1861, the State of Virginia decided to cast her lot with the Confederate States, and promptly enlisted in the military service as a member of the Fifty-first Virginia regiment of infantry. With this gallant command he served, until promoted to major of the Thirtieth Virginia battalion, with which he remained throughout the war. He was under the command of Gen. John B. Floyd, and operated in the Kanawha valley, southwest Virginia, in the summer and fall of 1861, participating in the successful engagement at Carnifax Ferry. Major Otey participated in the campaign in Kentucky and Tennessee as assistant adjutant-general to Gen. John B. Floyd, which culminated at Shiloh. He was with the garrison at Fort Donelson, but with the major part of Floyd's division, escaped before the surrender, after being actively engaged with the enemy. Subsequently returning to the army of Northern Virginia and receiving his commission as major, he participated in the Loring campaign in the Kanawha valley, subsequently in east Tennessee under Longstreet and then with Breckinridge's division in the campaign against Sigel in the valley of Virginia, participating in the battle of New Market, May 15th, when he was wounded in the right arm, and in the defense of Lynchburg against the attack by Hunter. At the famous battle of Cedar Creek, October 19, 1864, he commanded Wharton's brigade, and shared in the honors that during the onset of the fight were achieved by the Confederate forces.

Other engagements in which he participated during his military career were those of Monticello, with the warship at Sewell's Point, Fayette Court House, Princeton, W. Va., Early's Valley campaign and Knoxville, Tenn. On March 2, 1865, during the disaster which befell the remnant of Early's army at Waynesboro, he was captured by the Federals, and after this until June, 1865, was confined as a prisoner of war at Fort Hamilton. On returning to Virginia he resumed the duties of his profession as civil engineer, and became distinguished not only for his technical skill, but for remarkable ability as a business man and an organizer and executive of important enterprises. Among other notable undertakings he has carried to success, the most prominent is the organizing and building of the Lynchburg & Durham railroad. In 1894 he was elected to Congress from the Sixth Virginia district by a handsome plurality, and in 1896 and 1898 was honored by re-elections.

William Thomas Owen, of Powhatan county, is deserving of mention as illustrating that important element of the army of Northern Virginia that represented families of recognized worth and patriotic records, and added heroic deeds to the treasured memories of their ancestral lines. He was the son of Richard Johnson Owen, a native of Appomattox county, whose father was Elisha Owen, a soldier of the Revolutionary war who was with the army at Yorktown. William Owen, the father of the latter, was also a native of Virginia. Richard Johnson Owen married Narcissa Langsdon, of French-Huguenot descent, daughter of Benjamin Langsdon, a wealthy planter and slave-holder, who freed all his slaves prior to the war of the Revolution. William Thomas Owen enlisted for Virginia in the spring of 1861, and became a sergeant in the company of Captain Mosby in the famous legion of Gen. Henry Wise. He shared the services of this command until, in the spring of 1864, he fell near Drewry's bluff in the gallant repulse of Butler's advance on Richmond. A brother of this martyr to the cause of Southern independence, Austin Everett Owen, D. D., is now a prominent member of the Baptist ministry, and has done a noble work in the advancement of the South since the war. Dr. Owen was pursuing theological studies at Richmond college when the institution was closed in May, 1861. He then went to Brunswick county where he served in the Baptist pastorate for ten years. In 1871 he was called to Court street church, Portsmouth, where his ministry of a quarter of a century, and more, has resulted in great good. His church has become one of the leading Baptist churches of the South, with a membership of five hundred and sixty. It has one of the finest auditoriums of the country, as well as a handsome chapel. Dr. Owen has held the positions of trustee of the southwest Virginia institute, vice-president of the general association of Virginia, moderator of the Portsmouth association, and president of the pastors' organizations in Norfolk and Portsmouth, and is now president of the general association of Virginia. He is trustee of Ryland institute, Berkley, and of Richmond college; corresponding secretary of the foreign board of the general association of Virginia, and for ten years vice-president for Virginia of the foreign board of the southern Baptist convention. He was one of the founders and editor for two years of the Atlantic Baptist, and has contributed important articles to other religious

journals, notable among which are a series of letters to young ministers. He is widely known as an eloquent speaker, through his many commencement addresses, his presentations of the foreign mission cause, and his lectures upon general subjects. The degree of doctor of divinity was conferred upon him by the Baylor university of Texas. Dr. Owen was born in Powhatan county, September 27, 1837. He was married December 6, 1866, to Henrietta, sister of Robert W. Hall, of Brunswick county, who served in Pickett's division and was captured at Sailor's Creek. They have seven children living: Minnie Etta, wife of M. P. Claud, of Portsmouth; Nettie Blanche, wife of John Freeman, of North Carolina; Sallie Hall, wife of J. E. Britton, of Norfolk; Austin Everett, Jr., of the Norfolk bank; William Russell, Jennie and Richard Clement.

Colonel John C. Owens, a patriotic officer conspicuous among the gallant soldiers contributed by southeastern Virginia to the Confederate cause, was born in Matthews county, March 19, 1830. His father, John Owens, a prosperous farmer of that county, was a worthy descendant of ancestors who had been liberty-loving colonists and Revolutionary soldiers. While a child Colonel Owens was brought by his parents to Portsmouth, Va., which was his home during the remainder of his life. At the outbreak of the war he was captain of the Portsmouth Rifle company, a military organization which had been in existence nearly seventy years, and had a fine reputation for discipline and efficiency. Responding promptly to the call of Governor Letcher, he was mustered in with his company April 20, 1861, and immediately went on duty. Stationed at Pig Point for several months he commanded his company in the artillery fight with the Federal steamer *Harriet Lane*, attracting favorable attention by his coolness and skill. Upon the organization of the Ninth regiment at Petersburg, the Rifles were assigned as Company G, and Captain Owens remained in command until the reorganization in May, 1862, when he was promoted major of the regiment. In this rank he participated in the battle of Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' campaign under Lee. Major Owens was attached to Huger's division, and while that command was moving down the Charles City road to cut off McClellan's retreat, he became impatient with the slowness of the movement, and asked General Huger for permission to take the advance with the Ninth regiment, or any other force that might be assigned him, and push forward rapidly until he encountered a considerable body of the enemy. But this request it was not thought advisable to grant. McClellan gained a strong position at Malvern Hill, against which Major Owens' regiment was thrown with heavy loss in the fruitless assault of July 1st. At the battle of Warrenton Springs, August, 1862, Major Owens was wounded, but he remained with his command through the Second Manassas and Maryland campaigns, including the capture of Harper's Ferry and battle of Sharpsburg. He participated in the battle of Fredericksburg and the Suffolk campaign of Longstreet's corps, and in June, 1863, was promoted colonel. In this rank he commanded the Ninth regiment in the charge of Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division, on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg, and was gallantly leading his men in the desperate assault when he fell

mortally wounded. About 2 o'clock of the following night he died in the field hospital, and his body was buried at a spot near by, until after the war, when it was removed to Oakwood cemetery, Portsmouth. Capt. E. W. Owens, oldest son of the foregoing, was born in Portsmouth in February, 1855. He and two younger children were orphaned by the death of their mother in 1861, and of their father in 1863. At the age of fifteen he found employment as a drug clerk, and seven years later he established an independent business in the same line of trade, which he has since conducted with gratifying success. He is an influential citizen, has served several years as chairman of the county Democratic committee, and for six years as school trustee; is an official member of the Owens memorial church, of Portsmouth, and is connected with several fraternal orders. When the Portsmouth Rifles were reorganized he became second lieutenant, and being promoted captain, held that rank about two years previous to the war with Spain, when he went to the front as captain of the Rifles, Company L, Second regiment Virginia volunteers.

Colonel William H. Palmer, of Richmond, distinguished in the army of Northern Virginia as adjutant-general and chief of staff of the Third army corps, was born at that city in 1835. Offering his services to the State early in the struggle he became on April 21, 1861, the first lieutenant of Company D of the First Virginia infantry regiment. Soon afterward he was assigned the duties of adjutant, and at the reorganization in May, 1862, was promoted major, in which rank he commanded his regiment at the battle of Williamsburg. Previous to this he had already served as adjutant-general of the brigade of Gen. A. P. Hill, and during the Manassas campaign as adjutant-general of Longstreet's division. In October, 1862, he was transferred to the adjutant-general's department as chief of staff of Gen. A. P. Hill's light division of Jackson's corps of the army of Northern Virginia, as which he served until, after the battle of Chancellorsville and the death of General Jackson, the Third army corps was formed and Gen. A. P. Hill placed in command, when he remained with his former commander as adjutant-general and chief of staff of the Third army corps, through the campaign from the Wilderness to Petersburg, the defense of the capital, and the retreat to Appomattox. During his service he participated in all the battles of the army of Northern Virginia, except the early affairs before Richmond, following the battle of Williamsburg, where he was wounded and disabled; and the battle of Gettysburg, at the time of which he was disabled from a wound received at Chancellorsville when in front of the lines, immediately between Gen. "Stonewall" Jackson and the enemy. Returning to Richmond after the surrender, he re-engaged in the business of civil life, and becoming successful in financial affairs is now accounted one of the leading bankers of the city. He is a member of both Lee and Pickett camps, U. C. V.

Lieutenant John T. Parham, of Petersburg, a veteran of the Thirty-second Virginia infantry regiment, is a native of Prince George county, born in 1842. His father, Henry Parham, for some time clerk of the county of Prince George, was in the Confederate service first as a courier for Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, and later was on service at the Confederate States arsenal until the

close of hostilities. John T. Parham enlisted in the Confederate service April 24, 1861, as a private in the Thirty-second regiment. During the remainder of that year he served upon the peninsula, and upon the opening of the campaign against McClellan he took part in Longstreet's division in the battles of Williamsburg and Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' campaign which resulted in the discomfiture of the Federal army. Then in Semmes' brigade of McLaws' division he marched into Maryland, and was with his regiment at Crampton's Gap, where the artillery in charge of Colonel Montague rendered effective service. His regiment went into the fight at Sharpsburg with 158 men and lost 15 killed and 57 wounded. Their colors received seventeen shots, and the pike was twice cut in two by rifle balls. At Fredericksburg, in Corse's brigade of Pickett's division, he served in the center of the Confederate line, and subsequently he was with his division in the Suffolk campaign. After the Gettysburg campaign he was transferred to Gen. Eppa Hunton's brigade. In an engagement at Brooks' church he was wounded, but he continued with his regiment, took part in the hard fighting at Cold Harbor, Fort Harrison, Fort Gilmer and Chaffin's Bluff, and continued in the defense of Richmond until the evacuation. He marched with the army to Appomattox and was paroled at Lynchburg three days after the surrender. During his service he was promoted corporal, later was on the color guard, and at the close had the position of ensign with the rank of first lieutenant. He has been engaged in business since the war, and has rendered public service as a member of the city council, as deputy collector of customs under Cleveland's first administration, and as deputy sergeant since 1888. He is past grand commander of the Knights Templar of Virginia, and has had a distinguished career in the Masonic and other orders. In 1871 he was married to Miss Lucy Hatcher, of Chesterfield county, whose seven brothers served in the Confederate army, two losing their lives. They have two children, H. V. Parham, deputy clerk, and Anna Belle. The son, H. V. Parham, served as second lieutenant in Company G, Third regiment Virginia volunteers, in the recent war with Spain.

Charles D. Parker, of Hampton, Va., who entered the service of the Confederacy in his fifteenth year, and served through a large part of the war, was born in Halifax county, N. C., November 24, 1847. His father, David Parker, of Edgecombe county, N. C., who served in the Mexican war and died in 1848, was the son of Hardy Parker, a native of England who accompanied his parents to Edgecombe county in childhood, and died upon the farm which he had occupied for sixty-one years, at the age of eighty-four, his wife, Harriet Weeks, living to the same age. The wife of David Parker was Emily, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Mangum) Wood. Charles D. Parker entered the service in October, 1862, as a courier for Capt. William Brown, and seven months later was attached to the quartermaster's department under the same officer. He was subsequently detailed to guard various warehouses along the railroads of North Carolina and Virginia, under Col. David Pender, and after a year's service in this capacity, was put in charge of a wagon train, and sent through the country gathering up the tenth which was contributed by the citizens for

the maintenance of the army. The fact that he never had any difficulty in obtaining the full legal share from each farmer, and frequently was told to help himself to what he needed, illustrates the generous devotion of the people. In the fall of 1864 young Parker, whose efficient services had attracted the attention of his superiors, was granted an examination for the army service, and was assigned to Company C of the Seventeenth North Carolina regiment, as a private. Soon afterward he was detached as a provost guard at Weldon, N. C., where he remained until the close of the war. He then found himself penniless and with his life career yet to choose. He worked at farming until August, 1866, when he began an apprenticeship of over three years in the carpenter's trade at Goldsboro, N. C. He subsequently attended school, and after that was in the service of the Wilmington & Weldon railroad as brakeman and later as freight conductor. From 1872 he was for twenty years mainly associated with railroad work, as foreman for a contractor, car inspector and employe in the cabinet shops, latterly with the Richmond & Danville road, at Richmond. Since 1892 he has conducted with much success an establishment of his own as general mechanic at Hampton. In its management he has displayed both mechanical genius and a fine business ability. He maintains his Confederate comradeship as a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3. He was married in 1867 to Lear A. Green, who died in 1871, leaving one child, Walter L., and in 1880 he married Ella M. De Berry.

Joseph A. Parker, now a leading business man at Portsmouth, Va., had an adventurous career during the war of the Confederacy as a member of Captain McNeil's command, which rendered famous service in the northern valley and along the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, at times keeping ten thousand Federal soldiers on guard in that region. He was born at Portsmouth September 7, 1841, and was educated at St. Mary's college, Maryland, where he spent four years in study. In July, 1864, he left there with six student companions to enter the Confederate service. He, with two of his comrades, joined McNeil's command at Moorefield, and served with it to the end. John H. McNeil, their leader, was a Virginian, but for several years had been a resident of Missouri, and had had some military experience in Kansas. In 1861 he had returned to his native region, and organized an independent command of two hundred and fifty men, which contained spirited and adventure-loving men from nearly every trade, business and profession. In the fall of 1864, a rumor reached them that Sheridan had been defeated by Early and was in full retreat, and their numbers being increased by stragglers, they moved to burn the Crawfordsville bridge on the Shenandoah to cut off Sheridan's retreat. On the following day, during a skirmish with a Federal picket, McNeil was shot down by one of the stragglers, whom he had refused permission to accompany the squad to burn the bridge. It was afterward learned that the straggler was a Federal spy, but his deed of assassination was seen by no one but the victim, and he strangely requested his men, before his death, not to punish his murderer. Meanwhile the assassin escaped. Jesse, the son of Captain McNeil, now assumed command, as first lieutenant, but on account of his youthfulness and inexperience, some advocated uniting the

company with the command of Harry Gilmer. In order to demonstrate the young lieutenant's fitness, a movement was planned against Cumberland, Md., which was executed with great bravery and adroitness, and resulted in the capture of General Kelly, in command at Cumberland, and of General Crook, since known as a great Indian fighter, who happened to be at Cumberland on a visit to the young lady who afterward became his wife, a lady, by the way, who was thoroughly Confederate and had a brother in McNeil's troopers. This famous exploit was performed by sixty-five men, on a bitterly cold night, and four Federal pickets were evaded in reaching their destination. They conveyed the two Federal generals to Richmond and they were soon exchanged. In this and other exciting adventures Mr. Parker took part, and well earned the honorable title of Confederate veteran. He was paroled May 12, 1865, and made his way home on horseback alone, encountering no little danger in passing through the mountains. In the subsequent years he has attained prominence and influence in business and social life, conducting a wholesale grocery establishment, and holding the office of director in the Merchants and Farmers' bank, the Portsmouth cotton manufacturing company, and the Western branch Strawbridge company, and the presidency of the Air Line turnpike. In 1867 he was married to Mary Virginia Phillips, and they have eleven children living.

Lieutenant John Henry Parker, of Manchester, Va., was born at Port Royal in 1822, and left home at the age of fifteen years to enter upon a life at sea. He enlisted in the United States navy as midshipman on the sloop-of-war Falmouth, and after a three years' cruise on this vessel, attended the Naval asylum school at Philadelphia. After this he was stationed six months at the Norfolk navy yard, and then went to sea again. His career in the United States navy continued with distinction to himself and credit to the service for many years, during which he received promotion through several grades. With the rank of first lieutenant upon the sloop-of-war Dakota, Commander Radford, of Virginia, then lying in the harbor of Hong Kong, China, he first received news of the hostilities between the North and South. Commodore Stribling, of South Carolina, lay near by in the Hartford. Some exciting discussions followed between the Northern and Southern officers, and Lieutenant Parker was called before the commodore on account of expressing his opinion that the South was entitled to some of the men-of-war. The lieutenant asked to be allowed to return to the United States, on account of the embarrassment of his position, but as most of the officers of the squadron were Southern men, his request could not be granted. Commodore Stribling and Captain Radford were soon relieved from duty by Northern officers, and the vessels sailed for New York. While coaling at St. Thomas, instructions were received for the Dakota to assist in the capture of the Sumter, Captain Semmes' privateer. Before reaching Martinique, an English vessel was sighted and mistaken for the Sumter and Lieutenant Parker was in an unpleasant predicament, as the vessel prepared for action, it being his duty to fight his ship under the commander's orders, and was much relieved by the discovery that Semmes had eluded his pursuers. Returning to St. Thomas he sought, through a friend, to

obtain the protection of the British flag, but found that impossible. Before reaching New York it had been intimated that he was destined for Fort Warren, but he was handsomely treated by the Northern officers, was given all the money due him and granted leave of absence. He then started for Virginia with a Marylander who had been running the blockade with hospital stores, and two others, and reaching the Virginia river at a point where it was six miles wide, they started across in a small boat. Unfortunately the attention of a patrol boat was soon attracted, and the party was captured before they could return to the Maryland shore, with the exception of Lieutenant Parker, who jumped overboard and made the shore in safety. It was a winter night, February, 1862, and the discomfort which he experienced on landing was heightened by the necessity of making his way, in order to escape, through a marsh covered with thin ice, in which he waded till the water reached his neck. Finally, more dead than alive, he found shelter with hospitable Marylanders, and after an exciting experience eluding Federal patrols, he was permitted by one of his new found friends, on the Wicomico, to "steal" his dug-out for a twenty-two mile trip down that river and across the Potomac. After being compelled to pay his crew \$100 he reached Virginia soil without detection, and there at once encountered a guard of sharpshooters, who indicated their willingness to forcibly resent his nocturnal invasion of the State. But he soon found friends and proceeding to Richmond, having resigned his Federal commission he was commissioned first lieutenant in the Confederate navy. He was first employed in obstructing the James river at Drewry's bluff, was afterward attached to the naval rendezvous at Richmond, and later established and had charge of a navy yard on the Pamunkey river. This the evacuation of the Norfolk region compelled him to abandon and destroy, including the hull of a gunboat which he had under way. Then being ordered to the department of equipment, repairs, etc., of the navy, with Captain Farrand, the successor of Captain Maury, he was soon left in charge of that department, including care of one of the navy yards, and a naval storehouse, from which he furnished building material to Selma and other points. In the discharge of numerous duties of this sort, he remained at Richmond until the evacuation, when he was deputed by Secretary Mallory to vacate the naval office, destroy the Patrick Henry, all vessels on the stocks and naval stores. Having performed this duty he proceeded to Danville, and was ordered to follow the presidential party to Charlotte, N. C. At the North Carolina line he met the sons of General Lee returning with the intelligence that Johnston had surrendered, and that Mr. Davis had advised them to go home. The lieutenant then turned over the mules and wagons accompanying him to the wounded Confederate soldiers acting as drivers, and went to the home of his sisters in the mountains. Subsequently he went to Richmond and was duly paroled, although he had heard that a naval officer, anxious for prize money, had signified a desire to hang him for burning the vessels at Richmond. Since the close of hostilities he has been living in peace and comfort upon a farm in Chesterfield county. His career well illustrates the loyalty of Virginians to their native State, and the hardships many of them experienced for the sake of standing under her banner.

William Harwar Parker, lieutenant in the Confederate States navy, was a son of Com. Foxhall Parker, U. S. N., grandson of Capt. William H. Parker, of the Revolutionary navy, and great-grandson of Judge Richard Parker, one of the first judges of the court of appeals of Virginia, all of whom were from Westmoreland county. He was appointed midshipman in the United States navy October 19, 1841, and joined the receiving ship *North Carolina*, at New York. In 1843-44 he served in the Mediterranean and on the coast of Brazil on the line-of-battle ship *Columbus*, and from 1844 to 1847 was on the frigate *Potomac* in the West Indies and Gulf of Mexico, while attached to that vessel participating in the coast operations of the Mexican war. He was on shore at the batteries at Brazos, Santiago, during Taylor's first battles, May 8 and 9, 1846; was at the capture of Tampico, served in the naval battery at Vera Cruz March 24, 1847, was present at the capture of Tabasco, and in addition to his gallant services, survived two attacks of yellow fever. Returning home in June, 1847, he was at the naval academy from October following until June, 1848. At this institution he was graduated at the head of a class of 101, and received number two of the entire class of 1841, which was 245 strong when first appointed. In the fall of 1848 he sailed from Boston in the sloop-of-war *Yorktown* as passed midshipman and sailing master, and was wrecked near the Cape de Verde islands September 5, 1850, afterward returning to America on the *John Adams*. In 1851 he was attached to the brig *Washington* on the coast survey; served in the gulf on the *Cyane* in 1852-53, and was then ordered to the naval academy at Annapolis as instructor in mathematics, a position he retained until October, 1857, when he sailed from Boston in the famous new frigate *Merrimac*, for the Pacific, in the rank of lieutenant, to which he had been promoted in 1855. Returning in December, 1859, he was stationed at the naval academy as instructor in seamanship, naval tactics and naval light artillery. He resigned his Federal commission and came South, April 19, 1861, and rendered his first services to the new government in organizing a battery of howitzers. Receiving the rank of lieutenant, C. S. N., he commanded the gunboat *Beaufort* in the naval battle in February, 1862, off Roanoke island, and during the final struggle of Commodore Lynch's flotilla on the Pasquotank, he manned the guns of the battery at Cobb's point, and took part in the fight, sending his boat on to Norfolk. There he again took command of the *Beaufort* and participated in the naval battles of March 8 and 9, 1862, in Hampton Roads, in the first day's action taking his vessel alongside the Congress to receive her surrender. Subsequently given command of the gunboat *Dixie*, he burned her when Norfolk was evacuated, and was then assigned to command the *Drury* at Richmond. This position he resigned to become executive officer of the *Palmetto State*, an ironclad in Charleston harbor, with which he served when the blockade was broken at that port, and in the first attack on Fort Sumter by the Federal fleet. Later ordered to Richmond, he organized the Confederate naval academy, and served as superintendent until the close of the war, also for a time being in command of the Richmond, of the James river squadron. The Patrick Henry used as schoolship, was usually stationed near Drewry's

bluff, and the cadets, under Lieutenant Parker's command, had actual practice in warfare. He also rendered valuable service in May, 1864, by holding Drewry's bluff against Butler's advance until reinforcements could be brought up. On the night of the evacuation of Richmond he detailed a small squad of midshipmen to destroy the Patrick Henry, and with the remainder left Richmond in charge of the train conveying the treasure of the Confederate government. He escorted the treasure by rail and by wagon to Augusta, Ga., sometimes being dangerously close to parties from Sherman's army, and then returning to Abbeville, S. C., turned over the money intact to the secretary of the treasury accompanying President Davis. The cadet corps was then disbanded, an action for which Mr. Davis expressed his great regret to Captain Parker, and he returned to Norfolk. In December, 1865, he entered the service of the Pacific mail steamship company, and was captain of a steamer running between San Francisco and Panama until 1873, when he resigned. He served as president of the Maryland agricultural college from 1875 to 1882, and in 1886 was appointed minister of the United States to Corea. He was the author of "Naval Light Artillery," a text-book presented to the United States government, and still in use at Annapolis; "Elements of Seamanship," "Harbor Routine and Evolutions," "Naval Tactics," "Sailing Directions, etc.," "Recollections of a Naval Officer," and "Familiar Talks on Astronomy." Captain Parker died early in 1897.

Major William W. Parker, M. D., during the war of the Confederacy noted as the commander of Parker's battery, and since then no less distinguished in professional and private life, was born in Caroline county in 1834. At the age of fourteen his home was made at Richmond, where he received his academic education, and was graduated professionally at the medical college of Virginia in 1848. He embarked in the practice at Richmond, and continued it until the outbreak of the war, except during a period, 1854-55, passed in the hospitals of Europe. He organized the Virginia Life Guards, at Richmond, a company which was assigned as Company B to the Fifteenth Virginia infantry regiment. He went out with this command as a private, being mustered in May 23, 1861, and participated in the battle of Big Bethel, where his company fired the first volley. In December, 1861, he resigned and returning to Richmond organized a battery of light artillery of one hundred and forty men in March, 1862, which was mustered in March 14th, with himself as captain, and was henceforth known as Parker's battery. Near the close of the war he was promoted major, but in the confusion of the period never received his commission. With his artillery command he participated in the battles of Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Cambrett Station, Tenn., Dean's Station, Tenn., and Chancellorsville. At Gettysburg he fired the first shot at 4:15 a. m., of the first day, firing in all 1,142 rounds that day, and on the last day, after the army retired, he fired the last 300 rounds. At Spottsylvania he rendered gallant and effective service, and subsequently participated at Cold Harbor and Howlett House. With his command he participated in the retreat and surrendered fourteen guns at Appomattox. After the close of hostilities he resumed his practice at Richmond, which is still

continued. He has also done beneficent work as the organizer of the Richmond home for ladies, and president of the Male orphan asylum, the Magnum asylum and the Foundling hospital. He is an honorary member of Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans.

Marshall Parks, one of the most distinguished citizens of south-eastern Virginia, was born in Norfolk, November 8, 1820. He is the son of Marshall Parks, a native of Cambridge, Mass., who came to Norfolk in early manhood and married Martha Boush, a member of one of Norfolk's historic families. The elder Parks was the owner of a large number of steamboats and other craft, plying in the vicinity of Norfolk, was the founder and owner of the famous Hygeia hotel at Old Point Comfort, and was the re-builder of the Dismal Swamp canal, the granite locks of which are an enduring monument to his memory. He died in 1840. The son, Marshall Parks, left school at New Haven, Conn., at the age of fifteen years, and during the next five years was associated with his father's enterprises, and in establishing the South mills, on the canal, in North Carolina, where the senior Parks and John Tabb owned large grist and lumber mills. While there he was the first postmaster of the town, and having previously had military experience, was a major in the Second North Carolina regiment and declined promotion to brigadier-general on account of his being under age, and about to leave the State. He had been reared, it might almost be said, upon steamboats, and he was thoroughly familiar with their management and with the navigable waters near Norfolk. After his father's death he built an iron steamer in New York which he named the *Albemarle*. In 1842, though not a naval officer, he was given command of the steamboat *Germ*, the first to be run on an inland course from the Atlantic to the great lakes. This boat had horizontal wheels and was built at the Norfolk navy yard by the national government. The trip was made to exhibit this new mode of propelling, which was thought best for war vessels. Mr. Parks took the boat up Chesapeake bay, through the Chesapeake & Delaware canal, the Delaware river, the Delaware and Raritan canal, the Raritan river to New York and Hudson river to Albany, and the Erie canal to Oswego on Lake Ontario. This was the first trip of a steamer from the Atlantic to the lakes. Captain Parks examined the upper Roanoke and Dan rivers for the purpose of using steam on those rivers. His plan was an entirely original one, but he failed to get capital to assist him and therefore abandoned it. He subsequently proposed a plan for a ferryboat to carry railroad cars from Portsmouth to Norfolk, across Elizabeth river, and the city council of Norfolk appropriated money for the purpose and appointed him superintendent of construction. He was entirely successful, procuring the building of the *Princess Anne* at Wilmington, Del., and established the city ferry. As he was desirous of steamship communication with New York, a friend purchased for that purpose, just after the Mexican war, the U. S. steamship *Spitfire*. On his first trip he encountered a heavy gale, and having lost his smoke-stack, put into the capes of the Delaware and proceeded to Wilmington for repairs, after which he went on to New York, and sold the boat at a large profit, it being found that the war vessel was not suitable for mercantile purposes. Many of his steamboat

trips during this period of his life were through the Dismal Swamp canal, the managers of which annoyed him considerably by their rule that "no boats should pass during the night." Finding that the company would make no exception for him, Captain Parks conceived the daring idea of building a canal to parallel the old waterway. People laughed at his temerity in attempting without money such a project in opposition to the old canal in which the State, from which a charter must be obtained, held a two-fifths interest, and United States government two-fifths. But Captain Parks went ahead, with the aid of a friend, drew up a charter, put it through the legislature at Richmond with the aid of friends, and then finding that Norfolk capital rejected his scheme as visionary, went to New York city, and secured the subscription of five hundred thousand dollars in stock. This was the origin of the great "Albemarle and Chesapeake canal," which Captain Parks built between 1855 and 1860, and was president of during a quarter of a century. It was the first canal in which modern methods and the use of steam dredges, replaced the old pick and shovel. In 1861, after the passage of the ordinance of secession by Virginia, Captain Parks was appointed provisional commodore in the merchant marine of the State, and was instructed to take charge of all the guns at the Norfolk navy yard, some thirty-two hundred in number, and remove them to a place of safety, a work which he partly accomplished during the sixty days which elapsed before Virginia was united with the Confederacy. He was then appointed by the governor of North Carolina, whose State was yet neutral, a special commissioner for the establishment of a North Carolina navy. This work he had well under way, and fitted out several gunboats, when he was ordered to transfer his vessels to the Confederate States. He had manufactured at Norfolk the flags of North Carolina, bearing the dates "May, 1775," and "May, 1861," the dates of separation from Great Britain and the United States. Subsequently he acted as aide and adviser to Generals Gwinn and Huger at Norfolk, and placed the several steamers which he owned at the disposal of these Confederate commanders. At the evacuation he was advised by General Huger, that on account of his age and absence of military rank, he should remain at Norfolk, which he did during the remainder of the war, holding himself in readiness to render the Confederacy any service required. Since the return of peace he has been engaged, in addition to his steamboat business, in several very important enterprises. He built the New Bern and Beaufort canal and the Fairfield canal, and was for many years president of those waterways; built the Norfolk & Virginia Beach railroad, of which he was president for some time, and established the now widely-famous Virginia Beach ocean resort; also founded and named that portion of Norfolk known as Atlantic City. He has found time also to serve one term in the Virginia legislature, and to be the Democratic candidate for Congress in his district on an occasion when unfortunately the ticket was unsuccessful. During President Cleveland's first term he was appointed supervising inspector of steam vessels for the Third district, comprising the coast from Washington to Florida, a position he held four years. In 1853 he was married to Sophia Jackson, who died a few years ago, leaving three daughters. During recent years Commodore Parks

has led a retired life in his comfortable home at Norfolk, resting at the close of an existence of remarkable activity and usefulness. He has devoted much time to a plan to extend the inland navigation south, and hopes to live to make a trip from Duluth via the lakes to Buffalo and thence through the Erie canal to New York and south inland to Florida.

Captain Richard S. Parks, of Luray, Va., was born in Rappahannock county, June 4, 1839. After receiving an education in his native county he removed to Luray, studied law and was admitted to the bar early in 1861. The war coming on, his prospect of forensic contests was changed to one of battle in the field. He entered the service in April, 1861, as second lieutenant of Company K, Tenth Virginia infantry. His regiment, Col. S. A. Gibbons commanding, was assigned to the brigade of General Johnston's army in the Shenandoah valley, which was commanded then by E. Kirby Smith, and included among its regimental commanders Arnold Elzey, George H. Steuart, John C. Vaughn and A. P. Hill. At the reorganization in 1862 Lieutenant Parks was elected captain, the rank in which he served until the spring of 1864, when he was honorably discharged on account of wounds and disability. He participated in the battle of First Manassas, and during the Valley campaign of 1862 fought at McDowell, Cross Keys and Port Republic. During Jackson's campaign on the Chickahominy he received a severe wound in the foot which practically put an end to his service on the field. Previously he had received two slight wounds while fighting at First Manassas under the leadership of General Elzey. During his service he was twice captured, but on each occasion managed to escape. A distinguished member of Captain Parks' company was Charles F. Crisp, who afterward occupied the exalted station of speaker of the national house of representatives. Charley Crisp, as his youthful comrades knew him, enlisted in Captain Parks' company at its organization and served to the end. Captain Parks wears a watch which was presented him by the lamented speaker, and the memorial volume published by authority of Congress contains an appreciative account of the statesman's military service from the pen of his old captain, embodied in the address by Hon. Henry St. George Tucker. After his retirement from the service Captain Parks returned to Luray and for about two years was occupied in teaching school. Then he embarked in the practice of law, for which he had prepared himself before the war, and in this profession is still actively engaged. Since 1883 he has held the office of commonwealth attorney for Page county, and in 1895-96 and 1897-98 he served in the Virginia legislature. In February, 1861, he was married to Miss B. M. Grayson, and they have two daughters.

Richard L. Parry, a prominent architect and builder, of Washington, is a native of Virginia, which he served faithfully during the war of the Confederacy, in the field and in the prison camp at the North. He was born in Middlesex county in November, 1839, and was reared to the age of seventeen years in Essex county. He then was apprenticed to the trade of the carpenter at Richmond and served in this apprenticeship for four years. In April, 1861, when the State had declared its adherence to the Confederacy, he enlisted in the Taylor Greys, a volunteer organization which be-

came Company D of the Fifty-third regiment of Virginia infantry. He served with this command as a private until June, 1863, when he was promoted sergeant. His service in the field embraced the battle of Seven Pines and the subsequent Seven Days' fighting in the Peninsular campaign, the operations at Suffolk, Va., the siege and capture of Harper's Ferry, the battle of the 17th of September at Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg in December, 1862, and the three days' fighting at Gettysburg. On the third day, July 3, 1863, he was among the captured. Then began a long and wearisome experience as a prisoner of war at Fort Delaware, which he endured through all the subsequent campaigns and until after the surrender of the army. He was not released from confinement until June 20, 1863, when company, regiment, brigade and army of Northern Virginia had all alike disappeared. Going back to Richmond he went quietly to work at his trade, and remained at Richmond until 1869, when he made his home at Washington. Since then he has steadily prospered in his enterprises, and has been in business as an architect and builder for the last twenty years. In 1872 he was married to Ella H., daughter of the late William Williams, of Washington, and they have a family of three sons and three daughters. Ira E. Parry, brother of the foregoing, served gallantly throughout the war in Field's brigade, receiving three wounds. He is now a resident of Florida.

William Dangerfield Peachy, superintendent of the registry division of the city postoffice at Washington, D. C., was born in 1844 at Alexandria, Va. He was reared in his Virginia home, at Williamsburg, Va., and educated at William and Mary college, where he was graduated in 1861. In February, 1863, at the age of eighteen years he enlisted in the Confederate service. He had left Williamsburg and gone to Richmond for the purpose of volunteering, where he was enrolled by conscript officers the morning after the evening of his arrival, before he had an opportunity to offer his services. Soon after his enlistment he was detailed in the quartermaster's department, in the duties of which, and in active service with the department battalion, home guards of Richmond, the time was occupied until the evacuation of the city. During his service with the forces in defense of Richmond he took part in the battles at Green's Farm, Fort Gilmer and Fort Harrison and in operations against the Federal raiders. He surrendered in Richmond in April, 1865, and soon afterward returned to Williamsburg, and six months later found employment in a bank at Alexandria, where he remained until 1870. He then removed to Shenandoah county, Va., and for the next thirteen years was engaged in agriculture. In 1883 he embarked in mercantile business at Washington, D. C., and was so occupied until in 1888 he was appointed to an official position in the city postoffice. He is now superintendent of the registry division and secretary of the postal board of examiners of the civil service commission. Mr. Peachy is a member of the Washington association of Confederate veterans. In 1869 he was married to Leila R. Meem, daughter of the late Dr. Andrew Russell Meem, surgeon in the Confederate States army.

Major George Meredith Peek, late a prominent citizen of Hampton, was the son of Thomas and Janet (Hope) Peek, and one of six brothers who served in the Confederate armies. He was born at

Hampton and educated at John B. Cary's military academy. In 1859 he became instructor in mathematics in a college at Florence, Ala., where in 1861 he entered the Confederate service, and was made major of the Twenty-sixth Alabama regiment of infantry, which he drilled for the service. After the regiment reached Richmond Colonel O'Neal, afterward governor of Alabama, was assigned to command it. Major Peek served with his regiment, in the brigade of General Rodes, in the battles of Boonsboro, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, the regiment in the latter battle suffering severe loss while participating in Jackson's flank movement. After this battle Major Peek, having failed in health, was detailed as instructor in mathematics on board the naval school ship the Patrick Henry, under command of Capt. W. H. Parker. He continued in this service until the evacuation of Richmond. Subsequently he entered upon the study of law at the university of Virginia, under John B. Minor, and devoted the remainder of his life to that profession. He served several years as superintendent of the schools of Elizabeth City county, held the office of attorney for the commonwealth one term, and in 1892 was appointed judge of the county court. He was reappointed in 1896 and held the office at the time of his death, January 6, 1896. By his marriage to Sarah King Holt, a native of Portsmouth, who survives, he had six children. William Holt Peek, the second of these children, was born at Hampton May 30, 1876. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, and graduated in 1896, after completing a course in civil engineering, a profession in which he shows great talent and natural aptitude for a successful career. He is a member of the Hampton camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans. Thomas Peek, father of Major Peek, mentioned above, was born in Elizabeth City county in 1803, and was a well-known merchant of Hampton for many years, and until his death in 1866. He gave six sons to the Confederate service. He was married in youth to Eliza Kirby, and after her decease he wedded Janet Hope, a cousin of the poet James Barren Hope, and member of a family that also displayed patriotic devotion. The Washington artillery included in 1861 eight members of the two families. By his first marriage Thomas Peek had three sons: John, who served in the Washington artillery, later was attached to the war department at Richmond, and died in 1890; Thomas, who served as an officer in the commissary department in the army of the West, and is now a resident of San Antonio, Tex.; and Edward K., who enlisted as a private in the Washington artillery in 1861, upon the reorganization became a member of Company I of the Thirty-second Virginia regiment, was wounded at Sharpsburg, and paroled at Appomattox, and is now living at the soldiers' home in Richmond, Va. The sons by the second marriage who were of age for military service were William Hope, who served as an assistant surgeon of the Third Virginia cavalry, and died at Williamsport during the exhausting labors attending the retreat from Gettysburg; George Meredith, whose career is mentioned above; and Charles Smith, who entered the service as a private in the Washington artillery, upon the reorganization became an assistant engineer in the Confederate States navy, served until the close of hostilities, then followed the trade of a machinist, later was engaged in mercantile pursuits, and died in 1887. The only sur-

living child of the second marriage of Thomas Peek is Jesse Hope Peek, M. D., now one of the leading physicians of Hampton, Va. He was born at that city July 3, 1854, and during the war was a refugee with his mother at Richmond, his native town having been laid in ruins. After the close of hostilities he was educated at Randolph-Macon college, and in 1875 was graduated in medicine at the university of Virginia. After a season of clinical work in the Baltimore hospitals, he began practice in 1876, and made his home at Hampton in 1879. Since then his progress has been rapid in the esteem of his people and professional associates. He has delivered some valuable lectures in the line of his profession, was elected a fellow of the State medical society in 1880, was one of the original members of the State medical examining board, is a member of the Hampton medical society, is physician to Dixie hospital, and a member of the board of pension examiners, by appointment of President Cleveland. July 1, 1880, he was married to Miss Clara Virginia Outten, of Elizabeth City county, and they have three children: Maria, Nellie and Charles K.

Captain Robert Baker Pegram, distinguished in the service of the Confederate navy, was born in Dinwiddie county, Va., December 10, 1811, the son of Gen. John Pegram and Martha Ward Gregory. On February 2, 1829, he was appointed midshipman in the United States navy, and assigned to the sloop-of-war Boston, commanded by Capt. George W. Storer. He was called home after more than a year's service by the death of his father, and a few months later he joined the frigate United States, of the Mediterranean squadron, and served under Coms. James Biddle and Daniel Patterson, until 1834, returning home on the John Adams. On this vessel, as passed midshipman, he started as sailing master, in 1835, on a cruise around the world which lasted three years. In 1840 he was engaged at Washington with Commodore Wilkes, on magnetic observations, and in the following year was assigned to the Constitution, with rank as lieutenant, to serve in relief of vessels in distress between Capes Cod and Hatteras. Subsequently he served three years as flag-lieutenant to Com. Foxhall A. Parker, in the East India squadron; participated in the operations against Mexico as first lieutenant of the Saratoga, David A. Farragut, commander; cruised in 1848-49 on the coasts of Brazil and Africa on the John Adams, returning with the wrecked crew of the Yorktown; and was then appointed commander of the City of New York and one of the commissioners to define the fishing boundaries off the coast of Newfoundland. In the Japan expedition he rendered gallant and conspicuous service as lieutenant of the ship Powhatan, in which he sailed in 1852. On August 4, 1855, in Hong Kong harbor, the American commodore being called on for assistance by the British sloop-of-war Rattler, Lieutenant Pegram commanded a detachment of eighty men from the Powhatan and forty from the Rattler, in an attack upon over thirty war junks manned by about three thousand pirates. Successful at the outset, in cutting off a large junk and driving it under the guns of the men-of-war, they continued the fight all day, the action resulting in the capture of sixteen junks, mounting one hundred cannon, and a loss of 600 men to the enemy. About 30 of American boats' crew were killed and wounded, and such was the desperate character of the

service under the tropical sun, that most of the remaining fifty died within the month, and Lieutenant Pegram lay for a long time at the point of death from brain fever. For his gallantry on this occasion he was presented a sword by the State of Virginia, inscribed, "A Mother's Gift to Her Devoted Son," and received the thanks of the government and board of trade at Hong Kong, of Sir James Stirling, flag officer of the East India squadron, and of the British government through Minister James Buchanan, also a warm expression of gratitude from Commander W. Abdey Fellows, of the *Rattler*. Returning to America, Lieutenant Pegram was stationed at Norfolk until 1858, when he commanded the U. S. S. *Water Witch* in the Paraguay expedition. In 1860 he was ordered to the command of the *Bibb*, and was engaged in a hydrographic survey of the coast when Virginia took the first steps toward independence. Immediately resigning, he reported to Governor Letcher, and was appointed a captain in the Virginia navy and assigned to command at Norfolk station, in co-operation with Colonel Taliaferro, in charge of land forces. By clever strategy the Federals were soon persuaded to abandon this important point with immense loss of naval munitions. By running engines up and down the railroad back of the navy yard to verify reports of the arrival of imaginary reinforcements, the Federals were so distracted that Captain Pegram's men were able to rifle, unnoticed, the great stores of shot, shell and powder, of Fort Norfolk. His declaration that he was about to float a fire-raft down the tide from Dismal Swamp completed the rout of the garrison, and the navy yard fell into the hands of the Confederates. Subsequently he strengthened Fort Powhatan on the James river and erected a battery, and performed the same service at Pig Point, commanding the mouth of the Nansemond river. During this work he engaged the *Harriet Lane*, moving the buoys which he had placed in the channel so as to bring her, on the next trip, in range of his guns. The action was so effective that no further operations were attempted on that river. After another battery command at Sewell's Point, Captain Pegram was assigned to command the steamer *Nashville*, then being fitted out at Charleston to convey Hons. James M. Mason and John Slidell to Europe. These gentlemen decided to go in the British mail steamer *Trent* and were captured, but the *Nashville* ran the blockade successfully, on October 26, 1861, and after coaling at Bermuda, proceeded to Europe, on the way capturing and burning the clipper ship *Harvey Birch*. Arriving at Southampton, November 21st, she was soon followed by the U. S. S. *Tuscarora*, and both were ordered to leave the port, by the British government; the Federal ship first and the Confederate a day later. Captain Pegram shrewdly made a strong protest, and was permitted to remain until the first favorable opportunity. The *Tuscarora* standing out according to orders, and seeing nothing of its expected prey, came to anchor in the lower harbor. Captain Pegram then promised to leave in twenty-four hours if the *Tuscarora* were held during the following day without communication with other Federal ships, and thus successfully eluded his pursuers. Changing the rig of the *Nashville* he escaped attack and sailed for the Gulf stream, where he captured the Robert Gilfillan from Philadelphia and obtained information regarding the blockade, which enabled him to run into the harbor of Beaufort, N. C., February 28,

1862, without a shot striking his ship. Welcomed at home again, he was assigned to the James River squadron, superintending the preparation of the ironclad Richmond and taking her to Drewry's bluff, and then taking command of the second Virginia, a larger ironclad. In 1864 he was sent to England to purchase and equip vessels for the Virginia volunteer navy, and had put in commission the Hawk, which sailed as far as Bermuda, when the war came to an end. Captain Pegram was in Nova Scotia from July until November, 1865, when he returned to Virginia, and was soon afterward appointed superintendent of the Petersburg & Weldon railroad. In 1873 he became the general agent of the Life insurance company of Virginia, with headquarters at Norfolk. James West Pegram, son of the foregoing, also served with distinction in the Confederate navy. He was born in Sussex county in 1843, and being taken by his parents, in infancy, to Norfolk, was reared at that city and educated in the collegiate institute and the Norfolk academy. He had just passed his examination for admission to the United States naval academy when Virginia took her stand with the Confederate States. Tendering his services to the governor he was appointed midshipman in the Virginia navy, and assigned to the command of General Taliaferro at Norfolk, where his father, Captain Pegram, was co-operating in command of the naval operations. When the navy yard fell into the Confederate hands he reported to Captain Fairfax, in charge of ordnance at that place, and was employed for several months in transporting ordnance to points where it was needed. After the evacuation of Norfolk he shared as a volunteer in the gallant repulse of the Federal squadron at Drewry's Bluff, and afterward fought at the battle of Seven Pines, receiving a wound in the arm as a testimonial of active service. After this he was ordered to the command of Commodore Hollins at New Orleans, by whom he was assigned to the gunboat Mobile, then being fitted out at Berwick bay. Before this boat was in service he was transferred to Charleston, S. C., and assigned by Commodore Ingram to the Nashville, commanded by his father, in which he served until the return to Beaufort. He was then assigned to the ram Louisiana at New Orleans, but before he could reach there the city was evacuated and he returned to Richmond and experienced a short service on the new Virginia, in the James river. Then making the voyage to Liverpool he was assigned by Commodore Maury to the Rappahannock. His cruise in this vessel was abruptly terminated by its detention at Calais, France, after which he returned to the Confederate States, landing at Wilmington, and was afterward engaged in running the blockade from Wilmington to Halifax, until Butler's attack on Fort Fisher, when he participated in the defense of that stronghold and was slightly wounded by the explosion of an Armstrong gun. During the succeeding attack by Generals Schofield and Terry, he rendered gallant service and was seriously wounded in the shoulder and head. On his recovery from these injuries, which disabled him for a considerable period, he served for several months in the gunboat Roanoke on the James river, until the boat was sunk after an action with a Federal battery at Graveyard Reach. He subsequently went to Greensboro, N. C., and participated in the surrender of General Johnston's army. This thrilling and adventurous chapter of his life being finished with the down-

fall of the Confederate government, Mr. Pegram turned to the duties of civil life and locating at Portsmouth, entered the service of the Seaboard & Roanoke railroad company. In 1868 he left this employment to become the agent at Portsmouth of the St. Louis Mutual life insurance company, until 1871, when the Life insurance company of Virginia having been formed, with its office at Petersburg, Va., he became its assistant secretary. A few years later he was promoted secretary of the company and in 1880 the office of the company was removed to Richmond, where he now resides. He has effectively co-operated in the management of this organization, whose success is an eloquent illustration of the benefits of home insurance in the South. Mr. Pegram maintains a lively interest in the fortunes of his old comrades, and is a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and one of the board of visitors of Lee Camp Soldiers' Home.

Captain Richard Gregory Pegram, a captain of artillery in the army of Northern Virginia, and since then prominent as an attorney at Richmond, Va., was born at Petersburg, February 14, 1829. His grandfather, John Pegram, a native of Dinwiddie county, who died in 1832, held the office of United States marshal for Virginia during the time of the famous trial of Aaron Burr, on the charge of treason, at Richmond, in 1807. His father, Richard G. Pegram, died in 1829 at the age of twenty-nine years, so that Captain Pegram was reared without a father's care. His education was taken in hand by his uncle, Robert Birckett, a graduate of Cambridge, and famous in that day as a teacher. Being trained for the legal profession he was admitted to the bar in 1850, and at once embarked in the practice at Petersburg. In August, 1861, he entered the service of the Confederate States as a private in Company E of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, and remained in that command until May, 1862, when he was promoted first lieutenant of Branch's artillery. After gallant service in that rank until 1863 he was promoted captain of the battery, a command which he held with ability and faithfulness in duty until he dismounted his six guns at Appomattox. Notable among the engagements in which he took part were those at Harper's Ferry, the first Fredericksburg, Bottom's Bridge, Va., the defense of the Petersburg lines, and the final action at Sailor's Creek. His battery was stationed at that point of the Confederate lines before Petersburg which were mined by the enemy, and at the explosion of "the Crater" his battery was blown up, killing two officers and seventeen men. After the close of the war Captain Pegram resumed the practice of his profession, first at Petersburg, and since 1881 at Richmond. Before the war he held the office of commonwealth's attorney at Petersburg, and on his return was re-elected, but was subsequently removed from office for political reasons.

Colonel William J. Pegram began his career in the Confederate army as lieutenant of artillery. His first affair with the enemy was near Marlboro point, at the mouth of Potomac creek, where the Confederate batteries were engaged with two Union gunboats. Col. William Cary of the Thirtieth Virginia commanded in this affair and he reports as follows: "The officers in charge of the pieces and the men behaved with proper calmness and deliberation. They were Lieutenants Hagerty, Pegram and Dabney." In the

spring of 1862 Pegram had been promoted to the position of captain and had command of a battery which was engaged in the battles around Richmond in June and July. In his report of the battle of Malvern Hill, Gen. A. R. Wright says: "Meanwhile Captain Pegram's battery was ordered up and taking position 200 yards to the left of Moorman opened a well-directed fire upon the enemy, which told with fearful effect upon them. But this chivalric commander, by the retirement of Moorman's battery was left alone to contend with the whole force of the enemy's artillery. Manfully those gallant men maintained the unequal conflict until their severe losses disabled them from using but a single piece; even then, with one single piece, they firmly held their ground and continued to pour a deadly fire upon the enemy's line until, seeing the utter hopelessness of the conflict, I ordered them to cease firing until I could get more guns in action." Captain Pegram was actively engaged at Cedar Run, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, at which last named battle he was for the first time wounded. He was again ready for the fray at Fredericksburg and at Chancellorsville he was in the thickest of the fight, where he commanded an artillery battalion, having now risen to the rank of major. E. P. Alexander, brigadier-general of artillery, in his report of this battle, pays a glowing tribute to "Col. Thomas H. Carter, Col. H. P. Jones, Major McIntosh, Maj. William J. Pegram and Maj. Frank Huger, commanding battalions, and the officers and men of their commands." He adds: "To Major Pegram and Lieutenant Chamberlayne is specially due the credit of the first footing in the field on the right." When the campaign of 1864 began, Pegram had been promoted to lieutenant-colonel of artillery. Through all the battles of the Overland campaign, and around Petersburg and Richmond, Pegram was ever ready for the performance of every duty, regardless of hardship or peril. Like his gallant corps commander, A. P. Hill, he fell in the last desperate fighting near Petersburg and did not live to see the starry cross furled in defeat.

William Dorsey Pender, of Norfolk, prominent among the younger attorneys of that city, is the son of Maj.-Gen. William Dorsey Pender, of North Carolina, whose distinguished service in the Confederate States army was terminated by mortal wounds received in the second day's battle at Gettysburg, and a sketch of whose life and services appears in volume IV of this work. He was born in North Carolina, May 28, 1861, and received his academic education at Tarboro. Having determined to follow the legal profession he attended the law school of the university of Virginia during one summer, and in the fall of 1887, having passed a successful examination before the supreme court of appeals of Virginia, was licensed to practice. He made his home and the theater of his future efforts at Norfolk in 1888, and has since been actively and successfully engaged in the practice of his profession. He was married November 11, 1891, to Alice, daughter of Redden S. Williams, of Edgecombe county, N. C., and they have one child, who bears the honored name of William Dorsey Pender.

Colonel A. S. Pendleton began his military career with the first organization of Virginia forces. At the first battle of Manassas he was lieutenant and ordnance officer of the Stonewall brigade,

and was mentioned in Jackson's report of that battle for "valuable services" rendered. When Jackson was assigned to the Valley district with headquarters at Winchester, Lieutenant Pendleton was on his staff as assistant adjutant-general. In that capacity he served in the winter campaign to Bath, Hancock, and Romney, and was again mentioned in terms of commendation by General Jackson for the faithful performance of duty. The campaign was one of great hardship and Jackson and his staff shared all the privations of the men in the ranks. In the Valley campaign of 1862 Lieutenant Pendleton was still Jackson's assistant adjutant-general and was complimented in the official report of his chief as "an officer eminently qualified for his duties." He was with Jackson in the memorable Seven Days' fights and was again thanked in the official report. Through the subsequent campaign in Virginia, ending with Chancellorsville, he continued to serve on the staff of General Jackson, having been promoted to the rank of captain at Fredericksburg and to that of major at Chancellorsville. When Jackson fell J. E. B. Stuart was placed in command of his corps for the rest of the battle and in the report he says that Major Pendleton "acted with great heroism and efficiency when he joined me." He was put in charge of the escort when the body of Jackson was borne to Richmond and then to Lexington for burial. In the Gettysburg campaign he served as aide to General Ewell, who said in his report: "Colonel Pendleton's knowledge of his duties, his experience and activity relieved me of much hard work." He subsequently served on the staff of General Rodes and then on that of General Early. At Fisher's Hill, September 22, 1864, Colonel Pendleton was killed. During the winter of 1862 and 1863, while Jackson was camped near Moss Neck, Colonel Pendleton met Miss Kate Corbin. The young people formed a mutual attachment and were married in the spring of 1863.

Major Robert Nelson Pendleton, an influential citizen of Wytheville, who rendered efficient service to the Confederate cause as an officer of the Sixth Virginia cavalry, was born in Louisa county, February 4, 1842. From that county his parents removed when he was four years old to Jefferson county, and thence to Wythe county. He is a great-grandson of Gen. Thomas Nelson, of Virginia, a signer of the declaration of independence, member of the continental congress, brigadier-general and commander-in-chief of Virginia forces in the Revolutionary war, and successor of Thomas Jefferson as governor of Virginia. Mr. Pendleton's grandmother was Alice Grymes Page, daughter of Gov. John Page, of Virginia, whose first husband was Dr. John Augustine Smith, of Yorktown, who became chief surgeon of General Nelson's brigade in Washington's army. He was the nephew of Daniel and Mary Moore, of Yorktown, whose residence was occupied by Lord Cornwallis as headquarters during his occupation of that town. The chairs used by Cornwallis and Washington at their meeting to arrange terms of capitulation, and many other articles of great historic interest from that house, are still treasured by the members of the family. Major Pendleton is a nephew of Gen. William N. Pendleton, chief of artillery, army of Northern Virginia. Another nephew, Capt. Dudley D. Pendleton, served as adjutant-general of artillery under his uncle. Major Pendleton went into the Con-

federate war as a member of the Liberty Hall volunteers, an infantry company, but did not serve on account of poor health. On March 19, 1862, he enlisted as a private in the Sixth cavalry regiment, and during the remainder of the war was identified with the brilliant record of his command, under Stuart, Fitzhugh Lee, Munford, Rosser and Payne. While a private he discharged for some time the duties of a captain, and in the fall of 1864 he was commissioned first lieutenant, regular Confederate States army, from which he was promoted major, just before the surrender at Appomattox. During his service he participated in forty-four cavalry engagements, and five horses were killed under him, but he was never wounded, his only serious injuries being occasioned when he was thrown to the ground by the killing of his horse at Strasburg, during Jackson's Valley campaign, and ridden over by the cavalry and knocked senseless. He did not surrender at Appomattox, but escaped from that field with his brigade. After the conclusion of hostilities Major Pendleton resided in Jefferson county, W. Va., until 1871, when he removed to Wytheville. There he has served as magistrate, and under Governor O'Ferrall's administration received the appointment of director of the State asylum. He was married in 1869 to Miss Fannie Gibson, and they have four children: Lucy, Sue, Kate and William.

Charles Clifton Penick, a gifted son of Virginia, now of Richmond, Va., a bishop in the service of the Protestant Episcopal church, entered the army of Northern Virginia June 15, 1861, a few months after his seventeenth birthday, and shared the fortunes of his command during the entire four years of warfare. He was born in Charlotte county, Va., December 9, 1843, and passed his boyhood days mainly in Pittsylvania county, near Danville. At the latter place he attended the military academy a year, going from there to enter Hampden-Sidney college, where he had been studying but three months when the great unrest in the South culminated in the ordinances of secession of some of the States. He went to his home in December, 1860. On April 10, 1861, when it became evident that Virginia would be involved in the impending struggle, he enlisted in the service of the State and was mustered in as a private in Company D of the Thirty-eighth Virginia infantry. The spirit which animated these rapidly gathering Virginia regiments, a spirit that he fully shared, has been eloquently expressed in his own words: "We fought not for greed, nor gold; but in deepest conviction to principles and for what we thought were assuredly our rights." In the organization of his regiment Mr. Penick was appointed quartermaster-sergeant of the Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment, and in this capacity he served during the whole of the war. During the major part of the four years the regiment served in Armistead's brigade of Pickett's division and made a glorious record for endurance and bravery. Among the battles in which Mr. Penick participated in this command, the most prominent are these: First Manassas, Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Warrenton Springs, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredricksburg, the Suffolk expedition, Gettysburg, Williamsport, Drewry's Bluff, May 10 to 16, 1864, the Second Cold Harbor, Five Forks, Sailor's Creek and Appomattox, where he joined in the

surrender of the army. After this event he went to Halifax county, Va., and engaged in teaching school one year. But having determined to pursue the sacred calling, he then entered the theological seminary near Alexandria, Va., where he was graduated in June, 1869, and ordained in the Protestant Episcopal church. Subsequently he officiated as rector of the church at Bristol, Tenn., until August, 1870. Thence he was called to Maryland, and officiated at Mt. Savage until March, 1873, and at the church of the Messiah, Baltimore, as rector, until 1877. Profoundly impressed with the duty of the church toward the negro race, and realizing deeply the situation of the colored people, suddenly endowed with the potency of citizenship without training, and placed in competition with the magnificently endowed industry of the North without a knowledge of its methods of work, he determined to enter this field of labor. First, he accepted the appointment of bishop of "Cape Palmas and parts adjacent," and went to West Africa and served in that region until October, 1883, when he resigned on account of ill health in the tropics. On his return he officiated as rector of St. Andrew's church, at Louisville, Ky., until June 1, 1893, when he was appointed general agent for the church commission for work among the colored people of the United States. In November, 1896, he went as rector to St. Mark's church, Richmond, Va. Amid his other occupations he still cherishes the memories of the associations of 1861-65. As he well said in a memorable address at the decoration of the Confederate graves at Louisville in 1888, "We strip off the armor from those heroic bosoms, and way back of the battle-heated steel, we find hearts— hearts that we knew and loved, for they were tender and lovable." But he endeavors to teach that "War is an incident in the history of man; love is his eternal nature and destiny." The father of Mr. Penick, Edwin A. Penick, was born in Prince Edward county, Va., in 1821, and was a farmer by occupation. He entered the Confederate army in April, 1862, as a private in Company D of the Thirty-eighth Virginia infantry, and laid down his life for the cause, dying two days after the battle of Sharpsburg from wounds received in that action. The maternal grandfather of Mr. Penick, Clifton Hamner, also a native of Virginia, served in the war of 1812 as a lieutenant of cavalry.

Lieutenant James G. Penn, a prominent leaf tobacco dealer and exporter, and a business man of Danville, Va., was born in Patrick county, November 14, 1845, the son of Thomas J. and Lucinda C. Penn, of that county. After preparatory studies at the Greenville academy, which was named in honor of his maternal grandfather, he entered the Virginia military institute in September, 1861. He was connected with that institute as a cadet until the fall of 1864, participating in all the military operations of the cadet corps, including their famous fight at New Market, and was with General Early at Lynchburg, afterward serving in the trenches at Petersburg. A regiment being formed of Federal prisoners who had taken the oath of allegiance, it was officered mainly by the cadets, and young Penn received a commission as first lieutenant in this command. Ordered into South Carolina the regiment joined the army under Gen. J. E. Johnston, fought at Bentonville and was surrendered at Greensboro. Lieutenant Penn was paroled at Dan-

ville in May following. For this service he and his comrades were awarded a diploma by the institute. Subsequently he studied law and was admitted to the bar, but did not engage in the practice, turning his attention to commercial pursuits, first at Greensboro, N. C., and then at Danville, where in 1872 he formed a partnership in the leaf tobacco business and trade with J. H. Pemberton. In this line of industry he has become one of the leading spirits, and has one of the most extensive factories in the South. He is also vice-president of the Commercial bank, a director of the famous Riverside cotton mills, and is prominently associated with other financial and manufacturing institutions. In 1872 he was married to Sallie E. Pemberton, daughter of Thomas W. Pemberton, of Richmond, Va., now deceased, and after her death in 1882 he married Sallie M. Johnston, of Madison, Ga., in 1885. Four children are living: Mary K., wife of Barnes Rucker Penn; John Pemberton, James G. Jr. and Annie Lee.

Alexander D. Perrow, for many years tobacco inspector at Lynchburg, Va., was born in Campbell county, Va., in 1837. He was reared and educated in that county, and there, a year before the outbreak of the war, became a member of the Southern Guard, a volunteer military organization. With this company he entered the active service of the State April 21, 1861, the company being assigned to the Eleventh Virginia infantry as Company B, under Col. Samuel Garland. With this regiment, in the brigade commanded successively by Beauregard, Longstreet, A. P. Hill and J. L. Kemper, Private Perrow did a soldier's duty in the engagements at Blackburn's Ford, Seven Pines (where he was slightly wounded), the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond, and the battle of Fredericksburg in December, 1862. At the battle of Frayser's Farm, during the campaign before Richmond, he was captured by the enemy, and subsequently was sent from the field to Fort Delaware, where he was held as a prisoner of war for the period of three months. Then, being exchanged, he rejoined his regiment in September, 1862. In December, 1863, he was exchanged to Company G of the Second Virginia cavalry, commanded by Col. T. T. Munford, and during the remainder of the war he participated in the operations of this regiment, a part of Fitz Lee's division. Among the cavalry battles in which he took part, were the affairs at Edenburg and Covington, Va., and the battle of Kelly's Ford, March 17, 1863, when he received a severe gunshot wound through the leg. At the time of the surrender he was detailed to obtain horses in his native county, each soldier furnishing his own horse, and consequently was never paroled. He engaged in farming in Campbell county until 1881, and then removed to Lynchburg, where he has subsequently resided, and is a valued citizen. He has served as tobacco inspector since 1881, and has also held the positions of school commissioner, magistrate and other minor offices, and is connected with the Masonic order.

Colonel William E. Peters, a distinguished cavalry soldier of the Confederate service, was born in Bedford county, Va., August 18, 1829, the son of Elisha and Cynthia (Turner) Peters, and was educated at Emory and Henry college, university of Virginia and the university of Berlin, Prussia. On the 17th of April, 1861, he enlisted as a private in the cavalry troop known as Smyth Dra-

goons, which became Company A of the Eighth Virginia cavalry regiment. He was elected first lieutenant of this company immediately afterward, and upon his company's joining the forces of General Floyd in southeast Virginia, he was appointed in August, 1861, adjutant-general of Floyd's command. In this capacity he served during the campaign in the Kanawha valley during the fall of that year. He did not accompany this command to Kentucky, but in the winter of 1861-62 was promoted lieutenant-colonel of the Forty-fifth Virginia infantry, a part of Heth's old brigade. He fought a successful engagement at the mouth of the Blue Stone, West Virginia, February 8, 1862, also participated in the affair at Princeton, May 1st. In his report of the battle of Giles Court House, May 10th, General Heth, commanding the army of New River, reported that "Lieutenant-Colonel Peters, commanding Forty-fifth Virginia regiment, displayed much coolness and gallantry, leading his men in the thickest of the fight." Subsequently he commanded a regiment of the Virginia State line under General Floyd in southwest Virginia, which he recruited and reorganized in the spring of 1863 and it was mustered into the regular service as the Twenty-first Virginia cavalry, of which he was given command, with the rank of colonel. This was assigned to the brigade of Gen. W. E. Jones, and took part in the operations in southwest Virginia, and Longstreet's campaign in Georgia, and from 1863 was a part of the army of Northern Virginia. He fought with Jones at Piedmont, where the latter was killed, and the brigade was next commanded by Gen. Bradley T. Johnson, with whom he served in the raid through Maryland to Washington. During the raid to Chambersburg, Pa., he occupied the town with his regiment, and was ordered to burn it, upon the failure of the citizens to pay the levy made, but refused on the ground that the town was filled with non-combatants. He was put under arrest, but released within the hour. In the disaster which overtook this expedition at Moorefield, August 6th, he was distinguished for gallantry, in command of the line which checked the pursuit of the enemy, but fell with a shot through both lungs. He was reported as mortally wounded by General Averille, and in consequence was left upon the field. Nevertheless, with the help of a robust constitution, he was about again in a month, and resumed command of his regiment in December. He had also been severely wounded in a raid to the Ohio river and again at Cumberland Gap. He surrendered with his regiment at Appomattox. After the war, in 1866, Colonel Peters was appointed professor of Latin in the university of Virginia, which position he is now filling.

William H. Peters, of Portsmouth, president of the Citizens' bank of Norfolk, was distinguished in the public service of the Confederate States as he has been since in private life, for the faithful and able execution of important financial and business trusts. Mr. Peters was born at Portsmouth in the year 1816, of English ancestry. His father was Capt. Henry Peters, of the merchant marine, who served at Craney island during the war of 1812. His mother was Martha Meredith, of Norfolk. After he received an education in the public schools of his native town, he engaged in business, handling general merchandise and lumber, which was his occupation at the time of the withdrawal of Virginia from the



W. H. PETERS

United States. On the day of the passage of the ordinance of secession he was appointed by Governor Letcher paymaster in the Virginia State navy, and stationed at the Gosport navy yard in charge of that department of the naval organization. He continued in this duty until Virginia had united with the Confederacy, when he was succeeded by the paymaster of the Confederate States navy, and commissioned by the governor to report upon the value of the public property taken possession of by Virginia, including the navy yard, hospital, etc. Upon his discharge of this duty he was appointed by President Davis to the office of naval storekeeper in the Confederate States service, in which capacity he remained at the navy yard until the evacuation of Norfolk in May, 1862. He had previously removed much of the naval stores to Charlotte, N. C., where he now took charge of the depot, and remained there in supervision, distributing the stores to Richmond, Charleston, Savannah and other points as needed, until September, 1863. At the latter date he was entrusted with new and important duties. The sale and shipment to foreign lands of the South's great staple, cotton, were essential to the welfare and financial success of the Confederate States, and to this department of work Mr. Peters, whose integrity and business acumen had been tested in other capacities, was now called. He was appointed agent for the purchase and shipment of cotton through the blockade by way of Nassau and Bermuda to Europe. For this work he made his headquarters at Wilmington, where he remained actively engaged until that port fell into the hands of the United States troops. Soon afterward the armies were surrendered and Mr. Peters returned to his home at Portsmouth, and resumed mercantile pursuits. In these he continued with marked success until 1890, when he retired from active business. Meanwhile, in 1879, he had been chosen president of the Citizens' bank of Norfolk, a well-known financial institution which has met with great success under his control. This position he still holds. In 1885 he was appointed by the United States treasury department receiver for the Exchange National bank of Virginia, one of the most prominent banks of the South before its failure, and he gave to the settlement of its affairs the benefit of his financial skill and experience, with satisfactory results. Mr. Peters also holds the position of president of the Norfolk quarantine commission, and has served the public in various other capacities. Notwithstanding his advanced age he retains the clear intellect, shrewd judgment and capacity for prompt and decisive action which have characterized his life as a financier and public official. His long and honorable life has made him a conspicuous figure in southeastern Virginia. Mr. Peters was married in 1838 to Mary A., daughter of James Reed, and they have five children living: Karie V., wife of Dr. J. B. Williams, of Oxford, N. C.; Mattie W., wife of Judge L. R. Watts; Mary A., wife of Paul C. Trugis, of the Portsmouth Star; William R. and Frank.

Alonzo Lafayette Phillips, of Richmond, served with honorable distinction in the army of Northern Virginia, and since the war has been conspicuous in the military service of the State, rising to the rank of brigadier-general. He is a native of Henrico county, born June 27, 1842. In his youth, during the peaceful years which

preceded the great struggle, he received his education at Richmond. On May 13, 1861, he joined in the organization of the Henrico Guards and was made fourth sergeant. This band was mustered in as Company D of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry, and he was soon promoted second sergeant. On October 3, 1862, he was promoted second lieutenant of the company, and he served in this rank to the close of the war. The extent of his service in the Confederate army is well presented by a list of the engagements in which he took part from the Peninsular campaign to Appomattox. In this list are found the names of Savage Station, Frayser's Farm, Malvern Hill, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Suffolk, Front Royal, Strawberry Plains, Bean's Station, Tenn., Bull's Gap, Plymouth, N. C., Little Washington, N. C., Kinston, N. C., New Bern, N. C., Drewry's Bluff on May 14 and 16, 1864, Second Cold Harbor, Howlett House on June 16, 1864, the fight on Ashcake road with Sheridan, Dinwiddie Court House on March 29, 30, 31, 1865, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. His former commander, Col. E. M. Morrison, has written that among the subalterns of the Fifteenth cavalry, Lieutenant Phillips had no peer. "He was always in place, always reliable and cheerful under the most distressing circumstances. I remember seeing him in January, 1864, marching from Knoxville, Tenn., day after day, mile after mile, without shoes, just able to put the toe of one foot on the ground, but accepting the situation as a matter of course." At Drewry's bluff he returned from picket line to the works through the enemy's fire, and carried back ammunition for his comrades. It required what appeared to be a line of battle to drive in a skirmish line under his command, and his fidelity was such that his commanding officer always reposed in confidence upon the assurance that orders would be carried out with intelligence. Lieutenant Phillips surrendered at Richmond, April 18, 1865, and was at once paroled, and soon afterward engaged in business as a contractor at that city, in which, it is gratifying to note, he has been notably successful. His career in the Virginia militia began in April, 1871, when he was elected lieutenant of the Sydney Greys, which subsequently became Company D of the First regiment, when the latter was organized. He was then made captain of the company, and held that rank until his resignation about three years later. In 1881 he was elected first lieutenant of Company E, First Virginia regiment of infantry, was soon afterward promoted captain, and in 1888 became major of the regiment. March 27, 1890, he was elected lieutenant-colonel, and from this rank passed on February 9, 1895, to that of brigadier-general, commanding First brigade, Virginia volunteers, including command of all Virginia troops. Naturally adapted to military command, he is an ideal officer, and thoroughly popular with the troops. He maintains his connection with the old comrades of the army of Virginia by membership in both the George E. Pickett and R. E. Lee camps, in the latter holding the rank of past commander. He is also vice-president of the board of directors of the Confederate Soldiers' Home.

Edward Drew Phillips, M. D., a leading physician and prominent citizen of Suffolk, Va., who was connected with the medical service of the Confederate army during the war, was born in Nansemond county, July 14, 1830. His father, Nathaniel P. Phil-

lips, a farmer and miller of Nansemond, was many years a public official, serving as county surveyor, and for forty years as magistrate. The father of the latter was Drewry Phillips, a native of Isle of Wight county, in his time a teacher of considerable fame, and he was the son of John Phillips, of Prince George county. Dr. Edward Phillips was educated in the classical school at his father's residence until he had reached the age of seventeen, when he entered the medical department of Hampden-Sidney college, now the Virginia medical college, where he received the degree of doctor of medicine in 1850. During the eleven years that elapsed before the outbreak of war he was engaged in the practice of his profession at Chuckatuck, Nansemond county, and had acquired a considerable reputation as a skillful physician. He entered the service as surgeon of the Fifty-ninth Virginia infantry regiment, and was with that command during the year 1861. In 1862 he entered the medical service of the Confederate States army, and was first stationed at the Howard's Grove small-pox hospital, and subsequently at various hospitals until he was ordered to Hick's Ford for duty on the medical examining board. Here he was actively engaged in the recruiting service of the army until about the time of the surrender at Appomattox, when he was ordered to report to the medical director of the army of Northern Virginia at Lynchburg, Va., or Greensboro, N. C. Then attempting to unite with the other Confederate forces he made his way to Raleigh. When Sherman entered that city he applied for rations and transportation to his home, which were granted. Since then Dr. Phillips has been almost constantly engaged in the work of his profession, honorably rounding out a career of half a century, full of honor and good deeds. He practiced at Chuckatuck until 1874, then served two years at Norfolk as agent of the State grange, resumed the practice at Smithfield, and from the latter place removed to Suffolk in 1882. He is widely known as a physician and has an extensive practice. He is prominent in the Masonic order as a Knight Templar, member of the grand lodge of Virginia for forty years, and for two terms district deputy grand master. In 1851 he was married to Virginia Ricks, who died in the following year, and in 1859 he married Mary M., daughter of Richard H. Riddick, in his lifetime prominently connected with the Albemarle swamp land company. By this marriage two children are living: Mary Claude, wife of A. H. Baker, sheriff of Nansemond county, and Julia R.

George E. S. Phillips, of Berryville, Va., a veteran of Stuart's horse artillery, was born in Cecil county, Md., in 1835. He was reared and educated in his native State, coming to Virginia in 1852, and making his home in Jefferson county. He was a member of the Virginia militia at Charlestown prior to the Confederate era. When Col. R. Preston Chew organized at Charlestown the first company of mounted artillerymen in the Confederate service, Mr. Phillips enlisted in this command as a private. He was promoted sergeant in May, 1862, the position in which he served during the remainder of the war. He was with Ashby's cavalry through the Valley campaign of 1862, and at Kernstown fired the shell, a fragment of which broke the arm of Federal General Shields; took part in the Manassas campaign, and shared the honors of the heroic

defense of the South Mountain passes. He was with his command throughout the war, in such important fights as Sharpsburg, Brandy Station, Gettysburg and the severe fighting of 1864 and 1865, and in a host of minor engagements, in some of which the men of Chew's battery showed that they were as capable of daring cavalry raiding as of standing to their guns in pitched battle. After the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia he walked to his home in Jefferson county, and found work for the season upon a farm. He then removed to Berryville and began work at his trade as a carpenter and builder. It is pleasing to note that this deserving soldier has prospered in his affairs, and is happily situated. He is popular with his comrades of J. E. B. Stuart camp, Confederate Veterans, as well as with a wide circle of acquaintances. In March, 1859, he was married to Miss Hannah Blake, of Jefferson county, and they have a daughter living.

Henry O. Phillips, a respected citizen and business man of Portsmouth, has the honorable distinction of having served throughout the war with that gallant body of Confederates known in history as Armistead's brigade. He entered the service on April 20, 1861, as a private in the Portsmouth Rifles, an historic organization formed in 1792. The company was at once mustered under arms, under Capt. John C. Owens, and was soon on duty fortifying Pig Point, where on June 6th, the attack of the Federal cutter Harriet Lane was bravely repelled. In February, 1862, they moved to South Mills to repel the Federal advance of General Reno, and on May 10th the Rifles was the last command to leave Norfolk, then marching as the rear guard in the movement on Dunn's Hill. Here the Rifles became Company G of the Ninth regiment, of Armistead's brigade, and subsequently participated in the splendid record of that command, the brigade being commanded by General Barton after Armistead fell at Gettysburg. Among the important battles in which he participated were: Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, Sharpsburg, Gettysburg, Cold Harbor and Five Forks. He was wounded at Malvern Hill, and fighting with Pickett's division on the third day of the battle of Gettysburg, was shot through the body and in this wounded and helpless condition fell into the hands of the enemy. He was sent to hospital on David's island, New York, and remained there three months. After rejoining the army, he continued in the fight, notwithstanding the wounds he had received, and at Five Forks was the only soldier of his division who captured a Yankee from the attacking columns. He surrendered and was paroled at Appomattox, and then returned to his home at Portsmouth, where he has since resided, and has been successfully engaged in business. He is a valued member of Stonewall camp, United Confederate Veterans, and is fraternally connected with the order of Red Men. At the age of twenty-four years he was married to Agnes Trafton, of Portsmouth, who died in 1855, leaving two children: Blanche Nash, now the wife of William N. Garrett, and Agnes E.

John T. Phillips, M. D., born at Chuckatuck, Va., in November, 1829, died at his home in Bloomsdale April 3, 1881, was one of the prominent physicians of southeast Virginia, and a devoted Confederate. He was graduated in medicine at Cincinnati in 1852 and was engaged in the practice in Isle of Wight county until the

breaking out of the war between the States. Owing to a gunshot wound in the right hand, received prior to the war, he was not accepted as a regular in the Confederate army. He did scout duty, however, most of the year 1863, and then was returned home to practice his profession. He was the son of John Phillips, a farmer, and a descendant of an old Virginia family of Welsh descent. His wife was Carrie C. Ricks, of Southampton county. Dr. J. E. Phillips, son of the foregoing, was educated at the State agricultural college, and was graduated at the college of physicians and surgeons, at Baltimore, in 1880. He was a professional partner of his father until the latter's death, but since 1889 has been very successfully engaged in the practice at Suffolk and in the surrounding territory. His present wife, to whom he was married in 1894, is Eliza Prentiss, daughter of Capt. C. H. Causey, of Nansemond county.

Major Charles Pickett, of Norfolk, Va., is one of the heroes of Pickett's brigade and division who will be remembered with admiration and affection as long as any survivors remain of those gallant commands. He was born June 1, 1840, at Richmond, Va., son of Col. Robert Pickett, also a native of that city, and owner of a very large estate, the historic Turkey island plantation, which was laid waste by Gen. B. F. Butler. His grandfather, George Pickett, who was born in Fauquier county, and removed to Richmond about the time of the Revolutionary war, held the important trust of purchasing agent for the colonies during that struggle, and afterward amassed a large fortune as a merchant. His mother was Mary, daughter of Robert Johnston, of Scotch descent, a hardware merchant of Richmond. Major Pickett's career before the war was mainly as a student in the city schools and at the university of Virginia, where he remained from 1857 to 1859. At the latter date he entered mercantile life at Richmond, in which he had not far advanced when it became his duty to respond to the call of Virginia for defense of her territory. Enlisting early in 1862 as a private in Company F of the First regiment, organized at Richmond, he went with his command to Fredericksburg and subsequently was stationed for several months at Gloucester Point. He then resigned in order to re-enlist in the command of his brother, George E. Pickett, who had been commissioned a brigadier-general in January, 1862. Upon his staff he was appointed an aide-de-camp in February, and in June adjutant-general and chief of staff, a position he continued to hold after the advancement of General Pickett to the command of a division. As assistant adjutant-general of the Third brigade of Longstreet's division he was engaged throughout the Peninsular campaign, in the fighting at Yorktown, Williamsburg, and the Seven Days' battles up to and including the fifth day, when he was engaged at Frayser's Farm, on June 30th. His experience on this day is well told in the official report of Col. John B. Strange, then in command of the brigade, as follows: "I would also bring to your notice the name of Capt. Charles Pickett, assistant adjutant-general, who acted with the most conspicuous gallantry, carrying a flag by my side at the head of the brigade on foot (having lost his horse), and urging forward, all the time forward, until shot down seriously wounded, and then begging those who went to bear him off the field to leave him and

go to the front if they could not bear him off conveniently, but to leave him his flag, which he still held, and let him die there under its folds." This wound kept him at Richmond until the army was entering upon the Pennsylvania campaign, when he rejoined the division of his brother, which reached the field of Gettysburg in time to make that desperate charge on the Federal entrenchments and batteries on Cemetery hill which will ever be memorable in American history. Though they gained the Federal position, and the survivors held it for a time in a hand-to-hand fight, without support, they melted away under a terrible fire, and their marvelous valor went for naught. Remaining before the Federal army all day July 4th without attack, they began that night the famous retreat to Virginia, which, considering their condition, was the most remarkable in history. Major Pickett was next engaged in battle at New Bern, N. C., and remained with his command in that State through the winter, returning to Richmond in the spring of 1864, to participate in the battle of Cold Harbor. During the siege of Petersburg and Richmond, his division held the entrenched line between the two cities and Bermuda Hundred, until about three weeks before the evacuation, when it was relieved by General Mahone's command and ordered to operate against Sheridan. They met the latter's forces at Five Forks, and in a severe battle against overwhelming odds, met with frightful losses, being able to withdraw but a thousand men from the action. Subsequently joining in the retreat to Appomattox the command suffered severely at Sailor's Creek, and the survivors gave their parole on April 9, 1865. Major Pickett at once returned quietly to the work of a private citizen and was engaged upon the Turkey island plantation until the summer of 1868, when he went to Richmond and a few months later to Norfolk, of which city he has been a respected and prominent citizen since 1869. Here he has been occupied in trade and has served as secretary of the Business Men's association since its organization. He was married in October, 1863, to Elizabeth H., daughter of John H. Smith, in the government service at Washington. Major Pickett's fraternal connections are with the Knights Templar and Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans.

Captain A. P. Pifer, of Norfolk, a distinguished educator, was born in Frederick county, Va., August 3, 1840, and is a lineal descendant of the founder of his family in America, who emigrated from Sweden to Germany, and thence to Virginia before the war of the Revolution. His father, Maj. Elijah Pifer, born 1807, died 1886, a planter's son, followed the same calling, and served his county for many years as a magistrate, for which he was peculiarly fitted by his study of law, so that none of his legal decisions were reversed during his career. Captain Pifer in his youth attended school in his native county, preparatory to entering Roanoke college, where, after five years' study, he was graduated in 1859 with the degree of A. M. Intending to follow the profession of law, he studied in that direction during the following two years, also being engaged in teaching school, until July, 1861, when he enlisted in the service of the Confederate States, as a private in Company A of the Tenth Virginia infantry. In the following month he was commissioned first lieutenant and assigned

to the position of adjutant-general of Meem's brigade, in which capacity he served until March, 1862. After that date he was upon detached duty and served in various capacities until August, when he received a commission as captain of cavalry and given command of Company A of the Thirty-ninth battalion of Virginia cavalry, generally known as General Lee's bodyguard. With this command, attached to the army headquarters, he served until the close of the war. When peace was restored he resumed his legal studies, and in a short time was admitted to the bar at Woodstock, Va., where he engaged in the practice for two years. Then, feeling a greater inclination toward labor in the educational field, he accepted the chair of ancient languages at Newberry college, South Carolina. After two years in this professorship he was elected principal of the Newberry female academy, where, for seventeen years he did efficient service, increasing the attendance from forty-two to one hundred and thirty, and graduating during this period a large number of young women, among whom are some of the most distinguished women of the South today. Resigning this position in 1885 on account of failing health, he gave his attention to life insurance until in May, 1895, he was called to the principalship of the Norfolk college for young ladies, which he has since successfully conducted. The institution has an attendance of two hundred students and occupies a high rank among the many excellent Southern schools for young women. Captain Pifer has naturally taken no prominent part in other public affairs since beginning his career as an educator, but during 1864, while he was yet in the field, he was elected to the Virginia legislature. His military duties and the subsequent loss of the capital, prevented his service as a legislator. He is a member of the Presbyterian church, and is connected with the Masonic order, the order of the Golden Cross and the Essenes. He was married in 1870 to Lucy A. Fair, of Selma, Ala., a daughter of Dr. Drewry Fair, a native of South Carolina, who removed to Selma in his youth and became a noted physician. She is a descendant of Governor Spottiswood. Her maternal grandfather was William Aylett, a Virginian who went to Tennessee as a land commissioner for the United States and subsequently located in Alabama. He was a lineal descendant of Sir Benjamin Aylett, who was imprisoned in London tower for adherence to Charles I., and whose son settled in King William county, Va. Captain Pifer and wife have one son, now a student in William and Mary college.

Charles W. Daughtrey, a brave son of Virginia, who answered her call for men in 1861, was born in Suffolk, in 1844. He spent his boyhood days in that city and received his education at a preparatory school in Albemarle county. At the outbreak of the war he enlisted in Company A, Sixteenth Virginia regiment, under Capt. T. W. Smith, and served with that command during the war. He took part in all of the engagements of his regiment until the surrender and was at Appomattox at the time of that event. Subsequently he went to Williamston, N. C., and engaged as a clerk in a mercantile establishment. He died in that city in 1866. J. D. Daughtrey, of Suffolk, Va., a brother of the foregoing, throughout the war was in the service of the Confederate government at Richmond. He was born in Nansemond county, in 1842, the son of

Mills C. Daughtrey, a prominent business man of Suffolk, who died in 1857. He was educated at the university school in Albemarle county, and at the age of seventeen years began an apprenticeship as a machinist at Richmond. Two years later, when the young men of Virginia were being called into the military service he offered to enlist, but the great demand for skilled labor in the production of military and naval supplies and munitions made it imperative that he should render his service in the shop, rather than on the battlefield. Nevertheless, he was a member of the reserve forces at Richmond, for local defense, and participated in several of the engagements about Richmond in which the various Federal raids were foiled of their object. After the war he was engaged for a considerable period as a locomotive engineer on railroads in Mississippi, Louisiana and Alabama, until he was severely injured in a wreck. Since 1889 he has been engaged in the publication of band music at Suffolk, doing an extensive business. John Beauregard Pinner, a half-brother of those above mentioned, who has taken an active part in the development of southeastern Virginia since the war, was born at Suffolk in 1861, son of John Franklin Pinner, a business man who had the largest real estate holdings in Suffolk at the time of his death in 1897. He was educated at the Bethel military academy, Randolph-Macon college, and the university of Virginia, and then embarked in the practice of law at Suffolk, much of his time also being given to the management of his extensive real estate interests. He has served as mayor of Suffolk two years, also as councilman, and as commissioner of accounts for Nansemond county.

Adam H. Plecker, of Lynchburg, a gallant veteran of the Boteourt artillery, is a native of the Shenandoah valley, born in Rockingham county in 1840. He was reared in that and Augusta counties, and had embarked in the business of photography when he abandoned all other occupations for the defense of the State. At the time of the excitement caused by the efforts of John Brown and his allies, the Mountain Rifles, an independent militia company, was organized in 1859, at Buckhannon, Va., and in this command he enlisted early in 1861. It was mustered into the service of the Confederate States May 14, 1861, with one hundred and fifteen men, becoming part of the Twenty-eighth Virginia infantry. With this regiment he served, as a private, eight months, after which period the Rifles, on re-enlistment, was converted into an artillery company, with six guns, known as Anderson's battery. In this command Private Plecker was elected as gunner and served as such during the war, refusing promotion. Just before the siege of Vicksburg the name of the battery was changed to the Boteourt battery, as which it was known until after having achieved a splendid record, it spiked its guns and disbanded at Christiansburg, southwest Virginia, on the Tuesday following the fateful day at Appomattox. Mr. Plecker served with the Twenty-eighth regiment at the first battle of Manassas and in June, 1862, was with his battery at Cumberland Gap, where the Federals were forced to retreat into Kentucky. Then being assigned to service in the defense of the Mississippi river, he was engaged at Bayou Pierre; at Port Gibson, where a small force of Confederates made a gallant stand against Grant's army at the beginning of his attack upon

Vicksburg from the South. Here his battery lost four guns and about thirty of the company were killed and captured. At the battle of Baker's Creek, or Champion's Hill, on May 16th, the last stand made outside of the Vicksburg entrenchments, the company lost two more guns and most of the men. During the subsequent siege of Vicksburg, from the first assault on May 19th to the surrender on July 4th, he served faithfully in the defense of the Confederate lines under almost constant fire, enduring a mental and physical strain which those who were there can never forget. After his parole at Vicksburg he returned to Virginia and in May, 1864, was engaged at New River Bridge, subsequently served in the defense of Lynchburg against Hunter's advance, and at Rockfish Gap, in contests with Sheridan's cavalry. In June, 1865, he was paroled at Staunton, and returned to the valley of Virginia to take up again his business as a photographer. Since 1877 he has resided at Lynchburg and has been successfully engaged in that business, having one of the leading establishments of the kind in that region. Mr. Plecker is popular socially and is a member of the Masonic order.

Charles T. Plunkett, a prominent citizen of Lynchburg, Va., and a veteran of the artillery branch of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Appomattox county in 1846. When seventeen years of age he entered the Confederate service in December, 1863, as a private in Company A of the Twentieth battalion of artillery. He served in the subsequent operations of this command, and about April 1, 1865, was promoted color-bearer. During the siege of Richmond he participated in the fighting on the Brook road, and after the retreat had begun he took part in several skirmishes with the enemy and finally at Sailor's Creek, fell into the hands of the Federals. He was subsequently sent to Point Lookout as a prisoner of war and held there until June, 1865. After his release he returned to Appomattox county, and in 1866 embarked in the mercantile business at Spout Springs. In 1870 he was elected treasurer of Appomattox county for a term of three years. In 1874 he made his home at Lynchburg, and after a period in which he was employed as a salesman and bookkeeper, he became in January, 1876, the cashier of the Lynchburg insurance and banking company, as which he continued until July, 1882, when the company, having retired from business, he embarked in insurance and banking on his own account. This he has continued successfully since that date. In 1869 Mr. Plunkett was married to Miss Viola, daughter of Christopher Clark, of Campbell county.

Colonel William Thomas Poague, notable among the artillery commanders of the Confederate States, was born in Rockbridge county, Va., in 1835. He is of a family long resident in Virginia, descended from his great-great-grandfather, Robert Poague, who came from the north of Ireland in 1738. He was educated at Washington college, receiving the degree of A. B., in 1857, after which he engaged in school teaching for one year in Georgia. Returning to Lexington he studied law, and desiring to make a career in the West, removed to St. Joseph, Mo., where he was admitted to the bar, and embarked in the practice of his profession. But the exciting events of that winter convinced him that a crisis was at hand in which he could be of service to his native State, and he

returned to Virginia in December. In the following April he entered the military service as junior second lieutenant of the Rockbridge artillery, and during his first year's service received promotion to first lieutenant. At the reorganization in the spring of 1862 he was promoted captain of the battery, and in the following winter was further advanced to the rank of major. At Chancellorsville he served with the battalion of Maj. D. G. McIntosh, but soon afterward a new battalion of four batteries was formed, attached to the Third army corps, of which Major Poague was given command. In this capacity he served until the end of the war, receiving further promotion in the winter of 1864, to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. His first service in battle was rendered at Manassas in 1861, and in the fall of that year he participated in artillery skirmishes on the Potomac under command of Stonewall Jackson and Turner Ashby. Subsequently he participated in the Romney expedition and the affairs at Bath and Hancock on the upper Potomac. He served through the Valley campaign of Jackson, beginning at Kernstown, as first lieutenant in the battery, and in the subsequent retreat, doing effective service with the rear guard of Jackson's little army, and was soon thereafter elected captain. At McDowell, stationed at the Confederate center, he did an important part in the defeat of the Federal forces. Continuing the fight throughout this campaign he was engaged at Middletown, in the skirmishing on the way to Winchester, the defeat of Banks at Winchester, the skirmishing to Harper's Ferry, and two days of battle at Port Republic. Then accompanying Jackson's command to Richmond, he fought at Cold Harbor, White Oak Swamp and Malvern Hill. In the Manassas campaign of 1862, with Jackson's corps, he was engaged at Cedar Mountain, sustained an effective artillery duel at Groveton, participated in the action at Manassas Station, and throughout the battle of Second Manassas was distinguished for valuable and intrepid service. Subsequently with Jackson's command he took part in the reduction of Harper's Ferry, and at Sharpsburg held an important position on the left near the Dunker church. In December he was engaged at Fredericksburg, during the following winter had several skirmishes while engaged in picket duty on the Rappahannock, and during 1863 participated in the battles of Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and Mine Run, in these great struggles being equally conspicuous for gallantry and skill. He took part in the opening attack upon Grant in the Wilderness and after two days of battle on that field was engaged in line of battle with firing every day for a week at Spottsylvania Court House. Subsequently he took part in the action at Jericho Ford and the discomfiture of Grant at Cold Harbor. After a month's service at Petersburg he was stationed at Dutch Gap from August, 1864, to March 31, 1865, in charge of the mortar battery that was operated day and night at that point. On April 1st, he was in action at the time the lines were broken before Petersburg. During the retreat he fought at Cumberland Church and other points, to Amelia Court House, where his battalion and that of McIntosh were selected to accompany the infantry of Lee's army to Appomattox, during which movement he participated in all actions up to the surrender. During this long and active service Colonel Poague was fortunately wounded but twice, and both

at Cold Harbor, but he was on several occasions hit by spent balls. After his parole he returned to Rockbridge county, where after teaching school a short time he was occupied in farming until 1885. At the latter date he was appointed treasurer and secretary of the Virginia military institute. Since then he has rendered valuable service to this famous institution, with which his widely known military service renders it peculiarly appropriate that he should be associated. Colonel Poague has also served in the legislature of the State from 1871 to 1873.

Henry Robinson Pollard, of Richmond, prominent in the legal profession and in the political affairs of Virginia, was born in King and Queen county, Va., November 28, 1845. From his native county he entered the service of the Confederate States in October, 1863, as assistant engineer in the corps of topographical engineers, with the rank of lieutenant. He served in this capacity during one year, assisting in the mapping of the south side of Virginia. Then desiring more active service he became a private in Company E of the Twenty-fourth Virginia cavalry regiment, and participated in the operations of this command subsequent to his enlistment in October, 1864, until the close of hostilities. His record in the field embraces the actions at Amelia Springs, Sailor's Creek, Farmville, and the engagement at Appomattox on the evening preceding the surrender. At Farmville he was slightly wounded. He participated in the surrender of April 9, 1865, and then returned to his home. Subsequently he taught a school in Middlesex county, for one session, and then entered the law school of Columbian college, Washington, D. C., where he was graduated in 1867. He embarked in professional life in his native county, and soon attained distinction in the practice of law and became prominent in public affairs. From 1874 to 1886 he held the office of commonwealth's attorney for King and Queen county, and from 1880 to 1889 represented the county in the legislature of Virginia, gaining prominence in that body and becoming widely and favorably known throughout the State. In 1886 he was the presiding officer of the State convention which put in nomination Gen. Fitzhugh Lee for governor. In the year 1889 he made his home at the State capital, where his career has justified the removal that gave him a wider field for activity. In the summer of 1898, without effort on his part, he was elected city attorney for the city of Richmond. He is a prominent member of the Baptist church, and from 1884 to 1886 served as president of the Baptist general association of the State. The general appreciation of his honorable career and valuable services to church and State were appropriately recognized in 1892, by the conferring upon him of the degree of LL. D., by Howard college of Alabama. Mr. Pollard still cherishes the memory of the days of the Confederacy, and maintains a membership with the veterans of R. E. Lee camp, of Richmond.

Richard Pollard, of Lynchburg, was born in Nelson county in 1820. He is a brother of the late Edward A. Pollard, famous as a journalist at Richmond, and as one of the earliest historians of the Confederate States, and a son of Maj. Richard Pollard, of the United States navy, who served in the war of 1812, and was subsequently United States minister to Chili during two administrations. Mr. Pollard was reared in Nelson and Albemarle coun-

ties, and entering the Virginia military institute was graduated in 1849. Manifesting at an early age an ability that warranted important trusts, he was commissioned in 1851 to sail to China as supercargo for Nye Brothers & Co., in the silk trade, and continued in this business for nine years, making voyages to China, Siam, and other countries. Abandoning this occupation in 1860 he returned to Virginia and at Lynchburg was married in the same year to Miss Nannie Saunders, daughter of the late James Saunders, M. D. With his wife he made a journey to Canada, and remained there until the following year. On their return to Lynchburg he suffered the loss of his wife by untimely death, and in the fall of 1861 he entered the Confederate service, in the engineer corps. He served at the important defensive position of Drewry's bluff, at the center of the Richmond and Petersburg line, until just before the abandonment of that position, when he was ordered to New River Bridge. Returning thence to Lynchburg, he was there at the time of the surrender, and was paroled in May, 1865. In the following August he made a trip to Europe and remained a year, after which he returned to Lynchburg and made that city his permanent residence. For two years he was occupied in the dry goods trade, and then entered the insurance business, in which he has since been engaged.

John W. Poole, during his lifetime a prominent citizen of Petersburg, was born in Dinwiddie county, Va., in 1842. After he had arrived at the age of twelve years he was a resident of Petersburg, where at the outbreak of the war he entered the Confederate service as a private in Company D of the Twelfth Virginia regiment. He served with this command during the year 1861, and in 1862 through the battle of Seven Pines, June 1st, and the Seven Days' fight before Richmond, including Oak Grove and Malvern Hill, and then, his health being seriously impaired by the arduous campaigning which he had experienced, he was transferred to the naval department, and placed in charge of the rope factory at Petersburg. He remained in this important service until the close of the war, and then was engaged in the mercantile business until 1880, when he took control of what is now known as the Powhatan corn mills, which he conducted until his death in 1892. His son, W. E. Poole, who continues the business under the old firm name of J. W. Poole & Son, was born at Petersburg in 1864, and was educated at McCabe's school. In 1894 he was married to Miss Mary E., daughter of J. W. Young, who was a prominent business man of Petersburg and a brave Confederate soldier. Mr. Young was born at Petersburg in 1839, and died at that city in 1893. During the first year of the war he held the position of assistant quartermaster of the Twelfth Virginia regiment, Mahone's brigade, and during the three succeeding years he saw active service as a member of Graham's battery, with the exception of six months when he was detailed to drill the home guards.

Jesse J. Porter, of Louisa Court House, Va., was born August 26, 1836, the son of James D. Porter. His father died in 1879, at the age of seventy-seven years. April 17, 1861, Mr. Porter enlisted as a member of a military company previously organized, left his home for Harper's Ferry, where he assisted in the capture of the place and its military stores. A month later he was engaged in a

skirmish at Winchester, and thence made a raid to Romney. His command became Company D of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, then under the gallant leadership of Col. A. P. Hill, afterward famous as a division and corps commander. He marched with Johnston's army to the battlefield of Manassas, but his part of the forces arrived in time only to see the rout of the Federals. Subsequently he was in camp at Fairfax Station and later at Centerville. While at the latter point five companies of the Thirteenth joined General Stuart in the capture of Mason's, Munson's and Upton's hills, in sight of Washington, and held them several weeks. In the spring of 1862 his regiment under Col. J. A. Walker served in Elzey's brigade of Ewell's division, under Jackson in the valley, and was particularly distinguished at Cross Keys. This service, and the subsequent action of his regiment under Early, Ewell and Stonewall Jackson, were shared throughout by Mr. Porter, who was promoted lieutenant in April, 1862. During the Maryland campaign he was absent from his command on account of a severe attack of typhoid pneumonia, but returning to his company he fought at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, being within fifty yards of Gen. Stonewall Jackson when he was wounded. He was subsequently sent to Richmond in charge of prisoners. At the opening of the fight in the Wilderness, May 5, 1864, he shared the gallant work of Ewell's corps as a member of Pegram's brigade, repulsing the repeated charges of Warren's corps. That night he served on picket duty among the dead and wounded in front of his command, and on the next day while participating in the repulse of the frequent heavy assaults of the enemy by his brigade, he received a severe wound in the hip, which disabled him until the fall of 1864, when he found his command at Winchester. In the battle at that place between the commands of Early and Sheridan, all of his company save three men were killed or captured. He was among those who fell into the hands of the enemy, and he was subsequently held as a prisoner at Fort Delaware until June, 1865.

Henry B. Poss, of Alexandria, a worthy veteran of Kemper's battery, was born at Alexandria, June 26, 1841. He was reared and educated in his native city, and before reaching his twentieth birthday became a soldier in the Confederate army. At the organization of Kemper's battalion in February, 1861, he enlisted as a private in that organization, and with it was mustered into the service on April 17, 1861, beginning a career as a soldier that continued throughout the war, and was extended by reason of confinement in a Federal prison camp for many weary weeks beyond the date of the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia. Notable among the engagements in which he participated were the battles of Manassas of July 21, 1861, Savage Station and Sailor's Creek. At the latter disastrous encounter he fell into the hands of the enemy, and was subsequently confined at Newport News until the following June. He then was paroled and permitted to return to his home at Alexandria, where he resumed the occupation of carpenter and builder, and soon afterward, in November, 1865, entered the employment of the Southern railroad. He still occupies a responsible position with this company, and is influential in the community and socially popular. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp,

No. 2, Confederate Veterans. On November 24, 1868, he was married to Miss Alice G. Cox, of Alexandria, and they have seven sons living.

Lieutenant-Colonel Daniel Lee Powell, of the Nineteenth militia regiment, afterward Second State reserves, was born in Loudoun county, Va. He was educated and graduated at the Virginia military institute, and was there prepared to render the most effective service to his State in her day of trial. After the war Colonel Powell was engaged in educational work and for many years prior to his death was in charge of the Virginia female institute at Richmond. Thomas Temple Powell, son of the foregoing, was born at Richmond, Va., July 15, 1865, and was educated in the Episcopal high school near Alexandria, and the university of Virginia. After his graduation in the latter institution he taught two years in Maryland and then completed a law course in the university of that State. In the fall of 1889 he entered upon the practice of law at Richmond, and in 1892 made his home at Newport News, where he has very successfully established the foundations of a promising career. In 1895 and 1897 he was elected to the house of delegates by the five counties of the peninsula, and in the fall of 1896 he was appointed superintendent of the public schools of Newport News.

Edward Powell, now a prominent business man of Portsmouth, did not participate in the military operations of the Confederate army, but he labored during the period of the war in a sphere of usefulness that was closely connected with the maintenance of the Confederacy. During the year previous to the beginning of hostilities he was a member of the Marion Rifles, of Portsmouth, but when the company was called into active service, he was by reason of his training as a metal worker, more needed in the navy yard than elsewhere. He was employed by the government in the Portsmouth navy yard until the evacuation of that region in 1862, when he was given employment in the shops of the Virginia Central railroad during the remainder of the war. As an employe of this road, so greatly in use for military transportation, he was very closely connected with the military service, and he was certainly loyal and faithful to the cause of his State. Mr. Powell was born at Norfolk, January 11, 1842, the son of Moses and Margaret (Holly) Powell, natives of Nansemond and Norfolk counties respectively. The father died during his son's infancy, leaving the latter in the care of the mother, who removed to Portsmouth, and died there in 1860. He was reared at Portsmouth, and apprenticed to the coppersmith's craft, in which he became an experienced and skillful artisan. After the war he returned to Portsmouth, but soon afterward removed to Baltimore, where he remained a year. Again becoming a citizen of Portsmouth he has ever since remained there, where he is regarded as an influential and enterprising business man. He has given his attention mainly to the stove, plumbing and tinning business. He has served one term in the city council and three terms upon the board of health. He is a member of the Methodist church, in the Masonic order has membership in the Knights Templar and lodge of perfection, and is prominent in the Knights of Pythias. On May 22, 1862, he was married to Aurelia M. Nicholson, daughter of Dr. Lemuel P. Nicholson, who died of yellow fever at Portsmouth in 1855.

John J. A. Powell, of Wytheville, now a prominent lawyer, and distinguished in public affairs, enjoyed the honor, in his youth, of service in two military commands of more than ordinary fame, the cadet corps of the Virginia military institute and Mosby's cavalry. He was born near Yellow Tavern, Henrico county, in 1846, and in 1863 entered the military institute, becoming a member of the cadet corps commanded by Colonel Shipp. In May, 1863, the cadets were called out by General Breckinridge to meet the invasion of the valley by General Sigel, and Powell shared the exhausting march of the boys to New Market, where they met the enemy, and after fighting all day in the mud and rain with the pluck and intrepidity of veterans, had the satisfaction of utterly routing the Federals. After the destruction of the college buildings by Hunter's raiders, he was with the cadets at Richmond, studying and fighting in the trenches, until December, 1864, when he enlisted in Company G, Forty-third Virginia cavalry battalion, Col. John S. Mosby commanding. He participated in the adventurous career of this noted command through the winter of 1864 and spring of 1865, until it was finally disbanded at Salem, Fauquier county, where Private Powell heard the farewell address of the daring commander. With the return of peace Mr. Powell busied himself for some time as a farmer, and then undertook the study of law. Gaining admission to the bar he established himself at Wytheville, where he has had a successful career in his profession. Before removing to that place he was a resident of Fluvanna county, which he represented in the Virginia house of delegates during the regular session of 1885-86, and the special session of 1887.

Lieutenant Robert Simmons Powell, M. D., now a prominent physician and land-owner of Brunswick county, had embarked in the profession of medicine a few years before the outbreak of war, but readily abandoned this to enter the military service of Virginia in her hour of need. He became second lieutenant of the company of Capt. T. B. Robinson, which was assigned as Company G to the Twenty-first regiment Virginia infantry, Col. William Gilham. With this command he served in the West Virginia campaign under Loring in the summer and fall of 1861, and in addition to the duties of his rank, devoted his medical training to the amelioration of the suffering soldiers, who were terribly afflicted with measles and typhoid fever owing to the difficulty of obtaining wholesome food and the incessant cold rains. At Valley mountain, while in command of a guard for the ammunition train, he was himself so exposed to the inclement weather that he succumbed to the prevalent sickness and lay for some time in a hut in the mountains. Gen. R. E. Lee finally came to his bedside, and ordered him carried to Camp Lee, where and at Bath island, he lay for some time in hospital. He then, on the advice of the surgeon, sent in his resignation, and when sufficiently recovered took charge of the sick of his home county, under the war regulations. Two brothers of Dr. Powell were in the service: Charles, of the same company, who was wounded at Chancellorsville and captured at Spottsylvania and held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout and Elmira; and James W., who enlisted in 1864 at the age of seventeen years and served to the end. Dr. Powell con-

Va 71

tinued his professional career for some time after the close of the war, but gradually retired, giving his attention entirely to his very extensive estates and milling industries. He has been active in public affairs, but has not accepted office, save one term in the Virginia house of delegates. In 1866 he was married to Ellen V., daughter of Col. Daniel Huff.

Captain Robert J. Preston, of Marion, Va., was born near Abingdon, Washington county, January 25, 1841. At the time of the secession of Virginia he was a student at Emory-Henry college, but he immediately left his studies and repairing to his home enlisted in Capt. James Campbell's company and was elected first lieutenant of this organization. The Washington Independents and another company being ordered to Richmond, he resigned his lieutenantcy and, with several of his company, re-enlisted as a private in the Washington Independents. The Independents were assigned to the Thirty-seventh Virginia infantry regiment of General Taliaferro's brigade, Col. Samuel V. Fulkerson commanding, which he accompanied to northwest Virginia, joining the command of General Garnett. He participated in the fight at Laurel Hill, and the skirmishes on the retreat, including that near Carrick's Ford, in which Garnett fell, finally reaching Monterey, where the command was reorganized. The next engagement was at Alleghany mountain, after which the regiment joined the army under Gen. Stonewall Jackson at Winchester, took part in the Bath expedition, and fought at Kernstown and the succeeding battles of the Valley campaign of 1862, in which Taliaferro's brigade participated. Under Early he marched through Maryland, participating in the fights at Monocacy and the attack on Washington, etc. On the return to the valley he was transferred to Company C of the Twenty-first Virginia cavalry, commanded by Col. William E. Peters, which he had assisted in organizing. In the rank of first lieutenant of this company he participated in the southwestern Virginia and east Tennessee campaigns of Gen. W. E. Jones, until the latter was killed at Piedmont in June, 1864. After this battle Lieutenant Preston was promoted captain. He took part in the operations of McCausland's brigade in the expedition through Maryland against Washington, and the raid to Chambersburg, where Colonel Peters, with the Twenty-first, occupied the town, but refused to apply the torch. Escaping the disaster at Moorefield, Captain Preston served under Rosser in Early's Valley campaign and around Richmond, and after the retreat to Appomattox was among those who cut their way through the Federal lines with General Rosser. Later he was paroled at Abingdon, closing a gallant military career in which he participated in fifty-four engagements. Two years afterward, having taken up the study of medicine, he was graduated at the university of Virginia. He practiced in a New York hospital nearly two years, 1867-1868, and then made his home at Abingdon until 1887, when he was elected first assistant physician of the Southwestern State hospital for the insane, at Marion. The following year he was elected superintendent. Dr. Preston was married in 1875 to Miss Martha E. Sheffey, and they have two children: Eleanor Fairman and Robert Sheffey.

Walter C. Preston, a veteran of the artillery of the army of

Northern Virginia, was born in Greenbrier county, now within the borders of West Virginia, in the year 1841. He was reared in his native county and given a good education at the university of Virginia, whence he entered the military service in July, 1861, as a member of the University Volunteers, an organization which was assigned to the Fifty-ninth Virginia regiment of infantry. He served as a private with this command until December following, when the company was disbanded. He then enlisted as a private in the Albemarle artillery, and continued with that organization until disabled by wounds. He participated in the battles of Cold Harbor and Malvern Hill, of the Peninsular campaign, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester and Gettysburg, and Spottsylvania Court House. In the course of the several days' battle at the latter point in May, 1864, he received a wound in the left arm which necessitated amputation, and put an end to his service in the field. He was at the same time captured, and was afterward confined at the Old Capitol prison, Elmira, and Point Lookout, until December, when he was transported by ship to Savannah and exchanged. After the close of hostilities he engaged in teaching school, but two years later he began farming and continued in that occupation until 1889, since when he has given his attention to educational work again, making his home at Orange Court House. In 1872 he was married to Miss Sidney Davis, daughter of Gen. A. W. G. Davis, of Mississippi, and they have two sons grown to manhood: Alfred and John Lynn.

J. B. Prince, judge of the Southampton county court, was one of the gallant cadets of the Virginia military institute who participated with credit in the war of the Confederacy. He was born in Southampton county, August 18, 1844, the son of Joseph H. Prince, an attorney who represented Southampton county in the Virginia house of delegates and was descended from one of the oldest families of Virginia. The wife of the latter, and mother of Judge Prince, was Elizabeth B., daughter of Joseph W. Claud, also a native of Virginia. At the outbreak of the war Judge Prince was pursuing his youthful studies and he received a military training at the Virginia military institute, which fitted him, in 1864, for important service in the Confederate army. He was assigned to ordnance duty on the staff of Gen. Wade Hampton and was associated with that officer during his command of the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia and his participation in the operations against Sherman in the Carolinas. Judge Prince rendered efficient service with the cavalry during 1864 and 1865, finally surrendering at Greensboro, N. C. He was paroled April 10, 1865, after which he returned to Virginia and resumed his studies. Deciding to embrace the profession of law he entered the university of Virginia in the law department and was graduated in 1867. He then made his home at Courtland and embarked in the practice in which he has since continued with notable success. During his career as an attorney he has enjoyed an extensive and lucrative practice in the courts of Greensville, Southampton and Sussex counties. For thirteen years he served as commonwealth attorney of Southampton county, held the office of clerk of the circuit and county courts during four years, and in 1891 was called to the

bench as judge of the Southampton county court, a position in which he has been distinguished for judicial learning and impartial judgment. In 1876 he participated as a delegate in the national convention which nominated Samuel J. Tilden for the presidency. Judge Prince is an active member of the Baptist church and of the Masonic order. In 1877 he was married to Martha F., daughter of John Drewry, a prominent merchant and farmer. She died June 21, 1896, leaving two children: J. B., Jr., now a student of law at the university of Virginia, and Bessie R., a student at Norfolk college.

Lieutenant James A. Pulley, of Petersburg, who made a worthy record in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Mecklenburg county in 1840, the son of William Pulley, who died previous to the war. At the outbreak of war he was attending college in Brunswick county, but left his studies to enlist May 14, 1861, in Company K of the Fourteenth Virginia infantry regiment. He entered the service as corporal, but soon won promotion to second lieutenant by his soldierly bearing and courage in battle. He participated in the early operations on the peninsula and fought in Armistead's brigade at Williamsport, Seven Pines and the Seven Days' battles. He was wounded at Seven Pines and again at Malvern Hill, where his command was in the heat of the action. In this battle he had command of twenty-one men, of whom all but one were killed or wounded in the desperate assault upon the Federal position. Lieutenant Pulley received a severe wound in the hand, losing one finger, and was not able to return to his command until just before the battle of Fredericksburg, in which he participated. He subsequently took part in the Pennsylvania campaign, and at Williamsport, in command of his company, was distinguished in a successful charge upon the Federals who were attempting to capture the wagon trains of the Confederate army. His subsequent service was rendered on the lines about Richmond and Petersburg, where he continued until the battle of Five Forks, soon before the evacuation. In this fight he commanded his company and participating in an attack upon the enemy, was captured. He was subsequently confined as a prisoner of war at Johnson's island, Ohio, until June 21, 1865. After his return to Virginia he engaged in farming for several years at Brunswick, and then removed to Petersburg and embarked in the grocery trade, in which he has met with gratifying success. He held for a considerable time the office of commissioner of revenue of Brunswick county. In 1863 he was married to Miss Mary E. Wright, and they have six children living.

Lieutenant Samuel H. Pulliam, of Richmond, private and lieutenant, C. S. A., was born in Richmond in 1841, and was reared in the city and educated at Richmond college and the university of Virginia. He left the latter institution and suspended his education in April, 1862, to enter the Confederate service. His enlistment was as a private in Martin's battery of light artillery. Two or three months later he was promoted orderly-sergeant, and in October, 1863, he was raised to the rank of first lieutenant, in which he served until the close of the war. His service was mostly in the vicinity of Richmond, during 1862, and from October, 1862, to the fall of 1863, in southeastern Virginia and North Carolina.

In the spring of 1863 he participated in the siege of Suffolk, and afterward was engaged at Drewry's bluff and in the defense of Petersburg against Grant, taking part in many artillery actions. On the day before the surrender he took part in a sharp struggle with Sheridan's cavalry at Appomattox, and on the following day, receiving news of the surrender, his company was disbanded. In the fall of 1865 Lieutenant Pulliam made his home at Richmond again, where he has continued to reside, and engaging in the insurance business, has been notably successful. As a business man and a citizen he enjoys the highest esteem and confidence. On repeated occasions he has been elected to the city council, and in 1877-79 represented his city in the legislature of the State. He maintains a membership in R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, of Confederate Veterans.

John B. Purcell, a well-known business man of Richmond, was born in that city in 1849. On July 3, 1863, at the age of fourteen years, he entered the service of the Confederate States as a private in the Third Virginia battery, under command of John McAnerny, in Custis Lee's brigade. With this command he served until February, 1865, when he was discharged, and then appointed vidette to the Virginia military institute. In the latter service he was engaged until the close of the war. Among the affairs with the veteran troops of the enemy in which this young soldier was engaged, are the fight at Green's Farm in repelling Dahlgren's raid, and the engagement on the Brook road in May, 1864. From September, 1864, until the close of his service with the battery, he served as orderly-sergeant. After the return of peace he entered the Virginia military academy for the completion of his education, and was graduated in 1868. Returning then to Richmond he engaged in the drug business, which he has followed since that time with much success. For two years he has held the rank of colonel in the Virginia State troops, in command of the First regiment. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, U. C. V.

Captain Silvanus J. Quinn, who since 1866 has been identified officially with the municipal affairs of Fredericksburg, is a native of Georgia, born near Perry, Houston county, March 8, 1837. His father, a native of North Carolina, served under General Jackson in the war of 1812, participating in the battle of New Orleans, afterward served five years in the United States army, married Sarah Bryan Pierce, who was born in Georgia in 1810, and then settled in that State as a farmer. His six sons, James Hunter, William Bryan, John Blackstone, David Monroe, Silvanus Jackson and Thomas Jefferson, all served in the Confederate armies, and received honorable wounds, but survived the war. Captain Quinn, when eleven years old removed with his parents to Tallapoosa county, Ala., where the father died in 1850, the family afterward removing to Neshoba county, Miss. In Philadelphia, the county seat of Neshoba, he and his brother John B., became proprietors of a newspaper, the "Central Enquirer," which they later transferred to Louisville, Miss., and called the "Bulletin." This business he abandoned in May, 1861, after giving a hearty support editorially, to the cause of independence, and enlisted as musician in the Winston Guards, a volunteer company which became Company B, and after the reorganization Company A of the Thirteenth

Mississippi infantry regiment. After the battle of Malvern Hill, in which two lieutenants of his company fell, he was promoted second lieutenant. August 10, 1862, he was promoted first lieutenant, and two months later he became captain of the company, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. With his regiment, in Barksdale's brigade of Mississippians, McLaws' division, Longstreet's corps, he participated in nearly all of the great battles of the army of Northern Virginia, including Leesburg, Seven Pines, Savage Station, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Maryland Heights, Sharpsburg, First and Second Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Chickamanga, the sieges of Chattanooga and Knoxville, in Tennessee and Georgia, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Hanover Junction, Second Cold Harbor, Berryville, Strasburg, and Sailor's Creek. In the latter engagement he was surrendered, and thence was taken to the Old Capitol prison, reaching Washington on the afternoon of the day of the assassination of President Lincoln. Later he was transferred to Johnson's island, where he was held until about June 1, 1865. During his service he was wounded three times, but not seriously. At the Wilderness he received a painful bruise over the heart from a bullet which was checked by a small dictionary in his pocket, which he still gratefully preserves as a memento. In May, 1866, he came from Mississippi to Fredericksburg, and was married to Josephine DuVal, whom he had met during the war, and he then made his home in that city. He was in the newspaper business until 1870, after which he served four years as commissioner of revenue. He held the office of deputy collector of internal revenue until 1884; meanwhile, beginning in 1876, repeatedly being elected to the city council, in which body as chairman of the special committee he led in the establishment of a water-works system and the almshouse. Since 1884 he has served with great efficiency as superintendent of the water-works, also performing the duties of clerk of the school board and acting as magistrate. His wife died in August, 1897, leaving six children living: Mary Josephine, wife of James R. Hicks; Carrie Belle, Silvanus Bryan, Mattie DuVal, William Blackstone and Nannie Maury. Captain Quinn is distinguished in the Masonic order, as eminent commander of Fredericksburg commandery, Knights Templar, past high priest of the Grand chapter of Virginia, and author of a historical sketch of Fredericksburg lodge, No. 4, in which Gen. George Washington was made a Mason.

Captain Charles P. Rady, prominently connected with the public school system of Richmond, is a native of that city, born in 1832, and was there reared and educated. Entering the printer's craft in early manhood, he became connected with the Richmond Dispatch, and was thus employed when the war of the Confederacy was inaugurated. He entered the service of the State in April, 1861, with the rank of lieutenant in the Life Guards, an organization which became one of the companies of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry regiment. In this capacity he participated in the battle of Big Bethel, the early fight on Virginia soil which aided materially by its successful termination in strengthening the morale of the Confederate forces in the Old Dominion, and in correspondingly discouraging the Federal invaders. In August, 1861,

Lieutenant Rady was promoted to the rank of captain and assigned to the command of another company in the Fifteenth, and he held this command until December, when he was ordered to Richmond on important duty connected with the telegraph department. He remained in this service a year and during the following twelve months was in charge of office work at the capital. Subsequently he was connected with the Richmond Christian Advocate, until the close of the war, in the meantime serving in the defense of the city as a member of Colonel Danforth's regiment. At the evacuation of the city he was captured and paroled at Richmond. Subsequently he embarked in the book and job printing business at Richmond, and continued it until 1873, after which he was for ten years in mercantile business. Since 1884 he has held the office of clerk and supervisor of the Richmond public schools, and during his long continued tenure of this position has rendered efficient service to the city. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans.

Patrick Raftery, a native of Ireland, who served faithfully and gallantly throughout the Confederate war, and since then has achieved success in mercantile pursuits at Petersburg, Va., came to the United States from his native county of Galway in 1853. He first made his home at Petersburg. When the war broke out he enlisted in Company A, Twelfth Virginia regiment, and was at Norfolk at the evacuation of that city by the Confederate forces in 1862. He enlisted as a private, but subsequently was promoted corporal and finally sergeant of his regiment. He participated in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond and Second Manassas, was slightly wounded at Cumberland Gap, fought at Sharpsburg, Md., and at Fredericksburg, was in the heat of the fighting at Chancellorsville, and participated in the three days' battle at Gettysburg. In the campaign of 1864 he was a participant in the hard fighting at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House and Cold Harbor. In the latter battle he was captured and was not permitted to rejoin the army to whose record he had so devotedly contributed by his valor in the ranks, being held about a year in the military prisons of Point Lookout and Elmira, N. Y. After his release May 17, 1865, he returned to Petersburg and embarked in business. In 1871 Mr. Raftery was married to Miss Mary J. Carlin, a native of Portsmouth, and they have one child, William Hugh.

Alfred Magill Randolph, D. D., LL. D., bishop of the Southern diocese of Virginia, was born near Winchester, Va., August 31, 1836, a lineal descendant through William Randolph the second, Peter Randolph, of Chatsworth, Col. Robert Randolph and Robert Lee Randolph, of that William Randolph who founded the family in America. The latter, a great-grandson of Sir Thomas Randolph, a diplomatist of good Queen Elizabeth's reign, came from Yorkshire in 1640 and occupied an estate on Turkey island in the James river, his home until his decease in 1711. Among the numerous descendants of this American pioneer, three, Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall and Robert E. Lee, have, in different lines of achievement, attained the highest places in American life. Col. Robert Randolph was a distinguished soldier in the war of the Revolution. His son, Robert Lee Randolph, father of Bishop

Randolph, a first cousin of Robert E. Lee, was born at Eastern View, Fauquier county, in 1794, had extensive lands, served many years as a magistrate, and was a frequent contributor, from the standpoint of an old-line whig, to the National Intelligencer, of Washington, the great political organ of that day. He died in 1860 at the age of sixty-six years. His wife, Mary Tucker Magill, was the daughter of Col. John Magill of Winchester, an officer of the Revolution, and Mary Thruston, daughter of Judge Thruston, of the United States supreme court. Bishop Randolph was reared and educated at the old family place, Eastern View, to the age of sixteen, when he entered William and Mary college, where he received the degree of A. B. two years later. During his twentieth year, in preparation for a career in the church, he entered the theological seminary of Virginia near Alexandria, and upon his graduation three years later, was ordained to the diaconate by Bishop Meade. His first charge, in 1859, was at St. George's church at Fredericksburg, then ranking as third among the Virginia churches, the rector of which was then Rev. Edward McGuire, D. D. This eminent divine, then eighty years of age, died two months later, and was succeeded at once by Mr. Randolph. He served there, during the exciting period preceding and following the outbreak of war, until the storm of conflict broke over the town of Fredericksburg itself, in December, 1862. When Burnside made the order driving the citizens from their homes, which served so effectually to inspire the Confederate soldiers to destructive warfare in the following battle, and bombardment of the town was begun by the Federal army under that order, he was driven from his home, taking with him his wife, with a babe of twenty-six hours in her arms, in an ambulance. As soon as he could find his family a place of safety at Norwood, he returned to the army and served in field hospitals and in caring for the wounded. In June, 1863, without solicitation on his part, he received an appointment from General Lee as chaplain, with orders to serve in the hospitals at Richmond. In this service, at the capital and at Danville, he remained until the close of the war. With Gen. Robert E. Lee, Bishop Randolph enjoyed a warm and confidential friendship. While still at Fredericksburg he was permitted one of those intimate glimpses of the character of the great leader which endeared him to those who knew something of his inner life. Visiting the general at his headquarters one calm, pleasant evening, during a lull in the conversation there came to their ears the strains of the hymn "Old Hundred," sung by perhaps a brigade of soldiers at some religious service in camp. The sentiment of the words and the associations of the melody, contrasted strangely with the consciousness of the purpose of this vast assemblage and the imminence of a bloody battle. The great general evidently felt this as keenly as the minister of Christ at his side, and rising, he said, "Let us go out where we can hear better; what a terrible thing war is, and how blessed is the gospel of peace." This gospel Dr. Randolph was permitted to resume the presentation of upon the return of peace to the land. After serving for one year, 1866-67, at Christ church, Alexandria, the ancient place of worship of George Washington, he was called to Emmanuel church, Baltimore, where he remained until 1883. Then being consecrated as bishop, he assumed the duties of assistant

bishop of the old diocese of Virginia, which he continued to perform until two dioceses were established in 1892, and he was assigned to the Southern, with his residence at Norfolk. In this important office, as in all others permitted to him, he has served his church and the sacred cause it embodies with eminent ability and self-sacrificing devotion. Withal he finds opportunity for other duties, serves as a trustee of the theological seminary and high school, and is president of the boards of trustees of several academies. He maintains a membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp of United Confederate Veterans, and holds in honor his comradeship with the soldiers of the Confederacy. The wife of Bishop Randolph, to whom he was married in 1860, is Sallie Griffith Hoxton, daughter of Dr. William Hoxton, of the United States army, sister of Col. Llewellyn Hoxton, a graduate of West Point, who had a gallant record in the late war, and great-granddaughter of Rev. David Griffith, D. D., who was the chaplain and personal friend of George Washington through the war of the Revolution, and afterward the first bishop of Virginia.

Norman V. Randolph, of Richmond, was born in that city November 2, 1846. On April 2, 1862, a boy in his sixteenth year, he entered the service of the Confederacy as a private in Scott's Partisan Rangers. With this command he pursued an adventurous career until it was dissolved in October, 1863. During the next month he took the position of volunteer aide-de-camp upon the staff of Brig.-Gen. John B. Pegram, in Early's division of the Second army corps, of the army of Northern Virginia, and served in that capacity without rank or pay during the following campaigns until November, 1864. He then became a member of Company E, of Mosby's command, and was on duty until May 23, 1865. He was one of the fifteen men of Colonel Mosby's command who declined to surrender at Salem, Va., when the command was disbanded, but left that place with the intention of joining the army in North Carolina. But the capitulation of General Johnston destroyed their last hopes, and they separated at Turkey island, and Mr. Randolph was subsequently paroled at Ashland, Va. His career was marked by that gallantry and intrepidity which were characteristic of the commands in which he served. He was wounded in 1863 at Upperville. Since the war he has been a valued citizen of Richmond and is now prominent as a manufacturer.

Captain William Lewis Randolph, an officer of the staff of Brig.-Gen. Lewis Armistead, was born in 1841, at Port Gibson, Miss., and died in Virginia in 1891. He assisted John B. Magruder in organizing a company of infantry in Albemarle county in 1861, of which Magruder was elected captain, Randolph first lieutenant and W. W. Minor second lieutenant. The company afterward became part of the Thirty-seventh regiment. At a later date Lieutenant Randolph was assigned to the staff of General Armistead as chief of ordnance with the rank of captain. In this capacity he rendered efficient service until near the end of the struggle, when he was wounded and captured at Sailor's Creek. For some time afterward he was held as a prisoner of war at Johnson's island. He was of distinguished lineage. His father, William Mann Randolph, a brother of George Wythe Randolph, a signer of the ordinance of secession and secretary of war in 1862, was born in Amelia county,

was graduated in law at the university of Virginia, and practiced in Albemarle county before removing to Mississippi, where he resided the greater part of his life. William Mann was the son of Dr. John Randolph, and grandson of Thomas Mann Randolph. He married Margaret Smith Randolph, daughter of Thomas Jefferson Randolph, the son of Thomas Mann Randolph, governor of Virginia, whose wife Martha was the daughter of President Thomas Jefferson, whose wife was Martha Wayles Skelton. Thomas Jefferson was the son of Peter Jefferson, a native of Wales, and Jane Randolph, who was born in London. The wife of Thomas Jefferson Randolph was Jane Hollins Nicholas, daughter of Wilson Cary Nicholas, a governor of Virginia. A son of Capt. W. L. Randolph, Thomas Jefferson Randolph, born in Albemarle county, July 21, 1868, was educated at Charlottesville, McCabe's university school at Petersburg, and the university of Virginia, where he matriculated in 1886 and received the degrees of B. A. and B. Ph. in 1889, and the degree of M. A. in 1891. He then studied law with the late Prof. John B. Minor, of the university, and continued his reading while discharging the duties of instructor in modern languages in the Norfolk academy during the session of 1891-92. Admitted to the bar in 1892 he at once entered upon the practice. Mr. Randolph is a member of the State bar association, and is a sergeant of Company A, Fourth regiment Virginia infantry. He was married November 14, 1895, to Laura, daughter of Hon. Rufus E. Lester, member of Congress from the First district of Georgia.

John Daniel Ransome, a native of Matthews county, Va., was, previous to the war, engaged in mercantile pursuits. He enlisted in the spring of 1861 in a volunteer company formed in the county of Isle of Wight, which subsequently was assigned to the Ninth regiment Virginia infantry as Company E. The regiment was at first officered by members of the faculty of the Virginia military institute, President Francis H. Smith being colonel, and was subsequently commanded in succession by Colonels DeLagnel, Godwin, Gilliam and Owens. Private Ransome served with his company near Smithfield until the abandonment of that position, and was then transferred to Petersburg and thence to Richmond. They went to the front on the peninsula in Armistead's brigade, and participated in the battle of Seven Pines, where all but seven of the company were killed or wounded. Private Ransome was slightly wounded in the hand. He was with his command in the battle of Second Manassas, and then marched into Maryland. At Haymarket, in the latter State, he was taken seriously ill and his comrades were compelled to leave him. Since then nothing has been learned of his fate, but it is supposed that he died from his illness, and found a resting place in an unknown grave. The widow of this Confederate hero, whose maiden name was Eleanor J. Thomas, is yet living at Hampton. Two of their five sons survive, Albert and Marion C., now associated in business. During the war, with their mother, they took refuge in Smithfield, from the storm of war which swept over their home. After the close of hostilities they made their home at Hampton, where at eighteen years of age, Albert T. Ransome (born at Fortress Monroe, August 27, 1852) began his mercantile career as a

clerk, and through industry and thrift was able in 1883 to embark in business in partnership with his brother. They were quite successful and continued in trade until 1896, when they disposed of their mercantile interests and opened a real estate office. Mr. Ransome has been active in the interests of the organization of the Sons of Veterans, and has held for two terms the rank of commander of Hampton camp, No. 11. He was married May 30, 1889, to Miss Sallie G. Moore, of Giles county, and they have five children: Albert Thomas, Mary Louise, John Taylor, Philip Gordon and Marion Whitwell.

Henry Rawles, a man who did his full duty in the Confederate cause, descended from the Friends who accompanied William Penn to Pennsylvania. Some of the descendants removed to Nansemond county, Va., and this subject was born at Suffolk and served in a Virginia regiment during the great war. Mr. Rawles was not alone in his devotion to the South, sixteen of his immediate relatives also making the sacrifice required, three of whom being killed in battle and several were wounded. As a worthy representative of so patriotic a family, we are pleased to mention Judge R. H. Rawles, son of the foregoing, who has been conspicuous in the public affairs of Nansemond county since the war. He was born at Suffolk in the year 1850, and was graduated in law at Richmond college in 1874. He then embarked in his professional career at his native city, and soon attained prominence as a lawyer and a leading position in public affairs. In 1879 he was elected to the State senate for a term of four years, during which he served as chairman of the committee on railroads and internal navigation. Before his term as a senator had expired he was elected judge of the county courts, and he held this office six years, then resigning it to return to the more congenial work of the active practice of law. In this he has been notably successful. He is popular socially and is prominent in various fraternal orders. In 1880 he was married to Mary Woodward, of Suffolk.

James Clayton Reed, pastor of the Memorial Methodist Episcopal church, South, of Lynchburg, and a veteran of the Bedford light artillery, was born in 1842 in Pasquotank county, N. C., where his father, Rev. Lemuel S. Reed, a Methodist minister, was then residing. In 1861 Mr. Reed, then about eighteen years of age, was a student in Randolph-Macon college, and at the close of the college session, he returned home and enlisted in July, 1861, in the Bedford light artillery, at that time stationed at Jamestown island. He served with this company as a private until the spring of 1862, when he was promoted sergeant, the rank he held during the remainder of the war. His service included participation in the artillery fight at Dam No. 1, the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, the Second Manassas campaign, and the battle of Sharpsburg, where, while engaged in the valuable service of S. D. Lee's battalion, he was so unfortunate as to lose his left hand. On account of this injury he did not return to the battery until July, 1864, after which he fought faithfully to the end, serving on the Howlett House line before Richmond, in the skirmish near Amelia Court House on the retreat and at Sailor's Creek, finally surrendering at Appomattox. The following is a testimonial from his captain, John Daniel Smith, now of Baltimore: "At Sailor's

Creek, on the last battlefield, Sergeant Reed, who had lost an arm at Sharpsburg, but had returned to duty in the field, distinguished himself by his energy in getting into action a recaptured gun. When a few days later we took position near Appomattox Court House, Sergeant Reed asked where the sick men (including his brother) should be put. I pointed to a clump of trees just in front of the unlimbered guns. He looked as if he thought I had lost my senses. General Alexander had just whispered to me that the army of Northern Virginia was about to surrender." After the close of hostilities he found employment for a time teaching singing, then attended the university of Virginia, after which he entered the ministry of the Methodist church, a work in which he has been permitted to effect great good and win the lively affection of his people. In December, 1869, he was married in Fluvanna county to Sallie M., daughter of Rev. William G. Clarke, who died in 1890, leaving him seven children. In 1892 he was married to Eliza J. Veale, and they have one son. The father of Mr. Reed served as a captain of the Home Guard in Brunswick county during the war of the Confederacy and his maternal grandfather White was a soldier of the war of 1812.

Captain E. Payson Reeve, late of Richmond, a gallant infantry soldier in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Hanover county July 17, 1832. He passed his youth in that county, receiving his education there and in the State of New York, until, in his twenty-ninth year he enlisted in April, 1861, as a private in the First regiment of Virginia infantry. He was immediately promoted to the dangerous position of color-bearer, and carried the flag at the action at Bull Run, July 19th, and the battle of Manassas, July 21st. He was then promoted second lieutenant of Company D, and served as such in the engagement at Munson's Hill, and until the reorganization in the spring of 1862, when he was promoted first lieutenant. In the fight at Williamsburg, which soon followed, he was severely wounded and left in the hospital when his command retreated, and fell into the hands of the enemy, by whom he was held as a prisoner of war until the following August. Then being exchanged he was made captain and participated in the second battle of Manassas, where he was again wounded so severely as to be disabled for two months. In December, 1862, he fought at Fredericksburg, and in 1863 he took part in the Pennsylvania campaign. At the battle of Gettysburg he fell for the third time with severe wounds. After his recovery he commanded his company at Drewry's Bluff, Howlett House, the second battle of Cold Harbor, Dinwiddie Court House, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. Overwhelmed by the Federal forces at the latter engagement he was captured and sent as a prisoner of war to the Old Capitol prison, and later to Johnson's island, Ohio, where he was held until June, 1865, long after hostilities had ceased. Then returning to Richmond he engaged in business, which he continued with success until his death, June 10, 1898. He occupied an influential position in civil affairs, and served the city for four years as alderman. He was a member of Pickett camp, Confederate Veterans, and maintained a warm comradeship with his old army associates.

Captain George Cornelius Reid, an active business man of Nor-

folk, Va., was born at that city September 18, 1839. At the age of seventeen he entered business life with his father, and was so occupied when the war of the Confederacy broke out. Thoroughly in sympathy with the South he sought to render the most effective aid to the cause for which he was fitted, and in 1862 was appointed to a clerkship in the quartermaster's department, a position for which his previous training peculiarly adapted him. His meritorious service in this department led to his promotion to the rank of captain in 1863. He was first stationed at Petersburg, and remained there until the latter part of 1864, when he was assigned to duty as quartermaster of a Georgia cavalry command, under Colonel Griffin, with which he served until the close of the war. On being paroled at Macon, Ga., he returned to Norfolk, and at once resumed business with his father, with whom he has since remained, being associated with him under the firm name of Charles Reid & Sons. He has other important business connections, and is a director of the Citizens' bank of Norfolk. In 1871 he was appointed vice consul at Norfolk for the government of Denmark. Mr. Reid was married in 1853 to Bessie C. Williams, daughter of Charles Williams, of Richmond. After many years of congenial companionship he suffered her loss by death, April 24, 1890. Charles Reid, father of the above, was born at Forfar, Scotland, April 4, 1800, the son of George and Elizabeth Taylor Reid, who brought him to the new world and settled at Norfolk, in August, 1801. Here he was reared and received his business training under the care of his uncle, Robert Soutter, one of the most successful of the early merchants of that city. When twenty-one years of age Mr. Reid embarked in business on his own account, and has now passed the seventy-seventh year of an honorable career as a merchant. The community with which he has passed this long period render him their universal esteem and respect. He has been honored on various occasions by the call to serve the city in the positions of magistrate, councilman, chief of the fire department, chairman of the board of harbor commissioners, and chairman of the school board, and in all these offices he has conscientiously served the public. He yet serves as a trustee of the First Presbyterian church, of which he is a devout and exemplary member, and as director of the Marine bank. On March 17, 1825, he was married to Lucretia, daughter of Cornelius Nash, of Norfolk, and they have reared eight children. Mr. Reid has lived to see the American republic, just recovering from the exhaustive struggle for independence, go through another encounter with the mother country, experience the brief but exciting war with Mexico, and survive the storm of the war of the Confederacy, that it may, reunited with a stronger patriotism, continue a growth and prosperity unexampled in the history of nations.

Philip Key Reily, who was among those citizens of Washington in the Confederate period who rendered devoted service to the Southern cause, was born in Washington in 1829, and was reared and educated at that city, where and in Maryland his family had long been residents. His grandfather, Major Reily, a native of Pennsylvania, was an officer of the Maryland line in the war of the Revolution. From 1856 until 1860 Mr. Reily was engaged in government surveys in the territory of the present State of Ne-

braska. As the crisis of 1861 approached he determined to cast his lot with the State of Virginia, and returning to Washington in April, 1861, he enlisted at Alexandria in the Washington volunteers, an organization which was mustered into the service of Virginia, the company of which he was a member becoming Company E, First regiment Virginia volunteer infantry. He served as a private in this regiment from May 1 to July 18, 1861, when he was wounded in the right thigh at the fight at Blackburn's Ford. The injury was a very serious one and incapacitated him for duty of any kind for about nine months, a period which was passed in the hospitals at Richmond and Farmville, Va. On recovering sufficiently for office work, he entered the office of Adjutant-General Melton, under Gen. Gustavus Smith, and a year later was transferred to the commissary-general's office under Maj. Seth B. French. He continued in the latter position until the evacuation of Richmond, when he joined in the movement to Lynchburg, where he was paroled. The journey back to Richmond he made on foot, and thence he returned to his Washington home a week later. Since that time he has resided at the capital city. From 1868 to 1888 he was one of the stenographers of the United States Senate. He maintains a membership in the Washington association of Confederate veterans. Joseph C. Reily, an elder brother of the above, resided in Maryland at the beginning of the war, and was also a member for a time of Company E, First Virginia regiment, and later was with the Marylanders under Jackson. While serving in Company E he was in the engagements at Blackburn's Ford and the First Manassas. While in the Maryland line he was in most of the engagements of his command until a short time before his death, which occurred in April, 1864. He was also a soldier in the war with Mexico.

Colonel Charles Richardson, a distinguished Confederate veteran residing at Fredericksburg, entered the service in April, 1861, with the commission of second lieutenant of artillery, regular army, and was assigned to duty with General Holmes, commanding the department of the Aquia. He took charge of and drilled the Fredericksburg artillery, and was then assigned to the duty of drilling Cocke's Fluvanna, Dance's Powhatan, and Coleman's Hanover batteries stationed near Richmond. Accompanying these batteries to Manassas he was promoted to adjutant of the corps of artillery, army of Northern Virginia, and just before the movement to the peninsula received the rank of major of artillery. The day following the battle of Williamsburg he was put in command of the battalion attached to the division of J. R. Jones, and in May, 1862, in command on the heights overlooking the Chickahominy river he covered the advance of Hill and Longstreet against Mechanicsville, receiving orders directly from General Lee. He moved with his battalion to the field of Second Manassas with D. H. Hill's division, and at Leesburg when the army was about to enter Maryland for the Sharpsburg campaign, he was put in command of all the artillery left behind, in all thirteen batteries, which with about 2,500 infantry, he moved to Winchester. In November, 1862, he was appointed chief of artillery of R. H. Anderson's division, his command including the Donaldsonville battery, Captain Maurrin; Norfolk Blues, Captain Grandy; Halifax battery, Lieu-

tenant Penick; and Huger's battery, Lieutenant Moore, and in this capacity he participated in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Salem Church. When the march into Pennsylvania began he was on leave of absence, but he immediately set out to rejoin his command and reaching the field on the second day of the battle of Gettysburg, he took command of six guns, two from the Donaldsonville and four from Huger's battery, and participated in the fighting of July 2d and 3d. On the 4th he was ordered with his guns to join General Imboden, and in this duty he aided in repelling the attack of Buford and Kilpatrick upon the convoy of the wagon trains at Williamsport. After the army had awaited for three days an attack from Meade's army near Hagerstown, he was put in command of all the artillery of A. P. Hill's corps and ordered to conduct it across the Potomac, and then taking position on the Virginia heights he covered the crossing of the rear guard. In March, 1864, he was promoted lieutenant-colonel. With his former command he participated in the campaign of May from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor. On May 10th, reinforced by Ellet's battery, he effectively co-operated with General Early in repelling the flank movement of General Hancock. During the siege of Petersburg he occupied for nine months the position known as Reeve's salient, confronted by Fort Sedgwick (Fort Hell), and flanked by Fort Mahone (Fort Damnation), a warm location, as the popular names of his immediate neighbors indicate. From this place he was withdrawn at midnight following March 29th, and stationed on the extreme right of the army, in a position "to be held at all hazards." There he was shot down, together with nine of the men of Huger's battery, and was carried from the field, the command devolving upon Major Grandy. The line was carried soon afterward, and the evacuation of Petersburg followed.

Sergeant James H. Richardson, of Portsmouth, a soldier of the Sixteenth Virginia regiment, Mahone's brigade, was born in Norfolk county in 1831, the son of John Richardson, a lumberman of that county, and a man of considerable prominence, who died in 1835. Mr. Richardson went to Portsmouth with his mother when he was seventeen years of age and thoroughly learned the trade of a ship and boat-builder, in which he was engaged until he entered the military service as a member of the Virginia Defenders, a Portsmouth company which was organized on the night of April 20, 1861, under Capt. Edward T. Blamire. When the United States forces abandoned the navy yard, Mr. Richardson was carried along as a prisoner to Old Point Comfort, but was released on the following morning, when he made his way back to Portsmouth from Hampton in an oyster boat. Then joining the company he served at Tanner's Creek until May, 1862, and subsequently, attached to Mahone's brigade, served in the Seven Days' campaign, especially at Malvern Hill. Afterward he was stationed successively at Fallen Creek, Richmond and Gordonsville, and served on the Rapidan, after which he participated in the battles of Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap and Sharpsburg, and closed the year by fighting at Fredericksburg. After spending the winter in camp at Petersburg, he moved to Chancellorsville in the spring, and thence marching into Pennsylvania, did his part

in the great battle of Gettysburg, where he was wounded. In 1864 he participated in the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, New Market, Second Cold Harbor, shared the fighting of Mahone's brigade on the Petersburg lines, including the battle of the Crater, and took part in the engagement at Winchester. On his return from the valley he had the misfortune to suffer the breaking of his leg in a friendly trial of strength with a comrade, and being disabled, was granted a furlough, when he joined his people, who had taken refuge in Isle of Wight county. At the close of hostilities he returned to Portsmouth, and in 1867 he was appointed street inspector of the city, but under the military government was deposed from office on account of his refusing to take the ironclad oath. Notwithstanding this treatment he still found avenues of industry open, and some years later resumed the work to which he was accustomed, in the navy yards, where he has since been engaged.

John W. Richardson, commander of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, Hampton, Va., was born in Northampton county April 29, 1839, the son of Edward J. and Margaret (Evans) Richardson, whose parents have resided for several generations on the eastern shore of Maryland. During his infancy his parents removed to Baltimore, where he was reared and educated and apprenticed to the carpenter's craft. At Baltimore and at Hampton, where they removed in 1859, he worked with his father, a prominent contractor and builder, until April, 1861, when he entered the Confederate service. He was first a member of the Washington artillery, a company of forty men organized at Hampton, but this organization being disbanded in June on account of its small numbers, and the men assigned to the Richmond Howitzers and Carter's battery, his subsequent service was rendered with the latter organization, also known as the King William artillery. With this command he took part in the battle of Seven Pines, and the subsequent fighting during Lee's advance, up to Malvern Hill, where the severe previous service of the battery prevented its participation. When the army moved northward he was left with his battery for the protection of Richmond, and was soon afterward compelled by sickness to enter the hospital. When about to rejoin his battery the surgeon in charge prevailed upon him to accept service as a steward in the hospital camp at Howard's Grove, for which he was fitted on account of having had the small-pox in childhood. He remained upon this important and valuable service until after the battle of Gettysburg, when he made such an imperative demand to be assigned to duty in the field that he was permitted to rejoin his battery at Orange Court House. He then took part in the battle of Mine Run in the fall of 1863, and the fighting in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania until May 12, 1864, when he was among the many Confederates captured by Hancock at the "bloody angle." From that date until two months after Appomattox he was held as a prisoner of war, at Fort Delaware. From 1867 to 1893, when he turned over the business to his son, he was a successful merchant at Hampton, and as a citizen he has been active and influential. He has served as justice of the peace, and member of school board, was an active promoter of the incorporation of his town in 1887, served on the first town

council, and subsequently held the office of mayor two years. He has served more than four years as commander of his camp. Since his retirement from trade he has served as teller of the bank of Hampton, of which he is a director, and he is connected with the Phoebus loan and trust company. He was married in 1868 to Annie, daughter of Hon. Samuel W. Wood, who served in the Virginia legislature and was for many years president of the Virginia pilot association. She died in 1874, and in 1876 he married Emma V., daughter of Robert Wood, a well-known pilot. Mr. Richardson has five children living.

R. E. Riddick, M. D., a prominent physician of Nansemond county, Va., served in his youth as a Confederate soldier, and shared the honorable record of Pickett's brigade and division until the winter of 1863. He was born in Nansemond county in 1843, the son of Edward C. Riddick, a farmer and patriotic citizen of that county. At the outbreak of the war he was a student at Graham college, but promptly left his studies to become a private in Company F of the Third Virginia infantry regiment, which until March, 1862, was stationed at Camp Pemberton, near Smithfield. The regiment was then transferred to the forces under Magruder at Yorktown, and fought against McClellan at Dam No. 2. In these operations and the following battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Savage Station and Frayser's Farm, Private Riddick took part with his command, and was slightly wounded. He fought at Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, took part in the Suffolk campaign, and at Gettysburg was one of the participants in the famous assault of Pickett's division upon Cemetery ridge. In the spring of 1864 he was detailed in the medical department, and he served in various hospitals as an assistant to the surgeons until later in the year, when being at home on furlough he was betrayed, and being taken prisoner, was confined at Point Lookout until a short time before the surrender of Lee's army. With the restoration of peace he continued his studies for the medical profession at the university of Virginia and the Baltimore medical college, receiving the degree of doctor of medicine at the latter institution in 1869. Since then he has been engaged in the practice in Nansemond county and North Carolina, since 1888 making his home at Whaleyville, Va. He has met with deserved success in his profession and is popular both professionally and socially. In 1874 he was married to Miss Alice O. Brinkley, and they have one son, E. Floyd.

Colonel Stark Armistead Righton, a gallant North Carolinian, took an active part in the work of putting the military strength of that State in the field in 1861. He organized a company from Chowan, and, accompanying it to Virginia, was taken prisoner and confined at Fort Norfolk. After suffering indescribable hardships he became paralyzed and was then exchanged and honorably discharged. He was a kinsman of the family of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. His wife, Susan Augusta Moore, was a granddaughter of Charles Moore, who represented Perquimans county in the provincial congress which met at Halifax, N. C., April 4, 1776. Her father, Augustus Moore, judge of the superior court in 1848, married Susan Jordan Armistead, and had several children who

served in the Confederate ranks. William Armistead Moore, the eldest, was upon the staff of Gen. D. H. Hill around Richmond, served as courier for Gen. R. E. Lee during the Seven Days' campaign, and afterward raised a company at Chowan. After incurring disability in the service, he received a commission to carry on the manufacture of salt at Wilmington. He became judge of the superior court in 1871. Augustus Minton Moore volunteered in the Confederate service, was a member of Company A, First regiment, later was transferred to artillery and served until he surrendered at Greensboro. John Armistead and Alfred, two younger sons, entered the service at the ages of twelve and fourteen years, with the Rangers organized for home protection, and engaged in perilous service within the enemy's lines. A daughter, Henrietta, married Stark Armistead Sutton, who raised a company from Bertie, and served gallantly until mortally wounded at Spottsylvania Court House, dying in the hands of the enemy. Mary Elizabeth had the experience of being taken prisoner by the enemy and held until she escaped by jumping her horse over a stooping soldier, this occurring in Chowan county, N. C., in 1863. Marie Armistead Moore Righton, daughter and only child of Stark Armistead Righton, adopted by Judge William Armistead Moore, cherishes warmly the memories of the military service of her family. She was married at Edenton, N. C., to Patrick Matthew, born in Scotland in 1853, a graduate in civil engineering of the university of Edinborough, a grandson of Patrick Matthew, forerunner of Darwin in the announcement of the celebrated biological theory which bears the name of the latter, and a lineal descendant of Admiral David Duncan, the hero of Camperdown. Mr. Matthew resided in Greenville and Edenton, N. C., from 1885 to 1893, and since then has followed his profession at Norfolk, Va.

Captain James Roach, of Fredericksburg, a gallant soldier of the Sixth Virginia cavalry, was born in Orange county, Va., June 12, 1834. His ancestors were farmers of that county, where his father, who also attained the dignity of magistrate, married Mildred, daughter of Francis Jones. Capt. James Roach, the only son, was reared and educated in his native county, and for two years previous to 1861 served as deputy sheriff. He enlisted as a private in Company I of the Sixth Virginia cavalry in April, 1861, and manifested from the first such soldierly ability that he was speedily promoted corporal, then sergeant, second lieutenant, and finally captain in May, 1863. During the winter and spring of 1863-64 he had charge of the commissary department of his regiment. He participated in twenty-three engagements with the gallant Sixth, in the brigades of Generals Munford and W. E. Jones, prominent among which were the famous battles of Second Manassas, Cedar Mountain, Cross Keys and Brandy Station. In the spring of 1864, having been elected sheriff of Orange county, he resigned to accept the duties of this office, unusually important and active at that period, and he continued to hold the office until 1869. Subsequently he engaged in business two years at Washington, D. C., since when, with the exception of one year in Orange county, he has been in business at Fredericksburg, with his residence on the opposite bank of the Rappahannock, in Stafford county. He has busied himself with various lines of business as well as farming and has been

prosperous in his enterprises. He has served for several years as United States commissioner. He has three sons: Lindsay G., James T., of the United States navy, and Ellis H., also five daughters: Agnes P., Clara V., wife of James T. Layton; Lizzie, Rosa E. and Lillian M.

Robert Richford Roberts, a wholesale merchant at Richmond, was born in Charlotte county, April 26, 1843. His life before the war was uneventful, as he entered the service at the age of seventeen years. He became a member of the Third company of Richmond Howitzers, as a private, and served thereafter in nearly all the engagements in which his command participated until disabled by wounds. In the list of fights in which he did duty are Illysus Mill, Gaines' Mill, the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Chancellorsville, Mine Run, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Second Cold Harbor, New Market Heights, and a series of fights on the Darbytown road, about ten miles east of Richmond, in October, 1864, where he was badly wounded, and incapacitated for further service in the field. He lay for a long time in Chimborazo hospital, but in March, 1865, applied for such duty as could be assigned to him, and was detailed to act as collector of tax-in-kind. He was occupied in this duty when the army of Northern Virginia laid down its arms, and immediately made his way to Johnston's army in North Carolina and reported for duty. But being advised to return to his home he did so, and took up the work of a farmer in Charlotte county. Subsequently he was engaged in merchandise for three years and then, in 1872, removed to Richmond, and embarked in his present trade, that of a wholesale shoe merchant. In this occupation he has been notably prosperous, and he has attained a high standing at Richmond as a business man and as an enterprising and responsible citizen. He maintains a membership in the Robert E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and the Howitzer association.

Lieutenant Frank S. Robertson, now engaged in farming near Abingdon, Va., was born at Richmond, January 3, 1841. At the time of the crisis in the affairs of the State in the spring of 1861, he was a student in the university of Virginia, and orderly-sergeant of the company in that institution known as the "Sons of Liberty." With this organization he went to Harper's Ferry as soon as the decision of the Virginia convention was known and took part in the occupation of that post. Subsequently the company was disbanded, and on reaching home Robertson enlisted as first lieutenant in Company I, Forty-eighth Virginia infantry, with which he served in the West Virginia campaign of Gen. R. E. Lee. Amid the hardships and exposure of mountain warfare many of the soldiers were disabled, and he was among those who suffered from typhoid fever. After recruiting his health at home he returned to the regiment in January, 1862, and took part in the no less arduous Romney campaign under Stonewall Jackson and Loring. This wrecked his enfeebled health and he was sent to Richmond, and later honorably discharged. While preparing to go to Europe he was offered appointment as second lieutenant of engineers. This he accepted, and as assistant engineer on the staff of General Stuart he served until the death of his famous chief, and after that to the end of the war,

as engineer officer in W. H. F. Lee's division. He is commended in the reports of General Stuart for ability and devotion. Among the battles in which Lieutenant Robertson participated were Chancellorsville, Brandy Station, Gettysburg, Malvern Hill, Petersburg, the Cattle Raid, Five Forks, and the fighting of the last retreat. He entered the military service on April 16, 1861, and returned home on April 17, 1865, four years and a day being devoted to the cause of the Confederacy. It is an interesting fact that Lieutenant Robertson is of the most ancient lineage in Virginia, being descended from the marriage of the Princess Pocahontas to John Rolfe. A valuable history of Pocahontas and her descendants has been prepared by his father.

Leigh Robinson, a veteran of the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Richmond, Va., February 26, 1840. He was reared at that city until his eighteenth year, when he removed with his family to Washington, D. C. His education was completed at the university of Virginia, where he was enrolled as a student at the time of the beginning of the war of 1861-65. In the winter of 1862 he entered the service of his native State and of the Confederacy as a private in the Second Howitzers, of Richmond. With this famous command and the First Howitzers, to which he was transferred in March, 1864, he served throughout the remainder of the war. His record embraces service with the artillery at Yorktown, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles of the Peninsular campaign, after which he was disabled by illness until after the Northern campaign and the battle of Sharpsburg. Re-joining the army on its return to Virginia he fought at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and in 1863 participated in the Pennsylvania campaign and the second and third days' battles at Gettysburg, and at Mine Run in Virginia. In 1864 he fought through the Wilderness and Spottsylvania battles, and thence to the James river, and after that on the Petersburg lines, supporting Pickett's division, near Port Walthall, at the Dunn house. On the retreat he participated in his last engagement—against the enemy's cavalry—on the day before the surrender at Appomattox. In May he was paroled at Burk's Station, Va., and not long afterward he made his home at the city of Washington, where he has since resided. Since 1872 he has been engaged in the practice of law, and has attained a marked degree of success in that profession.

William Lavaille Robinson, M. D., a distinguished physician of Danville, Va., was born in Cumberland county, February 14, 1846, the son of Dr. Thomas Lavaille Robinson, a native of Chesterfield county. The latter, his father, and two brothers, were members of the medical profession. The mother of Dr. Robinson was Martha Isbell, a native of Cumberland county. He entered the university of Virginia in the fall of 1862, but soon embraced an opportunity to leave his books, and enlisted in November as a private in Company G of the Third Virginia cavalry. With this command he participated in the battles of Stevensburg, Robison River, Brandy Station, Second Manassas, Culpeper Court House, Buckland, Warrenton, Hawe's Shop, Spottsylvania Court House, and many other cavalry engagements. Fortunately he was never wounded, though in the hot fight at Stevensburg his hat brim was carried away by a piece of shell, his bridle rein cut in two, and his blanket riddled. At Mit-

chell's Shop, May 9, 1864, he was captured, and during the next three months he was confined at Point Lookout. Here, at the time of Early's raid on Washington, a plan was formed under the leadership of Eddy, a Texan, to free the 14,000 prisoners and co-operate with Early in the capture of Washington. Dr. Robinson was one of the twenty men selected by Eddy, each to select twenty more, to form a party to attack the guard; but the plan was betrayed by some one and the guard increased so that their hopes were crushed. His next place of confinement was Elmira, N. Y., whence he escaped by bribing a guard with the proceeds of a pail of tobacco sent him from Virginia, to put his name among those who on account of residence in neutral States, or wounds, were given parole. Putting his arm in a sling, he managed to pass, and finally reached Richmond in time to rejoin his regiment and surrender at Appomattox. In 1867 he was graduated in medicine at the university of Virginia, and at once began the practice at Danville, subsequently taking post-graduate courses at the college of physicians and surgeons, Baltimore and in New York. As a general practitioner as well as a specialist in surgery and gynecology he is well known throughout the State. He is an ex-president of the State and local medical societies, has a membership in various national and general professional organizations, and is surgeon of the Atlantic & Danville, and consulting surgeon of the Southern railroad. In 1872 he was married to Juliet L. Robinson, who died in 1895, leaving him five children.

Lieutenant William P. Robinson, of Danville, Va., a gallant soldier of the Confederacy, was born in Chesterfield county, June 5, 1842, the son of William and Amanda A. (Bowles) Robinson. As a student in the Virginia military institute during the exciting period following the election of President Lincoln, he was an earnest advocate of Virginian independence, and as soon as he was graduated in 1861, he entered the military service. For the first year he was stationed at Richmond as a drillmaster, and he then entered the Ringgold battery, of Danville, with which he served in the rank of first lieutenant, until the end. Among the engagements in which he participated were the fight at Zollicoffer, Tenn., the battle of Cloyd's Mountain, May, 1864, in which he commanded one gun of the battery and withdrew it safely from the field, and the long continued fighting on the Petersburg lines. At the battle of the Crater he was in command of two guns and took a conspicuous part in the defeat of the Federal onset. At Appomattox he was in command of his battery on duty as a company of infantry, and participated in the fighting on the night before the surrender. Since those days Lieutenant Robinson has been a resident of Danville and prominent as a business man. He has served as a magistrate and councilman, and is an honored member of Cabell-Graves camp. October 4, 1871, he was married to Blanche R. Sydnor, of Nottoway county, and they have four sons, each of whom has been given a military education.

Theodore F. Rogers, of Norfolk, prominent in the real estate business of that city, was born within its limits on July 4, 1844, the son of John Randolph and Mary Ann Rogers. At the outbreak of the war in 1861 he was a student in the Norfolk military academy, where he had been enrolled for three years. He was consequently

well fitted for capable service in the army and was eager to enlist as soon as the war seemed inevitable. On the 19th of April, 1861, he became a member of a company called the Young Guards, and remained with that organization until just before the evacuation of Norfolk, when he joined the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues. With this gallant command, forming subsequently a part of Richardson's battalion, attached to the Third army corps of the army of Northern Virginia, he participated in all its battles and campaigns. His first duties were in the land batteries in connection with the famous naval duel between the Monitor and the Virginia or Merrimac. During the bloody battle of Spottsylvania he received a severe wound from which he suffered for thirty-four years, finally being compelled, February 9, 1898, to have his leg amputated above the knee joint, an operation which was entirely successful and has resulted in the marked improvement of his health. When the armies of the Confederacy were disbanded he returned to civil life, practically penniless, but was so fortunate as to find employment in a hardware establishment at Norfolk, where beginning for very slight compensation he won by faithful application a partnership at the end of twelve months. He continued in this business until 1884, since which date he has been engaged in dealing in real estate, a business in which he has met with a marked degree of success. He has won a high standing in the community and is generally regarded as among the city's most enterprising and valuable citizens. As president of the Boys' home and vice-president of the chamber of commerce he has rendered highly appreciated services. He is a member of Freemason street Baptist church, is a Mason of the thirty-second degree and Knight Templar, and maintains a membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans. Mr. Rogers was married May 30, 1867, to Adelaide, daughter of Seth March, formerly engaged in the manufacture of agricultural implements at Norfolk, and their home has been blessed by children, of whom four survive.

Henry C. Roper, of Petersburg, late of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry, is a native of the city where he now resides, and prior to the war was educated at the Petersburg classical institute. Leaving school in 1862, he enlisted in the Petersburg company of cavalry which was assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry regiment, and subsequently participated in all the campaigns and battles of this regiment and W. H. F. Lee's brigade in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, until he was captured in the fight at Dunn's Farm. From that time until the close of the war he was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout, Md. He volunteered as a private, and at the close of his service was in the rank of second sergeant, having refused further promotion. Emmet Roper, a brother, who previous to 1861 had been graduated with the first honors of his class at Hampden-Sidney college, entered the Confederate service at the outbreak of the war and was on duty in the medical department until the close. After the war Mr. Roper was in the tobacco and wholesale grocery business with his father, until the death of the latter, and since then he has given his attention solely to the tobacco trade, exporting extensively to Europe and Africa.

George Ross, M. D., now a distinguished physician and surgeon of Richmond, Va., was among the earliest Virginia volunteers in 1861, and during the struggle which followed held various important positions in the medical department of the army of Northern Virginia. Dr. Ross was born in Culpeper county in 1838. He was graduated at the Virginia military institute July 4, 1859, and then pursued a medical course at the university of Virginia, which conferred upon him the degree of M. D. July 4, 1861. Before that date, however, he had left the university to take part in that outburst of the State's military spirit which was coincident with the ordinance of secession. On the day of that act of the convention, April 17th, he went to Harper's Ferry as first lieutenant of the Southern Guards, a rare body of spirited university students. Two weeks later the company was ordered back to the university by Governor Letcher, and he then received his professional degree, and was made superintendent and commandant of the military school which was established at the university about July 1st by the board of visitors. He served in this capacity about four months, also as acting assistant surgeon of the hospital at Charlottesville, where many of the wounded were brought from the field of Manassas. In November following he organized a battalion of artillery, but was disappointed on entering this service by the lack of guns with which to equip his command. He then accepted a commission as assistant surgeon, and was assigned to the Banner hospital at Richmond. Just before the battle of Seven Pines, and in preparation for that conflict, he was detailed to organize Crew's factory hospital, where with three hundred beds and seven assistants he cared for the wounded of the succeeding campaign. Being assigned in the fall of 1862 to Chimborazo hospital, he served there until just before the battle of Gettysburg, when he was ordered to the front. He met the army on the return at Front Royal, and was temporarily placed in charge of the reserve hospital corps of the Third army corps. Subsequently being assigned to the staff of Gen. A. P. Hill, as associate medical director of the Third army corps, he served in that capacity during the battle at Bristoe Station, and skirmishes at Brandy Station, in the campaign around Mine Run, during the withdrawal of the army from the Rappahannock to the Rapidan. In February, 1864, he resigned this position, and later at the request of Governor Letcher joined the little Confederate army in the Valley campaign of May, 1864, as surgeon of the battalion of cadets from the Virginia military institute, and was in the battles of Lynchburg and New Market, where the cadets fought with such gallantry and heavy loss. During the siege of Richmond and Petersburg he served until the evacuation, when he attempted to join the army in North Carolina, but returned from Lexington and then made his home at Richmond without the formality of a parole. Since that time he has practiced his profession with great success and with many honorable evidences of appreciation. From 1868 to 1878 he was engaged as the lecturer on anatomy and surgery in the summer school of the medical college of Virginia; filled the chair of obstetrics for several years in the university college of medicine at Richmond, of which he is emeritus professor in the present faculty; was member of the first State health board by appointment of Governor Walker; was chief surgeon

and organizer of the surgical department of the Richmond & Danville railroad company from 1886 to 1896, and since then consulting surgeon of the Southern railroad company; and has been for fifteen years the district surgeon for the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company. He has also served for some time as medical examiner for various insurance organizations, the Penn Mutual of Philadelphia, the Fidelity of Philadelphia, the Brooklyn of New York, and the R. O. & E. association of Indianapolis. He is connected with several professional organizations, by which he has been honored in various ways—is vice-president of the National association of railway surgeons, member of the Southern gynecological society, of the Virginia State medical society, of the Richmond surgical and medical society and honorary fellow of the Abingdon medical society. He is also active and useful in social and religious fields, and since 1889 has been a vestryman of the St. Paul's Episcopal church of Richmond.

Colonel J. D. H. Ross, a prominent citizen of Rockbridge county, was born in Culpeper county in 1840. At the age of sixteen he entered the Virginia military institute, where he was graduated in 1859, and a year later appointed assistant professor of mathematics and of the Latin and French languages. He participated in the earliest operations coincident with the passage of the ordinance of secession of Virginia, going to Harper's Ferry in charge of powder from the Lexington armory, and remained at the front several months. He was then detailed to return to the institute and instruct some officers of the provisional army who had received appointments without previous military training. In this duty he continued until the close of the school in July, 1861, when he was commissioned lieutenant in the engineer corps by Governor Letcher, and about July 21st was assigned to the staff of General Loring, then operating in western Virginia. In the fall of 1861 he was appointed by Governor Letcher without his application, as major of the Fifty-second regiment of Virginia infantry, of which he was subsequently (in 1862) promoted lieutenant-colonel. During most of the time which followed during his period of service he was in command of the regiment. He participated in the battles of Greenbrier River and Allegheny Mountain, W. Va., McDowell, Winchester, Front Royal and Cross Keys, of Jackson's Valley campaign, and at the last named battle received two severe wounds which rendered him an invalid for four months. During his convalescence he served as enrolling officer, with headquarters at Lexington and Staunton, until April 21, 1863, when he returned to the service and fought at Second Fredericksburg, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, and the three days of battle at Gettysburg. In the fall of 1864 the wounds received at Cross Keys compelled him to resign and his subsequent service was rendered in the Virginia military institute which had been removed to Richmond. After the evacuation he returned to Lexington, studied law and was admitted to the bar. Since then he has given his attention to farming on an extensive scale in Rockbridge county. At one time he managed an estate of three thousand acres. On April 7, 1862, he was married to Agnes, daughter of the late Samuel McDowell Reid, an adjutant of the war of 1812, who, with his father, Andrew Reid,

held for eighty years the office of clerk of the courts of Rockbridge county. William A. Ross, brother of the foregoing, entered the service with the students of the university of Virginia in April, 1861, was afterward promoted lieutenant in the Fifty-second regiment, and gave his life for the cause near Hanover Court House in the spring of 1863.

William G. Rouse, of Smithfield, Va., a veteran of the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in King and Queen county November 6, 1834, the son of Mordecai and Maria S. (Rowe) Rouse. His father was a native of Caroline county, as was also his grandfather, William Rouse, and both were farmers by occupation. The father, who was born in the closing years of the eighteenth century, served in the war of 1812. By his marriage to the daughter of Handsford Rowe of King and Queen county, he had three sons and three daughters. All of the sons served in the Confederate army, Mordecai B. as a sergeant in a company of heavy artillery from New Kent county until his capture at Sailor's Creek, after which he was imprisoned at Point Lookout until June, 1865; and John H., as a corporal in the same company, suffering capture and imprisonment in the same manner. The first died in 1884, the second on August 8, 1897. Both were brave and faithful soldiers and during four years of arduous service proved their loyalty to the cause of Virginia. William G. Rouse served a five years' apprenticeship as a cabinet maker, and then, on October 23, 1856, made his home at Smithfield, where he has ever since been engaged in the business of a cabinet-maker and undertaker, with much success, except during the period of his war service. He enlisted April 29, 1861, as a sergeant in the Old Dominion Light Artillery Blues, which was subsequently transferred to the heavy artillery service and attached to the Nineteenth Virginia battalion, commanded by J. Wiley Atkinson. He served with this command throughout the four years' war, principally stationed on the line of defenses of Richmond. At the time of the battle of Sailor's Creek he escaped the capture which befell his command by being absent on detail, and a few days later he surrendered with General Lee at Appomattox. Just before the war he was married, November 18, 1860, to Martha A. Archer, of Smithfield, who died October 5, 1876. Five children are living: Eva F., wife of Jackson Noel; Ruth E., wife of C. F. Nelms; William E., in business at Newport News; Sarah E., wife of Claude Hutchins; and Mattie V., wife of W. W. Joyner. November 28, 1895, Mr. Rouse was married to Eugenia (Whitley) Stephenson. William E. Rouse, son of the foregoing, born at Smithfield, Va., July 26, 1869, was engaged in business with his father in his youth, and after thoroughly equipping himself for his profession by study at Richmond, founded an establishment at Newport News, which is now under his very successful supervision. He is regarded as one of the honorable and reliable business men of the city, is popular socially, and is prominent in the Methodist church as a member of the official board. In 1894 he was married to Edna S. Hudgins, formerly of Yorktown, and they have one child, Dorothy.

Lieutenant Charles F. Russell, M. D., of Herndon, Va., a distinguished veteran of the Seventh Virginia cavalry, was born in

Jefferson county, Va., August 13, 1841. In his youth he was sent to the Episcopal high school in Fairfax county for his academic education and then, being destined for the medical profession, entered the university of Maryland at Baltimore, where he was a student at the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy. Promptly returning to enter the service of his State, he enlisted on April 18, 1861, in Company G of the Seventh Virginia cavalry, commanded by Col. Turner Ashby. He served as a private about six months, when he received his first promotion for meritorious conduct. He continued to rise through the various grades until at the close of the war he was first lieutenant. With this gallant command he served throughout the war, participating with honor in many engagements, great and small. His record embraces sixty-one battles, many of them of the most important character, and notable for desperate fighting. In the list are: McDowell, Cross Keys, Port Republic, Harrisonburg, Harper's Ferry, Second Manassas, Hagerstown, Sharpsburg, Groveton, Chantilly, Winchester, Aldie, Gettysburg, Kernstown, Cedar Creek, Front Royal, Tom's Brook, Strasburg and Fisher's Hill, Upperville, Bristoe Station, Brandy Station, Beverly Ford, Jeffersonton, Auburn, White Sulphur Springs, Cedar Mountain, Waterloo Bridge, Orange Court House, Rapidan Station, Mine Run, Gordonsville, Trevilian's, Spotsylvania Court House, the Wilderness, Todd's Tavern, Beaver Dam Station, North Anna River, Hanover and Ashland, Hawe's Shop, Cold Harbor, defense of Petersburg, Reams' Station, Stony Creek, Farmville, High Bridge, Harper's Ferry, September 2, 1862, Blackburn's Ford, Shepardstown, Patterson's Creek, Bath, Hanging Rock, Moorefield, Beverly. During this arduous service he was four times wounded, once severely at Gettysburg, and was captured three times, twice making his escape. After his capture in December, 1862, he was confined at Fort McHenry until April, 1863, when by exchange he was enabled to rejoin his command, with which he served until the surrender of the army. Returning then to his home county, he resumed his professional studies at Baltimore in the following year, and was graduated March 11, 1867. In September following he embarked in the practice at Waterford, Va., and five years later removed to Sharpsburg, Md., where he resided nineteen years. Since 1893 he has been engaged with much success in the medical practice at Herndon. He is a member of Marr camp, Confederate Veterans, also of the Knights of Pythias and Masonic orders. May 10, 1870, he was married to Margaret A. Grimes, of Carroll county, Md., and they have three children living.

Bushrod Rust, of Roanoke, Va., distinguished as an educator since the war period, has a worthy record as a gallant soldier of the Twelfth Virginia cavalry. He enlisted early in the war as a private in Company I of this command, first led by Col. A. W. Harman and Lieut.-Col. T. B. Massie, and served until the close of hostilities, sharing in the exploits of the troopers under the heroic Ashby in the valley with Stonewall Jackson; and the cavalry fights of the Second Manassas campaign; fighting under J. E. B. Stuart in the famous cavalry battle of Brandy Station, June, 1863, in which the Twelfth lost fifty-three men, including Colonel Harman wounded; and sharing in the famous operations of the

cavalry under Stuart, Hampton and the Lees in 1864, including the battles of Jack's Shop and Trevilian, and the raid through the Federal lines before Petersburg, capturing 2,500 beef cattle, which were brought in safety to the Confederate army. The Twelfth was one of the regiments of the famous Laurel brigade, led by Ashby, Jones and Rosser, and Professor Rust was one of the men who made its fame. Lieutenant-Colonel Massie, writing of him, says: "It affords me pleasure to state what I know of so gallant a soldier as Prof. Bushrod Rust. . . . He was always conspicuously brave and discharged all the duties of a soldier faithfully."

Josiah Ryland, second auditor of the State of Virginia, was born in King and Queen county in 1838. He was reared in his native county and resided there before and after the war until 1884, when he made his home at Richmond and was appointed to a clerkship in the office of the auditor of State. In June, 1892, he was appointed to the office of second auditor, a position in which he has rendered highly satisfactory service. Mr. Ryland was graduated at the Virginia military institute, at Lexington, in 1859, in a class which included Dr. George Ross, now of Richmond, Col. John Lyell, Col. Charles Green, Colonel Wingfield, Col. W. B. Tabb, Colonel Ham, Maj. G. B. Cook, of General Lee's staff, and Col. T. B. Williams. Before the passage of the ordinance of secession Mr. Ryland raised a company in King William county, which was organized and drilled as an artillery company, but on account of the scarcity of guns was sent to Yorktown and placed in charge of a battery at Gloucester point. With this command Mr. Ryland held the rank of first lieutenant, having refused the captaincy in favor of J. R. Bagby, an older man. He acted as drill officer for this company and others for about six months. At the reorganization in 1862, he resigned his rank and enlisted as a private in Lee's Rangers, of Company H of the Ninth Virginia cavalry, with which he served until the close of the war. He participated in the battles of Gaines' Mill, Brandy Station and others, and in the retreat from Richmond and the battle of Appomattox. He was captured at Middleburg, Va., in November, 1862, and was carried to the Old Capitol prison, but was exchanged about a week later. He is a member of both the R. E. Lee and George E. Pickett camps at Richmond.

Major William C. Sanders, of Wytheville, an officer of the Confederate service, was honorably identified with the service of Wythe county soldiers during the war. He was born in that county June 15, 1841, and entered the service in the spring of 1861, as a private in the Wythe Grays, which was assigned to the Fourth infantry regiment, Stonewall brigade. Later he became second lieutenant of a new volunteer company known as the Wythe Minute Men, which was enrolled as Company D, Forty-fifth Virginia regiment, Col. Harry Heth commanding. With this regiment he served in northwest Virginia during 1861. He served as captain of Company D from the reorganization in 1862 until the spring of 1864, when he was promoted to major of the regiment. In this rank he served during the Shenandoah Valley campaign of General Early until in the battle of Piedmont he received a gunshot wound which narrowly missed his heart. While in hospital at Montgomery, White Sulphur Springs, he was cap-

tured by Federal raiders and paroled. Since the close of the war he has been engaged in agriculture in Wythe county. In 1895 he was elected county treasurer.

Colonel Alexander Savage, of Nansemond county, Va., a gallant cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in the county where he now resides in the year 1831, the son of John Savage, a prosperous farmer. Prior to the war he was engaged in the naval stores trade in North and South Carolina. He entered the military service in April, 1861, as orderly-sergeant of a Nansemond cavalry company which was assigned as Company I to the Thirteenth regiment, Virginia cavalry, and manifesting soldierly ability that warranted unusual promotion, he became captain in 1862. During the last year of the war he commanded his regiment with the rank of colonel. Mr. Savage was with his regiment under the command of Colonel (afterward General) Chambliss in the vicinity of Norfolk during the first year of the war, and later in operations about Richmond, and in North Carolina during the Maryland campaign. Still later in 1862 the regiment was on duty between Warrenton and Fredericksburg, and afterward joined the cavalry command of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, in the brigade of W. H. F. Lee, which, during the Gettysburg campaign was under the command of Colonel Chambliss. Captain Savage took part in Stuart's movement around the Federal army and the fierce cavalry fight on the field of Gettysburg. Subsequently he was identified with the operations of his command through the fall of 1863, the fighting of 1864 from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, and the engagements in the defense of Petersburg and Richmond until March 31, 1865, when in a fight with Sheridan's cavalry at Chamberlain's Creek, he was struck by a minie ball in the knee joint, receiving a wound which made it necessary to amputate his leg. The evacuation of Richmond immediately followed while he was in the field hospital, and when he was again able to move about, in June, 1865, the war was ended. After this he engaged in the commission business at Norfolk until 1894, when he retired to his beautiful country home in Nansemond county. He was a gallant soldier, was in every engagement of his command and took pride in sharing with his men all the hardships and dangers of war. Colonel Savage has five children by his first wife, Miss Sarah Lee, daughter of John R. Lee, of Virginia; and in 1894 he was married to a daughter of Dr. Lewis, of Norfolk.

William Elmore Savage, a popular citizen of Norfolk, who rendered service to the Confederacy during his boyhood, was born in Northampton county in 1848. His father, Peter B. Savage, a descendant of one of the old families of the State, and a son of Calvin Savage, a soldier of the war of 1812, was a prominent business man of Norfolk until his death in 1869. The wife of the latter was Jane Read, daughter of Dr. Calvin Read, of Northampton county, and a descendant of a family which has long been identified with the Old Dominion. Luther Read, an uncle of Mr. Savage, represented his county in the Virginia legislature for a considerable period. W. E. Savage was reared at Norfolk from the age of two years, and being thirteen years old when the war broke out, was not permitted to enlist. But he took a lively interest in the military organization, and was assigned to duty as dispatch bearer between Colonel Blanchard and General Huger,

who was in command in that district. He continued in this service until the evacuation in May, 1862, when he was not allowed to accompany the troops. Subsequently he managed to "run the blockade" several times, and communicate with the Confederate forces. At the age of nineteen he became assistant to the builder of the street railroad of Norfolk, and then became superintendent of the system. After an efficient service of eighteen years in this capacity he retired and spent three years in travel. Since 1895 he has acted as agent of the Ocean View railroad. He has taken a prominent part in politics and has served as delegate in many Democratic State conventions, but has persistently declined official honors.

Charles Schroeder, now a prosperous merchant of Norfolk, Va., has a record in connection with the Confederate service replete with exciting adventures, of which only a brief but suggestive statement may here be made. Born at Portsmouth January 22, 1836, he entered the engineer corps of the United States navy in 1853, and had risen to the rank of past assistant engineer when his State united its fortunes with the Confederacy. He then resigned his commission and tendered his services to the government at Richmond, where he was cordially welcomed and assigned to the navy with the rank of chief engineer. He was first detailed for special duty for several months with Com. Matthew F. Maury, and subsequently served at Richmond with duties in connection with the naval batteries and the James river squadron. While stationed at the capital he acted as a member of the first naval examining board of engineers of the Confederate government. He was then appointed special agent of the government for the purchase of naval supplies, an office which required him to frequently evade the Federal blockade of Southern ports. On this duty he also acted as chief engineer of the vessel upon which he took passage. When the expedition was organized under the command of Capt. John Wilkinson for the relief of the Confederate prisoners at Johnson's island, Ohio, through Canada, he was detailed as chief engineer, and accompanied the party from Wilmington, N. C., on board the blockade-runner Robert E. Lee. Upon arriving at Halifax the party separated to avoid suspicion, and meeting again at Montreal, proceeded to St. Catherine's. There they were chagrined by the information that their enterprise had been made public, and was consequently impossible to accomplish. Returning to Halifax they sailed for Bermuda and attempted to enter the port at Wilmington, but were chased by blockade cruisers and forced to run their vessel upon Dauber's Beach, near Georgetown, S. C., and abandon her. On his return to Richmond he received orders to resume his duties as purchasing agent, and was able several times subsequently to evade the Federal blockade and successfully reinforce the Confederate military supplies, until he was seized with the yellow fever and confined to his bed for several months with that dangerous malady. When he recovered he was assigned as chief engineer to the cruiser Tallahassee. In this vessel he made a very successful cruise, capturing several Federal merchantmen, some of whom were bonded and others destroyed. Unfortunately, however, on running into the Bermudas for recoaling, the Tallahassee was allowed to take only enough coal to carry her to Wilmington. Ar-

ring there the cruising enterprise was abandoned and the boat dismantled. Mr. Schroeder was then ordered to England on special duty, in which he was engaged when the war terminated. He went from there to Halifax and engaged in the mercantile business for two years with Capt. John Wilkinson and Capt. John Taylor, afterward withdrawing from the firm to return to Portsmouth, Va. About eighteen months later he went to San Francisco, and accepted the position of chief engineer in the employment of the Pacific steamship mail company. In this capacity he went to China and remained there for a period of five years. Finally returning to Virginia to remain permanently in May, 1873, he embarked in the general hardware trade as a member of the firm of E. V. White & Co., with which he has been connected now nearly a quarter of a century. During this period he has been recognized as a prominent and influential citizen, and has been honored with election to the city council. He was married in 1861 to Mary E., daughter of Samuel G. City, an officer of the United States navy, and they have four children: Eugenie, Mary, William and Lucrece. Mr. Schroeder is the son of Antonio Schroeder, a native of Prussia, who came to Norfolk in 1834, and was engaged in farming until his death in 1854.

George W. Scott, of Danville, Va., was born in Orange county, N. C., August 20, 1848. His parents, John and Martha (Crabtree) Scott, gave five sons to the service of the Confederate States: Henry, Thomas, William, George W. and John; two of whom, Thomas and William, died from measles during the war. George W. was reared on the home farm and was left at home by his older brothers as they went out to battle, his age not permitting his enrollment. But in January, 1864, being then in his sixteenth year, he managed to enlist in the Thirty-first North Carolina regiment, Clingman's brigade, Hoke's division, with which he served as a private, going into Virginia when Richmond was threatened by Butler, and participating in several brisk skirmishes as well as the battles of Drewry's Bluff and Bottom Church. In the latter engagement May 20, 1864, while in the act of shooting, his left wrist was struck by a rifle ball, which tore its way through the right arm to the elbow, shattering the bones in its course. In spite of this injury the heroic boy soldier walked two miles and a half to an improvised hospital where he underwent the amputation of his arm. This rendered him unfit for further service, and he returned to his home. In 1872 he removed to Danville, from North Carolina, where he is now prominent in the tobacco and lumber trade. In 1880 he was married to Laura A. Guerrant, and they have five children.

Henry C. Scott, whose later life has been passed at Ashland, Va., is a native of Baltimore, Md., where he was a participant in the exciting events which accompanied the military occupation of that State by the Northern troops. His father, Thomas Parkin Scott, prominent in the annals of that period, was the son of Judge John Scott, of Baltimore, and his wife, Elizabeth Goodwin Dorsey, of a well-known family in Maryland. Thomas Parkin Scott took to wife Juliana M., daughter of Abram and Julia (De Bussy) White, and entering the practice of law at Baltimore, rose in his profession to the station of justice of the supreme court of the city. He was an ardent sympathizer with the cause of Southern inde-

pendence and labored earnestly to bring Maryland into line with the movement. Early in 1861 arms were issued to him by Governor Letcher for the use of Maryland volunteers. As a member of the legislature in 1861, he endeavored to secure the passage of an ordinance of secession, and so incurred the enmity of the Federal authorities that he was ordered to be arrested with others upon the meeting of the legislature in September, 1861. Subsequently he was confined in military prison for a year, and when he again received his liberty his health was so broken that he could not gratify his desire to take up arms in the Southern cause. His death, hastened by the rigors of prison life, occurred within the decade following the war. Dr. Henry C. Scott, born at Baltimore July 6, 1828, was educated at St. Mary's college, that city, and Mount St. Mary's, near Emmitsburg, after which he studied law with his father, and was admitted to practice. But preferring the profession of medicine, he prepared himself for the latter under the preceptorship of Dr. Nathan R. Smith, of Baltimore, and was graduated in the medical department of the State university in 1855. He then entered upon the practice at his native city. Becoming a member and surgeon of the Baltimore City Guard, he accompanied it to Harper's Ferry in 1859, and after the capture of John Brown, dressed the wounds of the raider. In April, 1861, he participated in the attack on the Sixth Massachusetts regiment in the streets of Baltimore, and was active in all the exciting events at Baltimore and vicinity at that period. Subsequently escaping from Baltimore he made his way to Richmond, and enlisted in Company C of the First Maryland infantry regiment. He served with this command as corporal and later as sergeant until 1862, when he was transferred to the medical department and assigned as assistant surgeon to the Jackson hospital, Richmond, where he served until the end of the struggle. Since May, 1865, he has made his home and the field of his professional work at Ashland, and has had a successful career. In W. B. Newton camp, Confederate Veterans, he holds the rank of second lieutenant. In 1853, Dr. Scott was married to Caroline A., daughter of Capt. Thomas J. Baird, U. S. A., granddaughter of Mathew Carey, the famous philanthropist of Philadelphia, and niece of Henry C. Carey, the eminent political economist. Dr. Scott has three sons living: Edward L. C., Thomas Parkin and Henry C. Jr.

James E. Scott, a leading business man of Norfolk, was born at Hillsboro, N. C., November 22, 1843, the son of William C. Scott, a native of North Carolina, born in 1801, who removed, when James was ten years of age, to Princess Anne county, Va., and there passed the rest of his life, dying in 1880. The family had emigrated two generations before to North Carolina from Maryland. The wife of William C. Scott was Mary E., daughter of Joseph Brown, a Pennsylvanian, and Sarah (Brownrig) Brown, a native of North Carolina. Upon the farm of his father in Princess Anne county, James E. passed his youth up to the age of eighteen years, when he entered the Confederate army as a private in Company I of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry, with which he served to the end of the war. He was stationed at Norfolk until its evacuation May 10, 1862, when his command went to Petersburg, and on to Richmond before the Seven Days' battles, in which, how-

ever, it was impossible for the cavalry to take a very active part. From Richmond he went with his company to Chesterfield county where he was engaged in picket duty, and thence to Southampton county in August, 1862, in the same line of service, and then, in October, 1862, to Fredericksburg. Arriving there on November 8th, Company I had its first cavalry fight on the next day in the streets of the town with Federal troopers under Dahlgren, with a successful issue. The company participated in the battle of December 12th, in which the regiment lost a number of men. Mr. Scott served with his command from that time until the following May upon picket duty on the Rappahannock river, and then participated in the battle of Chancellorsville, on the extreme right of the Confederate army. On September 13th, after another term of picket duty, the company had its first important cavalry fight at Culpeper Court House, where many of its men fell. This was followed by the serious and bloody encounter at Brandy Station on October 11th. The following winter was spent on the Rapidan river, and in May, 1864, the Fifteenth regiment took part in the three days' struggle at Spottsylvania, where it suffered severely and lost its colonel, Charles Collins. Operating against Sheridan in his raid toward Richmond they fought at Yellow Tavern, May 10th, and upon the day before the battle of Cold Harbor they participated in the spirited cavalry fight for position. Called out again by Federal raids the regiment fought at Louisa Court House and Trevilian Station in June, 1864, and in July at Reams' Station. This active and creditable service was continued during the succeeding autumn as a part of the army under Early in the Shenandoah valley, fighting in many engagements, the most memorable of which were Winchester and Cedar Creek. After passing the winter near Staunton the regiment moved to Richmond and Petersburg and participated in the battles of Five Forks and Sailor's Creek, but Private Scott, having availed himself of a furlough in order to replace his horse which had been killed, missed the final struggles and the events at Appomattox. After the surrender of General Johnston at Greensboro he was paroled at Norfolk, and was ready to take up the duties of civil life. In 1866 he entered the drug business as a partner of his brother, Dr. William W. Scott, and with the exception of eight years spent in farming, he has since quite successfully conducted this business. Mr. Scott is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp of United Confederate Veterans. He was married in 1870 to Eva Burroughs, who died in 1883, leaving four children: Edgar B., Mary B., Lilian C. and James A. By his second marriage, in 1887, to Mrs. Elizabeth Sarch, Mr. Scott has two children: Elizabeth V. and William R.

Captain R. Taylor Scott, in his lifetime a distinguished citizen of Warrenton, Va., who was twice elected to the office of attorney-general of Virginia, was born at Warrenton, Fauquier county, March 10, 1834. He completed a literary course at the university of Virginia in 1856, and was again graduated at that institution in law, in 1857, after which he was admitted to the bar. He embarked in the practice of his profession at Warrenton, but was hardly well launched in that career when there came upon him the patriotic duty of serving in the military defense of the State. He enlisted in August, 1861, and was enrolled as captain of Company K of the Eighth Virginia volunteers, the command of Col.

Eppa Hunton. In October, 1861, he was taken with a severe attack of typhoid fever and was disabled until January, 1862. Then returning to his command, in the spring of 1862, he was appointed by Maj.-Gen. George E. Pickett as a member of his staff, with the position of division quartermaster. In this important duty he served during the remainder of the war. Before his illness he was engaged in various skirmishes on the upper Potomac, and while performing his staff duties, was under fire at Suffolk, Va., at the battle of Second Cold Harbor, and during the siege of Petersburg. At Appomattox he was surrendered with General Pickett's staff and paroled, being reported as sick in hospital, though the fact was that he had escaped the surrender. He was again paroled at Winchester, by General Hancock, and then returned to Warrenton, and resumed the practice of law, in which he gained honorable distinction. He was a member of the constitutional convention of 1867, as delegate from the counties of Fauquier and Rappahannock; in 1881-82 represented Fauquier and Loudoun counties in the house of delegates, and in 1889 was elected attorney-general of Virginia. To this office he was elected for a second term of four years in 1893, and was filling this position at the time of his death in the summer of 1897. He maintained a membership in George E. Pickett camp at Richmond, of the United Confederate Veterans.

William Marion Seay, of Lynchburg, Va., a veteran of the First corps of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in the city where he yet resides, in the year 1842. After a preparatory education he entered the Lynchburg college, but hardly completed his first year's studies when, on June 3, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Lynchburg Rifles, or Company E of the Eleventh regiment, Virginia infantry. With his regiment under command of Col. Samuel Garland, he participated in the fight at Blackburn's Ford, the battle of Manassas and the affair at Dranesville in 1861. In 1862, under the brigade command of Gen. A. P. Hill, the regiment took a prominent part in the battles of Yorktown and Williamsburg, then under the leadership of Gen. James L. Kemper. Sergeant Seay shared in the services of his regiment at Seven Pines, and during the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, Groveton and Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, in 1862, and in 1863 participated in the campaign of Longstreet's corps about Suffolk and New Bern, N. C., and shared the heroic fighting of Pickett's division at Gettysburg. During 1864 he was in the engagements at Drewry's Bluff and Milford Station in May, and at the latter fight was captured by the enemy. He was subsequently held for ten months in the Federal military prison at Point Lookout, Md., not being released until March, 1865. Upon reaching Virginia again he went to his home at Lynchburg, on parole furlough, and was there at the time of the surrender at Appomattox. Though engaged in many encounters with the enemy he fortunately escaped with but one slight wound, received at Seven Pines. Since the war he has been engaged in business as a contractor and builder, at Knoxville, Tenn., from 1868 to 1873, and subsequently at Lynchburg. In 1867 he was married at Alexandria to Alice R., daughter of the late Joseph Grigg, Jr. Mr. Seay's family is of Welsh extraction. His father, George W. Seay, served with the reserves at Lynchburg during the war of the Con-

Va 73

federacy; and his two grandfathers, Joseph Seay and Henry George, were soldiers in the war of 1812.

Lieutenant Arthur S. Segar, now residing near Hampton, Va., and prominent in the legal profession of both Hampton and Newport News, was born in Accomack county, October 9, 1844, the son of John and Charlotte (Simkins) Segar. His father was a native of King William county and the descendant of a long line of Virginia ancestors. His mother's father was Arthur Simkins, who was born in Northampton county, the son of one of two brothers who emigrated from England and settled, one in Virginia and one in South Carolina. When Lieutenant Segar was but four years of age, he suffered the misfortune of the death of his father, and at the age of seven he was taken into the home of his uncle, Hon. Joseph Segar, of Elizabeth City county. He was given an excellent education at the Hampton academy, a military school, and the Danville military academy. The latter institution he left in the spring of 1861 to enlist in the service of Virginia. He became a private in a volunteer company at Hampton, called the Wythe Rifles, and remained with this command until September, 1861, the company being incorporated in the Thirty-second Virginia infantry, and serving on the peninsula under General Magruder. He was then transferred to the Sixth Virginia regiment, with which he served on Craney island until the evacuation of Norfolk and subsequently in the division of General Huger in the battles around Richmond, including the Seven Days' campaign. During the Manassas and Maryland campaigns he was on detached duty, after which in September, 1862, he was promoted first lieutenant of Company H, Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment of Pickett's division. Throughout the remainder of the war he shared the fortunes and misfortunes of Pickett's Virginians, fighting at Fredericksburg, Spottsylvania, Gettysburg and all their succeeding engagements. He participated in the immortal assault at Cemetery hill, on July 3, 1863, in which eighteen of the twenty-one men of his company were either killed or wounded. Though struck four times by spent balls, he had the good fortune to escape serious injury upon the field of Gettysburg, but with Beauregard, on May 16, 1864, in the battle at Drewry's Bluff, he was less lucky, receiving almost simultaneously two serious wounds, one in the left leg and the other in the right thigh. At the close of the war, after a gallant record in the army of Northern Virginia, he found employment for two years in Northampton county, teaching school, and subsequently continued in the same occupation for two years at Norfolk. In 1869-70 he served in the State legislature as one of the representatives of Norfolk, and made a creditable record in that public capacity. He removed to Hampton in the fall of 1870 and after teaching school there for three years, entered upon the practice of law in 1874. He has ever since devoted himself to the law, and has achieved a wide reputation for ability in his profession. For eight years he discharged with notable skill the duties of commonwealth's attorney for the county of Elizabeth City. Giving particular attention to corporation practice he has for sixteen years held the position of local attorney for the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, and is attorney for the Newport News Ship Building & Dry Dock company, the Old Dominion land company, and the

Newport News Light & Water company. Since 1890 he has had his legal office at Newport News, with which he is quite as prominently identified as with Hampton, near where he makes his home. He is an active member, and past commander of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, Confederate Veterans, of Hampton, and is held in high esteem by his comrades. On June 19, 1876, he was married to Miss Mary Sue Winder, of Hampton, and they have six children.

Charles Selden, superintendent of the Richmond Railway & Electric company, was born in Powhatan county, Va., in 1847, where he was reared and educated and passed his youthful years during the early part of the war of the Confederacy. Having reached the age of seventeen in 1864, he enlisted in November as a private in the Fourth Virginia cavalry, and subsequently fought with Early in the valley of Virginia, participating in his first fight at Mount Jackson. He continued with this command during the subsequent campaigns and saw hard and dangerous fighting, which is evidenced by the fact that his company which started out with sixty-eight men, lost sixty-five before Appomattox. Before the surrender he made his escape with others of the cavalry, and was paroled at Richmond in June, 1865. After these events he sold his horse and with the proceeds made his way to Texas, where he remained two years. Returning to Virginia he found employment for several years with the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, for some time holding the position of paymaster in the construction department. Making his home at Richmond about the year 1884 he became superintendent of the Richmond Railway & Electric company, a position he has since filled with much satisfaction to the company and the public. He was a gallant soldier during his youthful career in the army, and maintains his association with the veterans of the army through membership in the R. E. Lee camp of Confederate Veterans and the Powhatan troop association.

Lieutenant William H. Selden, proprietor of the Metropolitan hotel at Washington, D. C., since 1880, is a native of Lynchburg, Va., born in the year 1841. At the age of seventeen years he removed to Carrollton, Mo., and being in that State at the outbreak of the war enlisted in the State troops under General Price. But in July, 1861, he returned to Virginia and became a member of Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry regiment. In this command he served in all its engagements from the first to the second battles of Manassas. After the latter campaign he was transferred to the inspector-general's department, with the rank of lieutenant, and served on the staff of Gen. E. Kirby Smith, his brother-in-law, until the close of the war. General Smith being in command of the Trans-Mississippi department, the remainder of Lieutenant Selden's service was in that quarter. He surrendered to Gen. Gordon Granger, at Galveston, Tex., and then returned to Lynchburg. In 1867 he removed to Memphis, Tenn., and thence to Kentucky, and from that State in 1874, to Danville, Va., where he embarked in the hotel business, which has been his occupation for nearly a quarter century.

Henry C. Sellman, of Leesburg, is a native of Maryland, born April 4, 1841. He resided in his native State until 1859, and then returned after the beginning of the war, when like many other spirited and chivalrous young Marylanders, he crossed the Potomac

to enroll himself with the defenders of the Confederate cause. He enlisted in October, 1861, as orderly-sergeant of Company B, made up entirely of Marylanders, in the Thirty-fifth Virginia battalion, under command of Col. E. V. White. With this gallant command he participated in all the engagements that fell to its lot, except during a period of six months, when he was disabled by a dangerous and painful wound, a gunshot through the lung, received at the battle of Brandy Station. As soon as he was fit for duty, after this injury, he returned to his battalion and remained with it until the end of the struggle. Subsequently he made his home at Leesburg, being contented to remain in the commonwealth for which he had fought, and engaged in the mercantile business, and was married to Miss Mary L. Mott, a daughter of Dr. A. L. Mott, of that city, a prominent physician and honored Confederate veteran. In the years that have elapsed Mr. Sellman has prospered in business and in all his enterprises. After eighteen years' connection with trade, he retired from that occupation. For several years he has served efficiently as secretary of the Loudoun county agricultural society. He is a member of Clinton Hatcher camp, United Confederate Veterans, and cherishes the memories of the Confederate cause.

Lieutenant Thomas Middleton Semmes, who since the war has held the chair of modern languages at the Virginia military institute, is a native of the Old Dominion, born in Caroline county in 1840. He received his preparatory education at Richmond, then entered the military institute, where he was graduated in 1860. In July, 1861, he entered the service of the Confederate States with the rank of first lieutenant, and was assigned to duty as adjutant of the Third Arkansas regiment of infantry. In this capacity he served until October 4, 1861, when he was transferred to the staff of Gen. Henry R. Jackson, with whom he served as ordnance officer, until about the first of January, 1863, he was ordered by Gen. R. E. Lee to return to the Virginia military institute and assume the duties of the professorship which he still holds. There during the remainder of the struggle for the defense of the Confederacy he rendered valuable and important services in the education and preparation of cadets for military service. With them, also, he rendered active military service on occasions, notably at the battle of New Market in the valley, where the cadets formed an important part of the Confederate forces and were particularly distinguished for the part they took in winning a victory. Other engagements in which he took part during his service with the army were those at Greenbrier river, October 3, 1861, in the West Virginia campaign, Allegheny mountain and McDowell. Since the close of hostilities Professor Semmes has held continuously the chair at the institute to which he was assigned by the board of visitors in 1863, and during this long educational service has done a noble work, and taken no small part in that heroic and magnificent effort which has raised Virginia to her present high station out of the ashes and desolation of war.

Major Joseph C. Sexton, of Wytheville, at the close of the war a member of the staff of Gen. John B. Gordon, was born at Wytheville, November 26, 1833. Here he was reared and educated, and given a training in the saddlery business which was established by his grandfather who came to Virginia in 1790, and which he has conducted throughout his business life, except when engaged in the

military service of his State. He enlisted April 17, 1861, in a volunteer company which was assigned as Company A to the Fourth Virginia infantry. He joined his regiment, under the brigade command of Col. Thomas J. Jackson, in the lower Shenandoah valley, and thence moved to the field of Manassas, where he shared the gallant service of the Fourth. Subsequently he was assigned to the commissary service and promoted on September 11, 1861, to the rank of captain in that department. His performance of duty in this capacity was marked with such efficiency that on April 1, 1862, he was promoted major. He was with the Stonewall brigade through its entire four years' service, constantly rendering valuable and faithful co-operation in its gallant career. During the final days of the struggle he was a member of the staff of Gen. John B. Gordon, commanding the Second corps of the army. After the war closed Mr. Sexton engaged in the saddle and harness business and has met with much success. He is a member of the Presbyterian church and of the Masonic and I. O. O. F. fraternities.

Carlton Shafer, a native of Virginia, was one of the four captains who commanded the young cadets of the Virginia military institute who participated with such gallantry at the battle of New Market, in the valley of Virginia, May 15, 1864. He was born in Loudoun county, Va., in 1844. His father, Frederick W. Shafer, was born in Germany but came to Virginia very early in life. In 1860 he left home to enter the military institute at Lexington, and was a student there when the organization of troops was begun by the State. In 1861 he went into service with the cadets, at Richmond, Va., where they were drill-masters to troops preparing for active service, but was not actively engaged in the field until the battle of New Market. In this battle, rendered particularly famous by the heroic action of the cadets and their severe loss in battle, he commanded Company B of the cadet corps and did his whole duty in the glorious charge of the boys which routed the Federal forces. Subsequently he was commissioned lieutenant in the provisional army and was stationed in southwest Virginia, where he was assigned to duty in organizing and drilling recruits for the fast-thinking ranks of the Confederates. While in that region he participated in the defense of Lynchburg during the raid of Federal General Hunter upon that important point, and in the successful resistance to the Federal raid of General Burbridge's army against the salt works in Washington county, Va. At the time of the surrender he was in Fauquier county, Va., and soon afterward received his parole in Loudoun county. He returned to civil life and was engaged in school teaching about two years at Leesburg. He was then chosen professor of mathematics in Frederick college, at Frederick City, Md., and held that chair about two years, in the meantime taking up the study of law, to which he determined to turn his attention. In 1870 he was admitted to the bar at Frederick City, where he subsequently engaged in the practice with marked success until 1893. During that period he became prominent in political affairs, and was elected in 1886 to represent Frederick county in the house of delegates of Maryland. During the three succeeding terms of the legislature he served, by successive elections, as chief clerk of the house. In 1887 he was a candidate for the State senate, on the Democratic ticket, and though the county usually gives a Republican majority of six to eight hundred votes

he was defeated by Hon. M. G. Urmer by a majority of only fifty, indicating in some degree the confidence reposed in him by his community. In 1893 he was appointed chief department clerk of the internal revenue, district of Maryland, under the Cleveland administration, and stationed at Baltimore, and is now engaged in the general practice of law at that city. In 1884 Mr. Shafer married Miss Sara Andrew of La Porte, Ind., a daughter of Dr. George L. Andrew, inspector of the armies of the Potomac and the Cumberland for the United States sanitary commission from 1861 to 1865.

Jacob Shaner, of Lynchburg, a veteran of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry regiment, is a native of Germany, born in 1839. Coming to America in 1844 and first locating at Baltimore, he removed thence to Lynchburg in 1850, and to Richmond in 1857. At the latter city he became a member of a militia company with which he participated in the occupation of Harper's Ferry during the disturbance of 1859. Subsequently he continued his militia service with this command, which in April, 1861, became Company H of the Fifteenth Virginia infantry. With this command he took part in the action at Big Bethel early in 1861, where the Confederate troops were distinguished for steadiness and fighting qualities, and continued on duty in that region until about eighteen months after his enlistment, when he was detailed for duty at Richmond. He remained in the latter service about a year, and then rejoined his command just before the battle of Sharpsburg, where he served with his regiment in Semmes' brigade of McLaws' division, and joined in a successful charge upon Burnside's troops, driving a greatly superior force of the enemy from a strong position. In this fight the regiment lost fifty-eight per cent in killed and wounded, probably the most severe regimental loss in the army. Private Shaner continued with this gallant command through the subsequent campaigns, fighting at Second Cold Harbor and Drewry's Bluff, and until January, 1865, when he was disabled by illness from further participation in the war. After the close of hostilities he engaged in business at Lynchburg, and was thus occupied, with much success, until 1895, when he retired. He is an influential and much respected citizen, but has modestly declined all office, even that of a seat in the city council to which he was unanimously elected on the tickets of both parties. He was married in November, 1866, to Mary E. Moebus, and they have nine children living.

John Howard Sharp, treasurer of the Seaboard Air Line railroad company, residing at Norfolk, was born at that city, December 3, 1837. His father, William Willoughby Sharp, an able and distinguished lawyer, was for many years prior to the war president of the Exchange bank of Virginia, located at Norfolk. The latter was the son of Col. William Sharp, a soldier of the war of 1812. The mother of Mr. Sharp was Mary Ann Schoolfield, daughter of Dr. Joseph Schoolfield, a former surgeon of the United States navy. Mr. Sharp was reared at Norfolk and educated at the Virginia military institute. For two years prior to the war he was a private in Company F, of Norfolk, which was organized in 1859 from the best citizenship of the city, and when it entered the active service of the State on April 19, 1861, was the largest infantry company of Norfolk. It was attached to the Sixth Virginia regiment as Company G and its first duty was the seizure of the immense stores of powder at Fort Norfolk. The company was then ordered to Cra-

ney island on garrison duty and given charge of a battery of heavy guns. In September, 1861, Private Sharp was promoted second lieutenant in the provisional army, and assigned to duty as quartermaster and commissary of the brigade at Craney island. A few days later he was further promoted to the rank of captain and assistant quartermaster and commissary in the Confederate States army. But this position was not to his taste, and he tendered his resignation in favor of a friend who was married, and sought an opportunity for service in some other line of duty. Going to Richmond he there united with some ex-cadets of the Virginia military institute and others in the organization of the celebrated Otey battery, with whose gallant career he was thereafter associated until the close of the war. While on the lines before Petersburg, after the battle of the Crater, he was detailed by Gen. E. P. Alexander, chief of artillery of the First army corps, as personal courier at his headquarters, where he remained without the loss of a day in the performance of his duties until the surrender at Appomattox. For many years after the close of the war Captain Sharp was occupied as a planter in North Carolina, where he still holds extensive agricultural interests, and while there he was married December 19, 1866, to Sophia Hunter, of Lincoln county. Their home has been blessed with eight children. Mrs. Sharp is the daughter of Dr. Cyrus L. Hunter, author of *Revolutionary Sketches of Western North Carolina*, and granddaughter of Gen. Peter Forney, of North Carolina, and Rev. Humphrey Hunter, who served under Light Horse Harry Lee in the Continental army. Her two brothers were both killed in the war of the Confederacy. In 1882 Captain Sharp first became associated with the railroad company with which he has since been connected, and beginning as a bookkeeper in the treasury department at Wilmington, N. C., he has, through several promotions, reached the position of secretary and treasurer of the Air Line system. Since his election to this office in 1893 he has resided at Portsmouth, where the general offices are located. He maintains membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp of Norfolk, and the Otey battery association of Richmond.

Captain J. P. Sheffey, of Marion, judge of the circuit court of Smyth county, participated in the notable Confederate record of the Smyth Dragoons, a cavalry company from that county, which became Company A, Eighth Virginia cavalry. He enlisted in this company in May, 1861, was commissioned second lieutenant, and while the command was in camp at Fort Jackson, Wytheville, was promoted first lieutenant. At the reorganization in 1862 he was elected captain, the rank in which he served during the remainder of the war. He served under General Floyd in West Virginia, and subsequently in the brigades of A. G. Jenkins, William E. Jones and Bradley T. Johnson. He participated in the battle of Cloyd's Mountain as well as many minor engagements, and took part in the Maryland campaign against Washington. In August, 1864, he was taken prisoner at Moorefield, W. Va., and was imprisoned at Camp Chase, Ohio, until February, 1865. Then returning to his command, he was at Appomattox with General Munford, but with his comrades escaped the surrender. Since the war he has been active in his profession as a lawyer, sat in the Virginia house of delegates in the session of 1893-94, and was elected to the bench in 1895.

Lieutenant Samuel G. Sheffield, for many years a prosperous merchant of Henry county, did faithful service during the Confederate war as an officer of the Twenty-fourth regiment, Virginia infantry, and later was in the cavalry service. He was born in Henry county, April 16, 1836, and was there reared and educated. In May, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as orderly-sergeant of Company H, Twenty-fourth Virginia regiment, under Colonel Early, and participated in the first year's service of the regiment, fighting at Blackburn's Ford and First Manassas, and in February, 1862, moving with his regiment and Early's brigade to the peninsula, to encounter the army of McClellan. During this movement he was taken sick, and was left at Richmond, where he was given a furlough to go to his home and regain health. His gallant service meanwhile had gained for him promotion to the rank of second lieutenant. When he returned to the army before Richmond he was transferred to Robinson's battalion of cavalry, with which he took part in many skirmishes and the battle of Cold Harbor in 1864. In the latter battle he was captured, and being taken to Point Lookout, was held at that military prison for eight or nine months. His health failed during this long confinement and he was at last released on account of his sickness. But recovering after he reached his home he returned to duty, and with his cavalry command took part in several skirmishes on the Petersburg lines and an important fight near Amelia Court House, during the retreat. Proceeding to Appomattox he made his way through the Federal lines with his comrades, and after the surrender returned home by way of Lynchburg. He soon found employment as a clerk and later embarked in mercantile pursuits as proprietor of a store at Martinsville, which he conducted until, a few years since, he retired from business after an active and successful career. He served as supervisor at Martinsville for ten years. In 1880 he was married to Miss L. H. H. Martin, who died a few years later; and Mr. Sheffield died at Martinsville, Va., June 9, 1898.

John M. Shepherd, of Suffolk, Va., a gallant veteran of the Sixteenth Virginia infantry regiment, was born at Suffolk in 1843, the son of James M. Shepherd, a contractor of that city. He left a clerkship in a Suffolk store in April, 1861, to enlist as a private in the Marion Rangers, afterward Company A of the Sixteenth regiment. With this command he led a rather quiet life in an entrenched camp near Norfolk, until the evacuation in May, 1862, when after going as far as Gordonsville under orders to reinforce Jackson in the valley, the regiment was called back to Richmond, and joining Mahone's brigade, took an active part in the Seven Days' campaign and Malvern Hill. Subsequently in Longstreet's corps he fought at Second Manassas, and marched into Maryland. At Crampton's Gap, where Mahone's brigade and Munford's cavalry held back a Federal army corps, all of Company A were captured save Private Shepherd and a few others, who made their escape by way of Harper's Ferry and took part in the battle of Sharpsburg. Returning to Virginia on the night of December 12, 1862, he lay down to sleep with a warm pair of green moccasins at his side, and when awakened in the morning by the sound of the drum, found the moccasins frozen hard, and orders to immediately fall in for a march to Fredericksburg. He will never forget that march of three miles through the snow, at double-quick, barefooted, and

the three days of fighting and waiting in line of battle which followed. He fought at Chancellorsville, at Gettysburg was on the main picket line during the three days' battle, on the retreat fought at Williamsport, took part in the Bristoe campaign, and in the spring of 1864 shared the service of his command at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, and Cold Harbor, and the frequent fighting on the Petersburg lines, including the battle of the Crater, where most of his company were killed or wounded, and Reams' Station. His active service in the field was not ended until he surrendered at Appomattox. Though a private until the close of the war, he had served as sergeant-major and adjutant of his regiment. Returning to Suffolk he served for sixteen years as agent for the Norfolk & Western railroad under his old commander, General Mahone, and since then has been agent for the central office of the Southern express company. He is sergeant-major of Tom Smith camp, Confederate veterans, and greatly values the comradeship of that order. In January, 1867, he was married to Carrie M. Hall, daughter of Thomas Hall, sheriff of Isle of Wight county, and they have four children: Annie, wife of John B. Booth, Oxford, N. C.; Carrie J., wife of F. G. Whaley, Greenville, N. C.; James T., of Suffolk, and Frederick M., of Norfolk.

John Emerson Shields, a native of Norfolk, Va., was connected with the war department at Richmond throughout the war of the Confederacy. While in this service he made a trip to Norfolk, arriving at that place on the day of the evacuation, and, not being able to return to Richmond, was forced to go to Washington, which ended his service for the cause of the Confederacy. Subsequently he followed the career of a merchant at Norfolk until his death in 1889. His brother, Capt. Hamilton Shields, was graduated at the National military academy at West Point in the class of Gen. George B. McClellan, and served with distinction in the war with Mexico. At the breaking out of the war he had a position on the staff of General Wool, in the United States regular army, but resigning his commission on the opening of hostilities, he became an object of suspicion, was arrested and imprisoned, but was afterward released. Their father, William C. Shields, a native of Philadelphia, served in the United States navy during the war of 1812, and afterward founded the Norfolk Beacon, an influential Whig journal, of ante-bellum days, and continued its publication until his death in 1855. This ancestor was the son of John Shields, who emigrated from Scotland to Philadelphia. John Emerson Shields married Mary Frances Ridley, a lady of English descent, and daughter of the late John Ridley, a native of Southampton county, who followed his profession of civil engineering for the greater part of his life at Norfolk, serving both as city engineer and city treasurer. Leroy H. Shields, a son of this union, was born at Norfolk, May 18, 1854, and after receiving his education in private schools of the city, entered upon a business career, first as a clerk and later as a traveling salesman. From 1881 to 1884 he was connected with the wholesale shoe business, and at the latter date retired from trade to become interested in various real estate enterprises throughout the State, some of which were of a very extensive scope. In the fall of 1885 he was elected to the legislature of the State, a position he resigned in the fol-

lowing year to accept the office of collector of city taxes. To this position he was re-elected in 1888, and served through two terms, declining a third election. He was appointed to the office of collector of customs by President Cleveland in 1894, for a term of four years. He has rendered admirable service in this capacity, and many substantial and notable improvements have been made in the custom house during his incumbency and through his influence, which will commemorate his administration of the office. Mr. Shields was married December 29, 1885, to Mary Orra Love, daughter of the late Col. Robert Love, an eminent lawyer of Tennessee, and a first cousin of Col. Robert L. Taylor, governor of that State. Her ancestor, Alexander Love, was a signer of the Declaration of Independence. They have three daughters, Frances Elizabeth Taylor, Virginia Taylor, and Dorothy Love Carter.

Colonel Scott Shipp, superintendent of the Virginia military institute, was born in Fauquier county, August 2, 1839. At the age of thirteen years he entered Westminster college, Missouri, and after three years' study served for a year on the engineer corps of the North Missouri railroad. In 1859 he was graduated with distinction at the Virginia military institute, and was at once appointed assistant professor of mathematics. In this department and that of Latin he continued until the outbreak of the war, when he resigned his position and was commissioned lieutenant and later captain in the provisional army of Virginia. He held the rank of assistant adjutant-general in the camp of instruction at Richmond, and as major of the Twenty-first Virginia regiment, in the Confederate provisional army, served with distinction under Lee in West Virginia, and Jackson in the valley. In 1862, by order of the secretary of war, he was detached from his regiment and returned to the institute as commandant of cadets, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, the position he occupied during the remainder of the war. At the battle of New Market, particularly, where he was wounded, he demonstrated the intrepidity and power of leadership of a successful officer. Upon the re-establishment of the institute after the war, he continued in the office of commandant, also studying law at Washington college and gaining admission to the bar, and from 1876 until 1890 filling the chair of Latin in addition to his other duties. In 1880 he was elected president of the Virginia agricultural and mechanical college, but declined this honor, preferring to remain with the school to which his life has been zealously devoted. He served as a member of the board of visitors of the United States military academy in 1890, was president of the board of visitors of the United States naval academy in 1894, and in 1891 received the honorary degree of LL. D. from Washington and Lee university. He was married in 1869 to a daughter of Arthur A. Morson, of Richmond, and they have three children.

The Virginia military institute, a school for soldiers, which has been pronounced second only to the national academy at West Point, gave to the Confederate cause twenty-one general officers—Major-Generals Mahone, Humes and Rodes, and Brigadier-Generals Echols, Lindsay Walker, Colston, Wharton, J. R. Jones, Garland, Payne, Terry, A. C. Jones, Bass, Vaughn, Elliott, Munford, Jas. A. Walker, Lane, Penn, McCausland and Terrill—more than

100 colonels, nearly as many lieutenant-colonels, more than 475 majors and captains, over 100 general and regimental staff officers, and more than 200 subalterns, a total of quite 1,200 officers. It will be readily observed that the institute exerted through its graduates a great influence upon the Confederate armies, rivaling except in the highest commands, that of West Point itself. The school was founded for scientific and military instruction by act of the assembly in March, 1839, and was first under the superintendency of Gen. Francis H. Smith, who was succeeded on January 1, 1890, by Gen. Scott Shipp, who had been connected with the faculty since 1859. Col. J. L. T. Preston, of Lexington, to whom is accorded the honor of conceiving the idea of the school, was in its corps of instructors thirty-six years. Other well-known men have been included in its faculty, the most famous of them its former professor of natural philosophy, Lieut.-Gen. "Stonewall" Jackson. The services of the Institute battalion throughout the war of the Confederacy is deserving of mention in this connection. Previously, at the time of the execution of John Brown, the cadets were ordered on duty at Charlestown, where Maj. T. J. Jackson commanded a platoon of two howitzers, and Maj. William Gilham commanded the infantry battalion. On April 17, 1861, by order of Governor Letcher the cadets were moved to the camp of instruction near Richmond, to aid in drilling and disciplining the Confederate troops, and rendered valuable service until July 1st, when the battalion was disbanded, nearly every member having received a commission in some arm of the service. In January, 1862, upon the urgent request of the war department of the Confederacy, the institute was reorganized, to keep up the supply of trained officers. In the following May, the new battalion, recruited from the spirited youth of the Old Dominion, under the command of Lieut.-Col. Scott Shipp, joined the army of General Jackson at the opening of his Valley campaign and was present as a reserve, at the battle of McDowell. In the summer of 1863 the cadets were ordered to Goshen, Va., to assist in repelling a raid of Federal cavalry, and in the following winter they joined the force of Imboden, at Covington, operating against Averell and rendered two weeks of arduous service in midwinter, marching and campaigning in the deep snow. Later in the same season the boys marched twenty miles in very severe weather to Goshen, to check a Federal raid. The cadet corps was particularly distinguished in the battle of New Market, May 15, 1864, forming part of the hastily collected command of General Breckinridge, who reinforced General Imboden, on the occasion of Sigel's advance from Winchester. The cadets went into battle as an infantry battalion of four companies, and a platoon of artillery, serving two rifle-guns, under the command of Colonel Shipp, and advanced with the coolness of veterans in the face of a destructive artillery fire, forcing the enemy to fall back. Then, in line with the Sixty-second regiment, they made a gallant charge through a rocky gulch upon a battery of six guns which was the main reliance of the Federal line, and though suffering severe loss, soon waved the institute flag over the guns. The artillery platoon also rendered effective service with the battalion of Major McLaughlin. In this action the cadets lost 8 killed and 46 wounded out of a total of 225. Their losses and those of the Sixty-second regiment constituted one-half the casualties of the day, in the little

Confederate army of 4,500. They had been under fire at times so withering that it seemed impossible any living thing could escape, from noon to sunset, and throughout there had been an almost incessant rain. As Colonel Shipp reported—"Wet, hungry, and many of them shoeless—for they had lost their shoes and socks in the deep mud through which it was necessary to march—they bore their hardships with that uncomplaining resignation which characterizes the true soldier." In the same month the cadets were ordered to the Richmond lines and en route they were disembarked at Hanover Junction and assigned position for an anticipated battle with Grant's army, but on the same day continued to the Confederate capital, where they were stationed on the intermediate lines. Upon Hunter's advance toward Lynchburg, they moved to Lexington, fell back to Lynchburg before Hunter, and after his repulse returned to Lexington, where they found the institute in ruins. The battalion was then furloughed, but in the following September the cadets were ordered to Richmond by the secretary of war. They served on the outer lines from October 1st to December 11th, and then resumed academic work at Richmond, using the almshouse as barracks. During the winter they were also in active service for a few days against the Federal cavalry, and on the first of April, 1865, they were ordered to the outer lines on the Nine Mile road. On the following night the battalion of cadets, a battalion of dismounted cavalry, and a body of convalescents, all under command of Colonel Shipp, were in the rifle-pits in advance of the outer lines, unsupported, and with no other force between the enemy and Richmond. On the following day the command was disbanded.

George W. Simons, of Norfolk, a native of Baltimore, born in 1841, was taken to Richmond by his parents while an infant and reared and educated at the Virginia capital. At the age of fifteen years he removed to Norfolk and found employment with an uncle and became a member of the Norfolk Juniors, the oldest company at that city, whose organization dated back to 1802, and whose record embraced honorable participation in the war of 1812. With this company, which became Company H of the Twelfth Virginia regiment, Mahone's brigade, he served during the Confederate occupation of Norfolk at Boush's Bluff, and at an entrenched camp near Ocean View. The company left Norfolk with more men than any other from that city, and in the subsequent active service lost more heavily than any other company. They fought at Seven Pines, Oak Grove and Malvern Hill, before Richmond, at the second battle of Manassas, Crampton's Gap and Sharpsburg, and then having suffered great losses, recruited near Winchester for the remainder of the struggle. Their next battle was Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville soon followed, where the greater part of the company was captured. Mr. Simons, with the others who remained, fought at Gettysburg. During that campaign he was detailed to collect cattle for the army, and was successful to his entire satisfaction in despoiling the enemy of beef. He was continued in special service until after the Wilderness campaign, when he again served in the ranks in the fighting about Petersburg. On June 22, 1864, his command captured more Federals than their own numbers, and were distinguished in the check given to the enemy's advance. He continued on duty at Petersburg until the evacuation, and on the retreat was captured between that city and High Bridge. He then

for several weeks experienced the discomforts of prison life at Point Lookout. Since then he has been engaged in business at Norfolk, and enjoys the success which follows a life of energy and staunch resolution.

Major William E. Simons, of Richmond, though a native of Baltimore, Md., born in 1840, has resided at the Virginia capital since infancy, when his parents removed to Richmond. He was educated at the latter city, and, on April 21, 1861, entered the military service of the State as a private in the Richmond Howitzers. He served with that gallant command of artillery at the battles of First Manassas and Ball's Bluff, and until the expiration of a year, when much to his distaste he was detailed for special duty at Richmond. Chafing against this detention from the field until he could no longer endure it, he slipped away from Richmond early in 1863, and joined McNeill's cavalry at Moorefield, W. Va. With this command he enjoyed active service for six or seven months, until the authorities discovered his youth and he was sent back to Richmond. He then enlisted in the Third regiment of local defense troops, and soon found active service in and about Richmond. He organized a company, of which he was commissioned captain, which with other organizations formed a battalion of Custis Lee's brigade, and participated in the defense of Richmond and the retreat toward Appomattox. During his service in West Virginia he took part in the battle of Moorefield, and after returning to Richmond he fought through the desperate encounter at Cold Harbor with the Federal army under Grant. During the retreat in April, 1865, he was captured, but being soon afterward released, made his way to Johnson's army, reaching that command just as it was surrendered. Still determined to attach himself to the last Confederate holding out, he started to join the army of Kirby Smith, beyond the Mississippi, and had gone as far as South Georgia when he became convinced that the war was over. Then he turned back and walked the entire seven hundred miles to his home. In 1870 he engaged in the manufacture of blank books, and has since that time successfully conducted a manufacturing establishment of that nature. He has also found opportunity to render the State efficient service in her military forces since the close of the great war. Upon the reorganization of the Richmond Howitzers in 1874 he was among those enrolled, and chosen first lieutenant of the command. He served in this capacity until 1885 when he was commissioned major of the First battalion of artillery of Virginia, including all the artillery of the State. At the time of the agitation at the Pocahontas coal mines in 1895, when the town of Pocahontas was occupied by several thousand strikers from West Virginia, bent upon stopping the working of the Virginia mines, by threats or violence, Major Simons was selected as a cool and sagacious commander to take a force of artillery and infantry to the scene of disturbance. He remained at that point in charge of the military forces from May 3d to August 2d, and such were his tact and good management that the strike was one of the few of such magnitude that have been brought to a close without a single blow being struck, a drop of blood shed, or any property destroyed. Neither was a single citizen deprived of his right to work or not to work. Major Simons maintains a membership in R. E. Lee camp No. 1, Confederate Veterans.

Captain James F. Simpson, a gallant cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Peebles, Scotland, May 21, 1827. He was reared in his native land and in 1854, accompanied by his second wife, Susannah Lucinda Marks, immigrated to Pennsylvania and made his home at Pittsburg. Early in the following year the family removed to Norfolk, where, at the beginning of the war of the Confederacy, the father enlisted as a private and drill-master in Company I of the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry. With this command he served with distinction throughout the war, soon being promoted lieutenant, and in 1863 to captain. At the battle of Fredericksburg he gained particular honor by driving a large body of Federals from the city, with a handful of men. In recognition of his gallantry the ladies of the city presented him a handsome flag and the Scottish colors. At Malvern Hill Captain Simpson was seriously wounded. His death occurred at Norfolk in 1868. William M. Simpson, son of the foregoing, was born at Norfolk, July 31, 1855. At the age of fourteen years he entered the employment of W. D. Reynolds & Co., cotton merchants, as an office boy, and by continual promotions rose to the position of buyer, the best in the gift of the firm, and in this capacity served for fifteen years. He began the discharge of this important duty at a very early age, but though occasionally embarrassed by his youth in the transaction of business, he met with notable success. In 1891 he entered the employment of Price, Reid & Co., as cotton buyer, a position he still holds. Mr. Simpson is prominently connected with several fraternal orders—the Odd Fellows, Royal Arcanum, Knights of Honor, Independent Order of Heptasophs, and the order of the Golden Chair. For six years he served in the Norfolk City Guards. November 11, 1884, he was married to Miss Mary L. Nunnally, of Petersburg, Va., daughter of William T. A. Nunnally, who served efficiently in the ordnance department of the Confederate States. They have one child, Mary Louise.

Captain Charles R. Skinner, of Richmond, was born in Orange county, Va., in 1841. He was reared in his native county, and after receiving a preparatory education there, attended school at Staunton, and subsequently entered the university of Virginia. In 1860 he made his home at Richmond and engaged in business with a brother. On April 21, 1861, he abandoned civil pursuits to become a private in the famous "F" company, with which he served until the eve of the campaign before Richmond in 1862, when he was transferred to the Second Howitzers of Richmond. With this gallant artillery command he was identified until the battle of Fredericksburg, when he was severely wounded in the breast. On becoming capacitated for duty several months later, he was promoted lieutenant and assigned to the Forty-eighth regiment Virginia infantry, and soon afterward being further promoted to the rank of captain, continued with that command, except during a period of imprisonment, until at Hatcher's Run, February 7, 1865, he received a wound which caused the loss of his left foot. This severe injury put an end to his active service. Among the battles in which he rendered honorable service were Kernstown, where he received his first wound, the battles before Richmond in the Peninsular campaign, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House and Hatcher's Run. At the bloody salient, at

Spottsylvania, May 12, 1864, he was among the many captured in Hancock's assault, and becoming a prisoner of war was subsequently confined for seven months at Fort Delaware. At the close of hostilities he was paroled at Savannah, Ga., and he then resided for several years in New York. Returning finally to Richmond, he engaged in mercantile business, with success, until his retirement in 1886.

Charles H. Smith, of Berryville, a veteran of Jones' brigade of Stuart's cavalry, was born at the town where he now resides, March 14, 1833. Previous to 1861 he became engaged in mercantile pursuits and farming, and was a member of the Clarke county cavalry company, under command of Capt. Hugh Nelson. He went into service immediately upon the secession of Virginia, as first sergeant of his company, and took part in the occupation of Harper's Ferry, the engagement at Falling Waters and the battle of First Manassas, and fought in 1862 in the valley with Ashby and Jackson. With the Sixth cavalry regiment in Robertson's brigade he joined Stuart in time to take part in the second battle of Manassas, and the other operations of that campaign. He served with Stuart's cavalry in the raid around McClellan following Sharpsburg, participated in Gen. W. E. Jones' campaign in West Virginia, and in the command of the latter general took part in the Pennsylvania campaign, including the battle of Gettysburg. At the time of Sheridan's raid on Richmond, which resulted in the battle of Yellow Tavern, in which Stuart fell, Sergeant Smith was captured and for six months afterward was confined at Point Lookout. Then being exchanged he returned to his command and participated in the battle of Five Forks, where he was again captured, but the end of the war soon arriving he was not long held as a prisoner. In this engagement Treadwell Smith, a cousin of our subject, and also a member of the Clarke cavalry, was killed. Then returning to Clarke county the subject of this notice engaged in farming until 1869, after which for ten years he was in business at Baltimore, Md. Since then he has conducted a warehouse business at Berryville, in which he has been quite successful. He is a member of the J. E. B. Stuart camp, Confederate Veterans, at Berryville. In 1866 he was married to Miss Eliza Blackburn, and they have four children, one of whom, Blackburn Smith, is engaged in the practice of law, and is the organizer of the Stonewall chapter, Daughters of the Confederacy, and the J. E. B. Stuart camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans No. 28, both of which organizations are now in a flourishing condition at Berryville.

Lieutenant George A. Smith, of Richmond, Va., who did arduous and devoted service with the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, and had the honor of attending President Davis in the last hours of the Confederacy, was born at Richmond, Va., in 1844. He was reared and educated at that city, and employed in his youth as a clerk in the old Farmers' bank of Virginia. In this position he was exempt from military service when the war broke out, but his desire was not for relief from duty, and in March, 1862, being about eighteen years of age, he enlisted as a private in the Third Richmond Howitzers. With this gallant command he participated in the Peninsular campaign, including the battles of Ellerson's Mill, Gaines' Mill, Frayser's Farm, and Malvern Hill. Subsequently he was in battle at Charleston, Va., Sharpsburg, Md., and at

Fredericksburg. In the latter desperate struggle, on December 13, 1862, he was badly wounded, losing his left arm, and receiving a severe wound in the left leg from a piece of shell. He was incapacitated for further service with his battery, but when he was able to render less exacting duty he received a commission from the secretary of war as lieutenant, and was assigned to the staff of Gen. Arnold Elzey, then in command of the department of Richmond. Finding little to do in this position he entered the chief quartermaster's department of Richmond, Va., and in the spring of 1864 reported to General Winder, provost marshal, with whom he served four or five months. Subsequently he was assigned to duty as second lieutenant of the President's Guard, and in this capacity he served at the home of President Davis until Richmond was evacuated. He then accompanied the presidential party southward, having military charge of the railroad train from Richmond to Danville, and continued with the party until the guard was disbanded at Washington, Ga., May 3, 1865. On that date he received the following letter by order of the president, which expresses better than anything which can be written now, the character of the service which he had rendered:

Washington, Ga., May 3, 1865.

Lieutenant Smith, President's Guard.

My Dear Sir: The president, owing to his heavy duties now preventing him acknowledging your valuable services under his hand, requests me to express to you his earnest and heartfelt thanks to you and to the men now under your command. For the sufferings undergone in behalf of your country at this trying moment he will entertain a grateful memory. You have been zealous, steadfast, and brave, in times of trial. He now bids you an affectionate adieu. Very truly and respectfully, Your obedient servant,

Wm. Preston Johnston, Col. and A. D. C.

Lieutenant Smith was paroled at Augusta, Ga., May 7th, by Major-General Upton, and he then returned to Richmond, where he resumed a business career. In these pursuits he has prospered and is now engaged in dealing in railroad supplies. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Howitzer association, of which he has held the office of president.

Herbert L. Smith, since the war an influential citizen of Norfolk, was born in that county March 4, 1842. His grandfather, Arthur Smith, was a native of Nansemond county, and his father, Dr. Arthur R. Smith, was born at Suffolk in December, 1805. The latter, a well-known physician, acted as a surgeon in the service of the Confederate States from 1863 to 1865 at the Stewart hospital, Richmond, and died in 1866 at Catonsville, Md. Dr. Smith was wedded to Jane E. Herbert, daughter of James Edward Herbert, of Norfolk county. She survived until December, 1895. Their son, Herbert L., was reared in Norfolk county until 1856 when the family removed to Portsmouth, where he was educated at Webster's military institute. In April, 1861, he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Old Dominion Guards, commanded by Capt. Edward Kerns, and did duty at Pinner's Point until the evacuation of Norfolk and Portsmouth. On May 9, 1862, he secured a transfer to the cavalry, and became a private in Burroughs' battalion, afterward known as the Fifteenth Virginia cavalry regiment and still later as the Fifth cavalry. In Company

K. of this command, in which two of his brothers were also enrolled, he served during the remainder of the war. At first assigned to picket duty between Portsmouth and Petersburg, he subsequently participated in the battles of Seven Pines, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, Reams' Station, several engagements on the Rapidan, and all the fighting during the latter part of the war in the Shenandoah valley. At Appomattox he was present, but when the word surrender came down the line, he with other cavalymen, made their escape and did not capitulate until subsequently at Richmond, where he was paroled April 16, 1865. After the close of hostilities he made his home at Norfolk, where he has since been engaged in the development of stone mining, and investments of various kinds, in which he has generally met with a notable degree of financial success. He is president and principal stockholder of the Cape Fear buff stone company, president of the Stone Mountain granite and timber company, and treasurer of the Stone Mountain railroad company. For ten years he has served the city as superintendent of the water works. December 28, 1868, Mr. Smith was married to Mrs. Hennie K. Vermillion, widow of Lieut. Dennis Vermillion, who fell at the battle of Malvern Hill. They have four children living: Arthur R., Blanche Livingston, wife of William Camp, of Norfolk; Herbert L., Jr., and Henry Garrett, the latter bearing the name of the father of Mrs. Smith, who was a prosperous farmer of Norfolk county. The two brothers of Mr. Smith who served in the Fifth cavalry, were Arthur R., who died in New Orleans in 1867, and Robert Worthington, who after the war was the proprietor of the Ocean View hotel and died at Norfolk in September, 1895.

John Smith, of Portsmouth, a participant in both the Mexican war and the war of the Confederacy, was born in Norfolk county September 15, 1826, the son of James and Elizabeth (Cubbage) Smith, natives of Delaware. He was reared in the latter State, where his parents returned during his infancy. At the age of thirteen years he went to sea, and was employed ten years as a sailor, spending three years five months and sixteen days of this period upon the United States frigate Congress, under Commodore Stockton, and taking part in the service of that vessel in the Mexican war. After leaving the sea he followed the restaurant and hotel business in Norfolk and Portsmouth until 1861, when on April 20th, he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Old Dominion Guard, Company K, Ninth Virginia regiment. He served with his company at Pinner's Point, and was then detached and appointed ordnance gunner by the secretary of the navy. After the evacuation he went to Petersburg and for some time was employed in the transfer of heavy ordnance from that place to Danville. During the Seven Days' campaign he was in charge of an ordnance train under Colonel DeLagnel. In July, 1862, at the reorganization he was honorably discharged as over thirty-five years of age. Since the war he has been engaged in business at Portsmouth, where he is highly regarded as an enterprising and upright citizen. He has served in the city council at different times for fourteen years, and during two years held the position of chairman of the local Democratic committee. He is a member of Stonewall camp, United Confederate Veterans, and

vice-president of the Mexican Veterans association of Virginia. On March 3, 1853, he was married to Martha L. Anderson, of Washington, D. C.

Captain John Holmes Smith, one of the original members of the Lynchburg Home Guard, was born August 12, 1838, in Bedford county, Va., but was soon brought by his parents to Lynchburg, where he was reared and educated. When the Lynchburg Home Guard was organized November 8, 1859, on account of the recent invasion of the State by John Brown, and the threats of further trouble, he was in the list of privates and became third corporal when the company was called out by the governor and mustered into the service on April 24, 1861. It became Company G of the Eleventh Virginia infantry, which at the battle of Manassas formed part of Longstreet's brigade, and was commanded by Col. Samuel Garland, Jr., original captain of the Lynchburg company. Corporal Smith was promoted lieutenant in February, 1862, and captain soon afterward, serving in the latter rank until the end of the war. As senior captain he was in command of the Eleventh regiment during the retreat of Lee's army from Petersburg, and at the battle of Sailor's Creek, where his division surrendered, he commanded the right regiment in the line of battle. His first fight was at Blackburn's Ford, under Longstreet, July 18, 1861; Manassas soon followed; then the action at Dranesville. The Peninsular battles came next—preceded by skirmishing—Yorktown, Williamsburg, where he for the first time commanded his company, and then the hard fighting at Seven Pines, where a bullet carried away his left elbow joint, in consequence of which he missed all the battles of that campaign. His next battle was historic Gettysburg, where he led his company in the famous charge of Pickett's division, and was again wounded, this time in the leg, and was incapacitated for active field duty until the following September. But, on being restored he fought at the engagement with Butler at Drewry's Bluff, and in the brilliant battle called the Second Cold Harbor, where the Confederates repulsed the Federals until they refused to charge. In command of the Eleventh regiment he took part in the engagement near Chester Station, June 16, 1864, and on the following day led the command in another brisk action, which was witnessed by Gen. Robert E. Lee, who highly complimented the division for skill and gallantry. Subsequently during the long siege of Petersburg and Richmond he served with his command on the Chesterfield line, in Pickett's division of Longstreet's corps, and in the spring of 1865 participated in the actions at Dinwiddie Court House, March 31st, and at Five Forks, April 1st. In the unfortunate disaster at Sailor's Creek, April 6th, he was captured, and was sent to the Old Capitol prison, and three weeks later to Johnson's island, Ohio, where, with other officers, he was held two and a half months after the surrender at Appomattox, not being released until the last of June, 1865. At the first session of the legislature after the war he was made brigadier-general of State troops, at that date an office of much importance. In 1871 he led in the reorganization of his old company, the Home Guards, which is still maintained and served as captain until 1876. During the first few years of his life at Lynchburg after the return of peace, he was engaged in the tobacco business with an uncle, and in 1872 he

began the manufacture of tobacco in partnership with his brother, G. W. Smith, which was continued until 1893. Since that date he has devoted his attention to fire insurance agency.

John M. Smith, a prominent business man of Salem, was born in Tazewell county in 1846, and there spent his infancy and youth until at the age of sixteen years, he became a soldier in the army of Northern Virginia. He enlisted in May, 1862, in the Sixteenth regiment of Virginia cavalry, distinguished in the record of the brigade of Gen. Albert G. Jenkins. With this command he participated in the defeat of Milroy at Winchester, in the second and third days' battles at Gettysburg, at Chancellorsville, Spottsylvania Court House, Yellow Tavern, Trevilian's, Brandy Station, and other affairs in which this active cavalry command found itself involved until in the spring of 1865, when operating in defense of the Confederate communications and sources of mineral supply in southwestern Virginia, a field where the gallant Jenkins himself lost his life, Private Smith received a gunshot wound through the body and right lung, while participating in the affair with Averell's cavalry at Wytheville, Va., May 10, 1864. Before this, in an engagement at Boonsboro, Md., he had been slightly wounded, without being compelled to leave the service, but this latter injury put an end to duty in the field, and rendered him an invalid for two years after he was sent home on account of disability on March 6, 1865. When the surrender occurred he was at home and was paroled at Princeton, Va. It was not until 1867 that his physical condition permitted him to find employment in a store at Abb's Valley, where he remained and in 1869 engaged in the management of a general store, which he conducted with much success until 1889. Since the latter date he has resided at Salem, and carried on a coal business. He served as commissioner of revenue of Tazewell county from 1872 to 1876, and in 1896 was elected to his third term as a member of the city council of Salem. In 1872 he was married to Margaret S., daughter of the late John W. Taylor, of Tazewell county, and they have four children: Thomas T., Mary R., Pearl L. and Charles B. Jonathan Smith, father of the foregoing, a native of Tazewell county, entered the military service in 1863, as a member of Preston's Home Guards, who served in protection of the salt wells in Washington county, and remained on duty until the close of the war. His honorable career, which included service for many years as magistrate in Tazewell county, was closed by death on June 28, 1895.

Orlando Fairfax Smith, of Washington, D. C., was born at Alexandria, Va., in 1842. His father, John W. Smith, a citizen of Maryland, served in the war of the Confederacy as a sergeant, and died at the age of seventy-eight years. His grandfather, John M. Smith, also a native of Maryland, was a soldier of the Maryland Line during the war of the Revolution, and held the rank of lieutenant. Mr. Smith was reared and educated at Alexandria, and in 1858 became a member of the Old Dominion Rifles, a volunteer military organization formed at that time, and with which he participated in the following year at Harper's Ferry in the capture of John Brown and the suppression of the attempted insurrection. The company was again under arms as soon as Virginia had seceded, and he served with the command in May, 1861, on guard duty at Four Mile Run. Soon afterward the company joined the

other forces at Manassas, and was organized in the Seventeenth Virginia infantry as Company H. As a private in this company he served throughout the war. He was engaged in battle at Bull Run on July 18, 1861, at Manassas three days later, at Yorktown, Williamsburg and the Seven Days' fighting of the Peninsular campaign, at the close of which, while engaged in a charge upon a Federal battery, he fell and was run over by a gun. The result of this accident was the breaking of his arm, and his capture by the Federals. As a prisoner of war he was sent to Fort Delaware, where he was held for four months. When captured he had the flag of his company, which he managed to secrete about his body, and preserved it during his imprisonment, so that he had the satisfaction, when exchanged and out of the hands of the Federals, but in their sight, to unwrap his flag, fasten it to a hoop-pole and flaunt it in their faces. Rejoining his command, Private Smith served in the trenches at Petersburg eight months, fought at Brandy Station, where he was shot in the right thigh and received a saber cut in the wrist, and at Five Forks, where he was captured, but escaped during the following night, at Sailor's Creek and at Appomattox, where he surrendered with the army and was paroled.

Robert R. Smith, now a prominent citizen and official of Nansemond county, was identified in his military career with the Thirteenth Virginia regiment cavalry corps, army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Nansemond county in 1845, the son of Maj. Robert R. Smith, a wealthy farmer and merchant who represented Nansemond county in the Virginia assembly. His grandfather, Washington Smith, was also a prominent citizen of this county. Mr. Smith was attending school in Dinwiddie county when Virginia united her fortunes with the Confederacy, and he subsequently was in school in Amelia county until the capture of Roanoke island, when he returned home and enlisted as a private in the Nansemond cavalry, under Captain Brewer. With this command he served in the early part of 1862 in the operations in North Carolina, acting as a vidette between the Chowan river and Suffolk, and in the operations on the Blackwater, under General Huger, until he was honorably discharged on account of physical disability. In December, 1863, having recovered his health, he rejoined his company, now Company 1 of the Thirteenth Virginia cavalry, commanded by Colonel Chambliss, and attached to the brigade of W. H. F. Lee (afterward Chambliss' brigade), in Fitzhugh Lee's division of Stuart's cavalry, and stationed at Charlottesville. During 1864 he took part in all the fighting of his command, beginning at the Wilderness and Deep Bottom, where General Chambliss fell, and the various operations about Richmond and Petersburg. At the time of the surrender of the army he was detailed to obtain horses for his company, and was at Forge's depot in the midst of the Federal forces. He reached home about the 20th of April, 1865, and soon afterward, under the terms of President Johnson's amnesty proclamation, found it necessary as a Confederate having an estate of more than \$20,000, to spend six or seven hundred dollars to regain his citizenship. Since then he has been engaged in farming, also for a few years being connected with the mercantile trade, and for a time managing the hotel at Suffolk. He served eight years as sergeant for



THOMAS W. SMITH

the town of Suffolk, and since 1889 has held the office of clerk of the Nansemond county court. In 1866 he was married to Laura B., daughter of Mills C. Daughtrey, of Suffolk.

Lieutenant Thomas Washington Smith, of Suffolk, prominent among the gallant soldiers of southeastern Virginia, and since the war one of the most widely known and popular gentlemen of the State, was born at Somerton, Nansemond county, June 1, 1832. He is the son of Washington Smith, of that county, a prosperous planter and merchant, who served in defense of his country as a captain in the war of 1812. Colonel Smith was reared and educated amid the social environments of a great plantation of the ante-bellum days, where the virtues of hospitality and the requirements of manly honor reigned supreme. A son of the South by birth, instinct and education, and sustained by the dignity of ancestral rank and the resources of private fortune, he developed into an ideal Southern gentleman. His youth passed, he embarked in mercantile pursuits, to which he devoted himself for a few years at Suffolk and subsequently in North Carolina. Just before the outbreak of war in 1861 he returned to Suffolk, and being thoroughly devoted to the cause of Virginia and the Confederacy, raised a company for the defense of his State. He was elected second lieutenant of this company, which was assigned to the Sixteenth Virginia infantry regiment, and brigaded under the command of General Mahone, subsequently of General Weisiger, in Mahone's division of A. P. Hill's corps. With the splendid record of this brigade he was identified, much of the time in command of his company, until the close of the struggle. He participated in all the battles and campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia, bravely taking his place among the heroes who held the posts of danger; at Seven Pines and through the battles of the Seven Days, until McClellan was driven from before the threatened Confederate capital; in the second rout of the Federals at Manassas, and in the gallant defense of the passes of South Mountain, where the soldiers of the Confederacy were no less valorous than Roland in the pass at Roncesvalle, at Sharpsburg, in the Wilderness, on the Petersburg lines fighting against tremendous odds and making the Crater the burial place of the enemy instead of a gate to Richmond—through all this tremendous struggle he did manfully and devotedly and modestly all that a brave man could do for the cause to which he had devoted his life. Three times he was wounded, once severely and twice slightly, at Spottsylvania Court House, Malvern Hill and Hatcher's Run. With a rare comradeship for the men in the ranks, he repeatedly refused offers of promotion. On one occasion General Mahone sent a messenger to inform him that he was promoted quartermaster of the regiment, but Lieutenant Smith promptly replied, "I won't accept it." This was the off-hand expression of his feelings which he supposed the general's aide would translate into the proper forms of official communication. But the words were reported to Mahone verbatim, which caused that brave warrior to exclaim: "Well, we'll see if he won't." The lieutenant was required to interview the general on the subject, but Mahone respected his generous desire to stay in the line of duty with the men whom he had enlisted for war, and permitted him to retain his position. At Appomattox the remnants of two companies

were under his command, and they surrendered together to the inevitable. When further warlike endeavor was in vain he returned to his home, to give his future efforts in his country's cause in the peaceful channels of industry. He again engaged in the mercantile pursuits he had abandoned, but two years later disposed of this business, and since then has given his entire attention to the management of his estate, and his financial interests, which are important. For three years he held the position of president of the Farmers' bank, and in 1889 he became president of the Suffolk national bank. In civil, as in military life, he has disregarded title, and has never permitted himself to be drawn into the strife for public office. He was elected lieutenant-colonel of the Fourth Virginia regiment, in Gen. Fitz Lee's brigade, since the war and resigned the position in 1892. A camp of Confederate Veterans was organized in Suffolk in 1895, known as Tom Smith camp, C. V., in honor of Lieutenant Smith and he was elected its commander. No man in southeastern Virginia is more widely known and honored. His home life was one of typical happiness, beautified by the gentle companionship of his wife, until her death in 1890. She was Harriet G. Borland, to whom he was married in 1869. She was a daughter of Dr. Roscius Borland, of North Carolina, and a niece of Senator Borland, of Arkansas, who served as a colonel in the Confederate States army. One of the strongest characteristics of Colonel Smith is his loyalty and enduring friendship for the survivors of the Confederate war, and it may also be said that there can be no more convincing evidence of his manly and noble nature than the love and respect which are accorded him by his comrades. He has a particularly warm place in the hearts of Confederate veterans on account of his generosity in erecting at his own expense, in 1889, an imposing monumental shaft to commemorate the Confederate dead at Suffolk. Upon the unveiling of this splendid tribute to his comrades, the beauty and chivalry of eastern Virginia congregated to do honor to the fallen heroes. The governor of the State, Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, was present, and some of the ablest orators of the mother of States contributed their eloquence to make the occasion impressive and memorable. On the west side of the shaft is inscribed: "Erected by Thomas W. Smith in memory of his comrades— Confederate Dead."

On the south side:

To the Memory of the Confederate Dead:
 This shaft, on which we carve no name,
 Shall guide Virginia's youth—
 A sign post on the road to fame,
 To honor and to truth.
 A silent sentry, it shall stand
 To guard through coming time
 Their graves who died for native land
 And duty most sublime.

On the north side:

With shouts above the cannon's roar
 They join the legion gone before;
 They bravely fought, they bravely fell;
 They wore the Gray and wore it well.

William Alexander Smith, a veteran of the Third Virginia regiment, Kemper's brigade, Pickett's division, army of Northern Virginia, was born in Dinwiddie county in 1840. His father, John Smith, a native of the same county, and a soldier of the war of 1812, was the son of Archibald Smith, a native of England. At the time when events were crowding rapidly to the crisis which brought about the formation of the Confederacy, Mr. Smith was preparing for the profession of medicine, in New York city, but he laid aside his studies, and on April 20, 1861, enlisted in Company E of the Third Virginia regiment of infantry. During 1861 he was stationed at Smithfield on the south side of the James, and thence was transferred to the peninsula, where he participated in the battles of Williamsburg and Seven Pines. On the latter field he was taken with pneumonia, which caused his detention at Chimborazo hospital for a time, but he was again in the ranks in the battle of Second Manassas, and subsequently fought at Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. He was then appointed ordnance-sergeant of the Third regiment, and in this capacity he participated in its subsequent service in the Suffolk campaign, the Virginia campaign and the defense of Petersburg. Upon the evacuation of Richmond he was left in hospital and was paroled there. A few years after the close of hostilities Mr. Smith resumed his medical studies in New York, and receiving the degree of M. D., entered upon the practice in Dinwiddie county, and continued in this professional work for ten years. He then gave his attention to farming until 1893, when he was elected superintendent of the almshouse at Petersburg. He is prominent in his church and the I. O. O. F. and is a comrade of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1869 he was married to Miss Mary E. King, of Sussex county.

William Pritchard Smith, a well-known business man of Richmond, was born at Fredericksburg, July 31, 1840. When he reached the age of sixteen years he went to Richmond, and was a resident of that city when the war broke out. In July, 1861, he enlisted as a private in the First Richmond Howitzers, and subsequently participated with that noted artillery command in the campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia until after the battle of Gettysburg, where he was severely wounded. Among the engagements in which he had the honor of doing gallant duty were, besides the great Pennsylvania encounter already mentioned, the actions at Ball's Bluff, Williamsburg, Second Manassas, two engagements at Fredericksburg and two at Harper's Ferry, and Chancellorsville. At Gettysburg he suffered wounds which required the amputation of his right leg and a finger from his left hand, and falling into the hands of the enemy, lay for six weeks in the general hospital at that place, and was then transferred to the hospital-prison at West's building, Baltimore, and six weeks later was exchanged and admitted to the hospital at Richmond. When sufficiently recovered, in the November following, he was detailed to a position in the treasury department of the Confederate government at Richmond, and served in that capacity about one year. On receiving an honorable discharge he entered the commission business at Richmond, but on the evacuation of the city was so unfortunate as to lose his property and business. He then passed several years in mercantile pursuits in North Carolina,

after which he returned to Richmond and became interested in the firm of Taliaferro & Co., commission merchants, an association which he continued for twenty-four years. Since 1892 he has been occupied with various business enterprises and is now general manager of the Virginia abstract company, of Richmond. He maintains an active fellowship with his former comrades and is a member and past commander of R. E. Lee' camp, Confederate Veterans, a member and ex-president of the Howitzer association, and is past grand commander of the grand camp of Virginia, over which he presided at two sessions.

Williamson Smith, a worthy Confederate veteran who at present holds the position of city sergeant of Portsmouth, was born at that city February 13, 1843. His parents, Wilson and Lydia (Wakefield) Smith, both died while he was yet an infant, and he was reared by his mother's sister, Mary Ann Collins, wife of William Collins, of Portsmouth. On April 17, 1861, he enlisted in the service of Virginia as a private in Company A of the Sixteenth Virginia regiment of infantry. His regiment, which was assigned to Mahone's brigade, served until after Chancellorsville in Longstreet's corps, and subsequently in the corps of A. P. Hill, and throughout in the division of General Anderson; and its gallant actions during all the campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia were shared by Private Smith. He was a member of the sharpshooters of Mahone's brigade, well remembered for their effective service. Among the important battles in which he participated were: Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, Reams' Station, the Crater and Five Forks. He was captured by the enemy at Chancellorsville, but fortunately was held as a prisoner only eleven days. At Five Forks, in 1865, he was captured a second time, and on this occasion was held at Point Lookout until June 20, 1865. After his release he returned to Portsmouth, where he has been engaged mainly during the subsequent years as a painter, and for five years in the retail grocery trade. In May, 1890, he was elected city sergeant, an office to which he was re-elected in 1892, 1894, 1896 and 1898. He is a charter member of Stonewall camp, United Confederate Veterans, is fraternally connected with the Odd Fellows, Royal Arcanum and Heptasophs, and holds a membership in the Central Methodist church. He was married November 26, 1868, to Roselia Reiger, who died in September, 1887, leaving six children. He was married October 27, 1892, to Miss Elizabeth Goodson.

William A. Smoot, of Alexandria, for many years prominent among the United Confederate Veterans of Virginia, was in 1895 elected major-general and grand commander of the organization for that State. He is a native Virginian, born at Alexandria August 30, 1840, where he was reared and educated, and has always had his home except during the war. When it was decided in the spring of 1861 that Virginia should ally her fortunes with the sister States of the South, he was one of the foremost in urging and approving of that step, and was determined to go into the field if necessary to defend the action of the commonwealth. Though he had nearly reached his majority his health was not robust, so

that it was doubtful if he could meet the physical requirements then insisted on in the selection of soldiers. Fully resolved, however, to do what he could, he enlisted in June, 1861, as a private in the Alexandria Rifles, an old organization of militia which in the following April was mustered into the service of the Confederate States as Company A of the Seventeenth Virginia regiment. At that time he was rejected on account of his physical disability, but he persisted on remaining with the company and served without pay as a volunteer until the reorganization of the army before Yorktown, in April, 1862. Then upon the advice of Surgeon M. M. Lewis, he enlisted in the Black Horse Troop, or Company H, of the Fourth Virginia cavalry. With this gallant command he served as a private throughout the remainder of the war, soon after his enlistment going into action in the fights at Williamsburg, Va., and vicinity. He was with the famous Black Horse Troop under Capt. W. H. Payne, afterward promoted general, and Capt. Robert Randolph, in Stuart's raid around McClellan's army in the Peninsular campaign, with them under Stonewall Jackson, and in all their engagements when not prevented by the many wounds he received in their numerous encounters with the enemy. He was first wounded in the action at Frayser's Farm, on the peninsula, June 30, 1862, receiving a severe injury. At Turkey creek he was again wounded, and again more severely at the second battle of Manassas, August 29, 1862. In the fall of 1862, at Liberty Mills, he was slightly wounded in the right foot, and in the spring of 1864 while on a scouting expedition near Warrenton, Va., received such severe gunshot wounds that the Federals, to whose mercies he was necessarily left, did not disturb him, the wounds being to all appearances mortal. With indomitable pluck he recovered from his injuries and rejoined his comrades, with whom he fought to the end, notwithstanding still further slight wounds received in the fall of 1864, near Nokesville, Va., where he distinguished himself by the capture of the stand of colors of the Fourteenth New York regiment, and in the spring of 1865, just before the evacuation of Petersburg, while participating in Coartz' raid in Dinwiddie county. He was paroled at Winchester in May, 1865, and then returned to his home in Alexandria, and embarked in civil affairs with the same energy and devotion to duty that characterized his career as a soldier. He has given no attention to political honors, has never held office, nor in fact voted but once in his life, that solitary act of franchise being a ballot for President Davis. He has devoted himself to business with great success, building up a great coal and fertilizing-manufacture industry that employs hundreds of men, at Alexandria. In all movements for the public good he is glad to take a part, so that he has been prominent in many useful directions which have brought to him the love and esteem of the community. A man of such a nature could not, after four years of comradeship in camp and fight, sever the ties which bound him to his fellows in the army of Northern Virginia. On the contrary he cherishes with all the strength of his nature the memories of perils past and the society of his comrades who have survived. In the organization of R. E. Lee camp, No. 2, of the Confederate Veterans, at Alexandria, he took an active part and was elected its first lieutenant commander, subsequently serving as its commander from 1886 to

1896. His devotion to the order, the prominence he has achieved in civil life and his honorable record in the past, were appropriately recognized by his election to the State commandership in 1895.

Francis Sorrel, M. D., of Roanoke, who rendered distinguished services in the medical department of the Confederate States army, was born at Savannah, Ga., in the year 1827. In 1839 he was sent to Princeton, N. J., for his education, and was graduated there in 1846. He then pursued the study of medicine in the university of Pennsylvania, and was graduated professionally in 1848. In the following year he entered the United States army as an assistant surgeon, and served in that capacity toward the close with the rank of captain until 1856, when he resigned his commission. The following year was spent in Europe and upon his return he went to California, where he speedily attained prominence and was elected to the California legislature in 1860. The impending crisis in the East, however, made his stay on the Pacific coast of short duration. In June, 1861, he returned to his native region to offer his services to the government of the Confederate States at Richmond. He was promptly commissioned as a surgeon in the regular army, and his experience and unusual ability were recognized by assignment to special duty of great importance. He was charged with the erection and management of the general hospital system of the army, with headquarters at Richmond, where he remained on duty until the evacuation of the capital. In March, 1865, he was married to Mrs. Rives, widow of Dr. L. Rives, and daughter of General Watts, of Roanoke, and since the close of the war period he has resided at Roanoke, where he leads on his farm, "The Barrens," the simple, retired life of a country gentleman.

Thomas M. Southgate, who rendered efficient service to the government of the Confederate States throughout the period of the war, is a native of King and Queen county, of thorough Virginian ancestry and first made his home at Norfolk in 1853, and has ever since been a resident of that city. His Confederate service was rendered mainly in the quartermaster and flag of truce service upon the James river. At the time of the celebrated naval encounter in Hampton Roads, he was master of the steamer William Seldon, which conveyed General Huger and staff to a point whence they could easily witness the fight between the Virginia and the Monitor. Few men are yet living who so fully witnessed and can describe with such accuracy and vividness the details of that famous engagement. Captain Southgate was particularly distinguished for his minute knowledge of the James river and its obstructions in war times, being one of the two men who could safely pilot a vessel through the enemy's torpedoes without injury. It is related that a third man attempted this feat and lost his vessel and came very near losing his own life. His whole career was a hazardous one, made so particularly by the crowds of Federal soldiers who were exchanged in vessels under his command. Since the war he has been continuously in the employment of the Old Dominion steamship company, as master for nearly thirty years of one of the company's vessels in North Carolina and Virginia waters. Thomas S. Southgate, a son of the foregoing, is a native of Richmond, removing to Norfolk in

childhood. At the latter city he received his education and business training, and he is now one of its most enterprising and aggressive business men. As senior member of the firm of T. S. Southgate & Co., brokers in flour, grain, provisions, etc., he does an extensive business, and represents exclusively in Southern markets some of the leading importers, millers, packers and manufacturers of the United States. The house has a reputation for honorable dealing that is unsurpassed and enjoys intimate relations with the entire jobbing trade of the city. Mr. Southgate has been connected with the business life of this flourishing city since the age of fifteen years, and established his commission business in 1892. He is also an extensive investor in real estate, is director of the Bank of Commerce, and president of the Young Men's Christian association.

J. A. Speight, D. D., of Norfolk, editor of the "Atlantic Baptist," was a splendid Confederate soldier from 1861 to 1865. He is a native of North Carolina, where his family has been prominent since colonial times. He was born in Gates county in 1840, the son of Rev. Henry Speight, a distinguished Baptist minister, and his wife, Olivia Pruden, daughter of John Pruden, a North Carolina planter. His great-grandfather, Jeremiah Speight, was a brother of Senator Speight, and a cousin of Governor Speight, both prominent in the history of the State. At the age of twenty-one Dr. Speight entered heartily into the cause of the Confederate States, and enlisted in Company B of the Fifth North Carolina regiment, which served with gallantry in the campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia. He participated in the first battle of Manassas, then at Williamsburg in 1862, and the succeeding Seven Days' battles before Richmond, followed by the northward campaign in which he was engaged at the second battle of Manassas, South Mountain and Sharpsburg. He participated in the bloody encounters at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and in the Pennsylvania campaign which followed, doing the duty of a brave soldier at Gettysburg until he was captured by the enemy. After this he was confined at Fort Delaware and Point Lookout during the winter of 1863-64, but on being exchanged he rejoined his command in time to participate in the desperate struggle at Spottsylvania Court House. He fought at Cold Harbor soon afterward, and was with Early in his Valley campaign until wounded and captured at Winchester in September, 1864. He was again confined at Point Lookout and held there until the surrender of the army, when he was permitted to return to his home in North Carolina. Soon afterward, having decided to enter the ministry, he pursued a course of theological study at the Columbian university at Washington, D. C., and was graduated in 1871. He immediately entered the ministry of the Baptist church and served in succession at Gatesville, Kempsville, Suffolk and Petersburg, afterward acting as agent for the Wake Forest college, North Carolina. Subsequently he began a career as a religious editor in which he has been notably distinguished. At first associate editor of the "Biblical Recorder," at Raleigh, N. C., he next held the editorship of the Asheville (N. C.) "Baptist," and on April 4, 1894, established the "Atlantic Baptist" at Norfolk, an influential weekly journal of which he has charge at the present time. He has been a liberal contributor to the religious press of

the country, since his connection with the ministry. He has also served as president of the board of trustees of Rutherford college, North Carolina, the institution which conferred upon him, on his fifty-second birthday, the degree of doctor of divinity. Dr. Speight was married in April, 1865, to Elizabeth, daughter of John Williams, of North Carolina, and they have three children: J. R. Speight, M. D., of Norfolk; Willie Etta, wife of C. T. Peal, of North Carolina; and Clara Augusta, wife of E. M. Drake, of Sunbeam, Va.

E. Leslie Spence, of Richmond, who served gallantly in the army of Northern Virginia during the war of the Confederacy, and since that period has taken a prominent part in the military organizations of the State, was born at the city of Richmond in November, 1841. He was reared and educated at his native city and on April 19, 1861, enlisted in the defense of the State as a private in the Richmond Grays, a famous military organization which was mustered into the service as Company G of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment. He served with honor in the actions and campaigns of this regiment, fighting at Seven Pines, French's Farm, Malvern Hill, White Oak Swamp, Second Manassas and Crampton's Gap, Maryland. In the latter gallant action he was wounded September 14, 1862, and his injuries were so severe that upon his convalescence in the spring of 1863, he was unable to return to the active service of his regiment, but was detailed for duty with the general court martial department of Henrico. He continued in this capacity until January, 1865, when he rejoined his regiment near Petersburg and participated in the subsequent action at Hatcher's Run, where he was again slightly wounded. On February 22, 1865, he was transferred to the Twenty-fifth Virginia battalion, with which he served until Appomattox. After the surrender he returned to Richmond upon a mule, which he was able to sell on his arrival for \$120. He at once embarked in business at Richmond, and during the subsequent years has met with notable success. In 1871 he was prominent in the reorganization of the Richmond Grays, and in 1886 was elected captain. He commanded this noted organization during its participation in the funeral of General Grant at New York in 1885, in the parade at the first inauguration of President Cleveland, and during a riot at Newport News in 1887. In the latter year he resigned his rank in the Grays, and in 1890 he was elected captain of Company E of the First Virginia regiment of infantry, a command he has held for several years. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, Confederate Veterans, and held the position of commander in 1894. A brother of Captain Spence, George A. Spence, was a private in Company H of the Twelfth Virginia regiment, and was killed at Hatcher's Run, at the age of thirty-four years.

Thomas W. Spindle, of Roanoke, was born in Spotsylvania county in 1835, of an old and worthy family of English descent. He entered the service of Virginia from Montgomery county April 17, 1861, as a private in the Fourth regiment of infantry, which was assigned to the brigade under command of T. J. Jackson, soon to be famous as the Stonewall brigade. He served with this command, with promotion to sergeant in the fall of 1861, until the battle of Kernstown, at the outset of Jackson's campaign in the valley, when he was wounded and captured while carrying the

flag of the regiment and leading the charge against the Federal troops behind the stone fence. Being sent to Winchester by the enemy, he was recaptured there two months later and was regularly exchanged in August. He then assisted in the organization of a company of Partisan Rangers in Montgomery county, of which he was elected lieutenant. He participated in the operations of this company as an independent command during the fall of 1862 and the succeeding winter, during that time being engaged in several raids in West Virginia and Kentucky against Federal General Morgan. The command was subsequently assigned to the Twenty-fifth Virginia cavalry as Company E, and during the greater part of the remainder of the war he acted as adjutant of this regiment. In addition to the operations named, he participated in the battles of Darkesville, Port Republic, Moorefield, and Winchester, September 25, 1864. In the latter fight he had a horse shot under him, and for his gallantry on this field he was recommended for promotion to the rank of captain. He did not participate in the surrender of the army and was never paroled. After the close of hostilities he was engaged in mercantile pursuits at Christiansburg until 1892, and then removed to Roanoke, where he has conducted a successful real estate business. He served as supervisor of Montgomery county for several years, and for ten years as chairman of the Democratic county executive committee. In January, 1870, he was married to Lavinia C., daughter of Rev. Cephas Shelburne, deceased, and they have six children living: Lucile C., Benjamin Lee, Thomas W. Jr., Virginia Allen, Lily and Cephas S.

George A. Sprinkel, of Culpeper, was one of those Confederate soldiers who were so unfortunate as to be deprived of his liberty for many months, during which he experienced the discomforts, deprivations and miseries of Northern military prisons. Born in 1844, in Madison county, he enlisted when about nineteen years of age, in the spring of 1863, in Company C of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, under Col. W. C. Wickham. This regiment was part of the Fitzhugh Lee brigade of Stuart's cavalry, and took an active part in the Gettysburg and Bristoe campaigns which followed the enlistment of Private Sprinkel. He was a faithful soldier and was at the front in all these engagements, with few exceptions. On January 31, 1864, he was captured by the enemy, and being taken to the Old Capitol prison at Washington, was held there four and a half months. Then transferred to Fort Delaware, he was imprisoned at that post for twelve months, making in all over sixteen months of weary imprisonment. When released in June, 1865, hostilities had long since ceased in Virginia, and he returned to his home and went to farming for a time as did the great majority of the returned Confederate soldiers. Then taking up the study of dentistry, he was graduated at the Baltimore dental college in 1868. For five years he practiced his profession at Madison, then removing to Culpeper, his present home. He has been successful in his practice, and is prominent socially. With loyalty to the heroic memories of the past, he maintains a membership in A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1868 Dr. Sprinkel was married to Miss Hume, of Madison, and they have five children living.

George W. Sprinkle, M. D., of Marion, was born in Smyth county in September, 1846. When about seventeen years of age he entered the Confederate service as a private in the Kanawha Rangers, Company I of the Eighth Virginia cavalry, an organization made up of five southwest Virginia and five border companies. He was first introduced to war in the active fighting of the east Tennessee campaign under Gen. John S. Williams, in the battles about Greeneville, and his next battle occurred at Wytheville against Averell, soon afterward. He then served in the Lynchburg campaign which resulted in the defeat of the Federals, in the pursuit of whom he joined down the Shenandoah valley. He was with McCausland in the raid upon Chambersburg, Pa., which was burned in retaliation for the vandalism of Hunter's army, and fought under Early in the disastrous battle of Fisher's Hill, November 19, 1864. After a short time at home on furlough with military duties he joined his command before Petersburg, and shared the fighting of Rosser's cavalry during the spring of 1865. During the retreat from the Confederate capital he was detailed at Farmville to overtake the wagon train and hurry it to Lynchburg. Finally at Appomattox he did not surrender, but with a party of mounted comrades made his way through the Federal lines and attempted to join the army in North Carolina. Upon the close of hostilities he began the study of medicine, which he continued in the college of physicians and surgeons at Baltimore. After his graduation at this institution he practiced two years in Texas, then returning to Marion, where he is now one of the leading men in his profession. In 1872 he was married to Miss Alice V. Allen, and they have four children: Edna Itasco, Henry Allen, Maud French and Satt Bonham.

William H. Startzman, a well-known business man of Roanoke, was born in Berkeley county, now assigned to West Virginia, in 1838. In that county and in Jefferson he was reared and educated, and in 1859 he made his home in Franklin county, where he engaged in the work of a carriage builder, but abandoned that occupation in April, 1861, to become a private in Company B of the Twenty-fourth Virginia regiment of infantry. He went out with this command to defend the soil of the Old Dominion from invasion, and was among the troops concentrated on the plains of Manassas, but was not actively engaged at Bull Run and the rout of the Federals on July 21, 1861. After this campaign he was detailed in the quartermaster's department for about two years, and in August, 1863, was detailed to the ordnance department. After about a year of this duty he returned to the quartermaster's department, with which he remained until the evacuation of Richmond. He was under fire in many engagements, notably during the three days' fight at Gettysburg, and after the evacuation of the Confederate capital he served in the ranks with his regiment during the retreat. With thirty comrades, detailed to protect a wagon train, he amply displayed that unflinching and devoted courage that characterized the Confederate soldier, by gallantly repulsing two attacks by Sheridan's cavalry. They were finally run over by a brigade of cavalry, but even then were not captured. Rejoining the army he took part in the surrender at Appomattox, and then made his way to Rocky Mount, and thence in May, 1865, to Big Lick, since known as Roanoke, Va., where

he has ever since been engaged in business. He is an influential citizen, has served five years in the city council, and as mayor of the city in 1877-78.

Lieutenant Orren Darius Stearnes, a native of Franklin county, who gave his life to the Confederate cause, was a descendant of the Puritans of England, the founder of his family in America having come over to Massachusetts with Governor Winthrop in 1630. His father, Lewis Patrick Stearnes, was born in Franklin county, Mass. Mr. Stearnes was a farmer by occupation, and took to wife Temperance Ward, daughter of a Virginia soldier of the Mexican war. He entered the Confederate service in 1861 as orderly-sergeant of Company D, Fifty-eighth regiment, Virginia infantry, and at the reorganization was elected lieutenant. He was with the forces under Stonewall Jackson in the valley in the spring of 1862, and after participating in the battle of McDowell, was taken with typhoid fever, from which he died soon afterward in hospital at Staunton. His son, Lewis P. Stearnes, born December 31, 1849, was too young for military service during the war, but in the untimely loss of his father, the sorrow of his mother, and the impoverishment caused by the war, experienced much of the trials and hardships of that period. Finding it necessary at the age of sixteen to seek a livelihood, he entered the railroad service at Dublin, Va., and a year later became agent and telegraph operator at Salem, Va. During the following twenty years he continued in railroad agency, telegraph and express work at Wytheville, Roanoke and Salem, Va., Macon, Ga., Christiansburg, Montgomery, White Sulphur Springs, Lambert's Point and Norfolk, Va., except the years 1882-84, when he was engaged in hotel management at Kanawha Falls, Huntington and Charleston, W. Va. While traveling as an express messenger between Macon and Atlanta, Ga., he was slightly injured in a collision on the night of January 1, 1873, in which eight persons were killed. On April 1, 1890, he resigned his position with the Norfolk & Western railroad at Norfolk to engage in handling all the coal shipped by the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad to Newport News. At this city he has taken an active interest in the development of the port, is vice-president of the Peninsular electric light and power company, and a director of the Citizens' and Marine bank. He is influential in political affairs, has served as a member of the State Democratic committee, and in 1893 he was appointed by President Cleveland collector of customs for the district of Newport News, Yorktown and Old Point Comfort, for a term of four years. Mr. Stearnes was married October 17, 1874, to Miss Bentley King, of Pulaski county, Va., and they have three children living.

Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Stewart, distinguished among the Confederate soldiers of Norfolk county, was born at Deep Creek, September 25, 1838, the grandson of Alexander Stewart, who died from exposure as a soldier of the war of 1812, and great-grandson of Charles Stewart, who was an officer of the Fifteenth Virginia and Eleventh Virginia regiments in the war of the Revolution. He was educated at the university of Virginia. In 1859 he became a lieutenant of the Wise Light Dragoons, and in that rank entered the active service of the State April 22, 1861, with his company, which after a few weeks' service in patrolling the

beach from Ocean View to Sewell's Point, was disbanded. He then re-enlisted as captain of the Jackson Grays, and on March 8, 1862, commanded the rifle battery at Sewell's Point in the naval battle in which the Virginia participated, and on May 8th was engaged with the United States fleet. After the evacuation of Norfolk his command was assigned as Company A to the Sixty-first Virginia infantry, of which he was promoted major at the reorganization, and lieutenant-colonel two years later. He participated in all the important engagements of his command, including the fights at the Rappahannock bridge, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Brandy Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Shady Grove, Spottsylvania, commanded the brigade picket line at Hagerstown following Gettysburg, and after his promotion to lieutenant-colonel commanded his regiment until the close of the war, in the battles of North Anna River, Hanover Court House, Atlee's Station, Cold Harbor, Turkey Ridge, Wilcox's Farm, Gurley House, Reams' Station, the Crater, Davis' Farm, Burgess' Mill, Hatcher's Run, Amelia Court House, and finally surrendered at Appomattox Court House. He escaped with two wounds, received at Chancellorsville and Spottsylvania. After the war he resumed the practice of law at Portsmouth, and held the offices of commonwealth attorney and commissioner in chancery. He was also prominently connected with the journalism of the cities of Norfolk and Portsmouth. He is the author of an exceedingly graphic account of the desperate battle of the Crater, in which he was a distinguished participant.

Major Robert Stiles, of Richmond, a veteran of the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Woodford, Ky., in 1836. Entering Yale college, he was graduated there in 1857, and then embarked upon the profession of law. Becoming a resident of Richmond in the spring of 1861, he enlisted in the Richmond Howitzers immediately after the battle of Manassas of 1861, and served with that command until after Chancellorsville. He was then transferred to the engineer corps, with the rank of second lieutenant, in which capacity he served, in General Early's command, until after the battle of Gettysburg, when he rejoined the artillery as adjutant of Cabell's battalion. In the spring of 1865 he was promoted major of artillery and assigned to duty at Chaffee's bluff, where he served with gallantry and efficiency until the retreat, when he was assigned to command, and was among the forces compelled to capitulate at Sailor's Creek. As a prisoner of war he was sent to Johnson's island, Ohio, and subsequently to Fort Lafayette, and refusing to take the oath, was held until October, 1865. His military service with the army of Northern Virginia included all its battles except the Second Manassas and Sharpsburg, and was distinguished by bravery and devotion. Since the close of the war period he has been engaged in legal practice at Richmond.

Putnam Stith, well known at Norfolk as the manager and superintendent of the Virginia club, was born in Nottoway county, June 22, 1840. He is the son of Putnam Stith, a planter, and directly descended from the founder of the Stith family in Virginia, who was a member of the Jamestown colony in the days of Capt. John Smith. One of his colonial ancestors was the author of the famous "Stith" history of Virginia, now valued so highly

that a price of \$500 is set upon the volume. Later members of the family served with conspicuous gallantry in the war of the Revolution. His mother, Mary Poythress Epes, was a daughter of Francis Epes, who was a captain in the war of the Revolution, serving under a commission from Patrick Henry, and a descendant of Colonel Poythress, who is buried at Westover, on the James river. After receiving his education at private schools in his native county, Mr. Stith went to Petersburg at the age of seventeen, and secured employment with the railroad now known as the Norfolk & Western, in which he remained until April 19, 1861. He then enlisted in the Petersburg Riflemen, mustered in with the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry and served with that command throughout the war. Stationed at Norfolk during the Confederate occupation of that city, he witnessed the encounter of the Virginia and the Monitor. Subsequently he moved to Petersburg and Richmond, and participated in the battle of Seven Pines, where he was severely wounded and disabled for several months. Joining his regiment in front of Fredericksburg, he participated in the Virginia campaigns until after Chancellorsville, and then served in the Pennsylvania campaign, fighting at Gettysburg, and joining in the memorable retreat to Orange Court House. During 1864 he fought at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, and then went into the trenches at Petersburg. During the battle of the Crater, July 30, 1864, he participated in the Confederate charge and was seriously wounded, receiving a gunshot in the lungs, which disabled him for four months. Not discouraged, however, he returned to the ranks as soon as his health permitted and was with his company until the surrender at Appomattox. This long and gallant service ended, he returned at once to the quiet routine of peace, and soon became engaged as manager of a hotel at Petersburg, Va., where he continued successfully and gaining a widespread reputation in that line of business, until 1893, when he was called to Norfolk as manager and superintendent of the Virginia club. He maintains a membership in the A. P. Hill camp of Confederate Veterans at Petersburg.

William Epes Stith, second assistant chief of the eastern division of the United States pension department, is a native of Virginia and was a gallant soldier, among a family of soldiers, who served in her defense during the war of the Confederacy. He was born in Nottoway county in 1846, and there reared and educated. After reaching the age of sixteen years he entered the service of the Confederate States in the winter of 1862-63, in the City battalion, organized at Petersburg, and was soon afterward transferred to Company E of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment, with which he served in Mahone's brigade, in nearly all the fights around Petersburg and on the Bermuda line. On the retreat to Appomattox, while serving in a detail to fire the high bridge, he was captured on April 7, 1865, and being sent as a prisoner of war to Point Lookout, was not released until June 19th, although the army had been paroled but a few days after his capture. After his release he returned to his home in Nottoway county, and remained there until his removal to Petersburg, in 1870. At that city he engaged in the tobacco business, and remained there until 1879, after which he was engaged for three years in agricultural pursuits in Lunenburg county. In 1882 he made his home

at Washington and entered the government civil service in the pension office, with which he has since been connected. Four brothers of Mr. Stith also participated in the service of the Confederate army: Frank E., who now resides at Mobile, Ala.; John W., a resident of Wharton, Tex.; Cincinnatus, who died from wounds received at Gettysburg; and Putnam, whose home is at Crewe, Va.

Hugh Stockdell, M. D., late surgeon of the Confederate States army, was born at Petersburg, where he now resides, in the year 1835. He is the son of Dr. John Young Stockdell, a prominent physician of his day, a native of Virginia, who was educated at William and Mary college and the university of Virginia, and died in 1840. Dr. Stockdell, after preparatory study in the Petersburg schools, pursued professional studies in the university of Virginia and the Jefferson medical college of Philadelphia, receiving the degree of doctor of medicine from the latter institution. His professional work, begun at Petersburg in 1860, was soon interrupted by the exciting events of 1860 and 1861. Promptly enlisting in the Confederate service he was commissioned assistant surgeon in 1861, and after serving in that capacity until 1863 he was promoted to surgeon with the rank of major and assigned to the Cape Fear division of North Carolina as medical purveyor, with headquarters at Wilmington. He remained at this post until its evacuation by the Confederate forces, who united with the army under Gen. J. E. Johnston. At the time of the surrender at Greensboro, Surgeon Stockdell had in his possession almost the entire store of medical supplies of the army. Ever since the conclusion of hostilities he has been actively engaged in the practice of his profession at Petersburg, and his life has been a useful and successful one, both socially and professionally. He is a member of the State and local medical societies, has served five years upon the medical examining board of Virginia, and has made valued contributions to the medical press. With loyalty to his old companions of the army he maintains a membership in A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. Dr. Stockdell was married in 1856 to Miss Kate McPherson, of Maryland, and they have five children living: Hugh Jr., a graduate of the Virginia military institute; John Y., William Meade, Frank M. and Katie McPherson.

James Love Stone, a prominent physician of Roanoke, who served devotedly in the Confederate cause, was born in Mecklenburg county in 1834. There and in Amelia county he was reared and educated preparatory to his embracing the profession of medicine. He pursued professional studies at the Ohio medical college at Cincinnati, and received there his degree of doctor of medicine in 1857. Then locating in Prince Edward county he practiced his profession until the outbreak of the war. Loyal to the call of the State, he entered the Confederate service in May, 1861, as a private in Montague's infantry brigade. He served with this command, frequently acting as assistant surgeon as well as fighting in the ranks until May, 1862, when on account of physical disability, his weight having been reduced from 193 to 80 pounds, he was honorably discharged. Dr. Stone never has entirely recovered his health. When he left the service in 1863, thirteen physicians pronounced his case hopeless and incurable. After eighteen months of recuperation he again attempted the service and re-enlisted as a private in the command of General Echols,

where he remained on duty until he broke down a second time in the winter of 1864-65. During his service he participated in the fight at Big Bethel and the battles on the peninsula, New River Bridge, and skirmishes in West Virginia. After leaving the army he made his home in Montgomery county, and was there engaged in a successful practice until 1887, when he removed to Roanoke, where he holds an honorable rank in the profession. While a resident of Montgomery county he held for five years the office of superintendent of schools.

Captain Stephen Hubbard Stone, of Pulaski City, participated throughout the Confederate war in the making of the gallant record of the Fiftieth Virginia regiment. He was born in Carroll county, October 9, 1835, whence at ten years of age he removed to Wythe county, and from there in 1853 to Pulaski county, where he has ever since made his residence. He entered the military service July 1, 1861, as first lieutenant in Company I of the Fiftieth Virginia infantry, Col. A. W. Reynolds commanding, brigade of Gen. John B. Floyd, and was stationed first at Camp Bee, near Sweet Springs, but the regiment was organized at Camp Jackson. Thence they moved early in August toward Lewisburg, now West Virginia, and the company took part in the battles of Cross Lanes and Gauley Bridge, Lieutenant Stone not participating, however, on account of illness. The regiment was almost annihilated by sickness during this campaign and he suffered for some time with typhoid fever. General Floyd occupied the southern half of the Kanawha valley, in which loyalty to Virginia was the predominant sentiment, and the Fiftieth was stationed at Raleigh, where Captain Stone joined his command after recovering, and proceeded with Floyd's brigade to Bowling Green, Ky., and thence to Fort Donelson. There he participated in the gallant fight against Grant's army, and then escaping from the fort with his Virginia comrades, went to Murfreesboro, whence he returned to Virginia. Upon the reorganization in the spring of 1862 he was promoted captain, and in this rank he served in the second expedition down the Kanawha valley under General Loring, participating in the fights at Lewisburg, Fayetteville and Charleston, where he aided in extinguishing the fire set by the Federal soldiers. Subsequently he went on another expedition below Charleston under General Echols, and in October was at the Narrows of New river. In the following winter he served with his regiment on the Blackwater river under the command of Gen. Roger A. Pryor, and took part in the brisk engagement at Kelly's place, in which Col. Thomas Poage, of the Fiftieth, was killed. Early in April with his regiment, he joined the army of Northern Virginia and was assigned to Paxton's brigade, Trimble's division, Jackson's corps. In the battle of Chancellorsville the regiment was distinguished for gallant fighting and severe loss. In the first attack the command drove the enemy from their breastworks and captured many prisoners and a battery of twelve guns, and on the next day participated in the repeated charges which forced the Federals to abandon their apparently impregnable works on Chancellor heights. On the second day of the Gettysburg battle he fought in the attack of Johnson's division on Culp's hill, in the fall was in the battle of Mine Run, and in the Wilderness

campaign shared the fighting of his division from May 5th until it was almost entirely destroyed on the morning of May 12th at the "bloody angle," on the field of Spottsylvania. Escaping this disaster he fought under Gordon at Cold Harbor, marched with Early to the relief of Lynchburg, and after the latter campaign, having so lost his voice that he could not serve efficiently in command, he was detailed as enrolling officer in Botetourt county. He was there on duty at the end of hostilities in Virginia, when Lee surrendered at Appomattox on April 9th.

Richard H. Strattan, the great-grandson of an artillery officer of the Revolutionary war, and a veteran of Fitz Lee's cavalry, was born at Staunton, Va., February 13, 1844. At the beginning of hostilities in 1861, he was but a little past seventeen years of age and had received a good education at Lexington and Charlottesville, and was employed in a drug store at the latter place. In the latter part of 1861 he began service in the Confederate field hospital, and in February, 1862, having reached his eighteenth birthday, he enlisted as a private in Company I of the Fifth Virginia cavalry, beginning a career of faithful and gallant service which continued until he was paroled at Appomattox. This was Colonel Rosser's old regiment, and was attached to Robertson's and later to Fitzhugh Lee's brigade of Stuart's cavalry. He participated in many battles and skirmishes, prominent among which were the famous engagements at Frayser's Farm, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Brandy Station, the Wilderness, Five Forks and Farmville. On June 17, 1863, at Aldie, Va., he was captured by the enemy, and was subsequently confined about two months in the Old Capitol prison at Washington before he was exchanged. After the close of the war he returned to Albemarle county and farmed for one season, then making his residence at Gordonsville, where he has since resided. He soon embarked in the drug business, and is now one of the leading business men of the town. He has taken an active part in the work of organization of the survivors of the glorious army of Northern Virginia, and was one of the prime movers in the formation of William S. Grymes camp, No. 724, U. C. V., and No. 35, Virginia, at Gordonsville, of which he serves as adjutant. In 1869 he was married to Miss M. E. Atkins, of Gordonsville, and they have seven children living.

Major Charles S. Stringfellow, of Richmond, prominent in the professional and social life of the city, was born in Clarke county, Va., in 1837. His family has long been seated in the State, he being a member of the fifth generation in Virginia. The great-grandfather came to the State from England; his son served in the Indian wars as a colonial soldier and his son Robert was a prosperous farmer of Culpeper county; and the son of the latter, Horace Stringfellow, was a well-known practitioner of law in Madison county, until about the age of thirty-two years, when he took orders in the Episcopal church and served as a rector until his death in 1885, at the age of eighty-six years. Charles S. Stringfellow, son of the latter, was reared at Washington, D. C., to the age of ten years, and subsequently at Petersburg, and other points at which his father was stationed in Virginia. In 1855 he was graduated at William and Mary college, and then after teaching school for two years he began preparation for a career in the profession of law. He studied at the university of Virginia, and em-

barked in practice at Petersburg, but was soon called from civil affairs to the defense of the State from the invasion which followed the secession of the Southern States from the Union. In June, 1861, he volunteered as a private in the Petersburg Rifles, mustered into the service as Company E of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment, but after a brief association with this command he received a commission as captain, and was assigned to the adjutant-general's department, where his line of duty continued until the close of the war. His efficiency and meritorious service were rewarded by promotion to the rank of major in March, 1863. His duties were arduous and important, and performed throughout a wide field, extending from West Virginia to the Gulf. He served as adjutant-general and chief of staff of Gen. Samuel Jones, commanding the army at Pensacola, from early in 1862, and continued with him in his subsequent commands of a division of the army in the West, and of Bragg's base of operations at Chattanooga, during the Kentucky campaign; the department of East Tennessee; the department of Western Virginia from December, 1862, to March, 1864, the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, the district of South Carolina until 1865, afterward with General Holmes until the close of the war. He was also upon the staff of Gen. John C. Breckinridge during the early part of 1864. He was paroled at Cumberland Court House in June, 1865, and then returned to his professional career at Petersburg. In 1881 he made his home at Richmond, where he has subsequently held high rank in the legal profession, and is greatly esteemed for his worth as a citizen.

William C. Stuart, now a worthy citizen of Lexington, Va., was one of the gallant young heroes who reinforced the army of Northern Virginia in the closing year of the unequal struggle, to battle against great odds with courage that was unflinching to the end. He was born in Rockbridge county in 1845, and entered the Confederate service from Lexington in February, 1864, as a private in the Rockbridge artillery. He participated in an action at Appomattox Court House in the spring of 1864, fought at Cold Harbor, where he was wounded and subsequently disabled for two weeks, and took part in the skirmishing below Richmond, fighting gunboats, etc., until the evacuation on April 2, 1865, when he joined in the retreat to Appomattox, fighting at Farmville and surrendering with the army. After this he returned to his home and presently became engaged in mercantile pursuits. In 1877 he engaged in the book trade, which is his present occupation. Of Lee-Jackson camp of United Confederate Veterans, he is one of the most active and valuable members, and holds the position of adjutant.

Thomas Jefferson Stubbs, of Williamsburg, professor of mathematics at William and Mary college, and first commander of Magruder-Ewell camp, United Confederate veterans, was born in Gloucester county, Va., September 14, 1841. His father was Jefferson W. Stubbs, a native of the same county, a merchant and farmer, and for many years a presiding justice, who lived to his eighty-sixth year. The wife of the latter was Ann Walker Carter Baytop, daughter of James Baytop, a sergeant in the war of 1812, and granddaughter of Capt. Thomas Baytop, an artillery officer in the continental army. She had two brothers in the Confederate service—James Christopher and William Jones, the latter of whom bore the

rank of lieutenant until killed at the battle of Seven Pines. Of the twelve children of these parents, Professor Stubbs was the second son. Two of his brothers bore arms for the Confederacy—James N., who served as a major in the signal corps, and William Carter, orderly-sergeant of Company D, Twenty-fourth Virginia cavalry. Professor Stubbs received his preparatory education at Cappahosic academy, and then entered William and Mary college, where he received the degree of bachelor of arts in 1860. In the fall of that year he began post-graduate studies at the same institution, but this work was soon interrupted by the thrilling events in the South. On May 16, 1861, he enlisted as a private in the Gloucester artillery, and was so borne on the rolls throughout the four years' war. His company, known as the "Red Shirts," served at Gloucester Point until the spring of 1862, and later was enrolled as Company A, Thirty-fourth Virginia infantry. Not long after his enlistment he was detailed in the signal corps, and subsequently he served the greater part of the time as ordnance sergeant and sergeant-major. Returning to the ranks during the siege of Petersburg, he took part in the closing struggle on the lines, and was captured March 31, 1865, while carrying from the field the body of his brave and gallant lieutenant, W. D. Miller, who had been mortally wounded. He was taken by his captors before Gen. Nelson A. Miles, who interrogated him as to the number of men in General Lee's command. Stubbs immediately replied: "General, do you suppose I would tell you, if I knew," and Miles ordered him taken on to the rear. He was imprisoned at Point Lookout until June 20, 1865. On his return to Virginia he attended the university of Virginia one year, and then went to Arkansas, where he resided until 1888, with the exception of one year as master of the grammar school at William and Mary. While in the West he was for sixteen years professor of mathematics and history in Arkansas college, served two terms as a member of the legislature, and for three years was editor of the "North Arkansas Pilot," published at Batesville. Upon the reopening of William and Mary college in 1888 he was called to the chair of mathematics of his alma mater. He has been connected for many years with the summer sessions of the Peabody normal institute in Virginia. Professor Stubbs is president of the Phi Beta Kappa literary society, the oldest Greek fraternity in the United States, organized at William and Mary in 1776, and is a master of arts, in course, of this college and a doctor of philosophy, by brevet, of Arkansas college. In December, 1869, he was married to Mary Mercer, daughter of Capt. Joseph B. Cosnahan, of the Confederate States army, and they have four children living.

James Littleton Suddarth, M. D., prominent in the medical profession of Washington, D. C., is a native of Virginia and a veteran of the ever famous "Stonewall" brigade. He was born in Albemarle county, December 13, 1841, and being orphaned in infancy by the death of his father, he was taken by his mother to Augusta county and subsequently to Lexington, where he had the advantages of study at Washington college. His education was interrupted, however, by the crisis of 1861, and he left school as a member of a college company called the "Liberty Hall Volunteers," in May, 1861, and was assigned to the Fourth Virginia infantry, in which the college organization was known as Company I. This regi-

ment formed part of the brigade under command of Gen. T. J. Jackson, which at the first battle of Manassas earned the title of "Stonewall." Dr. Suddarth served as a private until Gen. Isaac R. Trimble was assigned to command of the brigade, when he was called to duty at headquarters as orderly to General Trimble. After the battle of Fisher's Hill he was transferred to the Thirty-fifth battalion of cavalry, of which he was a member until the close of the war, being among those who cut their way out of the Federal lines at Appomattox, and surrendered several weeks later at Staunton. His record of participation in the important military encounters of the war, embraces the battles of First Manassas, Kernstown and Cross Keys in the Valley campaign. Gaines' Mill, Malvern Hill, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, the Milroy fight at Winchester, Spottsylvania, Frederick City, Md., the engagement before Washington, under General Early, Early's subsequent campaign in the valley, including the battles of Winchester and Fisher's Hill, the capture of Harper's Ferry, the capture of New Creek Station, and the battle of Five Forks. During this service he lost two horses, shot under him, and was wounded in the ankle, in a cavalry skirmish at Farmville Bridge, just before Appomattox. On the day following the victory over Milroy at Winchester, Va., he was captured, and subsequently confined at Fort Delaware for three months. He was one of the fortunate included in the last exchange of prisoners from that post. After his military service was ended he returned to his home at Lexington, and to his studies, which he shaped toward preparation for the medical profession. In October, 1865, he made his home at Washington, and engaged in professional study. He was graduated by the National medical college, now the medical department of the Columbian university, in 1868, and he at that time embarked in a professional career which has been notably successful. For over a quarter century Dr. Suddarth has been prominent in the medical profession of the national capital, and socially in high esteem. He is a member of the American medical association, the Medical association of the District of Columbia, and the Medical society of the District of Columbia; is a member of the staff of Sibley Memorial hospital, and of the staff of the Eastern dispensary, and in the Washington association of Confederate Veterans holds the rank of surgeon.

Andrew Sullivan, of Alexandria, was born in that city February 6, 1837, and was reared and educated in his native place. On April 17, 1861, he enlisted as a private in Kemper's battery, and during the four years of war which followed served with that gallant command, participating in the campaign of Manassas, the Peninsular campaign, the defense of Richmond, and the other important service of the battery. He was with General Ewell at the time of his surrender at Sailor's Creek on April 6, 1865, and after that unfortunate occurrence was confined for two months at Point Lookout. Finally released by special favor of President Johnson, he returned to his home and resumed the occupations of civil life. He participated in the battles of Vienna, and Manassas in 1861, and in the Peninsular campaign was engaged at Williamsburg, Savage Station, Seven Pines and Malvern Hill. Finally in 1865 he took part in the famous battles of Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. In

1874 he was married to Miss Rachel Liles, of Alexandria, and they have six children.

William S. Summers, of Sterling, a patriotic Virginian who served faithfully in the ranks of the Eighth infantry, under Col. Eppa Hunton, was born in Fairfax county, October 29, 1837. While a child he removed with his parents to Loudoun county, where he was reared and educated. Early in the spring of 1861, with thorough devotion to his State, he enlisted as a private in Company D of the Eighth regiment of infantry, with which command he served until the close of the war. He was introduced to the grim realities of war on the battlefield of Manassas in July, 1861, and subsequently took part in the battles of Ball's Bluff, Williamsburg and Seven Pines, and other important engagements. In the year 1863 he was slightly wounded in the arm, and fell into the hands of the enemy, after which he was taken to Fort McHenry and subsequently to Fort Delaware, being confined in all about ten weeks. Then, being exchanged he rejoined his command in the fall of 1863 and participated in its subsequent engagements. After the surrender of the army he returned to his home and gave his attention for a year or so to agricultural pursuits, after which he found employment in the sale of Pollard's "Lost Cause." Later he was appointed to the offices of deputy sheriff and deputy treasurer, offices he has ever since filled to the satisfaction of the people of his county. Both as a soldier of the Confederacy and as an official of his county he has displayed those qualities of fidelity and honor that most highly adorn true manhood. Private Summers maintains his touch with the surviving comrades of the army by membership in the Clinton Hatcher camp of Confederate Veterans at Leesburg. On February 17, 1876, he was married to Miss Nannie L. Wood, of Loudoun county, and they have nine children.

Lieutenant Thomas W. Sydnor, of Richmond, Va., a veteran of the gallant Hanover Troop of cavalry, was born in Hanover county, March 11, 1837. He was reared, and continued to reside there until called into the military service of the State as a member of the Hanover Troop. This cavalry company was organized in 1858 by W. C. Wickham, of Hanover county, and was mustered into the service with Wickham as captain, the rank he held until promoted colonel of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, of which the troop constituted Company G. The regiment was in the brigade commanded by Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, and subsequently by Wickham himself. Company G lost about one hundred and twenty men in killed and wounded during the war. Private Sydnor was mustered into the service with this historic command at Ashland, May 9, 1861, and he remained with the company until the close of the war, participating in nearly all its engagements, among them the battles of Manassas, Brandy Station, Kelly's Ford, Raccoon Ford, Fredericksburg, Williamsburg, Cold Harbor, Malvern Hill, Front Royal, Winchester, Trevilian's, Yellow Tavern, Hawe's Shop, Wayston, Boonsboro, Gettysburg and Appomattox, besides a great number of the minor actions which fall to the lot of an adventurous body of troopers. Through this service he was among the bravest of the brave and held the rank of first lieutenant at the close. He was severely wounded at Front Royal by a pistol shot, at Williamsburg received a saber cut, and at Trevilian's was hit by a carbine ball. After the war the survivors of the Hanover

Troop formed an association, of which Lieutenant Sydnor has ever since held the rank of captain. At their meeting in 1896, thirty-one members answered the roll call, six of whom assisted in the organization of the company in 1858. Lieutenant Sydnor is also a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, of Richmond, where he has resided since 1877.

Catlett Conway Taliaferro, commander of William Watts camp of United Confederate Veterans at Roanoke, Va., was born in Culpeper county in 1846. Though only a school boy in age at the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy, he had the spirit of a veteran, and left his studies at the Rappahannock academy in June, 1861, to become a trooper in the Ninth Virginia cavalry. After about one month's service with this command he was detailed for duty as a scout and courier, attached to the headquarters of Gen. Stonewall Jackson. He remained with this famous leader until his death, and soon after that event was detailed on similar duty at the headquarters of Gen. R. E. Lee. He served with the commander of the army of Northern Virginia until the end of the war, at Appomattox having the mournful duty of carrying the flag of truce. His military career was an active and honorable one. With Jackson's command he participated in the battles of First Manassas, Winchester, Port Republic, Cross Keys, the Seven Days before Richmond, Slaughter Mountain, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. As guide, scout and courier for the commander-in-chief, he took part in the battle of Gettysburg, the struggle at the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, the fighting about Richmond and the engagements at Trevilian's and Sailor's Creek. He was wounded at Cross Keys, at Seven Pines, at the bloody angle at Spottsylvania, and hit by a spent ball at Sharpsburg. At Sailor's Creek he was captured, but made his escape, and was paroled at Appomattox. Since the war he has resided in Virginia, and for ten years prior to his removal to Roanoke he served as mayor of the town of Hampden-Sidney.

John Winn Talley, commander in 1897 of Blue Ridge camp, United Confederate Veterans, at Buena Vista, Va., was born in 1844 in Buckingham county, but was reared from infancy in Cumberland county. In the spring of 1861 he was ambitious to join the Confederate army, and his parents objecting on account of his youth, he finally enlisted without their knowledge in the Black Eagle company, an organization formed previous to the war, and went with the company into camp at Richmond, where he was subsequently found by his father and Governor Letcher, and returned to his home. The young patriot pleaded so earnestly, however, to be permitted to join the army, that his father relented, and gave him permission to be enrolled in the Cumberland Troop, a famous organization of cavalry that had been noted for many years before the war, and was mustered in as Company G of the Third cavalry. He entered this command early in the summer of 1861, and soon saw service on the peninsula, where he was detailed as courier for General Cobb, of Georgia, for a short time. Subsequently, in the meantime having served with his company, he was promoted ordnance sergeant under Maj. G. M. Ryals, of Savannah, Ga., ordnance officer on the staff of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. In this capacity he served until Ryals was transferred to the staff of

Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, when he rejoined his company and remained with it until the close of the war. His service was begun with participation in the Peninsular battles of Dam Nos. 1 and 2, and Williamsburg. On the picket line before the battle of Seven Pines he was distinguished for gallantry, and he fought through the two days of Seven Pines and the Seven Days' struggle which followed to the discomfiture of McClellan's army. Afterward he was in action at Shepherdstown, Brandy Station, Gettysburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Trevilian's, Yellow Tavern, Reams' Station. At the time of the surrender at Appomattox he had charge of the picket line protecting the flank of Gen. Lindsay Walker's brigade, guarding the retreat of the artillery of the army. He surrendered at Columbia, Va., in June, 1865. After this he engaged in farming for a few years, in Hanover and then in Cumberland county, then conducted a store in Henrico county three years. Subsequently he established a mail service on the James river and Kanawha canal, and commanded the packet boat Nellie between Columbia and Richmond. After four years of this occupation the building of a railroad superseded his mail line, and he became a baggage master and later a conductor on the Richmond & Allegheny railroad. In 1886 he entered the hotel business, first in the Irvine hotel at Lexington and then as manager of the Natural Bridge hotel. In 1889 he made his home at Buena Vista, where he has since had charge alternately of the Colonnade and Buena Vista hotels. He is also prominently interested in the business and the development of the town, has served two terms as president of the city council, and is a director in the bank and in land companies.

William Henry Tallman, of Newport News, Va., served with distinction during the Confederate war in intimate relations with Generals Magruder, Johnston and Lee, and as a scout passed through an adventurous and interesting career. He was born in Charles City county December 11, 1842, the son of William H. and Elizabeth (Roane) Tallman, both of English descent, and was reared upon the farm of his parents. His education was obtained at the Lynchburg military academy and at Randolph-Macon college, which latter institution he left in the spring of 1861 to enter the military service of the State and the Confederacy. He was offered the rank of lieutenant in an infantry company formed in his native county, but declined this, preferring to follow the famous admonition of Gen. "Jeb" Stuart, to "jine the cavalry!" For about eight months he served with a cavalry company in the rank of corporal, until General Magruder, then in command on the peninsula of Virginia, detailed him for duty in command of his bodyguard and couriers. The energy and dashing qualities which had secured him this mark of distinction made him highly satisfactory in this position, and led to his being retained in the same duty under Gen. J. E. Johnston, who soon succeeded to the command of the forces gathered to resist the advance of McClellan. He continued in command of Johnston's bodyguard until the general was wounded at Seven Pines, and gave place to Gen. R. E. Lee, with whom Tallman performed the same duties through the Seven Days' battles. Having been in active service through all the battles on the peninsula, and worn by the peril and excitement of this arduous campaign, he fell sick at this time, and was obliged to

give up his position. Upon regaining his health he re-entered the service and was attached to the cavalry command of Gen. M. W. Gary. Being assigned to the command of a scouting party, he continued in that capacity until the end of the war, frequently being engaged in expeditions up and down the James river, and encountering many interesting and thrilling adventures. Occasionally he was able to visit his old home in Charles City county, availing himself of the opportunity to enjoy its hospitality and rest and refresh himself and his men. On one of these occasions he found that as an aged negro woman expressed it, "De blasted yankees had been dere, stealing de turkeys." He considered those fowls as legitimate resources of the Confederacy, and made an ambush for the marauding Federals, which resulted in a desperate fight, in which he killed one of the enemy's party and put two bullets in the neck of another and was himself seriously wounded in the face and neck. At the close of the war he surrendered with Johnston's army at Greensboro, N. C., and then returned to his home, where he was engaged in farming for a few years. About the year 1873 he removed to Richmond, and for three years served upon the police force, where his personal courage and manly activity made him a valued officer. Removing to Newport News in 1883, he for several years held the position of chief of the police of that city. Since 1894 he has filled with general satisfaction the office of inspector and boarding officer at the port of Newport News. He is a good citizen, is popular socially, and is a member of the Royal Arcanum, the United Workmen, and a highly esteemed comrade of Magruder camp, United Confederate Veterans.

J. D. Tanner, of Lynchburg, identified during the Confederate war with the gallant record of the Twenty-eighth regiment Virginia infantry, is a native of Bedford county, born December 12, 1841. He entered the service in April, 1861, as a private in Company F of the Twenty-eighth regiment, and served in the first battle of Manassas in the brigade of Col. P. St. George Cocke. Subsequently the brigade was commanded by Generals Pickett and Richard B. Garnett, in Longstreet's corps, and he shared its fighting on many of the famous battlefields of the army of Northern Virginia. In the Peninsular campaign of 1862 he was shot through the body at the battle of Gaines' Mill, and received a second wound in the left leg while being carried from the field. These injuries disabled him for several months, and he was next in battle at Fredericksburg, and subsequently with Longstreet in North Carolina, fighting at Plymouth, Little Washington and New Bern. With Pickett's division in the third day's fight at Gettysburg, he received a wound in the left shoulder in the assault upon Cemetery ridge. He took part in the battle of the Wilderness, and was stationed on the Howlett line for several months, participated as acting sergeant in the charge on the enemy's works, about January 1, 1864. In the spring of 1865 he fought at Five Forks and Sailor's Creek, and was among the captured at the latter disaster. Subsequently he was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout for some time. Finally returning to his home he soon afterward went to Lynchburg, with a capital of fifty cents, and at first finding various employment, the energy and devotion which had characterized his military career were, in a few years, instrumental in enabling him to establish himself in business, in

which he has since continued with much success. He has served in the city council and is a member of the Masonic order. In the fall of 1865 he was married in Bedford county, to Booker E. Boley, and they have one son, Oscar P.

William H. Tatum, a well-known merchant of Richmond, and a valued member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Howitzer association, of which he holds the office of treasurer, had a long and gallant career with the army of Northern Virginia. He was born in Henrico county in 1838, and since the age of fourteen has had his home at Richmond. He entered the Confederate service as a private in the Richmond Howitzers in April, 1861, and remained in the service until the surrender. The list of engagements in which he participated reveals the arduous and devoted character of his service. Among the actions in which he did honorable duty are Bull Run, First Manassas, Dam No. 1, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Salem Church, United States Ford, the second and third days at Gettysburg, the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, Second Cold Harbor. After this he fought on the lines between the Howlett House and Petersburg and on the retreat to Appomattox.

Major Erasmus Taylor, of Orange county, was among those who joined the army at Manassas in July, 1861. He served through the campaign of that year on the staff of Brig.-Gen. D. R. Jones, and continued in that duty until the death of General Jones in the fall of 1862. After that it appears that he was unassigned until September, 1863, when he was commissioned major, and ordered to report to Gen. James Longstreet, commanding First corps, army of Northern Virginia, at that time detached and operating in east Tennessee against Knoxville. As chief quartermaster of the First corps he was with this command without interruption until the surrender at Appomattox Court House, in which he was included. Major Taylor is descended from James Taylor, of Carlisle, England, who emigrated to Virginia in 1658, settling in what is now Caroline county, on the Mataponi river, near the Baylor estate called New Market. There he died in 1698, leaving a large family. His eldest son, by his first wife, Col. James Taylor, born 1674, succeeded him as owner of this estate and acquired large possessions in other counties. In what is now Orange county he located in 1720 two tracts, one of five thousand, and another of ten thousand acres, fronting on the Rapidan river. Here he built the first house in that section, which is now standing in a perfect state of preservation, and made his home, which was graced by his wife, Martha, daughter of Sir William Thompson, a British officer who came over to aid in suppressing Bacon's rebellion, and settled in Virginia. These parents had a large family from whom were descended two presidents of the United States. Their eldest daughter, Frances, who married Ambrose Madison, was the grandmother of James Madison. They also had four sons: James (3d), George, Zachary and Erasmus. James (3d) was a member of the house of burgesses and died in 1784. From him were descended Colonel James (4th), of Midway, Caroline county, who was a gallant officer under Washington in the French and Indian war, also prominent in his civil career; and General James (5th), of Newport, Ky., distinguished for his services in the war

of 1812, and well known as a man of large wealth. George, who died in 1794, was a man of great prominence; member of the house of burgesses, of the committee of safety of Orange county in 1774, and of the State convention; was commissioned colonel in 1775; had eight sons in the Revolutionary army, and by his marriage to Rachel Gibson, had numerous descendants who filled many important positions. Zachary, who died in 1768, married Elizabeth Lee; lived in Orange county near his brothers, on the farm now occupied by Maj. Erasmus Taylor; and had several children, among them Col. Richard Taylor, of Kentucky, who was father of President Zachary Taylor, and of Gen. Joseph P. Taylor, at one time commissary-general of the United States army. Erasmus, born 1715, died 1794, lived near Orange Court House, owning part of the present site of the town, and married Jane Moore, a half-sister of President Madison's mother. One of their numerous children, Capt. John Taylor, was an officer in the Revolutionary army. Another, and the youngest son, was Robert Taylor, of Orange, born 1763, who married Frances, daughter of Col. Edmund Pendleton, Jr., of Caroline county; was present at the surrender of Lord Cornwallis as a volunteer with the Culpeper Minute Men; was member of the Virginia senate in 1804-05-06, and member of Congress in 1825 and 1827. Among his children was the well-known Jaquelin P. Taylor, of Richmond. Another son, Dr. Edmund Pendleton Taylor, married his cousin, Mildred Turner, and was the father of Maj. Erasmus Taylor. The latter is also descended from James Taylor, the founder, through his daughter Mary, by a second wife, Mary Gregory. This daughter, born 1688, married Henry Pendleton, and among their children was the celebrated chancellor, Edmund Pendleton, first president of the court of appeals of Virginia. Another was John Pendleton, whose son, Col. Edmund Pendleton, married Mildred Pollard, and had among their children, a daughter Frances, whose marriage to Robert Taylor is above noted. Maj. Erasmus Taylor was born in Orange county in 1830, completed his education at the university of Virginia in 1849, and married Roberta Ashby, of Fauquier county, in 1851. She was a descendant of that Captain Ashby, afterward colonel, who was the bearer of dispatches from Colonel Washington to the authorities at Williamsburg announcing the defeat of Braddock. Gen. Turner Ashby, of Confederate renown, was her first cousin. Eleven children were born to Major Taylor and his wife, of whom eight are still living, five daughters and three sons. Of the latter, Edmund Pendleton Taylor is a civil engineer, and married Virginia Gildersleeve, of Abingdon. Another, John Ashby Taylor, married Isabel King, of Augusta, Ga., and holds a responsible position in the general offices of the Central railroad of New Jersey. Jaquelin P. Taylor, the youngest, residing at Henderson, N. C., is a successful business man, and the largest exporter of tobacco in that State. He married Katherine, eldest daughter of W. E. and Mary Wall, of Montgomery county, Md.

James Taylor, for more than a decade past connected with the treasury department of the United States government, and residing at Washington, had a career in the army of Northern Virginia distinguished for long and faithful service embracing participation

in nearly all the great battles of that army. He was born in Caroline county, Va., in the year 1841, and was reared and given his preparatory education in his native county. When the Virginia convention met to decide the fate of the State, he was a student at the university of Virginia, whence he went, with the cadets, on the day of the adoption of the ordinance of secession, to occupy Harper's Ferry. In the following month he enlisted in the service of the State as a private in the Fredericksburg artillery, an organization with which he was identified during the remainder of the war. After the surrender at Appomattox he returned to his home in Caroline county and found occupation for several years in farming. Then undertaking the profession of teaching, he was engaged in that work at Fredericksburg until about the year 1886, when he removed to Washington to accept a position in the treasury department. Among the engagements in which he took part during the war were an early encounter with a Federal gunboat on the Potomac river, Mechanicsville and Chickahominy and other battles of the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond, Chantilly, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Snicker's Gap, Groveton, Waterloo Bridge, Hagerstown, Md., Sharpsburg, Md., Bolivar and Maryland Heights, Fredericksburg, Spottsylvania (April, 1863), Chancellorsville, Mine Run, Bristoe Station, the battles of the Wilderness, Beaver Dam, North Anna River, or Jericho Ford, Second Cold Harbor, the defense of Richmond, the defense of Petersburg, the defense of the Weldon railroad, Six Mile Station, Blackburn's Ford, Williamsburg, Farmville, High Bridge and Appomattox. During all this service he was never wounded, though hit several times by spent balls. Mr. Taylor is a valued member of the Washington association of Confederate Veterans.

Colonel Walter H. Taylor, a native of Norfolk, was the youthful officer who was assigned, then not twenty-three years of age, to Gen. Robert E. Lee at Richmond soon after the secession of Virginia, and who became a confidential staff officer of that illustrious man during the entire period of the war for Southern independence. He deserves, on his personal merit, as well as for his intimate association with his great chief, the distinction which history awards him. He had been educated at the Virginia military institute, and enlisted in the Confederate service when the orders of Governor Letcher, early in May, 1861, brought him to Richmond to be immediately assigned to duty with Lee who had chief command of the military forces of his State, and was engaged in the rapid and thorough organization of all the resources which Virginia was offering for the defense of the South. In an unpretentious office, furnished with a desk, a table and a few chairs, the work of preparation for war went on under the direction of the experienced head aided by a limited staff of carefully selected men, among whom was this competent young officer, who was destined to close comradeship with his leader in honorable and perilous service, ending in the final scenes at Appomattox. As the result of these office labors the organized army of Virginia was turned over to the Confederacy. General Lee was appointed one of the generals authorized by Congress and on account of the special need of his counsel, was ordered to remain at Richmond as the "military adviser of the president." The reverses in western

Virginia, however, made it necessary for Mr. Davis to send Lee to that section, and taking with him as his aides, Col. John A. Washington and Captain Taylor, he sought to recover the advantages already lost to the Confederacy. Immediately on arriving in western Virginia, Lee, with Washington and Taylor, traversed that rough region, unsparing of themselves, rode daily through the wild woods and ascended the mountains, climbing to the highest peaks in order to get views of the Federal positions. In one of these reconnoissances to gain greatly needed knowledge, Colonel Washington lost his life. After this arduous personal scouting a battle was planned which would have resulted in a decided victory, but failure occurred from unfortunate miscarriage of orders. Taylor returned with Lee to Richmond and accompanied him to the south Atlantic coast in November, 1861. The staff of Lee at this time contained Captain Taylor, Capt. Thornton Washington, Captain Manigault, Capt. Ives Walker, and Major Long, chief of artillery. Having been recalled from the command of this department in March, 1862, Lee entered on his duties as the president's military adviser, his aides being Taylor, Talcott, Venable and Charles Marshall, each of whom was commissioned major. At this period McClellan's army was closing around Richmond, and the demands were incessant upon the staff of Lee, at the head of which was Taylor, whom Colonel Long calls "Lee's trusted adjutant." The severe wounding of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston devolved upon Lee the command in the field of the Confederate forces, and there followed that splendid fighting and remarkable generalship which drove McClellan from the coveted capital of the Confederacy. From this date through all the triumphs and defeats of the army of Northern Virginia, the courageous and "trusted adjutant" shared with his comrades the rigors of all campaigns, the glories of every victory and the sorrows of each defeat. His war history cannot be followed without recounting the story of the army of Northern Virginia. His official record appears as follows: Captain C. S. A., aide-de-camp, November 8, 1861-March 27, 1862; major and aide-de-camp, August, 1862; lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, November 4, 1864. Colonel Taylor's life since the war has enhanced the esteem which he gained as a soldier. To him our history is indebted for his supervision of the reports of the campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia. He has often contributed, by addresses and articles to the press, to valuable Confederate literature, but the work for which the South is most greatly indebted to him is the small compact volume called, "Four Years with General Lee," which is rich in description of campaigns and incidents in the life of his commander.

Charles Lewis Teaney, of Pulaski City, shared throughout the Confederate war the faithful service of the Fourth Virginia regiment of infantry, and the Stonewall brigade, of which it was a part. He was born in Pulaski county January 19, 1843, and when a little past eighteen years of age, early in July, 1861, enlisted as a private in the Pulaski Guards, which was then a part of the Fourth regiment, under Johnston's command in the lower Shenandoah valley. Private Teaney marched thence to the field of Manassas with that gallant little army of the Shenandoah, which had for its

leaders Jackson, Bartow, Bee and Elzey, under the general command of J. E. Johnston. In the battle of First Manassas the Fourth was commanded by Col. James F. Preston. The part that the regiment took in this famous victory is well indicated in the official report of Gen. Thomas J. Jackson: "At 3:30 p. m. the advance of the enemy having reached a position which called for the use of the bayonet, I gave the command for the charge of the more than brave Fourth and Twenty-seventh, and under commanders worthy of such regiments, they, in the order in which they were posted, rushed forward obliquely to the left of our batteries, and through the blessing of God, who gave us the victory, pierced the enemy's center, and by co-operating with the victorious Fifth and other forces, soon placed the field essentially in our possession." In this fight Private Teaney received severe wounds which caused his honorable discharge. Six months later, having recovered, he re-enlisted in the same company, and continued in the service throughout the war, serving as a sharpshooter the last two years, participating in Jackson's Valley campaign in 1862, the campaign of Jackson's corps before Richmond, at Second Manassas and in Maryland, the same year, and after the death of his general, took part in the Gettysburg campaign and fought with Gordon in the valley in 1864. He was slightly wounded at Gettysburg, and at Fredericksburg was hurt by a falling limb of a tree. He was with Gordon's corps at the last, and was surrendered and paroled at Appomattox.

Lieutenant William Richards Teller, since 1896 the manager of the Metropolitan hotel at Washington, D. C., is a native of Virginia, and a veteran of the army of Lee. He was born at Richmond in the year 1842, and was reared and educated at that city. In his nineteenth year he entered the military service of the State, enlisting as a private in the Richmond Grays on April 19, 1861. This organization was made a part of the Twelfth regiment of Virginia infantry, with which he served until August 19th, meanwhile being promoted corporal. At the latter date he received an honorable discharge, and immediately re-enlisted in the Third regiment, with the rank of orderly-sergeant of Company F. He continued with this command until the close of the war, receiving promotion to second lieutenant for gallant and meritorious conduct. He surrendered at Richmond and was paroled there. Among the battles in which he participated were Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, the encounters with the Dahlgren raiders, Drewry's Bluff, and the defense of Fort Harrison, on the lines before Richmond. After the conclusion of the war Lieutenant Teller made his home at Richmond until 1872, when he engaged in the coal business at South Fork, Pa., going from there in 1877 to Johnstown, Pa., where he conducted a hotel. A year later he engaged in a similar enterprise at Bellefonte, Pa., and continued in charge of a hotel there until 1889. Subsequently for a period of three years he resided at Philadelphia, and held the position of secretary of the Bloomington mining company. In 1893 he took charge of the Bluefield inn, in West Virginia, and three years later resigned that position, July 15, 1896, to take the position of manager of the Metropolitan hotel at the national capital. He is a member of the Confederate Veterans association of that city.

Benjamin B. Temple, M. D., of Danville, Va., is one of the sur-

vivors of seven brothers who served in the army of Northern Virginia. Their father was Benjamin Temple, an owner of large estates, born 1800, died 1872, who was the son of Robert Temple, a planter, residing at Amptill, Chesterfield county, whose father was Benjamin Temple, of Presque Isle, near Yorktown, who held the rank of colonel in the war of the Revolution, and was a charter member of the order of the Cincinnati. The mother was Lucy Lilly Robinson, born 1805, died 1883. Their seven sons in the service were Robert H., who was in the mining bureau with the rank of major; Charles W., who served in the Ninth Virginia cavalry until wounded and disabled and then was attached to the ordnance bureau; Benjamin B., John T., lieutenant in the Thirtieth Virginia infantry; William S., of Pegram's battery and later of the Ninth Virginia cavalry, who was several times wounded; Bernard M., of Pegram's battery until wounded at Second Manassas, and subsequently in the ordnance department; and Ludwell R., of the Ninth Virginia cavalry. The latter and John T. died soon after the war as a result of disability incurred in the service. Benjamin B. Temple was reared at Fredericksburg, and educated at the university of Virginia, graduating in medicine there in 1859, and in 1860 at the Virginia medical college at Richmond. Subsequently he pursued clinical studies at Paris one year, and returning in June, 1861, enlisted in the Second Richmond Howitzers, with which he served nearly two years as number one at a ten-pound Parrott gun. In April, 1863, he was transferred to the Ninth Virginia cavalry, with which he served as a private to the end. He participated in the battles of Bethel, the Seven Days' campaign, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Brandy Station, Yellow Tavern, White Tavern, all the fights before Petersburg, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. During much of the time also he was on detached duty as a scout with Stringfellow, and was frequently called upon to employ his surgical education. He was several times slightly wounded. At Appomattox, with other cavalrymen, including R. E. Lee, Jr., he escaped through the Federal lines and started toward Johnston's forces, but on learning that General Lee had surrendered the whole army, turned back and went home. Returning to Fredericksburg he engaged in the work of his profession, and removed in 1874 to Danville, where he enjoys a large practice. He holds the rank of surgeon in Cabell-Graves camp. September 5, 1866, he was married to Miss Mary E. Glidden, of New Orleans, and they have one son, George Glidden Temple, in business at Danville.

Robert Stockton Terry, an influential citizen of Lynchburg, who participated during the latter part of the war of the Confederacy in the services of the daring troopers under the command of Colonel Mosby, was born at Danville in 1847. With his family he was brought to Lynchburg in infancy, and was there reared and educated until he was about seventeen years of age, when, in June, 1864, he entered the service in Mosby's command, with which he was identified during the remainder of the war. He served as color-bearer of this cavalry troop, and took part in all their raids after his enlistment, and in the battle of Charles-

town, W. Va., with Early's army. In July, 1865, he was paroled by General Gregg, at Lynchburg, and he soon afterward engaged in civil engineering for a year in Pennsylvania. He was subsequently in the service of the Adams express company and the Southern express company, at Lynchburg, for several years, and after that was connected prominently with the hotel business at Lynchburg, also owning an interest in the Kimball house, at Atlanta, Ga. His military service, though brief, was exceedingly active and hazardous. Of its adventurous character the name of his famous leader is a sufficient guarantee. It was not their part to participate in great battles, but they rendered equally valuable service in keeping the Confederate leaders informed of the movements of the enemy, at the same time by sudden sallies and daring attacks, managing to embarrass the opposing forces and keep large bodies of troops in a vain pursuit of Mosby. Mr. Terry is descended from an old and honorable Virginia family. His great-grandfather, Daniel Terry, a native of the Old Commonwealth, served as an officer in the Revolutionary army.

Henry G. Thomas, prominent among the sea-faring people of Portsmouth during the war period, was the son of John G. Thomas, a Welshman by birth, who was a sea captain in the merchant marine, and made his home at Portsmouth about 1832. Henry G. Thomas was born at Portsmouth, served for forty years in the United States navy, prior to 1861, and then resigned and joined the Confederate navy, in which he served throughout the war and gained the rank of captain. After the struggle was concluded he engaged in business at Norfolk as a grocer, prospered in trade, held a worthy position in social life, and honored his military service by maintaining a membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp of the Confederate Veterans. His death occurred at Norfolk, January 4, 1881. Edward T. Thomas, son of the foregoing, was born at Portsmouth, October 31, 1854. His mother was the daughter of Edward Trugin, of Portsmouth, and died the year following his birth. He received his education mainly in the Norfolk military academy under Professor Gatewood, and quit school at the age of sixteen years, engaging in business with his father. In 1878 he embarked in the same business on his own account, at Norfolk, and beginning with a small capital, has by the exercise of excellent business talent, built up an extensive business, achieved notable success financially, and gained considerable real estate holdings. He is fraternally connected with the Masonic order, is a Knight Templar, has been secretary of the Knights of Honor for eighteen years, and treasurer of his Odd Fellows lodge for five years. Mr. Thomas was married October 14, 1878, to Margaret S., daughter of Henry Dalby, of Norfolk, and they have one child, Edward Keeling.

Lieutenant J. W. Thomas, Jr., a well-known chemist and pharmacist of Norfolk, Va., and commander of Pickett-Buchanan camp of that city, was born at Richmond, Va., October 10, 1836. He is the son of William Thomas, a naval contractor, who rendered valuable service to the Confederacy in the construction of ironclad vessels, until he was taken prisoner at Deep Bottom, by the Federals, and held until the close of the war. Lieutenant Thomas received a thorough academic, scientific and professional education, graduating at the university of Pennsylvania in 1858

with the degree of doctor of medicine, after which he became a practicing pharmacist at Richmond. There he became a member of the Richmond Howitzers, and in 1859 was with the troops sent to preserve order in the Harper's Ferry region at the time of John Brown's attempt at insurrection. He was a witness of the execution of Brown. In April, 1861, he went into active service with the Howitzers, and being ordered to the peninsula was in the opening fight at Big Bethel. In July he took part in the affair at Blackburn's Ford and the battle of Manassas, and then returned to the peninsula, where he participated in the campaign against McClellan, including Malvern Hill. He was again in action at Second Manassas and Fredericksburg, and in March, 1863, was ordered to Richmond on recruiting service. Soon afterward he was commissioned lieutenant, artillery corps, C. S. A., and assigned to ordnance duty with the army of Northern Virginia, in which he continued until the close of the war, surrendering with General Lee at Appomattox. With the return of peace he embarked in the drug trade at Richmond, and thence removed to Norfolk in 1868, where for thirty years he has been doing a successful business. He has also been prominent throughout this period as an analytical chemist and a teacher of pharmacy. His ability is widely recognized, particularly in his own profession, and he has had the honor of serving as president of the Virginia pharmaceutical association.

Lewis D. Thomas, now a citizen of Baltimore, Md., was among the youth of the Old Dominion who rallied to the service of their native State early in the conflict, devoted to the cause and eager for the fray, though not yet of years to entitle them to citizenship in civil life. His father, Robert S. Thomas, who was born at Norfolk, Va., in 1818, and removed to Richmond in 1860, served as a private in the Richmond Reserves, who guarded the government property and upon occasions were called upon for serious action in the defenses of the city when it was threatened, in the absence of the main army. He participated in the defense of Fort Gilmer. The father of this patriot, also a Virginian, and a native of Matthews county, was a private soldier in the company of Captain Corbin in the war of 1812, and died in 1833 at the age of about seventy years. Thus the ancestral examples, as well as his own personal impulses, urged young Thomas to early participation in the cause of Virginia when threatened with invasion. Born at Norfolk in 1845, and educated at the Norfolk military academy, he was living with his parents at Richmond when the war broke out. At the age of sixteen he joined the Jefferson Davis Guards, an organization of devoted young men formed as a bodyguard for the president. This company was assigned to the Twenty-fifth Virginia battalion, and he served with this command until the close of the war. During the defense of Richmond in the fall of 1864, he was in the garrison which bravely defended Fort Harrison, north of the James river, against two corps of the enemy, until forced to abandon the works. Immediately afterward he participated in the defense of Fort Gilmer, before which the exultant Federal army was driven back with great loss, practically terminating the advance of Butler's army against Richmond. At Fort Davis Mr. Thomas also served gallantly. In a fight at Aiken's landing, on the James river, he received a wound in the head.

He continued to serve in the trenches about Richmond until the city was evacuated, when he marched out with his comrades in the effort to unite with the other Confederate forces. He was engaged in the battle of Sailor's Creek, and at Appomattox when the escape of the army seemed impossible, he slipped through the Federal lines, intending to reach the Trans-Mississippi department, and made his way as far as Louisiana. But it becoming apparent that the war was over, he obtained a parole at Alexandria in that State, and returned to Lynchburg, Va., and thence went to Richmond to resume the duties of civil life. He entered upon business life as a clerk in a store, and in 1867 he removed to Baltimore, his father accompanying him, and entered the employment of the Pennsylvania railroad company. After an engagement for several years in this connection, he became manager of the Southern branch of the Lafin-Rand powder company, stationed at Baltimore, in which capacity he is now acting.

Captain George G. Thompson, of Culpeper, was born in Louisa county, March 15, 1824. He was educated at William and Mary college, and pursued a course of study in law, a profession to which he gave his attention for a year or two at Richmond. Then making his home in Culpeper county, he was engaged in farming at the time of the crisis in Virginia affairs in the spring of 1861. He enlisted with a volunteer company, and going to Harper's Ferry, was assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, his command becoming Company E. Being over thirty-seven years of age he was soon promoted captain, and assistant quartermaster, and assigned to the brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson, with which he served until after the first battle of Manassas. He was then transferred to the valley of Virginia, under the orders of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston. In the summer of 1862 he was ordered to report to Colonel Carey, chief quartermaster on the staff of Gen. Robert E. Lee, and in this capacity he continued on duty throughout the remainder of the war, his main duty being the charge of the field depots. He rendered efficient and faithful service to the heroic army which contended for the cause of Southern independence upon Virginia soil. Returning to Culpeper after the surrender, he held the office of county sheriff two years, and since retiring from that office has served for thirty years as local agent of the Orange & Alexandria railroad, now part of the Southern system. In 1850 he was married to Miss Barbour, of Culpeper, sister of Senator Barbour. They have living four daughters and three sons. Of the latter one is assistant superintendent of the Southern railroad, in charge of several divisions; another is a lawyer at Washington, D. C., and the third is soliciting agent of the Southern railroad at Lynchburg. The second daughter is the wife of Rev. J. G. Minnigerode, rector of Calvary church, Louisville, Ky.

Captain John H. Thompson, of Portsmouth, distinguished as an artillery officer among the gallant soldiers of southeastern Virginia, is a native of the city where he now resides, born in 1823. At the passage of the ordinance of secession by the Virginia convention he was employed in the Gosport navy yard, where his last duty was in preparing the Merrimac to be taken North. He was at the same time first lieutenant of the Portsmouth light artillery, an organization dating back to a period previous to the war of 1812, and honored by the memories of the valiant

service of its members of that era in the battle of Craney Island in 1814. Lieutenant Thompson went into service by order of Governor Letcher, April 20, 1861, and was on duty that night when the navy yard was fired. He served at the Naval hospital grounds and then at Hoffer's creek, until early in 1862, when his battery was ordered to South Mills to repel the Federal advance from Roanoke island. On the Pasquotank river, May 2d, in command of one division of the battery, he had a spirited engagement with two Federal gunboats which were damaged considerably and compelled to drop down the river. In the latter part of the same month the battery reached Richmond and became part of the army of Northern Virginia, attached to the division of General Anderson. They were in action at the beginning of the Seven Days' battles, and at Malvern Hill behaved with distinguished gallantry, maintaining a fire against nearly one hundred Federal guns, for two hours. Lieutenant Thompson was one of the last to leave the position, and was specially commended for bravery in the report of Captain Grimes. He was subsequently in the fight at Warrenton Springs, and at Second Manassas participated in the advance of Mahone's brigade against the left wing of Pope's army. He took part in the fight against McClellan's army at Crampton's Gap, and then moving rapidly by way of Harper's Ferry to the battlefield of Sharpsburg, commanded the battery in the bloody engagement of September 17th, in which Captain Grimes was killed. Lieutenant Thompson then continued in command of the battery until at Winchester, in the fall of 1862, upon the reorganization of the artillery, the Portsmouth company was divided, part being assigned to Huger's battery and part to Moorman's. Captain Thompson was then ordered to Richmond and assigned to duty for a short time at the camp of paroled prisoners, after which he was detailed to take charge of the exchange of prisoners at City point. Just before the landing of Butler's forces at that point, he was detached and ordered to Richmond, and was promoted to the rank of captain and assistant adjutant-general. He was assigned to duty as assistant provost marshal under Maj. Isaac Carrington, in the department of General Winder, and he continued in these duties until the close of the war, making his headquarters at Richmond, and serving at various points in Mississippi and Georgia, and other Southern States. Being in Danville at the time of the surrender at Appomattox, he went into North Carolina and attempted to join the army under Johnston, but was captured by a Federal party on crossing the Catawba river. Giving his parole he was permitted to proceed and he made his way to Augusta before returning to Virginia. Since the war he has been engaged in shipbuilding work, and for some time he has been in charge of the rigger department of the navy yard at Portsmouth. He has served upon the city council, and as health inspector of the city, and is a valued member of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans.

Lieutenant Joseph L. Thompson, lieutenant of artillery in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Fluvanna, Va., in 1840. In 1854 he made his home at Lynchburg and there enlisted on April 21, 1861, as a private in Latham's battery, afterward known as Dearing's, and still later as Blunt and Dickerson's battery. At the reorganization in 1862, he was elected second lieutenant, was

soon afterward promoted junior first lieutenant, and finally first lieutenant. He participated with honor in the battles of First Manassas, Yorktown, Williamsburg and Seven Pines. Then being detailed for several weeks on recruiting service he missed the Seven Days' battles. Subsequently he fought at Fredericksburg, Plymouth, New Bern and Little Washington, N. C., Gettysburg, with Pickett's division, Second Cold Harbor and in the trenches before Petersburg, until sent upon a mounted detail to Lynchburg, where he was on duty at the time of the surrender. At the close of hostilities he farmed for a short time in Franklin county, and then made his home at Lynchburg, where he was for several years agent for the Lynchburg News. In 1868 he engaged in his present business, that of a furniture dealer. His father, William D. Thompson, also served in the Confederate cause, as a member of the reserve troops at Petersburg. In October, 1863, Lieutenant Thompson was married at Lynchburg to Mary, daughter of Albert and Susan (Tucker) Waddell, and they have six sons and one daughter.

Magnus S. Thompson, for a number of years past a resident of Washington, D. C., and an official of the navy department of the United States, served gallantly as a private in the army of Northern Virginia. He is a native of the Old Dominion, born July 31, 1846, near Winchester, in Frederick county, where his father, Hon. William Broadus Thompson, then resided. When he was yet a child the family removed to St. Louis, Mo., and subsequently to a permanent home at St. Joseph, Mo., in both of which cities the father engaged in the practice of law. At the outbreak of the war, the elder son, W. T. Thompson, joined the forces organized by his uncle, Gen. M. Jeff Thompson, who was one of the leaders, with Price and Hardee, in the effort to unite Missouri with the Confederate States. The career of Gen. Jeff Thompson, and the gallant struggle of his command, and the Mississippi flotilla in which he was deeply interested, is one of the many romances of the war in the West. Magnus S. Thompson at that time was so young that the entreaties of his mother kept him at home for some time, until she consented to accompany him to Virginia. They reached Winchester in the latter part of July, and when Gen. "Stonewall" Jackson made his headquarters at that city he volunteered in his service as a courier. He served in this capacity until the battle of Kernstown, when the solicitude of his mother prevailed upon him to return with her to Missouri. Two months later he obtained permission to go back to Virginia and enter the army at the age of sixteen years. The Federal blockade at that time was so strict that he accomplished the journey only with great hardships and danger, and was compelled to travel disguised in women's clothes during the major part of the time. Entering the Confederate lines at Newtown he soon found himself among friends, and enrolled in a company of partisan rangers, commanded by Captain Trahour. This and other independent commands were soon united in the Thirty-fifth Virginia battalion of cavalry, under Col. E. V. White, and young Thompson was unanimously requested to accept the captaincy of his company, but he declined the promotion, preferring to serve in the ranks. Participating heartily in the adventures of this gal-

lant body of troopers he was in frequent danger, and it was his peculiar distinction that he was captured oftener by the enemy than any other Confederate soldier, so far as known. It was his misfortune to be five times a prisoner of war; once, being wounded, he was left on the field for want of ambulance facilities; twice he escaped after capture; a fourth time he was paroled after the Gettysburg battle; and the last time he experienced imprisonment under peculiar hardships at Fort McHenry. During six weeks of his detention there he was kept in a dungeon and fed with bread and soup once a day, and for nearly three months he was put to work on the streets of Baltimore and at the rolling mills at Locust Point. Declining to take the oath he was held in this imprisonment until June, 1865. During his service he was wounded near Berryville, while participating in a raid, and in the subsequent race for liberty was chased five miles and two horses were killed under him. A detailed account of his romantic and dangerous experiences would amply illustrate the daring of the young Southern troopers. After his final parole he resided at Berryville, Va., for several years, and in 1876 removed to Washington, where he served as a clerk in the navy yard until his promotion in 1884 to the position of chief clerk of the department of files, records and supplies. He maintains his comradeship with the soldiers of the Confederacy and has membership in the camps at Washington and Leesburg of the United Confederate Veterans.

Alexander Thurman, chief of the fire department of Lynchburg, was well prepared for his position by active and brave service as a Confederate soldier. He was born at the city he now so faithfully protects, in 1845, and being but a boy when the war began, was not able to enter the Confederate army; but in 1861-62 he served as volunteer fireman of the city, the able-bodied young men being at the front. January 1, 1863, he entered the Virginia military institute and accompanied the corps of cadets in three or four of their expeditions against the invaders. Seeing the need of his State for all her sons who were able to bear arms, he was not content to remain there, and left in December, 1863, immediately entering the army in Company B, Second regiment of Virginia cavalry, in the brigade of Gen. T. T. Munford, in which he served until the close of the war. In the period of the struggle which followed that date were crowded many romantic, gallant and desperate encounters, in which, as a daring trooper, he did his share in maintaining the brilliant reputation of the Virginia cavalry. A mere outline of the battles in which he took part, sometimes dismounted, as at Cold Harbor, repelling the desperate and repeated attacks of the enemy, will give an idea of his service and that of his command. The list includes the seventeen days' fighting in the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania Court House, Meadow Bridge, Second Cold Harbor, Hawe's Shop, Nance's Shop, Reams' Station, Winchester, Cedar Creek, Tom's Brook, Bridgewater, Catherine Furnace, Fisher's Hill, Wier's Cave, Waynesboro, Trevilian Station, Louisa Court House, Yellow Tavern and Front Royal. About March 25, 1865, he was stricken with illness, and was sent to hospital at Lynchburg, where he was still disabled when the war came to a close, and was paroled in May, 1865. In 1869 he removed to Missouri, and remained there a year, engaged in railroad surveying. Returning

to Lynchburg he engaged in wood manufacture, and in 1872 was appointed inspector of lumber at Lynchburg by Gov. James L. Kemper. He held this office two years and then resumed the manufacture of building material. From 1879 to 1883 his business was in the feed trade, and at the latter date he was appointed to the office of chief of the fire department. In 1887 he was married to Mary A. Sanderson, of New Kent county, Va. Mr. Thurman's family contributed nobly to the Confederate cause. His brother, Powhatan Thurman, born in Lynchburg in 1841, enlisted in April, 1861, in the Eleventh Virginia infantry, served eighteen months, detailed in the quartermaster's department, and re-enlisted in the Second cavalry in March, 1864, and served until the close of the war. He died in Lynchburg in 1882. Another brother, Samuel Thurman, enlisted in the summer of 1864 in Booker's reserve regiment, and took part in the battle at High Bridge. He is now living at Jefferson, Tex. Two other brothers, Charles and Edwin Randolph Thurman, were too young to render any service, beyond taking charge of their five sisters, while the older ones were at the front. The father of these young soldiers, Samuel B. Thurman, who died in 1892 at the age of seventy-seven years, served in the home guard at Lynchburg during the war. Richard Thurman, the great-grandfather of Mr. Thurman, was long known as "Uncle" Thurman at Lynchburg. He was a devout member of the Methodist church, greatly aiding in its extension by his blameless life and example, and the warmth with which he participated in religious services, as well as by that tender love of all men that characterized his whole life. When a young man he served on the staff of General Washington, and was accorded the privilege and honor of residing for some time, during the war of the Revolution, with Washington and Lafayette, in that small stone building in the city of Richmond, now so much revered on account of its former distinguished inmates. When General Lafayette revisited Richmond in 1825, "Uncle" Thurman called upon him, attired in the same clothes he had worn at the stone house. The general recognized him at once, received him with open arms, and shed tears of emotion as he recalled the hardships of the Revolutionary struggle.

Stephen Davis Timberlake, commander in 1866-67 of Stonewall Jackson camp, No. 25, U. C. V., at Staunton, Va., was born near Winchester, Frederick county, February 20, 1846. He is the son of Stephen D. and Frances A. Timberlake, and is descended from a long lineage in Virginia with a worthy record. His grandfather, Lieut. Henry Timberlake, and two of his brothers, served in the war of the Revolution. He was yet in school when Virginia became the theater of war in 1861, but after he had reached his sixteenth year he enlisted as a private in Company B of the Twelfth Virginia cavalry, the command of the gallant Col. Turner Ashby, and served with this regiment in nearly all the battles of the army of Northern Virginia, from April, 1862, until the close of the war. Soon after his enlistment he participated in Jackson's campaign in the valley, fighting at Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic. In the Wilderness fight he was at the front with his regiment, and in other great battles and in many minor affairs did his duty bravely, but fortunately and remarkably escaped without a scratch from the enemy's bullets, until the latter

part of the war, when he was slightly wounded. He was in the cavalry fights at Reams' Station and Trevilian's, took part in the famous capture of Grant's cattle, and with Rosser's brigade fought under Early in the valley. On June 9, 1863, during an engagement at Brandy Station, he was taken prisoner and afterward was confined for sixty days in the Old Capitol prison, at Washington, but being exchanged was able to rejoin his regiment at the same place at which he was forced to leave it. At Warrenton Springs his company made a spirited charge upon a Federal regiment and put it to flight, under the eyes of Gen. R. E. Lee and General Stuart. The commander-in-chief was so pleased by their bravery that he immediately granted the entire company a furlough for ten days. After the surrender Mr. Timberlake engaged in mercantile pursuits, first at Martinsburg, W. Va., then at Frederick City, Md., and in 1871 at Staunton, which has since that date been his home. Here he has been notably successful in business, conducting one of the leading mercantile establishments of the city. He was one of the charter members of the Stonewall Jackson camp, and has been active in its interests, and in the cause generally of his comrades of the Confederate armies. He was married in 1873 to Miss Nannie Bell, and has an interesting family. One son, Stephen D. Jr., is a graduate of Washington and Lee university, class of 1896, and is engaged in the practice of law. The mother and two daughters are active members of the Daughters of the Confederacy.

James G. Tinsley, of Richmond, gallantly associated with the service of that noted artillery organization, the Richmond Howitzers, during the war of the Confederacy, is a native of Hanover county, Va., born in 1843. He was reared in that county and after receiving the preparatory education entered Hampden-Sidney college, where he was yet a student when the military forces of Virginia were called out to defend her territory. Leaving school in October, 1861, he enlisted as a private in the Howitzers, and during the remaining three and a half years of struggle, shared their service in camp and field. Among the important engagements in which he took part, those most noteworthy in his career as a soldier were Wind's Mill, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Winchester, Gettysburg, Mine Run, Spottsylvania Court House, where he fought in maintaining the heroic stand of Lee's army on the 9th, 10th, 12th and 18th of May, 1864; Cold Harbor, where he worked the guns under fire for two days; Middletown, Deep Bottom, all names that recall to the veterans of the Howitzers and those familiar with their history, many deeds of daring and desperate endurance. When all was done he was paroled at Richmond in May, 1865, and then quietly returned to the work of civil life. For many years he was occupied upon his farm in Hanover county, with gratifying success, but in 1881 he embarked in business at Richmond, where he is now a prosperous and influential citizen.

Colonel H. B. Tomlin, first commander of the Fifty-third Virginia infantry, gave his services unstintedly to Virginia and went into the field though at an advanced age when the war was begun. He was commissioned colonel of the Fifty-third when it was organized in January, 1862, from the battalion of four companies which he previously commanded with the rank of major, four

companies under Major Montague, and two under Major Waddell. He served first with General Magruder on the peninsula, and in March, 1862, was attached with his regiment to General Armistead's brigade at Suffolk. He there served under Generals Randolph and Loring, making an expedition into North Carolina to repel an advance of the enemy. In May the regiment accompanied Armistead's brigade to Richmond, and participated in the battle of Seven Pines and the Seven Days' campaign, in the closing battle of which, Malvern Hill, Colonel Tomlin was slightly wounded. He subsequently took part in the battles of Second Manassas and the Maryland campaign, but his health then failed him, and after the battle of Sharpsburg he was compelled to retire from the service, Col. William R. Aylett succeeding to the command. The resignation of Colonel Tomlin was sincerely regretted by the officers and men of his regiment. At the time of his return to civil life he was a member of the Virginia legislature, his whole service in that body covering a period of seventeen years. A brother of Colonel Tomlin, Robert W. Tomlin, born in Virginia in 1814, was a man of notable scientific attainments who followed the profession of civil engineering, and was for a long time associated with the construction of the James River & Kanawha canal from Richmond to Lynchburg. In later years he engaged in farming and died in Hanover county in 1862. His wife was Hester Van Bibber Braxton, a daughter of Carter Braxton, of Middlesex county, and a lineal descendant of that Carter Braxton who was one of the signers of the declaration of independence. Robert W. Tomlin, son of the latter, was born in Hanover county December 18, 1860. At the age of fifteen years he entered Randolph-Macon college, where he was graduated at the age of twenty years with the degree of A. M. He then engaged in teaching for several years, first as principal of the Gatesville, N. C., school, and later in McGuire's university high school at Richmond. In the fall of 1885 he entered the law department of the university of Virginia, and after accomplishing the two years' work in one was graduated in June, 1886. During the following October he established himself at Norfolk, where he has met with notable success as an attorney, and has the promise of a distinguished career. On July 1, 1896, he received the appointment of police justice. He was formerly a member of the Fourth Virginia regiment of militia, and during five years discharged most acceptably the duties of captain and adjutant of the regiment, a rank to which he was promoted from that of sergeant.

Chatham Moore Towers, a native of Virginia, who was in the Confederate service during the entire war, and is now prominently connected with the city postoffice at the national capital, was born at Winchester in 1840. At the age of five years he accompanied his family to Washington, where he was reared and educated. At the outbreak of the war of the Confederacy the love of his native valley called him back to its defense, and nearly all his duty in the field was in the Valley campaigns. He entered the service just before the battle of Philippi, as a private in the Hardy Blues, a volunteer organization which was assigned to the Twenty-fifth Virginia regiment of infantry, in the command of Brig.-Gen. Robert S. Garnett, who was conducting a campaign from Beverly, W. Va. In this attempt to hold West Virginia

Private Towers fought at the battles of Rich Mountain, Petersburg, Greenbrier Run, and Allegheny Mountain. In the following spring, with his regiment in the army of the Northwest, under command of Gen. Edward Johnson, he participated in the Valley campaign under Stonewall Jackson, fighting at McDowell, Front Royal and Winchester. At the latter engagement he was captured by the enemy before their retreat, and subsequently was confined at the Old Capitol prison until his parole in September, 1862. Upon being exchanged, in the following December, he entered the ordnance department at Richmond as ordnance messenger, and was engaged in the conveying of ordnance from Richmond to Wilmington, N. C., and carrying supplies to blockade runners for about eight months. He then re-enlisted in the Twenty-third Virginia regiment of cavalry as a private, and being later promoted to sergeant, participated in the campaigns of Breckinridge and Early in the valley, fighting at the battle of New Market, and in skirmishes along the Potomac, in the campaign against the Hunter expedition, including the battle of New Hope Church, an affair at Waynesboro, skirmishing on the way to Lynchburg and the battle there, and finally the battles with Sheridan in the vicinity of Winchester. At the conclusion of the war Sergeant Towers returned to Washington, but soon went into business at Richmond for a year, and after that in Cumberland county. In 1873 he made his home permanently at Washington, and became employed in the city postoffice, where he is now assistant superintendent. He is a member of the local association of Confederate Veterans.

Adam Tredwell, a prominent citizen of Norfolk, Va., was born at Brooklyn, N. Y., February 13, 1840, whence his parents had removed from North Carolina. He is the son of James Iredell Tredwell, a native of Edenton, N. C., who removed to Brooklyn and there died. His mother, Mary Bonner Blount, also a native of Edenton, returned to North Carolina after her husband's death, and died in August, 1870. Paternally Mr. Tredwell is descended from the New England Puritan stock, his seventh grandfather, in direct descent, being the famous John Alden, secretary of the Mayflower colony. Both his father's and mother's ancestors were of the Episcopal faith, and include six bishops of that church. Mr. Tredwell was reared and educated in North Carolina, and at the time when that State was deliberating regarding her position in the conflict impending in 1861, he became a member of the Washington Greys, destined for service in the Confederate cause. He served with this command about five months and was then, in the early part of the summer of 1861, transferred to the navy of the Confederate States as private secretary of Commander William T. Muse. He served in the naval engagement at Hatteras and then accompanied Commander Muse to Wilmington, where he remained until the end of the war. In the summer of 1862 he was commissioned assistant paymaster in the regular navy of the Confederate States, serving on the staff of Commodore Lynch and Commodore Pinckney, and continuing in that capacity at the Wilmington naval station until the close of hostilities. Since 1867 he has made his home at Norfolk, where he has been engaged in a number of important enterprises, and has been active

in the improvement and betterment of the city. He has been prominently connected with the cotton and fertilizer business, is president and treasurer of the Poconoke guano company, and since its reorganization in 1894, has been secretary, treasurer and purchasing agent of the Atlantic & Danville railroad. For six years he was chairman of the Norfolk street, sewer and drainage commission, and during this period nearly all the principal streets of the city were paved, and half the city was provided with sewers. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, St. Paul's Episcopal church, and the orders of Masonry and Odd Fellows. August 9, 1866, he was married to Annie Mary Baker, who died November 15, 1886, leaving three children: Sarah Collins, wife of William H. Kennedy; Mary Blount and William Baker. On December 9, 1896, he was married to Miss Elizabeth Perkins Roy, of Washington, D. C.

Lieutenant Henry S. Trout, a gallant veteran of Pickett's division of the army of Northern Virginia, who since the war has been one of the most distinguished citizens of Roanoke, Va., was born in Roanoke county in 1841. In May, 1861, he enlisted as a private in the Twenty-eighth Virginia infantry, and served until his capture at Sailor's Creek, winning promotion to sergeant at the close of his first year and a year later to lieutenant of Company I. He participated in the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, receiving a wound in the leg at Gaines' Mill; in the battle of South Mountain, Md., where he was wounded in the head; in the battles of Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg and two days at Gettysburg, including the charge of Pickett's division, of which he is one of the survivors, and the eight months' fighting on the lines about Petersburg. After his capture at Sailor's Creek he was held as a prisoner of war at Johnson's island until July, 1865. After his release he returned to his native county and engaged in farming until 1880. Since that date he has been prominently associated with the development of the city of Roanoke. He served four years in the Virginia house of delegates from Roanoke county, and four years as senator from the Fourth district. In the city he has served in the city council and as mayor in 1893, in the latter position being wounded during a riot. In business affairs he is prominent as president of the Iron Belt building association, president of the Roanoke street railway company and president of the First national bank.

Beverly D. Tucker, rector of St. Paul's church at Norfolk, and chaplain of Pickett-Buchanan camp, was born at Richmond, November 9, 1846. His family is illustrious in the history of Virginia. His father, Col. Beverly Tucker, a half-nephew of John Randolph, of Roanoke, born at Winchester in 1820, was editor of the Washington (D. C.) Sentinel and in 1857, at the age of thirty-seven years, was appointed by President Buchanan, consul-general at Liverpool; resigned that position at the inauguration of President Lincoln and returned home to enter the service of his State; was commissioned colonel by President Davis and sent upon a confidential mission to France; returned to Richmond in 1873 and after a short service in the field with a cavalry command, was sent to Canada to make secret negotiations for the exchange of cotton for bacon for the army; at the close of the war went to England and thence to Mexico as correspondent for

London papers, remaining until the fall of Maximilian; from 1868 until his death in 1890, was a resident of Washington, D. C. His grandfather, Henry St. George Tucker, member of Congress, professor of law at the university of Virginia and president of the Virginia court of appeals, was the son of St. George Tucker, who came to Virginia from Bermuda, served as colonel in the Revolutionary war, and was wounded at Yorktown; was judge of the United States court, member of Congress, president of the court of appeals, and professor of law in William and Mary college. The first of the family in America was George Tucker, who came to Virginia from England in 1613, and went to Bermuda upon the appointment of his brother, Daniel, as governor-general of that colony. Dr. Tucker's mother, Jane S. Ellis, who is still living, is the daughter of Charles Ellis, of Richmond. Dr. Tucker received his early education in England and Switzerland while abroad with his father. In 1863 he came to America for the purpose of entering the Confederate service. Though arrested at Martinsburg in attempting to pass the Federal lines, he was detained but a short time and was soon able to reach Richmond, where he served for a time in the organizations for local defense, and then became a member of the Otey battery, of the Thirteenth Virginia artillery. He served in the subsequent career of that famous battery until the close of the war, surrendering at Lynchburg, four days after the general capitulation, his command having escaped from Appomattox on April 8th. In the succeeding fall he returned to his studies and spent one year at the university of Toronto, after which he taught school and studied law at Winchester, Va. Entering the theological seminary at Alexandria in 1871, he was graduated in 1873 and ordained in June of that year, beginning at that date his life work in the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal church. His service at St. Paul's church, Norfolk, began in 1882, and has been permitted to tend greatly to the welfare of the church. He has taken an active part in the organization of the Confederate Veterans of Virginia, has been chaplain of Pickett-Buchanan camp since its foundation, and for four years has served as grand chaplain of the State organization. His efforts in the field of general literature have been notable, and include the dedicatory poems for the Confederate monument at Portsmouth and the Otey battery monument at Baltimore, and the ode read on Virginia day at the Columbian exposition of 1893. He was married in 1873 to Maria (born at Mt. Vernon), daughter of Col. John Augustus Washington, who inherited Mt. Vernon from his father and sold it to the Mount Vernon association; was commissioned lieutenant-colonel in the Confederate army, and served on the staff of Gen. R. E. Lee until September, 1861, when he was killed during Lee's first campaign, by an ambuscade at Rich Mountain, W. Va. Dr. Tucker and wife have a family of nine sons and four daughters.

Commodore John Randolph Tucker, of Virginia, a hero of three navies, but particularly conspicuous in his services for the Southern Confederacy, was born at Alexandria in the year 1812. He entered the navy of the United States in 1826, made his first cruise in the frigate *Brandywine*, and was promoted lieutenant in 1837 and commander in 1855. During the Mexican war he commanded

the bomb-brig Stromboli. As an officer of the United States navy at Norfolk in the spring of 1861 his fidelity to the Federal government until relieved of his allegiance by the secession of Virginia, was so marked as to incur hasty criticism. But when his State had joined the Confederacy none were more devoted to the new republic. He entered the service with the rank of commander, and was in charge of the James river squadron of three vessels, the Patrick Henry being his flagship. In this lightly-armed boat he confronted the Federal steamers before the mouth of the river, on the night of December 2, 1861, engaging four of the enemy's vessels under the guns of Newport News. He led his squadron into the Hampton Roads fight under Admiral Buchanan, in which he was actively engaged, contributing much to the success of that famous encounter. After the destruction of the Virginia, Tucker and his sailors, in the fortifications at Drewry's bluff, saved Richmond from the Federal fleet in May, 1862. Subsequently, having been promoted captain, he served at Charleston. As commander of the *Chicora*, he was distinguished in the action of January 31, 1863, when the Federal fleet was driven away and the blockade raised, by the two Confederate ironclads. Then, promoted commodore, he was in command of all the vessels at that important station until early in 1865, when he was ordered to Richmond with his men. The seamen were organized into the naval brigade under his command, and he had charge of the artillery at Drewry's bluff until the evacuation of the Confederate capital, when his naval brigade was attached to Custis Lee's division of Ewell's corps, which formed the rear guard of the army in the retreat to Appomattox. At Sailor's Creek, April 6th, he fought his first land battle, and held the right of Ewell's line, repulsing two assaults of Sheridan's infantry and cavalry. The naval brigade was valiantly holding its original position when General Ewell's order to surrender was passed along the line, but Commodore Tucker declared, "I can't surrender," and kept up the fight fifteen minutes after all the other Confederate colors were lowered. When they did yield the gallant men were cheered long and vigorously by the Federal forces. Subsequently Commodore Tucker, with the commission of rear-admiral, commanded the combined fleets of Peru and Chili, in their war with Spain. His last great work was the exploration of the upper Amazon and its tributaries, as president of the Peruvian commission. He died at Petersburg, Va., June 12, 1883, and was buried beside his wife at Norfolk.

Captain John S. Tucker, a prominent lawyer of Washington, D. C., who devoted four years of his early manhood to the defense of his native State, was born in Norfolk, Va. At the beginning of the war he was in Missouri, and promptly enlisted in Company H, Third Missouri infantry, and served under General Price until after the battle of Corinth, in which engagement, October 4, 1862, he received a wound in the arm of such a severe nature as to make amputation necessary. He was soon promoted to first lieutenant, and was afterward made captain of artillery and assigned to duty at the Richmond arsenal, where he remained until the evacuation of that city. After the war he returned to Norfolk and engaged in the practice of law. He was chosen city attorney, and afterward, in 1876, was elected mayor and re-elected in 1878. In 1880 he was appointed secretary of the commission

having in charge the arrangements for the centennial celebration of the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown. He removed to the capital city in 1879, and has since resided there, engaged in the practice of the legal profession. During Cleveland's first administration he held the position of principal examiner of land claims and contests in the general land office at Washington. Irwin Tucker, son of the foregoing, was born at Norfolk, Va., September 13, 1869. He accompanied his father to Washington in 1879 and at the age of seventeen years was engaged for a year in the office of a Washington correspondent. During the next five years he was city editor of the Norfolk Virginian. In 1890 he made his home at Newport News, and embarked in the real estate and insurance business, in which he has been quite successful. For four years, from 1893, he served as postmaster of the city. He is a young man of broad acquirements, great energy and brilliant talent.

Rudolph S. Turk, editor of the "Spectator-Vindicator," at Staunton, Va., was born in Augusta county in 1849. He was educated in the schools of Staunton and at Roanoke college. When fifteen years old he enlisted, in the summer of 1864, in a company commanded by Capt. John Opie, of Staunton. He served with that command throughout the summer and until the company was disbanded, participating in the battles of Piedmont and Lynchburg, and other skirmishes such as the one at New London. When the armed contest had ceased he entered the university of Virginia and pursued the study of the law. In 1875 he made his home in Pocahontas county and resided there until 1888, engaged in the practice of his profession. After the latter date he spent a year and a half at Wichita, Kan., returning then to Staunton, where he practiced law until 1895. He then purchased the "Spectator" newspaper, with which he subsequently consolidated the "Vindicator," and has successfully managed this publication while still continuing his professional practice. Mr. Turk is descended from an old Virginia family, of Scotch-Irish descent. His father, Rudolph Turk, was born in Augusta county in 1817, and died in 1890. He served for two terms as sheriff of Augusta county, before the war, and at the outbreak of that struggle, notwithstanding his advanced age, entered the service as major of the Fifth Virginia cavalry, with which he served at Harper's Ferry, but was subsequently replaced, with others, by West Point officers. Nevertheless he patriotically continued in the service as ordnance officer, and was stationed at Philippi, W. Va., until the capture of that place by McClellan. Then being assigned to the position of quartermaster with the rank of captain at Staunton, he remained there until the surrender, having charge of the manufacture and repair of wagons, caissons, ambulances, etc. Another son of the latter, James Alexander Turk, born in Augusta county in November, 1847, at the age of seventeen years left Washington college, where he was then a student, to serve with the Reserves. After participating in the battle of Piedmont, where his horse was shot under him, he enlisted in Company E of the First Virginia cavalry, with which he served, except when disabled by wounds, in all the fights of Wickham's brigade. At the battle of Cedar Creek he was severely wounded, and subsequently disabled for two months. During the fighting on the retreat he was again

wounded three days before the surrender. After the war he became engaged in railroad construction, and later in the commission and livestock business at Richmond, where he died January 1, 1888. He left one daughter, Mary Huston Turk.

D. J. Turner, of Norfolk, is a native of Virginia, born at Portsmouth, January 13, 1844. His family was founded in Virginia in the seventeenth century by members of the Turner family of Scotland. His father, D. J. Turner, a merchant of Portsmouth, suffered imprisonment at Fortress Monroe during the late war, by orders of General Butler, because of his devotion to the Confederate cause. His mother was Sarah C. Webb, daughter of a Portsmouth merchant, and a member of the Webb family with which President Hayes was connected. Mr. Turner was completing his education at the Randolph-Macon college when the war of the Confederacy broke out. He entered the service as a member of the independent signal corps stationed at Norfolk and Sewell's Point, and was on duty there at the time and in full view of the famous encounter between the Virginia and the Monitor. Proceeding after the evacuation of Norfolk, to Richmond, he was detailed on scouting duty as a member of a force under Chief Joseph R. Woodly. After about eighteen months of adventurous and important service in this field, for which the chief and his men were thanked in a personal letter from Gen. R. E. Lee, he was detailed as signal officer on duty with blockade runners. In this capacity, serving between the Bermudas and Wilmington, N. C., he had many thrilling experiences and narrow escapes from capture. When Wilmington passed into Federal hands, he attempted to run the blockade at Charleston. After the fall of that city he sailed to Havana, and thence across the gulf, evading the Federal cruisers, and landed at Galveston. Proceeding eastward he was informed, on crossing the Mississippi, of the surrender of General Lee. He went on, hoping to join the army of General Johnston, but at Columbus, Ga., heard that he, too, had yielded to the inevitable. Despairing then of any further service, he gave his parole and returned to his home in Portsmouth to engage in the duties of civil life. For several years after his return he was engaged in transportation at Portsmouth and Norfolk. He has taken an active part in the public affairs of the city, has served repeatedly in the city councils of Portsmouth and Norfolk, for four years represented the Thirty-first senatorial district in the State legislature, and held the office of high constable of Norfolk. He is past grand commander of the Knights Templar; past grand chancellor and supreme representative of the grand lodge of Virginia of the Knights of Pythias; and brigadier-general commanding a brigade of the Virginia division of the Confederate Veterans. With one exception he is the oldest member of the supreme lodge of the Knights of Pythias. Mr. Turner was married in 1868 to Mary E., daughter of William B. Lawrence, of Portsmouth, and they have six children. One of their sons, Daniel Lawrence, is professor of civil engineering at Harvard university; another, Ernest W., is in business at Norfolk.

E. L. Turner, for many years clerk of the county and circuit courts of Greensville county, was identified during the latter part of the war with the brilliant record of the cadets of the Vir-

ginia military institute. He was born in Greensville county, April 27, 1847, the son of Joseph and Mary Peebles (Mason) Turner. His father, who also held the office of clerk of the courts and during two terms represented his county in the State legislature, was the son of Person Turner, a prominent citizen of Greensville county and chairman of the county court, who was a native of England and founded the family in Virginia. Mary Peebles Mason was the daughter of Peyton Mason, a soldier of the Revolutionary war and a prominent merchant of Petersburg, and a worthy member of one of the prominent families of the South. E. L. Turner, during the early period of the war, was a student in his native county and at Petersburg, but during 1864, having entered as a cadet at the Virginia military institute, he took part in the service of the cadets under their commander, Colonel Shipp. In May, 1864, he shared in the fatiguing marches of the cadets in the Valley campaign under General Breckinridge, and participated in the defeat of Sigel's army at New Market. At the close of the war, sharing the impoverished condition of the commonwealth and its people, he was compelled to abandon further collegiate study and seek employment for a livelihood. In January, 1867, he entered the office in which his father had served efficiently during the last fifteen years of his life, becoming the deputy of John W. Potts, at that time clerk of the courts. On the retirement from office of Mr. Potts, Mr. Turner was appointed, in April, 1870, to fill the vacancy, and at the subsequent election he was elected to the office. He has discharged the duties of this responsible trust with such intelligence, skill and fidelity that at each succeeding election he has been again chosen for the position. In political affairs he has been active in the interests of the Democratic party and has participated in several State conventions. He is a faithful member, with the rank of adjutant, of Chambliss-Barham camp of Confederate Veterans. In the Masonic order he is particularly prominent and widely known. He was made a Master Mason in 1874, rose to Junior Deacon and Senior Deacon, and from 1880 to 1890 served as Worshipful Master, at the conclusion of this term being presented a handsome past master's jewel in evidence of the appreciation of his services. He was appointed district deputy grand master in 1880, became a member of the standing committee of the grand lodge on Masonic jurisprudence in 1883, and in the same year was commissioned by the grand lodge of Nebraska as its grand representative near the grand lodge of Virginia. He was exalted a Royal Arch Mason in the Petersburg union chapter, April 16, 1885, and became a Knight Templar in Appomattox commandery April 18, 1889. He is also a member of the past master's association of Richmond, Va., and maintains memberships in the orders of Odd Fellows and the Royal Arcanum. In 1876 he was married to Mrs. Ellen P. Wilson, daughter of Peter W. Walker, and they have three children: E. Peyton, Mary Ellen and Peter W.

James E. Turner, of Norfolk, well known among the pilots of the Virginia coast, was born in the State of New York in 1839. At the age of six months he was taken by his parents to Monticello, Ill., where they resided until he had reached the age of six years, when the family removed to Virginia, and made their home at Hampton. His mother, whose maiden name was Mary

Ann Bulley, was a native of the Old Dominion. His father, Rufus Turner, was a machinist by occupation and an industrious and highly respected man. Mr. Turner was reared from the age of six years in Virginia, and became thoroughly devoted to the State and her institutions. In 1855, at the age of sixteen years, he engaged in the vocation of a pilot upon the pilot boat York, and had been occupied in this calling for six years when the State began organizing for defense against the threatened Federal invasion. He was called to Richmond by Governor Letcher, where he served in the State military organization, first in the engineers and subsequently in the quartermaster's department. In 1862 he was assigned to the navy with the grade of first-class pilot, and afterward for meritorious conduct was promoted master. The particular service which earned this promotion was the cutting of the chain cables which had been placed inside the Federal lines to obstruct the navigation of the James river. During the operations of the James river squadron he took part in all its movements and engagements. After the evacuation of the capital he was ordered to battery service at Danville, where he was stationed until the surrender. He then joined the army of Johnston in North Carolina, and there surrendered in the general capitulation. After this he resumed his former occupation as a pilot, and in 1866 became one of the charter members of the Virginia pilot association, in which he is still prominent. In 1860 Captain Turner was married to Mary Frances, daughter of Capt. James E. Minson, a fellow pilot, and they have one child living, Anna G., wife of B. F. Dozier.

Captain Smith S. Turner, during life a prominent lawyer of Front Royal, and three years a representative in Congress of the Seventh Virginia district, was born in Warren county, November 21, 1842. In his youth he entered the Virginia military institute, and was awarded an honorable diploma, although the outbreak of the war prevented the completion of his studies. As a cadet of the institute he was with the cadet command that went to Harper's Ferry to take possession of the military stores in April, 1861, and then remained with the command of "Stonewall" Jackson, serving as drill officer until September, 1861. In the spring of 1862, at the reorganization, he was elected second lieutenant of Company B of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry regiment, and later in 1862 was promoted first lieutenant. He remained with this command until the close of the war, commanding his company for nine months after the battle of Sharpsburg, and on other occasions other companies in addition to his own. After the first year of the war his service was rendered in Pickett's division of the army of Northern Virginia. In the list of important engagements in which he participated, are the memorable names of the First Manassas, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm, Cold Harbor, Gaines' Mill, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Thoroughfare Gap, South Mountain, Sharpsburg, where he was wounded in the head by a fragment of shell, Fredericksburg, Drewry's Bluff, various skirmishes in Tennessee in 1863, New Bern and Suffolk. Near the last days of the war he was with the army of Gen. J. E. Johnston, and just before the surrender of that command narrowly escaped death in a terrible accident. He was among sixteen men who were involved in the explosion of

a car of ammunition. Fourteen of the men were killed or mortally wounded, but Lieutenant Turner escaped with his life, though badly injured and disfigured. After he had recovered from this accident he became instructor in mathematics in a female seminary at Winchester, and held that position for two years. Then undertaking the study of law, he was admitted to the bar in 1869, and in the same year was elected to the legislature of Virginia, where he held a seat until 1872. For eight years he was a member of the board of visitors of the Virginia military institute, and for seven years served as commonwealth's attorney for his county. In 1893 he was elected to the Fifty-third Congress for the unexpired term of Governor O'Ferrall, and in 1894 was re-elected. He served in the regular and special sessions of the Fifty-fourth Congress, and in 1896 declined re-election and returned to his professional occupations, which he followed until his death, April 8, 1898.

D. Gardiner Tyler, son of John Tyler, ex-president of the United States, representative from the Second district of Virginia in the Fifty-third and Fifty-fourth Congresses, was born in the year 1846, at East Hampton, Long Island, N. Y., while his mother was on a visit there to her relatives, but he has resided all his life at the family homestead on James river in Charles City county, Va. At the outbreak of the war he was thoroughly in sympathy with the spirit of the Confederacy, but his youth prevented him from serving at once in the field, whither his inclinations strongly drew him. In 1862 he entered Washington college at Lexington, Va. A few months later, however, the martial spirit which pervaded the youth of Virginia, led him to enlist in the Home Guards early in 1863, that he might be ready for any service required. As a member of this organization he engaged in the pursuit of the enemy in several raids made by them in that part of Virginia, and in June, 1864, participated in the fighting of the improvised army that checked the advance of the Federal General Hunter up the valley of Virginia, during which movement the Virginia military institute was burned and Washington college narrowly escaped destruction. He fought in the disastrous battle of Piedmont, June 5th, and the engagements of June 17th and 18th at Lynchburg, where the Federals were repulsed and retreated. After this he spent two or three weeks at the college, returning then to active service, and going with his company to Richmond, where they were detailed as guards at Libby prison. In August, 1864, he secured a transfer to the regular army and enlisted as a private in the Rockbridge battery of the First Virginia battalion of artillery, attached to Ewell's corps. With this command he served until the close of the war, taking part in the fights on the lines north of the James river, notably at Fort Harrison and Fort Gilmer, and on the retreat of Lee's army from Richmond was in the battle of Cumberland Church and other engagements, surrendering with his command at Appomattox Court House. After this serious introduction to the vicissitudes of life, in his nineteenth year, he returned to his devastated home. In the following October he went to Europe and pursued a course of classical studies at Carlsruhe, Grand Duchy of Baden, for a period of two years. On his return to Virginia he entered Washington college again, then under the presidency of his old commander, General Lee, for the study of law, in which he was graduated in the year 1869.

After continuing the study of his profession one year at Richmond, Va., he returned to Charles City county, and entered upon the practice, in which he has since continued, meeting with a notable degree of success. His eminence in the profession, ability in the conduct of public affairs, and the leading position which was soon accorded him in the political field in that part of Virginia, have been recognized by his appointment to various positions of trust and public usefulness. From 1884 to 1887 he served as a director of the State asylum at Williamsburg; is one of the board of visitors of William and Mary college; was elected a presidential elector on the Democratic ticket in 1888; and in 1891 was elected to the Virginia senate by his district. The faithful and intelligent service which he rendered the people in these positions, led to his nomination for Congress in the Second district in 1892. He was elected and worthily represented his district and the interests of Virginia in the Fifty-third Congress and in the Fifty-fourth, being re-elected by a decisive majority in 1894. Since the expiration of his second term in Congress he has been engaged in his profession and in the management of his plantation.

John J. Tyler, a well-known business man of Lynchburg, was born in Amherst county, in 1844. He was reared and educated in his native county, and there at the age of eighteen years, entered the service of the Confederate States as a private in the Thirteenth Virginia infantry. He served as a private throughout the remainder of the war, until he surrendered and was paroled with the army at Appomattox. He fought with Jackson at Port Republic, Winchester, Cross Keys and Kernstown, and in the Seven Days' battles on the peninsula, participated in the movement against Washington under Early, and took part in the battle of Monocacy, again in the valley met the enemy at Winchester and Cedar Creek, and shared the fighting at Spottsylvania Court House, Kelly's Ford and before Lynchburg. After the surrender he returned to his home in Amherst county, and thence in the fall of 1866 removed to Lynchburg, where he has since that date been engaged in business.

Walker Wilson Tyler, of Lynchburg, was born in Amherst county, in 1840, and was reared and educated in that county. In the summer of 1862 he entered the Confederate service in Company B of the Twentieth battery heavy artillery, as a private, but was at once detailed as secretary to Col. T. S. Rhett, chief of the ordnance bureau under Gen. Josiah Gorgas. Mr. Tyler served in this capacity until Colonel Rhett was sent to Europe on ordnance duty, when he was detailed at Richmond in the quartermaster's department, in which duty he continued until the evacuation of the Confederate capital. In the spring of 1865 he was paroled at Lynchburg, ending a period of nearly three years' faithful and efficient service for the Confederate government. After the close of hostilities he embarked in business at Lynchburg, and during the quarter century and more which has elapsed, he has conducted with much success one of the leading dry goods establishments of the city. He is regarded by his community as a business man of integrity and an enterprising and valuable citizen. In 1868 he was married to Ella, daughter of John Rucker, of Lynchburg, and they have one son, John Duvall, and a daughter, Elizabeth Walker. Mr. Tyler is descended from a Virginia family long associated

with the history of the State. His grandfather, a native of the Old Commonwealth, served as a captain in the Revolutionary war, and his maternal grandfather, Richard Wilson, took part in the same patriotic struggle with the rank of captain.

Captain George C. Vanderslice, a Confederate soldier who was afterward conspicuous in the ministry of the Methodist church in Virginia, was born at Richmond July 30, 1836. He was educated at the Washington and Lee university and the Virginia military institute, and then prepared himself for the ministry, becoming a member of the Virginia conference of the Methodist church in 1859. After he had performed pastoral duties for two years on the Amherst circuit, he determined to offer his services as a soldier, being specially qualified by his studies at the military institute, in the great emergency of 1861. In the spring of 1861 he became captain of Company D, Forty-ninth Virginia infantry, and served in this rank during the Peninsular campaign, taking part in the defense of Yorktown, and the great battles before Richmond, including Seven Pines and Malvern Hill. Upon the reorganization of the army in 1862, he resigned his captaincy and applied for a position as chaplain, but there being a great pressure for appointments to that service, he resumed his work as a minister. He continued in this calling with marked success and, while pastor of the Union station, at Richmond, Va., died March 17, 1898. His wife, Susan A. Pettit, born in Amherst county July 4, 1840, the daughter of Samuel Pettit, a farmer, had four brothers in the Confederate service: Alfred G., William, who was killed at Sharpsburg; Edward and James C., who was twice captured and at the close of the war was a prisoner at Point Lookout. Mrs. Vanderslice remained at her home in Amherst county during the war, and was a witness of the active military operations in that vicinity, and was frequently in peril, being compelled on one occasion to gather up two of her younger children and flee to a place of safety, it becoming a necessity for the Confederate batteries to shell an important Federal position near her home. Dr. George Keese Vanderslice, one of the sons of Dr. Vanderslice and wife, was born in Henrico county, on the Malvern Hill battlefield, November 12, 1870. He received his literary education at McCabe's university school at Petersburg, and his medical training in the university of Virginia, graduating in 1892. After spending one year at St. Vincent's hospital, Norfolk, as resident physician, he began practice at Phoebus, Va., his present home. He is prominent among the younger physicians of southeastern Virginia, was elected a fellow of the State medical society in 1893; is a member of the clinical society of the staff of Dixie hospital; and of the local branch of the State board of health; and is examining surgeon for several life insurance companies.

Townsend Heaton Vandevanter, of Leesburg, a gallant soldier of White's battalion, was born in Loudoun county May 1, 1844. After receiving his preparatory education in his native county he entered the Virginia military institute, where he was a student when the State was invaded by the Federal troops, and the war of the Confederacy was begun. When he was a little over eighteen years of age he enlisted in the fall of 1862 in Company A of the Thirty-fifth Virginia battalion of cavalry, under command of Col. E. V. White. He served as a private in this command until de-

tailed as a courier for his brigade commander, General Rosser, in May, 1864, and continued in the latter capacity until the last three months of the war, when he was attached to the command of Colonel Mosby, with whom he served to the end and surrendered. Before his detail as courier for the brigade commander he served in the same capacity at the famous battles of Antietam, Frederickburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and the Wilderness campaign, with Gen. R. E. Lee's headquarters. With Rosser he participated in the operations in West Virginia in 1864. He was also with Rosser as courier in the famous cattle raid of Wade Hampton in the rear of Grant's lines south of James river. Notwithstanding his active service he was captured by the enemy but once, and then managed to escape after about an hour's captivity. After the end of the struggle he returned to Loudoun county, and found occupation as a clerk in the establishment of Col. E. V. White, his old commander. When the latter was elected sheriff of the county, in 1868, Mr. Vandevanter was enabled to continue his intimate relations with the gallant colonel by appointment to the office of deputy sheriff. Subsequently he was appointed railroad agent at Hamilton, but after three years' service he retired from that position to engage in farming, in which he was occupied until 1895, when his standing and influence as a citizen of Loudoun county were appropriately recognized by his election to the office of county treasurer. He is a valued member of Clinton-Hatcher camp, and of the Masonic order. Dr. Joseph Vandevanter, brother of the foregoing, was born in Loudoun county February 6, 1847. In the fall of 1864 he enlisted in Company D of the cavalry command of Colonel Mosby, and served with credit during the remainder of the war. Subsequently he engaged in the study of medicine at the university of Virginia and the university of Maryland, and after receiving his professional degree practiced the profession for three years in Loudoun county. Since then he has been engaged in a successful practice at Ishpeming, Mich., where he is attached to mining companies as surgeon.

James Vass, of Danville, who had an interesting career in the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Culpeper county October 15, 1841. His father, S. M. Vass, who married Susan, daughter of George and Sallie Battaile (Dade) Fitzhugh, was the son of James Vass, a native of Scotland and son of a daughter of the Cumming clan, who came to America during the Revolutionary war, and married a daughter of Col. Abram Maury, first cousin of Matthew F. Maury. On April 17, 1861, young Vass enlisted as a private in the Culpeper Minute Men, a company which was assigned to Col. A. P. Hill's regiment, the Thirteenth Virginia infantry. He served with this command in the valley and at Manassas, and in March, 1862, was transferred to the famous Black Horse cavalry troop. After being with this troop one year as a private, he was detached as a scout and courier in which capacity he was for two years closely associated with Generals Lee, Jackson and Stuart. While on cavalry duty and attached to headquarters he participated in the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' campaign, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, Brandy Station, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Yellow Tavern, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek and many smaller affairs. On the eve of the second battle of Manassas he was de-

tailed by Captain Payne, on General Jackson's call for the best mounted man in the Black Horse troop, and was given a message to carry to Gen. R. E. Lee. Delivering this safely he was warned by General Lee not to allow the answer under any circumstances to fall into the hands of "those people," as he demonstrated the enemy. He brought the answer to General Jackson that night, finding the general sleeping in his blanket under a tree. After reading it Jackson turned over to sleep again and Vass sought rest in the nearest fence corner, to be awakened next morning by the first guns of the battle of Second Manassas. At the battle of Chantilly he was alone with Jackson when a courier came up from General Branch with the information that the latter's guns were so wet with the rain that they could not be used, and asking what he should do if attacked. Jackson rose in his stirrups and pointing his finger at the courier, answered: "You tell General Branch that the rain is falling as hard on the enemy as upon us. If they advance, and the guns cannot be discharged, use the bayonets and hold the position." Just before the battle of Fredericksburg, when General Stuart was urging upon General Lee that the Federals were advancing on Fredericksburg, and that the position should at once be secured, General Lee's doubts were removed by the testimony of Vass, who had been close to the enemy's campfires, and was introduced to General Lee by Stuart in these words: "General, here is a young man who has been with me a long time, and you can place full reliance in what he says." The gallant scout was once wounded, that being at Poolesville, Md., during the Sharpsburg campaign, receiving a bullet on the ribs from a Federal cavalryman, but not preventing him from dropping his antagonist. On the last day at Appomattox he carried the message which withdrew from action the last Confederate battery. Two brothers of this faithful soldier were in the service and both were killed in battle. He is now a highly respected citizen of Danville, and has three children living.

Benjamin Boisseau Vaughan, now president of the National bank of Petersburg, Va., and one of the leading citizens of that historic town, honorably sustained the record of his family which has long been distinguished in Virginia, by patriotic service in the Confederate cause. Sixteen years of age and a student at the Virginia military academy at the beginning of the war, he went out with the cadet corps in 1862 to participate in the battle of McDowell, with Jackson's troops, and then enlisted in Company G of the First Virginia cavalry, the old regiment of the gallant General Stuart. During the remainder of the war he served with this brave regiment of troopers, under the leadership of Fitzhugh Lee, J. E. B. Stuart and Wade Hampton, throughout the campaigns in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, until finally taking part in the disastrous fight at Sailor's Creek, during the retreat of the army from Petersburg, he was among the many brave men who were surrounded and captured by the hosts of the enemy. He was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout until June, 1865. Mr. Vaughan was born in Dinwiddie county in 1844, the son of Benjamin B. Vaughan, who was graduated at Princeton college in 1838, and in a distinguished law class at Harvard, and was subsequently prominent as a lawyer and political leader in his county, which he represented in the Virginia legislature.

The latter was the son of Lemuel Holt Vaughan, he of Peter Vaughan and he of Salathiel Vaughan, the ancestry running back in Virginia to the middle of the seventeenth century. The wife of Lemuel Holt Vaughan was Thyrza, daughter of Benjamin Boisseau and his wife, Mary Epes, the latter being the daughter of Col. Francis Epes, of the Revolutionary army, who in reward for his services received large grants of land in Kentucky. The mother of President Vaughan was Sarah E., daughter of James Vaughan, of an unrelated family, of Amelia county, Va., which is also of long standing and importance in Virginia. On his return from the Northern prison camp to Petersburg, Mr. Vaughan soon found employment, and in 1869 embarked in business as a tobacco dealer, the present firm name of Vaughan, Hill & Co. being adopted in 1885. He is also a member of the firm of Jones, Vaughan & Co., bark and sumac manufacturers. Both houses do a large export business. He is a member of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans, and for many years has served the community as a member of the school board. In 1871 he was married to Martha Dunn Stevenson, daughter of John and Jane McIlwaine Stevenson, of Petersburg, Va.

R. Frank Vaughan, a Confederate soldier distinguished for bravery, was one of the nine sons of William P. Vaughan who served in the army of the Confederate States. The father, born in January, 1806, died January 10, 1879, was a prosperous farmer and a descendant of one of the oldest Virginia families. R. Frank Vaughan married Mary E., daughter of William Hilary Hallett, who was distinguished in the business circles of Norfolk as a wholesale grocer. The wife of the latter was a daughter of Thomas C. Dixon, also a prominent business man of the city, and of a family noted in the history of Norfolk and of the State. Both Mr. Hallett and Mr. Dixon died in the yellow fever epidemic of 1855. F. Wade Vaughan, son of the veteran mentioned above, was born in Norfolk, July 30, 1870, and was educated in the Norfolk academy until the age of fifteen, when he embarked in his business career as a clerk. He served in this capacity with a bank and commercial establishments, and as a traveling salesman, until 1891, when he engaged in the wholesale fish and oyster trade on his own account. After a year of this occupation and another as traveling salesman in the same line, he entered the insurance business. Soon afterward he was taken in partnership with his father, which continued until May 9, 1895, the date of his father's death. Subsequently he has continued the business with great success under his own name, and in representation of the National fire insurance company of Baltimore is noted as one of the youngest special agents in the field. He is also one of the proprietors of the Virginia typewriter exchange. He was married April 8, 1896, to Nannie Bridges Portlock, daughter of the late Col. Edward S. Portlock, who received a commission as brigadier-general at the close of the war, and was subsequently auditor of the Norfolk & Western railroad company. Mr. Vaughan and his wife are active members of the First Presbyterian church of Norfolk, and he is superintendent of the Lambert's Point Sunday school. He was a member of the staff of the Fourth Virginia regiment, with the rank of ordnance-sergeant.

Spencer Vaughan, of Petersburg, who was connected with the Confederate service throughout the war period, was born in Dinwiddie county in 1835, the son of Claiborne and Eliza (Smith) Vaughan. His father, a farmer of that county, was the son of William Vaughan of Welsh descent. At the age of seventeen years Mr. Vaughan came to Petersburg, and finding employment in mercantile pursuits, became a member of the firm of Dickman & Vaughan. In that capacity he was engaged in business at the outbreak of the war. In 1862 he enlisted in Company A of the Ninth Virginia infantry regiment, Armistead's brigade, and was soon detailed on special duty. He was on guard about Petersburg about six months, and subsequently was on duty as a guard of paroled prisoners at Camp Lee. Then being detailed in the quartermaster's department he continued in that capacity until the evacuation of Richmond, when he joined the retreat in charge of a train of one hundred and fifty wagons. He reached Danville with his train and after camping about ten miles beyond that place, returned with three companions, met the Federal forces at Burkeville and surrendered and was paroled. Since the war he has been continuously engaged in business at Petersburg, except two years spent at Christiansburg, and of recent years he has given his attention wholly to the lumber trade. He is a member of A. P. Hill camp, and highly regarded by his comrades. In 1868 he was married to Miss Iwanona A. Simmonds, daughter of Dr. James Simmonds, of Lancaster county, Va. They have six children: Rosa, Daisy, Carrie, Inez, Nellie and James Claiborne.

M. J. Vellines, of the city police force of Norfolk, is a native of Isle of Wight county, born February 6, 1845. He is the son of Abraham Vellines, whose father was a native of France, and his wife, Martha Edwards. He was reared upon the home farm in Isle of Wight county until he had reached the age of sixteen when he enlisted, in the early days of the war, as a private in Company E of the Ninth Virginia infantry. The regiment was assigned to support the heavy artillery at Fort Boykin on the James river, until the evacuation of Norfolk, when it was in camp a few days at Dunn's Hill and then moved to Richmond and on to meet McClellan in the Peninsular campaign. About this time Captain Vellines was confined to the hospital about three weeks with sickness, but was able to rejoin his command just before the second battle of Manassas, in which he participated, as well as at Warrenton Springs, and in all the skirmishes of the campaign followed by the fights at Winchester, Fredericksburg and the march into Pennsylvania. On the third day of the historic encounter at Gettysburg, he shared in the famous charge of Pickett's division, of which his regiment formed a part, and fell wounded. He had the misfortune to be taken by the enemy and imprisoned at David's island, but by exchange in the following November, he was permitted to rejoin his regiment, then in North Carolina. Subsequently he participated in the campaign against Butler, and fought at Drewry's Bluff, where a ball wrecked his cartridge box, but fortunately did him no other damage. After this he participated in the battles of Spottsylvania and Cold Harbor, and after a short time in hospital, engaged in a number of skirmishes at Bermuda Hundred, until his command was relieved

by General Mahone. Then sent out on cavalry service he met the enemy at Five Forks, and was again captured, and was not released until July, 1865. At the close of his service he held the rank of orderly-sergeant. Returning to his home he resumed farming, a retired veteran at the age of twenty. In 1878 he removed to Norfolk, and a year later became a member of the police force, and with the exception of four years, two of which were spent in the service of the city as street inspector, he has remained upon the force ever since. For his efficiency in this service he has been gradually promoted until he reached the rank of captain about four years ago. In 1869 Captain Vellines was married to Mary F., daughter of B. F. Wamble, a sea captain. He maintains a membership in the Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate Veterans.

Major Andrew Reid Venable, one of the most gallant soldiers of the army of Northern Virginia, since the war engaged in the quiet vocation of a farmer in the vicinity of Richmond, was born in Prince Edward county, December 2, 1832. At the age of nineteen years he was graduated at Hampden-Sidney college, and then entered upon a mercantile career, going in 1856 to St. Louis to carry on a commission business. This was his occupation until the call for troops by President Lincoln in 1861, when he determined to return and offer his services to his native State. Reaching Richmond in June, he enlisted in the Third Howitzers at Yorktown, and served with that command as a private until just before the battle of Williamsburg, when the knowledge of his civil occupation and training led to his being called upon to serve as commissary for the Howitzer battalion. With this command, afterward enrolled as the First regiment Virginia artillery, he continued to hold the position of commissary, with the rank of captain, until the battle of Chancellorsville, when he was promoted and called upon for staff duty with some of the most brilliant cavalry commanders of the Confederacy. With Gen. J. E. B. Stuart he served as inspector-general, with the rank of major, until the commander was killed at Yellow Tavern, then assuming the same position on the staff of Gen. W. H. F. Lee for several months. Subsequently he was attached to the staff of Gen. Wade Hampton, until during the desperate attack upon the flank and rear of Hancock's division at Hatcher's Run, he fell into the hands of the enemy. As a prisoner of war he was sent to City Point and thence to the Old Capitol prison. While being transferred to Fort Delaware he made a daring escape by jumping from a car window while the train was approaching Philadelphia. Having some friends in the city he went to them on foot, and was secreted in the city and vicinity for a month, until it was thought to be safe for him to take the "underground railway" provided for such emergencies by warm friends of the South. Successfully passing the Federal lines he rode through Petersburg and reported to General Lee, who detailed him for service in southwest Virginia, in the reorganization of a demoralized cavalry command which had been reported as marauders. In this rough service he was engaged until about the first of March, 1865. After the surrender of the armies of Lee and Johnston, he capitulated at Charlotte, N. C. A partial list of the battles in which Major Venable participated shows the famous names of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Fred-

ericksburg, Frayser's Farm, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Williamsport, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Madison Run, Brandy Station, Yellow Tavern, Spottsylvania Court House, Bristoe Station, Buckland Races, Jack's Shop, Charlottesville, Va., and Second Bristoe Station.

William M. Wade, of Ettricks, Chesterfield county, was born in Henrietta county, February 15, 1835, the son of Wyatt M. Wade, who died when his son was a little over one year of age. He was educated in private schools and in youth was apprenticed to the craft of a blacksmith. He was working at his trade when the war broke out, and promptly enlisted in the service of the State, early in April, 1861, becoming a member of Company F of the Sixteenth Virginia infantry regiment. He was stationed at Tanner's Point, near Norfolk, until the evacuation of that region by the Confederate forces, after which he was sent with his command to confront the Federal forces threatening Richmond from the North. After some skirmishing on the Rapidan river, he returned to the vicinity of Richmond and took part in the battle of Seven Pines, after which his regiment was assigned to Mahone's brigade, and he fought with that command through the Seven Days' campaign, including Malvern Hill, at Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. In 1863 he was detailed for duty as a blacksmith in the service of the Norfolk & Western railroad. In this capacity, in which his skill and devotion to duty were of great value to the cause, he remained until the close of the war. Subsequently he was connected with the same road for a time, and afterward with the Southern railroad about eighteen years. Since then he has conducted a grocery at Ettricks, and is a prosperous citizen. In addition to his mercantile pursuits, he is interested in real estate and other profitable investments. He is one of the charter members and an active comrade of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1857 Mr. Wade was married to Mary J. Moore, and they have two children: W. T. and Emmet M.

Major Benjamin Maitland Walker, M. D., of Danville, was born in Plymouth, N. C., April 10, 1838. His parents, Jordan and Martha (Nicholson) Walker, reared at Plymouth, N. C., a family of five sons and three daughters, and the father dying in 1844, the mother gave all her sons to the Confederate service. Thomas J. was a private in the Third North Carolina cavalry; William organized Company K of the same regiment, and was promoted to lieutenant-colonel; Crawford N. served in the heavy artillery under Johnston, and Carter was a private in the Third cavalry. Benjamin M., the third son, had been educated at Eglantine high school, and professionally at the university of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated in medicine in March, 1858, and when the war began had been practicing three years in his native county. He promptly enlisted and was commissioned assistant surgeon in May, 1861, first being assigned to the cavalry squadrons at Greenville, N. C. In June, 1862, he was promoted surgeon, and assigned to the Third North Carolina cavalry, and in 1863, by virtue of seniority of commission, he was made brigade surgeon with the rank of major. Thus at twenty-five years of age he had under him ten surgeons, and his ability sustained him in this important rank. He was on duty in a number of important battles, including

Washington and Kinston, N. C., Second Manassas, Drewry's Bluff, Hanover Court House, the siege of Suffolk, Reams' Station and other battles about Petersburg, Five Forks and Sailor's Creek. He was captured at Five Forks, but rejoined his command on the next day. After the close of the war he practiced medicine at his old home, until 1877, when he removed to Danville, Va. He has pursued post-graduate studies in Philadelphia and New York, is a member of the State medical society, and is a frequent contributor to medical literature. In 1871 he married Harriet Eliza Pugh, of a famous American family, and they have two children, Benjamin Maitland, Jr. and Harriet N. In 1898 B. M. Walker, Jr., married Miss Sue Hickey, daughter of Charles Hickey, of Danville.

C. W. Walker, a prominent citizen of Portsmouth, who served in youth in the Confederate cause, was born at Portsmouth January 9, 1846. His father, Vincent Walker, who was born in Delaware in March, 1803, settled at Portsmouth in 1831, served there as captain of the guard at the navy yard for thirty years, ran the blockade in October, 1862, in order to join the Confederate army, but being refused enlistment, went to Charlotte, N. C., where, during the remainder of the war he occupied the same position in the Confederate navy yard that he had held in the United States navy yard. He died at Portsmouth in 1869. His wife, Sarah M. Hodges, daughter of John M. Hodges, a soldier of the war of 1812, died in 1868. Early in 1861 C. W. Walker joined the Junior Guards, an organization of boys about fifteen years of age, who armed themselves as best they could, but were not accepted by the government. He then acted as courier for General Blanchard until the evacuation, after which, being refused permission to accompany the troops, he crossed the Federal lines, and entered the employment of the machine department of the Charlotte navy yard. Eighteen months later he enlisted in the navy and for over a year was on duty on the schoolship *Indian Chief* in Charleston harbor. During this time he had frequent exciting adventures as one of a boat crew which served in the protection of the city and Fort Sumter, on night patrols. He was for three months a member of the guard of the Whitworth gun at the foot of Calhoun street, and subsequently was detailed in the ordnance department at Selma, Ala., until after Sherman had marched to the sea, when he visited his father at Charlotte, following in the track of Sherman's army and finding the country so stripped that it was with difficulty that he could find sufficient food to keep him alive during his long trip afoot. He was on duty in the machine department at Charlotte until the arrival of the "Gold Train" from Richmond, after the evacuation of the capital, when he was among the men who volunteered as a guard for the Confederate treasure. At Chester, S. C., the party was joined by Mrs. Davis, wife of the president, and her daughter Winnie, and during the trip by wagon to the next railroad station, Mr. Walker was one of three who assisted Mrs. Davis by carrying her daughter, when she sought relief from the wearisome journey by walking. He accompanied the party as far as Augusta, Ga., and finally surrendered at Blacksburg, S. C., having served in the last organized body of Confederate troops east of the Mississippi, it being perhaps the last

to surrender. Since the war he has resided at Portsmouth, was for fifteen years locomotive engineer on the Seaboard Air Line railroad, and for six years master mechanic in the Portsmouth shops of that company, and since 1895 has conducted the Portsmouth steam laundry, doing a very prosperous business. He is a member of Stonewall camp, and in the Masonic order has filled every office from junior deacon to commander of Knight Templars. He organized the "Knights of Dixie" since disbanded. In the city council he has been a prominent member and is now chairman of the street committee. Mr. Walker was married first to Azulah F., daughter of Rev. William Knott, and after her death he wedded Mrs. Annie Beauregard (Warren) Riddick, a descendant of Gen. Joseph Warren, killed at Bunker Hill. Three children are living: Lee Wood, C. W. Jr. and Russell Ashby.

T. D. Walker, of Norfolk, a gallant cavalryman of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Currituck county, N. C., in 1840, a son of Thomas Walker and his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Willoughby West. He was reared and educated in his native county and barely reached his majority when the Confederacy was formed and he felt it his duty to serve in its defense. He enlisted in the first volunteer company organized in the county, under Capt. Samuel D. Bell, which was mustered into the service as Company G of the Fourth North Carolina regiment of cavalry. With his command he was stationed at Currituck Court House and acted as messenger between that place and Norfolk until the evacuation of the latter in 1862, when his command proceeded to Petersburg, and six months later to Richmond. During a portion of this period he served as special courier to General Johnson. In the subsequent campaign he participated in the Seven Days' fighting. At the time of the battle of Fredericksburg he joined the main body of the army at that place, but too late to take part in the engagement. He participated in the famous cavalry fight at Brandy Station in 1863, and then crossed the Potomac and shared with his command in the movements of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart around the Federal army. At Middleburg, Pa., while engaged with his company in a dash against the Federals for the purpose of releasing General Stuart, who had been surrounded by the enemy, he received a severe saber cut, but nevertheless remained on duty and participated in the fight at Gettysburg. He was taken prisoner in this battle and subsequently held as a prisoner for sixty days at Washington, D. C. On being paroled he was sent to hospital, and later he rejoined his command at Culpeper Court House. Subsequently he participated in the many engagements of his command, and in the latter part of 1864 was ordered to Richmond and Petersburg, in the vicinity of which cities he served against the Stoneman raid and at Hatcher's Run, and remained there on duty, taking part in numerous cavalry actions, except when absent upon an expedition in North Carolina, when he took part in the recapture of Kinston. After the surrender of the army he joined a party of sixty men who determined to unite with the command of Colonel Morgan, but on hearing of Morgan's capitulation, he returned to his home. He engaged in farming, which has been his occupation to the present time, though since 1892 failing health has compelled him to reside in

Norfolk. In 1872 he was married to Lois Adelia, daughter of John F. Burfoot, of North Carolina, and they have five children living: J. L., Flavius B., Lois Adelia, Ida M. and Eva H.

Alexander Wellington Wallace, of Fredericksburg, a veteran of Gen. M. D. Corse's brigade, army of Northern Virginia, was born at Fredericksburg, August 20, 1843. He is the son of Dr. John Hooe and Mary (Gordon) Wallace. His father was a prominent physician and banker of Fredericksburg. He was educated at an academy in Albemarle county, and began the study of law under John B. Minor at the university of Virginia, prior to the war period. In March, 1862, he entered the Confederate States service as a private in Company C of the Thirtieth regiment Virginia infantry. Throughout the remainder of the war he was identified with the record of this regiment and General Corse's brigade of the division of George E. Pickett, and participated in the campaigns and battles in Virginia, North Carolina, Maryland and Pennsylvania. In the rank of fourth corporal he commanded his company, all the other officers having been killed, wounded or captured, on the field of Appomattox, April 9, 1865. In May, 1866, Mr. Wallace, having completed his legal studies, began the practice of law at Fredericksburg, and soon attained prominence in his professional work and on account of his worthy activity in the political field. In 1875 he was elected to the legislature and served one term, then declining re-election. He was a delegate to the national Democratic conventions at St. Louis in 1876 and at Cincinnati in 1880. In 1889 he was elected judge of the corporation court of Fredericksburg, and in 1895 was re-elected. His able and impartial service upon the bench has added to the high estimation in which he is held by the community and his many friends throughout the State. Judge Wallace was married in April, 1883, to Victoria B., daughter of Capt. Charles K. Stevens, of Philadelphia. He has been for twenty years a communicant of the Episcopal church and a member of the vestry of St. George's church at Fredericksburg.

Captain Casper Wistear Wallace, of Fredericksburg, a veteran of the Thirtieth regiment, was born at that city June 15, 1834, the son of Dr. John H. Wallace. His education was received at Hanson's academy, of Fredericksburg, the Episcopal high school near Alexandria, and the university of Virginia. At the latter institution he gave two years each to the literary and law departments, and was graduated professionally in 1855. During the following six years he devoted himself to the practice of law at his native city and gained an excellent footing as a young attorney. But the impending conflict interrupted his legal career in the spring of 1861, and he enlisted in April, as a private in Company C of the Thirtieth Virginia infantry regiment. He shared the early service of Colonel Harrison's regiment in the department of North Carolina, brigade of Gen. J. G. Walker, with promotion to second lieutenant, and later in the capacity of quartermaster of the regiment. In March, 1862, he was elected captain of Company C, and in that rank he served up to the fall of 1864, participating in the active service of his regiment, including the Seven Days' campaign before Richmond, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Drewry's Bluff and Cold Harbor. During the last eight months of the war

period he was detailed from the line in the position of acting judge advocate-general for the First corps of the army of Northern Virginia. Subsequently he resumed the practice of law at Fredericksburg and in 1870 he was elected commonwealth attorney for both the city and the county of Spottsylvania. This position he held by successive re-elections until he tired of the service and resigned in 1881 and 1882. In 1886 he retired from the profession in which he had won honors, and traveled for some time in foreign lands. After his return he was elected a director of the National bank of Fredericksburg, in 1888, and upon the death of his brother, Charles Wallace, president of the institution, in October, 1893, he was chosen as his successor. Captain Wallace is also president of the Fredericksburg aqueduct company. In these and various other lines of activity he is conspicuous in the business and social life of the city.

George W. Wallace, of Berkley, one of the charter members and past commander of Neimeyer-Shaw camp, United Confederate Veterans, of that city, was born at Glencoe, Norfolk county, November 17, 1845. He is a son of the marriage of George T. Wallace and Elizabeth Curtis, his father being a native of Norfolk county and a farmer by occupation. After receiving a preparatory education at his home town, he entered the university of North Carolina, where he was still a student when the war broke out, and remained until early in 1863. He then, being in his eighteenth year, left his studies to participate in the military service of the Confederate States. He joined that adventurous and faithful band of intelligent and patriotic men known as the signal corps, becoming one of the youngest of the Second company under command of Capt. Eugene G. DeJarmette. The entire corps was composed of carefully selected men from all the military organizations collected about Norfolk in 1861-62, and under the command of Maj. James F. Milligan, rendered efficient service along the James and Appomattox rivers until the fall of Richmond in 1865. Two chains of posts were established, from Bermuda Hundred to Petersburg, and up the James river to Drewry's bluff, where a telegraph system connected with Richmond. In this duty Mr. Wallace was naturally not called upon to participate in battle, but on one occasion, in 1864, he took part in a fight at Jones' Farm, on the James river, opposite Jamestown island. His service closed at Appomattox, where he surrendered with the army. Then he returned to civil life with his signal corps comrades, several of whom have since attained notable distinction, among them J. Hoge Tyler, governor of Virginia, Judge John Dew, Dr. Harvey Dew and Judge John Welch. After Dr. Wallace's return to his home at Glencoe, he took up the study of medicine, and entered the university of Virginia for professional study, where he was graduated as doctor of medicine in June, 1867. He then located for practice of medicine at Camden, N. C., and after something over a year at that place, he followed the profession for a short time at Deep Creek, Va., until he was compelled by ill health to abandon the active practice. Removing to Berkley, Va., he embarked in the business of a pharmacist and druggist, in which he has since continued with remarkable success, now conducting one of the best-appointed establishments of this kind in Norfolk county.

Honorable and trustworthy, both in business and in private life, he enjoys the respect and esteem of the entire community where he lives, and is widely known as a worthy and prosperous citizen. He is a communicant of the Presbyterian church, and maintains a membership in the Royal Arcanum, as well as in the United Confederate Veterans, in which he is a prominent and active comrade. He was married in 1869 to Miss Sallie W. Chewning, of Albemarle county.

George E. Waller, M. D., of Martinsville, was born in Henry county, October 17, 1838. When he attained manhood he was educated for the medical profession, and was graduated at the Virginia medical college. In March, 1862, he entered the military service with the Twenty-fourth regiment Virginia infantry, and was assigned to duty as hospital steward. In the discharge of the duties of this position, as well as those of assistant surgeon much of the time, he continued throughout the war. Though offered the rank of assistant surgeon he declined it, preferring to be in a position where he could more closely care for his younger brother, Samuel G. Waller, a member of the regiment. The latter was wounded at Gettysburg, and now rests in Hollywood cemetery. Dr. Waller was with his gallant regiment through all its service, which was in the main identical with that of the commands of Longstreet and Pickett, and was frequently under fire, his service being rendered on the field in all battles. At Fredericksburg he narrowly escaped death, a bullet cutting a track through his scalp and a cannon ball passing between his legs and wounding a surgeon behind him. He was with the regiment to the end, the command finally being disbanded by Pickett at Farmville, April 8, 1865. A year after the close of hostilities he made his home at Martinsville and entered upon the practice of medicine, in which he has achieved success. Both professionally and socially he is one of the leading men of his county. He has served as councilman and as mayor, and is now health officer and magistrate. On September 10, 1868, he was married to Sarah L. Putzel, and they have six children: William L., Mary McCauley, Jean, George, Edward P. and Crawford W.

Robert A. Walters, adjutant of Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate Veterans, Danville, Va., is one of three sons of Capt. A. G. and Eliza P. (Richardson) Walters, who formerly resided upon a farm in Caswell county, N. C., where the father had the rank of captain in the State militia, and the mother died in 1843. In 1845 the remainder of the family^a removed to the vicinity of Danville. The sons, W. F., R. A. and A. E., all served in the same company, and the latter gained promotion to lieutenant near the close of the war. Robert A. was born in North Carolina, January 14, 1838, and was graduated at Trinity college, of that State, in 1861. On July 11th following, he enlisted as a private in Company A, Eighteenth Virginia infantry, whose fortunes he shared during the most of the four years' struggle. He participated in the battles of First Manassas, Williamsburg and Seven Pines, and in the latter battle received a wound which disabled him until the Maryland campaign, when he rejoined his regiment at Frederick City, and fought at Boonsboro and Sharpsburg, receiving another but slight wound in the latter bloody conflict. After he had taken part in

the battle of Fredericksburg he was one of those detailed to return to the farm and produce food for the army, and he was thus engaged for a year. Returning to the ranks on the line at Bermuda Hundred, he fought in many skirmishes and at White Oak roads and Sailor's Creek, in the latter disaster being captured. He was subsequently held as a prisoner at Point Lookout until June 22, 1865. Since 1870 he has been successfully engaged in the tobacco business at Danville. In 1863 he was married to Nannie M. Redd, of Charlotte county, and they have two children living: Annie L. and Mary R.

Joseph A. Walton, of Norfolk, a Confederate soldier whose career since the war has been associated with the great transportation business of the "Twin Cities," was born in 1843, in the State of New York, where his father, David S. Walton, a native of North Carolina, was employed as a civil engineer on the Erie canal. The family removed to Portsmouth when he was ten years of age, and he was educated at the Virginia collegiate institute, under Prof. N. B. Webster. Becoming a member of the Old Dominion Guard before the outbreak of war, he entered the service of the State with the company in April, 1861. The Guard became Company K of the Ninth Virginia regiment, and Private Walton served with it for the first year of enlistment. He then re-enlisted for the war as a member of Major Milligan's independent signal corps and scouts. As a private in this command he served until the close of the war, rendering valuable service to the Confederate cause. He surrendered at Suffolk in May, 1865, and was soon afterward paroled at Norfolk. Since the war he has resided at Portsmouth and Norfolk, in the latter city since 1874. In September, 1867, he first became connected with the railroad business in the freight office of the Seaboard & Roanoke railroad, and has ever since been in the employment of this company, now known as the Seaboard Air Line. After two years' service he was promoted to the position of auditor, he has subsequently held, now being in charge of the department of disbursements. He is a member of the Masonic order and a Knight Templar, and is also a valued member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, Confederate Veterans, the Knights of Pythias and Royal Arcanum.

Edgar Warfield, of Alexandria, was born in Washington, D. C., June 7, 1842. His parents moved to Virginia in the following year, and at the age of fifteen years he entered the drug business, which he followed until the outbreak of the war. He assisted in organizing the Old Dominion Rifles on December 6, 1860, which afterward became Company H of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, a regiment which had as its first officers Gen. M. D. Corse and Col. Arthur Herbert. He served with this regiment during the entire war, being present at every battle in which it was engaged. A portion of the time he was detailed as field hospital steward. Upon several occasions he distinguished himself, notably on July 22, 1863, at Manassas Gap, where he saved his regiment from capture, if not from annihilation. They were practically surrounded by the enemy when Private Warfield secured a horse and rode to Front Royal, where he met Capt. E. R. Baird, of General Pickett's staff, who ordered him to ride on toward Winchester, from which direction Pickett's division was approaching

on the return from Gettysburg, and report the situation to him. It was a hazardous undertaking, but Private Warfield obeyed the order cheerfully, and in doing so was compelled to ford the Shenandoah river. He met General Pickett two or three miles further on the road, and a brigade was immediately sent under the command of Major Cabell, its senior officer, to the relief of the gallant Seventeenth. They reached that command just before sundown, and the combined forces succeeded in driving the enemy several miles. The importance of Private Warfield's action will be realized when it is understood that the arrival of these reinforcements and the subsequent repulse of the enemy undoubtedly not only saved the Seventeenth regiment from disaster, but also prevented the capture of General Lee's supply train. Mr. Warfield was present at the surrender of Lee at Appomattox, received his parole April 10, 1865, and returned to his home at Alexandria. In company with an intimate friend and comrade, William J. Hall, he soon afterward engaged in the drug business, in which he has ever since continued, the firm of Warfield & Hall being one of the leading and reliable establishments of the city. Mr. Warfield is married and is the father of two sons, both promising young men; Edgar, Jr., being engaged in the drug business, and George E. as bookkeeper in the First national bank of Alexandria. Mr. Warfield is an officer of Robert E. Lee camp, No. 2, and is a member of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, his father also having fought in the Seventeenth. He is prominent in the Masonic fraternity, being a past master of Andrew Jackson lodge, No. 120; past commander of Old Dominion commandery, K. T., No. 11, and past district deputy grand master of district No. 1. Mr. Warfield has never sought political honors, but his worth and efficiency have been recognized and he is now a member of the Virginia State board of pharmacy. The estimate of his character may be summarized by saying that he is an excellent type of Southern manhood, the class of men who left their homes and loved ones in the days that "tried men's souls," and went to the field of battle in defense of home and a righteous principle—in short, a type of the best blood of the South.

Major James H. Warner, whose devoted service in the cause of the Confederate States is deserving here of special notice, was born in the year 1827. Soon after his birth his parents moved to Ohio, whence he returned to his native State, and from there entered the United States navy. He served with the rank of chief engineer for several years previous to the war, at the time of the outbreak of which he was attached to the U. S. steamer Richmond, in the Mediterranean, as chief engineer. He was loyal to his State, and resigned his commission. Reporting at Richmond for duty he was appointed a chief engineer in the Confederate States navy, and first assigned to duty at the Pensacola navy yard. A few months later his remarkable executive ability was recognized by appointment to take charge of the naval iron works at Columbus, Ga., the largest shipbuilding plant operated by the government. Here he remained until the invasion by Sherman's army, when all the employes of the works were formed in a battalion under his command, with the rank of major. In this capacity Major Warner served until the close of hostilities. On account

of his activity in defense of the Confederate interests at Columbus, he incurred the bitter hatred of the stragglers from Sherman's army, who vented their spite in repeated attempts to destroy his home at Columbus, going so far as to put kegs of powder in his cellar for that purpose. Very soon after the cessation of hostilities Major Warner, who was a civil engineer of great ability, was engaged by the United States government to superintend the removal of obstructions in the Mississippi river at New Orleans. The contract for this important work had been made, and his preparations for removal to New Orleans had been entered upon, when he met his death in the following manner: Some of the troops forming the Federal garrison at Columbus insulted women upon the streets of the city, which was promptly resented by some of the citizens, resulting in the death of several of the offenders. The killing of the soldiers by the outraged citizens precipitated a riot, and after it was quelled the soldiers were confined to the barracks. An aged friend of Major Warner, whose way home led past the barracks, begged his company and protection, and while passing the barracks a volley was fired from the windows, and Major Warner was struck in the knee and leg. Amputation was made, and from the effects thereof he died, in the full flower of his life. He was a man of pure and high character, distinguished and broadly cultured, master of several sciences, fluent in several languages, and beloved by all.

Lieutenant John M. Warren, now a resident and business man of Richmond, participated in the fighting of the Confederate armies beyond the Mississippi during the war, and did gallant service in many a desperate action. He was born at Brandon, Miss., in 1840, but during the next year was taken to St. Louis by his parents, and reared and educated at that city. When the movement was organized to put Missouri in line with her sister States of the Confederacy, he heartily co-operated with it, and entered the military service on May 8, 1861, as a private in Radford's battery, of the Missouri State guard, which went into camp in the western part of the city, at Camp Jackson, under command of Gen. D. M. Frost. On the 10th of May, the entire command of State militia was surrounded and captured by Federal forces under General Lyon. During the proceedings a Federal regiment fired upon the crowd of spectators, and killed about thirty men, women and children. Private Warren was released the next day, and the circumstances of the Federal attack having unified Confederate sentiment, and changed Sterling Price into a hearty Confederate and major-general of the State forces, Mr. Warren joined the forces rallying under his command, on the 16th. From then until the close of the war he continued in the Confederate service, being promoted for gallantry to second lieutenant. He was for a considerable time engaged in blockade running on the Mississippi, making three trips from St. Louis down the river. He participated in the Missouri battles of Boonville, Lone Jack (where he was wounded in the ankle), Lexington, Carthage, Springfield, Pea Ridge, and outside the State in the no less important engagements at Helena, Ark., Little Rock, Ark., Mansfield, La., and Pleasant Hill, La., besides many of the minor conflicts which were characteristic of the trans-Mississippi struggle. At the battle of Mans-

field, on Sabine Cross Roads, April 8, 1864, when the army of Banks was routed and his promising Red River campaign brought to a sudden close. Mr. Warren was very seriously wounded in the side. After the war he became engaged in business as a commercial traveler, and represented Chicago and St. Louis houses for twenty-two years, until December, 1889, when he removed to Richmond and embarked in the brokerage business. Here he was heartily welcomed by his eastern comrades, and becoming a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, has been elected its commander.

Captain James Hurley Waters, a gallant Confederate veteran who has served since 1876 as chief of police of Staunton, Va., was born at Sharptown, N. J., August, 1828, and was reared and educated at Philadelphia. In 1848 he removed to Staunton and embarked in the manufacture of carriages. He was one of the charter members of the West Augusta Guards, organized about 1854, and as first lieutenant of this volunteer company, commanded it at Harper's Ferry during the John Brown affair in 1859, the captain, William H. Baylor, being at that time ill in New York. On April 17, 1861, the company, one hundred and twenty-two strong, left for Harper's Ferry to seize the military stores at that point, and was there assigned under the command of Generals Jackson and Johnston to the Fifth Virginia infantry as Company L. The regiment then became a part of the First, or Jackson's brigade, and soon became famous as the "Stonewall" brigade. Captain Waters served in command of his company until the reorganization, when he was made commissary of the regiment. Nine months later he was promoted captain commissary of the Stonewall brigade, as which he served until after the battle of Spottsylvania, when a large part of the division under Edward Johnson having been captured, he was made commissary of Early's division. A year later he was assigned in the same position to Gordon's division of the army, and continued in that capacity until he surrendered and was paroled at Appomattox. He participated in a large number of engagements, including Falling Waters, Dartsville, First Manassas, Kernstown, Front Royal, Cross Keys, Port Republic, several fights at Winchester, Williamsburg, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, Lynchburg, Monocacy, the demonstration before Washington by Early and the expedition against Chambersburg, Pa., and the siege of Petersburg. At the close of the war he returned to Staunton, where he has been almost continuously connected prominently with the municipal government, from 1866 to 1868 as assistant chief of police, from 1868 to 1870 as member of the city council, then as magistrate five or six years, and since 1876 as chief of police. In all these official positions he has won the cordial approval of his fellow citizens. In 1851 Captain Waters was married to Elizabeth, daughter of the late John Carroll, of Staunton.

James F. Watson, of Portsmouth, enlisted in the military service of Virginia May 10, 1861, and served throughout the war in the Confederate cause, being stationed at Richmond as a guard the greater part of the time. He first served under Major Minor, and subsequently under Major Curtin and Captain Ammons. His son, John L. Watson, born January 14, 1863, is now one of the leading

insurance and real estate men of Portsmouth, for twelve years has been a member of the board of trade, and though a comparatively young man, has made a remarkable record in the organization and promotion of various worthy enterprises. He has been very prominently associated with the organization of the following companies: The Portsmouth street railway company, the Citizens' light, heat and power company, the Portsmouth cotton manufacturing company, the Portsmouth land, improvement and promotion company, the Home permanent building association, the Park View land company, the Portsmouth water-front land company, the Pinner's Point land company, Pinner's Point home company & Pinner's Point water-front company, the Villa Heights company and others. He is secretary or treasurer of all of these companies, as well as a director of the Bank of Portsmouth. He has a splendidly equipped office, and enjoys fully the confidence and esteem of the people.

Lieutenant John D. Watson, of Charlottesville, was born at the city in which he now resides. He entered the Confederate service in June, 1861, as a member of Captain Southall's Albemarle battery, and was made second sergeant. With this command he served about one year, participating in the artillery fighting at Yorktown under General Magruder. He was then commissioned first lieutenant in the Forty-sixth regiment of infantry, and served with General Wise in North Carolina until he was captured at the battle of Roanoke Island. His imprisonment was not of long duration, being held on the steamer Spaulding which stood for eleven days off Cape Fear, and then paroled. Upon his exchange a few months later, he was appointed adjutant of the Fifty-seventh Virginia infantry, Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division, Longstreet's corps. With this command he participated in the campaign near Suffolk, and the battle of Gettysburg, at the latter engagement receiving a severe wound in the groin and falling into the hands of the enemy. On the same day, however, he was recaptured by his own regiment, and was permitted to pass the period of his entire disability, from July 3d to October 30th, at home. After his return to his regiment he took part in the battle of Yellow House, between Petersburg and Richmond, and in the capture of Fort Darling, where his command bagged a large number of Butler's men. He was again in battle at the Howlett House, and for many months was almost continuously engaged in the Petersburg trenches. At the battle of Five Forks he was captured, and after spending eleven days at the Old Capitol prison, was taken to Johnson's island, at which unpleasant summer resort he remained until June 20, 1865.

Robert Leslie Watson, a native of Scotland, who has resided at Petersburg since his boyhood, gave himself with entire loyalty to the fortunes of his State when he became a citizen, and before the appearance of trouble between the States, was a member of a volunteer military company of that city. In the spring of 1861, after the passage of the ordinance of secession, he was mustered in with his comrades, and subsequently served in the vicinity of Norfolk. His company became Company C of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry, Mahone's brigade, and he was identified with the record of that famous command after the evacuation of Norfolk. Beginning with the battle of Seven Pines, he

was a participant in the Seven Days' campaign, Malvern Hill, and the many battles which followed throughout the four years' war. On the 19th of June, 1864, when fighting against the advance of Grant before Petersburg, he was severely wounded and disabled for further service. After the close of hostilities and recovery from his wound he resumed the occupation which he had entered previous to the war, renewing a partnership which he had formed in the manufacture of tobacco. He has met with remarkable success, his firm now producing eight or nine hundred pounds annually, and doing a great export business. Mr. Watson is a member of A. P. Hill camp, United Confederate Veterans and cherishes the memories of the heroic era in which he did the duty of a brave soldier. He has two sons grown to manhood, John Watson, an attorney at law, and Robert L. Watson, Jr., foreman of the works. His daughter, Annie, is the wife of John Herbert Claiborne, of Petersburg.

Colonel James W. Watts, of Lynchburg, was born in Bedford county, in 1833, the son of Richard D. Watts, a native of the same county, who was a soldier in the war of 1812, and died in 1848, at the age of fifty-two years. Colonel Watts passed his youth at the family home, and was engaged in farming when the war broke out. In April, 1861, he entered the service as first lieutenant of Company A of the Second Virginia cavalry. In the following August, for meritorious service, he was promoted captain, and served in that rank until May, 1862, when at the reorganization of the army, he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel. In this capacity he acted with the Second cavalry until he was disabled by wounds received in the action at Aldie in July, 1863. Upon his recovery, a month later, he was assigned to the command of the military post at Liberty, Va., where he remained until the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia. He then started to join General Johnston, and reported to General Frye at Augusta, Ga., at that place was paroled when further resistance was evidently useless. The list of battles in which he was engaged reveals a record of which the bravest of soldiers might well be proud. He participated in the early actions of Vienna, Manassas and Flint Hill; then with Jackson in the valley, fought at Front Royal, Newtown, Winchester, Hall Town, Rude's Hill, Strasburg, Cross Keys, and Port Republic; took part in the Seven Days of bloody struggle before Richmond; again on the plains of Manassas fought at Cedar Mountain, Bristoe Station, Groveton, and the Second Manassas, and subsequently fought at Occoquan, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, White Oak Swamp, Brandy Station, Aldie, Winchester (1864), and Lynchburg (1864). He was slightly wounded in an affair at Little Washington in the Valley campaign, at the Second Manassas battle received eight saber cuts, and at both Occoquan and Aldie was severely wounded. After the end of the struggle he returned to Bedford county, and soon afterward removed to Lynchburg, and embarked in the hardware trade. This he conducted successfully until 1887, when he retired from active business. In 1895 he was chosen vice-president of the National exchange bank of Lynchburg, and in January, 1896, was elected president, but retired in the following year. In 1854 Colonel Watts was married in Appomattox county to Mary E., daughter



Eng by E.C. Williams & Bra. NY

James Watt.

BRANT & FULLER, PUBS

of the late F. E. Jones, and they have two sons and two daughters.

Legh R. Watts, of Portsmouth, whose life has been one of prominence alike in legal, financial and political fields, also made an honorable record in youth as a participant in the struggle for independence of the Southern States. He was born at Portsmouth, December 12, 1843. His father, Dr. Edward M. Watts, son of Col. Dempsey Watts, was born at Portsmouth in 1807; was graduated at the university of Pennsylvania; in 1837 married Ann Maupin, daughter of Dr. George W. Maupin, surgeon United States army; and died in 1849, leaving three children: A daughter, who married James G. Holladay; Edward M., now deceased; and Legh R. In his boyhood Judge Watts had the advantages of the best schools in that region, including the institute of Prof. N. B. Webster and Prof. W. R. Galt's academy at Norfolk. When he was seventeen years of age the Confederate States government was in its inception, and in the following spring the war which drew so heavily upon the youth of Virginia, had been opened by the battle of Manassas, which seemed to promise to the South a speedy and peaceful recognition of independence. But reverses occurred in other sections, and more of Virginia's patriotic sons were called into the field. Young Watts, of delicate constitution and unfitted for the fatigues of active campaigning, tendered his services nevertheless, and entered upon the duties of a private in the signal corps, serving about the harbor of Portsmouth and Norfolk. He was soon afterward discharged by the State medical board on account of physical disability, but after the port was occupied by the Federals he escaped, running the blockade, and on reaching the Confederate lines re-entered the service. He was then assigned to duty as assistant to Maj. George W. Grice, chief of the forage bureau of the department of Georgia, South Carolina and Florida, with headquarters at Columbia, S. C. Here he remained on duty until that point was occupied by Sherman's army, when he retired to Chester, and thence accompanied the army of Johnston to Greensboro, N. C., where, with the entire command, he was paroled in April, 1865. Then returning to his old home he turned his attention to professional education for a civil career. That fall he entered the university of Virginia, where he took several academic studies in addition to the law, being graduated in the special studies in 1866, and in law in 1867. Thereupon he at once began the practice at Portsmouth, associating himself with the prominent firm of Holladay & Gayle, a partnership which continued until 1870. In April of the latter year he was elected judge of the county court of Norfolk county, by the general assembly of Virginia, a position in which he was continued by reelection without opposition until 1880. After ten years upon the bench, in which his abilities as a jurist and integrity as a man were faithfully devoted to the public good, he resumed the practice of the law, and in 1884 formed a partnership with G. Hatton, Esq., which continuing to the present time, is widely known as one of the leading legal firms of the State. In his practice he has given special attention to corporation law, with the result that he is counsel for many of the principal corporations of southeastern Virginia, and holds the important position of general counsel of the Seaboard Air Line system. Possessed also of great business

ability, he has served for the past fourteen years as president of the Bank of Portsmouth, and has taken a hand in various enterprises for the development of the country and the advancement of the interests of Portsmouth as a seaport. He is a director in the Portsmouth insurance company, and in the following railroad companies: The Seaboard & Roanoke, Raleigh & Gaston, Raleigh & Augusta Air Line, Seaboard Air Line, Belt railway companies, and is associated with many other enterprises. He has served as vice-president of the Virginia bar association and as vice-president for Virginia of the American bankers' association. In political life, in which he has been no less prominent than in the channels of activity already mentioned, he has uniformly declined salaried office, though he has well discharged his duties to the community by holding for many years a seat in the common council of Portsmouth, and acting for eight years as president of that body. In 1880 he was a candidate for elector on the regular Democratic presidential ticket, and was successful by a decisive majority, his name receiving the highest number of votes cast for the ticket. Subsequently he was selected by Hon. John S. Barbour as one of the executive committee of the Democratic State organization, and continued in service during all the campaigns under that famous leader. By Gov. Fitzhugh Lee he was appointed a member of the board of visitors of the university of Virginia, and to the directorate of the Eastern lunatic asylum of the State, and was reappointed by Governor O'Ferrall. He has been a member of every Virginia convention of his party, with one exception, during the past quarter century, and in 1884 was president of the convention. Amid all these important duties he has maintained a lively interest in the welfare of his comrades of the Confederate army, and appreciates as not least of the honorable positions conferred upon him, that of commander of Stonewall camp, United Confederate Veterans. In 1868 Judge Watts was married to Mattie, daughter of William H. Peters, of Portsmouth, and they have six children. The family are communicants of St. John's Episcopal church, of which he is a vestryman.

Edward F. Wayman, a prominent member of the dental profession of Staunton, was born in Culpeper county in 1847. His family had long been residents of the Old Dominion, his great-grandfather, Joseph Wayman, a native of the State, having served in the Revolutionary war, and another great-grandfather, Edward Blakemore, having held the rank of colonel in the Continental army. Dr. Wayman was still under military age at the close of the war, but nevertheless, before that time arrived he had made a gallant record as a trooper in the cause of the Confederate States. He enlisted in August, 1864, as a private in Colonel Mosby's command, and participated in the subsequent operations of that remarkable cavalry officer. He took part in the actions at Berryville, Va. (during the so-called "burning raid"), Front Royal, Marshall, Rectortown, a cavalry affair in Prince William county, a fight within five miles of Winchester, another near Berryville, when General Dufean was captured, and another in Culpeper county, where Private Wayman captured General Tolbert's orderly and three other Federals. This gallant record in the closing days of the Confederacy was soon closed by the surrender of the armies,

after which he returned to his home in Culpeper county and for a year was engaged in farming. Still a youth, he next attended school for two years, and had a brief career as a teacher and then as a merchant's clerk, after which he removed to Austin, Tex. There he found employment as a clerk two years, served as United States deputy marshal six months, and then began the study of dentistry, the profession in which his career has since been made. After study under Dr. R. E. Grant, of Austin, he attended the Baltimore dental college, graduating in 1875, and subsequently continuing his study in the Baltimore college of physicians and surgeons. Returning to his native county he practiced medicine and dentistry there four years, followed by a short period of practice of dentistry at Brooklyn, N. Y., after which he made his permanent home at Staunton. As a citizen and a professional man he is held in the highest esteem by the community. Dr. Wayman was married at Staunton, in 1878, to Hattie Elizabeth Plecker, a native of Augusta county, and they have six children: Walter N., Edward F., Fannie, William Jenifer, Lelia Cassell and Elizabeth Hunton.

Newton Wayt, M. D., of Staunton, was born in Augusta county in 1837. His grandfather, William Wayt, had the distinction of serving as a soldier both in the war of the Revolution and the war of 1812. He studied medicine at the universities of Virginia and Pennsylvania, and after graduation at the latter in 1861, made his home at Staunton. Soon afterward he was sent to Grafton, W. Va., by Governor Letcher, with special orders and money for the troops, and subsequently went to Charlestown in charge of military supplies. On his return he was commissioned surgeon in the provisional army, and assigned to hospital duty at Staunton. Ordered to Danville in the winter of 1862, he remained there about four months, treating the small-pox among the prisoners. In the spring of 1863 he was assigned to duty as surgeon of the Sixty-second Virginia infantry, with which command he served in the battle of New Market. Subsequently assigned to the Twenty-second Virginia cavalry, he served at the battles at Winchester, Fisher's Hill and near Luray, and until after the fight at Gordonsville, when he was incapacitated, February, 1865, by sickness, for further service. During almost the entire period since the war Dr. Wayt has conducted a drug business at Staunton in connection with his practice. He has served four years in the city council, and two years as a member of the board of the western State hospital.

Joseph F. Weaver, of Portsmouth, a Confederate of varied and interesting war experience, was born at Portsmouth April 24, 1833, the son of George and Ann (Lightboy) Weaver. His father was connected with the navy yard, as engineer in charge of the pumps, and contracted disease in that service from which he died in 1839. His mother, a native of England, came to America at the age of five years, and died in 1887. At the outbreak of war Mr. Weaver was employed in spar and mast making and the ship carpenter's department of the Gosport navy yard, and was a member of the Portsmouth Rifles, a company of the Third Virginia militia regiment. He went into service with his company April 21st, and after a few days on guard at the navy yard, they were ordered to Pig Point, where they constructed the first four-gun battery in the

Confederate service, cutting the timber themselves and building a strong earthwork, where they subsequently made a spirited fight against the Federal boat *Harriet Lane*. In December, 1861, Mr. Weaver was appointed carpenter in the Confederate navy, and was ordered to report to Commodore Lynch at New Bern, N. C. Then being ordered back to Portsmouth, he was assigned to the *Sea Bird*, under Lieut. Patrick McCarrick, the flagship of Commodore Lynch. He took part in the capture of a Federal schooner near Old Point Comfort, and then at Roanoke island in January, 1862, he took part in the naval battle against the Federal fleet accompanying Burnside's expedition. Commodore Lynch thence retired up the Pasquotank to Elizabeth City and sent Captain Hunter to Norfolk for ammunition. Here their little fleet of six vessels was overwhelmed by the fourteen Federal warships and Mr. Weaver was taken prisoner. After being held for a time on board a Federal ship he was released. He made his way to Richmond from Portsmouth, through the Federal lines, and reporting to the secretary of the navy, was ordered to Charleston, where he was assigned to the steamer *Chicora* during its construction and equipment, after which he served on that vessel under Capt. John R. Tucker, until 1864. Then applying for transfer to the army or his discharge, he was granted the latter. But he immediately joined his family at Richmond and during the remainder of the war served in the navy yard at Rockett's and as a soldier in the defense of the city. During the greater part of the years which have since elapsed, he has been conducting quite successfully a retail drug business at Portsmouth, and has rendered efficient public service as a member of the city council and the school board. In 1855 he was married to Harriet F. Morgan, and they have five children living: Samuel W., Hattie F., wife of James E. Williams; Orie P., Lillie H. and Joseph F., Jr.

John S. Webber, assistant chief of the fire department of Norfolk, and a veteran of the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Norfolk in 1843. His father, John Webber, son of William Webber, a native of England, was an officer in the United States navy. His mother was Lucie, daughter of Paul Doto, a native of France. Mr. Webber was reared and educated at his native city, and at the age of seventeen became a member of the United artillery, under command of Captain Kevill, and with this command entered as a private the service of the Confederate States. Subsequently he was transferred to Captain Young's floating artillery, but on account of his familiarity with the arts of sailmaking was detailed by Governor Letcher in the manufacture of tents for the army. He was thus engaged at Richmond until 1862, when he enlisted with the Fayette artillery, with which he served during the remainder of the war, doing the full duty of a soldier and earning promotion to the rank of sergeant. He joined the Fayette artillery at Yorktown early in 1862 and participated in the subsequent campaign on the peninsula until the two days' struggle at Seven Pines, when he received a severe wound in the neck which disabled him for about four months. After his return to his command he took part in the battle of Chancellorsville, and then, attached to the artillery battalion of Pickett's division of Longstreet's corps, participated in the Penn-

sylvania campaign and the mighty three days' struggle at Gettysburg. During the retreat he was often engaged with the enemy, and during the succeeding campaign in Virginia fought at Bristoe Station and other affairs. In 1864 he was actively engaged at the Wilderness and thence to Richmond and Petersburg, where he served in defense of the capital until the evacuation. In this service he was again wounded. On the final retreat he fought at Sailor's Creek and near High Bridge, being captured at the latter place April 7, 1865. Thence he was transported to City Point and Point Lookout and held until paroled June 24, 1865. Sergeant Webber also served in the campaign in North Carolina in various engagements, the most important of which were at New Bern and Plymouth. After the end of the war he resided at Philadelphia until 1866, when he returned to Norfolk and entered the fire department. In this department he has rendered brave and faithful service, which was appropriately recognized by his promotion, in January, 1897, to the position of assistant chief. In 1870 he was married to Caroline Marys, of Norfolk, and they have eight children living: Lucy Paul, wife of Harold Childs, of North Carolina; Sarah Lottie, wife of Edwin Page, of Norfolk; Madeline, wife of Harry Cage, of Norfolk; Caroline, wife of Charles Lawrence, of Norfolk; John J., William S., Charles C. and Oliver A.

Captain Charles Lanstran Weller, of Staunton, is a native of Richmond, where he was reared and educated. In 1861 he went to Staunton and enlisted in Company C of the Fifty-second Virginia infantry regiment, as a private. His meritorious service and high standing with his comrades led to his promotion to second lieutenant in March, 1863, and to first lieutenant soon afterward. He was commissioned captain in March, 1865, after he had been performing the duties of that rank in command of his company for a year previous. His regiment was in the brigade of Gen. Edward Johnson, near Staunton, at the opening of the Valley campaign under Stonewall Jackson, having previously fought in the engagement of Greenbrier river, and on Jackson's advance from Staunton, participated in the affair at Allegheny Mountain and the battle of McDowell against Schenck and Milroy. Soon afterward he participated in the valley battles of Front Royal, Middletown and Port Republic, and continued to share the fortunes of Jackson's corps, in the brigade commanded successively by Generals Elzey and Early, participating in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Second Manassas, First and Second Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville. Subsequently his regiment was in Ewell's corps. Captain Weller was wounded at Fredericksburg, December 13, 1862, and at the Second Fredericksburg, May, 1863, was severely hurt by a fragment of shell, which prevented his participation in the Gettysburg campaign, though he took part in the defeat of Milroy at Winchester. In the campaign of 1864 he fought in the battles of the Wilderness and at Spottsylvania, receiving a third wound, in the leg, but was again in command of his company before Petersburg, serving in the trenches several months and taking part in the battle of Hatcher's Run, and the famous sally under Gordon against Fort Steadman, March 25, 1865, when he was captured by the enemy and sent to Fort Delaware, where he remained as a prisoner of war until paroled, June

21, 1865. This closed his worthy record as an officer of the army of Northern Virginia. In 1868 he removed from Richmond to Staunton, where he has since resided, occupying an influential place in the community. He has rendered valuable service to the city during eight years as a councilman.

J. L. Welton, of Portsmouth, a gallant Virginian who came home from Appomattox in 1865, a veteran of Mahone's brigade at the age of twenty years, is of good old Virginia stock, his family having been residents of Greensville county for many years. He was born there in 1845, the son of J. W. Welton and his wife, Rebecca B. Harrison. He was in school during the first year of the war, but in the spring of 1862, took a sudden and unannounced departure from home, and just after the battle of Seven Pines, enlisted in Company I of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment. Very soon afterward he received his introduction to war during the operations of his brigade, under General Mahone, in the Peninsular campaign, particularly in the bloody assault on Malvern Hill. Subsequently he took part in the battle of Second Manassas, was one of the heroes who held the Federal army at bay on Crampton's Gap of the South mountain, participated in the battle of Sharpsburg, and later at Brandy Station. In 1863 he fought at Chancellorsville, at Gettysburg on the second and third days, and was in the Bristoe and Mine Run campaigns. During 1864 he was at the front in the campaign from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, and then stationed on the Petersburg lines, took part in much severe fighting, including the battle of the Crater. In the latter desperate fight he narrowly escaped death at the hands of three negro soldiers, who attacked him with clubbed muskets, but were all killed by Emmet Richardson of Company K. Finally in the engagement at Five Forks he joined in the retreat which followed and surrendered with Lee at Appomattox. After his return home this faithful soldier, who had gained the rank of sergeant of his company, and manifested his cool bravery on many bloody fields, attended school for six months, and then began his career in civil life. Entering the service of the Petersburg & Weldon railroad, he was soon given the position of locomotive engineer. Four years later he was, for a few months, in the service of the Norfolk & Western road, then under the presidency of his old commander, General Mahone. Since then he has acted as engineer eleven years with the Wilmington & Weldon and seventeen years with the Seaboard Air Line railroad, displaying in this responsible position the same courage and trustworthiness which characterized his military career. By his marriage in 1866 to Miss Catherine Victoria Bendall, he has two sons, Charles R. and Richard F., both well-known business men of Portsmouth, and two daughters, Mary V. and Fanny R.

Thomas I. West, adjutant of Peachy-Gilmer-Breckinridge camp, Confederate Veterans, Botetourt county, enlisted on April 6, 1861, in the Greenbrier Rifles, organized at Lewisburg, W. Va. This became Company E of the Twenty-seventh regiment, Stonewall brigade, with which Comrade West was identified throughout the four years' war. He served at Harper's Ferry under Jackson, participated in the expedition to Falling Waters, and there was taken with pneumonia which caused him to be left at Martins-

burg when that place was abandoned by General Johnston. When the Federals took possession he was transferred to the hospitable home of two ladies and cared for but kept under guard. As the time approached when he could be moved North he was aided by the ladies to escape. Recovering his strength in time to return to duty in September, 1861, he rejoined Jackson's command and served gallantly in the ranks at Kernstown, McDowell, Winchester, Cross Keys and Port Republic. At Second Manassas he was wounded, and again at Chancellorsville while in the famous charge at Hooker's headquarters. He lay on the field till dark, and was reported killed, but fortunately recovered and rejoined his gallant company. Previously first sergeant, he was now made commissary of the regiment. In January, 1865, on the Petersburg lines, he was detailed by General Terry in response to a request of Gen. C. A. Evans, commanding division, for a courier who would go when and where he was sent. In this duty he never failed. In the fight at Deatonsville, during the retreat from Richmond, he carried orders through a murderous fire, and from then until the surrender acted as aide-de-camp to General Evans.

William T. Westwood, a gallant artilleryman of the Second corps of the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Hampton, May 16, 1836. His father, John S. Westwood, a native of Elizabeth City county, for many years held the position of collector of the port at Hampton, and was beloved for his good deeds as a local preacher in the Methodist church. The father of the latter was William Westwood, and his father, who bore the same name, founded the family in Virginia, emigrating from England. The wife of John S. Westwood was Eliza Stanworth, of Welsh descent. William T. Westwood was educated at the Hampton military academy under John B. Cary, and engaged in mercantile pursuits until April, 1861, when he enlisted as a private in the Hampton light artillery. He served with this command at Yorktown under Magruder, and remained in the peninsula taking part in the operations of the artillery until after the defeat of McClellan, in the meantime, on May 28, 1862, having been transferred to the King William artillery, under command of Capt. T. H. Carter. With this command, attached to D. H. Hill's division of Jackson's corps, he took part in the subsequent campaigns, including many engagements, the principal among which were the Seven Pines battles, Boonsboro, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. On September 14, 1863, while participating in an artillery duel at Somerville ford, on the Rapidan river, he received a severe shoulder wound from the explosion of a shell from the enemy's guns, which killed one man and wounded eight others in his battery. He was in hospital at Richmond eight months on account of this injury, and never fully recovered, losing the use of his left arm permanently. He was given an honorable discharge, whereupon he entered the quartermaster-general's department at Richmond, and remained there, winning promotion by efficient service, until the close of hostilities. Mr. Westwood resided at Smithfield from 1866 to 1871, was then for two years a foreman of railway construction with his home at Richmond, and subsequently held for nine years a responsible position in the mechanical department of the Hampton normal and agricultural institute.

In 1889 he was elected town clerk, and since then has been continuously re-elected to this office. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, Confederate Veterans. June 24, 1857, Mr. Westwood was married to Hannah D. Hutchinson, of Washington, D. C., who died in August, 1896, leaving three daughters, Mary E., Hannah D., wife of Thomas W. Keaton, and Lizzie Lee, wife of B. L. Turnbull.

Lyman B. Wharton, D. D., in 1864 chaplain of a gallant Virginia regiment of Anderson's corps, and now chaplain of Magruder-Ewell camp, Confederate Veterans, as well as performing the duties of a professor in the college of William and Mary, was born and reared in Bedford City, Va. His father was Rev. John Austin Wharton, an attorney, judge, and Episcopal clergyman of Bedford county, who was born March 22, 1803, and died June 20, 1888. He was the son of John Wharton, of English descent. The mother of Professor Wharton was Isabella Brown, a native of Berkshire county, Mass., born in 1811, died 1895, who married Judge Wharton in 1829, and bore him three sons and six daughters. John E., one of the sons, was a cadet at the Virginia military institute at the beginning of the war, and subsequently served in the army of Northern Virginia. Dr. Lyman B. Wharton studied in youth two years at the university of Virginia, then taught two years, and afterward pursued the study of theology at the Episcopal seminary at Alexandria. He was ordained at Lynchburg, by Bishop Meade, November 8, 1858, and performed the duties of rector in Charlotte county until the spring of 1864, when he entered the Confederate service as chaplain of the Fifty-ninth Virginia regiment. He accompanied his command on the retreat from Petersburg, and was present at Appomattox. He was subsequently rector in Montgomery county and at Abingdon until 1870, when he accepted the chair of Greek and German at William and Mary college, which he held until 1871, Latin and French having meanwhile been added to his department. In 1874 he received the degree of D. D. from this college. The embarrassments of the institution compelled him to find other educational work until 1888, when the college was reopened and he was called to his former duties. Of late his chair has been the professorship of Latin. In 1877 he was married to Paulina Taylor, who died August 19, 1897.

Morton Byron Wharton, D. D., a distinguished representative of the spirited, patriotic and devoted Christian ministry to which the South is greatly indebted, is a Virginian by birth and a member of the American family founded by Sir George Wharton, who came from Westmoreland, England, in the early days of the commonwealth. In honor of this noble progenitor, Over Wharton parish, in Spottsylvania county, is named, as is related in Bishop Meade's history. Dr. Wharton was born April 5, 1839, in Orange county. At the age of eighteen, while residing at Alexandria, he was converted and became a member of the Baptist church. In October, 1858, in preparation for the ministry, he entered Richmond college, where he was graduated early in 1861. He then entered the military school of the university of Virginia, and subsequently through the recommendation of J. S. Barber, since United States senator, he was appointed clerk to Hon. A. M. Barber, chief quartermaster of the army. While stationed at Center-

ville, he was thrown into frequent contact with the great military leaders. In 1862 he was stationed at Gordonsville with Maj. George Johnston, serving as pay-clerk and rendering valuable service in the collection of grain and teams. As the agent of the Sunday-school and publication board at Richmond he traveled through Georgia and parts of Alabama, and met with great success in raising funds to supply the brave boys in the field with Bibles and religious literature. He also preached at different places to the soldiers. Being in Richmond a few days before the surrender he and his wife accepted the invitation of Major Speed, of Alabama, to accompany to Georgia a party which included Mrs. Howell, mother-in-law of the president, and Mrs. Waller and children. After a journey of three weeks they reached Washington, Ga., on the route which Mr. Davis and thousands of broken and disheartened soldiers soon followed. During the latter part of the war period he also rendered notable service as the agent of the domestic and Indian mission board of the Southern Baptist convention. Subsequently he served as pastor of the Eufaula, Ala., Baptist church, where he brought about the building of a handsome new house of worship; of the Walnut street church, Louisville, Ky., and the Greene street church, Augusta, Ga., at all these places leading in a remarkable improvement in membership and in the benevolences of the churches. These labors left him, in 1876, so sadly broken in health, that he retired to his farm in southwestern Georgia, and remained there in seclusion until prevailed upon to undertake the collection of the quota of Georgia for the Southern Baptist theological seminary. Meeting with entire success in this undertaking, he then became corresponding secretary of the seminary, with the duty of raising \$20,000 annually for the current expenses of the institution. After a few years of this work at Augusta, he accepted from President Garfield the appointment as United States consul at Sonneberg-Coberg, Germany, and spent some years abroad. Returning with fresh enthusiasm for the work of the church, he held for two years, and with marked ability, the position of editor-in-chief of the *Christian Index*, published at Atlanta, Ga. Since then he has served as a pastor for six years at the First Baptist church of Montgomery, Ala., where he received six hundred members, and since 1891 at the Baptist church of Norfolk, Va., succeeding Rev. J. L. Burrows, D. D. Here his labors have been in no degree abated, nor permitted to be in any way less effective. Five hundred new members have been received into the church, and large sums of money have been raised for benevolences and the improvement of the magnificent place of worship. Early in his career his abilities were recognized by the conferring of the title of D. D. by the Washington and Lee university. As a preacher he is gifted with an extraordinary memory which never fails in its fund of illustration, a fine power of analysis and broad grasp of the essential relations of things, and an oratorical power that brings large congregations within the influence of his logic and human sympathy. He finds time for many channels of usefulness; as a trustee of Mercer university, of the Baptist orphans home, and of the Southern Baptist theological seminary; has delivered many public addresses, such as before the Southern Baptist convention, the Monteagle assembly, the Interna-

tional convention at Martha's Vineyard, and the International young people's union. In literature he has also won laurels, as the author of "European Notes, or What I Saw in the Old World," "The Famous Women of the Old World," "The Famous Women of the New World," and a recent book of Poems which has had a large circulation. He is a member of the Sons of the American Revolution, by right of the distinguished service of his grandfather, who was wounded at Yorktown. Dr. Wharton has two brothers living, Rev. Dr. H. M. Wharton, of Baltimore, and Rev. J. S. Wharton, M. D., of Tallapoosa, Ga. The latter was an eminent surgeon during the war, attached to the hospitals at Richmond and Lynchburg. Dr. Wharton was married in 1864 to Belle, daughter of Rev. C. M. Irvin, D. D., of Georgia, and they have two children, Mrs. John M. Moore, of Atlanta, and M. B. Wharton, Jr., of Graham, N. C.

Captain William H. Wheary, of Petersburg, Va., rendered efficient service to the Confederacy both as a manufacturer of supplies for the army and as a soldier at the front. He was born in Baltimore county, Md., in 1836, the son of Joseph and Ann M. (Richmond) Wheary. His father was a merchant and later a manufacturer of cotton goods, and the son was reared to that industry, learning the craft of a cotton spinner in Maryland, and at the outbreak of the war being superintendent of cotton mills at Petersburg. His father entered the Confederate service and had the rank of orderly-sergeant of his company, survived the war, and died in 1888. The Confederate government took charge of the cotton mills early in the war period, and required the employes and superintendent to remain at their posts, and this subject continued there on duty during the greater part of the war, in the course of his work making the first tent cloth ever produced in the State. A company was finally organized at the mills and W. H. Wheary was elected captain. In command of this organization, entitled Company B of Hood's battalion, he took part in the operations under Beauregard for the defense of Petersburg, until in the fight of June 15, 1864, he was captured by the enemy. He was imprisoned at Point Lookout and Fort Delaware until October following, when by strategy he secured his release, and returning to Petersburg, took charge of the Matoaca mill. He has ever since been engaged in this industry, in charge of various cotton mills at Petersburg. He is a valued citizen, and is highly regarded by his comrades of the army of Northern Virginia. He is a member of the A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. In 1858 he was married to Eleanor M. Marsden, of Maryland, who died about 1870, leaving three daughters: Agnes L., wife of John E. Jones; Laura Virginia, wife of C. W. Irvin, of Roanoke, and Mattie Custis, wife of Rev. N. J. Pruden. By his second marriage to Sallie E. Southwall he has three children: William A., Lewis M., and Sallie E.

Colonel Elijah V. White, of Leesburg, Va., a distinguished cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born near Poolesville, Md., August 29, 1832. He received his education at Lima seminary, Livingston county, N. Y., and at Granville college, Ohio. During the troubles in Kansas in the years 1855 and 1856 he went to that region and, becoming a member of a Missouri military company, took an active part in the struggle for

control of the new State. Then returning he purchased a farm in Loudoun county, Va., and there made his residence. In 1859 he joined the Loudoun cavalry organization, and with it was on guard during the exciting period following John Brown's attempt at insurrection. Having thus had a rare experience in the armed conflicts which preceded the great war, he was ready in the spring of 1861 to enter with enthusiasm into the defense of the State from invasion. His was a spirit akin to that of the gallant Ashby, with whom he served as a scout until the fall of 1861. He then obtained permission to organize an independent company, and his command grew in numbers and efficiency until it was assigned to W. E. Jones' brigade of the cavalry under Stuart, as the Thirty-fifth battalion, and its fearless leader received the rank of colonel. He participated in the important engagements of Ball's Bluff, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Slaughter Mountain, Brandy Station, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Trevilian's, Reams' Station and Five Forks, and numerous minor engagements with Stuart's cavalry, and was also conspicuous in independent operations in the Shenandoah valley and along the Potomac, destroying the enemy's communications, attacking their outposts, and keeping busy large forces of the enemy. His services frequently received the admiring mention of his superior officers. A. P. Hill, in reporting the affair at Snicker's Gap, November 3, 1862, relates that "Major White gallantly held his position" across the river from the main Confederate body, in the face of a large attacking force. In the famous cavalry fight at Fleetwood Hill, June 9, 1863, Colonel White led one of the two columns which made the first attack upon the Federals, and in spite of the discomfiture of the other column, drove back the enemy, at the same time repulsing without wavering an attack in the rear. He made several gallant charges with his command, finally driving the enemy from the hill, and then charging a battery under a destructive fire of grape and musketry, seized the guns and cut down the gunners, after which the battalion cut their way back through the Federal troopers, with a loss of half their number. General Stuart made an eloquent reference to the "dashing officer" and the brave spirits he held together, stating that he behaved with conspicuous daring, and though painfully wounded continued in command of his regiment, on active and important duty. In this action the battalion captured four stand of colors. Two weeks later he led his men into Maryland and cut the Baltimore & Ohio railroad near Point of Rocks, with a loss to the enemy of nearly eighty men. After the army reached Pennsylvania, he accompanied Gordon's brigade, routed a Pennsylvania regiment near Gettysburg, moved on to the Susquehanna river, and returning to Gettysburg fought on the left with Ewell, who gratefully acknowledged his services. The entire night following the first day's fight he spent in a reconnoissance of the Federal position. After the return to Virginia, Colonel White was left with his battalion in the rear of the enemy. He crossed the Potomac with one hundred men, and drove a superior body of Federals from fortifications at Poole's Farm. Stuart endorsed on the report of this action: "Colonel White and his command in this daring enterprise, which struck such terror to the enemy, deserve high praise. Every day brings new proof of his activity;" and Gen. R. E. Lee

added to Stuart's report: "Colonel White is entitled to great praise for his boldness and good management." During the remainder of 1863 he was engaged in daring and brilliant operations in the valley and West Virginia, sometimes in connection with Mosby, the two being given equal prominence in the Federal reports. Attached to Rosser's brigade, he fought at the battle of Parker's Store in November, in which Rosser reported that "the dashing White" charged the enemy's flank and carried everything before him. Throughout the remainder of the war he participated in the operations of Rosser's brigade in important battles and also continued his brilliant forays on the border. He crossed the Potomac near Poolesville, Md., in the latter part of July, 1864, made a night attack upon the Sixth New York near Harper's Ferry in January, 1865, and up to the close of the war his force and Mosby's were operating together in Loudoun county and the valley. During this service he was wounded several times, twice seriously. Two years after the close of hostilities Colonel White was elected sheriff of his county, but after serving three years was deposed by the military government. Subsequently he was occupied in shipping grain and in agriculture until 1892, when he was elected president of the People's national bank at Leesburg. He gives his time to the duties of this position, the care of a dairy farm of over four hundred acres in Fairfax county, and the functions of a minister of the old school Baptist church, in that capacity filling seven appointments. He is also the popular commander of Clinton Hatcher camp, United Confederate Veterans. Though often importuned to become a candidate for Congress he has declined all political preferment. In December, 1857, he was married to Miss Sarah Elizabeth Gott. Colonel White treasures a number of letters from the distinguished leaders of the Confederacy, among which the following may be copied here:

Headquarters Valley District.

November 15, 1862.

Major: The beautiful sword with which you have so kindly presented me, and also the other much-prized presents, have been received from Lieutenant Marlow of your distinguished command. Please accept my thanks for them. I have watched with great interest your brilliant exploits. Your men may well feel proud of having such a leader. Press on in your successful career. Let your men know that their comrades who are maltreated at Fort McHenry are not forgotten. I deem it a solemn duty to protect, as far as God enables me, every soldier of my command. I regret being driven to retaliation, but the enemy from time to time have been warned against their inhumanity. I have directed three Federal prisoners of the rank of captain to be detained at Staunton. I intend to have this outrage of which you complain thoroughly investigated, and not only see that the two men of your company but also the one belonging to Captain Ball's are exchanged, and also that indemnification is made for any wrong which they may have suffered.

With high esteem, I am, Major,

Very truly your friend,

T. J. Jackson, Lieutenant-General.

Maj. E. V. White.



E. V. WHITE

Headquarters Army Northern Virginia.

Brig.-Gen. W. E. Jones, Commanding Valley District.

General: I have received Maj. E. V. White's report dated December 24, 1862, of his scout to Poolesville in Maryland, and have forwarded it to the Adjutant and Inspector-General of Richmond, calling the attention of the War Department to the gallant conduct of Major White and his command.

I am much gratified at the manner in which Major White conducted this scout, and the substantial results accomplished with such slight loss on his part.

I have the honor to be very respectfully

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) R. E. Lee, General.

Captain Ellsbery V. White, now connected with important commercial and financial interests at Norfolk, Va., is well known throughout the South through his association as engineer with the famous ironclad ram, the Virginia, whose brief service in Hampton Roads attracted the attention of the civilized world. He is a native of Georgia, born in Wilkinson county in 1839. When a child his parents removed to Macon, where he was educated and apprenticed to a machinist, as which he worked for some years, fitting himself, unconsciously, for his future distinguished service. In 1856 the family removed to Columbus, where, after the secession of Georgia, he became a member of the City light guards, commanded by Capt. Peyton H. Colquitt, a brother of the late Senator A. H. Colquitt. This company, mustered into service as a part of the Second Georgia battalion, was the first Georgia command to enter Virginia, reaching Norfolk two days after the evacuation by the Federals and the destruction of the navy yard. After his arrival Captain White was able to witness the expiring flames of that magnificent old ship of the line, the Merrimac, once the pride of the navy and the object of admiration in foreign ports, whose sunken hull was to be raised and made the foundation of the irresistible floating battery known as the Virginia. Sergeant White, for such was his rank at that time, applied subsequently for admission to the Confederate navy, and was accepted and commissioned as an officer of the engineer corps in January, 1862. He was among the first men assigned to the Virginia, and remained with her until her destruction. His office required him to do duty where the ironclad was weakest, her engines and boilers being old and practically worthless, such service as was obtained from them being due to the mechanical genius of her engineers. The thrilling history of this famous old battery has been often told by Captain White, upon the lecture platform, where he has consented to appear on many occasions for the benefit of charitable enterprises and on behalf of Confederate veteran associations. On these occasions while presenting a graphic picture of the encounters in Hampton Roads he has taken the opportunity to insist upon the historical truth, which accords great credit to the Confederate naval architects, engineers and gunners, without detracting from the achievements of their antagonists. Thoroughly familiar with the construction of the old ironclad upon which he served, he has compared carefully the plans of the more recent fighting monsters of the various nations, in the light of his practical knowledge, and has arrived at the well-

grounded conclusion that it is in the model of the Virginia that modern naval architects have found the germ principles of the splendid armored vessels that now compose the navies of the world. It was her leisurely movements, indifferent to the broadsides of the great wooden ships that opposed her on March 8th, and her easy destruction that day of the Congress and the Cumberland that terrified the United States government and rendered useless the then existing war navies of England or any other power that might lay claim to the title of mistress of the seas. In her encounter with the Monitor on the following day, the honors of shot and shell were well balanced, but if the Virginia had not, on the previous day, lost her ram in the sides of the Cumberland, the moment when she succeeded in striking Ericsson's invention would probably have been its last afloat. As it was, the Monitor drew away after that shock, and sought shallow water where the Virginia could not follow, and though often thereafter given an opportunity to meet the Virginia, never again offered or accepted battle with her. Captain White remained on his vessel, whose very presence effectually guarded the James river from the Federal fleet, until the evacuation of Norfolk in 1862, when, despite the entreaties of her officers and men for permission to attack some Northern port, she was ordered abandoned and it became necessary to destroy the historic vessel, which was effectually accomplished, as was fitting, by her own men, on May 12, 1862, near Craney's island. Captain White, who held the candle for the gunner whose duty it was to uncup the powder in the magazine after the vessel was fired, was one of the last to leave the fated Virginia. He then joined the crew in their defense of the James river, at Drewry's bluff, where they again encountered the Monitor and the rest of the Federal fleet, and defeated the attempted landing of troops. Subsequently he was assigned to the gunboat Baltic, and participated in several minor actions about Mobile bay, assisting the Florida when she ran the blockade under command of Captain Moffat with a fever-stricken crew. Then resigning from the navy he returned to Columbus, Ga., where he invented and put in operation the machinery with which nearly all the buttons and buckles used in the army were subsequently manufactured. Becoming a member of the Georgia reserves, he served with them when called to Atlanta, and took part under General Hood in the important battles of June 20th, 21st and 22, 1864. After the fall of Atlanta he was ordered to return to Columbus, where he encountered the Federal forces of General Wilson, and was compelled to surrender. Thus ended a military record of which he may justly be proud, and which is still of great value to the South in that it enables him to eloquently present throughout the land the true story of the great historic event of which he was a part, and call attention to that remarkable war development of mechanical genius in the South which has had such an enormous influence upon the sea powers of the globe. After these events Captain White resided at Portsmouth, and then making his home at Baltimore, was occupied for over two years as a traveling salesman. Having by this time, by industrious persistence, accumulated a small capital, he was able to embark in business as a partner of his father-in-law, Nathan Forbes, at Norfolk, and subsequently established an in-

dependent business at the same city, under the title of E. V. White & Co. In this enterprise he has prospered to a notable degree, in the meanwhile being active in many enterprises for the public good and the advancement of the city. In whatever direction he interests himself, his ability is recognized by a call to fill some important and responsible position. In political life he has often sat as a delegate in State and National conventions; for many years he served as the commander of the Norfolk militia; at the occasion of the noted Mexican veteran parade at Norfolk, the largest ever seen at that city, his services were in demand as grand marshal of the day; in the Methodist church he has been highly honored, and has been a delegate to the general conferences at St. Louis and Memphis. He was the chief promoter of the Park View Methodist church at Portsmouth, dedicated in 1894 by Rev. Sam Jones; and is president of the Sunday school association of Norfolk and Portsmouth. He is chairman of the finance committee and director of the Seaboard insurance company of Norfolk, and one of the founders of the Norfolk National bank. While at Portsmouth in the Confederate service, in February, 1862, he was married to Josephine Forbes, forming a union which happily endured until her death in June, 1895.

Lieutenant James L. White, of Abingdon, Va., a veteran of Jackson's division, was born at the town where he now resides, August 29, 1842. Previous to the secession of Virginia he was a member of the militia organization at the university of Virginia, known as the Sons of Liberty, and with his company took part in the seizure of Harper's Ferry in April, 1861. Subsequently he became first lieutenant of a company organized in Russell county, Va., and which was assigned to the Thirty-seventh Virginia infantry regiment, and to the Third brigade of Gen. T. J. Jackson's division. From then until the end of the war he shared in the service of his regiment and brigade. He was wounded at Amelia Springs just before the surrender at Appomattox. For much of the time he was adjutant of his regiment, and during General Terry's command of the brigade, was attached to his staff.

Captain Lewis B. White, a gallant cavalry officer of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Matthews county, Va., January 15, 1844. His father, Alphens A. White, son of Dr. John H. White, was also a native of Matthews county, and during the war served in the engineer corps, being employed mainly in the construction of batteries about Petersburg. The wife of the latter, Mary A. White, was the daughter of Bennett White, a planter, whose wife was of the Lewis family. Major White was reared and educated at Norfolk, attending the Norfolk academy and the private school of J. R. Hubbard. Early in 1861, at the age of seventeen years, he enlisted in the Confederate service as sergeant in the Wise Legion of cavalry, commanded by Col. J. Lucius Davis. During his first year he was promoted orderly-sergeant and second lieutenant. At the reorganization in 1862, his command became Company D of the Fifth Virginia cavalry, and at the battle of Chancellorsville he was promoted captain, though but nineteen years old at that time. He remained in command of his company, which did duty as mounted sharpshooters, during the remainder of his service. During this period he participated

in many cavalry engagements in the various campaigns of the army. Among the more important battles in which he took part are those at Hawk's Nest, Guyandotte, Dam No. 2, the fights about Yorktown, Williamsburg, the Seven Days' battles, Chancellorsville, Kelly's Ford, Brandy Station. He was captured at Aldie, Va., June 17, 1863, and was not permitted to return to his command in time for effective service, being held as a prisoner of war at Johnson's island until March, 1865. On being exchanged he joined his regiment, and after the surrender of the army, started South with the intention of joining the forces in North Carolina. Learning that General Johnston also had surrendered, he with other cavalymen went as far as Charlotte on their way to the trans-Mississippi army, but were there informed that General Rosser had called all the cavalymen about him for a reorganization in Virginia. Cheered by this intelligence they returned to Virginia, but were there dismayed by discovering that the report was false, and that all hope was lost. He was paroled at Richmond, ending a gallant service in which he was several times wounded. He was wounded seriously three or four times, his right leg was fractured, the left was broken, and he was shot several times in the head and body. Since the war Captain White has resided in Norfolk, and has mainly been engaged in the manufacture of agricultural implements as the partner of his brother, S. R. White. The latter died in 1876, but the business still continues under the title of S. R. White & Brother, and is one of the most extensive in the South. He is married to Miss Clemmie H. Bell, of Matthews county, Va., daughter of Hon. Henry Bell, a man of much prominence, philanthropy and public spirit, who removed to Matthews county from Delaware, and represented the county several times in the legislature. Captain White has three children living: Harry L., Mary Bell and Herbert Nicholas. Another son, Lewis B., a very promising youth, died April 17, 1896, at the age of nineteen years.

Thomas Spottswood White, now a leading merchant at Lexington, Va., served throughout the war of the Confederacy with the army of Northern Virginia, and at its close was a veteran with an honorable record at the age of twenty years. He was born at Charlottesville, in 1845, but since the age of three years, at which time his parents removed to Lexington, he has had his home at the latter city. He left college just after Jackson had met the Federals at Kernstown, at the opening of the Valley campaign of 1862, and became a private in Company I of the First Virginia regiment of infantry, of the Stonewall brigade. With this command he served about one year, then being detailed as courier for General Paxton. Not long afterward he entered the Fourth Virginia cavalry and was with that regiment as a private during the remainder of the war, except one period when, being absent on furlough, he was unable to rejoin his command, and volunteered on the staff of General Rosser with whom he served through his Valley campaign in 1864. Among the engagements in which he rendered honorable service during the war were McDowell, Front Royal, Winchester, Cross Keys, Port Republic, the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, the Wilderness, New Market,

Mount Jackson, where he was twice wounded, Brandy Station, Trevilian's, and the fighting near Petersburg. Though at Appomattox he was not paroled there. After the close of hostilities he returned to his old home at Lexington, where he has subsequently resided and in civil life has worthily added to a career so honorably begun in the army of Northern Virginia. For the last twenty-five years he has been engaged in business as a dry goods merchant, with gratifying success. He maintains a membership in Lee-Jackson camp, United Confederate Veterans.

William T. White, of Richmond, who rendered faithful service with the Second Howitzers, of Richmond, during the last year of the war of the Confederacy, was born at Richmond in 1845. He was reared and educated in that city, and was a youth when the war passed through its earlier stages. Early in 1864, when the South was making its greatest effort to meet and repel the formidable invasions that were being planned against it, he became a private in May in the Howitzers, in time to participate in the terrific struggles at the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House. At Hanover Junction he was again in battle and took part in the bloody fight at Cold Harbor where the indomitable courage of the Confederates made a wall of defense against which the Federal hopes were shattered. Subsequently he was at Deep Bottom where he was continually under fire from the gunboats. Sickness now kept him from the ranks awhile, but on recovery he took part in the Valley campaign, fighting at Winchester, Port Republic and Cedar Creek. Subsequently he served in the trenches before Petersburg, and when further defense became unavailing, participated in the retreat until early in April, 1865, he was cut off from the army in Amelia county, and was never able to rejoin his company. At Cedar Creek he was captured by the enemy, but soon effected his escape. At the close of hostilities he returned to Richmond, and in 1871 secured a position as guard at the State penitentiary. With this institution he has been continuously connected since that time, his efficient and faithful service being rewarded in 1884 by appointment to the position of second assistant superintendent, and in 1894 to that of assistant superintendent, his former office having been abolished. He is a valued member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans.

Thomas Whitehead, distinguished as a gallant soldier during the war of the Confederacy, and since then as a journalist, political leader, congressman and State official, was born in Nelson county, December 27, 1825. He was reared in Amherst county, received a common school education, entered mercantile life at the age of fourteen, and later studied law, of which he began the practice upon his admission to the bar at Amherst Court House, in 1849. His civil career was interrupted in 1861 by the call to arms, and he promptly entered the military service in April, receiving a commission as lieutenant of cavalry. He was assigned to the Thirty-second Virginia regiment, which later in the year was enrolled as the Second Virginia cavalry regiment. At the reorganization in 1862 he was unanimously elected captain of Company E of this command, and with this rank he served until wounded severely at Trevilian Station, June 11, 1864. On account of his resulting disability he was assigned to duty on the board of inquiry at Charlottesville, where he served until the evacuation of

Richmond, when he rejoined the army in the field and at Amelia Court House, during the retreat, was promoted major of his regiment. His military service included faithful and gallant duty in many important battles and campaigns, among them the battles of First Manassas, Dranesville, Middleburg, Fredericksburg, Front Royal, two battles at Winchester, Barnesville, the fight in which Ashby fell, Dunker's Church, Port Republic, the Seven Days' before Richmond, Cedar Mountain, the two engagements at Harper's Ferry, Stuart's raid in Pennsylvania, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Greenwood and Funkstown, Todd's Tavern, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Yellow Tavern, Beaver Dam, Ashland, Hawe's Shop (where he cut his way through the Federal lines with the four companies of his command), Wilson's Landing, the raid from Raccoon Ford, by Stevensburg, Brandy Station and Rappahannock Bridge, the famous fight at Brandy Station or Beverly's Ford, the Stafford raid, with fighting at Harwood church and Falmouth, Kellyville, Third Manassas and Occoquan river, the raid after Averell, driving him into West Virginia, and Trevilian Station. After this arduous service with the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia, he was paroled at Amherst Court House, where he resumed the practice of his profession. He had been elected in March, 1865, to the Virginia senate, but under the changed conditions, could not take his seat. In 1866 he was elected commonwealth attorney for his county, but was removed by the military authority after about one year's service. In 1869 being again elected he served his term. In 1872 he was elected as the representative of the Sixth district in the United States Congress, and served for one term. Meanwhile, in 1871, he had established a newspaper, *The Amherst Enterprise*, which he published until he disposed of the property in 1875. In the following year he took charge of the *Lynchburg Daily News*, from which he retired in 1880 to establish the *Lynchburg Advance*, which he conducted for five years. During the gubernatorial campaign of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee he edited a newspaper at Lynchburg called "*Whitehead's Democrat*," also engaged in the canvass throughout the State, in the interest of Lee. He was elected by the legislature in 1887 to the position of commissioner of agriculture, in which he continued to serve with general approbation, having been successively reappointed by Governors Lee, McKinney and O'Ferrall.

J. E. Whitehorne, of Petersburg, a veteran of Mahone's brigade, army of Northern Virginia, is a native of Greensville county. He was born in 1840 at the plantation home of his father, Howell W. Whitehorne, a son of William H. Whitehorne, a soldier of the war of 1812. In the spring of 1861, at the age of nineteen years, he enlisted in Company F of the Twelfth Virginia infantry, which was stationed at Norfolk until the spring of 1862, when it joined the brigade of General Mahone and participated in the campaigns of that year, including the battles of Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg and Fredericksburg. Private Whitehorne went through these fights and Chancellorsville in addition, without serious injury, but at the battle of Gettysburg he was badly wounded in each leg. On the retreat he was carried to the hospital at Winchester, thence to Staunton, and from there to Hospital No. 21, at Richmond, after which he was

given a furlough and permitted to regain his strength at home. He was not able to walk until March, 1864, and then, on crutches joined his command near Rapidan Station. He was detailed to the quartermaster's department until June following, when he again went to the front and found his comrades at Turkey Ridge, near Richmond. Subsequently he was stationed on the lines at Wilcox's farm before Petersburg, and was frequently engaged in battle, notably at Johnson's farm, on the Weldon railroad, and at the Crater. In the latter fierce encounter he was again wounded, being shot through the leg. A few weeks later, with indomitable devotion, he was again with his regiment, near Battery Forty-five, and participated in the fight of October 27th, and in the battle of Hatcher's Run, February 6, 1865. Ordered to the Howlett House line late in March, he soon afterward joined in the retreat, and after fighting his last battle at Cumberland church, was paroled at Appomattox, at that time holding the rank of orderly-sergeant. Mr. Whitehorne has been occupied in mercantile pursuits since the war, since 1867 at Petersburg, and since 1890 he has been a partner in one of the leading dry goods establishments of the city. He is a member of A. P. Hill camp, Confederate Veterans. Three of his children are living: Edward W., Nellie E. and James S.

Francis Milton Whitehurst, prominent in the legal profession at Norfolk, is a native of Princess Anne county, born December 1, 1835. His father, William Whitehurst, was a prosperous planter of Princess Anne county, who died in 1847, and was descended from one of the early and substantial families of Virginia, the ancestors coming from England to the Old Dominion in the seventeenth century. Judge Whitehurst was reared at the plantation in Princess Anne county, attending country schools, and at fourteen years of age he entered upon school life in Norfolk, Va., attending the Norfolk military academy and a private school, and the Baltimore commercial college. During the session of 1860-61 he studied in the law school of the university of Virginia, but left there immediately after the adoption of the ordinance of secession by the Virginia legislature, to enter the service of his State. He enlisted as a private in Company F, organized at Norfolk, which became Company G of the Sixth Virginia infantry. He served in the ranks until the battle of Chancellorsville, when he was appointed first lieutenant of a company which had been formerly commanded by Capt. Carter Williams. This rank he held during the campaigns and battles of his regiment until his capture during the fight which followed the explosion of the mine at Petersburg on July 31, 1864. His experience on this occasion is of especial interest as illustrating the desperate character of the struggle and the demoralization of the Federal troops. The Sixth Virginia regiment, forming a part of the brigade of General Mahone, was on the right in the charge and did not cover more than half of the front of the Crater. Most of the regiment being on picket duty they carried into the action a little over one hundred men, of whom eighty-five were killed, wounded or captured. Lieutenant Whitehurst and Captain Wright, of another company, leading the line on the right, reached the edge of the Crater, where Wright fell with a fatal wound. Whitehurst knelt by the

dying man a moment and while in this act was approached by two Federals, who sprang from the debris and with leveled guns demanded his sword. Feeling a little indifferent in the midst of the carnage, he replied that he might accommodate them if they would wait a minute. This the Federals did not do, but seized his sword and pitched him into the crater, which was filled with soldiers, white and black, some of whom seized his scabbard and part of his clothing and with threats threw him about among them. As quickly as possible he put his hand to his sword belt, unbuckled same, and demanded protection from a Federal officer. This being granted, the lieutenant remained in the crater until the Confederate fire became so heavy that he approached the officer and asked to be either sent to the rear or allowed to return to his own command, as he disliked the prospect of being shot by his own comrades. He was then placed in charge of his two captors, and they started for the Federal rear, by way of a deep cut in rear of the mine, but had gone only a short distance when the rush of Federal soldiers through the cut became threatening. He told his guard they could not protect him and he would climb out and walk on the bank of the cut and take his chances, and they could have the right to shoot him if he attempted to escape. This was agreed to, and he went to the rear under the Confederate fire, but happily without injury. On being taken to the Federal officers' camp he refused to enlighten them regarding his command. While detained there, weary and heartsick, his clothes bloody, ragged and bullet-rent and covered by swarms of flies, his nerve almost left him, but it was revived by a proposition made to him one day as he sat disconsolate upon the root of a tree, with his head upon his hand. Some fellow in civilian clothes approached in a kindly way, for which he was grateful, but soon developed a proposition that he should take the oath of allegiance to the Federal government and be relieved of his troubles. Whitehurst believes he never swore before, but the impulse of that moment led him to make some remarks of a very emphatic nature that terminated the interview. After this he endured the life of a prisoner of war at City Point, the Old Capitol prison and Fort Delaware, until after the close of the war. While in the field he participated in the Seven Days' battles, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, and all other engagements of Mahone's brigade except Sharpsburg, then being sick, and escaped without a wound, though his clothes and trappings were pierced by thirteen bullet holes during the war. In 1865 he entered upon the practice of law at Princess Anne Court House, and when the present judicial system was adopted, he was chosen judge of the county by the legislature. After six years' service in this position he resigned, and then held, for the same period, the office of State's attorney. Resigning this position in 1884, he removed to Norfolk, forming the legal firm of Whitehurst & Hughes, which has continued to the present time. He has sat as a delegate in the State conventions of the Democratic party, is one of the board of visitors of Randolph-Macon college, a trustee of the Norfolk military academy, and a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, U. C. V. Judge Whitehurst was married in 1873 to Miss Laura E. Styron, and they have three daughters.

William H. Whitfield, who served with distinction as a member of Mahone's brigade of the army of Northern Virginia, was one of a family of southeastern Virginia which contributed with patriotic devotion to the military service of the commonwealth. The father was Cordia C. Whitfield, of Southampton county, and he was of a family long identified with the development of that section, founded in Virginia by his grandfather, Reuben Whitfield, of England. He married Lucy Sanders, daughter of Jesse Sanders, a native of Vermont, who came to Virginia as an engineer during the survey of the Seaboard Air Line railway line, and married Miss Susan Cross, of North Carolina. Cordia C. Whitfield gave three of his sons to Virginia as soldiers. One of these, Henry L. Whitfield, served in the army of Tennessee, and after going through a series of famous campaigns and battles, lost his life in the great Western battle of Chickamauga, September 20, 1863. William H. Whitfield, mentioned in the opening of this sketch, enlisted in Company H of the Forty-first Virginia infantry, Mahone's brigade, and notwithstanding serious wounds received at the battle of Malvern Hill, went through the subsequent campaigns of the army of Northern Virginia to the end. Argal C. Whitfield, a third son, served in the same company, regiment and brigade, until captured at Yellow Tavern, August 19, 1864, after which he was held as a prisoner at Point Lookout until after the close of the war. The latter two sons have both died since the war. A surviving son, Thomas J. Whitfield, now residing in Nansemond county, was born in Southampton county in 1852. Too young for service in the field, he nevertheless did what he could. In February, 1864, he accompanied his father to Richmond to visit a brother who lay there wounded, and he remained as a nurse and attendant in Chimborazo hospital until November of that year, serving faithfully in the care of the suffering heroes, and gaining a vivid impression of the horrors of war. After the war he was associated with his father on the home farm until 1886, when he removed to his estate near Suffolk. Since 1893 he has resided at his present comfortable farm home near the latter city. In December, 1887, he was married to Anna, daughter of Seth Benton, of Gates county. She also had three brothers in the Confederate army, Thomas, who was killed at Gettysburg, Mills and Isaac Benton.

Captain John S. Whitworth, of Berkley, a gallant veteran of Mahone's brigade, was born at Manchester, Va., September 15, 1836. His parents, John and Sallie (Stundsfield) Whitworth, were natives of England, where they were married before coming to America in 1828. They made their home at Manchester, Va., and many years after died there within a few hours of each other, and were interred in the same grave at Hollywood, Richmond. Captain Whitworth was reared and educated at Manchester, and then was apprenticed to Talbott & Brothers, machinists and manufacturers, for four years, learning thoroughly the trade of a machinist, which he followed prior to 1861. Meanwhile he had become a member of a volunteer military company, called the Rocky Ridge Rifles, with which he served at Harper's Ferry during the attempted insurrection of 1859. Having had this preliminary experience he entered the service of Virginia in April, 1861, as second junior lieutenant of Company I of the Sixth Virginia infantry

regiment. The company had been under command of his brother, William Whitworth, who had accepted this position temporarily, though physically unable to continue in active service. Upon his resignation before the muster, Louis F. Boisseau became captain. At the reorganization in the spring of 1862, Whitworth was promoted first lieutenant, and after the battle of Sharpsburg, when Captain Boisseau resigned, he was promoted to the captaincy which he continued to hold during the remainder of the war. He participated in all the campaigns of Mahone's brigade, taking part in twenty-seven different battles and skirmishes, chief among which were the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, ending with the battle of Malvern Hill; Second Manassas, Crampton Gap, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Falling Waters, Mine Run, Culpeper Court House, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Cold Harbor, Wilcox's Farm, Hatcher's Run and Sailor's Creek. In the fight on the Weldon railroad of June 22, 1864, on the occasion of Wilson's raid, he received a painful gunshot wound in the right shoulder, which disabled him from participation in the famous Crater fight in which his brigade was distinguished. But in all the other important actions of the brigade he was among the most faithful and fearless, and commanded his company in battle with coolness and skill, in practically all of its engagements except Fredericksburg of December, 1862. Finally he surrendered and was paroled with the remnant of Lee's brave men at Appomattox, and then returned to the duties of civil life. During all of the subsequent period, with the exception of four years, 1876-80, spent in farming in Currituck county, N. C., he has been prominently connected with the great railroad transportation business which centers at the cities on the Elizabeth river. For the first eight years he was connected with the Norfolk & Petersburg road, as a passenger engineer, and then as master mechanic of the shops at Norfolk. After 1880 he was master mechanic of the Elizabeth City & Norfolk road, in charge of its shops at Berkley, for nine years, was subsequently for one year master mechanic at Belfield, of the Atlantic & Danville road, which situation he left to accept his present position as master mechanic of the Norfolk & Carolina railroad, the shops of which are now located at Norfolk. Since 1880 Captain Whitworth has been a valued citizen of Berkley, Va., occupying an honorable place in the community, and taking an active and enterprising part in social, business and municipal affairs. He is a vestryman of St. Thomas Episcopal church, is a member of the Masonic order, is present treasurer and past commander of Neimeyer-Shaw camp, United Confederate Veterans, and an honorary member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, of Norfolk, also has served as a member of the common council of Berkley. In 1867 he was married to Emily Brickhouse Smith, daughter of Col. Alexander Smith, a prominent citizen of Currituck county, N. C.

William Wholey, of Staunton, Va., a veteran of Stonewall Jackson's division, is a native of Ireland, his residence in America dating from 1847. He made his home at Staunton in 1853, and six years later entered the military service of his adopted State at the time of the John Brown affair, and aided in the suppression

of the insurrection. Again in April, 1861, when the defenders of Virginia were called to the field, he enlisted as a private in the West Augusta Guards, which was mustered in as Company L of the Fifth Virginia infantry regiment. Later in the same year he was promoted ordnance sergeant in Jackson's division, the rank and station in which he served during the remainder of the struggle. With Jackson in the famous Valley campaign of 1862, he fought at Cross Keys and Port Republic, and then moving swiftly to the aid of Lee, took part in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond. In the following Maryland campaign he was engaged at Falling Waters and Sharpsburg, and next winter shared in the triumph at Fredericksburg. The most prominent service which he rendered in the following year, was at Chancellorsville and at Gettysburg. In the hard fighting of 1864 he shared from the opening to the close, fighting at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania and throughout the movement to Petersburg, where he took part in the defense of the entrenched line until the evacuation, after which he participated in the final actions at Sailor's Creek and Farmville. After the surrender, when he was paroled, he returned to his home at Staunton, where he has since resided and is accounted one of the substantial citizens. From 1865 until 1870 he was occupied as manager of the "American House" hotel. Since then he has been engaged in the wholesale liquor trade.

Oscar Wiley, M. D., a prominent member of the medical profession of Virginia, residing at Salem, was born in Botetourt county in 1830. He was reared in his native county and in Craig, and received his academic education at the Emory-Henry college, which he was compelled to leave at the close of the junior year of his course on account of the death of his father. Determining to make his career in the profession of medicine he pursued the study at Randolph-Macon college, where he was graduated in 1851, and at the Jefferson medical college of Philadelphia, where he was graduated in 1852. Previous to the war he was a member of a military company organized at the time of the Harper's Ferry insurrection, and when the State had decided upon secession in the spring of 1861, he joined a company of cavalry which was assigned to the Second regiment of Virginia cavalry. After eight months' service as a private he was promoted assistant surgeon of the Fifty-fourth regiment of infantry. A year later he was promoted to the full rank of surgeon, which he held during the remainder of the war. He participated in the early skirmish at Sawyer's Swamp, where he was on vidette duty, and captured the first Yankee soldier which was taken in by his company or regiment. He participated in skirmishes near Newport News, at Princeton, W. Va., and in the campaigns of the army of Tennessee, was in the battles of Paintville, Ky., Perryville, Ky., Richmond, Ky., Dalton, Ga., Resaca, Cartersville, New Hope Church, Marietta, Ringgold, Peachtree Creek, siege of Atlanta, Jonesboro, Ga., and Bentonville, N. C. He surrendered and was paroled at High Point, N. C., after which he returned to his home in Craig county. He was occupied there in both farming and the practice of medicine until 1870, when he made his home at Salem. At that place he has since continued in the practice, meeting with gratifying success and gaining a widespread reputation as a skill-

ful physician and surgeon. In 1885 he was elected a member of the medical examining board of Virginia, and after four years' service was re-elected, but resigned soon afterward. In 1889 he held the position of president of the medical society of Virginia. During Governor McKinney's administration, he was appointed to the commission to investigate the State lunatic asylum. In these and other ways he has been assured of the high respect in which he is held as a professional man and as a citizen. A brother of the foregoing, Benton Wiley, also of Salem, Va., was in the Confederate service from 1863 until the close of the war.

Robert Wiley, of Fairfax, a Virginian who did honorable service in a Georgia regiment, was born in Fairfax county in 1840. He was reared there and educated, also having the advantage of educational institutions in Washington City, and in 1861, having reached his majority, found the most attractive career open to him to be that of a soldier in the Confederate army. He entered the service in September, 1861, and was on duty as a scout until March, 1862. He then enlisted as a private in Company K of the Nineteenth Georgia regiment, and did not see his home again from that date until May 20, 1865. But during this long absence from home he became greatly attached to his commanders, Gens. Wade Hampton, A. J. Archer and Alfred H. Colquitt, who commanded successively in the order named, and the comrades of his Georgia regiment. With this command he participated in the battles of Williamsburg, West Point, Seven Pines, the Seven Days' battles, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Ox Hill, Harper's Ferry, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Olustee and Drewry's Bluff. He also served in the defense of Yorktown and the defense of Charleston, S. C. After the Seven Days' battles he was promoted sergeant, and he was afterward tendered the adjutancy, but was compelled to decline on account of disability from wounds. He was wounded three times in the Seven Days' struggle, but remained in the field, was again wounded at Olustee, Fla., and the last time at Drewry's bluff, so severely that he was incapacitated from May 16, 1864, to February 9, 1865. His experience as a prisoner of war was fortunately of only four days' duration, following the battle of Fredericksburg. Returning to the field in February, 1865, he was with Johnston's army until the surrender, after which he went to his home, carrying with him a Mexican dollar given him at the capitulation. This, which was his entire capital at that time, he still treasures as a souvenir of those days of gloom. He engaged in farming, in which he has ever since been interested, but his ability was soon recognized by appointment to responsible positions. He has served as commissioner of revenue, as magistrate, and as deputy county treasurer for ten years, and is now holding for the second term the office of county treasurer. He is a member of Marr camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Methodist church South. On June 26, 1867, he was married to Mary E. Lee, of Fairfax, and they have seven children.

William S. Wilkinson, of Danville, a veteran of the Amelia cavalry, was born in Amelia county, September 26, 1836. He is the son of Pleasant and Virginia (Forsee) Wilkinson, natives of Chesterfield county, who gave two other sons to the Confederate army: Edward Thomas, who died in the service, and Robert E., who

was killed in battle. William S. was educated in Clifton academy, and at the Baltimore dental college, after which he practiced dentistry in Amelia county from 1858 to 1861. For several years prior to 1861 he was a member of the Amelia cavalry and with that organization entered the active military service in April, 1861. The troop was assigned to the First Virginia cavalry, Col. J. E. B. Stuart, as Company G. He participated in the first battle of Manassas, and continued in the field until compelled to retire on account of illness. Subsequently he served as a hospital steward at Seabrooke hospital, Richmond, until the capital was evacuated, when he was assigned to the same work at Danville. Upon the receipt of news of Lee's surrender he joined the army in North Carolina and was paroled at Greensboro. Returning to his home he resumed his professional practice, but in 1871 made his home at Danville, where he has since had a successful career. He is a member of Cabell-Graves camp.

Thomas W. Willcox, a successful farmer of Charles City county, was a true-blue Virginian in the days of civil war, and devoted his energies to the cause which was dear to the loyal Southerner. His father, Dr. Edward Willcox, served his country in the war of 1812. Thomas W. was born November 17, 1832, and during the war of the Confederacy served as a lieutenant in the Charles City troop, until disabled by disease, then in the conscript bureau, and is still living and engaged in agriculture. He wedded Martha Ann Claiborne, who was born April 2, 1840, in Amherst county, a daughter of Dr. William S. Claiborne, whose father was Buller Claiborne, well known as a lawyer in his day. Mrs. Willcox is descended from William Claiborne, long ago a famous character in English history. Judge Thomas H. Willcox, son of the foregoing, was born in New Glasgow, Amherst county, October 4, 1859, but was reared in Charles City county and became a student in the Virginia agricultural and mechanical college at Blacksburg, Va. After being graduated at that institution in 1877, he determined to embrace the profession of law, and after six years' study and experience in the clerk's offices of Charles City county and Norfolk, began the practice in 1884, as a partner of Thomas R. Borland, of Norfolk. This legal firm has ever since been maintained, and is eminently successful in business and of high repute in the profession. In May, 1886, Mr. Willcox was elected commonwealth's attorney, and being three times re-elected, held the position for eight years. He was elected in February, 1894, to the office of judge of the corporation court of Norfolk, but this he resigned in the following December in order to devote his time to practice as an attorney. Mr. Willcox takes an active part in social, religious and fraternal life. He was married in October, 1885, to Mary C., daughter of Rev. Thomas M. Ambler, of Norfolk, and they have six children: Mary A., Thomas H., Claiborne, Cary Ambler, Edward R. and Charles S.

Captain Charles U. Williams, of Richmond, who served with distinction in the army of Virginia from Harper's Ferry to Appomattox, was born in Henrico county in 1840. During the exciting events of 1860 he was a student at the university of Virginia, and was a member of a company of students officered entirely by graduates of the Virginia military institute. Thoroughly loyal to his State, he was prompt to act, and on the night of

the day rendered memorable by the passage of the ordinance of secession, he left the university to lead the life of a soldier, and was with his company from the university at the occupation of Harper's Ferry, April 18, 1861. Ten days later he enlisted with the Second Richmond Howitzers, and rendered efficient service with that command until February 1, 1862, when he was ordered to Richmond and was detailed as drill-master for artillery. He acted in this capacity until July, 1862, receiving meanwhile, in the month of May, a commission as second lieutenant in the provisional army of the Confederate States. In July he went upon the staff of Brig.-Gen. D. R. Jones, as aide-de-camp, and served with that officer until his death in January, 1863, when he was appointed to the staff of Brig.-Gen. M. D. Corse, first as aide-de-camp, subsequently being promoted adjutant and inspector-general. In this rank he remained with Corse's brigade until on May 12, 1864, he was captured by the Federal forces near the Half Way House, between Richmond and Petersburg. His detention as a prisoner of war continued from that date until January, 1865, when he was paroled, and the dreary months of restraint and privation were passed at Point Lookout and Fort Delaware. Upon being exchanged March 1, 1865, he immediately rejoined the army and reported for duty. After the close of the struggle he returned to Richmond and began the practice of law, in which he has since become distinguished, ranking with the leading jurists of the State.

David E. Williams, of Portsmouth, a gallant Confederate soldier who shared the fortunes of the Old Dominion Guard from Fredericksburg to Five Forks, was born at Portsmouth, April 21, 1844. His father, David Williams, was also a native of Portsmouth, born November 4, 1808, died March 15, 1895. His mother, whose maiden name was Thyrsa Consolvo, was born in Norfolk county September 3, 1809, and died December 27, 1890. At the outbreak of the war in 1861, young Williams had not yet reached the age of eighteen years, but he was firmly devoted to the cause, and in the fall of 1862 he enlisted as a private in Company K of the Ninth Virginia regiment of infantry, a company which originally was the Old Dominion Guard, and at the time of his enlistment was commanded by Capt. H. A. Allen. Subsequently Private Williams participated in the campaigns and battles of Armistead's brigade and Pickett's division of the army of Northern Virginia, including the gallant fighting of his regiment at Five Forks. At the latter engagement he was wounded, and soon afterward captured. He was held as a prisoner of war at Point Lookout until June 16, 1865, when he was paroled and permitted to return to his home. Since the war he has resided at Portsmouth and has been successfully engaged in the mercantile business. He is a member of Stonewall camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Episcopal church. On January 29, 1867, he was married to Alice Rebecca Guy, of Portsmouth, and they have five children living. Private Williams was the youngest of five brothers who entered the Confederate service, and of whom the only other survivor is Luther J. Williams, of Portsmouth, also of the Old Dominion Guard, who was wounded and disabled at Seven Pines. Lemuel H., of Company G of the Ninth Virginia regiment, who was killed at the stone wall on Cemetery hill, Gettysburg, July 3, 1863, bear-

ing aloft the colors of his regiment; William Wilson, of Company G, Sixteenth infantry, was killed at Malvern Hill; and Charles Consolvo, of Grimes' battery, who gave up his life at Sharpsburg.

John J. Williams, of Winchester, well known in the valley as an attorney, was distinguished during the war of the Confederacy as a soldier, and during the period subsequent has taken a leading part in the organizations of the survivors of the army. He was born at Winchester, Va., June 8, 1842, the son of Philip and Mary L. L. (Dunbar) Williams. Reared and educated at his native town, he was about to undertake a university course when Virginia called out her young men to battle. On July 16, 1861, he enlisted in the Rockbridge artillery, and a few days later was engaged in battle at Manassas. He participated in the subsequent service of this famous battery until after the battle of Sharpsburg, when an injury to his ankle forced him to obtain a transfer to Chew's battery of horse artillery. In April, 1864, he was transferred to Company E of the Eleventh Virginia cavalry, with which he served until Appomattox. His service in these commands was most worthy, and his gallantry in more than forty skirmishes and battles in which he took part was recognized near the close of the war by promotion to lieutenant. His commission never reached him, however, owing to the termination of hostilities. Returning home after the surrender, he resumed his studies and entered the office of Judge Richard Parker, where he prepared for the practice of law. Soon embarking at Winchester in this profession, he has since followed it with notable success. His professional standing has been attested by his election as vice-president of the Virginia bar association. As a public-spirited citizen he has had an active participation in various local enterprises. For three years, including the Yorktown encampment, he served as captain of the Winchester light infantry. He has held the position of president of the Shenandoah valley agricultural association two years, and has twice been elected mayor of Winchester. He is one of the early members of the Turner Ashby camp, United Confederate Veterans, of which he has acted as commander for five terms. He is also vice-president of the Rockbridge artillery association, and becoming grand commander of the grand camp of Confederate Veterans of Virginia, for the unexpired term ending in October, 1888, was re-elected for the annual term next thereafter. Captain Williams came out of the war ready to join hands with his former foe in the cordial support of the common country as established by the arbitrament of arms, but he still holds in honor the cause for which he fought and his comrades who fought with him. His sentiments were well expressed in an address on a Memorial day at Charlestown, W. Va.: "Let England's nobility boast of Norman blood and of names on the roll of Battle Abbey. The boy who can say of his father, he was with Lee at Appomattox, has a patent of nobility that no herald's college can match, and for coat of arms can point to the ragged gray jacket and the battered saber, though they grace but a cottage wall, and the form that wore and the hand that grasped them were of the humbler ones of earth."

Colonel Lewis B. Williams was, before the civil war, a rising lawyer of Orange Court House, and when Virginia called her sons to arms he promptly obeyed her command and entered the

Confederate service as captain of a company from his county. His company was assigned to the Thirteenth Virginia regiment, which in Elzey's brigade acted a splendid part at the first battle of Manassas. At the battle of Williamsburg, Williams was very conspicuous. He had now been appointed colonel of the First Virginia, and Gen. A. P. Hill says of him on the occasion of a charge made by his command: "It was during this charge that I saw Colonel Williams cheering his men on, and nobly followed by them. In conjunction with one or two companies of the Ninth Alabama he captured a battery of eight guns. . . . He fell severely wounded through the body about 6 o'clock." As soon as his wound would permit he was in the field again. At the time of the battle of Chancellorsville he was in southeast Virginia with the division of Pickett, which was called northward again when Lee began his march into Pennsylvania, reaching Gettysburg in time to lead in the grand charge upon the Union center on the 3d of July. It consisted of the splendid brigades of Barnett, Armistead and Kemper, to which last brigade was attached the First Virginia, led by Colonel Williams. Every one is familiar with the story of the great assault, which has been styled by the Union General Buell, "the hopeless but immortal charge against Cemetery hill." In this desperate fight Colonel Williams received his mortal wound and the services of this gallant officer were lost to Virginia and the South.

Luther J. Williams, of Portsmouth, who went into the war of the Confederacy as a member of the Old Dominion Guard, was born at Portsmouth, August 4, 1831. His father, David Williams, an esteemed citizen of Portsmouth, during the greater part of the century, the son of Wilson and Mary (Avery) Williams, was born in the house in which his son Luther now resides, in 1808 and died in 1894. The mother, Thirza Consolvo, a native of Norfolk, was the daughter of William and Mary (Wright) Consolvo, the father being of Spanish descent. She died in 1889. These parents gave five sons to the Confederate army: Luther J., Lemuel H., William W., Charles C. and David E. The latter's service is elsewhere given, and as is there stated, three of the brothers, Lemuel, William and Charles, gave their lives for the cause. Few families in the South contributed with a more noble generosity to the Confederate cause, or suffered more from the fatalities of war. Luther Williams was reared and educated at his native city, and when the time arrived for him to choose his career in life, became apprenticed with a ship carpenter at Baltimore. Subsequently he was employed in this occupation at the old Gosport navy yard until the breaking out of the war. He was a member of the Old Dominion Guard, famous among the militia commands of Virginia before 1861, and as a private entered the active service on April 19, 1861, serving at once in defense of the navy yard, and afterward on garrison duty at Pinner's Point until the evacuation of Norfolk. The command then marched to Petersburg and was attached to the Ninth Virginia regiment of infantry as Company K. Then moving to the front before Richmond, Private Williams took part in the battle of Seven Pines, and in the fight of June 1, 1862, was wounded in the right foot, the injury being of such a severe character that he was disabled for three months, and at the expiration of that time was detailed for duty in the navy

department. He remained at Richmond, working in one of the navy yards, until near the close of the war. When Richmond was evacuated, he joined the forces which were contributed to the army by the navy department and marching with the army on the retreat, joined in the surrender at Appomattox, and was paroled with the heroic remnant under the command of Lee. Returning to Portsmouth he resumed his work, and is now esteemed as one of the worthy citizens of that place who have contributed to the growth and welfare of the city. He is a member of the Masonic order, and a Knight Templar, and is a valued comrade of Stonewall camp, United Confederate Veterans.

William G. Williams, of Orange Court House, Va., whose military career was identified with that of the Fifty-eighth Virginia infantry regiment, was born November 8, 1829, at the town where he now resides. He was educated at the university of Virginia and pursued the study of law at William and Mary college, gaining admittance to practice at the bar in the year 1853. He was subsequently engaged in the practice of this profession at Orange Court House until 1857, when he removed to Richmond and engaged in educational work. In October, 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate service as regimental commissary of the Fifty-eighth Virginia infantry, and continued in this capacity during his service, also for some time acting as brigade commissary of Hoffman's brigade, Early's division. In August, 1864, while gathering cattle in Hampshire county, W. Va., he was captured by a party of Federals, and was sent to Camp Chase, Ohio, where he was detained as a prisoner of war until February, 1865. He was then sent to Richmond and paroled, but before he could be exchanged the war came to an end. He was faithful and efficient in his services and is highly deserving of honorable remembrance by Confederates. With the return of peace he resumed his law practice at Orange Court House, and in 1870 he was elected judge of the county court. After ten years' service in this honored position, he resigned and abandoning his professional work, embarked in the coal trade on the West Virginia rivers, a business which occupied his attention until 1883. He then returned to Orange, and engaged in business until 1895, when he retired from his long, active and prosperous career. In 1897 he was honored by election to the Virginia house of delegates by his native county. Judge Williams was married September 10, 1857, to Miss Roberta Hansbrough, and they have four living children: William Clayton, Lewis B., Bessie C. and James S. Williams.

J. T. Williamson, of Norfolk, a veteran of the "Norfolk Juniors," one of the gallant volunteer organizations that sprang to arms at the call of the State in 1861, was born in Princess Anne county in 1830. His ancestors had for many years resided upon a plantation in Princess Anne county and represented one of the oldest and most worthy families of the State. His father was Abel Williamson, his grandfather Caleb Williamson, a soldier of the war of 1812. His mother was Mollie, daughter of Josiah Williamson, of Princess Anne county. When Mr. Williamson was sixteen years of age he went to Norfolk and was apprenticed to the carpenter's craft, with John W. Whitehurst. Four years later he began work for himself, and in 1859 embarked in business as a contractor, which has been his business since that time, except

while engaged in the service of the Confederate States. Early in 1861 he enlisted in the Norfolk Juniors, a company which was mustered in as Company H of the Twelfth Virginia infantry. He was with his command at Norfolk until the evacuation, when he went with his command by way of Petersburg and Richmond into the Peninsular campaign and fought under Lee at Seven Pines, Frayser's Farm and Malvern Hill. Subsequently he was in camp at Louisa Court House until the opening of the Manassas campaign. He fought at the second battle of that name, and was then compelled by sickness to go to the hospital where he was quarantined about six weeks on account of the breaking out of small-pox. In January, 1863, he rejoined his command at the old Brick church near Petersburg, in winter quarters. In the following spring, while doing picket duty, he was captured by the enemy, and held as a prisoner at Washington and Fort Delaware. After a few weeks he was exchanged and he was able to rejoin his command near Winchester on the retreat from Pennsylvania. He participated in the subsequent operations of the army on the Rappahannock and Rapidan, fighting at Bristoe Station and Mine Run, and passed the winter in camp at Henderson's Crossing. In the campaign of 1864 he fought through the Wilderness and Spottsylvania battles, and at Cold Harbor, and was subsequently on duty in the trenches at Petersburg, where he took part in the battle of the Crater, until the engagement at Hatcher's Run, when he was again captured by the Federals. Sent to the prison camp at Point Lookout he was held there until May, 1865, after the war was over. He rejoined his family, after an absence of over three years, and resumed his former occupation as a builder and contractor. In this business he has been very successful, and though mainly confining his work to residences, has erected some handsome business and public buildings. He has served as health inspector of the city two years, is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, and of the Odd Fellows, Knights of Honor and Knights of Pythias. He was married October 9, 1851, to Mary F., daughter of John Whitehurst, of Princess Anne county.

Marion G. Willis, of Fredericksburg, though but nineteen years old at the close of the war, served two years with distinction as a member of the Sixth Virginia cavalry. He is the son of Rev. John C. Willis, a Baptist clergyman, and native of Orange county, who was the second of twenty-one children of Larkin Willis, son of Capt. Isaac Willis. Ten of the brothers of John C. Willis served in the army of Northern Virginia, of whom one was killed and another died in prison at Point Lookout. Their mother was Mary Catesby Woodford, of Caroline county, the granddaughter of Gen. William Woodford, of the Revolutionary army. She died in August, 1894, on the day following the demise of her husband. Marion G. Willis was born in Orange county, April 7, 1846, and was reared upon the farm of his father until April 30, 1863, when he enlisted in Company I, Sixth Virginia cavalry, originally known as the Orange Rangers. He served in the brigade commanded by W. E. Jones, Lomax and Payne, and Fitzhugh Lee's division through the campaigns in eastern Virginia and the Shenandoah valley, until the latter part of January, 1865, when he was sent to the hospital at Charlottesville. While at home on leave of absence to secure a horse, the war came to an end. He is a

man of splendid physique and dauntless courage, and was conspicuous among the gallant troopers of the cavalry corps. In a fight at Summit Point, in August, 1864, he was cut off from his comrades and called upon to surrender. But though surrounded, he did not stop to consider that proposition, and emptied his revolvers at the enemy, and drawing his saber, cut his way with reckless daring through the Federal line. As he galloped toward his command, who were witnesses of his bravery and were loudly cheering him, a volley was fired by the enemy, from which he received a wound in the foot and his horse four wounds. But he gained a place of safety, wheeling as he went, to derisively call upon the Yankees to follow him. In 1873 Mr. Willis left his farm home in Orange county and embarked in business at Fredericksburg as a merchant, beginning a successful career of over a quarter century. Since 1879 he has been a member of the city council, and has served as chairman of the finance committee. He is also president of the city telephone company. On May 17, 1866, he was married to Lucy Taylor Gordon, of Culpeper county, and they have two children: Nannie G. and Marion G., Jr.

Alexander Wilson, a prominent business man of Petersburg, who prizes the memory of honorable service in the army of Northern Virginia, is a native of Scotland. He was educated at Edinburgh, his native city, and in 1852, at the age of twenty-two years, landed at New York city, and thence in 1854 removed to Petersburg. Here he embarked in the grocery business in which he has since been engaged, except during his military service. Upon the secession of Virginia he determined to give his aid in the defense of the State, and on April 19th he enlisted in Company C of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment, subsequently distinguished in Mahone's brigade. He was stationed with his company at Norfolk until the evacuation of that region by the Confederates, when the demands of his business compelled him to furnish a substitute for a time. In 1863 he re-enlisted in Company A of the Ninth Virginia infantry, Armistead's brigade, Pickett's division, with which he served in the defense of Richmond and Petersburg, combating the raids under Dahlgren and Sheridan, and the advance of Butler's army. He participated in the defeat of Butler's forces at Drewry's Bluff, in May, 1864, and again at Chester Station, in the following month. He subsequently served on the Bermuda Hundred line with Pickett's division until he was captured near Bowling Green, and thence taken to Point Lookout and Elmira, N. Y., where he was held as a prisoner of war until after the close of hostilities. He then returned to Petersburg and set to work to rebuild his business, and in spite of the ravages of the war and many discouraging circumstances, has in the years which elapsed, succeeded remarkably in his enterprises. His business establishment is one of the institutions of the city and he is a popular and influential citizen.

Captain Charles W. Wilson, of Norfolk, who did gallant service in the army of Northern Virginia, was born at Norfolk, February 8, 1838. He is of a family descended from one of two brothers who came to Virginia from Scotland in colonial times and occupied a large grant of land in Norfolk county. His father, Nathaniel Wilson, a prominent planter, born in 1792, died in 1856, was married in 1822 to Mary Land, who was born in Princess

Anne county March 4, 1804, and they had six children, of whom the only survivor is Captain Wilson. He received his education at the Norfolk military academy and the university of Virginia. At the commencement of the war he left the university to enlist as a private in the volunteer organizations for the defense of the State. On April 22, 1861, he was made second lieutenant of Company A of the Sixth Virginia infantry, and served in that rank until the reorganization in 1862, when he was promoted first lieutenant. On November 8, 1862, he was promoted captain of his company, and on the organization of the sharpshooters of his brigade in January, 1863, he was detached from his company and assigned to the command of a company of sharpshooters. In this capacity he rendered effective service until the battle of Cold Harbor in June, 1864, when he was taken prisoner. Subsequently he was confined at Fort Delaware until some time after the war was over, not being released until June, 1865. During his service he participated in all the skirmishes and battles of his command, taking part in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, at Frayser's Farm, Charles City Road and Malvern Hill, and subsequently in many engagements, the most important of which were the Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Mine Run, Chancellorsville, Salem Church, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House. In the December following his return to civil life Captain Wilson established a book and stationery store at Norfolk, which he conducted until January, 1874, when he sold the business and turned his attention to farming. He has since been engaged in the management of lands near Norfolk and in Princess Anne county, and since 1874 has resided in a beautiful farm home near the city of Norfolk. He is a very popular gentleman, and influential in many ways for the best interests of his community. He was married December 9, 1869, to Pamela Bolling West, daughter of Thomas B. West, of Norfolk, and they have six children now living: Charles Bolling, Louisa Seaton, Francis Delaware, Cary Robinson, Thomas Seaton, and Virginia West.

John T. Wilson, a popular dental surgeon at Lexington, Va., was born in Rockbridge county in 1838. Here he received his early training and education, and left Lexington on June 8, 1861, as a member of the Liberty Hall Volunteers, a company which contributed some gallant spirits to the Confederate cause. Being incorporated in the Fourth Virginia regiment of infantry as Company I, it did its full share in winning the laurels of Jackson's Stonewall brigade, and the fame of Jackson's corps of the army of Northern Virginia. The military career of Dr. Wilson was identified with that of his regiment and the Stonewall brigade until the battle of Chancellorsville, where their gallant commander fell. In that engagement he was wounded in the thigh, and so seriously that he was permanently disabled for active service in the field. He was, however, able at the beginning of the year 1864 to accept an assignment in the quartermaster's department, where he served six months. Subsequently he was ordered to Lexington, to serve as assistant to the commandant at that post. In the performance of these duties he continued until the war was closed in Virginia by the surrender of General Lee. Notable among the engagements in which he served with honor may be

mentioned the battles of Falling Waters, Winchester, Charlestown, Cold Harbor, Malvern Hill, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, and Chancellorsville. At Second Manassas he received a gunshot wound in the hand. After the close of hostilities he returned to the duties of civil life, and presently prepared himself for a professional career as a dental surgeon, to which he has devoted himself up to the present time. He enjoys an enviable professional reputation and the general esteem as a worthy and valuable citizen.

Captain Peter Eidson Wilson, of Staunton, Va., a veteran of the Stonewall brigade notable for devoted and faithful service, is a native of Augusta county, born September 9, 1839. He was reared and educated in his native county and in early manhood enlisted in the service of his State. His military career began in April, 1861, as a private in the West View Volunteers, of Staunton, which became Company F of the Fifth Virginia infantry regiment. In the spring of 1862 his merit as a soldier was recognized by election to the first lieutenantcy, and after the battle of Second Manassas, the captain becoming incapacitated by wounds, Lieutenant Wilson took command of the company and continued in that duty, though he did not receive his commission as captain until the fall of 1863. Soon after he first took command of his company he was given charge of the skirmish line of the Stonewall brigade, a capacity in which he served during the larger part of the remainder of the war. At the time of the surrender of the army at Appomattox, he was in command of his regiment. The principal battles in which he participated were Manassas, July 21, 1861; Kernstown, Second Manassas, Harper's Ferry and Sharpsburg, and Fredericksburg, in 1862; Chancellorsville and Mine Run in 1863; the Wilderness in 1864, and the battle of Fort Steadman and the fighting in the lines at Petersburg and on the retreat to Appomattox in 1865. During the second day's fight at the Wilderness while he was one hundred yards in front of the breastworks, both his legs were broken by a minie ball, and this severe injury entirely disabled him until January, 1865. After being paroled at Appomattox he returned to Augusta county and found employment for a season on his father's farm, then attending Roanoke college, and subsequently pursuing a course of studies at the Bryant & Stratton college at Baltimore. He was in business at Richmond for eight years, and continued in mercantile pursuits at Staunton until 1889. In 1890 he entered the real estate business, in which he is still engaged. He is a popular and influential citizen, highly regarded alike by his former comrades and the public generally.

Captain Christopher V. Winfree, of Lynchburg, during the Confederate war one of the commanders of the Lynchburg Rifles, was born at that city in 1826. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, with graduation in 1848, and subsequently followed the profession of civil engineer for eight years at his native State. As first lieutenant of the Lynchburg Rifles he entered the Confederate service in June, 1861. The command became Company E of the Eleventh Virginia infantry regiment, under Col. Samuel Garland, and was assigned to Longstreet's brigade of Beauregard's army of the Potomac. With this regiment he participated in the battles of Blackburn's Ford, Manassas and Dranes-

ville, in the summer of 1861, and was promoted captain of his company. He held this rank until the reorganization in the spring of 1862, when he returned to Lynchburg, and with a commission as major in the Virginia service, took charge of the home guards. A year later he entered the engineer corps of the army, in which he continued to serve until the close of the war. After the surrender of the army of Lee he attempted to join the forces in North Carolina under Johnston, but was halted at Danville by news of the general surrender, and subsequently was paroled at Lynchburg. After peace was restored he engaged in the manufacture of tobacco which he carried on with much success until 1895, when he retired from business. Captain Winfree is of a family for many years identified with the history of the Old Dominion. His father, Christopher Winfree, was an extensive shipper of tobacco and died in 1858, at the age of seventy-three years. His grandfather, Dr. John B. Tilden, served with the rank of lieutenant in the war of the Revolution in the Pennsylvania line, was at the surrender of Cornwallis, subsequently was a member of the Order of Cincinnati, and died in 1837, about seventy-five years of age.

L. M. Wingfield, of Berkley, Va., a veteran of Stuart's cavalry, was born at Richmond, May 19, 1844, the son of William T. Wingfield, who was for many years city paver at Richmond, served during the war as a member of the Richmond Howitzers, and died in 1875. Another son of the latter, William Joseph Wingfield, was a member of Company H, Twenty-third Virginia regiment, throughout the war and died in 1874. L. M. Wingfield enlisted in a cavalry company organized at Richmond, which was subsequently attached to the Tenth Virginia cavalry regiment. With this company he was in the Manassas battle of July 21, 1861, and the fights at Winchester and Ball's Bluff, later in the year, after which he was in camp on the James river until the spring of 1862. He participated in the operations of the cavalry during the Peninsular campaign from Williamsburg to Malvern Hill, and from that time until the end of the war was identified with the service of the brigade and division of W. H. F. Lee, taking part in a great number of battles and skirmishes, prominent among which were the fights at Bunker Hill, Fisher's Hill, Waynesboro, the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, Yellow Tavern and Cold Harbor. He received slight wounds on three occasions and in an engagement at Winchester was seriously wounded, in consequence of which he was for a considerable time in the general hospital at Staunton. As was the case with most of the cavalry, he did not surrender at Appomattox, but afterward went to Richmond and gave his parole. Subsequently he traveled in the western States for five years, and then returning to Virginia, he made his home at Norfolk, where of recent years he has been quite successful, engaged in business as a merchant. In 1871 he was married to Mary E., daughter of William N. Godwin, who during his lifetime was a prominent business man of Norfolk. They have two children living: Edward L. and Mary E.

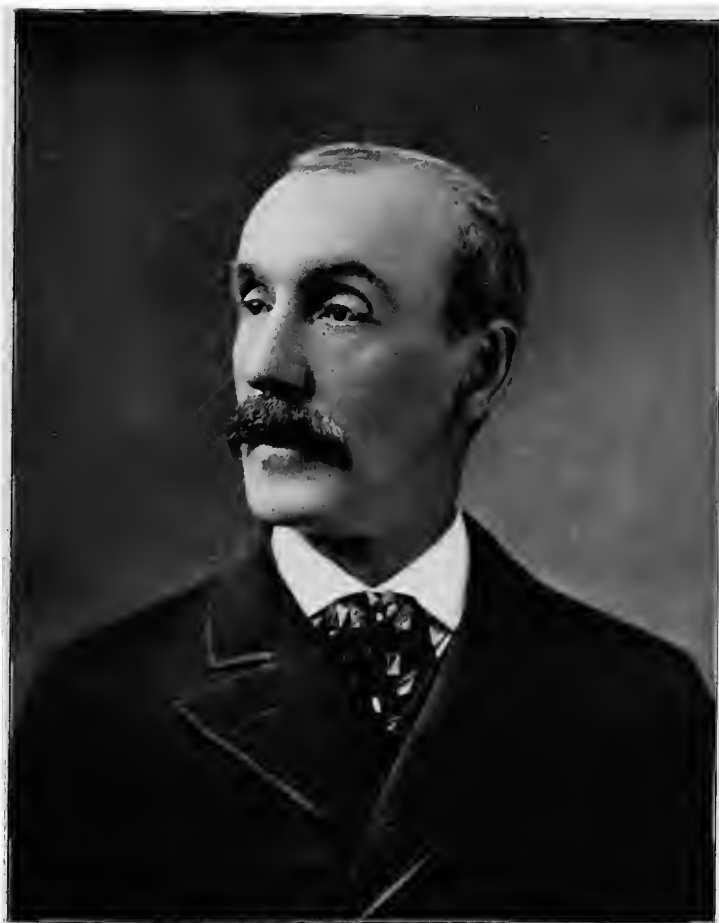
Charles E. Wingo, of Richmond, did gallant service in the artillery of the army of Northern Virginia until he fell with serious wounds upon the bloody field of Sharpsburg. He was born in Amelia county, Va., July 12, 1843, came to Richmond in 1859,

and in July, 1861, at the age of eighteen years, enlisted as a private in the First Richmond Howitzers. Stationed on the line of the Potomac, after the battle of Manassas, he served with his command in the effective repulse of the Federal sortie into Virginia at Ball's Bluff, and subsequently when the battery moved southward to meet the advance of McClellan upon Richmond, and was placed in position at Dam No. 1, he shared in the dangerous service of the command under the enemy's guns for five or six days. When Johnston fell back to Williamsburg the battery was again warmly engaged at that place, and subsequently fell back to the lines around Richmond. In the advance which followed, and the effective attacks upon the Federal positions at Frayser's farm and Malvern Hill, Private Wingo did faithful service, and then, the "on to Richmond" movement having been entirely abandoned, he enjoyed with his command a season of rest and recuperation, until the Maryland campaign. Accompanying a section of his battery he moved to the Potomac, crossed at Leesburg into Maryland, and moved over the Catoctin mountains into Pleasant valley, opposite Harper's Ferry, where they lay for twenty-four hours hemmed in by the enemy, but finally crossed without inconvenience into Virginia, and participated in the attack on Harper's Ferry and the capture of the Federal army at that post. Thence he moved to Sharpsburg, Md., and participated in the desperate fighting of September 17, 1862, receiving severe wounds in the leg and arm, which disabled him for further active service. Returning home when he was sufficiently recovered, he was detailed as enrolling officer for Amelia county, and served in that capacity until the army of General Lee passed through that county on its retreat from Richmond, when he joined in the movement to Appomattox and there participated in the capitulation. At the return of peace Mr. Wingo removed to Richmond and has ever since been occupied in mercantile affairs at that city. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp, Confederate Veterans, and of the Howitzer association. In 1894 he received from Governor O'Ferrall the high compliment of appointment to the staff, with rank of colonel, in the Virginia militia.

George Wise, of Alexandria, Va., was born at that city in 1840, and there became a member, in the fall of 1860, of the Old Dominion Rifles, subsequently part of a battalion commanded by Maj. M. D. Corse. In the spring of 1861 the Rifles became Company H of the Seventeenth Virginia infantry, and he entered the active service as a corporal and was soon promoted sergeant. Upon the organization of Corse's brigade in November, 1862, Sergeant Wise became ordnance-sergeant of the Seventeenth regiment. In December, 1863, he was transferred to the First regiment, engineer troops, Col. T. M. R. Talcott commanding, as sergeant of Company G. In this capacity he was in charge of the engineering work and location of guns on that part of the Petersburg lines including Colquitt's, Gracie's and Elliott's salients, during a large part of the fall of 1864, and superintended the countermining against the Federals. Under orders from General Lee he mapped a large section including Fort Clifton and the Howlett line, also, one month before the evacuation of Petersburg and Richmond, copied the various orders prepared by General Lee in contemplation of such an emergency. On Friday preceding the

evacuation he bore dispatches to the companies in charge of pontoon trains on the Staunton river, and was with the trains when news arrived of the capitulation at Appomattox. The pontoon escort then separated with orders to individually join the army in North Carolina, but en route Sergeant Wise was advised by Confederate officers to apply for parole at the nearest Federal post, which he did. Mr. Wise is a member of R. E. Lee camp, No. 3, of Alexandria. He is the author of the history of the Seventeenth Virginia regiment, also of a work entitled, "The Johnny Rebs of the Army of Northern Virginia."

George Douglas Wise, an eminent lawyer of Richmond, Va., who was distinguished alike in the military service of the Confederate States and as a representative, since the war, in the Congress of the United States, was born in Accomack county, Va., in 1835. His father, Tully Wise, also a native of Accomack county, was a prosperous planter, who, though educated for the law, never practiced that profession, but was prominent in politics, sat in the legislature and served as auditor of the treasury department of the United States. At the age of twelve years he accompanied his parents to Washington, D. C., where he held for a time the position of page in the House. He subsequently entered the university of Indiana, where he was graduated in 1853. Then taking up the study of law, he was graduated professionally by William and Mary college in 1857. Returning to Washington he continued his studies and was admitted to the bar, but upon the secession of Virginia he abandoned his professional career and returned to Richmond. Thence he proceeded to Montgomery, Ala., then the capital of the Confederate States, and received from President Davis a commission as lieutenant in the regular army. Reporting to Gen. R. E. Lee at Richmond he was sent to Gen. J. E. Johnston, at Harper's Ferry, and by him assigned to the First Kentucky infantry, with which he served in the Virginia campaigns of the following year. He was then temporarily attached to the command of Gen. H. A. Wise, on the James river, near Drewry's Bluff, where he served until after the Seven Days' battles. The remainder of his military career was in the Western army, upon the staff of Maj.-Gen. Carter L. Stevenson, being promoted from lieutenant to captain and finally to inspector-general of the division. He participated in the Virginia battles of Dranesville and Malvern Hill; in the Vicksburg campaign took part in the fight at Baker's Creek and all the engagements at and around the besieged city, and bore to General Johnston the last dispatches sent out by General Pemberton, leaving Vicksburg June 20, 1863. After this he joined the army besieging Chattanooga, and served in the subsequent engagements of Lookout Mountain, Missionary Ridge, Dalton, Crow Valley, and Resaca. At the latter severe action he fell with a gunshot wound that disabled him for about three months. Upon his recovery he found the army under Hood, entering upon the Tennessee campaign, and in this he participated, fighting at Columbia, Franklin, Nashville, and all the actions on the retreat to Columbia, Tenn. At the last he rendered efficient service with the forces gathered under General Johnston, and fought at Bentonville, N. C., March 19-21, 1865, afterward joining in the capitulation at Greensboro. Then returning to Richmond he began the practice of law, and at once rose to prominence at the



GEORGE D. WISE

bar. By successive re-elections he filled the office of commonwealth attorney from 1870 to 1880. Elected to Congress from the Third district of Virginia in 1880, he was returned by his constituents without interruption until 1894. During this service he held membership in the most important committees, such as those on naval affairs, foreign affairs, rivers and harbors, military affairs, merchant marine and fisheries, and in the Forty-ninth Congress was chairman of the committee on manufactures. During the Fifty-second and Fifty-third Congresses he was chairman of the committee on interstate and foreign commerce. Captain Wise cherishes his comradeship with the survivors of the Confederate armies, and maintains memberships in the R. E. Lee and George E. Pickett camps, of Richmond.

Lieutenant Henry A. Wise, superintendent of the public schools of Baltimore, is a Virginian by birth and rearing, and during the war served with the forces in the field, as well as in other capacities, though not yet in years having attained his majority at the close of the struggle. He was born in Accomack county, Va., May 18, 1844, and passed the years of childhood in Princess Anne county and at Norfolk, where he attended the Norfolk academy. Thence he entered the Virginia military institute, at Lexington, and was there as a student when the war, became imminent. In April, 1861, he went with the other students to Richmond to report for duty in the service of the State, and was assigned to the work of drilling volunteers, an occupation which he continued subsequently at Ashland, and in western Virginia. He was commissioned in May, 1861, as first lieutenant and adjutant of the Forty-sixth Virginia regiment of infantry, and served with the command in the early operations in West Virginia, where he participated in several skirmishes. In February, 1862, he participated in the defense of Roanoke island, and was captured with a large number of the troops, and held there two or three weeks, after which he was paroled. He then proceeded to the Virginia military institute, and received the appointment of assistant professor of mathematics, Latin and tactics, as which he served during the major part of the war period. At one time he was appointed adjutant of a battalion of scouts and guides under command of Col. John H. Richardson, and attached to the headquarters of General Lee, but in this capacity never served, remaining at the institute. In the spring of 1864, when General Breckinridge collected a body of men to reinforce General Imboden in the valley of Virginia, he called out the full corps of cadets at Lexington, to the number of over two hundred, who marched under the command of Col. Scott Shipp, commandant, to the battlefield of New Market. Here Professor Wise commanded Company A with the rank of captain, V. M. I. cadets, and when Colonel Shipp was wounded took command. For several hours they successfully engaged, with their supports, the troops of General Sigel, and finally made a gallant charge against a battery of six guns. The boys made their way through a deep gulch, grown with underbrush, in advance of their support, the Sixty-second regiment, and formed their lines, under Captain Wise's commands, standing steady in the face of a destructive fire. Then they charged and drove the Federals from the position, capturing the guns, but with severe loss. Captain Wise escaped unhurt, though eight or ten bullets pierced his

clothing. About a month before the fall of Richmond he reported for duty with the battery of Capt. John Donnell Smith, in which he had received a commission as lieutenant, and in that capacity he took part in the subsequent engagements of the battery, serving on the lines near the Howlett House and at Sailor's Creek, and being present at Appomattox Court House, where he was surrendered with General Lee's army. After this event he repaired to Princess Anne county, Va., and found employment on a farm for two or three months, afterward teaching school for a year. Deciding to make his career in this profession he went to Norfolk and was for three years an instructor in the academy there. In 1870 he removed to Baltimore, and became principal of the male grammar school, No. 4, and after six years' service was appointed assistant superintendent of the public schools of the city. In 1883 he was promoted to the position of superintendent, and during the long period which has elapsed he has continued to efficiently discharge the duties of that office. He is an active member of the society of the Army and Navy, of Maryland. It should be noted in closing that Professor Wise is the descendant of men distinguished in military service, his maternal grandfather, Col. John Finney, having served in the war of 1812, and his great-grandfather, Gen. John Cropper, having held that rank in the Continental army.

Colonel Peyton Wise, a distinguished officer of the army of Northern Virginia, and since the war prominent in the business and public affairs of Richmond, was born in Accomack county, February 9, 1838. His father was Tully R. Wise, his mother Margaret D. P. Wise, a sister of Gov. Henry A. Wise. At an early age he was taken by his family to Washington, D. C., where his father had been appointed to high public service, and he was reared and given his academic education at the national capital. In later youth he went to Philadelphia and entered as a law student the office of one of the most distinguished members of the bar of that city. As he was thus engaged in preparation for a life career the crisis of 1861 arrived, and true and loyal to his State, he promptly returned to the land of his nativity and the home of his kindred, ready to undergo any sacrifice for its defense. Going into Goochland county, which he had never previously visited, his ability as an organizer and strength as a leader were soon manifested by the speedy raising of a company which was mustered into the service July 3, 1861, as Company H of the Forty-sixth Virginia regiment of infantry, in the command of Brig.-Gen. Henry A. Wise. He was introduced to the activities of war in the West Virginia campaign under the general command of Robert E. Lee, his regiment operating in the Kanawha region. Thence he returned to Richmond to participate in the battle of Seven Pines and the Seven Days' battles on the peninsula. Subsequently he took part in the Roanoke Island campaign, in the defense of Charleston under Beauregard, and in the defense of the Petersburg lines during the siege of 1864-65. At the reorganization of the army in 1862 he was promoted major of the Forty-sixth regiment, and in 1863 was again promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. During a great part of the remainder of the war he was in command of his regiment. During the fighting before Petersburg he was severely wounded, and on the first day after his return to duty in October, 1864, he was captured by the



PEYTON WISE

enemy. Subsequently he was held as a prisoner of war six weeks at Washington, and three and a half months at Fort Delaware. He was then paroled, but never being exchanged, was not able to render any further active service to the Confederate cause. At the time of the surrender of Johnston's army he was at Greensboro, and he thence returned to Richmond, where he made his home ever afterward. Being compelled by stress of circumstances to abandon his cherished career in the legal profession, he at once embarked in mercantile business, and presently became one of the most prominent merchants of the city, at the same time being active in public affairs for the best interest of the municipality and the commonwealth. In 1888 he retired from business life, and since then his activities have been all in public affairs. He was known as General Peyton through his connection with the State military organization, being appointed in 1870 by Gov. G. C. Walker as ranking major-general of the State militia. He also held the rank of general in the United Confederate Veterans' association, as a member of the staff of General Gordon. His membership was in R. E. Lee camp, No. 1, of Richmond. As chairman of the local committee of arrangements for the Confederate Veterans' reunion at Richmond in 1896, he contributed largely to the success of that important assembly. He was also one of the organizers of the Jefferson Davis monument association. On several memorable occasions he demonstrated remarkable ability as an eloquent and forceful public speaker. General Wise was married several years after the war to Laura, daughter of Gen. R. L. Chilton. On March 29, 1897, though General Wise had not yet reached the age of sixty years, his life of generous activity and chivalrous honor was cut short by death.

William N. Wise, of Leesburg, who came out of the war in his twenty-first year as a veteran of the celebrated Black Horse cavalry, was born in Alexandria, Va., August 6, 1844. In his youth, during the years of peace immediately preceding the great struggle, he was sent to the Hallowell school at Stanmore, Md., and was a student there at the outbreak of the war. In 1863 he left school, unable longer to resist his longing to share in the dangers and exciting experiences of his brethren of the Old Dominion, and waded across the Potomac to the soil of his native State to avoid the difficulty of passing the Federal lines. On May 20, 1863, he enlisted in the Confederate service as a private in Company H of the Fourth Virginia cavalry, popularly known as the Black Horse troop, and in this command served throughout the remainder of the war. Among the many engagements in which he took an honorable part were two affairs at Brandy Station, Aldie, Shepherdstown, Stevensburg, the Wilderness, Yellow Tavern, Trevilian's, White House, Hawe's Shop, the engagements on Wilson's raid, Winchester, Front Royal, Waynesboro, Bridgewater, Tom's Brook, Cedar Creek, the Moorefield raid, Five Forks, Farmville, High Bridge, and Appomattox Court House. Before the surrender the brigade cut its way through the Federal lines and moved to Lynchburg, where the command was disbanded. After his return to Loudoun county he was appointed clerk of the circuit court, and after four and a half years of this service he was appointed commissioner in chancery, a position he still occupies. Mr. Wise is an active member of Clinton-Hatcher camp, occupy-

ing the position of adjutant. He is prominent in the Masonic order, of the rank of past master, and is a communicant of the Presbyterian church.

Colonel Elijah Benton Withers, late of Danville, was born in Caswell county, N. C., December 31, 1836, the son of Hon. Elijah K. Withers, a planter of Caswell county, who served in both branches of the legislature of North Carolina and died in 1871. His mother was Nancy B., daughter of Rev. David Lawson, a clergyman of the Baptist church. Colonel Withers was graduated in the university of North Carolina in 1850, and studied law under Judge William H. Battle and Samuel F. Phillips, afterward solicitor-general of the United States. He began the practice of his profession at Yanceyville, N. C., in the fall of 1860. At the first threat of war between the States he became a member of the Yanceyville Grays, and with it entered the Confederate service in May, 1861. The command became Company A of the Third North Carolina volunteers, later designated as the Thirteenth North Carolina infantry, Col. W. D. Pender. At the reorganization in 1862 he was elected captain, subsequently was promoted major and finally lieutenant-colonel in the latter part of 1863. He participated in the battle of Williamsburg, in command of one of the companies stationed at the old revolutionary breastworks, and witnessed the sanguinary conflict with bayonets in which three companies of the Thirteenth lost sixty-nine killed and wounded; fought at Seven Pines, and then was disabled by illness until the Maryland campaign, in which he took part in the battles of Boonsboro and Sharpsburg. At the latter fight a shell struck in front of him, penetrated the ground beneath him and exploded, stunning him so that his legs were completely paralyzed for a day or more. His next battle was Fredericksburg. At Chancellorsville Captain Withers was detailed by General Pender to take command of the Twenty-second North Carolina regiment during the absence of its colonel, a high testimonial of confidence in his soldierly ability. With promotion to major he served in the Pennsylvania campaign and was severely wounded in the first day's battle at Gettysburg, after which he was disabled for four months. He took part in all the battles of 1864 from the Wilderness to Petersburg. On the Petersburg lines, one day, having posted two companies to fortify a position to protect the withdrawal of Cooke's brigade, he and his adjutant, T. L. Rawley, on their return were summoned to surrender, and refusing were exposed to the fire of about seventy-five Federal soldiers, but fortunately escaped unhurt. He was in the war to the end and with Lee at Appomattox. Then resuming the practice of law in North Carolina, he was elected to the legislature in 1870, and to the constitutional convention in 1875. Since the fall of 1876 he was engaged in the practice of law at Danville, Va. For three terms he held the position of commander of Cabell-Graves camp, Confederate Veterans, until his death, which occurred on April 23, 1898, at his home in Danville. He was married in 1863 to Mary Price, who died in 1868, and in 1875 he married Lemma Price. The eldest of his five children, Eugene Withers, a member of the Virginia State senate, was his partner in law practice, and since his father's death continues the affairs of the firm.

Colonel Robert Enoch Withers, of Wytheville, distinguished in

the military history of Virginia as commander of the Eighteenth Virginia infantry, was born in Campbell county, September 18, 1821. In 1861 his home was at Danville, where he entered the Confederate service as major of a battalion composed of the Danville Blues and Danville Grays, two gallant volunteer companies. When he joined Beauregard's army he was appointed colonel of the Eighteenth Virginia infantry regiment and assigned to Cocke's brigade. He was first stationed with his regiment at Fairfax Court House, then fell back to Bull Run, and on the morning of July 21st was stationed on the Federal side of the run, at Ball's Ford. Thence he moved his command to the left to meet the Federal flank attack, and joining in a gallant charge, his men captured a battery of the enemy and turned it against the foe, contributing in no slight degree to the great victory. He went into the battle of Gainesville, July, 1862, in the brigade of General Pickett, which made a direct assault upon the enemy's works, and while leading his regiment in the attack he fell severely wounded by a shot through the lungs. General Longstreet, who wrote in his official report that "there was more individual gallantry displayed upon this field than any I have ever seen," mentioned Colonel Withers as "conspicuous among the gallant officers." The wound he received prevented further service in the field. He was assigned to the invalid corps, and put in charge of the post at Danville, where he remained until the close of the war. He then edited the Lynchburg Daily News until he was nominated for governor of Virginia by the conservative party. He made a canvass of the State, advocating the defeat of the Underwood constitution. Later it was decided to withdraw the ticket which he headed in favor of the one led by Gilbert C. Walker, which was elected. Through the efforts of the party which he led in this fight, the objectionable features of the proposed constitution were eliminated before adoption. At the next State election he was chosen lieutenant-governor, and by the succeeding legislature was elected United States senator. In that position he served from 1875 to 1881. During the first administration of President Cleveland he was consul for the United States at Hong Kong. Senator Withers was married February 3, 1876, to Miss Mary Virginia Byrd.

Captain Henry Wood, a prominent attorney of Mecklenburg county, is a native of that county, born in 1844, the son of Henry Wood, a well-known attorney and representative of Amelia county in the State legislature. He was educated at the Virginia military institute, which he left at the age of seventeen years to enter the Confederate service. He assisted in the organization and was elected second lieutenant of a company which was mustered in in August, 1861, and attached to the Second North Carolina battalion, and at the reorganization in 1862 was transferred and designated as Company G of the Fifty-ninth Virginia regiment, brigade of General Wise, Wood then being elected captain. His first year's service was rendered on the peninsula. Under General Wise he took part in the battle of Roanoke Island, February 8, 1862, was captured, and was not exchanged until August, 1862, after which he was on duty at Charleston, S. C., and in Florida, under General Beauregard, until March, 1864, when his regiment was called northward for the defense of Petersburg. He fought against Butler at Drewry's Bluff, and during the subsequent siege

of Petersburg was on the lines between that city and Richmond, also taking part in the battle of the Crater with Johnson's division, in which he was slightly wounded in the head, and the fight at Burgess' Mill, in both of which he commanded his regiment. He was in the battle of Five Forks, and at Sailor's Creek was wounded, being then taken to his home. His service was gallant and devoted, and he was recommended for promotion to lieutenant-colonel by Col. William B. Tabb, but the close of the war prevented his receipt of the commission. After the close of hostilities he studied law and engaged in practice with his father until the latter's death in 1885, since when he has continued in his professional work alone. He has served one term as commonwealth's attorney for Charlotte county, and held the office of judge of Mecklenburg county from 1874 to 1880. In 1869 he was married to Mary J., daughter of Dr. Richard Wood, and granddaughter of Richard Sampson, of Goochland, Va. She died in 1873, leaving one son, Cabell Sampson Wood, and in 1878 he married Sallie L. Morton, by whom he has six children. Two brothers of Judge Wood served in the army of Northern Virginia: John S., captain of Company G, Thirty-eighth Virginia regiment, and Lieut.-Col. W. W. Wood, of the Fourteenth Virginia regiment.

Lieutenant Henry C. Woodhouse, a gallant officer of the Twelfth Virginia infantry regiment, of the Confederate States army, was born at Norfolk, Va., September 13, 1835, the descendant of a line of Virginians of distinguished origin. His father, William Woodhouse, was born March 12, 1799, married Ann Maria Spangler September 17, 1829, and died April 18, 1878. Jonathan Woodhouse, father of the latter, was born in 1749, married Ann Barnes and died in 1824. His father, William Woodhouse, was married to a Miss Pembroke and died in 1774. His father, Henry Woodhouse, married Elizabeth Dawley and died in 1719. His father, William Woodhouse, married Jean Dawley and died in 1700. His father, Henry Woodhouse, settled in lower Norfolk county, now Princess Anne county, some time prior to the year 1647, served in the Virginia house of burgesses, and died in 1655. The latter was the son of Sir Henry Woodhouse, governor of Bermuda, who married Anne Bacon, daughter of Sir Nicholas Bacon, and half-sister of Francis Bacon, Baron Verulam, Viscount St. Albans, and lord chancellor of England. Ann Maria Spangler, mother of Lieutenant Woodhouse, was the daughter of Isaac Spangler, a resident of Baltimore who was stationed at Fortress Monroe in the government employ. Lieutenant Woodhouse, after receiving his education at Norfolk, found employment in the trade of a plasterer until the outbreak of the war. Then, on May 8, 1861, he enlisted as a second sergeant in Company H of the Twelfth Virginia regiment of infantry, commanded by Capt. Finley Ferguson. His first service was at Boush's Bluff, where he remained about eight months, and had some experience in fighting while locating batteries at Sewell's Point. Rejoining his regiment in the entrenched camp, he remained there until the evacuation of the city in May, 1862, when he accompanied his regiment to Petersburg, and thence to battlefields before Richmond, where he participated in the hard fighting at French's Farm, Frayser's Farm and Malvern Hill. Subsequently he took part in the battles of Second Manassas, Crampton's Gap, Md., and all the minor ac-

tions of his command, and helped to hold the line at Fredericksburg in December. In 1863 he was in the battles of Chancellorsville, Salem Church, Gettysburg, Bristoe Station, Mine Run, and he participated in the desperate fighting of 1864 through the Wilderness, and in the action at Shady Grove received a wound in the foot that seriously disabled him. He spent some time on this account in the Seabrook and Chimborazo hospitals at Richmond, and was then brought before the examining board of surgeons and declared disabled for further duty. During this arduous service Mr. Woodhouse rose by promotion to first sergeant, and later to first lieutenant, all of which he richly deserved. After the surrender he returned to Norfolk, where he began his trade again, and has become one of the leading contractors in the city. He contracted for the plastering of the Epworth Methodist church of Norfolk, a notable building, and several of the handsomest houses in Ghent. Lieutenant Woodhouse was married in 1864 to Columbia, a daughter of Page Eley, of Nansemond county, and they have four children: Annie Lee, Harry E., Charles H., Frank E. The latter served in the volunteer army of 1898 in Company E, Fourth Virginia regiment infantry, under Fitzhugh Lee. In social life he is a member of the Methodist church; of the Odd Fellows and Knights of Pythias, and past commander of Pickett-Buchanan camp, U. C. V.

John J. Woodhouse, a prominent member of the legal profession and judge of Princess Anne county, is a native of that county. He rendered faithful service in the cause of the South until disability on account of illness compelled his honorable discharge. He has held the office of clerk of the courts, and is now judge of the Princess Anne county court. His wife, a daughter of William McKenney, was born at Washington, D. C. Her father was a dentist by profession, and during the war commanded Company C of the Sixth Virginia regiment, familiarly known as "McKenney's Eye Teeth." Judge Woodhouse and family lived in Norfolk for several years, but removed from Norfolk to Princess Anne county in 1869, and their son, William McK. Woodhouse, now a well-known lawyer of Norfolk (born at the latter city, August 19, 1860), was there reared upon a farm. In 1884 he began a service of four years as deputy clerk under his father, during which period he also pursued the study of law. In 1888 he was admitted to practice in Princess Anne county, and he remained there engaged in the work of his profession until 1894, when he opened an office at Norfolk. He is now a member of the legal firm of Judson & Woodhouse, and in the enjoyment of a lucrative practice, and a worthy position professionally and socially. His residence is at Berkley, near the city of Norfolk. He is a member of the Knights of Pythias and Red Men, is clerk and member of the official body of the Baptist church, and takes an active interest in the organization of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, as a member of the Junior camp of Berkley. On March 28, 1889, he was married to Bettie F. Duke, a native of North Carolina, and they have four children.

Major John Thomas Woodhouse, a representative of an ancient Virginian family, who served with honor on many bloody fields with the army of Northern Virginia, was born at White Hall, the family estate, in Princess Anne county, April 15, 1838. His family originated in England, where in the sixteenth century an ancestor,

Sir Henry Woodhouse, married Ann, the daughter of Sir Nicholas Bacon, keeper of records and seals, and the sister of Francis Bacon, Lord Verulam. In Virginia the line was founded by Henry Woodhouse, son of Henry Woodhouse, governor of the Bermudas. The son of William Woodhouse was Capt. Thomas Woodhouse, who owned and navigated a ship between New York and Liverpool. Capt. John Woodhouse, a son of the latter, and father of Major Woodhouse, was born in Princess Anne October 1, 1811, and died there January 15, 1869, having been occupied throughout life as a planter, also serving in the State troops as captain, in the legislature two terms and as magistrate twenty years. It may be said of the family that it has been distinguished in both the military and civil history of the State. The great-grandfather of Major Woodhouse, with his brothers, served in the Continental army, and he suffered the hardships of a prisoner of war upon a British ship. Several members of the family participated in the war of 1812, among them H. B. Woodhouse, who was afterward a brigadier-general of the State forces. Capt. John Woodhouse married Eliza Ann Woodhouse, born August 11, 1811, died October 22, 1895. Major Woodhouse, the only child which they reared, was educated in the military academy at Norfolk, and was preparing for a legal career as a student at William and Mary college when the crisis of 1861 led him to enter the military service of the State. In May, 1861, he was appointed by Governor Letcher a captain of infantry in the Twentieth regiment, Ninth brigade, Fourth division, Virginia militia. As soon as Virginia was united with the Confederate States he organized Company G of the Sixteenth Virginia infantry, which was assigned to Mahone's brigade of Anderson's division. He served in command of this company until March 16, 1863, when he was commissioned major of the regiment, a promotion richly deserved by gallant service. His record embraces nearly all the great campaigns and battles of the army of Northern Virginia, including the engagements at White Oak Swamp and Malvern Hill before Richmond, Second Manassas, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Salem Church, Bristoe Station, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania Court House, Po River, North Anna River, Cold Harbor, and the encounters on the Weldon railroad and at the Crater before Petersburg. He was wounded at Malvern Hill and at Gettysburg, and at the Crater received such serious injuries that he was entirely disabled, and was honorably retired from active service March 8, 1865. He did not leave the hospital at Richmond until June, 1865, when he returned to his home, where for several years he was restricted to such occupations as the constant use of crutches permitted. During this period he served as commissioner in chancery and member of the board of supervisors. In 1869 he was able to direct his farming operations, and finally recovering his strength he has for a quarter of a century been actively engaged in the management of the White Hall plantation. He has also since 1874 conducted the office of county treasurer, to which he was elected in that year, and has been consecutively re-elected. He is a member of Pickett-Buchanan camp, of Norfolk, and prominent in the Masonic order and Knights of Honor. Of the ancient Eastern Shore chapel, Lynnhaven Parish, of which Henry Woodhouse was a vestryman 257 years ago, he and two kinsmen, Judge

John J. Woodhouse and Jonathan Woodhouse, are now vestrymen. He was married August 16, 1871, to Virginia Elizabeth, daughter of James M. and Delia K. (Drayton) Whitehurst, and they have two children: John Paul, born June 20, 1875, educated at William and Mary college and the university of Virginia, and now a student of law, and Grace Arlington, born April 30, 1878, a graduate of Norfolk college for young ladies, and an artist of talent.

Harry Wooding, an eminent citizen of Danville, Va., is a native of that city, and the son of Col. William H. Wooding, who represented Pittsylvania county in the general assembly both as senator and member of the lower house. He left school in the spring of 1861 to enlist as a private in the Danville Grays, which became Company B, Eighteenth Virginia infantry. As sergeant of this company he served at the first battle of Manassas. At the reorganization he was transferred to Company C, Fifth Virginia cavalry, Col. T. L. Rosser, with which he served during the remainder of the war, taking part in many battles, including the cavalry fighting during the Maryland campaign, the Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville campaigns, the Gettysburg campaign, the Bristoe and Mine Run and Wilderness campaigns, Yellow Tavern, the battles about Richmond and the Shenandoah valley campaign. Throughout his career he was distinguished by intrepidity and devotion. In his report of the fight at Kelly's Ford in March, 1863, Gen. Fitzhugh Lee reported among those deserving mention: "Private Henry Wooding, Company C (especially commended), seized the colors when the horse of the color-bearer was shot and carried them bravely through the fight." For several years after the war he served as captain of the Danville Grays, and he is now first lieutenant-commander of Cabell-Graves camp. His public services as member of the city council, president of the chamber of commerce, chairman of the Democratic executive committee, and mayor of the city for three terms, have been of great value. He is also widely known in the State as past grand chancellor of the Knights of Pythias. By his marriage in 1873 to Ella Coleman he has three children living.

Lieutenant Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, since 1893 brigadier-general commanding the Second brigade, Virginia division, United Confederate veterans of the United States, was born at Holkham, his father's home, in Albemarle county, May 17, 1844. He entered the military service of Virginia at the age of seventeen years as volunteer aide on the staff of Gen. John B. Floyd, serving in that capacity in the West Virginia campaign of 1861, and participating in the battles of Cross Lanes and Carnifax Ferry. He was at the side of General Floyd when he was wounded in the latter battle. As soon as he had attained military age, in May, 1862, he joined the Albemarle light horse, Company K of Munford's old regiment, the Second Virginia cavalry, and as a private trooper, took part in the battles of Port Republic, the cavalry operations at Malvern Hill, the battles of the Second Manassas campaign and Stuart's raid to the rear of Pope's army, Crampton's Gap and Sharpsburg—campaigns and battles in which his company suffered severe losses. In October, 1862, General Floyd, having been put in command of the Virginia State line, operating in southwestern Virginia, asked the secretary of war for the assign-

ment of Private Woods to his staff, which was accordingly made, and Woods was commissioned first lieutenant of cavalry by Governor Letcher. He served as adjutant-general of the First brigade of Floyd's command, participating in the engagements near Prestonsburg and Pikesville, Ky., in the winter of 1862, and until the disbandment of the State line in April, 1863. He was then elected and commissioned first lieutenant of Jackson's battery of horse artillery attached to Jenkins' cavalry brigade. With this command he fought in the action near Harrisburg and the battle of Gettysburg in 1863, and at Hanover Junction, Totopotomoy, Second Cold Harbor, Lynchburg, New Market, Lewisburg, Droop Mountain, Winchester and Fisher's Hill, in 1864. At the time of the surrender of the army his battery was stationed in southwest Virginia with Johnson's battery, and they remained organized, not being aware of the condition of affairs, until a week or more after April 9th. At Gettysburg Lieutenant Woods was slightly wounded by a shell, and at Second Cold Harbor he received a scratch from a minie ball, but neither injury required him to leave the field. Since the close of hostilities he has been prominent in the legal profession, has served for twenty-seven years as attorney for the commonwealth in Albemarle county, for four years has been a member of the board of visitors of the university of Virginia, and has filled many positions of trust and honor in the State. He has always been highly regarded by his old comrades in arms. In 1883 he was elected captain of the old "Monticello Guards," of Charlottesville, who made a gallant record in Pickett's division, and he has been one of the foremost in the organization of the Confederate veterans. He was commissioned in 1893 as brigadier-general of the Second brigade in the Virginia division of United Confederate veterans, and as such has commanded a brigade of veterans in the great veteran assemblages at Richmond, Nashville and Atlanta. Besides holding this position in the United Confederate Veterans' association, he is now the commander of the John Bowie Strange camp, C. V., at Charlottesville, Va.

Lindsay Woodson, of Albemarle county, in the time of trial was faithful to Virginia, and his family added new deeds of lustre to the honorable record of the lineage which began in America with the coming of Dr. John Woodson to Virginia in 1624. An ancestor in the Revolutionary period, Tarleton Woodson, served as a major in the continental army, and while on duty in New York was captured by the British. In the same State he was married, and after the war he made his home in Prince Edward county, Va., and became prominent in public affairs, frequently representing his county in the State legislature, and serving as major-general of State militia. Another ancestor, Silas Woodson, held the office of governor of Virginia. Samuel Hughes Woodson, of the Kentucky branch of the family, served in Congress from 1821 to 1825. Many other positions of honor have been held by members of the family, which is one of the most distinguished in the land. It is connected also with other famous families. The mother of Thomas Jefferson was Jane Woodson, and there are close connections with the Randolphs and Tuckers of Virginia. Lindsay Woodson married Pemelia Kinsolving Garland, daughter of Clifton Garland, an attorney and man of wealth, and his wife, Mary

Kinsolving, a descendant of one of the oldest families of Virginia. At the beginning of the war of the Confederacy he was too aged to fight in the field, but he served in the reserve organization, and to the army at the front gave his sons, James Kinsolving Woodson, Iverson Lewis Woodson, and Daniel Perkins Woodson, all of whom were members of Company K, Nineteenth Virginia infantry, Pickett's division. The first, one of the most daring of soldiers, was lost at the battle of Sharpsburg. The third was wounded on the head at Hatcher's Run, while obeying orders to carry a message to his colonel through a deadly fire. A younger son, Charles Edward Woodson, born in Albemarle county in 1861, is now rector of St. Peter's Episcopal church, Norfolk. After several years of study in his youth, and graduation in the preparatory school, he entered the theological school of Virginia, where he was graduated in 1889. After seven years' ministry at the Emmanuel church, Franklin, he was called to his present work at Norfolk. He was married in 1890 to Jane McGregor Ashby, daughter of Col. Turner Wade Ashby, and his wife, Elizabeth McGregor, a daughter of William McGregor, a native of Scotland. Her father, who earned his title in the Mexican war, was a first cousin of the lamented Gen. Turner Ashby.

Captain John W. H. Wrenn, of the Third Virginia infantry, now residing at Berkley, Va., was born at Portsmouth, January 10, 1827. He is the son of Thomas P. and Sarah (Cherry) Wrenn, both natives of Virginia, who died during the yellow fever scourge of 1855. He followed the craft of a boat builder in his youth, and was educated at the Portsmouth military institute. For twelve years prior to the war he was connected with the military service of the State, becoming first lieutenant of the Portsmouth Rifle company in 1848, and subsequently holding the positions of acting adjutant of the Third regiment, Virginia militia, and captain of Company B of the same regiment. He entered the Confederate service in April, 1861, with the Portsmouth Rifle company, which was attached to the Ninth Virginia regiment, and later in the year he was elected captain of Company B of the Third regiment, formerly known as the Virginia Riflemen. He commanded his company, in Colston's brigade (afterward Pryor's), in Longstreet's division in the engagements at Dam No. 1, Williamsburg, Seven Pines, and the Seven Days' campaign. In 1864 he was relieved from further service on account of physical disability, and by the time he had regained his health the war had come to a close. He resided at Portsmouth until 1869, and since then at Berkley, where he has a comfortable home. For many years he followed the business of real estate and insurance with much success. Since 1889 he has held the position of ferry collector. He is one of the charter members of Pickett-Buchanan camp, United Confederate veterans, of Norfolk. Captain Wrenn was married in 1849 to Mary E. Brent, who died in 1870, and in 1890 he was united to his present wife, Mary E. Parker. He has one son living.

James P. Yancey, of Richmond, one of the gallant survivors of the First Richmond Howitzers, now prominent in business circles of the Virginia capital, was born in Albemarle county, Va., in 1834. He was reared and educated in that county. In April, 1861, he entered the military service of the Confederate States as a private in the First Richmond Howitzers, with which he served throughout the entire war. Among the battles in which he participated are those at Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Savage Station, both the first and second battles at Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, and the final campaigns. He was paroled at Richmond in the fall of 1865. Making his home at that city he has in the subsequent years of peace achieved notable success in his enterprises and a high standing in the community.

Lieutenant Charles Edward Yeatman, of Norfolk, who held official rank in both the army and navy of the Confederate States, was born in Matthews county, Va., April 26, 1828. He was of a family of honorable record, both in Virginia and in England. The head of the family in the old country at present is Hayshe Yeatman, bishop of Southwark, the late major-general, Sir Yeatman Biggs, K. C. B., head of the British military in Calcutta, having died without issue. Charles C. Yeatman's great-grandfather, John Patterson, of Poplar Grove, Matthews county, Va., was a Revolutionary soldier, and fought at the battle of Monmouth, where his brother lost his life in the cause of freedom. His grandfather, Thomas Muse Yeatman, a lawyer of repute, being a graduate of William and Mary college, and a law student in the office of William Wirt, married Elizabeth Tabb Patterson, daughter of John Patterson, of Poplar Grove, who served for many years as clerk of Matthews county, an office in which he was succeeded by his son-in-law, Thomas R. Yeatman. Lieutenant Yeatman was reared after the age of six years in Gloucester county at the home of his guardian and brother-in-law, Josiah L. Deans, and was educated at the Virginia military institute, and graduated in 1849. He was of the "49ers" who went to California, being one of a party of seventy-five who purchased the sailing ship Glenmore and sailed via Cape Horn to California. After three years in the land of gold he returned via the isthmus, and in 1854 began a career in railroad employment by becoming a baggage master on the old Virginia & Tennessee railroad. Promoted to passenger conductor, he served on different roads, being the first passenger conductor on the Richmond & York River road. Early in 1861 he was appointed lieutenant in the Virginia army, but was instructed by General Lee to continue his duties upon the York River road, then used chiefly for military purposes. After the secession of the State, he was appointed acting master in the navy of the Confederate States, in which capacity he served about two months under Capt. Thomas Jefferson Page at the West Point navy yard. Subsequently and until the evacuation of Norfolk, and the consequent reduction of the naval commissions, he served as purchasing agent for the navy yards in Virginia, under Capt. John Maury. After this he was commissioned a lieutenant in the army and served under Col. T. J. Page as ordnance officer at Chaffin's bluff, until May, 1863, meanwhile participating in the first engagement at Drewry's bluff, one mile above them on the James river.

In May, 1863, being commissioned a lieutenant in the Confederate States navy, he reported to Admiral Buchanan at Mobile, and was assigned to the steamer *Baltic*, commanded by James Douglas Johnston, where he served as executive officer four months. Subsequently he served several months on ordnance duty under John R. Eggleston, and then took part in the effort to complete the new gunboat *Nashville* in time to participate in the defense of Mobile. The work progressed night and day for a fortnight, and the officers and crew, seeing they would be too late, begged to be given fighting orders, but the admiral insisted that the completion of the *Nashville* would be the greatest aid they could render. The work was finished, but on the evacuation the *Nashville* was destroyed and Lieutenant Yeatman, with the other officers and crew, escaped up the Tombigbee, subsequently surrendering at Owen's bluff to Admiral Thackeray. This body of prisoners was transported from Mobile to Old Point Comfort on the Rhode Island. Just before reaching their destination they learned from a passing boat that President Davis had been captured and was a prisoner at Old Point. The applause of the Federals on board was promptly suppressed by the officers out of respect for their prisoners. On reaching the Point they found that President Davis had not yet landed, and they were disembarked first. They then, some three hundred strong, selected General Ruggles as their commander, and marched in files to a point which Mr. Davis would pass on the way to prison. As he walked by, with irons upon his wrists and head bowed, the Confederate prisoners bared their heads and gave him a silent salute. Subsequently Lieutenant Yeatman was paroled at Richmond, and in 1866 he found employment at Baltimore with a prominent commission house. A year later he became connected with the Baltimore steam packet company, and continued until 1874, first as collector at Baltimore and then as agent at Portsmouth and Norfolk. In 1874 he became general freight agent of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad company, and was the first agent of the company at Norfolk, serving from 1875 until 1889. He then engaged in insurance and brokerage until 1894, when he was appointed harbor master for the city of Norfolk. Charles E. Yeatman was gifted as a conversationalist, and in his youth was a prominent feature in a social circle, noted for the graceful charm of a day that is passed. Through his checkered career his unblemished honor and his tender heart and genial manners attracted hosts of friends who were devoted in life and death. He was a member of St. Luke's church, Pickett-Buchanan camp, C. V., the Masonic order and several other fraternal organizations. He was married November 7, 1860, to Harriet R. Royster, of New Kent county, and died in Norfolk, Va., February 15, 1898. He leaves two children, Philip Edward, a graduate of the Virginia military institute, who entered the volunteer army of the United States in the war of 1898 with the rank of captain in the Fourth regiment of Virginia volunteer infantry, and Susan E., now Mrs. John F. Egerton.

William H. Yeatman, of Alexandria, a native Virginian, was born in Westmoreland county in 1845. At the age of sixteen he entered the Confederate service as a private in the first company that went into the army from his county. This command was mustered in as Company C of the Forty-seventh regiment of in-

fantry, Capt. E. L. Wharton and Col. Rob. M. Mayo, a gallant regiment that won martial honors on many a hard-fought field. He participated in nearly all the engagements of the regiment, prominent among which were the Seven Days' fighting before Richmond, including Frayser's Farm and Cold Harbor, Cedar Run and the second battle of Manassas, Belfield Station, Jones' House, where he was wounded in the left shoulder, Deep Bottom, Gettysburg, Chancellorsville and the Wilderness. At Mechanicsville, in the Peninsula campaign, he was slightly wounded, and at Gettysburg, where his regiment was in Heth's division of A. P. Hill's corps, he was again wounded. At Frayser's Farm in 1862 the Forty-seventh regiment, in Hill's division, had the honor of capturing the Federal general, George A. McCall, a distinction that has been erroneously ascribed by some writers to the Fifty-fifth regiment. During the desperate fighting in the Wilderness, Private Yeatman was severely wounded in the right knee, causing a permanent injury. Notwithstanding his crippled condition after this misfortune, his devotion to the cause was such that he was found in the ranks again at Sailor's Creek, the last important fight of the army of Northern Virginia. There he was captured and subsequently confined in Libby prison until eleven days after the surrender of General Lee. Then returning to his home in Westmoreland county, a veteran at the age of twenty years, he was confronted by the duties and responsibilities of civil life. He presently removed to Prince William county and engaged in farming, until after twenty years of this work the effects of his wound compelled him to seek another occupation. Since then he has been engaged in business at Alexandria. He is a member of R. E. Lee camp at that city.

Captain John J. Young, a native of Sydney Cape Breton, Prince Edward's island, Canada, who removed to Norfolk before the war of the Confederacy, in the latter part of April, 1861, organized a heavy artillery company, of which he was elected captain. He uniformed the company at his own expense, and contributed, out of his private funds, toward the erection of an earthwork at Boush's bluff, where the company was assigned to duty. With a thirty-two pounder ship gun, Captain Young fired the first shot at the enemy in that vicinity, and in May, 1861, had an encounter with the United States steamship Monticello. In July his company, being composed of seafaring men, was transferred to duty as harbor guards, patrolling the lower harbor at night with four armed launches, and a number of small boats. Upon the evacuation of Richmond he took his boats and guns up the Nansemond to Suffolk, and thence carried his howitzers by rail to Richmond. The company served under his command at Chaffin's bluff, in the Thirtieth Virginia battalion, until the summer of 1863, when it met the army at Harper's Ferry on the return from Gettysburg, and returned to Richmond in charge of prisoners. The company was then known as Young's Howitzers. Captain Young's health failed in 1863, and he was granted a sick leave. The company continued in service on the Richmond and Petersburg lines, and was in the battle of Sailor's Creek, with Custis Lee's division. William A. Young, son of the foregoing, born at Norfolk, May 17, 1860, received his literary education at St. Mary's academy, of his native city, and then entered upon the study of law. This, however, he

presently abandoned for mercantile pursuits, in which he was engaged for several years. From his youth he had taken a great interest in political affairs, and simultaneously with his becoming a voter he became a worker in the organization of his party. At the age of twenty-five his ability in this direction was recognized by appointment to the position of chairman of the city committee of the Democratic party, which he held for the greater part of ten years, doing effective service and easily holding the confidence of his party. At the same time it was apparent that his efforts were not solely for partisan ends, but that the great motive was the good of the community. He engaged in the promotion of various enterprises of value to the people, notably the electric street railway, the establishment of which is chiefly due to his energy and organizing power. Such a character cannot fail of recognition, and Mr. Young has been called upon to serve the people in important official positions. In 1886 he was elected police commissioner of the city and two years later was chosen for the place of clerk of the courts of the county, his tenure of the latter office continuing for six years. In September, 1896, after a spirited contest in the convention of the Second congressional district, he received the nomination for Congress, and was elected in the following November. His initial service in this capacity was during the special session of 1897, and he was re-elected in 1898. Previous to this Mr. Young had represented his district, in a political way, as a delegate to the Democratic national convention at Chicago in 1892. Mr. Young is fraternally connected with the orders of the Elks and Red Men. He is happily married to a daughter of Dr. Thomas Hay, of Philadelphia, and has three children, two daughters and a son.

Nathaniel Francis Young, of Isle of Wight Court House, first commander of Colquitt-Wrenn camp, United Confederate veterans, was born in Portsmouth, Va., October 12, 1841, the youngest of three sons of Dr. Robert W. Young, who served in the Confederate armies. One of these, Tapley Webb Young, now residing at Washington, D. C., was a private in the cavalry of Kirby Smith; Robert West Young was a captain in the commissary department under the same general, and died at New Orleans in 1896. Their father, Dr. Robert W. Young, was born in Isle of Wight county, April 13, 1805, served during the war in one of the departments at Richmond, and died in 1880. He was married in 1833 to Ann Porter, daughter of Capt. Tapley Webb, of Portsmouth. The father of Dr. Young was Nathaniel Young, the son of Francis Young, who removed to Isle of Wight county in 1768 from Brunswick, and was soon afterward made county clerk, an office which has ever since remained in the family, Nathaniel Francis Young being the present incumbent. The latter was reared at Washington, D. C., from the age of five years, and in 1857 went to Europe and began a course of studies in the polytechnic institute at Stuttgart, where his brother, Tapley Webb Young, was then stationed as consul for the United States. Leaving there in August, 1861, he landed at Vera Cruz, Mexico, and thence reached Virginia in February, 1862, when he immediately reported for duty at Richmond, and enlisted as a private in the Otey battery of the Thirtieth battalion of artillery, army of Northern Virginia. He participated in the service of his battery throughout the remainder of

the war, mainly in western Virginia, and finally surrendered at Lynchburg, June 25, 1865. During the following twenty years he was occupied as a traveling salesman for a Baltimore commercial house throughout the South. In 1887 he became deputy clerk of Isle of Wight county under his uncle, Nathaniel Peyton Young, and served in that capacity until the latter died in 1896, at the age of eighty years, after sixty years' continuous tenure of the office. He was then appointed as successor. Mr. Young is a member of the society of the army of Northern Virginia, as well as of the United Confederate veterans, and is very influential in his county. He was married February 19, 1879, to Miss Ann Robinson Young, and they have three children: Virginia Carroll, Nathaniel Peyton, Jr., and Elizabeth Webb Young.

Walter J. Young, of Norfolk, Va., a veteran of the army of Northern Virginia, was born in Norfolk November 9, 1845. His father, John J. Young, was a soldier in the war with Mexico, and also served in the army of the Confederate States, holding the rank of captain and having charge of the harbor defenses at Norfolk during the earlier period of the war. His mother, Anna B. Bullock, was a daughter of John Bullock, one of whose ancestors served in the Revolutionary army. He was educated at Georgetown and at the Norfolk military academy, being a student in the latter institution and not quite sixteen years of age when the military forces of the State were organized in the spring of 1861. Prior to this he had been a member of a military company of students, and this organization was mustered into service and attached to the bodyguard of General Huger, doing duty at the general headquarters of the forces about Norfolk. As a member of this command Mr. Young was employed in clerical duty at the office of General Huger, also in the offices of Adjutant-General Anderson and Inspector-General Bradford. About six months before the evacuation of Norfolk he was transferred to the command of his father, Capt. John J. Young, who was stationed at Boush's bluff and had charge of the harbor defenses and batteries. While here he participated in the action with the Federal warship *Monticello*. After Norfolk was evacuated he was stationed with his artillery command at Chapman's bluff, near Petersburg, and subsequently at Signal hill, until forced from that position by Butler. The command then joined in the campaign in the valley, proceeding as far as Winchester, where they took charge of the prisoners captured during the Pennsylvania campaign, and escorted them to Staunton. Then returning to Chapman's bluff they held that position through the siege of Richmond and Petersburg. During the retreat they participated in the battle of Sailor's Creek, where seventeen of the twenty-three men of his company who went into the fight were killed or wounded. Mr. Young was severely wounded, and after the battle fell into the hands of the Federals. He was transported to City Point and three months later to Lincoln hospital, Washington, where he remained until July 1, 1865. He was then able to return to his home at Norfolk, but was, by reason of his wounds, incapacitated for business until 1867. He then accepted a position for one year in the clerk's office, subsequently conducted a ship-chandler's business for a time, was book-keeper in the Mercantile bank, and secretary and treasurer of the Norfolk trust company. His principal occupation, however, has

been with railroad companies, having served eight years with the Norfolk & Western, subsequently with the New York, Philadelphia & Norfolk, the Southern, and is now employed in the auditor's department of the Norfolk & Carolina railroad company. In 1884 Mr. Young was married to Miss Kate Mehegan, daughter of William A. Mehegan, a well-known business man of Norfolk, who served prominently in the city council and as captain of the fire department.

